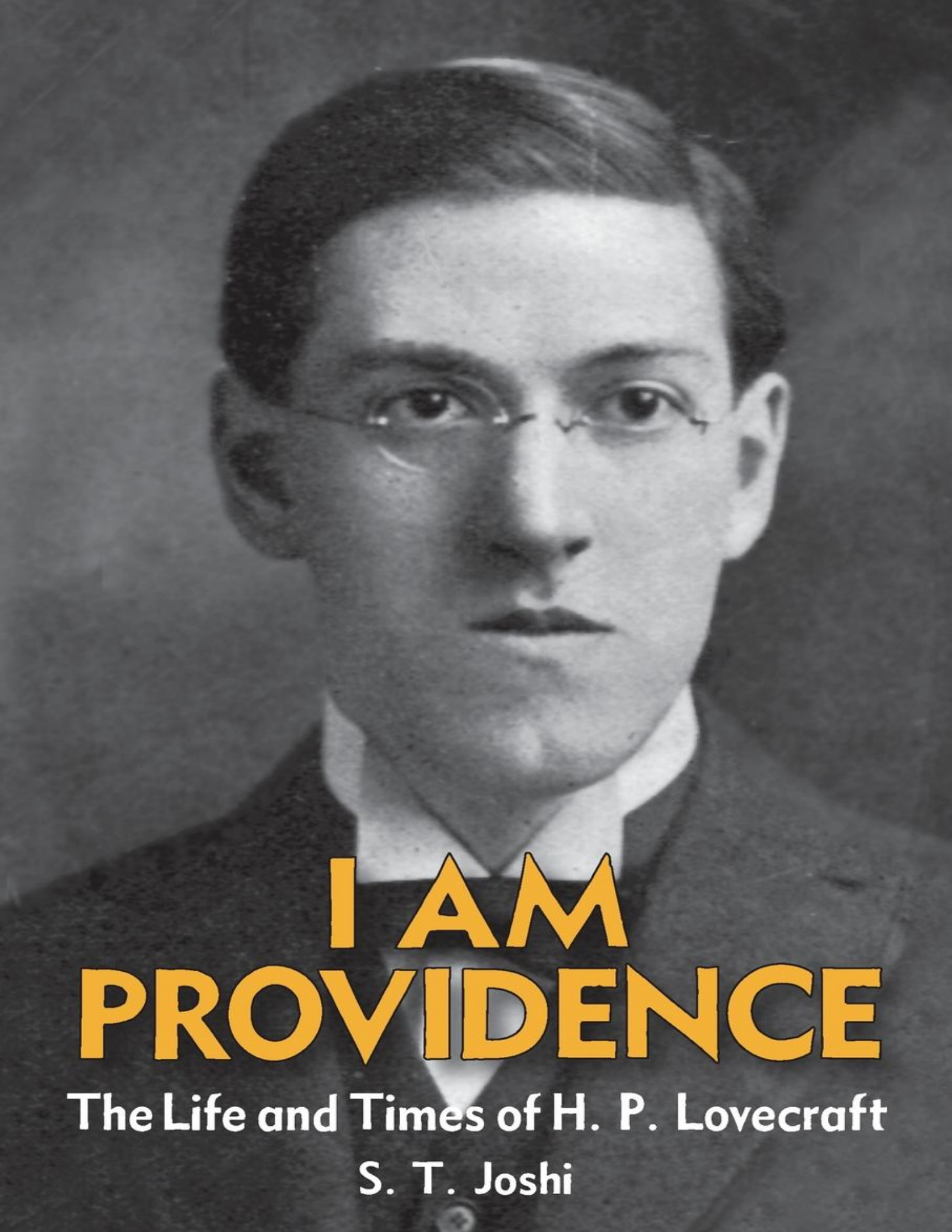
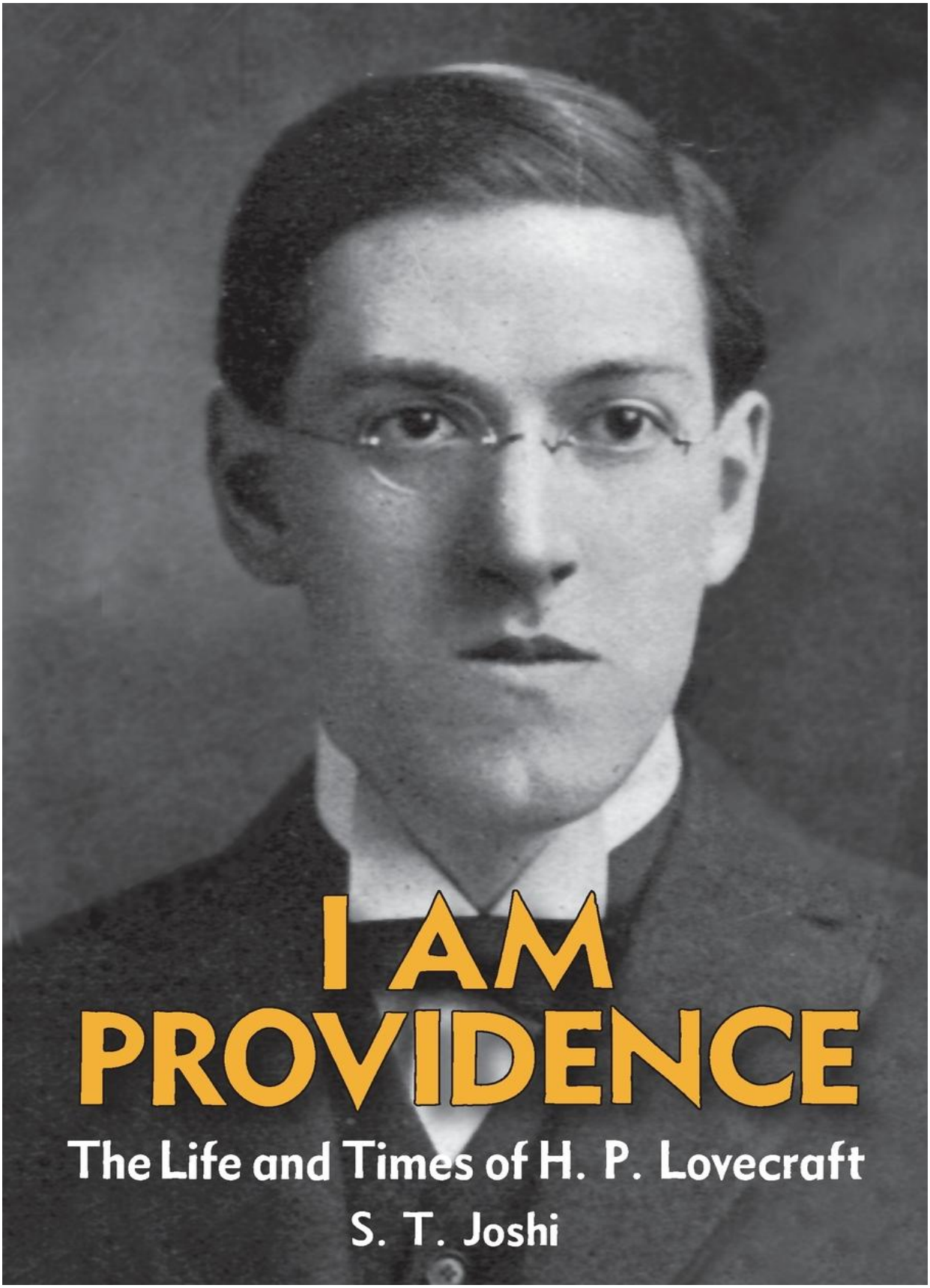


I AM PROVIDENCE

The Life and Times of H. P. Lovecraft

S. T. Joshi


I AM
PROVIDENCE
The Life and Times of H. P. Lovecraft
S. T. Joshi

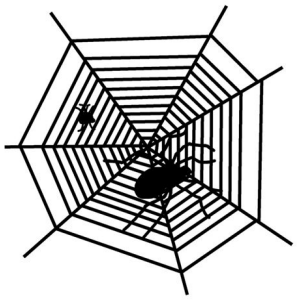
I Am Providence

I Am Providence

The Life and Times of

H. P. Lovecraft

S. T. Joshi



Hippocampus Press

New York

Copyright © 2013 by S. T. Joshi
Published by Hippocampus Press
P.O. Box 641, New York, NY 10156.
http://www.hippocampuspress.com
All rights reserved. No part of this work may be reproduced in any form or by any means without the written permission of the publisher.
Hippocampus Press logo by Anastasia Damianakos.
Cover design by Barbara Briggs Silbert.

First Ebook Edition, 2013
EPUB Edition ISBN: 978-1-61498-077-3
Kindle Edition ISBN: 978-1-61498-078-0

The Library of Congress has cataloged the hardcover edition as follows:

Joshi, S. T., 1958-
I am Providence : the life and times of H.P. Lovecraft / S. T. Joshi. — 1st ed.
p. cm.
Complete in 2 volumes.
In 1996, S. T. Joshi's H.P. Lovecraft: a life was published. The edition was abridged by more than 150,000 words. This new version I am Providence: the life and times of H.P. Lovecraft restores every word of Joshi's original manuscript. The text has been revised and updated in light of the new information on Lovecraft that has emerged since 1996—Provided by publisher.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-0-9824296-7-9 (alk. paper)
1. Lovecraft, H. P. (Howard Phillips), 1890-1937. 2. Authors, American—20th century—Biography. 3. Fantasy fiction—Authorship. 4. Horror tales—Authorship. I. Title.
PS3523.O833Z72 2010
813'.52—dc22
[B]

To
Kenneth W. Faig, Jr
Donald R. Burleson
and
David E. Schultz

Preface

I don't imagine that the publication of so large a biography of H. P. Lovecraft needs a defence today: his ascent into the canon of American literature with the publication of the Library of America edition of his *Tales* (2005), and, concurrently, his continued popularity among devotees of horror fiction, comics, films, and role-playing games suggest that Lovecraft will remain a compelling figure for decades to come. What may perhaps require some justification is my decision to issue this unabridged version of a biography that I wrote in 1993–95 and that was published in truncated form in 1996. In the nearly fifteen years since that time, a surprising amount of new information about Lovecraft—his life, his work, and his milieu—has emerged, necessitating some significant revisions in various portions of this book. Foremost in this regard must be cited Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, who with others has dug even deeper than before into Lovecraft's paternal and maternal ancestry. Other research by Steven J. Mariconda, David E. Schultz, T. R. Livesey, Robert H. Waugh, and any number of others has resulted in changes both large and small. I believe I have also benefited from the pertinent criticisms of a number of reviewers of the truncated edition.

A reader of the earlier version might ask: Exactly what is new about this edition aside from the bare addition of more than 150,000 words? In all humility I am now unable to answer this question in any detail. My pruning of the version I wrote in 1993–95—comprising more than 500,000 words—was on the level of both individual words, phrases, and sentences and some entire sections. One gauge of the kind and degree of omissions can be gauged by the number of footnotes in the trimmed and the full version; to choose a chapter at random, Chapter 14 in the earlier version had 75 footnotes; the current version has 98. In this version, therefore, I am even more determined to specify the documentary basis for my assertions.

In the past decade and a half, important publications by and about Lovecraft have made the biographer's life much simpler, at least in terms of

citations. Far and away the most significant in this regard is Peter Cannon's exemplary compilation of memoirs of Lovecraft, *Lovecraft Remembered* (1998), a volume so close to definitive that it scarcely ever need be done over again. I have some small quibbles with Cannon's selections: for example, I wish he had not included the truncated version of Sonia Davis's memoir of her husband, successively edited by Winfield Townley Scott and August Derleth, and had included the first of Muriel Eddy's memoirs rather than a later one; as a result I have cited these (and a few other) items from sources other than *Lovecraft Remembered.*

The most radical development is the extensive publication of Lovecraft's letters, especially to important correspondents such as August Derleth, Robert E. Howard, and Donald Wandrei. And yet, because the Arkham House edition of *Selected Letters* (1965–76) is still the most widely available and convenient compendium of Lovecraft's letters, I have in general cited it even in cases where it has been superseded by these later editions.

I have not cited any specific editions of Lovecraft's fiction, essays, or poetry. In terms of the fiction, Barnes & Noble has issued for the first time a collection of all Lovecraft's original fiction (2008); but the first printing was marred by many typographical errors. As of this writing, I have received a promise from the in-house editor that these errors will be corrected (perhaps, however, not all at once), so that subsequent printings of the volume should be definitive. The book is, of course, not annotated, and readers interested in the background behind Lovecraft's stories might wish to consult my three Penguin editions (1999–2004), along with such volumes as *From the Pest Zone: Stories from New York* (2003).

Lovecraft's essays are now conveniently gathered in *Collected Essays* (2004–06; 5 vols.), and his poetry in *The Ancient Track: Complete Poetical Works* (2001).

I would like to repeat the many friends and colleagues who have, over the past thirty years, materially aided me in my research on Lovecraft. Among those who actually knew or corresponded with Lovecraft, I can thank Frank Belknap Long, J. Vernon Shea, Donald Wandrei, Robert Bloch, Mrs. Ethel Phillips Morrish, and Harry K. Brobst; sadly, all but the last of these are no more. Among students and scholars, I have learnt most about Lovecraft's life and work from the three individuals to whom this book is dedicated—Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, David E. Schultz, and Donald R. Burleson;

but other individuals, such as Dirk W. Mosig, Steven J. Mariconda, Peter Cannon, J. Vernon Shea, George T. Wetzel, R. Boerem, Scott Connors, Richard L. Tierney, Matthew H. Onderdonk, Fritz Leiber, M. Eileen McNamara, Donovan K. Loucks, Stefan Dziemianowicz, T. E. D. Klein, Perry M. Grayson, Scott D. Briggs, Marc A. Michaud, Sam Moskowitz, Robert M. Price, A. Langley Searles, and Richard D. Squires should not be overlooked. I am most grateful to Donovan K. Loucks for assembling the photographs for this book

The John Hay Library of Brown University remains the chief repository of Lovecraft manuscript and printed material, and its Lovecraft Collection is now in the capable hands of Rosemary Cullen. She and her staff have allowed me unprecedented access to its bountiful documents.

As in so many of my recent projects, I am sincerely grateful to David E. Schultz for his customary care in the design of this book, and to Derrick Hussey for his courage and confidence in publishing it.

—S. T. JOSHI

Seattle, Washington
June 2009

Contents

Preface

1. Unmixed English Gentry
2. A Genuine Pagan (1890–1897)
3. Black Woods & Unfathomed Caves (1898–1902)
4. What of Unknown Africa? (1902–1908)
5. Barbarian and Alien (1908–1914)
6. A Renewed Will to Live (1914–1917 [I])
7. Metrical Mechanic (1914–1917 [II])
8. Dreamers and Visionaries (1917–1919 [I])
9. Feverish and Incessant Scribbling (1917–1919 [II])
10. Cynical Materialist (1919–1921 [I])
11. Dunsanian Studies (1919–1921 [II])
12. A Stranger in This Century (1919–1921 [III])
13. The High Tide of My Life (1921–1922)
14. For My Own Amusement (1923–1924)
15. Ball and Chain (1924)
16. The Assaults of Chaos (1925–1926)
17. Paradise Regain'd (1926)
18. Cosmic Outsideness (1927–1928)
19. Fanlights and Georgian Steeples (1928–1930)
20. Non-Supernatural Cosmic Art (1930–1931)
21. Mental Greed (1931–1933)
22. In My Own Handwriting (1933–1935)
23. Caring about the Civilisation (1929–1937)
24. Close to the Bread-Line (1935–1936)
25. The End of One's Life (1936–1937)
26. Thou Art Not Gone (1937–2010)

Notes
Bibliography
Index
Books by S. T. Joshi

Abbreviations

AD August Derleth
AEPG Annie E. P. Gamwell
CAS Clark Ashton Smith
DW Donald Wandrei
EHP E. Hoffmann Price
FBL Frank Belknap Long
JFM James F. Morton
JVS J. Vernon Shea
LDC Lillian D. Clark
MWM Maurice W. Moe
REH Robert E. Howard
RHB R. H. Barlow
RK Rheinhart Kleiner

CoC Crypt of Cthulhu
LS Lovecraft Studies

AHT Arkham House transcripts of Lovecraft's letters
JHL John Hay Library of Brown University, Providence

1. Unmixed English Gentry

Only an intermittently diligent genealogist, Howard Phillips Lovecraft was unable to discover much about the paternal side of his ancestry beyond the notes collected by his great-aunt Sarah Allgood.[1] Subsequent genealogical research has failed to verify much of this information, especially regarding the Lovecrafts prior to their coming to America in the early nineteenth century. Moreover, some particulars of Lovecraft's reports concerning both his paternal and maternal ancestry have been proven definitively false. Some details may now be beyond recovery, but still much work remains for anyone wishing to reconstruct Lovecraft's ancestry.

According to the Allgood notes, the Lovecraft or Lovecroft name does not appear any earlier than 1450, when various heraldic charts reveal Lovecrofts in Devonshire near the Teign. Collateral lines, of course, can be traced to the Norman Conquest or even earlier. Lovecraft's own direct line does not emerge until 1560, with John Lovecraft. As he recounts it: "Well—*John* begat *Richard* who begat *William* who begat *George* who begat *Joseph* who begat *John* who begat *Thomas* who begat *Joseph* who begat *George* who begat *Winfield* who begat your antient Grandpa."[2]

Unfortunately, as Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, has recently pointed out, in reference to the Allgood notes, "the most charitable thing that can be said is that it appears to be largely the invention of the creator."[3] Faig and his collaborators A. Langley Searles and Chris Docherty, were unable to verify *any* of the male names of the Lovecraft line prior to Joseph Lovecraft (1775–1850), Lovecraft's great-grandfather. Some evidence exists as to the descent of Joseph from John Lovecraft (1742–1780), and John from Joseph [not Thomas] Lovecraft (1703–1781), but even this is conjectural. Faig goes on to remark, in regard to Lovecraft's repeated claims of his descent from a number of other collateral lines: "Lovecraft probably did not descend from any of the 'great' lines claimed by his charts—Fulford,

Edgecombe, Chichester, Carew, Musgrave, and Reed are just a few of the lines probably not actually in Lovecraft's ancestry."[4]

It is, unfortunately, one of these collateral lines that Lovecraft (probably falsely) believed provided the one genuinely weird legend he could claim. The wife of George Lovecraft (Lovecraft's paternal grandfather) was Helen Allgood, and through her line Lovecraft thought he was related to the Musgraves of Eden Hall, Cumberland. A Musgrave was reputed to have stolen a drinking-glass from the fairies, who, after vain attempts to recover it, pronounced the following prophecy:

> If the glass either break or fall,
> Farewell to the luck of Eden Hall.

Lovecraft claimed that this glass was on display in the South Kensington Museum in London.[5] This was an informal name for the Victoria and Albert Museum, so renamed in 1899. The object—a 6¼" beaker of Syrian origin dating to the thirteenth century (presumably brought back by a Crusader)—is now in the Islamic Gallery there; it had been on loan from the Musgrave family since 1926, and had been purchased in 1959.[6] Longfellow paraphrased the legend as "The Luck of Edenhall."[7]

Late in life Lovecraft, given his strong astronomical interests, was pleased to discover a genuine man of science in his remote maternal ancestry. John Field or Feild (1520–1587), called "The Proto-Copernican of England", published an Ephemeris for 1557 in 1556 and another one for the years 1558, 1559, and 1560 in 1558; these two volumes contained the first account in English of the Copernican theory.[8] Unfortunately for Lovecraft, the relation of this John Field to a John Field (d. 1686) who was one of the original settlers of Providence, Rhode Island, and from whom Lovecraft actually was descended on the maternal side in a fairly direct line, is now in dispute. Lovecraft, unaware of the uncertainty of the matter, was understandably heartened by this discovery, for as an atheist he found his paternal line in particular "lousy with clergymen but short on straight thinkers,"[9] and said of his ancestry in general: "No philosophers—no artists—no writers—not a cursed soul I could possibly talk to without getting a pain in the neck."[10]

Lovecraft was much regaled by accounts (presumably preserved by Helen Allgood) of one Thomas Lovecraft (1745–1826), who apparently lived such a dissolute life that he was forced in 1823 to sell the ancestral

estate, Minster Hall near Newton-Abbot. Lovecraft, a little surprisingly given his generally dim view of either sexual or monetary profligacy, found himself strangely attracted to this individual, boasting of owning a book with the inscription "Tho. Lovecraft, Gent. His Book, 1787"[11] and speaking almost approvingly of his dissipation of the estate. Again, it is regrettable that this connexion cannot be verified. Faig reports: "We have not been able to find any Thomas Lovecraft who married Letitia Edgecombe in 1766 and was proprietor of Minster Hall near Newton Abbot. Devon has no record of any estate called Minster Hall."[12] Lovecraft believed that it was Thomas Lovecraft's sixth child, Joseph Lovecraft, who decided in 1827 to emigrate, taking his wife Mary Fulford (actually Mary Full, 1782–1864) and their six children, John Full, William, Joseph, Jr, George, Aaron, and Mary, to Ontario, Canada. Finding no prospects there, he drifted down to the area around Rochester, New York, where he was established by at least 1831 as a cooper and carpenter. The details of this migration have not been confirmed, and some parts seem definitely erroneous; for example, Joseph and his children were still in England in 1828. The best one can say is that Joseph Lovecraft is found in the Rochester area around 1830–31.

Lovecraft was convinced that there were no Lovecrafts left in England, and this seems in the most literal sense of the term to be the case; but individuals with the name Lucraft or Luckraft are found in abundance as late as the end of the nineteenth century,[13] and many are listed in recent London telephone directories;[14] these seem to be either variant spellings or fairly closely related lines. Lovecraft himself, however, was never in touch with any relations in England. It is interesting to note that the 1840 U.S. census for Rochester gives the spelling of Joseph Lovecraft's sons John F. and William as "Lovecroft," and the 1840 U.S. census of Peru Township in Clinton County, New York, gives Joseph, Jr's last name as "Lucraft".[15]

Lovecraft's paternal grandfather was George Lovecraft, who was born in 1815.[16] In 1839 he married Helen Allgood (1820–1881) and lived much of his life in Rochester as a harness maker. Of his five children, two died in infancy; the other three were Emma Jane (1847–1925), Winfield Scott (1853–1898), and Mary Louise (1855–1916). Emma married Isaac Hill, principal of the Pelham, N.Y., high school;[17] Mary married Paul Mellon. Winfield married Sarah Susan Phillips and begat Howard Phillips

Lovecraft. Several of these individuals—George Lovecraft, Helen Allgood Lovecraft, Emma Jane Hill, Mary Louise Mellon, among other relations—are buried in Woodlawn Cemetery in the Bronx.[18]

Lovecraft appears to have been much more industrious in tracking down his maternal ancestry, but again his conclusions are not always to be trusted. In 1915 he maintained that "The first Phillips of [his] branch came to Rhode Island from Lincolnshire in the latter part of the seventeenth century, and established himself in the western part of the colony";[19] at this point Lovecraft had no name for this first transplanted ancestor. By 1924 he was claiming descent from the Rev. George Phillips (d. 1644), who in 1630 left England on the *Arbella* and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts (the township directly west of Cambridge).[20] There is reason to doubt this; or, rather, to doubt Lovecraft's assertion that George was the father of Michael Phillips (1630?–1686?) of Newport, Rhode Island, from whom Lovecraft really is descended. In any event, Asaph Phillips (1764–1829), Michael's great-grandson (or, more likely, great-great-grandson), headed inland and settled around 1788 in Foster, in the west-central part of the state near the Connecticut border. Asaph and his wife Esther Whipple (collaterally related to Abraham Whipple, the Revolutionary war hero) had eight children, all of whom, incredibly, survived to adulthood. The sixth child, Jeremiah Phillips (1800–1848), built a water-powered grist mill on the Moosup River in Foster and was killed on November 20, 1848, when his flowing greatcoat got caught in the machinery, dragging him into it. As Jeremiah's wife Roby Rathbun Phillips had died earlier in 1848, their four children (a fifth, the first-born, had died in infancy) were left as orphans. They were Susan, James, Whipple, and Abbie. Whipple Van Buren Phillips (1833–1904) is Lovecraft's maternal grandfather.

Lovecraft mentions that Whipple attended the East Greenwich Academy (then called the Providence Conference Seminary),[21] but no date for his attendance has been established; probably it occurred prior to the death of his father, Jeremiah. In 1852 Whipple went to live with his uncle James Phillips (1794–1878) in Delavan, Illinois, a temperance town his relatives had founded; he returned the next year to Foster because (as his obituary declares) the climate did not suit him.[22] It was probably at this time that he engaged in what Lovecraft called a "brief career as a teacher in the country schools."[23] He married his first cousin, Robie Alzada Place

(1827–1896),[24] on January 27, 1856, settling in a homestead in Foster built by Robie's father, Stephen Place. Their first child, Lillian Delora (1856–1932), was born less than three months later. There were four other children: Sarah Susan (1857–1921), Emeline (1859–1865), Edwin Everett (1864–1918), and Annie Emeline (1866–1941). Lovecraft's mother Sarah Susan was born, as her own mother had been, at the Place homestead.[25]

In 1855 Whipple purchased a general store in Foster and ran it for at least two years;[26] he then presumably sold the store and its goods, probably at a substantial profit, thereby commencing his career as entrepreneur and land speculator. At that time[27] he moved a few miles south of Foster to the town of Coffin's Corner, where he built "a mill, a house, an assembly hall, and several cottages for employees";[28] since he had purchased all the land there, he renamed the town Greene (in honour of the Rhode Island Revolutionary War hero Nathanael Greene). Many of these structures—including the house Whipple built for his family—were still standing in 1926, when Lovecraft and his aunt Annie visited them. It is remarkable to think of a twenty-four-year-old essentially owning an entire small town, but Whipple was clearly a bold and dynamic businessman, one who would gain and lose several fortunes in his crowded life.

Lovecraft states that his grandfather founded the Masonic Lodge at Greene, and this statement is confirmed by Henry W. Rugg's *History of Freemasonry in Rhode Island* (1895). Rugg writes:

> In the year 1869 Bro. Whipple D. [*sic*] Phillips and fifteen other brethren, nearly all members of Manchester Lodge, united in asking for a Dispensation authorizing the establishment of a new Lodge, to be called "Ionic Lodge." The petition was presented to Most Wor. Bro. Thomas A. Doyle, then Grand Master, who approved the same, and issued a Dispensation under date of January 15, 1870, authorizing and empowering the petitioners to form and open a new Lodge in the village of Greene, town of Coventry, to be designated Ionic Lodge, No. 12.
>
> Acting under the authority thus conferred, the first meeting of the brethren interested, was held March 19, 1870, with Bro. Whipple D. Phillips officiating as Master, Bro. Warren H. Tillinghast as S. W., and William R. Carter as J. W.[29]

Whipple Phillips held positions in other Masonic organisations in Rhode Island. In 1886, after the Lodge found itself crowded in its quarters,

Whipple—although by then settled in Providence—leased to the Masons an edifice he had built and still owned, "Phillips Hall."[30]

Whipple at this time made his brief foray into Rhode Island politics, serving (according to his obituary) in the lower house of the state legislature from May 1870 to May 1872. But politics clearly did not suit him as well as business. Lovecraft tells the story of the ups and downs of his business dealings at the time: ". . . in 1870 [Whipple] was overtaken by sudden collapse financially—a thing he could have averted by disavowing responsibility for a signed note, but which as a gentleman he refused to evade. This moved the family to Providence, where a happy financial recovery took place . . ."[31] It may be possible to elaborate upon this incident somewhat. Casey B. Tyler, Lovecraft's maternal grandmother's cousin,[32] in his *Historical Reminiscences of Foster, Rhode Island* (1884–93) refers the fact that Whipple "at last fell prey to that noted demon, 'Hugog,' and lost much of his hard earnings." There is no telling who this Hugog is, but Tyler reports that he himself in 1869 lost $10,000 as a result of the "rascality of a pretended friend, called Hugog."[33] Perhaps the swindling of Tyler and Whipple's loss of money are related. In any event, Tyler had nothing good to say about Mr Hugog: "There has never been but one person from Foster who has been a disgrace and dishonor to the town and may his name never be mentioned and although possessed of much ill-gotten wealth, may he be forgiven and forgotten and his name sink in oblivion as not worthy to be remembered by future generations."[34] Tyler has apparently gotten his wish.

The Place homestead in Foster must have been sold at this time, as Lovecraft states that it passed out of the family in 1870.[35] The move to Providence probably occurred in 1874.[36] After several changes of residence Whipple settled around 1876 at 276 Broadway on the West Side of Providence—the western shore of the Providence River, site of the present business district—since his business offices were in this general area (principally at 5 Custom House Street near the river). The 1878 city directory lists him as owner of a "fringing machine" business, i.e. the manufacturing of fringes for curtains, bedspreads, and perhaps clothing. One curious sidelight is Whipple's travel to France for the Paris Universal Exposition of 1878 in connexion with his fringing business. He does not seem to have had good luck getting his name printed correctly, for the

official report of the exhibition lists him as "Phillips (M. D.) & Co., Providence, R.I."[37] Lovecraft reports that his grandfather was "a man of culture & extensive travel" and makes note of "his acquaintance with all the wonders of Europe, which he had seen at first hand."[38] Whipple's Paris jaunt was only the first (if indeed it was the first) of many such voyages to the Continent; his obituary reports that there was a "protracted business visit" to London and Liverpool in 1880.

By this time Whipple Phillips was clearly a man of substantial means, and aside from building the house at 194 Angell Street in 1880–81, he undertook what was to be his most ambitious business enterprise: the establishment of the Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company in Owyhee County in the southwest corner of Idaho, "which had for its object the damming of the Snake River & the irrigation of the surrounding farming & fruit-growing region."[39] Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, has performed a remarkable feat of excavation in supplying the details of his enterprise, and I can do no better than to summarise his findings.[40]

The company was incorporated in Providence as the Snake River Company as early as 1884, with Whipple as president and his nephew Jeremiah W. Phillips (son of his brother James W. Phillips) as secretary and treasurer. Initially the company dealt in "land and live stock" (as an advertisement in the 1888 Providence city directory states), but shortly thereafter Whipple shifted his attention to the building of a dam—not over the Snake River, as Lovecraft believed, but over its tributary, the Bruneau River. Lovecraft states that the company was reorganised in October 1889 as the Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company and incorporated as a Maine corporation;[41] in 1892 it was again reorganised as a Rhode Island corporation.

Work on the dam began in the autumn of 1887 and was completed by early 1890. Following his habit of naming towns, Whipple purchased the Henry Dorsey Ferry in 1887 and established a town near the ferry on the Snake River, naming it Grand View. (In the 1980 census this town, about thirty miles south of Boise, had a population of 366.) He also built a Grand View Hotel, to be managed by his son Edwin.

At this point disaster struck. On March 5, 1890, the dam was completely washed out by high waters, and the $70,000 spent in constructing it was lost. The *Owyhee Avalanche,* a paper published in nearby Silver City, made a sanguine prediction: "Mr. Phillips, the manager,

is not the man to be disheartened by an accident of the kind above mentioned, and he will no doubt have a better dam than the one destroyed in the same place in less than two years." In the event, the *Avalanche* was only slightly optimistic: a new dam was begun in the summer of 1891 and completed by February 1893.

Whipple was, of course, by no means permanently at the site; indeed, he appears to have visited it only occasionally. We shall see that when he was not in Idaho, he was spending considerable time and effort (especially after April 1893) raising his then only grandchild, Howard Phillips Lovecraft. The *Avalanche* reports trips to Idaho by Whipple Phillips in June and October 1891 and July 1892. There must have been later trips also, for Lovecraft reports receiving letters from his grandfather postmarked Boise City, Mountain Home, and Grand View.[42] Oddly enough, the earliest known letter to Lovecraft from Whipple (June 19, 1894) is postmarked Omaha, Nebraska; a letter of February 20, 1899 is postmarked Grand View, while another of October 27, 1899 comes from Scranton, Pennsylvania.[43]

The Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company appears to have suffered some sort of financial difficulties around 1900; this is the last date the company is listed in the Providence city directory, and on March 12, 1901, the company was sold at a sheriff's sale in Silver City. Whipple Phillips was one of five purchasers, but the total property value of the company had been assessed on May 25, 1900, at only $9430, more than half of it a mining ditch. The final blow came in early 1904, when the dam was wiped out again. Lovecraft states that this second disaster "virtually wiped the Phillips family out financially & hastened my grandfather's death—age 70, of apoplexy."[44] Whipple Phillips died on March 28, 1904; after his death three other individuals bought out his interest in the Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company and renamed it the Grand View Irrigation Company, Ltd. I shall have more to say about this entire incident later.

The Owyhee project was clearly Whipple's principal business concern during his later years, although no doubt he had other interests in Providence and elsewhere, as his wide travels suggest. Arthur S. Koki, having gained access to the Phillips family papers, found some stationery listing Whipple as the proprietor of the Westminster Hotel at 317 Westminster Street in Providence, but there is no indication of the date or duration of his proprietorship.[45] In spite of the large sum of money that he lost in the Idaho venture, the picture that emerges of Whipple Phillips is that

of an abundantly capable businessman—bold, innovative, and perhaps a little reckless—but also a man of wide culture and one who took great concern in the financial, intellectual, and personal well-being of his extended family. We shall see these latter traits well displayed in his nurturing of his young grandchild.

Of Whipple Phillips's wife Robie very little is known. Lovecraft states that she attended the Lapham Institute (cited by Lovecraft as "Lapham Seminary") in North Scituate, Rhode Island,[46] about fifteen miles northeast of Greene, but does not supply the date of her attendance. Lapham Institute was founded as Smithfield Institute in 1839 by the Rhode Island Association of Free Baptists,[47] and conceivably Robie Place could have been one of the first students to attend it. The mere fact that she went there suggests her strong religiosity, as does the fact that both she and her three surviving daughters joined the First Baptist Church in the 1880s; Robie and Susie, at least, remained on the rolls until their respective deaths.[48] Lovecraft describes his grandmother in an early letter as "a serene, quiet lady of the old school."[49]

Lovecraft's elder aunt, Lillian Delora Clark, attended the Wheaton Female Seminary (now Wheaton College) in Norton, Massachusetts, for at least the period 1871–73.[50] Norton is a small town in the southeastern part of the state, about ten miles from the Rhode Island border; it is not clear why Lillian and also Susie attended this college preparatory school rather than one more locally situated. Lovecraft states that she "also attended the State Normal School, and was for some time a teacher,"[51] but her attendance at the Normal School has not been confirmed. Lovecraft was proud of the artistic skills of both his aunt and his mother, and claimed that Lillian has "had canvases hung in exhibitions at the Providence Art Club."[52]

Lovecraft speaks little of his uncle, Edwin Everett Phillips, and it is clear that he was not close to him. We have seen that he briefly assisted his father in his Idaho enterprise, but he returned to Providence in 1889 and attempted—not very successfully, it appears—to go into business for himself. In 1894 he married Martha Helen Mathews; at some point they were divorced, then remarried in 1903. Throughout his life Edwin seems to have held various odd jobs—a manufacturer's representative, real estate and mortgage agent, rent collector, notary public, coin dealer[53]—and, probably

in the early 1910s, established the Edwin E. Phillips Refrigeration Company. His one significant involvement with Lovecraft and his mother was, as we shall see, an unfortunate one.

Annie Emeline Phillips, Lovecraft's younger aunt, was nine years younger than Susie. Lovecraft remarks that she "was yet a very young lady when I first began to observe events about me. She was rather a favourite in the younger social set, & brought the principal touch of gayety to a rather conservative household."[54] I know nothing about her education.[55]

We can finally turn our attention to Sarah Susan Phillips, born on October 17, 1857, at the Place homestead in Foster. Regrettably little is known about her early years. A commonplace book she began keeping in her youth contains—aside from school lessons, genealogical information, and other matter—a touching tribute to her sister Emeline, who died of diphtheria in 1865, before her sixth birthday:

> Little Emma was a child of great promise, her budding intellect already began to awaken fond expectations in the minds of her friends, while her artless simplicity of manners and sweetness of temper not only doubly endeared her to her parents but won the hearts of all who knew her.
>
> She manifested much patience during her sickness although suffering severely from difficult breathing and once in her childlike manner said to her mother, "I wish I could stop breathing a little while just to rest." At another time she roused up and said "mother the bible is a guide to youth."[56]

Lovecraft states that she, like Lillian, attended Wheaton Female Seminary, but her attendance can only be confirmed for the school year 1871–72.[57] From this period up to the time of her marriage in 1889 the record is blank, aside from the fact that she is listed in the 1880 U.S. census as residing with her father at 276 Broadway. Clara Hess, a friend of the Lovecrafts, gives a description of Susie, probably dating from the late 1890s: "She was very pretty and attractive, with a beautiful and unusually white complexion—got, it is said, by eating arsenic, although whether there was any truth to this story I do not know. She was an intensely nervous person."[58] What to make of the arsenic story—and whether this had anything to do with Susie's later physical and psychological maladies—I have no idea. In a later piece Hess continues: "She had a peculiarly shaped nose which rather fascinated

me, as it gave her a very inquiring expression. Howard looked very much like her."[59]

What little we know of Winfield Scott Lovecraft prior to his marriage derives from research conducted by Richard D. Squires of the Wallace Library at the Rochester Institute of Technology.[60] Winfield was born on October 26, 1853, probably at the home of George and Helen Lovecraft at 42 (later renumbered 67) Marshall Street in Rochester. His name, of course, derives from General Winfield Scott, and it is perhaps no accident that he was so named almost exactly a year after Scott, then the Whig candidate for president, visited Rochester (October 14, 1852). George Lovecraft was at the time a "traveling agent" for the Ellwanger & Barry Nursery, a major business in Rochester. The family attended services at the Grace Episcopal (now St Paul's) Church. These facts may be of some relevance to Winfield, since he was himself a salesman and as he was married at St Paul's Episcopal Church in Boston, even though his bride was a Baptist.

The family's address in 1859 is listed as 26 Griffith Street in Rochester, one street over from the Marshall Street address. (This house is no longer standing, although the Marshall Street house is.) There is no evidence as to the site of Winfield's early schooling; presumably it was in one of the elementary schools in Rochester. Around 1863 George Lovecraft left the area to investigate the possibility of the family's move to New York City, and for about a year Winfield lived with his mother, sisters, and uncle Joseph, Jr, at 106 Allen Street. The family did in fact move to New York around 1870, but Winfield stayed behind. From 1871 to 1873 he was employed as a blacksmith for the James Cunningham & Son carriage factory, Rochester's largest employer for many years. During this time Winfield boarded with another uncle, John Full Lovecraft, in a home on Marshall Street. By 1874 all traces of Winfield Scott Lovecraft disappear from the records in Rochester.

Lovecraft stated in 1915 that his father "was educated both privately, and at a military school, making modern languages his specialty";[61] but less than two years later he wrote that Winfield "was a lover of things military, and . . . in youth gave up an appointment to West Point only to please his mother."[62] Did, then, Winfield indeed attend any military academy at all? The location of this military school has not been traced, and Winfield clearly did not attend West Point, as a quick check of its registry

of graduates establishes. It is possible that it may not have been a formal military academy (of which there were very few at the time) but a school that emphasised military training. In any event, it is likely to have been local—somewhere in New York State, perhaps close to the Rochester area—although according to Squires there does not seem to be any such school. Winfield's attendance (if it occurred at all) may have preceded his employment as a blacksmith, and the military school could have been the equivalent of a high school.

At some point Winfield moved to New York City, as this is given as his place of residence on his marriage certificate. He does not appear, however, in the city directories of Manhattan or Brooklyn (there were no city directories for Queens or the Bronx for the period of Winfield's presumable residence there). But one individual of some interest *is* found in the Manhattan city directory for much of the 1880s: Frederick A. Lovecraft (1850–1893), the son of George Lovecraft's older brother Aaron, and therefore Winfield's cousin. Is it possible that Winfield roomed or boarded with Frederick for some period prior to his marriage? Boarders were frequently overlooked in city directories (Lovecraft himself, boarding at 10 Barnes Street from 1926 to 1932, does not show up for any of these years in the Providence city directory), and I can imagine no other likely scenario for Winfield's New York residence.

It is believed that he became employed by Gorham & Co., Silversmiths, of Providence, a company founded in 1813 by Jabez Gorham[63] and for many years one of the major business concerns in the city. The testimony for this employment does not derive from any statement by Lovecraft, as far as I know, but from a remark by Lovecraft's wife Sonia in her 1948: "His father, Winfield Scott Lovecraft, had at one time been a traveling salesman for the Gorham Company, Silversmiths of the United States of America."[64] One would like to believe that Lovecraft told her this information. Arthur S. Koki, investigating the matter in the early 1960s, wrote: "Since the personnel records of the Gorham Company are not retained beyond forty years, it is difficult to determine when he was first employed there."[65] This may not be entirely accurate, as I have been informed that salesmen's records were kept at Gorham's New York office.[66] It is not clear how and when Winfield began work for Gorham (assuming that he actually did so), and why, even if he was working as a travelling salesman, he was listed as a resident of New York City at the time

of his marriage on June 12, 1889. It may or may not be relevant that the 1889/90 Manhattan city directory lists Frederick A. Lovecraft as a "jeweler": is it possible that he somehow assisted Winfield in securing his position at Gorham? This is pure conjecture, but we have nothing else to go on.

Equally a mystery is how he met Sarah Susan Phillips and how they fell in love. Susie certainly does not appear to have been a "society girl" like her sister Annie, and Winfield was not a door-to-door salesman, so that he is not likely to have met her in this way; nor, if he had, would the social mores of the time have allowed them to fraternise. The Phillipses were, after all, part of the Providence aristocracy.

The fact that the wedding ceremony took place at St Paul's Episcopal Church in Boston may or may not be noteworthy. We have already seen that Winfield's family was Episcopal; and although there were many Episcopal churches in Providence where the ceremony could have taken place, the fact that Winfield planned to settle his family in the Boston area may have made St Paul's a logical site. Indeed, it might have been odd for a member of the Phillips family of Providence, so associated with the Baptist faith, to have been married in a local Episcopal church. I discount the possibility, therefore, that the marriage was somehow not approved by Susie's parents, for which no true evidence exists. Although she was thirty-one at the time of the marriage, Susie was the first of Whipple Phillips's daughters to be married; as she was still living under his roof, it is not likely that he would have allowed her to marry someone of whom he did not approve.

Lovecraft, so keen on racial purity, was fond of declaring that his "ancestry was that of unmixed English gentry";[67] and if one can include a Welsh (Morris) strain on his paternal side and an Irish (Casey) strain on his maternal, then the statement can pass. His maternal line is, indeed, far more distinguished than his paternal, and we find Rathbones, Mathewsons, Whipples, Places, Wilcoxes, Hazards, and other old New England lines behind Susie Lovecraft and her father Whipple Van Buren Phillips. What we do not find—as noted earlier and as Lovecraft frequently bemoaned—is much in the way of intellectual, artistic, or imaginative distinction. But if Lovecraft himself failed to inherit the business acumen of Whipple Phillips, he did somehow acquire the literary gifts that have resulted in a subsidiary

fascination with his mother, father, grandfather, and the other members of his near and distant ancestry.

2. A Genuine Pagan

(1890–1897)

In April 1636, Roger Williams left the Massachusetts-Bay colony and headed south, settling first on the east bank of the Seekonk River and later, when Massachusetts asserted territorial rights to this region, to the west bank. He named this site Providence. Williams's immediate reason for seeking new territory was, of course, religious freedom: his own Baptist beliefs did not sit well at all with the Puritan theocracy of the Massachusetts-Bay. Shortly afterward Rhode Island attracted two further religious dissidents from Massachusetts: Samuel Gorton, who arrived in Providence in 1640, and the Antinomian Anne Hutchinson (a collateral descendant of Lovecraft on the maternal side), who in 1638 established a colony called Pocasset at the northern end of Aquidneck Island in Narragansett Bay. The religious separatism present at the very birth of Rhode Island left a permanent legacy of political, economic, and social separatism in the state.[1]

Although Roger Williams had negotiated with the Indians for his plot of land at Providence, the native population of Rhode Island did not fare so well thereafter. King Philip's War (1675–76) was devastating to both sides, but particularly to the Indians (Narragansetts, Wampanoags, Sakonnets, and Nianticks), who were nearly wiped out, their pitiful remnants huddled together on a virtual reservation near Charlestown. The rebuilding of the white settlements that had been destroyed in Providence and elsewhere was slow but certain; from now on it would not be religious freedom or Indian warfare that would concern the white colonists, but economic development. In the eighteenth century the four Brown brothers (John, Joseph, Nicholas, and Moses) would be among the leading entrepreneurs in the Colonies. It is, however, a stain on Rhode Island's record that it was one of the leading slave-trading states both before and just after the Revolution, its many

merchant vessels (some of them privateers) carting away hundreds of thousands of slaves from Africa. Relatively few ended up actually in Rhode Island; most that did so worked on large plantations in the southern part of the state.[2]

Much to the chagrin of Lovecraft's Tory sentiments, Rhode Island was a spearhead of the Revolution, and people here were more united in favour of independence than in the other colonies. Stephen Hopkins, provincial governor of Rhode Island for much of the period between 1755 and 1768—whose house (1707) at the corner of Benefit and Hopkins Street was a favourite of Lovecraft's—was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Separatist to the end, however, Rhode Island refused to send delegates to the Constitutional Convention and was the last of the thirteen colonies to ratify the Federal Constitution.

Roger Williams had founded the Baptist church in Rhode Island—the first in America—in 1638. For more than two centuries the state remained largely Baptist—Brown University was founded in 1764 (as King's College) under Baptist auspices—but other sects came in over time. There were Quakers, Congregationalists, Unitarians, Episcopalians, Methodists, and other, smaller groups. A colony of Jews had been present since the seventeenth century, but their numbers were small and they were careful to assimilate with the Yankees. Roman Catholics only began to be prominent in the middle nineteenth century. Their numbers were augmented by successive waves of immigration: French Canadians during the Civil War (establishing themselves especially in the town of Woonsocket in the northeast corner of the state), Italians after 1890 (settling in the Federal Hill area of Providence's West Side), Portuguese shortly thereafter. It is disturbing, but sadly not surprising, to note the increasing social exclusiveness and scorn of foreigners developing among the old-time Yankees throughout the nineteenth century. The Know-Nothing Party, with its anti-foreign and anti-Catholic bias, dominated the state during the 1850s. Rhode Island remained politically conservative into the 1930s, and Lovecraft's entire family voted Republican throughout his lifetime. If Lovecraft voted at all, he also voted Republican almost uniformly until 1932. The state's leading paper, the *Providence Journal*, remains conservative to this day even though the state has been largely Democratic since the 1930s.

Newport, on the southern end of Aquidneck Island, gained early ascendancy in what became Rhode Island, and Providence did not overtake it until after the Revolutionary war. By 1890 Providence was the only city of any significant size in the state: its population was 132,146, making it the twenty-third largest city in the nation. Its principal topographic features are its seven hills and the Providence River, which divides at Fox Point and splits into the Seekonk River on the east and the Moshassuck River on the west. Between these two rivers is the East Side, the oldest and most exclusive part of the city, especially the lofty eminence of College Hill, which rises steeply on the east bank of the Moshassuck. Main, Benefit, Prospect, and Hope Streets successively ascend the hill and are the principal north-south thoroughfares, while Angell and Waterman Streets span the East Side in an east-west direction. The area west of the Moshassuck is the West Side—the downtown area and a newer residential district. To the north lies the suburb of Pawtucket, to the northwest North Providence, to the southwest Cranston, and to the east—on the other side of the Seekonk—the suburbs of Seekonk and East Providence.

Brown University lords it on the pinnacle of College Hill, and has lately been gobbling up more and more of the surrounding colonial area. This is the oldest part of the city in terms of the structures still surviving, although nothing dates before the middle of the eighteenth century. Lovecraft, ever (and justifiably) proud of the colonial antiquities in his native city, was fond of rattling them off for those of his correspondents less favourably situated:

> Colony House 1761, College Edifice 1770, Brick Schoolhouse 1769, Market House 1773, 1st Baptist Church with finest classic spire in America 1775, innumerable private houses and mansions from 1750 onward, St. John's and Round-Top Churches circa 1810, Golden Ball Inn 1783, old warehouses along the Great Salt River 1816, etc., etc., etc.[3]

Of these, the Golden Ball Inn (where Washington stayed) is no more, and Lovecraft bitterly lamented the destruction of the 1816 warehouses in 1929; but the others still stand. Lovecraft, in fact, would have been heartened at the tremendous restoration of the colonial houses on College Hill in the 1950s and onward, conducted under the aegis of the Providence Preservation Society (now housed in that 1769 schoolhouse at 24 Meeting Street). The restoration has caused Benefit Street in particular to be regarded as the finest mile of colonial architecture in America. At the very

end of his life Lovecraft saw the opening of the John Brown house (1786) as a museum, and it is now the home of the Rhode Island Historical Society.

To the east of College Hill is a spacious array of residences dating no earlier than the middle nineteenth century but impressively built and with well-kept grounds and gardens. This, rather than the colonial area, is the true home of the Providence aristocracy and plutocracy. At the eastern edge of this area, running alongside the Seekonk River, is Blackstone Boulevard, whose luxurious homes are still the haven of old Yankee money. At the northern end of Blackstone Boulevard is found Butler Hospital for the Insane, opened in 1847 from a grant supplied by Nicholas Brown—of the illustrious mercantile family of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries that in 1804 gave its name to Brown University—and Cyrus Butler, for whom it came to be named.[4] Juxtaposed to Butler Hospital on its north side is the vast expanse of Swan Point Cemetery—not perhaps quite as lavishly landscaped as Mt Auburn in Boston but one of the most topographically beautiful cemeteries in the country.

Howard Phillips Lovecraft was born at 9 A.M.[5] on August 20, 1890, at 194 (renumbered 454 in 1895/96) Angell Street on what was then the eastern edge of the East Side of Providence. Although a Providence Lying-in Hospital had opened in 1885,[6] Lovecraft was born "at the Phillips home,"[7] and he would remain passionately devoted to his birthplace, especially after having to move from it in 1904. Lovecraft notes in a late letter that the name "Howard" only became a given name, as opposed to a surname, around 1860, and that "by 1890 it was a fashion"; he goes on to supply other reasons for why he was given the name: 1) a boy in a neighbourhood family who were friends with the Phillipses was named Howard; 2) there was an ancestral connexion with Judge Daniel Howard of Howard Hill in Foster; 3) Clarke Howard Johnson was Whipple Phillips's best friend and executor of his will.[8]

In 1925 Lovecraft's aunt Lillian gave him some idea of what he did as a new-born infant, and he responded to her remarks: "So I threw my arms about, eh, as if excited at the prospect of entering a new world? How naive! I might have known it would only be a bore. Perhaps, though, I was merely dreaming of a weird tale—in which case the enthusiasm was more pardonable."[9] Neither Lovecraft's cynicism nor his interest in weird fiction

developed quite this early, but both, as we shall see, were of early growth and long standing.

The sequence and details of the Lovecraft family's travels and residences in the period 1890–93 are very confused, as documentary evidence is lacking and Lovecraft's own testimony is not without obscurities and contradictions. In 1916 Lovecraft, after stating the fact of his birth in "the home of my mother's family," maintained that "my parents' actual residence at the time [was] Dorchester, Mass."[10] Dorchester is a suburb about four miles south of Boston. This residence in Dorchester has not been located; it will shortly be evident that these must have been rented quarters. For want of contradictory evidence, one must assume that Winfield and Susie Lovecraft took up residence in Dorchester as soon as they married on June 12, 1889, or after they returned from their honeymoon, if they went on one.

In another early letter (1915) Lovecraft states that "The Lovecrafts soon afterward [i.e., after his birth] took up their residence in Auburndale, Massachusetts."[11] Auburndale is now part of Newton, in the very far western edge of the metropolitan area of Boston, about ten miles from downtown Boston; in the 1890s it was likely a distinct community. It is at this point that confusion begins. What is the relationship between the Dorchester and Auburndale residences? What does "soon afterward" mean? In his 1916 letter he claims that "When I was two years old—or rather, a year & a half—my parents moved to Auburndale, Mass., sharing a house with the family of the well known poetess, Miss Louise Imogen Guiney . . ." But in a 1924 letter Lovecraft states that "At an early age—an age of very few months, in fact—the future master of literature emigrated to the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay, taking his parents along with him on account of a desire of his father's to transact business—commonplace thought—in the village of Boston."[12] Finally, in a late (1931) letter Lovecraft supplies a list of the states in which he has lived or travelled, and gives his first entry into Massachusetts as 1890.[13]

There is perhaps no actual contradiction in all this. My suspicion is that the Lovecrafts resumed their residence in Dorchester toward the end of 1890 and moved into the Auburndale area in 1892. There may even have been other temporary residences in the Boston metropolitan area. Indeed, Lovecraft states in 1934:

> My first memories are of the summer of 1892—just before my second birthday. We were then vacationing in Dudley, Mass., & I recall the house with its frightful attic water-tank & my rocking-horses at the head of the stairs. I recall also the plank walks laid to facilitate walking in rainy weather—& a wooded ravine, & a boy with a small rifle who let me pull the trigger while my mother held me.[14]

Dudley is in the west-central portion of Massachusetts, about fifteen miles south of Worcester and just north of the Connecticut border.

The crux of the matter is when (or if), and under what circumstances, the Lovecraft family lived with the poet Louise Imogen Guiney. Letters from Guiney to F. H. Day consulted by L. Sprague de Camp in the Library of Congress appear to allude to the Lovecrafts:

> [30 May 1892:] Two confounded heathen are coming to BOARD this summer. [14 June 1892:] There are two and a half of them, as I said atrocious Philistines, whom I hate with enthusiasm. [25 July 1892:] Our cursed inmates here, praise the Lord, go next month. [30 July 1892:] The unmentionables are gone, and we are our own mistresses again.[15]

But additional research by Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, has established that the "inmates" here referred to were some German guests, not the Lovecrafts.[16] Lovecraft himself states that "we stayed [at the Guineys'] during the winter of 1892–93";[17] and, pending further evidence, I think we are obliged to accept this statement provisionally. Winfield Scott Lovecraft's medical records (1893–98) list him as a resident of Auburndale,[18] and I suspect that the Lovecrafts may have resided with the Guineys for a short period of time until they found a place of their own (a rented house, no doubt), while they prepared to build a house there. Lovecraft makes clear that his parents had already bought a plot of land in Auburndale—he calls it a "home site"[19]—but that his father's illness in April 1893 "caused the sale of the property recently acquired there."[20] The sequence of Lovecraft's parents' residences seems, therefore, to be as follows:

> Dorchester, Mass. (12 June 1889?–mid-August? 1890)
> Providence, R.I. (mid-August? 1890–November? 1890)
> Dorchester, Mass. (November? 1890–winter? 1892)

Dudley, Mass. (early June? 1892 [vacation, perhaps of only a few weeks])
Auburndale, Mass. (Guiney residence) (winter 1892–93)
Auburndale, Mass. (rented quarters) (February?–April 1893)

Lovecraft says that Guiney (1861–1920) "had been educated in Providence, where she met my mother years before."[21] There is some little mystery around this. Guiney was indeed educated at the Academy of the Sacred Heart at 736 Smith Street in the Elmhurst section of Providence, attending the school from the year it opened in 1872[22] until 1879;[23] but Susie, as we have seen, attended the Wheaton Seminary in Norton, Massachusetts, for at least the period 1871–72. Although Guiney scholar Henry G. Fairbanks asserts that the Sacred Heart accepted Protestants as well as Catholics,[24] I think it is unlikely that Susie was actually sent there; nor is the academy especially close to the Phillips residence at 276 Broadway, being in the direction of North Providence. Faig, however, has now made the highly plausible conjecture that Susie's acquaintance with Guiney was facilitated, or even initiated, by a third party—the Banigan family. Joseph and Margaret Banigan were the Lovecrafts' next-door neighbours in Providence from the time Whipple Phillips built his residence at 194 (454) Angell Street around 1880, and at least two daughters of Joseph Banigan attended Sacred Heart Academy at the time when Guiney was attending the school. It is very likely that Susie's friendship with Guiney dates from this period.[25]

It is, of course, very possible that Lovecraft exaggerated the degree of his mother's acquaintance with Guiney; or perhaps his mother herself did so to her son. She may have stressed the Guiney connexion once she saw Lovecraft developing as a writer himself. The Lovecrafts were, indeed, very likely paying boarders at the Guiney residence, staying there only long enough to find their own rented quarters while preparing to build a house on the home site they had purchased.

Louise Imogen Guiney is of some interest in her own right. She was a literary prodigy of sorts, publishing her first book of poetry, *Songs at the Start* (1884), when she was twenty-three. Many other volumes of poetry and essays followed. She first moved to Auburndale with her mother after she graduated from the Sacred Heart in 1879; after a stay in England (1889–91), she returned to her home on Vista Avenue in Auburndale. At the time

of the Lovecrafts' visit she was about thirty-one, four years younger than Mrs Lovecraft.

Lovecraft's memories of Auburndale—especially of the Guiney residence—are numerous and clear:

> I distinctly recall the quiet, shady suburb as I saw it in 1892—& it is a rather curious psychological fact that at this early age I was impressed most of all with the railway bridge & the four-tracked Boston & Albany road which extended beneath it. . . . Miss Guiney kept a most extraordinary collection of St. Bernard dogs, all named after authors and poets. A shaggy gentleman by the classic name of Brontë was my particular favourite & companion, being ever in attendance on my chariot as my mother wheeled that vehicle through the streets & avenues. Brontë would permit me to place my fist in his mouth without biting me, & would snarl protectingly if any stranger approached me.[26]

These St Bernards actually enjoyed a fleeting fame of their own. A *Chicago Sunday Tribune* article of December 3, 1893, notes: "With her great St. Bernard dog, her mother, and a small kit of books, she set up Postmaster at Auburndale. . . . The St. Bernard became chief deputy and was put in charge of the department of transportation."[27] This writer evidently did not know of the existence of several dogs. Guiney had portraits painted of these dogs, including Brontë, and hung them in her parlour.[28] Ironically, although—as Donald R. Burleson discovered in 1977—the Guiney home was long ago torn down and another one put up in its place, the original barn of the house still survives and the dogs are buried in the back yard; Brontë's grave is readily visible.

Another clear memory Lovecraft had was the tableau of the railway bridge, which in a 1930 letter he clearly dates to the winter of 1892–93: "I can see myself as a child of 2½ on the railway bridge at Auburndale, Mass., looking across and downward at the business part of the town, and feeling the imminence of some wonder which I could neither describe nor fully conceive—and there has never been a subsequent hour of my life when kindred sensations have been absent."[29] If Lovecraft is being exact about his age here, then this vista must have been seen in late 1892 or early 1893. His first literary stirrings can be dated to this period:

> At the age of two I was a rapid talker, familiar with the alphabet from my blocks & picture-books, & . . . absolutely *metre-mad!* I could not read, but would repeat any poem of simple sort with unfaltering cadence. Mother Goose was my principal classic, & Miss Guiney would continually make me repeat parts of it; not that my rendition was necessarily notable, but because my age lent uniqueness to the performance.[30]

Elsewhere Lovecraft states that it was his father who, with his taste for military matters, taught him to recite Thomas Buchanan Read's "Sheridan's Ride" at the Guiney residence, where Lovecraft declaimed it "in a manner that brought loud applause—and painful egotism." Guiney himself seems to have taken to the infant; she would repeatedly ask, "Whom do you love?" to which Lovecraft would pipe back: "Louise Imogen Guiney!"[31]

Lovecraft was clearly proud of his family's association with Guiney; as late as 1930 he is claiming that Guiney "now ranks among the really major figures of American literature."[32] This is only a slight exaggeration: after Guiney's death in 1920 at least two books about her were published—one by her friend Alice Brown (1921) and another by an English critic, E. M. Tenison (1923). Her letters were published in two volumes in 1926, and she had been praised by Andrew Lang, Edmund Gosse, and many other noted critics. A volume on Guiney by Sister Mary Adorita appeared in 1962, and a book on her for Twayne's United States Authors Series by Henry G. Fairbanks dates to 1973—sixteen years before one on Lovecraft appeared in the series. In a candid moment, however, Lovecraft gave his own assessment of Guiney's work:

> *It is said* that her "verses" mean something, but I have never taken the time and trouble to find out just what! Yet Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes once predicted a bright future for her. She has written many books, and has an entrée to the best magazines, but I doubt if posterity will ever accord her a place even nearly approaching that of Dr. Holmes himself. . . . [H]e was a devotee of Pope, and has been called "the Modern Pope". But Miss Guiney followed vaguer literary deities, of whom the Miltonic spirit *Chaos* seems to be the leader.[33]

Lovecraft did not own her collected poetry (published in 1909 under the title *Happy Ending* and augmented in 1927), but did have a volume entitled *Three Heroines of New England Romance* (1895) containing a lengthy

biographical essay by Guiney, "Martha Hilton." The book was probably acquired by his mother.

Lovecraft himself had a faint encounter with Oliver Wendell Holmes, one of many close brushes with established writers he would have throughout his life: "Oliver Wendell Holmes came not infrequently to this [Guiney's] menage, and on one occasion (unremembered by the passenger) is said to have ridden the future *Weird Tales* disciple on his venerable knee."[34] Holmes (1809–1894) was at this time very old, and was in fact a close friend of Guiney (her *Goose-Quill Papers* is dedicated to him); no doubt he failed to remember for very long his meeting with the future master of the weird tale. Holmes had had an earlier and more memorable association with a relative of Lovecraft's: Dr Franklin Chase Clark, Lovecraft's uncle, had taken a course under Holmes at the Harvard Medical School, and as late as 1935 Lovecraft had in his possession a letter by Holmes congratulating Dr Clark on an article in a medical journal.[35] Dr Clark was, however, not acquainted with the Lovecraft family at this time; he would marry Lillian D. Phillips only in 1902. It was in part this early association with Holmes that led Lovecraft to rank highly his weird novel, *Elsie Venner* (1861). Lovecraft also owned Holmes's *Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* and his *Poetical Works.*

Lovecraft's early residences and travels were, of course, dictated by his father's business. His medical records list him as a "Commercial Traveller," and Lovecraft frequently affirms that his father's commercial interests kept him and his family in the Boston area during the period 1890–93. There is little reason to doubt Lovecraft when he says that "my image of him is but vague":[36] he lived with him for only the first two and a half years of his life, and perhaps less than that if his father's business trips took him very far afield for long periods of time, as there is some suggestion that they did.

The illness that struck Winfield Scott Lovecraft in April 1893 and forced him to remain in Butler Hospital in Providence until his death in July 1898 is worth examining in detail. The Butler Hospital medical record reads as follows:

> For a year past he has shown obscure symptoms of mental disease—doing and saying strange things at times; has, also, grown pale and thin in flesh. He continued his business, however, until Apr. 21, when he broke down completely while

> stopping in Chicago. He rushed from his room shouting that a chambermaid had insulted him, and that certain men were outraging his wife in the room above. He was extremely noisy and violent for two days, but was finally quieted by free use of the bromides, which made his removal here possible. We can get no history of specific disease.

Upon Winfield's death in 1898, the medical record diagnosed him as having "General Paralysis"; his death certificate listed the cause of death as "general paresis."[37] In 1898 (and, for that matter, today) these terms were virtually synonymous; Leland E. Hinsie and Robert Jean Campbell write in their *Psychiatric Dictionary* (4th ed., 1970): "Paresis, general . . . Also known as general paralysis of the insane (G.P.I.), dementia paralytica, Bayle's disease; the most malignant form of (tertiary) neurosyphilis consisting of direct invasion of the parenchyma of the brain producing a combination of both mental and neurologic symptoms."[38] What was not known in 1898—and would not be known until 1911, when the spirochete that causes syphilis was identified—was the connexion between "general paresis" and syphilis. Arthur S. Koki, who refused to believe that Winfield had syphilis, quotes Dr C. H. Jones, Administrator of Butler Health Center, as saying to him in 1960:

> . . . this term [general paresis] back in 1898 was a catch-all or waste-paper-basket term. It was found within the following decade that a substantial portion of the patients who displayed the general paresis symptoms did in fact have syphilis, but there are a number of other conditions which show the same set of symptoms. . . . Just sitting here I could name at least twenty other organic brain diseases.[39]

But M. Eileen McNamara, M.D., studying Winfield's medical record, concluded that the probability of Winfield's having tertiary syphilis is very strong:

> It is unlikely that he had a primary brain tumor such as a glioblastoma, or a brain metastasis, or his survival would have been shortened. If he had had a viral or bacterial meningitis, his survival would have been a matter of days. Tubercular meningitis is also rapidly fatal. The focal convulsions are also certain proof that WSL did not simply have manic-depression or

schizophrenia. Winfield Scott Lovecraft almost certainly died of syphilis.[40]

Winfield displayed nearly all the symptoms of tertiary syphilis as identified by Hinsie and Campbell: "(1) simple dementia, the most common type, with deterioration of intellect, affect and social behavior; (2) paranoid form, with persecutory delusions; (3) expansive or manic form, with delusions of grandiosity; or (4) depressive form, often with absurd nihilistic delusions."[41] The medical record clearly bears out at least the first three of these symptoms: (1) on April 28, 1893 "the patient . . . broke out violently this morning—rushed up and down the ward shouting and attacked watchman"; (2) April 29, 1893: "says three men—one a negro—in the room above trying to do violence to his wife"; May 15, 1893: "believes his food is poisoned"; June 25, 1893: "looks upon the officers and attendants as enemies and accuses them of stealing his clothing, watch, bonds, &c."; (3) under the heading "Mental Condition": "boasts of his many friends; his business success, his family, and above all his great strength—asking writer to see how perfectly his muscles are developed". For the fourth symptom—depression—the record is not sufficiently detailed to make a conjecture.

If, then, it is admitted that Winfield had syphilis, the question is how he contracted it. This is, of course, at this point impossible to ascertain with certainty. McNamara reminds us that the "latent period between inoculation and the development of tertiary syphilis is ten to twenty years," so that Winfield "might have been infected as early as eighteen or as late as twenty-eight, well before his marriage at age thirty-five." It is, unfortunately, exactly this period of Winfield's life about which nothing is known. It is difficult to doubt that he contracted syphilis either from a prostitute or from some other sex partner prior to his marriage, either while attending the military academy or—despite Koki's scoffing of "that type of salesman who has become the butt of a thousand smoking car jokes"[42]—during his stint as a "Commercial Traveller," if indeed that began so early as the age of twenty-eight. It may be going too far to infer that Winfield was some sort of Casanova or *roué,* but the two recorded instances of his hallucination that his wife was being raped certainly point to some form of sexual obsession. I shall have more to say on the racist content of one of his hallucinations later.

One remarkable fact is that Winfield's cousin, Joshua Elliot Lovecraft (1845–1898), died of "general paralysis" on November 8, 1898, a few

months after Winfield.[43] He had been committed to the state hospital in Rochester, New York, on April 10, 1896, dying after two and a half years. Richard D. Squires has unearthed Joshua's medical records and notes that some of his symptoms bear uncanny similarities to those of Winfield. In both cases there is mention of an "ataxic" gait (i.e., lack of coordination in locomotion), and, incredibly, the "alleged cause" of Joshua's illness is "business anxiety," exactly like Winfield. There seems little doubt that Joshua also died of syphilis. Although we know little of Joshua's life, hence cannot speak definitively on any relationship between him and Winfield, their similar fate is highly suggestive.

The nature of Winfield's ailment necessarily raises the question of his sexual relations with his wife. We of course have no grounds for any conjecture on the matter; they did, after all, conceive one son, and might presumably have conceived more had Winfield not fallen ill. The Phillips women tended to be prolific, although Susie's older sister Lillian produced no offspring and her younger sister Annie's two children died before reaching adulthood. Sonia H. Davis, Lovecraft's wife, made the following remarkable assertion in 1969: "In my opinion, the elder Lovecraft, having been a travelling salesman for the Gorham Silversmiths, and his wife being a 'touch-me-not,' took his sexual pleasures wherever he could find them; for H. P. never had a sister or a brother, and his mother, probably having been sex-starved against her will, lavished both her love and her hate on her only child."[44] I believe this is entirely a conjecture on Sonia's part; she obviously did not know Lovecraft's mother (she and Lovecraft first met six weeks after his mother's death), much less his father, and I doubt whether any of the above was something Lovecraft actually told her. It is likely both that Susie was a virgin prior to her marriage and that she remained celibate following her husband's death, but the fact that she and her husband conceived a son about six months after their marriage certainly suggests fairly normal sexual relations given their social position and the mores of the times, and especially in light of the frequent travelling her husband must have done.

The course of Winfield's illness makes horrifying reading. There are frequent references in the first few months of his stay to being "violent and noisy"; on April 29, 1893, he was given a small dose of morphine to quiet him. By August 29 he seemed to have made a recovery of sorts: "A few days ago patient was dressed and permitted to go about ward and into

yard"; but he soon relapsed. Frequent convulsions—some occurring only on the left side of his body (which, as McNamara states, "indicat[es] a lesion of the right brain")—occur in November, but by December 15 there was "marked improvement."

At this point the entries in the medical record become quite infrequent, sometimes as many as six months passing before a notation is made. On May 29, 1894, he was allowed into the hall and airing-court even though he is "very noisy at times." By December 5 Winfield was said to be failing, with frequent convulsions; it was thought that he had only days to live, but then he began to rally. By May 10, 1895, his physical condition was said to have "improved much since last writing" even though "mentally, he has continued to become more demented." There is little change for a year and a half. On December 16, 1896, Winfield developed an ulcer on the penis, possibly from masturbation (the initial sign of syphilis is such an ulcer, but Winfield was long past this stage). His condition began to decline markedly by the spring of 1898, and blood and mucus are found in his stool. By May he developed constipation and required an enema every three days. On July 12 he developed a temperature of 103? and a pulse of 106, with frequent convulsions. On July 18 he "passe[d] from one convulsion into another," and he was pronounced dead the next day.

The trauma experienced by Susie Lovecraft over this excruciating period of five years—with doctors ignorant of how to treat Winfield's illness, and with periods of false hope where the patient seems to recover only to lapse into more serious physical and mental deterioration—can only be imagined. When Susie herself was admitted to Butler Hospital in 1919, her doctor, F. J. Farnell, "found disorder had been evidenced for fifteen years; that in all, abnormality had existed at least twenty-six years."[45] It is no accident that the onset of her "abnormality" dates to 1893.

It is of some interest that although Winfield is listed on his medical record as a resident of Auburndale, his wife's residence is given as 194 Angell Street. I do not know that much need be made of this; there has been speculation that Winfield and Susie were somehow separated, and that she may have moved back to her father's home in Providence well before the date of April 1893 given by Lovecraft. It is, however, possible that the indication on the medical record refers merely to the fact that Susie (with Howard) had moved back to Providence immediately upon the onset of Winfield's illness; there would be no reason for remaining in Auburndale,

and the home site that she and Winfield had purchased was quickly sold. We simply do not have enough information to make a hypothesis on this issue—certainly not enough to warrant the inference that Susie and Winfield had had some sort of falling out—and I think we must accept Lovecraft's testimony on the matter unless hard evidence to the contrary emerges.

I do not know that much attention has been paid to why Winfield was in Chicago at the time of his attack. I have been informed that the Gorham Company owned one-third of a silversmith firm in Chicago called Spaulding & Co.,[46] and it is conceivable that Winfield (if indeed he was working for Gorham) had been sent out there for a salesmen's meeting or something of the sort. He could not have gone there permanently, else his residence would not have been given on the medical record as Auburndale. Lovecraft makes no mention of this Chicago trip or any other trips by Winfield outside of the Boston area; perhaps, therefore, Winfield was somewhat more peripatetic than Lovecraft suggests.

The critical issue, of course, is what—if anything—Lovecraft himself knew of the nature and extent of his father's illness. He was two years and eight months old when his father was committed, and seven years and eleven months old when his father died. If he was already reciting poetry at two and a half, there is scarcely any question that he must at least have been aware that something peculiar had happened—why else would he and his mother have moved suddenly back from Auburndale to the maternal home in Providence?

It is obvious from Lovecraft's remarks about his father's illness that he was intentionally kept in the dark about its specific nature. One wonders, indeed, whether Susie herself knew all its particulars. Lovecraft's first known statement about his father's illness occurs in a letter of 1915: "In 1893 my father was seized with a complete paralytic stroke, due to insomnia and an overstrained nervous system, which took him to the hospital for the remaining five years of his life. He was never afterward conscious . . ."[47] It need hardly be said at this point that nearly every part of this utterance is false. When Lovecraft refers to a "complete paralytic stroke," he is either remembering some deliberate falsehood he was told (i.e., that his father was paralysed), or he is making a false inference from the medical record ("General Paralysis") or some account of it that he heard. The medical record does confirm that Winfield was overworked

("Has been actively engaged in business for several years and for the last two years has worked very hard"), and no doubt Lovecraft was told this also; and the remark about Winfield not being conscious may have been the excuse that was given for not visiting his father in the hospital. And yet, Lovecraft must have known something was not quite right here: he knew that Butler Hospital was not a place for the treatment of ordinary physical maladies but was in fact an insane asylum.

Lovecraft's later references to his father's illness are variations on the 1915 statement. In 1916 he states that "In April 1893 my father was stricken with a complete paralysis resulting from a brain overtaxed with study & business cares. He lived for five years at a hospital, but was never again able to move hand or foot, or to utter a sound."[48] This last statement is a remarkable elaboration, and I think that Lovecraft is again simply making his own inferences from the hints and outright deceptions he must have received about his father. I am certainly not criticising Lovecraft's mother for not elaborating upon the nature of her husband's illness: there are some things that one does not tell a three-year-old—or even an eight-year-old. Moreover, Lovecraft is under no obligation to be wholly candid about such a delicate matter even to close friends or correspondents.

I do not think that Lovecraft knew very much about his father's illness and death, but I think he wondered a great deal. One matter of transcendent importance is whether Lovecraft ever saw his father in Butler Hospital. He never says explicitly that he did not, but his late statement that "I was never in a hospital till 1924"[49] certainly suggests that he himself believed (or claimed to others) that he never did so. There has been speculation that Lovecraft did indeed visit his father in the hospital;[50] but there is absolutely no documentary evidence of this. I believe that this speculation is an inference from the fact that on two occasions—August 29, 1893, and May 29, 1894—Winfield was taken out into the "yard" and the "airing-court"; but there is no reason to believe that the three- or four-year-old Lovecraft, or his mother, or anyone at all, visited him at this or any other time.

Another highly significant but unresolvable issue is the provocative statement in the medical record that "For a year past he has shown obscure symptoms of mental disease—doing and saying strange things at times." This information must have been supplied to the doctors at Butler Hospital by whoever had accompanied Winfield at his admission, whether it be Susie

herself or Whipple Phillips. The question becomes: To what degree was Lovecraft himself aware of his father's odd behaviour? If this behaviour had been manifesting itself as early as around April 1892, it would have predated the entire stay with the Guineys and have gone back to the family's days at Dorchester (if that is where they were at this time). If Winfield had been working "very hard" for the last two years (i.e., since about the beginning of 1891), then was the vacation in Dudley in the summer of 1892 a means of giving him some much-needed rest? Again, we can only conjecture.

Perhaps more important than all these matters is the image and tokens of his father which Lovecraft retained in maturity. There were, in the first place, some tangible relics: he reports inheriting his father's two-volume edition of *War and Peace,* adding wryly: "The fact that its text leaves are cut, plus the evidence supply'd by the fly-leaves that they were originally uncut, leads me to the conclusion that my father must have surviv'd a voyage thro' it; tho' it is possible that he merely amus'd himself of an evening by running a paper knife thro' it."[51] The bantering tone is very singular; almost all other references to his father are sombre or at best neutral.

Lovecraft retained his father's copy of James Stormonth's *Dictionary of the English Language* (1st edition 1871; Lovecraft's edition is a revised edition of 1885). This is of somewhat greater importance, for Lovecraft remarks that Stormonth was "a Cambridge man" and "esteemed as a conservative authority & used by my father."[52] This connects with Lovecraft's assertion of his father's preservation of his English heritage. Remarking that "In America, the Lovecraft line made some effort to keep from becoming nasally Yankeeised," he continues: ". . . my father was constantly warned not to fall into Americanisms of speech and provincial vulgarities of dress and mannerisms—so much so that he was generally regarded as an Englishman despite his birth in Rochester, N.Y. I can just recall his extremely precise and cultivated British voice . . ."[53] We need look no further for the source of Lovecraft's own Anglophilia—his pride in the British Empire, his use of British spelling variants, and his desire for close cultural and political ties between the United States and England. He notes that

> I suppose I heard people mentioning that my father was 'an Englishman' . . . My aunts remember that as early as the age of

> three I wanted a British officer's red uniform, and paraded around in a nondescript 'coat' of brilliant crimson, originally part of a less masculine costume, and in picturesque juxtaposition with the kilts which with me represented the twelfth Royal Highland Regiment. Rule, Britannia![54]

At about the age of six, "when my grandfather told me of the American Revolution, I shocked everyone by adopting a dissenting view . . . Grover Cleveland was grandpa's ruler, but Her Majesty, Victoria, Queen of Great Britain & Ireland & Empress of India commanded my allegiance. 'God Save the Queen!' was a stock phrase of mine."[55] It would be going too far to suggest that Lovecraft's father actually induced his son to take the British side in the American revolution; but it is clear that the maternal side of his family, proud Yankees as they were, did not share that view. Winfield Townley Scott reports that a "family friend" referred to Winfield as a "pompous Englishman."[56] This appears to be Ella Sweeney, a schoolteacher who knew the Lovecrafts from as early as their 1892 vacation in Dudley; the information was passed on to Scott by a friend of Sweeney's, Myra H. Blosser.[57] Even individuals beyond Lovecraft's immediate family appear to have found Winfield's English bearing a little trying.

It is poignant to hear Lovecraft tell of his one genuine memory of his father: "I can just remember my father—an immaculate figure in black coat & vest & grey striped trousers. I had a childish habit of slapping him on the knees & shouting 'Papa, you look just like a young man!' I don't know where I picked that phrase up; but I was vain & self-conscious, & given to repeating things which I saw tickled my elders."[58] This litany of his father's clothing—"his immaculate black morning-coat and vest, ascot tie, and striped grey trousers"—is found in an earlier letter, and Lovecraft adds touchingly: "I have myself worn some of his old ascots and wing collars, left all too immaculate by his early illness and death . . ."[59] The photograph of the Lovecraft family in 1892 shows Winfield wearing this attire, while Lovecraft himself appears to be wearing some of his father's clothing in the photograph of him printed on the cover of the September 1915 *United Amateur*.

Winfield Scott Lovecraft was buried on July 21, 1898, in the Phillips plot in Swan Point Cemetery, Providence. There is every reason to believe that young Howard attended this service, even though the very brief notice

in the *Providence Journal* does not identify the attendees.[60] The mere fact that he was buried here is (as Faig has noted[61]) a testimony to Whipple Phillips's generosity of heart, and perhaps even an indication that Whipple paid for Winfield's medical expenses; Winfield's estate was valued at $10,000 upon his death,[62] a substantial sum (Whipple's own estate was valued at only $25,000), and it is unlikely that it could have been so great if it had been used for full-time hospital costs for more than five years.

The immediate effect of the hospitalisation of Winfield Scott Lovecraft was to bring the two-and-a-half-year-old Howard more closely than ever under the influence of his mother, his two aunts (both of whom, as yet unmarried, were still residing at 454 Angell Street), his grandmother Robie, and especially his grandfather Whipple. Naturally, his mother's influence was at the outset the dominant one. Lovecraft remarks that his mother was "permanently stricken with grief"[63] upon her husband's illness, although one wonders whether shame and loathing were intermixed with this emotion. We have already seen that the onset of Susie's own psychiatric trouble is likely to have begun at this time. The Providence city directory for 1896–99 anomalously lists Susie as "Miss Winfield S. Lovecraft"; it is unlikely that this error would have occurred four years running by mere accident.

For his part, Whipple Van Buren Phillips proved to be an entirely satisfactory replacement for the father Lovecraft never knew. Lovecraft's simple statement that at this time "my beloved grandfather . . . became the centre of my entire universe"[64] is all we need to know. Whipple cured his grandson of his fear of the dark by daring him at the age of five to walk through a sequence of dark rooms at 454 Angell Street;[65] he showed Lovecraft the art objects he brought from his travels to Europe; he wrote him letters when travelling on business; and he even recounted extemporaneous weird tales to the boy. I shall elaborate upon some of these points later; here I wish to give only one indication of how completely Whipple had replaced Winfield in Lovecraft's consciousness. In 1920 Lovecraft had a dream that was the ultimate inspiration for his seminal tale, "The Call of Cthulhu" (1926). In the dream he has made a bas-relief and presents it to a museum curator, who asks him who he is. Lovecraft replies: "My name is Lovecraft—H. P. Lovecraft—grandson of Whipple V.

Phillips."[66] He does not say "son of Winfield Scott Lovecraft." At the time of this dream Whipple Phillips had been dead for sixteen years.

And so, with Whipple virtually taking the place of his father, Howard and his mother seemed to lead a normal enough life; indeed, with Whipple's finances still robust, Lovecraft had an idyllic and rather spoiled early childhood. One of the first things that came to his notice was his immediate surroundings. Lovecraft frequently emphasised the quasi-rural nature of his birthplace, situated as it was at what was then the very edge of the developed part of town:

> . . . I was born in the year 1890 in a small town, & in a section of that town which during my childhood lay not more than four blocks (N. & E.) from the actually primal & open New England countryside, with rolling meadows, stone walls, cart-paths, brooks, deep woods, mystic ravines, lofty river-bluffs, planted fields, white antient farmhouses, barns, & byres, gnarled hillside orchards, great lone elms, & all the authentick marks of a rural milieu unchanged since the 17th & 18th centuries. . . . My house, tho' an urban one on a paved street, had spacious grounds & stood next to an open field with a stone wall . . . where great elms grew & my grandfather had corn & potatoes planted, & a *cow* pastured under the gardener's care.[67]

Lovecraft could not have had these memories much earlier than the age of three or four; in fact, he states in a late letter that "When I was 3 years old I felt a strange magic & fascination (not unmixed with a vague unease & perhaps a touch of mild *fear*) in the ancient houses of Providence's venerable hill . . ., with their fanlighted doorways, railed flights of steps, & stretches of brick sidewalk . . ."[68]

What is frequently ignored is that this return to Providence from Auburndale essentially allowed Lovecraft to grow up a native of Rhode Island rather than of Massachusetts, as he is very likely to have done otherwise; he himself emphasises this fact in an early letter, saying that the return to the Phillips household "caus[ed] me to grow up as a complete Rhode-Islander."[69] And yet, Lovecraft retained a passionate fondness for Massachusetts and its colonial heritage, finding wonder and pleasure in the towns of Marblehead, Salem, and Newburyport, and the wild rural terrain of the western part of the state. But the heritage of religious freedom in Rhode Island, and the contrasting early history of Puritan theocracy in its

northeasterly neighbour, caused Massachusetts to become a sort of topographical and cultural "other"—attractive yet repulsive, familiar yet alien—in both his life and his work. It is not too early to stress that many more of Lovecraft's tales are set in Massachusetts than in Rhode Island; and in most of those set in the latter, Lovecraft is careful to eliminate completely the horrors he has raised, whereas those in the Massachusetts tales linger and fester over the generations and centuries.

Lovecraft makes clear that his fondness for the antiquities of his native city were of very early growth:

> . . . how I used to drag my mother around on the ancient hill when I was 4 or 5! I hardly know what I was after, but the centuried houses with their fanlights & knockers & railed steps & small-paned windows had a strong & significant effect of some sort on me. This world, I felt, was a different one from the Victorian world of French roofs & plate glass & concrete sidewalks & open lawns that I was born into . . . It was a magic, secret world, & it had a *realness* beyond that of the home neighbourhood.[70]

Who can fail to recall the description of the young Charles Dexter Ward, whose "famous walks began" when he was a very small boy, "first with his impatiently dragged nurse, and then alone in dreamy meditation"? This combination of wonder and terror in Lovecraft's early appreciation of Providence makes me think of a letter of 1920 in which he attempts to specify the foundations of his character: ". . . I should describe mine own nature as tripartite, my interests consisting of three parallel and dissociated groups—(a) Love of the strange and the fantastic. (b) Love of the abstract truth and of scientific logick. (c) Love of the ancient and the permanent. Sundry combinations of these three strains will probably account for all my odd tastes and eccentricities."[71] This is really a remarkably apt summary, and we will see that all three of these traits emerged in the first eight or nine years of his life; but the emphasis must be laid on the idea of "combinations"—or, rather, the likelihood that the third trait (which, if Lovecraft's testimony is to be believed, seems to be of earliest development) led both directly and indirectly to the first.

In particular, what seems to have emerged at a remarkably early age in Lovecraft's consciousness is the notion of *time*—time as "some especial enemy of mine,"[72] one that he was always seeking to defeat, confound, or

subvert. Occasionally Lovecraft tried to trace the origin of this feeling, and in a letter he enumerated certain possibilities: the illustrations in an unspecified book over which he pored at the age of two and a half or three, before he could read; the ancient houses and steeples of Providence; and the "fascinating isolation of the 18th century books in a black, windowless attic room"[73]—all appear to have played a part. Lovecraft states that his first acute realisation of time was

> when I saw newspapers bearing the heavily-inked date-line TUESDAY, JANUARY 1, 1895. *1895!!* To me the symbol *1894* had represented an eternity—the eternity of *the present* as distinguished from such things as 1066 or 1492 or 1642 or 1776 —& the idea of personally outliving that eternity was absorbingly impressive to me . . . I shall never forget the sensation I derived from the idea of *moving through time* (if forward, why not backward?) which that '95 date-line gave me. [74]

Lovecraft frequently, in later years, yearned to move backward in time, and many of his stories carry out that wish, plunging their narrators not merely to the eighteenth century but into a prehistoric world hundreds of millions of years ago.

It was that "black, windowless attic room" at 454 Angell Street which proved to be the gateway to a remarkable intellectual development, one that very early on encompassed not only antiquarianism but weird fiction, belles lettres, and science. Lovecraft states frequently that he began reading at the age of four, and one of his earliest books appears to have been Grimm's *Fairy Tales.* We do not know what edition of Grimm he (or, rather, his family) owned; no doubt it was some bowdlerised version suitable for the very young. Nor do we know exactly what Lovecraft derived from Grimm; at one point he merely remarks that the fairy tales "were my truly representative diet, & I lived mostly in a mediaeval world of imagination."[75] Some of the Grimm tales are very peculiar: one, "The Story of the Youth Who Went Forth to Learn What Fear Was," tells of a young man who does not know what it is to be afraid, and so he goes to a haunted castle and phlegmatically fends off various supernatural forces; in the end he is still unable to feel fear. The imagery of this fairy tale may have stimulated Lovecraft, although one cannot know whether it was included in the edition he read.

The next year, at the age of five, Lovecraft discovered a seminal book in his aesthetic development: the *Arabian Nights.* There is some confusion as to which exact edition Lovecraft read. The copy found in his library—*The Arabian Nights Entertainments,* selected and edited by Andrew Lang (London: Longmans, Green, 1898)—was given to him by his mother; it bears the inscription in her handwriting: "Howard Phillips Lovecraft / From your Mother *Christmas 1898."* Now clearly Lovecraft could not have read this edition—which Lang says he translated (and, very likely, bowdlerised) from the French translation of Galland—at the age of five. There were many competing editions of the *Arabian Nights* available at this time, not the least of which was, of course, Sir Richard Burton's landmark translation in sixteen volumes in 1885–86. Lovecraft certainly did not read this translation, either, as it is entirely unexpurgated and reveals, as few previous translations did, just how bawdy the *Arabian Nights* actually are. (Interestingly, in light of Lovecraft's later racial views, several tales speak with outrage about sexual encounters between black men and Islamic women.) My guess is that Lovecraft read one of the following three translations:

> *The Arabian Nights' Entertainments: Six Stories.* Edited by Samuel Eliot; translated by Jonathan Scott. Authorized for use in the Boston Public Schools. Boston: Lee & Shepard; New York: C. T. Dillington, 1880.
> *The Thousand and One Nights; or, The Arabian Nights' Entertainments.* Chicago & New York: Bedford, Clarke & Co., 1885.
>
> *The Arabian Nights.* Edited by Everett H. Hale; [translated by Edward William Lane]. Boston: Ginn & Co., 1888.

The Lane translation in particular went through many editions.

This matter is not of especial importance; what is significant is the book's effect upon Lovecraft:

> . . . how many dream-Arabs have the *Arabian Nights* bred! I ought to know, since at the age of 5 I was one of them! I had not then encountered Graeco-Roman myth, but found in Lang's *Arabian Nights* a gateway to glittering vistas of wonder and

> freedom. It was then that I invented for myself the name of Abdul Alhazred, and made my mother take me to all the Oriental curio shops and fit me up an Arabian corner in my room.[76]

There are at least two false statements here. First, I have already noted that it could not be *Lang's* edition of the *Arabian Nights* that Lovecraft read at this time. (Susie's presenting him the book for Christmas in 1898 was clearly a response to the fondness he had already exhibited for the work.) Second is the matter of the coining of the name Abdul Alhazred. In his most important formal autobiographical essay, "Some Notes on a Nonentity" (1933), written nearly two years after the letter just quoted (where he claims to have invented the name himself), he states that Abdul Alhazred was a name "some kindly elder had suggested to me as a typical Saracen name." Another letter clarifies the matter: "I can't quite recall where I did get *Abdul Alhazred.* There is a dim recollection which associates it with a certain elder —the family lawyer, as it happens, but I can't remember whether I asked him to make up an Arabic name for me, or whether I merely asked him to criticise a choice I had otherwise made."[77] The family lawyer was Albert A. Baker, who would be Lovecraft's legal guardian until 1911. His coinage (if indeed it was his) was a singularly infelicitous one from the point of view of Arabic grammar, since the result is a reduplicated article (Abd*ul Al* hazred). A more likely coinage would have been Abd el-Hazred, although this doesn't much have of a ring to it. In any event, the name stuck, as every reader of Lovecraft knows.

The *Arabian Nights* may not have definitively steered Lovecraft toward the realm of weird fiction, but it certainly did not impede his progress in that direction. It is frequently not noticed that a relatively small proportion of tales from the *Arabian Nights* are actually supernatural; even the celebrated story of Sindbad is largely a series of adventures on the high seas. There are, of course, tales of crypts, tombs, caves, deserted cities, and other elements that would form significant features in Lovecraft's imaginative landscape; but we are still in the realm of legend, where the supernatural is presented less as an appalling defiance of natural law than as a wonder to be accepted with relatively little fanfare.

What might have finally stacked the deck in favour of the weird for Lovecraft was his unexpected discovery of an edition of Coleridge's *Rime of the Ancient Mariner* illustrated by Gustave Doré, which he stumbled

upon at the house of a friend of his family's at the age of six. The edition he saw is likely to have been the first American edition of the poem containing Doré's illustrations, *The Rime of the Ancient Mariner* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1876), which went through many printings. Here is the impression the poem, and the pictures, made upon a young Lovecraft:

> . . . imagine a tall, stately Victorian library in a house sometimes visited with my mother or aunts. Marble mantel—thick bearskin rug—endless shelves of books. . . . A house of adults, so that a 6-year-old caller's interest strays most naturally to the shelves & great centre table & mantel. Fancy then the discovery of a great atlas-sized gift-book leaning against the mantel & having on the cover gilt letters reading "With Illustrations by Gustave Doré". The title didn't matter—for didn't I know the dark, supernal magic of the Doré pictures in our Dante & Milton at home? I open the book—& behold a hellish picture of a corpse-ship with ragged sails under a waning moon! I turn a page . . . . . God! A spectral, half-transparent ship on whose deck a corpse & a skeleton play at dice! By this time I am flat on the bearskin rug & ready to thumb through the whole book . . . of which I've never heard before. . . . . A sea full of rotting serpents, & death-fires dancing in the black air . . . . . troops of angels & daemons . . . . . crazed, dying, distorted forms . . . . . dead men rising in their putrescence & lifelessly manning the dank rigging of a fate-doomed barque . . . .[78]

Who could resist such a spell? If Lovecraft read this book at the age of six, it must have occurred between August 1896 and August 1897. He may have done so at the home of Whipple's cousin Theodore W. Phillips, who lived nearby at 256 (later numbered 612) Angell Street; but Lovecraft clearly identifies the location as a "friend's" house (by which he probably means a friend of his family), and it would seem odd to describe his great-uncle as such. In any event, if the *Ancient Mariner* was the principal *literary* influence in the early development of Lovecraft's taste for the weird, a searing personal event may have been as significant.

Lovecraft's paternal grandfather died in 1895, but Lovecraft gives no indication that this event affected him or his family in any way; indeed, he states that he never saw his paternal grandfather in person[79]—an indication, perhaps, of the degree to which the Lovecraft side of the family

had become (or perhaps always remained) strangers to the Phillips side, especially after the illness and hospitalisation of Winfield Scott Lovecraft. But an event that occurred on January 26, 1896, did seriously affect the five-and-a-half-year-old boy: the death of his maternal grandmother, Robie Alzada Place Phillips.

It was, perhaps, not so much the loss of a family member—to whom Lovecraft does not appear to have been especially close—as its effect upon the remaining members of the family that so affected the young boy: ". . . the death of my grandmother plunged the household into a gloom from which it never fully recovered. The black attire of my mother & aunts terrified & repelled me to such an extent that I would surreptitiously pin bits of bright cloth or paper to their skirts for sheer relief. They had to make a careful survey of their attire before receiving callers or going out!" Seriocomically as Lovecraft narrates these events, twenty years after the fact, it is evident that they left a profound impression upon him. The aftermath was quite literally nightmarish:

> And then it was that my former high spirits received their damper. I began to have nightmares of the most hideous description, peopled with *things* which I called "night-gaunts"—a compound word of my own coinage. I used to draw them after waking (perhaps the idea of these figures came from an edition de luxe of *Paradise Lost* with illustrations by Doré, which I discovered one day in the east parlor). In dreams they were wont to whirl me through space at a sickening rate of speed, the while fretting & impelling me with their detestable tridents. It is fully fifteen years—aye, more—since I have seen a "night-gaunt", but even now, when half asleep & drifting vaguely along over a sea of childhood thoughts, I feel a thrill of fear . . . & instinctively *struggle to keep awake.* That was my own prayer back in '96—each night—to *keep awake* & ward off the night-gaunts![80]

And so begins Lovecraft's career as one of the great dreamers—or, to coin a term that must be coined for the phenomenon, nightmarers—of literary history. Even though it would be another ten years from the writing of this letter, and hence a full thirty years after these dreams, that he would utilise the night-gaunts in his work, it is already evident that his boyhood dreams contain many conceptual and imagistic kernels of his mature tales: the cosmic backdrop; the utterly outré nature of his malignant entities (in a late

letter he describes them as "black, lean, rubbery things with bared, barbed tails, bat-wings, and *no faces at all* "[81]), so different from conventional demons, vampires, or ghosts; and the helpless passivity of the protagonist-victim, at the mercy of forces infinitely more powerful than himself. It would, of course, take a long time for Lovecraft to evolve his theory and practice of weird fiction; but with dreams like these at such an early age—and in the last year of his life he confessed that, of his subsequent nightmares, "even the worst is pallid beside the real 1896 product"[82]—his career as a writer of horror tales comes to seem like an inevitable destiny.

Lovecraft's family—in particular his mother—must, however, have been concerned for his physical and psychological health at the onset of his dreams, and at what may have been a general pattern of gloomy or depressed behaviour. Lovecraft speaks frequently in later years of a trip to western Rhode Island taken in 1896, but does not speak of its purpose or effect. It is difficult to deny that this trip to ancestral lands was, at least in part, an attempt by his family to rid him of his nightmares and his general malaise. Then, again, perhaps the entire family—bereaved husband Whipple, Robie's daughters Lillie, Susie, and Annie—were in need of solace. (The trip would not have been made for the purpose of burying Robie in Foster, for she was laid to rest in the Phillips plot at Swan Point Cemetery.)

Lovecraft reports visiting the homestead of James Wheaton Phillips (1830–1901), Whipple's older brother, on Johnson Road in Foster, spending two weeks there.[83] It is not entirely clear who accompanied him, but his mother must surely have come along, and perhaps both aunts as well. The ancient house, nestled against a hill and near a meadow with a winding brook flowing through it, must surely have encouraged both Lovecraft's yearning for the rural landscape and his burgeoning antiquarianism; but a still more remarkable event stimulated Lovecraft and effected perhaps his first concrete defeat of his personal enemy, Time:

> In 1896, when I was six years old, I was taken to visit in the Western Rhode Island region whence my maternal stock came; and there met an ancient gentlewoman—a Mrs. Wood, daughter to a rebel officer in the late unfortunate uprising against His Majesty's lawful authority—who was celebrating with proper pride her hundredth birthday. Mrs. Wood was born in the year 1796, and could walk and talk when Genl. Washington breath'd

> his last. And now, in 1896, I was conversing with her—with one who had talked to people in periwigs and three-cornered hats, and had studied from schoolbooks with the long s! Young as I was, the idea gave me a tremendous feeling of cosmic victory over Time . . .[84]

Such personal contact with an individual who was living in Lovecraft's beloved eighteenth century would not have had the obvious impact that it did if Lovecraft had not already become fascinated with the eighteenth century through the books in that "black, windowless attic room" at 454 Angell Street. And yet, it is not entirely clear at what precise age Lovecraft began to haunt that room; one must believe that it was perhaps around the age of five or six. In 1931 he maintained that "I think I am probably the only living person to whom the ancient 18th century idiom is actually a prose and poetic mother-tongue," and he explained how this came about:

> At home all the main bookcases in library, parlours, dining-room, and elsewhere were full of standard Victorian junk, most of the brown-leather old-timers . . . having been banished to a windowless third-story trunk-room which had sets of shelves. But what did I do? What, pray, but go with candles and kerosene lamp to that obscure and nighted aërial crypt—leaving the sunny downstairs 19th century flat, and boring my way back through the decades into the late 17th, 18th and early 19th century by means of innumerable crumbling and long-s'd tomes of every size and nature—*Spectator, Tatler, Guardian, Idler, Rambler,* Dryden, Pope, Thomson, Young, Tickell, Cooke's *Hesiod,* Ovid by Various Hands, Francis's Horace and Phaedrus, &c. &c. &c. . . .[85]

It's a wonder Lovecraft didn't burn the house down with that candle and kerosene lamp. Lovecraft added, "thank God I have 'em yet as the *main* items of my own modest collection"; true enough, his collection of books of or about the eighteenth century (some, of course, obtained in later years) is impressive. It is evident from the above list, and from the books in his library, that what especially attracted him in eighteenth-century literature was poetry and prose nonfiction; he remarked frequently that the early novelists appealed to him much less, noting at one point that the aspect of the eighteenth century represented by Fielding was "a side that Mr. Addison, Dr. Johnson, Mr. Cowper, Mr. Thomson, and all my best friends

both hated and lamented."[86] No doubt the sexual frankness of Fielding, the buffoonery of Smollett, and the utter subversion of eighteenth-century rationalism represented by Sterne did not please either the young or the older Lovecraft at all.

This eighteenth-century predilection, especially in poetry, led indirectly to a literary and philosophical interest of still greater importance: classical antiquity. At the age of six[87] Lovecraft read Hawthorne's *Wonder-Book* (1852) and *Tanglewood Tales* (1853), and professed himself "enraptured by the Hellenic myths even in their Teutonised form" ("A Confession of Unfaith"). Lovecraft is here merely echoing Hawthorne's preface to *A Wonder-Book:* "In the present version [the myths] may have lost much of their aspect . . ., and have, perhaps assumed a Gothic or romantic guise."[88] These tales are narrated in a conversational manner, each myth being told by a college student, Eustace Bright, to a group of children. *A Wonder-Book* contains the myths of Perseus and Medusa, King Midas, Pandora, the Golden Apples of the Hesperides, Baucis and Philemon, and the Chimaera. *Tanglewood Tales* recounts the stories of the Minotaur, the Pygmies, the Dragon's Teeth, Circe's Palace, the Pomegranate Seeds, and the Golden Fleece. While most of the tales are originally Greek, it is likely that Hawthorne relied much on Ovid's *Metamorphoses* for descriptive details; he used it exclusively for the Baucis and Philemon story, which is found only there.

From Hawthorne Lovecraft naturally graduated to Thomas Bulfinch's *The Age of Fable* (1855), the first of three simplified rewritings of myths by Bulfinch; this, along with the other two—*The Age of Chivalry* (1858) and *Legends of Charlemagne* (1863)—constitute *Bulfinch's Mythology.* I see no evidence that Lovecraft ever read these latter two volumes, as he never expressed any interest whatever in the Middle Ages. The copy of *The Age of Fable* found in his library appears to date to 1898, so he must have read an earlier edition and obtained (or was given) this copy later.

There is no reason to wonder at Lovecraft's becoming captivated by Graeco-Roman myth upon reading Bulfinch; for his artless simplicity retains freshness and charm even after the lapse of more than a century and a half. His simple piety is wholly ingenuous: "The creation of the world is a problem naturally fitted to excite the liveliest interest of man, its inhabitant. The ancient pagans, not having the information on the subject which we derive from the pages of Scripture, had their own way of telling the story

. . ."[89] Lovecraft no doubt shrugged this off with insouciance. Much of Bulfinch is similarly derived from Ovid's *Metamorphoses;* Bulfinch even copies Ovid's rhetorical device of switching to the present tense as a narrative approaches its climax.

Lovecraft finally came upon the *Metamorphoses* itself around this time, doing so in a way that felicitously united his burgeoning love of classical myth with his already existing fondness for eighteenth-century prosody. His grandfather's library had an edition of "Garth's Ovid"—that gorgeous 1717 translation of the *Metamorphoses* assembled by Sir Samuel Garth, taking some portions from previously published translations (Dryden had translated the entirety of books one and twelve and portions of others; Congreve had translated a portion of book ten) and commissioning poets both eminent (Pope, Addison, Gay, Nicholas Rowe) and obscure (Laurence Eusden, Arthur Maynwaring, Samuel Croxall, James Vernon, John Ozell) to fill in the remaining sections. Garth himself, a poet of no small distinction —Lovecraft owned a 1706 edition of his medical poem *The Dispensary* (1699)—translated book fourteen and a portion of book fifteen. The result is a riot of exquisite iambic pentameter couplets—thousands and thousands of lines in unending succession. It is not surprising that "The even decasyllabic rhythm seemed to strike some responsive chord in my brain, and I forthwith became wedded to that measure . . ."[90] The actual edition read by Lovecraft appears to be a two-volume edition simply titled *Ovid* (Harper & Brothers, 1837), of which volume 2 (the only one found in his library) contains the *Metamorphoses* and the *Epistles* (i.e., the *Heroides*).

Lovecraft's absorption of classical antiquity did not occur entirely through the medium of books. In a late letter he speaks of the multifarious influences, going back several years, that led him to the ancient world:

> . . . the chance circumstance that a child's reader which I devoured at the age of 6 had a very alluring selection about Rome & Pompeii—the equally chance circumstance that at 3 or 4 I was impressed by the great railway viaduct at Canton, between Providence & Boston, which has great masonry arches like a Roman aqueduct . . . & that my mother, in connexion with it, told me that arches were first extensively used by the Romans, & described the great aqueducts . . . which latter I soon saw in pictures—& so on, & so on.[91]

Whipple Phillips also assisted in fostering Lovecraft's love of Rome: "He had loved to muse amidst the ruins of the ancient city, & had brought from Italy a wealth of mosaics, . . . paintings, & other objets d'art whose theme was more often classically Roman than Italian. He always wore a pair of mosaics in his cuffs for buttons—one a view of the Coliseum (so *tiny* yet so *faithful*); the other of the Forum."[92] Whipple brought home from his travels pictures of Roman ruins and some Roman coins: "I cannot begin to suggest the feeling of *awe* and *anomalous familiarity* which those coins—the actual products of Roman engravers and mints, and actually passed from Roman hand to Roman hand twenty centuries ago—awaked in me."[93] The downstairs parlour of 454 Angell Street had a life-size Roman bust on a gilded pedestal. No doubt all this was part of the reason why Lovecraft always preferred the culture of Rome to that of Greece, although other philosophical, aesthetic, and temperamental factors eventually entered into it. Writing in 1931 to Robert E. Howard—that great champion of barbarism—he admitted: "I realise that the Romans were an extremely prosaic race; given to all the practical and utilitarian precepts I detest, and without any of the genius of the Greek or glamour of the Northern barbarian. And yet—I can't manage to think behind 450 A.D. except as a Roman!"[94]

In the short term the effect of reading Hawthorne, Bulfinch, and Garth's Ovid was that "My Bagdad name and affiliations disappeared at once, for the magic of silks and colours faded before that of fragrant templed groves, faun-peopled meadows in the twilight, and the blue, beckoning Mediterranean" ("A Confession of Unfaith"). A more important result is that Lovecraft became a writer.

It is not entirely clear what Lovecraft's first literary work was. He dates the commencement of his writing to the age of six, remarking: "My attempts at versification, of which I made the first at the age of six, now took on a crude, internally rhyming ballad metre, and I sang of the exploits of Gods and Heroes."[95] In context this appears to suggest that Lovecraft had begun to write verse prior to his discovery of classical antiquity, but that his fascination with the ancient world impelled him toward renewed poetic composition, this time on classical themes. None of this pre-classical verse survives, and the first poetical work we do have is the "second edition" of "The Poem of Ulysses; or, The Odyssey: Written for Young People." This

elaborate little book contains a preface, a copyright notice, and an internal title page reading:

THE YOUNG FOLKS'
ULYSSES
or the *Odyssey* in plain
OLDEN *ENGLISH* VERSE
An *Epick* Poem Writ
by
Howard Lovecraft, Gent.

This is dated to November 8, 1897, in the preface, and I have to believe that the "first edition" dated to earlier in the year, prior to Lovecraft's seventh birthday on August 20, 1897.

On the copyright page Lovecraft writes: "Acknowledgements are due to Popes Odyssey and Bulfinch's Mythology and Harpers Half Hour Series." Then, helpfully, "Homer first writ the poem." Harper's Half-Hour Series was a series of small books of essays, poetry, plays, and other short works selling for a quarter—the idea being, presumably, that they could each be read in half an hour. There does not seem to have been any edition (even an abridged one) of Homer or of the *Odyssey,* and I suspect the work in question was Eugene Lawrence's *A Primer of Greek Literature* (1879), which may have had a summary of the *Odyssey.* In "A Confession of Unfaith" Lovecraft describes the volume as a "tiny book in the private library of my elder aunt" (i.e., Lillian D. Phillips). It is remarkable to think that Lovecraft had already read the whole of Pope's *Odyssey* by the age of seven (one cannot know whether a similar acknowledgment appeared in the "first edition"); but it becomes immediately obvious that Lovecraft in his 88-line poem could not possibly have been dependent upon Pope's 14,000-line translation either metrically or even in terms of the story line. Here is how Lovecraft's poem begins:

> The nighte was darke! O readers, Hark!
> And see Ulysses' fleet!
> From trumpets sound back homeward bound
> He hopes his spouse to greet.

This is certainly not Pope; what, in fact, does it remind one of? How about this?

And through the drifts the snowy clifts
Did send a dismal sheen:
Nor shapes of men nor beasts we ken—
The lee was all between.[96]

It's our old friend the *Ancient Mariner.* Indeed, Lovecraft has done Coleridge one better by internally rhyming every iambic heptameter line (Coleridge sometimes becomes lax and does only every other one, or sometimes none at all), and he abandons Coleridge's stanzaic divisions. Lovecraft, in his surprisingly frequent discussions of "The Poem of Ulysses" in essays and letters, never suggests Coleridge as the metrical model of the work. In 1926 Lovecraft remarked that "My 6-year-old 'verse' was pretty bad, and I had recited enough poetry to know that it was so"; he goes on to say that what helped him to improve his prosody was a very careful study of Abner Alden's *The Reader* (1797), of which he had a third edition (1808), and which he declares "was so utterly and absolutely the very thing I had been looking for, that I attacked it with almost savage violence."[97] After a month or so, Lovecraft asserts, he produced "The Poem of Ulysses."

If nothing else, the work is a remarkable example of concision: in 88 lines Lovecraft has compressed the 12,000 lines of Homer's *Odyssey.* Even Bulfinch's prose account takes up thirty pages in the Modern Library edition. Lovecraft achieves this compression by deftly omitting relatively inessential portions of the story—in particular, the entire first four books (the Adventures of Telemachos) and, perhaps surprisingly, book eleven (the descent into Hades)—and, more importantly, by retelling the entire story in *chronological sequence,* from Odysseus' sailing from Troy to his final return home to Ithaca, rather than in the elaborately convoluted way in which Homer's Odysseus narrates his adventures. Much later Lovecraft made this distinction between order of occurrence and order of narration a pillar of his technique of weird fiction, and it is remarkable that he had gained a practical knowledge of it so early. Perhaps the Harper's Half-Hour Series had performed the feat for him in this instance, but nevertheless Lovecraft's utilisation of it is striking.

"The Poem of Ulysses" is a delight. There are only a small number of grammatical errors ("it's" for "its"; false archaisms such as "storme" and "darke"), some dubious rhymes (storme/harme), and one actually false

rhyme (first/nurse), but otherwise it is charming from beginning to end. Consider Ulysses' defeat of the Cyclops:

By crafty ruse he can confuse
The stupid giant's mind
Puts out his eye with dreadful cry
And leaves the wretch behind.

Or his wrath at Circe for turning his men into pigs:

Unhappy he his men to see
Engaged in swinish bliss.
He drew his sword and spake harsh word
To Circe standing there
"My men set free", in wrath quoth he
"Thy damage quick repair"!!!

And if Lovecraft genuinely saw an internal rhyme in "He'll ne'er roam far from Ithaca," it may give us some idea of his New England pronunciation.

Perhaps the most interesting thing about "The Poem of Ulysses" is a sort of catalogue or notice for "Providence Classics" of the Providence Press Co. appended to the poem. The list is as follows:

MYTHOLOGY FOR THE YOUNG 25¢
ULYSSES FOR YOUNG FOLKS IN VERSE 5¢
AN OLD EGYPTIAN MYTH PREPARED
SPECIALLY FOR SMALL CHILDREN 5¢

SOON TO BE PUBLISHED

THE YOUNG FOLKS ILIAD IN VERSE 5¢
THE ÆNEID 5¢
OVIDS METAMORPHOSES 25¢

This suggests that "Mythology for the Young" and "An Old Egyptian Myth . . ." have already been written; they do not, so far as is known, survive. There is another, more extensive catalogue at the end of *Poemata Minora, Volume II* (1902), which lists all three of the "Soon to Be Published" works cited above. The first two have apparently perished; they too are likely to have been paraphrased from Bulfinch. And, of course, one must keep in mind that Lovecraft might have read Pope's translation of the former and

Dryden's of the latter. Of "Ovid's Metamorphoses" I shall have more to say later.

The fact that "Mythology for the Young" is priced at 25¢ suggests that it was a fairly substantial document; it appears to be Lovecraft's first prose work, perhaps a sort of paraphrase of some of Bulfinch. Chapter 34 of *The Age of Fable* has a relatively brief discussion of some Egyptian myths, mostly the myth of Isis and Osiris, and I suspect that this is where Lovecraft derived the source material for "An Old Egyptian Myth . . ." At 5¢, it is likely to have been a very short work. The 1902 catalogue lists something called "Egyptian Myths" at 25¢, probably an expansion of the original work.

The elaborate "publishing" efforts involved in "The Poem of Ulysses"—illustrations, title and copyright pages, catalogue, price—certainly suggest that Lovecraft, so early as the age of seven, is determined to make a career of writing. A "P.S." after the preface notes: "The later works may be much better than this because the author will have more practice." Lovecraft had not yet learnt the use of the hectograph, so if he "sold" copies of "The Poem of Ulysses" (and he may well have done so to members of his family, who would no doubt have provided encouragement), he would presumably have written out a fresh copy for each sale.

Classical antiquity was, however, more than a literary experience for Lovecraft; it was both a personal and even a quasi-religious one. He speaks warmly of going to the museum of the Rhode Island School of Design (the college situated at the foot of College Hill, mostly along Benefit Street) in 1897–99 (the museum had in fact only opened in 1897[98]); at that time the museum was, as Lovecraft notes, housed in the "awkward & inadequate basement of the main building" at 11 Waterman Street (destroyed to make way for the bus tunnel of 1914), but nevertheless it

> . . . was an enchanted world for me—a true magick grotto where unfolded before me the glory that was Greece & the grandeur that was Rome. I have since seen many other museums of art, & am now sojourning but a five-cent fare from the next-greatest in the world [i.e., the Metropolitan Museum in New York]; yet I vow that none has ever moved me so much, or given me so close & vivid a sense of contact with the ancient world, as that

> modest basement on Waterman St. hill with its meagre plaster casts![99]

No doubt his mother or his grandfather took him there. Elsewhere Lovecraft says that "Before long I was fairly familiar with the principal classical art museums of Providence and Boston"[100] (by which he presumably refers to the Museum of Fine Arts in Boston and the Fogg Museum at Harvard) and that he had begun a collection of small plaster casts of Greek sculptures. The result was an infatuation with the classical world and then a kind of religious epiphany. Let Lovecraft tell it in his own inimitable way:

> When about seven or eight I was a genuine pagan, so intoxicated with the beauty of Greece that I acquired a half-sincere belief in the old gods and Nature-spirits. I have in literal truth built altars to Pan, Apollo, Diana, and Athena, and have watched for dryads and satyrs in the woods and fields at dusk. Once I firmly thought I beheld some of these sylvan creatures dancing under autumnal oaks; a kind of "religious experience" as true in its way as the subjective ecstasies of any Christian. If a Christian tell me he has *felt* the reality of his Jesus or Jahveh, I can reply that I have *seen* the hoofed Pan and the sisters of the Hesperian Phaëthusa. ("A Confession of Unfaith")

This certainly puts the lie to Bulfinch, who solemnly declared at the very beginning of *The Age of Fable:* "The religions of ancient Greece and Rome are extinct. The so-called divinities of Olympus have not a single worshipper among living men."[101]

In writing the above passage Lovecraft was clearly wishing to show that his scepticism and anticlericalism were of very early origin; but he may be guilty of some exaggeration. Earlier in this essay he reports that "I was instructed in the legends of the Bible and of Saint Nicholas at the age of about two, and gave to both a passive acceptance not especially distinguished either for its critical keenness or its enthusiastic comprehension." He then declares that just before the age of five he was told that Santa Claus does not exist, and that he thereupon countered with the query as to "why God is not equally a myth." "Not long afterwards," he continues, he was placed in a Sunday school at the First Baptist Church, but became so pestiferous an iconoclast that he was allowed to discontinue attendance. Elsewhere, however, he declares that this incident occurred at the age of twelve.[102] When we examine Lovecraft's philosophical

development, the likelihood is that the Sunday school incident indeed took place at the age of twelve, and not at five. But clearly there was an earlier Sunday school stint for Lovecraft, and here his growing attachment for Rome did seem to get him into a little trouble:

> When Rome was presented to me from . . . [an] unfavourable angle—the Sunday-School horror of Nero and the persecution of Christians—I could never quite sympathise in the least with the teachers. I felt that one good Roman pagan was worth any six dozen of the cringing scum riff-raff who took up with a fanatical foreign belief, and was frankly sorry that the Syrian superstition was not stamped out. . . . When it came to the repressive measures of Marcus Aurelius and Diocletianus, I was in complete sympathy with the government and had not a shred of use for the Christian herd. To try to get me to identify myself with that herd seemed in my mind ridiculous.[103]

This leads to the charming admission that "at seven I sported the adopted name of L. VALERIUS MESSALA & tortured imaginary Christians in amphitheatres."[104]

By the age of seven Lovecraft had already begun to read—Grimm's *Fairy Tales* at four, the *Arabian Nights* at five, and classical antiquity at six or seven—gone through two pseudonyms (Abdul Alhazred and L. Valerius Messala), begun to write poetry and prose nonfiction, and gained what would prove to be a lifelong love of England and of the past. But his imaginative appetite was not complete; for he claims that in the winter of 1896 yet another interest emerged: the theatre. The first play he saw was "one of Denman Thompson's minor efforts,"[105] *The Sunshine of Paradise Alley,* which featured a slum scene that fascinated him. Shortly thereafter he was enjoying the "well-made" plays of Henry Arthur Jones and Arthur Wing Pinero;[106] but the next year his taste was improved by seeing his first Shakespearean play, *Cymbeline,* at the Providence Opera House. Lovecraft's memory was good enough in 1916 to remember that the Christmas matinee he attended in 1897 was on a Saturday.[107] He set up a little toy theatre in his room, hand-painted the scenery, and played *Cymbeline* for weeks. Lovecraft's interest in drama continued sporadically for at least the next fifteen to twenty years; around 1910 he saw Robert Mantell's company perform *King John* in Providence, with the young Fritz

Leiber, Sr, as Faulconbridge.[108] Lovecraft was also a very early enthusiast of film, and throughout his life we will find selected films influencing some of his most significant writing.

From the age of three onward—while his father was slowly deteriorating both physically and mentally in Butler Hospital—the young Howard Phillips Lovecraft was encountering one intellectual and imaginative stimulus after the other: first the colonial antiquities of Providence, then Grimm's *Fairy Tales,* then the *Arabian Nights,* then Coleridge's *Ancient Mariner,* then eighteenth-century belles-lettres, then the theatre and Shakespeare, and finally Hawthorne, Bulfinch, and the classical world. It is a remarkable sequence, and many of these stimuli would be of lifelong duration. But there remained one further influence that would definitively turn Lovecraft into the man and writer we know: "Then I struck EDGAR ALLAN POE!! It was my downfall, and at the age of eight I saw the blue firmament of Argos and Sicily darkened by the miasmal exhalations of the tomb!"[109]

3. Black Woods & Unfathomed Caves

(1898–1902)

The history of what Lovecraft called weird fiction up to 1898 is a fascinating one, and Lovecraft himself has written perhaps the ablest historical account of it in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" (1927). The use of the "supernatural" in Western literature can, of course, be traced back to the *Iliad* with the intervention of the gods in the affairs of men; but Lovecraft is correct in maintaining that weird fiction as such can only be a product of an age that has ceased to believe generally in the existence of the supernatural. The ghost in *Hamlet* inspires fear and awe not by what he says or does but by his mere existence: he represents a defiance or contravention of what we have understood to be the unvarying laws of Nature. It is, therefore, not surprising that the first canonical work of supernatural fiction was written by a prototype of the eighteenth-century English Enlightenment, one who had no awareness that the story he wrote down in two months based on a dream of a mediaeval castle would assist in subverting the rationalism he otherwise so cherished.

And yet, it is not often realised that when Horace Walpole published *The Castle of Otranto* from his press at Strawberry Hill on Christmas Day 1764, there was no *immediate* literary sea-change. Although Clara Reeve's *The Old English Baron* (1777) was a direct imitation (and, in part, a rebuke) of Walpole's little novel, it required the added impetus of German Romanticism actually to launch the "Gothic" movement in literature in the 1790s. It was then that Ann Radcliffe published *The Romance of the Forest* (1791), *The Mysteries of Udolpho* (1794), *The Italian* (1797), and other of her novels, becoming for a time the most popular writer in the English-speaking world. It was also then that twenty-year-old Matthew Gregory Lewis published *The Monk* (1796); a little later Charles Robert Maturin published the first of his novels, *The Fatal Revenge* (1807), and culminated the Gothic tradition with *Melmoth the Wanderer* (1820). Walpole, Radcliffe, Lewis, and Maturin are only the dominant figures of the English Gothic, and they were surrounded by dozens of imitators, parodists, and hacks—a phenomenon very similar to the horror "boom" of the 1980s. Frederick S. Frank's definitive treatment of Gothic fiction lists a total of 422 novels up to 1820, most of them having long ago attained merciful oblivion.[1] (The

eccentric William Beckford's *Vathek* [1786] is in a somewhat separate class, owing more to the Arabian tale and Johnson's *Rasselas* than to Walpole.)

In "Supernatural Horror in Literature" Lovecraft, although deriving much of his information on the Gothic tradition from Edith Birkhead's landmark study, *The Tale of Terror* (1921), nevertheless ably identifies the "novel dramatic paraphernalia" which Walpole and his successors introduced, and which

> consisted first of all of the Gothic castle, with its awesome antiquity, vast distances and ramblings, deserted or ruined wings, damp corridors, unwholesome hidden catacombs, and galaxy of ghosts and appalling legends, as a nucleus of suspense and daemoniac fright. In addition, it included the tyrannical and malevolent nobleman as villain; the saintly, long-persecuted, and generally insipid heroine who undergoes the major terrors and serves as a point of view and focus for the reader's sympathies; the valorous and immaculate hero, always of high birth but often in humble disguise; the convention of high-sounding foreign names, mostly Italian, for the characters; and the infinite array of stage properties which includes strange lights, damp trap-doors, extinguished lamps, mouldy hidden manuscripts, creaking hinges, shaking arras, and the like.

This very description displays Lovecraft's awareness that the Gothic "stage properties" had very quickly devolved into hackneyed and standardised tropes that had lost all symbolic value and were more capable of raising a smirk than a shiver. Jane Austen did exactly that in *Northanger Abbey* (1818). By 1820—in spite of the novelty of Mary Shelley's *Frankenstein* (1818), in which science was shown to be as productive of horrors as mediaeval superstition—a new direction was required; and, appropriately, it came from a new country.

Charles Brockden Brown had attempted to establish Radcliffian romance on American soil with *Wieland* (1798) and later novels, but with indifferent success. As early as 1829 William Hazlitt raised a point concerning Brown, and by extension all American Gothic writing, that has some bearing on Lovecraft:

> . . . no ghost, we will venture to say, was ever seen in North America. They do not walk in broad day; and the night of ignorance and superstition which favours their appearance, was

> long past before the United States lifted up their head beyond the Atlantic wave. . . . In this orderly and undramatic state of security and freedom from natural foes, Mr Brown has provided one of his heroes with a demon to torment him, and fixed him at his back;—but what is to keep him there? Not any prejudice or lurking superstition on the part of the American reader: for the lack of such, the writer is obliged to make up by incessant rodomontade, and face-making.[2]

Hazlitt may have been somewhat sanguine about the rationality of the American mind, but he points to a real dilemma: if the secret of the "kick" (as Lovecraft would have called it) provided by Gothicism is the evocation of the supernatural in a mediaeval age, how could the supernatural be manifested in a country that had no mediaeval age?

It was Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849) who produced one solution to this problem, not so much by setting his tales back on the Old Continent but by creating a very meticulously described but ultimately imprecise never-never-land that shifted the focus of horror from topography to the human mind. It is often forgotten how *close* Poe is to the final stages of Gothicism; his first important tale, "Metzengerstein," was published in 1832, only twelve years after *Melmoth;* and whether or not we accept G. R. Thompson's belief that it is actually a parody of Gothic conventions,[3] it is very clear that much of the imagery derives from English and German Gothic, particularly E. T. A. Hoffmann. Recall Poe's celebrated defence of the originality of his tales against those critics who claimed that it was too Germanic: "If in many of my productions terror has been the thesis, I maintain that terror is not of Germany, but of the soul."[4] This single sentence pinpoints the revolutionary shift of emphasis effected by the body of Poe's work; Lovecraft elaborates upon the notion:

> Before Poe the bulk of weird writers had worked largely in the dark; without an understanding of the psychological basis of the horror appeal, and hampered by more or less or conformity to certain empty literary conventions such as the happy ending, virtue rewarded, and in general a hollow moral didacticism . . . Poe, on the other hand, perceived the essential impersonality of the real artist; and knew that the function of creative fiction is merely to express and interpret events and sensations as they are, regardless of how they tend or what they prove—good or

> evil, attractive or repulsive, stimulating or depressing—with the author always acting as a vivid and detached chronicler rather than as a teacher, sympathiser, or vendor of opinion.

The shift from external to internal horror was by no means universal, and is not universal even in Poe's work: many of his tales are definitely supernatural, and in some tales it is impossible to determine whether a given horrific effect is supernatural or psychological (when the protagonist of "The Black Cat" sees on the wall of his house, "as if graven in *bas relief* upon the white surface, the figure of a gigantic *cat,"* [5] is the apparition real or is he merely hallucinating?). But Poe's work was a model for many writers aside from Lovecraft, in its richly complex style, its emphasis on abnormal psychology, and—perhaps most important of all—its theoretical and practical proof that horror works best in short compass. In all subsequent horror literature from Poe's time to the present, the issue of whether there can even be such a thing as a "horror novel" (as opposed to a suspense or mainstream novel with horrific or supernatural interludes) has not been satisfactorily answered or even dealt with.

It is difficult to detect Poe's immediate influence on the weird literature that followed him, since what Lovecraft called the "aftermath of Gothic fiction" lingered in both England and the United States until almost the end of the century, with such writers as Frederick Marryat (*The Phantom Ship* [1839]), Edward Bulwer-Lytton ("The Haunted and the Haunters" [1859], *A Strange Story* [1862]), Wilkie Collins, and many others. Shortly after Poe, the Irishman Joseph Sheridan Le Fanu (1814–1873), evidently uninfluenced by Poe, produced work startlingly like his, especially in such short stories as "Green Tea" and "Carmilla"; his novels, the best of which is *Uncle Silas* (1864), are more in the traditional Gothic vein. By the turn of the century Le Fanu's work had fallen into obscurity; Lovecraft never read much of it and did not like what he did read. He did, however, assiduously read Nathaniel Hawthorne's short stories and novels, calling *The House of the Seven Gables* "New England's greatest contribution to weird literature"; but Hawthorne was working in an older tradition. And yet, his work was suggestive to Lovecraft in offering yet another solution to the problem posed by Hazlitt, in that it drew upon the dark heritage of New England Puritanism so as to create a universe that, in the words of Maurice Lévy, "has a *historical profundity*"[6] that much other American weird fiction lacks.

The latter quarter of the nineteenth century saw an enormous outpouring of horror literature; as Lovecraft remarked in a letter, "The Victorians went in strongly for weird fiction—Bulwer-Lytton, Dickens, Wilkie Collins, Harrison Ainsworth, Mrs. Oliphant, George W. M. Reynolds, H. Rider Haggard, R. L. Stevenson & countless others turned out reams of it."[7] Prefaced by Stevenson's *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* (1886), the decade of the 1890s was remarkably fertile in what later came to be regarded as classics of the form, although Lovecraft did not become aware of many of them until much later.

In the United States, Ambrose Bierce (1842–1914?), whose first story, "The Haunted Valley," dates to so early as 1871, produced two landmark collections, *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians* (1891) and *Can Such Things Be?* (1893), which carried on Poe's interest in psychological horror, augmented by a delightful lacing of cynicism and misanthropy; Lovecraft, however, did not discover Bierce's work until 1919. He came upon the early weird work of Robert W. Chambers (1865–1933) at a still later date, but relished such eccentric volumes as *The King in Yellow* (1895), *The Maker of Moons* (1896), and other collections of tales. Chambers abandoned the weird and went on to become one of the best-selling writers of the first three decades of the new century with an appalling array of shopgirl romances, causing Lovecraft to refer to him as a "fallen Titan."[8] Henry James's *The Turn of the Screw* (1898) was regarded as a brilliant but eccentric anomaly in the work of a writer already well established as a profound social commentator.

In England, Arthur Machen (1863–1947) established his reputation with *The Great God Pan and The Inmost Light* (1894), *The Three Impostors* (1895), *The House of Souls* (1906), *The Hill of Dreams* (1907), and other works. Lovecraft did not encounter him until 1923. Bram Stoker (1847–1912) published *Dracula* in 1897, although it took some time for that novel to achieve eminence as the prototypical vampire novel. The enormously significant work of M. R. James (1862–1936), Lord Dunsany (1878–1957), and Algernon Blackwood (1869–1951), all of whom began publishing in the first decade of the twentieth century, was discovered by Lovecraft between 1919 and 1925.

Weird fiction, then, was, if by no means a dominant voice (it never has been such), at least a significant presence in the final decade of the nineteenth century; and yet, I have elsewhere maintained[9] that the weird

was not considered a genre at this time, and may not have been so considered for many years thereafter. Even Poe did not fancy himself as working exclusively in a weird vein, and he in fact did not do so, writing many humorous and satiric tales as well as the first detective stories. As he huffily declared in his preface to *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840): "Let us admit, for the moment, that the 'phantasy-pieces' now given *are* Germanic, or what not. Then Germanism is 'the vein' for the time being. To morrow I may be anything but German, as yesterday I was everything else."[10] Similarly, it cannot be asserted that the work of Le Fanu, Stoker, Machen, Blackwood, or Dunsany is wholly weird, or was so regarded by their authors; and certainly only a very small proportion of Hawthorne's or Stevenson's work is weird.

It may be observed that no mention has been made of periodicals devoted to weird fiction; there were none, and there would be none until the establishment of *Weird Tales* in 1923. Poe published in the standard periodicals of his day (*Graham's Magazine, Godey's Lady's Book, Southern Literary Messenger*), some of which he edited; Bierce was widely published in magazines and newspapers. In other words, the weird was not automatically banned from mainstream magazines as it would be in the early twentieth century in America; indeed, Machen, Blackwood, and Dunsany continued to publish in mainstream magazines in England through the 1950s. The establishment of the Munsey magazines in the 1890s gave an impetus of sorts to the field, as they published much weird, detective, and speculative fiction; but, since they were scorned (justifiably, for the most part) as cheap "popular" reading for the masses, they initiated that tendency—which the pulp magazines of the 1920s only solidified—of ghettoising all the genres and banishing them from standard magazines. I shall later have more to say about this phenomenon.

The fact (and I believe it is a fact) that the weird was not a recognisable or discrete genre or mode of writing at the turn of the century, and for some time thereafter, is important in understanding Lovecraft's place in the field, for I maintain that he was among the first to regard himself as predominantly a "weird writer." One telltale sign of this state of affairs is the nearly total lack of historical or literary criticism of weird fiction prior to 1917, when Dorothy Scarborough published *The Supernatural in Modern English Fiction,* a thematically exhaustive but critically undistinguished work that nevertheless is a landmark for its mere existence. Even the Gothic

tradition failed to secure a critic before Birkhead's *The Tale of Terror* (1921). (Charles L. Eastlake's *History of the Gothic Revival* [1872] is exclusively concerned with neo-Gothic architecture, not literature. Edward Yardley's *The Supernatural in Romantic Fiction* [1880] is a rather cursory thematic study of supernatural motifs used in literature from the Middle Ages to the Romantic period.) This is what makes "Supernatural Horror in Literature" still more impressive as a watershed in literary criticism.

Lovecraft dates his first work of prose fiction to 1897[11] and elsewhere identifies it as "The Noble Eavesdropper"; about all we know of it is that it concerned "a boy who overheard some horrible conclave of subterranean beings in a cave."[12] As the work does not survive, it would perhaps be idle to point to any literary sources for it; but the influence of the *Arabian Nights* (the cave of Ali Baba and other stories involving caves) might be conjectured. A still more likely source, perhaps, would be his grandfather Whipple, the only member of his family who appears to have enjoyed the weird. As Lovecraft states in a late letter:

> I never heard *oral* weird tales except from my grandfather—who, observing my tastes in reading, used to devise all sorts of impromptu original yarns about black woods, unfathomed caves, winged horrors (like the "night-gaunts" of my dreams, about which I used to tell him), old witches with sinister cauldrons, & "deep, low, moaning sounds". He obviously drew most of his imagery from the early gothic romances—Radcliffe, Lewis, Maturin, &c.—which he seemed to like better than Poe or other later fantaisistes.[13]

Here are some of the components (unfathomed caves, deep, low, moaning sounds) of the imagery of "The Noble Eavesdropper." But Lovecraft admits that this is the only tale he wrote prior to his reading of Poe.

Given the state of the field of weird fiction in 1898, and given Lovecraft's age, it is not surprising that the tales of Poe would have been the first weird literature he stumbled upon. The Gothic novels were far too long for absorption by most youths, even one so devoted to the eighteenth century as Lovecraft. Many of them had, moreover, by this time become very difficult to obtain (in the 1920s Lovecraft was disconcerted to find that even the New York Public Library did not own a copy of *Melmoth the Wanderer*). As for more modern writers, in 1921 Lovecraft would lament

that “nine persons out of ten *never heard of* Ambrose Bierce, the greatest story writer except Poe whom America ever produced” (*In Defence of Dagon*). This may be somewhat of an exaggeration, but Bierce was by 1898 probably known widely only in the San Francisco literary circle in which he had established himself; in any case, his tales would probably have been considered too gruesome to give to an eight-year-old. The other writers I have mentioned here were either too recent or, again, too “adult” to be given to a young boy.

Poe was, by the turn of the century, slowly gaining a place of eminence in American literature, although he still had to face posthumous attacks such as that of Henry James, who in 1876 made the celebrated remark: “With all due respect to the very original genius of the author of the ‘Tales of Mystery,’ it seems to me that to take him with more than a certain degree of seriousness is to lack seriousness one’s self. An enthusiasm for Poe is the mark of a decidedly primitive stage of reflection.”[14] Poe’s championing by Baudelaire, Mallarmé, and other Continental writers had slowly impelled reconsideration of his work by English and American critics. The English scholar John H. Ingram wrote the first biography, the two-volume *Edgar Allan Poe: His Life, Letters and Opinions* (1880); it was followed in 1885 by George E. Woodberry’s *Edgar Allan Poe* for the American Men of Letters series, later expanded as *The Life of Edgar Allan Poe* (1909). Lovecraft later acquired Ingram’s work and Woodberry’s 1885 volume.

I am not sure which exact volume or edition of Poe was read by Lovecraft in 1898. In his library are found the Raven Edition (5 vols., 1903) and one volume (*Essays and Philosophy*) of the Cameo Edition (10 vols., 1904), but of course these could not have been what he read in 1898. It is highly unlikely that his family had the first collected edition (Griswold’s, 4 vols., 1850–56), as Lovecraft would surely have retained it; the same could be said for other early editions: Ingram’s (4 vols., 1874–75), Richard Henry Stoddard’s (6 vols., 1884), Edmund Clarence Stedman and Woodberry’s (10 vols., 1894–95). The landmark critical edition by James A. Harrison (17 vols., 1902), which would not be superseded until T. O. Mabbott’s edition of 1969–78, would have been a jewel in Lovecraft’s or his family’s library. One can only assume that he read some one-volume selection of tales, possibly a children’s or young adult’s edition, of which there were already many by this time.

It is, in fact, a little difficult to discern any clear-cut Poe influence in the first several of Lovecraft's juvenile stories. He claims that his first story, written in 1897 (not named, but surely "The Noble Eavesdropper"), was "pre-Poe,"[15] implying that the subsequent tales were inspired by Poe; but I cannot see anything of Poe in "The Little Glass Bottle," "The Secret Cave; or, John Lees Adventure," "The Mystery of the Grave-yard; or, A Dead Man's Revenge," or "The Mysterious Ship." The first of these was described by Lovecraft as "a juvenile attempt at humour";[16] that is about as charitable an assessment as one can make.

"The Little Glass Bottle" tells of a ship commanded by a Captain William Jones which comes upon a bottle with a message in it (perhaps one is to infer the influence of Poe's "MS. Found in a Bottle" here). This note—written in a very wild and hasty hand on Lovecraft's autograph manuscript (a crude but effective attempt at realism)—announces the writer as John Jones (no relation to the captain, one imagines) and says that there is a treasure to be found on the spot marked with an asterisk on the reverse of the note (here we find a crude map of the Indian Ocean, with a nebulous land mass labelled "Austrailia" at the bottom left). This note is dated January 1, 1864.

Captain Jones decides that "it would pay to go" to the spot, and the crew do so. There they find another note from John Jones: "Dear Searcher excuse me for the practical joke I have played on you but it serves you right to find nothing for your foolish act . . ." But John kindly defrays their expenses with an iron box containing "$25.0.00," whatever that is. It is after reading this note (which, for some reason, is dated December 3, 1880) that Captain Jones delivers the one funny line in the entire story: "I'd like to kick his head off."

None of these early stories is dated, with the exception of "The Mysterious Ship" (clearly dated to 1902), but they must have been written during the period 1898–1902, perhaps more toward the earlier than the later end of that spectrum. Lovecraft almost never speaks of "The Secret Cave"; it is easily the slightest of the juvenile tales. Mrs Lee instructs her son, ten-year-old John, and daughter, two-year-old Alice, to be "good children" while both parents are "going off for the day"; but immediately upon their departure John and Alice go down to the cellar and begin "to rummage among the rubbish." Alice leans against a wall and it suddenly gives way behind her; a passage is discovered. John and Alice enter the passage,

coming successively upon a large empty box, a small, very heavy box that is not opened, and a boat with oars. The passage comes to an abrupt end; John pulls away "the obstacle" and finds a torrent of water rushing in. John is a good swimmer, but little Alice is not, and she drowns. John manages to struggle into the boat, clinging to the body of his sister and the small box. Suddenly he realises that "he could shut off the water"; he does so, although how he does it—and why he did not think of it earlier—is never explained. "It was very gruesome & uncanny absolutely dark his candle being put out by the flood & a dead body lying near." Finally he reaches the cellar. Later it is discovered that the box contains a solid gold chunk worth $10,000 —"enough to pay for any thing but the death of his sister."

I have no idea of the purpose of this unpleasantly gruesome little story. Lovecraft apparently wrote it with great haste, making many grammatical errors and occasionally even failing to capitalise the proper noun "Alice." "They" is frequently rendered as "the." I shall not speculate on the existence of a sister in the story: the tale does not seem especially autobiographical, so one cannot infer that Lovecraft was somehow wanting a sister. Again, no discernible influence from Poe or anyone else can be found.

Of "The Mystery of the Grave-yard"—which contains not only a subtitle ("or, 'A Dead Man's Revenge'") but a sub-subtitle ("A Detective story")—rather more may be said. This is the longest of Lovecraft's juvenile stories, and at the end of the autograph manuscript he has noted (obviously at a much later date): "Evidently written in late 1898 or early 1899." The fact that it is labelled a detective story should not lead us to think it is influenced by Poe's "The Murders in the Rue Morgue" or any of his other detective stories, although no doubt Lovecraft read them; he also (as I shall discuss later) read the early Sherlock Holmes stories and could conceivably have read them at this early date. But even the most cursory glance at this wild, histrionic, and rather engaging story should allow us to point to its predominant source: the dime novel.

The first dime novel was published in 1860, when the firm later known as Beadle & Adams reprinted, in a 128-page paper-covered volume 6 × 4 inches in dimensions, Ann Sophia Winterbotham Stephens's *Malaeska: The Indian Wife of the White Hunter.* The fact that it was a reprint was critical, for it allowed the firm to claim that here was a "dollar book for a dime."[17] Beadle & Adams was the leading publisher of dime novels until it folded in

1898, having been driven out of business by the bold and innovative publishing practices of Street & Smith, which entered the dime novel market in 1889. Frank Tousey was a lesser publisher of dime novels.

It should not be assumed that dime novels were merely action thrillers, although many of them were; there were westerns (Deadwood Dick from Beadle & Adams; Diamond Dick from Street & Smith), detective or espionage stories (Nick Carter from Street & Smith; Old King Brady from Frank Tousey), tales of high school and college life (Frank Merriwell from Street & Smith), and even pious tales of moral uprightness (Horatio Alger, Jr, wrote prolifically for Street & Smith in the 1890s).[18] Their principal feature was their price, their format (paper covers, 128 pages or less), and, in general, their action-packed narrative style. The leading dime novel series were, of course, priced at 10¢, although there was a wide array of smaller books, called "nickel libraries," at 5¢ aimed at younger readers.

It is one of the great paradoxes of Lovecraft's entire literary career that he could, on the one hand, absorb the highest aesthetic fruits of Western culture—Greek and Latin literature, Shakespeare, the poetry of Keats and Shelley—and at the same time go slumming in the cheapest dregs of popular fiction. Throughout his life Lovecraft vigorously defended the *literary* value of the weird tale (unlike some modern critics who misguidedly vaunt both the good and the bad, the aesthetically polished and the mechanically hackneyed, as representative of "popular culture"—as if literary merit is determined by what masses of half-literate people like to read), and he adamantly (and rightly) refused to consider the weird work found in dime novels and pulp magazines as genuine literature; but this did not prevent him from voraciously lapping up these lesser products. Lovecraft knew that he was reading trash, but he read it anyway.

It has become fashionable to find literary—as opposed to sociological—value in dime novels by maintaining that they (and popular fiction generally) were read by all classes of society; Edmund Pearson, writing in 1929, already initiated this tendency by concluding his study with accounts by eminent literati of the day (Booth Tarkington, Samuel Hopkins Adams, Marc Connelly, William Lyon Phelps) who read and enjoyed dime novels in their youth. But the brute fact is that the dime and nickel novels were read primarily by the young, the poor, and the ill-educated. The literary formulae they inculcated—thrilling action at all cost and in spite of all probability and verisimilitude; "cliffhanger" conclusions to chapters; stereotyped

character portrayal; stilted dialogue; a highly stylised and mechanical structure—were the worst possible influences on anyone wishing to write serious literature, and were all repudiated by Lovecraft by the time he developed a critical awareness of the distinction between good and bad writing. By then, however, he had already read so much of this material—and its descendants, the pulp magazines—that, as he himself correctly detected, his own style became, in small part, insidiously corrupted by their example.

Lovecraft does not go out of his way to mention to his correspondents that he read dime novels, but every now and then the confession slips through. In 1935 he writes: "If I had kept all the nickel novels—Pluck & Luck, Brave & Bold, Frank Reade, Jesse James, Nick Carter, Old King Brady, &c.—which I surreptitiously read 35 years ago . . ., I could probably get a young fortune for 'em today!"[19] This comment, if interpreted literally, would date Lovecraft's reading of dime or nickel novels to 1900, but in fact it must have occurred earlier. *Pluck and Luck* (Tousey) began publication in 1898; *Brave and Bold* (Street & Smith) in 1903; Frank Reade made his debut in the *Frank Reade Library* (Tousey, 1892–98) and then continued in the *Frank Reade Weekly* beginning in 1903; *Jesse James Stories* (Street & Smith) began in 1901; the first Nick Carter stories appeared in the *New York Weekly* (Street & Smith) in 1886, and the *Nick Carter Detective Weekly* began in 1891; Old King Brady was featured first in the *New York Detective Library* (Tousey, 1885–99), then (along with his son, Young King Brady) in *Secret Service* (1899–1912).

Old King Brady may be the most interesting of the lot for our purposes, since the hero of "The Mystery of the Grave-yard" is one King John, described as "a famous western detective." Old King Brady was not a Western character, but he was a detective. Most of the early Old King Brady novels were written by Francis Worcester Doughty; many appear—like "The Mystery of the Grave-yard"—to have contained suggestions of the supernatural.[20] If Lovecraft continued to read *Secret Service,* we may find a connexion with some books in his library: La Fayette Charles Baker's *History of the United States Secret Service* (1868) and William Pittenger's *Capturing a Locomotive: A History of the Secret Service During the Late War* (1885). Perhaps he read these at this time also. Moreover, Beadle had a series detective, Prince John (written by Joseph E. Badger, Jr), in the early 1890s. I do not know whether King John—even in terms of his name—is

some sort of fusion of Old King Brady and Prince John, but he is certainly a dime novel detective.

And "The Mystery of the Grave-yard" is a miniature dime novel, pure and simple. The fact is trumpeted even in its subtitle, which copies the "or . . ." subtitles of all the early dime and nickel novels. The action is nothing if not fast-paced. In twelve relatively short chapters (some as little as 50 words in length) we read the following lurid story:

Joseph Burns has died. The rector, Mr Dobson, is instructed by Burns's will to drop a ball in his tomb at a spot marked "A." He does so and disappears. A man named Bell announces himself at the residence of Dobson's daughter, saying that he will restore her father for the sum of £10,000. The daughter, thinking fast, calls the police and cries, "Send King John!" King John, arriving in a flash, finds that Bell has jumped out the window. He chases Bell to the train station, but unfortunately Bell gets on a train as it is pulling out of the station; still more regrettably (and implausibly), there is no telegraph service between the town of Mainville, where the action is taking place, and the "large city" of Kent, where the train is headed. King John rushes to a hackney cab office and says to a black hackman that he will give him two dollars (even though pounds were mentioned before) if he can get him to Kent in fifteen minutes. Bell arrives in Kent, meets with his band of desperadoes (which includes a woman named Lindy), and is about to depart with them on a ship with King John dramatically arrives, declaring: "John Bell, I arrest you in the Queen's name!" At the trial, it is revealed that Dobson had fallen down a trap-door at the spot marked "A" and had been kept in a "brilliantly lighted, and palatial apartment" until he rescues himself by making a wax impression of the key to the door and makes a dramatic entrance at the trial. Bell is sent to prison for life; Miss Dobson, "by the way," has become Mrs King John.

There is much of interest in this story. In the first place, at the very beginning there is a hint of supernaturalism in the sudden disappearance of Dobson, although it should be obvious to even a casual reader that this is only the result of some sort of trickery. In later years Lovecraft chided Ann Radcliffe in particular for suggesting the supernatural only to explain it by implausible natural means; in his own mature fiction he was careful never to make that mistake.

In this tale Lovecraft is learning, clumsily, to maintain several narrative threads at once. This is somewhat crudely displayed by the successive

openings of chapters four, five, and six: “Now let us return to the Dobson Mansion”; “Now let us return to the station house”; “Now let us return To the Dobson Mansion again.” The plot is actually quite complex, and one must wait till almost the last chapter for all the subsidiary mysteries to be cleared up.

It should already be evident from the synopsis that the tale is histrionic and sensational. At the end of chapter three a man shouts, “Oh! Terrors! Come To the Graveyard!” At the end of chapter eight (soberly marked “Long” at the right margin—it is a full 200 words in length) there is a dramatic one-sentence paragraph—“It was King John”—as he suddenly appears at the wharf to foil the escape of the miscreants. Italics are used liberally throughout the story, and when Dobson dramatically appears at the trial, we are made aware of “The *figure of Mr Dobson Himself”* (the last word printed in very large letters with triple underscoring).

Perhaps the most interesting feature is the use of the “negro hackman.” He speaks in classic (or hackneyed) black dialect: “‘I doan’ see how I’m ter git there’, said the negro ‘I hab’n’t got a decent pair of hosses an’ I hab—’” This sort of dialect was much used in dime novels, and Lovecraft would of course elaborate upon it greatly in his later work.

The 1902 catalogue of works (found at the end of *Poemata Minora, Volume II*) lists the following works of fiction: “The Mysterious Ship” (25¢), “The Noble Eavesdropper” (10¢), “The Haunted House” (10¢), “The Secret of the Grave” (25¢), and “John, the Detective” (10¢). It is interesting to note that “The Noble Eavesdropper” is still extant (and for sale) at this time, and still more interesting to note the absence of “The Little Glass Bottle” and “The Secret Cave”; has Lovecraft already “repudiated” these stories, as he would successively do in later years with many of his earlier works? If so, it is remarkable that he has not yet repudiated “The Noble Eavesdropper,” which one would imagine was even cruder, being his first story.

“The Secret of the Grave” is something of a mystery, and I suspect that it is simply a variant title (or slip of the pen) for “The Mystery of the Grave-yard.” In a 1931 letter Lovecraft writes: “I do . . . have copies of some 8-year-old junk which my mother saved—‘The Mysterious Ship’ & ‘The Secret of the Grave.’”[21] The fact that “The Secret of the Grave” is listed at 25¢ suggests that it is a relatively lengthy work; and “The Mystery of the

Grave-yard" is Lovecraft's longest surviving juvenile tale, far longer than "The Mysterious Ship."

"John, the Detective" is presumably another tale about King John. "The Haunted House" may perhaps be Lovecraft's first authentically supernatural tale, although if it were in the dime or nickel novel tradition it may have only hinted at the supernatural but explained it away. Indeed, it is interesting to note that of all these tales, only "The Noble Eavesdropper" can genuinely be assumed to be a horror tale; "The Little Glass Bottle" is a humorous story, "The Secret Cave" is a sort of grim domestic tale, and "The Mystery of the Grave-yard," "The Mysterious Ship," and presumably "John, the Detective" are mystery or suspense stories with only a faintly horrific atmosphere.

"The Mysterious Ship" is the latest of the surviving juvenilia, and by far the most disappointing. This little story—consisting of nine very brief chapters, some as short as 25 words and none longer than 75 words—is so dry and clipped that it led L. Sprague de Camp to think it "an outline rather than a story."[22] This seems unlikely given the elaborate "publishing" procedures Lovecraft has undertaken for this work. In the first place, we here encounter Lovecraft's first surviving *typescript,* a text of twelve pages enclosed in a little booklet. This could not have been typed on the 1906 Remington that served Lovecraft for the rest of his life, but must have been some similar behemoth belonging to his grandfather or perhaps even his father. Moreover, there is a sort of gauze cloth cover with a drawing of a ship in pen on it, and another drawing of a ship on the back cover. The imprint on the title page is "The Royal Press. 1902."

It is obvious, then, that Lovecraft is aiming for a sort of dramatic terseness in this narrative; but the result is mere boredom and even confusion as to what exactly happens. The tale is unambiguously non-supernatural: we are never expected to believe that the disappearance of random individuals shortly after the docking of a "strange brig" at various ports is anything but a species of kidnapping. This ship goes all over the world—a place (presumably in the United States) called Ruralville, Madagascar, Florida—and for some reason deposits its kidnapped individuals at the North Pole. At this point Lovecraft feels it "necessary to relate a geographical fact," namely that "At the N. Pole there exists a vast continent composed of volcanic soil, a portion of which is open to explorers. It is called 'No-Mans Land.'" I have no idea whether Lovecraft

actually believes this (if so, he cannot have read the several books he owned on the North Pole very carefully) or is merely inventing it for the sake of the story; if the latter, then it is a rare instance of Lovecraft failing to adhere to scientific truth in the presentation of a tale. In any event, the mystery is solved and all the kidnapped individuals go to their respective homes and are showered with honours.

A strange document that has recently come to light is what appears to be a revised or elaborated version of "The Mysterious Ship." This item was collected by August Derleth and transcribed along with several other now otherwise lost juvenile items, mostly astronomical treatises. This version of the story fleshes out each chapter to about 75 to 100 words each, so that the total is about 1000 words, more than twice the length of the original. Derleth dated this version to 1898, but this cannot be correct, as it cannot possibly predate the shorter version.[23]

What is so disappointing about either version of "The Mysterious Ship" is the utter lack of progress it reveals from Lovecraft's earlier juvenilia. If "The Mystery of the Grave-yard" is at least entertaining as a blood-and-thunder dime novel, "The Mysterious Ship" is simply tiresome and silly. It actually represents a regression in terms of plot development and narrative skill. How Lovecraft could have written the very able "The Beast in the Cave" three years later is a complete mystery. And yet, given that Lovecraft priced "The Mysterious Ship" at 25¢, one must believe that he actually saw some merit in the tale, at least at the time.

There must have been many more very early stories than those enumerated above. Late in life Lovecraft admitted to being enthralled with W. Clark Russell's *The Frozen Pirate* (1887): "I read it in extreme youth—when 8 or 9—& was utterly fascinated by it . . . writing several yarns of my own under its influence."[24] *The Frozen Pirate* is a wild, improbable story of a man, Paul Rodney, who comes upon a ship in the ice floes near Antarctica whose crew are all frozen; one becomes unfrozen by the heat of a campfire lit by Rodney and discovers that he has been frozen for forty-eight years. At some point, and for no apparent reason, he ages forty-eight years in a few days and dies. Even this novel, be it noted, is not explicitly supernatural; it is more in the tradition of the scientific romance or extravaganza, in that there is at least a thin—even if grotesquely implausible—scientific rationale behind the events of the tale. It is possible,

then, that Lovecraft's own tales inspired by *The Frozen Pirate* were similarly not definitively supernatural.

Aside from discovering Poe and giving his fledgling fictional career a boost, Lovecraft also found himself in 1898 fascinated with science. This is the third component of what he described as his tripartite nature: love of the strange and fantastic, love of the ancient and permanent, and love of abstract truth and scientific logic. It is perhaps not unusual that it would be the last to emerge in his young mind, and it is still remarkable that it emerged so early and was embraced so vigorously. Lovecraft gives an engaging account of his discovery:

> The science of chemistry . . . first captivated me in the Year of Our Lord 1898—in a rather peculiar way. With the insatiable curiosity of early childhood, I used to spend hours poring over the pictures in the back of Webster's *Unabridged Dictionary*—absorbing a miscellaneous variety of ideas. After familiarising myself with antiquities, mediaeval dress & armour, birds, animals, reptiles, fishes, flags of all nations, heraldry, &c., &c., I lit upon the section devoted to "Philosophical & Scientific Instruments", & was veritably hypnotised with it. Chemical apparatus especially attracted me, & I resolved (before knowing a thing about the science!) to have a laboratory. Being a "spoiled child" I had but to ask, & it was mine. I was given a cellar room of good size, & provided by my elder aunt (who had studied chemistry at boarding school) with some simple apparatus & a copy of "The Young Chemist"—a beginner's manual by Prof. John Howard Appleton of Brown—a personal acquaintance. . . . The laboratory "work"—or play—seemed delightful, & despite a few mishaps, explosions, & broken instruments, I got along splendidly.[25]

A later account states that "my father [was] no more"[26] by the time he became interested in chemistry, so that this must date to after July 1898. This account also identifies the Webster's dictionary as the edition of 1864, an edition he retained in his own library. As with his enthusiasm for the *Arabian Nights,* his chemical tastes led his family to indulge the boy in whatever tools he needed. *The Young Chemist* (1876) also remained in his library to the end of his life. Lovecraft identifies Appleton as a professor of

chemistry at Brown and "a friend of ours."[27] Appleton (1844–1930) graduated from Brown in 1863 and then taught at the university from that time until his retirement in 1914. It is difficult to know which member of Lovecraft's family he was actually friends with; it is likely that the medical doctor Franklin Chase Clark (Class of 1869) encountered Appleton at Brown, and although he would not marry Lillian Phillips (the "elder aunt" mentioned above) until 1902, he perhaps was already acquainted with her and her family.

In any event, the immediate result was a spate of literary work. Lovecraft began the *Scientific Gazette* on March 4, 1899. This first issue—a single sheet—still survives, although it is now nearly indecipherable; it contains an amusing report: "There was a great explosion in the Providence Laboratory this afternoon. While experimenting some potassium blew up causing great damage to everyone." Incredibly, this magazine was initially a *daily,* but "it soon degenerated into a weekly."[28] No subsequent issues survive until the New Issue Vol. I, No. 1 (May 12, 1902), and I shall postpone discussion of it until the next chapter.

Lovecraft also wrote a number of chemical treatises, which are also by now almost illegible. There was a six-volume series with the general title *Chemistry* (as announced in the catalogue of works in the *Poemata Minora, Volume II*), of which four volumes survive: *Chemistry* (10¢); *Chemistry, Magic, & Electricity* (5¢); *Chemistry III* (5¢ [this price remains after 25¢, 20¢, 19¢, and 10¢ were all crossed out]); and *Chemistry IV* (15¢ [25¢ crossed out]). These volumes discuss such things as argon, gunpowder, a carbon cell battery, gases, acids, tellurium, lithium, explosives, "explosive experiments" (see the mention of the "explosion" above), and the like. There is also a small work called *A Good Anaesthetic* (5¢). Judging by the handwriting, these works probably all date to around 1899. Non-extant works (as listed in the 1902 catalogue) include *Iron Working* (5¢), *Acids* (5¢), *Explosives* (5¢), and *Static Electricity* (10¢).

It appears that Lovecraft's early scientific interests engendered some practical experimentation, if the following account—related to W. Paul Cook by one of Lovecraft's neighbours—dates to this period. It is one of the most delightful and celebrated anecdotes about Lovecraft that has come down to us; let Cook tell it in his own inimitable way:

> That section [of Providence, in which Lovecraft lived] was then open fields, rather swampy here and there, with very few

> houses. One day this neighbor, Mrs. Winslow Church, noticed that someone had started a grass fire that had burned over quite an area and was approaching her property. She went out to investigate and found the little Lovecraft boy. She scolded him for setting such a big fire and maybe endangering other peoples' property. He said very positively, "I wasn't setting a *big* fire. I wanted to make a fire one foot by one foot." That is the little story in the words in which it came to me. It means little except that it shows a passion for exactitude (in keeping with him as we knew him later)—but it is a story of Lovecraft.[29]

This anecdote is, as I say, not dated; but the mention of "open fields" suggests that it occurred while Lovecraft was at 454 Angell Street, since the area was already being built up during his early teenage years. A Winslow Church is listed in the Providence city directories as living at 292 Wayland Avenue all throughout Lovecraft's youth; this would be about five blocks from 454 Angell Street.

Another rather anomalous discovery Lovecraft made at this time was anatomy—or, rather, the specific facts of anatomy relating to sex. Here is his account of it:

> In the matter of the justly celebrated "facts of life" I didn't wait for oral information, but exhausted the entire subject in the medical section of the family library (to which I had access, although I wasn't especially loquacious about this side of my reading) when I was 8 years old—through Quain's Anatomy (fully illustrated & diagrammed), Dunglison's Physiology, &c. &c. This was because of curiosity & perplexity concerning the strange reticences & embarrassments of adult speech, & the oddly inexplicable allusions & situations in standard literature. The result was the very opposite of what parents generally fear —for instead of giving me an abnormal & precocious interest in sex (as *unsatisfied* curiosity might have done), it virtually killed my interest in the subject. The whole matter was reduced to prosaic mechanism—a mechanism which I rather despised or at least thought non-glamourous because of its purely animal nature & separation from such things as intellect & beauty—& all the drama was taken out of it.[30]

This is an intensely interesting statement. First, when Lovecraft says that he did not wait for "oral information," he is suggesting (perhaps without even knowing it) that his mother would certainly not have told him the "facts of life"—at least not at the age of eight, and perhaps not at any age. Perhaps even his grandfather might not have done so. It is remarkable to note that Lovecraft was already so keenly aware of the "strange reticences & embarrassments of adult speech" at this time that he sensed something was not being told him; we shall see that at least up to the age of eight, and perhaps beyond, he was a solitary child who largely spent time in the company of adults. And as one who was already a prolific reader (and a reader of material rarely given to the very young), he may have become early aware of anomalies in some of his books also (perhaps his edition of the *Arabian Nights* had, after all, included some of the bawdier stories!). And as for his declaration that his knowledge of the matter killed his interest in sex: this is certainly an impression Lovecraft consistently conveyed to his friends, correspondents, and even his wife. He does not seem to have had any romantic involvements in high school or at any time prior to about 1918 (and even this one is, as we shall see, a matter of inference). It took three years for Sonia Greene to convince Lovecraft to marry her; the impetus was clearly on her side. There has been much speculation on Lovecraft's sex life, but I do not believe there are sufficient grounds for much of an opinion beyond the testimony given by Lovecraft himself—and his wife.

In any event, Lovecraft's initial enthusiasm for chemistry and physiology would lead to further interests in geography, geology, astronomy, anthropology, psychology, and other sciences that he would study over a lifetime. He may have remained a layman in all these branches of knowledge, although his absorption of many of them—especially astronomy—was prodigious for a literary man; but they helped to lay strong foundations for his philosophical thought and would provide the backbone for some of his most powerful works of fiction.

Lovecraft reports that he began learning Latin around 1898.[31] Elsewhere he says that "My grandfather had previously [i.e., previous to his entering high school] taught me a great deal of Latin,"[32] which suggests that he had begun the study of Latin independently prior to his attendance at the Slater Avenue School in the fall of 1898. Indeed, I am not sure that Lovecraft was

taught Latin at all at Slater Avenue, for among the first courses he took at Hope Street High School in 1904–05 was "Latin (First Book),"[33] suggesting that his formal training in Latin began only then. It was natural for a boy so enthralled with the classical world to learn Latin, although to have begun it so early—and, evidently, to have mastered it in a few years, without much formal instruction—was an incredible feat even at a time when knowledge of Latin was far commoner than it is now.

Lovecraft's collection of Latin texts—almost all derived, surely, from his grandfather's library—was an entirely adequate one. It included most of the standard poets (Horace, Juvenal, Lucretius, Martial, Ovid, Persius, Vergil) and prose writers (Caesar, Cicero [selected orations only], Livy [selections], Nepos, Sallust), although many of these are simplified school texts with interlinear translations, a technique upon which classicists now look with horror. Of course, he had a wide array of translations, including some classic ones: Dryden's Virgil, Murphy's Tacitus, Francis's Horace, and the like. One work, Alfred Gudeman's two-volume *Latin Literature of the Empire* (1898–99), contains many handwritten interlineations, including the charming note on the *Pervigilium Veneris:* "Mr Parnell hath made a very elegant translation of this poem, tho' he ascribes it to the classic age and to Catullus."[34] Lovecraft also had a sound collection of reference works on classical literature, history, and antiquities. Some of them were a little out of date even in his day—he had Ethan Allan Andrews's *Latin-English Lexicon* (1854) rather than Lewis and Short's *A Latin Dictionary* (1879), which remained the standard work until the publication of the *Oxford Latin Dictionary*—but they were sound enough for his purposes.

We will find that the poetry of Virgil, Horace, and Juvenal left a lasting impression upon Lovecraft, and that the Epicurean philosophy embodied in Lucretius was a central influence in his early thought. One remarkable instance of the classical influence on Lovecraft's juvenile writing is the piece entitled "Ovid's Metamorphoses."

This 116-line work is nothing less than a literal pentameter verse translation of the first 88 lines of Ovid's *Metamorphoses.* The date of composition of this piece is, unfortunately, in doubt. We have seen that in the catalogue of works appended to "The Poem of Ulysses" (1897) this work is listed as "Soon to Be Published"; in the catalogue appended to *Poemata Minora, Volume II* (1902) it appears, anomalously, in a list of "Works by H. Lovecraft in Prose." In both catalogues, however, it is priced

at 25¢, so that I am led to believe that the item was simply placed erroneously in the 1902 catalogue. The handwriting of the autograph manuscript is, moreover, consistent with other of Lovecraft's juvenilia, so that I am inclined to date this work to 1900–1902.

The first thing to note about this translation is how different it is from Dryden's (he translated the first book of the *Metamorphoses* in "Garth's Ovid"). Here is the Latin:

> In nova fert animus mutatas dicere formas
> corpora: di, coeptis (nam vos mutastis et illas)[35]
> adspirate meis primaque ab origine mundi
> ad mea perpetuum deducite tempora carmen.

Here is Dryden's:

> Of bodies changed to various forms, I sing:
> Ye gods, from whom these miracles did spring,
> Inspire my numbers with celestial heat,
> Till I my long laborious work complete;
> And add perpetual tenor to my rhymes,
> Deduced from Nature's birth to Caesar's times.[36]

Here now is Lovecraft's:

> I tell of forms transmuted into new;
> And since, ye Gods, these deeds were wrought by you,
> Smile on my task, and lead my ceaseless lay
> From Earth's beginning to the present day.

The differences are clear: Lovecraft attempts a more literal, line-for-line translation (in spite of Dryden's archaic use of "deduced" for *deducite* [to bring down]), adhering as closely to the Latin as he can. Lovecraft has two subdivisions in his essay, with the headings "The Creation of the World" (ll. 5–84) and "The Creation of Man" (ll. 85–116). There are, admittedly, similar divisions and headings in Dryden, but his first one ("The Golden Age") appears just where Lovecraft's poem leaves off.

On the whole, Lovecraft's is a highly felicitous rendition. The opening —in which Ovid, clearly imitating Lucretius, presents the spectacle of the *rudis indigestaque moles* ("a raw unfinish'd mass") of elements slowly brought to order by "kind Nature & a God" (*deus et melior . . . natura* in Ovid)—displays a cosmic scope not unlike Lovecraft's later fiction, even though in later years he scorned the idea of vaunting the human race as some special creation of Nature:

Though animals of less exalted birth,
With drooping glances eye the lowly earth,
The man is bid to lift his lofty face;
Enjoy the blue, & view the starry space.
Terrestrial matter, rough & undefin'd,
Thus chang'd, gave rise to stately humankind.

And yet, perhaps even here there is a connexion with some of his later views. In arguing in 1920 with Rheinhart Kleiner about the role of eroticism in human affairs, he declared with conscious bombast: "The primal savage or ape merely looks about his native forest to find a mate; the exalted Aryan should lift his eyes to the worlds of space and consider his relation to infinity!!"[37]

There is one other remarkable thing about "Ovid's Metamorphoses," and that is the possibility that it may be a fragment. The autograph manuscript covers 5 sheets, and the text proceeds to the very bottom of the fifth sheet. Could Lovecraft have translated more of Ovid's text, and could this portion have been lost? I think the probability is strong: this item, priced at 25¢, is currently not much longer than "The Poem of Ulysses," priced at 5¢. Perhaps it is not unreasonable to think that Lovecraft might have translated the entire first book of Ovid (779 lines in Latin, hence perhaps about 1000 lines in a translation). The translation as it stands admittedly ends at a clear break in the Latin text, as at line 89 Ovid is about to begin the account of the four ages of man; but I still believe there was once more to this work than we have.

The year 1898 was certainly an eventful one for Lovecraft: he discovered Poe and science, and began learning Latin; he first began attendance at school; and he had his first nervous breakdown. In a late letter he refers to it as a "near-breakdown";[38] I have no idea what it means. Another "near-breakdown" occurred in 1900. There certainly does not seem to have been anything physically wrong with the boy, and there is no record of his admission into a hospital. The history and nature of Lovecraft's early nervous condition are very vexed issues, largely because we have only his words on the matter, most of them written many years after the fact.

Lovecraft reports that "I didn't inherit a very good set of nerves, since near relatives on both sides of my ancestry were prone to headaches, nerve-exhaustion, and breakdowns." He goes on to cite the case of his grandfather

(who had "frightful blind headaches"), his mother (who "could run him a close second"), and his father, whom at the time of the writing of this letter (1931) Lovecraft still believed to be affected by "paralysis" from overstrain. Then he adds: "My own headaches and nervous irritability and exhaustion-tendency began as early as my existence itself—I, too, was an early bottle baby with unexplained miseries and meagre nutriment-assimilative capacities . . ."[39] (As Kenneth Faig wryly remarks, "So, in addition to all her other worries, Susie had her infant's colic."[40]) Early weaning was common practice at the turn of the century and for a long time thereafter; but Lovecraft's remark suggests that his weaning occurred even earlier than was the custom.

In an earlier letter Lovecraft stated that "As an infant, I had been restless & prone to cry." He refers to the effect of his maternal grandmother in correcting "my increasingly boorish deportment—for my nervousness made me a very restless & uncontrollable child."[41] One remarkable admission Lovecraft made late in life was as follows: "My own nervous state in childhood once produced a tendency inclining toward chorea, although not quite attaining that level. My face was full of unconscious & involuntary motions now & then—& the more I was urged to stop them, the more frequent they became."[42] Lovecraft does not exactly date these chorea-like attacks, but context suggests that they occurred before the age of ten. All this led J. Vernon Shea to suspect that Lovecraft might actually have had chorea minor, a nervous ailment that "manifests itself in uncontrollable facial tics and grimaces" but gradually dissipates by puberty.[43] Certainty on the matter is, of course, impossible, but I think the probability of this conjecture is strong. And although Lovecraft maintains in the above letter that "in time the tendency died down" and that his entrance into high school "caused me to reform," I shall have occasion to refer to possible recurrences of these chorea-like symptoms at various periods in Lovecraft's life, even into maturity.

If, then, it is true that Lovecraft suffered some sort of "near-breakdown" in 1898, it seems very likely that the death of his father on July 19, 1898, had much to do with it. We have already seen how a cloud of gloom hung over the household upon the death of Robie Phillips in January 1896 (Lovecraft notes that his family was still in mourning during the winter of that year[44]); and the long-expected but still shocking and tragic death of Winfield can only have been traumatic for the entire family and especially

for a boy not yet eight. I have already conjectured that Lovecraft probably attended his father's funeral and burial in Swan Point Cemetery two days later. The effect on his mother of her husband's death—and, indeed, of his increasingly worsening condition over the last year or two of his life—can only be imagined. It may be well, then, to summarise the relations between Lovecraft and his mother up to this time, as best we can piece them together.

There is no question but that his mother both spoiled Lovecraft and was overprotective of him. This latter trait appears to have developed even before Winfield's hospitalisation in 1893. Winfield Townley Scott tells the following story:

> On their summer vacations at Dudley, Massachusetts . . ., Mrs. Lovecraft refused to eat her dinner in the dining room, not to leave her sleeping son alone for an hour one floor above. When a diminutive teacher-friend, Miss Ella Sweeney, took the rather rangy youngster to walk, holding his hand, she was enjoined by Howard's mother to stoop a little lest she pull the boy's arm from its socket. When Howard pedaled his tricycle along Angell Street, his mother trooped beside him, a guarding hand upon his shoulder.[45]

Scott derived this information from Ella Sweeney (via her friend Myra H. Blosser), a Providence woman who became associate superintendent of schools and who met the Lovecrafts in Dudley. The mention of "summer vacations" (plural) is apparently an error copied by Scott from Blosser's letter to him.[46] Lovecraft admits that "My array of toys, books, and other youthful pleasures was virtually unlimited"[47] at this time; whatever he wanted, he seems to have got. We have already seen how his mother was dragged to all the curio-shops in Providence to satisfy Lovecraft's early enthusiasm for the *Arabian Nights,* and how he instantly got a chemistry set when his interest turned in that direction. Another instance of how far his family would go to indulge the boy occurred about this time: "When I was very small, my kingdom was the lot next my birthplace, 454 Angell St. Here were trees, shrubs, and grasses, and here when I was between four and five the coachman built me an immense summer-house all mine own—a somewhat crude yet vastly pleasing affair, with a staircase leading to a flat roof . . ."[48] This helped to foster Lovecraft's interest in railroads, as I shall note later.

At this point it may be well to mention a remarkable bit of testimony provided by Lovecraft's wife. In her 1948 memoir Sonia H. Davis states the following:

> It was . . . at that time the fashion for mothers to start "hope-chests" for their daughters even before they were born, so that when Mrs. Winfield Scott Lovecraft was expecting her first child she had hoped it would be a girl; nor was this curtailed at the birth of her boy. So this hope-chest was gradually growing; some day to be given to Howard's wife. . . . As a baby Howard looked like a beautiful little girl. He had, at the tender age of three years, a head of flaxen curls of which any girl would have been proud. . . . These he wore until he was about six. When at last he protested and wanted them cut off, his mother had taken him to the barber's and cried bitterly as the "cruel" shears separated them from his head.[49]

I suppose one must accept this statement for the most part, although I think rather too much has been made of it—and also of the apparent fact that Susie dressed her son in frocks at an early age. The celebrated 1892 photograph of Lovecraft and his parents shows him with the curls and the frock, as does another picture probably taken around the same time.[50] Lovecraft remarks on the curls himself, saying that it was this "golden mane" that partly led Louise Imogen Guiney to name him "Little Sunshine."[51] But another photograph of Lovecraft, probably taken at the age of seven or eight,[52] shows him as a perfectly normal boy with short hair and boy's attire. In fact, it cannot be ascertained when Susie ceased to dress Lovecraft in frocks; even if she had persisted up to the age of four, it would not have been especially unusual.

There are two other pieces of evidence one can adduce here, although their purport is not entirely clear. R. H. Barlow, in his jottings about Lovecraft (mostly taken down in 1934 but some made evidently later), writes: "Mrs. Gamwell's stories of how HPL for a while insisted 'I'm a little girl' . . ."[53] Annie Gamwell could not have made this observation later than early 1897, as that was when she married and moved out of 454 Angell Street; and the context of Barlow's remark (he adds the detail of how Lovecraft would spout Tennyson from the table-top) could date the event to as early as 1893. Then there is a letter from Whipple Phillips to Lovecraft, dated June 19, 1894: "I will tell you more about what I have seen

when I get home if you are a good boy and *wear trousers*."[54] Whipple has underscored the last two words. The implication is, I suppose, that Lovecraft at this time was not fond of wearing trousers.

In spite of the above, I see little evidence of gender confusion in Lovecraft's later life; if anything, he displayed quick and unwavering prejudice against homosexuals. Susie may have wanted a girl, and may have attempted to preserve the illusion for some years, but Lovecraft even in youth was headstrong and made it early evident that he was a boy with a boy's normal interests. It was, after all, he who wanted his flowing curls cut off at the age of six.

In addition to being oversolicitous of her son, Susie also attempted to mould him in ways he found either irritating or repugnant. Around 1898 she tried to enrol him in a children's dancing class; Lovecraft "abhorred the thought" and, fresh from an initial study of Latin, responded with a line from Cicero: *"Nemo fere saltat sobrius, nisi forte insanit!"* ("Scarcely any sober person dances, unless by chance he is insane").[55] Evidently Lovecraft had developed a certain skill in getting his own way, for—like his initial Sunday school attendance (perhaps the previous year), which he was allowed to forego—he evidently escaped the dancing lessons. But what he did not escape were violin lessons, which lasted a full two years, between the ages of seven and nine.

These lessons were, however, initially at his own insistence:

> My rhythmic tendencies led me into a love of melody, and I was forever whistling & humming in defiance of convention & good breeding. I was so exact in time & tune, & showed such a semi-professional precision & flourish in my crude attempts, that my plea for a violin was granted when I was seven years of age, & I was placed under the instruction of the best violin teacher for children in the city—Mrs. Wilhelm Nauck. For two years I made such progress that Mrs. Nauck was enthusiastic, & declared that I should adopt music as a career—BUT, all this time the tedium of practising had been wearing shockingly on my always sensitive nervous system. My "career" extended until 1899, its summit being a public recital at which I played a solo from Mozart before an audience of considerable size. Soon after that, my ambition & taste alike collapsed like a house of cards . . . I began to detest classical music, because it had meant so much

> painful labour to me; & I positively *loathed* the violin! Our physician, knowing my temperament, advised an immediate discontinuance of music lessons, which speedily ensued.[56]

Lovecraft's later accounts of this episode do not differ greatly in details. One interesting elaboration occurs in a letter of 1934:

> . . . I had a very irregular heart action—badly affected by physical exertion—& such acute kidney trouble that a local practitioner would have operated for stone in the bladder had not a Boston specialist given a sounder diagnosis & traced it to the nervous system. That was when I was 9, & reduced to a very irritable state of pressure of violin lessons. On the specialist's advice those lessons were stopped . . .[57]

Now it appears that this specialist, and not the family doctor, was the one who stopped the violin lessons.

It may be worth engaging in some idle speculation as to what the "solo" was that Lovecraft performed in front of a sizeable audience. Mozart wrote no works for *unaccompanied* violin—such as Bach's six spectacularly difficult sonatas and partitas, BWV 1001–06—so that one assumes he played one of Mozart's sonatas for violin and piano; Mrs Nauck presumably accompanied him on the piano. If this assumption is correct, then we may be limited to some of Mozart's very early—and very easy—sonatas, e.g. K. 6–15 (where the keyboard part is actually substantially more difficult than the violin part). Even among this group we can eliminate some of the harder sonatas (K. 11–15) as being well beyond the capabilities of a young violinist of two years' experience, as these works involve relatively advanced techniques (rapid string-crossings, triple- or even quadruple-stops, rapid succession of trills, tremolos, shifts into second or third position, etc.) that Lovecraft is not likely to have learnt. Indeed, Lovecraft may have played only one movement (probably the slow movement or the minuet, since even the allegros of the early sonatas are demanding to a very inexperienced player) of the sonata in C, K. 6, in D, K. 7, or in B-flat, K. 8. Lovecraft's description of a "solo *from* Mozart" implies that only part of a work was performed.

One does not wish to minimise Lovecraft's accomplishment, however. Most violinists of his age are nowadays not given any works in the standard repertoire to play, but are rather trained on workbooks involving scales, arpeggios, and the like. Probably Lovecraft used these as well (and they are

very likely what led him to loathe practising, as they are indeed quite dull and repetitious), but to perform any work of Mozart at the age of nine bespeaks considerable natural ability. A moot question is whether Lovecraft actually learnt to read music: he may have and later forgot; if he did not, he could still have played the Mozart piece by having the proper fingerings "coded" to the proper strings.[58]

One would like to date Lovecraft's second "near-breakdown" to the termination of his violin lessons, but he clearly asserts that the first occurred in 1898 and the second in 1900. In any event, Lovecraft manifestly continued to be under considerable nervous strain; a situation in part relieved and in part augmented by his first attempt at school attendance, in which he was withdrawn after a year's term (1898–99). Indeed, his casual remark in 1929 that "I spent the summer of 1899 with my mother"[59] in Westminster, Massachusetts, must lead one to speculate on the purpose of such a trip, and to wonder whether health reasons were a factor. Faig suspects that the vacation may have been taken to relieve the stress of Lovecraft's father's death;[60] but this had occurred a full year before, and even if that event had caused Lovecraft's "near-breakdown" of 1898, he seemed well enough to begin school in the fall of that year. I am therefore inclined to connect the trip with the trauma of his first year of school and also of his violin lessons, which probably ended in the summer of 1899.

Westminster, incidentally, strikes me as an odd place for Lovecraft and his mother to spend a vacation. It is in north central Massachusetts, near Fitchburg, and not at all near Dudley, where the Lovecrafts had vacationed in 1892. Perhaps they had relatives there. We know almost nothing about this trip; thirty years later, when revisiting the spot, he wrote: ". . . we looked up Moses Wood's 'Harvard Cottage' . . . Wood is dead, & so is old Mrs. Marshall who kept the gaol at the foot of the hill, but Wood's widow is still living. . . . It was certainly interesting to leap back 30 years & recall the summer of 1899 when I was so bored with rusticity that I longed for the sight of a town!"[61] That last remark is telling: for all Lovecraft's yearning to be a country squire, he was really a city boy. As a *permanent* residence, he wanted something between the vacancy of unspoilt Nature and the cacophonic phantasmagoria of New York City—something very like Providence, in fact.

From all that has gone before it will be evident that Lovecraft led a comparatively solitary young childhood, with only his adult family members as his companions. Many of his childhood activities—reading, writing, scientific work, practising music, even attending the theatre—are primarily or exclusively solitary, and we do not hear of any boyhood friends until his entrance into grade school. All his letters discussing his childhood stress his relative isolation and loneliness:

> Amongst my few playmates [at the age of five] I was very unpopular, since I would insist on playing out events in history, or acting according to consistent plots.[62]
>
> You will notice that I have made no reference to childish friends & playmates—I had none! The children I knew disliked me, & I disliked them. I was used to adult company & conversation, & despite the fact that I felt shamefully dull beside my elders, I had nothing in common with the infant train. Their romping & shouting puzzled me. I hated mere play & dancing about—in my relaxations I always desired *plot*.[63]

One confirmation of this comes from the recollections of Lovecraft's second cousin Ethel M. Phillips (1888–1987), later Mrs Ethel Phillips Morrish. Ethel, two years older than Lovecraft, was living with her parents Jeremiah W. Phillips (the son of Whipple's brother James Wheaton Phillips) and his wife Abby in various suburbs of Providence (Johnston, Cranston) during the 1890s, and was sent over to play with young Howard. She confessed in an interview conducted in 1977 that she did not much care for her cousin, finding him eccentric and aloof. She became very irritated because Lovecraft did not apparently know how a swing worked. But she does have a delightful image of Lovecraft, at about the age of four, turning the pages of some monstrously huge book in a very solemn and adult manner.[64]

Lovecraft provides one remarkable glimpse of some of the solitary games he played as a young boy:

> My favourite toys were *very small* ones, which would permit of their arrangement in widely extensive scenes. My mode of play was to devote an entire table-top to a scene, which I would proceed to develop as a broad landscape . . . helped by occasional trays of earth or clay. I had all sorts of *toy villages* with small wooden or cardboard houses, & by combining

> several of them would often construct *cities* of considerable extent & intricacy. . . . Toy trees—of which I had an infinite number—were used with varying effect to form parts of the landscape . . . even *forests* (or the suggested edges of forests). Certain kinds of blocks made walls & hedges, & I also used blocks in constructing large public buildings. . . . My people were mainly of the lead-soldier type & magnitude—frankly too large for the buildings which they presumably tenanted, but as small as I could get. I accepted some as they were, but had my mother modify many in costume with the aid of knife & paint-brush. Much piquancy was added to my scenes by special toy buildings like windmills, castles, &c.

No doubt Lovecraft once again pestered his mother into both procuring these toys from various shops and helping him to decorate them. But there was more to it than just a static landscape; with his inveterate feel for plot, and his already developing sense of time, history, and pageantry, Lovecraft would actually act out historical scenarios with his miniature cities:

> I was always as consistent—geographically & chronologically—in setting my landscapes as my infant store of information would allow. Naturally, the majority of scenes would be of the 18th century; although my parallel fascination with railways & street-cars led me to construct large numbers of contemporary landscapes with intricate systems of tin trackage. I had a magnificent repertoire of cars & railway accessories—signals, tunnels, stations, &c—though this system was admittedly too large in scale for my villages. My mode of play was to construct some scene as fancy—incited by some story or picture—dictated, & then to act out its life for long periods—sometimes a fortnight—making up events of a highly melodramatic cast as I went. These events would sometimes cover only a brief span—a war or plague or merely a spirited pageant of travel & commerce & incident leading nowhere—but would sometimes involve long aeons, with visible changes in the landscape & buildings. Cities would fall & be forgotten, & new cities would spring up. Forests would fall or be cut down, & rivers (I had some fine *bridges*) would change their beds. History, of course, would suffer in this process; but my data . . . was of a distinctly

> juvenile kind & extent. Sometimes I would try to depict actual historic events & scenes—Roman, 18th century, or modern—& sometimes I would make everything up. Horror-plots were frequent, though (oddly enough) I never attempted to construct fantastic or extra-terrestrial scenes. I was too much of an innate realist to care for fantasy in its purest form. Well—I got a great kick out of all this. In about a week or two I'd get fed up on a scene & substitute a new one, though now & then I'd be so attached to one that I'd retain it longer—starting a fresh scene on another table with materials not forming scene #1. There was a kind of intoxication in being lord of a visible world (albeit a miniature one) & determining the flow of its events. I kept this up till I was 11 or 12, despite the parallel growth of literary & scientific interests.[65]

Lovecraft does not give an explicit date for the commencement of this fascinating exercise, but one imagines it dates to his seventh or eighth birthday.

Although Lovecraft may have been solitary, he was by no means devoted merely to indoor activities. The year 1900 saw the commencement of his career as bicyclist, something he would keep up for more than a decade. He tells the story piquantly:

> Good old 1900—will I ever forget it? My mother gave me my first bicycle on Aug. 20 of that memorable year—my tenth birthday—and I found myself able to *ride* it without lessons . . . although *I couldn't get off*. I just rode around and around until pride vanished and I confest my technical limitation—slowing up and letting my grandfather hold the wheel still whilst I clamber'd down with the aid of the horse-block. But before the year's end I was master of my steed—burning up all the roads for miles around.[66]

Late in life he referred to himself as a "veritable bike-centaur" at this time.[67]

Lovecraft's attendance at the Slater Avenue School (located at the northeast corner of Slater Avenue and University Avenue, where St Dunstan's Prep School now stands) changed all this, at least to some degree. I am not entirely clear on the exact period or duration of Lovecraft's attendance, as his records from the school (which was abandoned as early

as 1917[68]) do not seem to survive. Lovecraft says that he entered the Slater Avenue School for the first time in 1898, adding: "Hitherto it had been deemed unwise to subject so irritable & sensitive a child to discipline of any sort. I entered the highest grade of primary school, but soon found the instruction quite useless, since I had picked up most of the material before."[69] By the "highest grade of primary school" Lovecraft presumably means the fourth or perhaps even the fifth grade, one or two grades higher than the level expected of a boy of his age. In an earlier letter he notes: "About this time I tried attendance at school, but was unable to endure the routine."[70] In other words, it appears that Lovecraft's initial stint at Slater Avenue lasted only for the school year 1898–99.

In any event, it was at this time that Lovecraft finally began developing some playmates outside of his immediate family. His friendship with Chester Pierce Munroe (one year older than Lovecraft), Harold Bateman Munroe (one year younger), and Stuart Coleman can be dated to this time. These friendships seem to have developed over the next several years, and I shall discuss them in greater detail in the next chapter.

Lovecraft does not seem to have returned to Slater Avenue until the 1902–03 school year. What he did during the interim in regard to schooling is not easy to ascertain; at a later period he received private tutoring, but apparently not in the period 1899–1902. I suspect that Lovecraft was, as before, left to satisfy his intellectual curiosity in his own way: his family could hardly have failed to see that the boy was naturally bookish and did not need much incentive to investigate any subject that caught his fancy. One extremely odd remark which Lovecraft made in passing is that he frequented the Providence Athletic Association in 1899–1900, where he took shower-baths for the first time.[71] I have no idea what he could have been doing here: Lovecraft certainly never displayed any interest in sports, either as a participant or as a spectator. Could his mother have urged him to use the gym simply to get him out of the cloistered confines of that "black, windowless attic room" and make him a somewhat more "normal" nine-year-old boy? The impetus could also have come from Whipple, who perhaps wished his grandson to develop more "normal" or "masculine" interests, or may have simply felt that a little exercise was a good thing for a boy too exclusively given to intellectual pursuits. But this athletic experience did not, apparently, last very long, for as Lovecraft notes in a

late letter: “My family kept me away from gymnasiums after I had a fainting fit in one at the age of 9.”[72]

If Lovecraft was by no means idle as a reader—he even remarks that his mother urged him around 1899 (perhaps during their summer in Westminster) to read, of all things, *Little Women,* which “bored me to death”[73]—he continued to experiment as a writer. Fiction, poetry, and scientific treatises emerged from his pen; and he now even ventured on some historical works. The 1902 catalogue lists two lost items, “Early Rhode Island” and “An Historical Account of Last Year’s War with SPAIN.” The latter, at any rate, must date to 1899, and the former probably also dates to around that time. Lovecraft’s interest in the antiquities of his native city and state began, as we have seen, from as early as the age of three; and there seems little doubt that he began absorbing the history of his state through books from an early period. “Early Rhode Island” was priced at 25¢, suggesting that it was a substantial work. Among the books in his library that might have served as sources for it are Alice Earle’s *In Old Narragansett: Romances and Realities* (1898), James Davis Knowles’s *Memoir of Roger Williams, the Founder of the State of Rhode-Island* (1834), and two volumes of the Rhode Island Historical Society Collections: John Callendar’s *An Historical Discourse on the Civil and Religious Affairs of the Colony of Rhode-Island* (1838) and William Reed Staples’s *Annals of the Town of Providence, from Its First Settlement to the Organization of the City Government, in June, 1832* (1843). Some of these works may seem a little weighty for a nine-year-old, but I would not wish to discount Lovecraft’s ability to comprehend any of them. If “Early Rhode Island” dates to as late as 1902, then Lovecraft may also have benefited from a landmark three-volume work compiled by Edward Field, *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century* (1902).

Of the treatise on the Spanish-American war much might be said, in spite of the fact that we have absolutely no idea of its contents. The work is significant if only because it is the first clear indication we have of Lovecraft’s interest in contemporary politics.

H. P. Lovecraft was born in the entirely undistinguished administration of the Republican Benjamin Harrison—whose birthday, oddly enough, he shared. His year of birth coincides with the emergence of the Populist movement in the South and West, which initially dominated the Democratic

party and later formed its own party. In part as a result of its influence, the Democrat Grover Cleveland won the election of 1892. We have already seen Lovecraft's declaration at the age of six that he did not own allegiance to President Cleveland, as the rest of his family (grudgingly, no doubt, since they were almost certainly Republicans) did, but to Queen Victoria. His entire family (the male members, at any rate) would surely have voted for McKinley against William Jennings Bryan in the election of 1896.

Part of the backlash against Cleveland and the Democrats—aside from an economic crisis in 1893–96 that hit working people very hard—was Cleveland's unwillingness to intervene in Cuba's revolution against Spain in 1895, a cause many Americans supported. McKinley himself was reluctant to become entangled in the matter, but he had no option after the battleship *Maine* was blown up in Havana harbour on February 15, 1898, with the loss of 260 Americans. Although Spain was willing to yield to American ultimatums, public pressure forced McKinley to go to war. It was not much of a contest. The war was over in ten weeks (May–July 1898), and was highlighted by Theodore Roosevelt's leading of the Rough Riders into battle. The Americans demanded the independence of Cuba (which then became a U.S. protectorate in 1901) and the cession of Puerto Rico and Guam; McKinley also decided at this time to annex the Philippines. It was, of course, partly this military triumph that allowed the McKinley-Roosevelt ticket to prevail over the hapless Bryan in 1900.

I have no doubt that Lovecraft, who was probably already engaging in imitations of historical battles with his toy figures on tabletops, found the easy triumph of the American forces over Spain inspiring. For all his Anglophilia, he always took pride in American political and cultural victories over the rest of the world (except England). His treatise is not likely to have delved much into the political or diplomatic background of the war, but would probably have been a stirring narrative of the principal battles. And yet, if the words "historical account" in its title are to be taken literally, perhaps Lovecraft did engage in some historical description of Spanish influence in the Caribbean or perhaps in the whole of the Americas, a subject he found compelling in later life.

If Lovecraft is accurate in stating that he discovered Russell's *The Frozen Pirate* at the age of eight or nine, then that melodramatic novel—along, perhaps, with the scarcely less melodramatic but more artistically finished

Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym by Edgar Allan Poe—may have helped to inspire his interest in geography, particularly the Antarctic, an interest that led not merely to several works of fiction both early and late but several works of nonfiction as well.

Lovecraft is unclear on when he became interested in geography in general and Antarctica in particular: in two letters (1916, 1935) he dates his interest to 1900,[74] while in two others (1915, 1926) he dates it to the age of twelve, or 1902.[75] I am inclined to accept the earlier date, for in the 1916 letter he goes on to say: "The Borchgrevink expedition, which had just made a new record in South Polar achievement, greatly stimulated this study." The Norwegian Carsten Egeberg Borchgrevink's great achievement was to have established the first camp on actual Antarctic soil. He had sailed from England in August 1898, established the camp in February 1899, stayed all through the long Antarctic night (May–July 1899), walked on the Ross Ice Shelf on February 19, 1900, and returned to England by the summer of 1900.[76] In his 1935 letter Lovecraft explains: "I think it was the newspaper accounts of Borchgrevingk's [*sic*] second expedition of 1900 . . . which first captured my attention & interest."

It is not surprising that Lovecraft's interest would have been aroused by the Borchgrevink expedition, for this was the first important Antarctic voyage since the 1840s. It is also for this reason that the three lost treatises on Antarctic exploration which Lovecraft wrote around this time —"Voyages of Capt. Ross, R.N." (1902), "Wilkes's Explorations" (1902), and "Antarctic Atlas" (1903)[77]—discuss those 1840s expeditions: there were no others in recent memory he could have written about. In fact, I am wondering whether the dates of writing supplied (in 1936) by Lovecraft are entirely accurate: I would like to date them to an even earlier period, say 1900, for reasons I shall supply presently.

The history of Antarctic exploration can rightly be said to begin with Captain James Cook, who attempted in 1772–74 to reach the South Pole but had to turn back because of the ice fields. It was on the second of his journeys (1774) that he stumbled upon Easter Island when heading north. Edward Bransfield of England actually sighted the Antarctic continent on January 30, 1820, and Alexander I Island (a large island off the coast of what is now called the Antarctic Peninsula) was discovered by Fabian von Bellingshausen on January 29, 1821; because of the heavy ice field in which it is embedded, it was not known to be an island until 1940, thereby

creating considerable controversy over who had actually discovered the continent of Antarctica.

In the late 1830s three separate expeditions did much to chart various portions of Antarctica. The American Charles Wilkes (1798–1877) went to the Antarctic, bizarrely enough, to test the hollow earth theory proposed in 1818 by John Cleves Symmes (a theory Lovecraft attacked in a letter to the *Providence Journal* of 1906). An expedition mounted in 1829 by Symmes and Jeremiah N. Reynolds was a failure, but some years later Reynolds managed to persuade Wilkes, then only a lieutenant in the U.S. Navy, to lead another voyage. Wilkes's expedition—with six ships, eighty-three officers, and 345 crewmen—got under way on August 18, 1838, reaching the Antarctic zone in March 1839. One group attempted to enter the frozen Weddell Sea on the eastern side of the Antarctic Peninsula, but could not get very far because of the ice. Another group, after wintering in Sydney, skirted the western coast of the Antarctic, actually sighting land on January 19, 1840 (Edgar Allan Poe's thirty-first birthday, incidentally). By January 30 Wilkes had seen enough of the land mass to be certain that an actual continent was involved, not merely a series of islands or a huge frozen sea, and he made a momentous pronouncement: "Now that all were convinced of its existence, I gave the land the name of the Antarctic Continent." Wilkes returned to Sydney on March 11, 1840.

The Englishman James Clark Ross (1800–1862) left England on September 25, 1839, for the purpose of exploring the huge ice shelf that now bears his name. In doing so, he discovered the small island at the mouth of the ice shelf now called Ross Island, and named the two enormous volcanoes there (Mt Erebus and Mt Terror) after his two ships, the *Erebus* and *Terror*. Dr Joseph Hooker, one of the ship's doctors, gives a vivid impression of the first sight of Mt Erebus: "This was a sight so surpassing everything that can be imagined . . . that it really caused a feeling of awe to steal over us at the consideration of our own comparative insignificance and helplessness, and at the same time, an indescribable feeling of the greatness of the Creator in the works of His hand."[78] Lovecraft would certainly have echoed the first half of that utterance, but demurred about the second half. In any event, Ross made two further expeditions (1841–43), but they accomplished little. His great achievement was the discovery of the Ross Ice Shelf, "the grim barrier which in later years would prove to be the gateway to Antarctica."[79] It is interesting to note that Ross did not believe

the Antarctic continent to be a single land mass—a view in which Lovecraft persisted until it was finally disproven in the 1930s.

There was, at this time, yet another Antarctic expedition, this one conducted by the Frenchman Jules Dumont d'Urville (1837–40), which covered some of the same territory as Wilkes; in fact, the two expeditions encountered each other by accident, and in a not very friendly manner, on January 29, 1840. I do not know why Lovecraft did not bother to write a treatise about d'Urville; perhaps his prejudice toward Anglo-Saxons led him to minimise the French explorer's accomplishment.

Lovecraft reports that by 1902 "I had read virtually everything in fact or fiction concerning the Antarctic, & was breathlessly awaiting news of the first Scott expedition."[80] This latter remark must refer to the expedition by Robert Scott on the *Discovery* that left New Zealand in August 1901, the high point of which was an attempt by Scott, Ernest Shackleton, and Edward Wilson to traverse the Ross Ice Shelf beginning on November 2, 1902; the team, ill-equipped for so arduous a journey, was forced to turn back on December 30 and almost died on the return trip.

As for having read everything ever written on the Antarctic, I don't imagine Lovecraft means the accounts left by the explorers themselves, some of which are enormous and not likely to have been available to him: Captain James Cook's *Voyage towards the South Pole* (1777), James Weddell's *A Voyage towards the South Pole* (1825), Charles Wilkes's *Narrative of the Exploring Expedition, by Authority of Congress, During the Years 1838–1842* (1845), James Clark Ross's *A Voyage of Discovery and Research in the Southern and Antarctic Regions* (1847), F. A. Cook's *Through the First Antarctic Night* (1900) (Cook was a member of Adrien de Gerlache's expedition of 1898–99); C. E. Borchgrevink's *First on the Antarctic Continent* (1901). Then again, perhaps Lovecraft did read some of these. In terms of treatises on the subject, there is only one found in his library: Karl Fricker's *The Antarctic Regions* (1900) (Prescott Holmes's *The Story of Exploration and Adventure in the Frozen Sea* [1896] deals with the north pole) aside from such fictional treatments as Frank Cowan's *Revi-Lona* (1879), James De Mille's *A Strange Manuscript Found in a Copper Cylinder* (1888), and Frank Mackenzie Savile's *Beyond the Great South Wall: The Secret of the Antarctic* (1899), as well as Poe and W. Clark Russell, of course.

I want to date Lovecraft's three lost treatises to around 1900, since it would seem odd for Lovecraft not to have chosen to write up the Borchgrevink and Scott expeditions, so fresh as they would have been in his mind, rather than the expeditions of the 1840s, some of whose discoveries had been superseded by the work of these later explorers. His correspondent C. L. Moore actually saw a copy of "Wilkes's Explorations" in late 1936, [81] although it was not found among his papers after his death a few months later. "Antarctic Atlas" must have been an interesting work, and presumably consisted largely of a map of the continent; but so little exploration of the land mass had been done by this time that large parts of it were utterly unknown and unnamed.

In addition to "composing 'learned' treatises on the real facts" of Antarctic discovery, Lovecraft admitted to writing "many fanciful tales about the Antarctic Continent" in youth.[82] Aside from those inspired by *The Frozen Pirate,* we have no information on what these are. The fact that they—like the treatises—do not appear on the catalogue of works appended to *Poemata Minora, Volume II* (1902) need not indicate that they were written after that date, since we have already noted that some extant works written earlier do not appear on the list. Suffice it to say that Lovecraft found the Antarctic a fascinating land for fictional composition precisely because so little was then—and for many years later—known of it. One might imagine almost anything existing in that bleak world of ice and death.

Lovecraft reports in "A Confession of Unfaith" that "my pompous 'book' called *Poemata Minora,* written when I was eleven, was dedicated 'To the Gods, Heroes, and Ideals of the Ancients', and harped in disillusioned, world-weary tones on the sorrow of the pagan robbed of his antique pantheon." I wonder whether Lovecraft has temporarily forgotten that there were two volumes of *Poemata Minora,* only the second of which survives; this second volume does in fact bear the dedication Lovecraft mentions, but the preface is dated to September 1902, meaning that the completed book dates to just past his twelfth birthday. Perhaps the poems themselves were written just before August 20, 1902. In a 1929 letter he dates Volume I of *Poemata Minora* to 1900, but later in the letter refers to its "publication" as occurring in 1901.[83]

Poemata Minora, Volume II is Lovecraft's most finished and aesthetically satisfying juvenile work. The five poems bear comparison

with any of his later verse, although this is an indication not so much of the merit of these early poems as of the mediocrity of his later ones. It is telling that he allowed three of them—"Ode to Selene or Diana," "To the Old Pagan Religion," and "To Pan"—to appear (albeit with different titles and under pseudonyms) in the amateur paper the *Tryout* for April 1919. The other two—"On the Ruin of Rome" and "On the Vanity of Human Ambition"—could as well have been chosen.

The imprint of this book is "The Providence Press" and the price is 25¢. The preface reads as follows:

> I submit to the publick these idle lines, hoping they will please.
>
> They form a sort of series with my *Odyssey, Iliad, Æneid,* and the like.
>
> THE AUTHOR
>
> 454 Angell St.
>
> Prov. R.I. Sep. 1902.

That second statement is a little ambiguous, for in the catalogue appended to the volume the three works cited in the preface are listed in the category "Works for Children," while "The Hermit," "The Argonauts," and the two volumes of *Poemata Minora* are listed in the category "Other Verses." This leads me to think that those first three works are paraphrases of actual ancient works while the others are poems or poem-cycles inspired by classical themes. In other words, "The Argonauts" (15¢) may not in fact be a paraphrase of Apollonius Rhodius' *Argonautica* (a work with which Lovecraft was never very familiar), but a loose take-off on the voyage of the Argonauts, perhaps derived solely or largely from Bulfinch. "The Hermit" (25¢) may not be a classically inspired work at all; its price suggests that it was substantial.

The poems in *Poemata Minora* reveal considerable originality, and few can be traced to any specific works of classical poetry. Lovecraft was endlessly fond of citing the fourth and final stanza of "Ode to Selene or Diana" as prototypical of his disharmony with the modern age:

> Take heed, *Diana,* of my humble plea.
> Convey me where my happiness may last.
> Draw me against the tide of time's rough sea
> And let my spirit rest amid the past.

But the third stanza is more significant as a sociological commentary:

> The modern world, with all it's care & pain,

The smoky streets, the hideous clanging mills,
Fade 'neath thy beams, *Selene* and again
We dream like shepherds on *Chaldaea's* hills.

I'm not sure where Lovecraft heard any "hideous clanging mills": it is true that his native state had pioneered the use of mills for manufacturing, but that was far in the past. And yet, the "plea" is nonetheless sincere for all that.

"To the Old Pagan Religion" begins boldly:

Olympian Gods! How can I let ye go
And pin my faith to this new *Christian* creed?
Can I resign the deities I know
For him who on a cross for man did bleed?

This reminds me of a remark in "A Confession of Unfaith": "In this period [c. 1899] I read much in Egyptian, Hindoo, and Teutonic mythology, and tried experiments in pretending to believe each one, to see which might contain the greatest truth. I had, it will be noted, immediately adopted the method and manner of science!" The apparent upshot of this informal course in comparative religion was both a renewed faith in the Graeco-Roman religion—it was so much prettier than the gloomy Christian faith practised by his Baptist family—and a still more pronounced rejection of Christianity, something his studies in astronomy beginning later in the year only augmented. But at the moment it was not secularism so much as wistful pathos at the passing of the ancient pantheon that seemed to affect him:

How in my weakness can my hopes depend
On one lone God, though mighty be his pow'r?
Why can *Jove's* host no more assistance lend,
To soothe my pains, and cheer my troubled hour?

I have no doubt that Lovecraft actually felt the "pains" he cites here; to someone so imbued with the spirit of classicism—and so isolated from his fellows that he fails to observe that that spirit is an anomaly—the awareness that Jove and his minions are no longer living objects of faith might well have been a cause of genuine anguish.

"On the Ruin of Rome" is a more conventional lament on the passing of the Roman empire. It is made distinctive only by a curious sort of dactylic pentameter line that is perhaps an attempt to imitate the dactylic hexameter of ancient epic poetry:

How dost thou lie, *O Rome,* neath the foot of the *Teuton*
Slaves are thy men, and bent to the will of the conqueror:
Whither hath gone, great city, the race that gave law to all nations,
Knew not defeat, but gave it to all who attack'd thee?

"To Pan" is a pleasing little lyric in quatrains (with an odd couplet thrown in before the last stanza) telling of seeing Pan playing on his pipes—perhaps an echo of the vision of fauns and dryads Lovecraft claimed to have had at the age of seven. "On the Vanity of Human Ambition" is a ten-line poem that betrays the influence of three separate authors: Samuel Johnson (the title of whose *The Vanity of Human Wishes* has been adapted here), Ovid (whose tale of Apollo and Daphne from *Metamorphoses* 1.452–567 is condensed in the first two lines), and Juvenal (whose *mens sana in corpore sano* is echoed in the final two lines: "True bliss, methinks, a man can only find / In virtuous life, & cultivated mind"). Otherwise the poem is a conventional attack on greed and the dissatisfaction that inevitably results from the attainment of some long-sought prize. It is the only poem in the book written in heroic couplets.

Something should be said about the illustrations in *Poemata Minora.* Each poem bears an illustration in pencil with accompanying Latin mottos. The illustrations are for the most part unremarkable, and the Latin occasionally erroneous but on the whole clever and pertinent. The illustration for "To the Old Pagan Religion" shows a figure (a pagan, one supposes, although he looks more like an Arab) bowing before an altar to Zeus, with a Latin tag noting how the Emperors Constantine and Theodosius suppressed the pagan religion. The illustration for "On the Vanity of Human Ambition" is a little more disturbing: it shows an obviously Jewish figure (there are Hebrew letters next to him) with the Latin inscription: "HIC.HOMO.
EST.AVARISSIMVS.ET.TVRPISSIMVS.IUDAEVS" ("This man is a most greedy and filthy Jew"). Consider the inscription on the illustration for "On the Ruin of Rome": "ROMA.REGINA.ORBIS.TERRARVM.
DECEDEBAT.
CVM.ROMANI.SVCCEDEBANTVR.A.GENTIBVS.INFERIORIBVS" ("Rome, queen of the world, declined when the Romans were succeeded by inferior peoples"). The poem indeed refers to "we, base *Italians,*" and it is interesting to note—in light of Lovecraft's later vaunting of the Teuton—

that the Teuton is here blamed for the destruction of Rome. It would be another three years before Lovecraft wrote an explicitly racist poem, and his early racial views should be discussed at that time.

Poemata Minora, Volume II is a pleasing little product, fully worth the 25¢ Lovecraft was charging. Volume I is likely to have been equally substantial, as an advertisement in Volume II offers it for 25¢ also. But this volume is the final product of Lovecraft's classicism. Although he would continue to draw upon the ancients for aesthetic and even philosophical inspiration, a new interest would for a time eclipse all others and impel an overhauling of his entire world view. For it was in the winter of 1902–03 that Lovecraft discovered astronomy.

4. What of Unknown Africa?

(1902–1908)

> The most poignant sensations of my existence are those of 1896, when I discovered the Hellenic world, and of 1902, when I discovered the myriad suns and worlds of infinite space. Sometimes I think the latter event the greater, for the grandeur of that growing conception of the universe still excites a thrill hardly to be duplicated. I made of astronomy my principal scientific study, obtaining larger and larger telescopes, collecting astronomical books to the number of 61, and writing copiously on the subject in the form of special and monthly articles in the local press. ("A Confession of Unfaith")

This remark, made around 1921, is a sufficient indication of the degree to which the discovery of astronomy affected Lovecraft's entire world view. I shall pursue the philosophical ramifications of his astronomical studies later; here it is worth pursuing in detail how he came upon the science and what immediate literary products it engendered. In the winter of 1902 Lovecraft was attending the Slater Avenue School, but his statements lead one to believe that he stumbled upon astronomy largely of his own accord. The majority of his astronomy volumes were inherited from his maternal grandmother Robie Phillips's collection,[1] and he notes that the first *new* astronomy book he purchased was in February 1903: Charles Augustus Young's *Lessons in Astronomy Including Uranography* (rev. ed. 1903)[2] (his library also contains the first edition of this book [1893], presumably an inheritance from his grandmother). Of the sixty-one books he claims to have had in his library in 1921, only about thirty-five were found after his death, when his library was catalogued; and some of these are rather old and elementary school manuals: George F. Chambers's *The Story of the Stars, Simply Told for General Readers* (1895), Thomas Dick's *The Practical Astronomer* (1846), a 30th edition of Joseph Guy's *Elements of Astronomy* (1871), Simon Newcomb's *Popular Astronomy* (1880), John A. Westwood Oliver's *Astronomy for Amateurs* (1888), Joel Dorman Steele's *A Fourteen Weeks Course in Descriptive Astronomy* (1873), and the like. These books are too old to have been used at Slater Avenue or at Hope Street High School (Lovecraft did not, in any event, take astronomy courses at Hope Street, even though they were offered), and some at least must have come from

Robie's library. Of course, Lovecraft, ever the ardent used-bookstore hunter, could have picked up some of these titles on various book-hunting expeditions throughout his life.

As with so many of his other early interests, Lovecraft's family was very obliging in supply the materials necessary for his pursuit of astronomy. His first telescope, acquired in February 1903, was a 99¢ affair from a mail-order house, Kirtland Brothers & Co. in New York City. In July of that year, however, he acquired a 2¼-inch telescope from Kirtland for $16.50, plus a tripod made by a local craftsman for $8.00. Then in the summer of 1906 (and recall that this was *after* the financial crash following the death of Whipple Phillips in 1904) Lovecraft obtained a Bardon 3" from Montgomery Ward & Co.—for $50.00. "It came on a pillar-&-claw table stand, but I shifted it to the old tripod . . ."[3] He retained this telescope to the end of his life, and it is now in the possession of the August Derleth Society.

Lovecraft's initial concerns as an astronomer were not very ambitious. In a 1918 letter to Alfred Galpin he states that began a survey of the heavens after securing his second telescope, and was content merely to familiarise himself with the solar system and constellations:

> My observations . . . were confined mostly to the moon and the planet Venus. You will ask, why the latter, since its markings are doubtful even in the largest instruments? I answer—this very MYSTERY was what attracted me. In boyish egotism I fancied I might light upon something with my poor 2¼ inch telescope which had eluded the users of the 40-inch Yerkes telescope!! And to tell the truth, I think the moon interested me more than anything else—the very nearest object. I used to sit night after night absorbing the minutest details of the lunar surface, till today I can tell you of every peak and crater as though they were the topographical features of my own neighbourhood. I was highly angry at Nature for withholding from my gaze the other side of our satellite![4]

He did, however, manage to see Borelli's comet in August 1903—the first comet he observed.[5]

Lovecraft's interests were, in their way, not wholly dissimilar from those of the professional astronomers of his day. He discovered astronomy just before the time when it was beginning to transform itself into astrophysics and enter the realm of philosophy with Einstein's formulation of the theory

of relativity in 1905. The eighth planet of the solar system, Neptune, had been discovered in 1846, and in 1902 the discovery of Pluto was still almost thirty years away. Pierre Simon de Laplace had articulated the nebular hypothesis in *Système du monde* (1796), and it was not seriously questioned as an account of the formation of the solar system until very early in the twentieth century. The great eighteenth-century astronomer Sir William Herschel (1738–1822) was still regarded as the greatest astronomer in Western history; he had discovered Uranus in 1781. His work in the discovery of nebulae, double stars, and the like was carried on by his son, John Herschel (1792–1871), who discovered the Magellanic Clouds around 1835.[6] In other words, the heavens were still being charted and the basic features of novae, nebulae, and the Milky Way were still not fully understood.[7]

As with his previous intellectual interests, Lovecraft's discovery of astronomy led eventually to writing—in this case, to an unprecedented quantity of writing. He does not seem to have commenced astronomical writing until the late summer of 1903, but when he did, he did so with gusto. Perhaps one of his earliest pieces is "My Opinion as to the Lunar Canals,"[8] a brief discourse on the curiously regular canals on the moon, similar to the more celebrated Martian canals. (A date of 1903 has been written on the text, but it is not in Lovecraft's handwriting.) Lovecraft conjectures that they were "matter volcanically ejected from the moon's interior in past ages" and that they are, accordingly, "but natural curiosities." He then launches into a bold attack on some illustrious astronomical contemporaries: "As to Prof. Pickering's theory—i.e.—That they are streaks of vegetation, I have but to say that any intelligent astronomer would consider it unworthy of notice, as our satellite is wanting in both water and atmosphere, the two essentials for life either animal or vegetable. Of course Lowell's theory (that they are artificial) is perfectly ridiculous." Lovecraft later had an amusing encounter with Percival Lowell.

Among the treatises Lovecraft produced around this time is "The Science Library," a nine-volume series probably written in 1903 or 1904. The list of volumes are as follows: 1. Naked Eye Selenography; 2. The Telescope; 3. Galileo; 4. Herschel (revised); 5. On Saturn and His Ring; 6. Selections from author's "Astronomy"; 7. The Moon, Part I; 8. The Moon, Part II; 9. On Optics. Of these, nos. 1, 2, and 5 survive. My guess is that no. 4 does not refer to Sir William Herschel but rather to the planet Uranus,

which Lovecraft through much of his early astronomical work refers to as Herschel, even though this designation had not been in common use since the eighteenth century.

The surviving items are all about 3 × 4 inches in dimensions and eight pages long (four sheets folded in half); they combine Lovecraft's astronomical and antiquarian interests by being written in archaic English, with the long s. The hand lettering attempts to imitate print (including italics), although the lines are not very even or straight. They are all profusely illustrated, and the one on the telescope contains a number of fairly complicated diagrams explaining the construction of telescopes by Galileo, Huygens, Herschel, and others. This volume also contains an advertisement for one R. L. Allen at 33 Eddy Street (on the West Side, just across the Providence River), who is selling telescopes ranging from $40.00 to $200. Perhaps this is the local craftsman who made Lovecraft's tripod. The title of the treatise on Saturn identifies only one ring around that planet, but the text itself makes clear that Lovecraft is aware of at least three rings, the third of which is "actually *transparent.*" The volume on naked-eye selenography contains, on its last page (the back cover), a list of the nine volumes in "The Science Library" and a sort of coupon:

ENCLOSED FIND _____ ¢ FOR WHICH SEND ME NOS.
_____ OF THE SCIENCE LIBRARY——

Of the three surviving specimens, the first is priced at 1 gr. (groat?) and .05, the second at 1 gr., and the third (a bargain) at .005; perhaps this is the case because this volume is taken from the author's *Astronomy.*

One item that survives only in a transcript prepared by Arkham House is "The Moon." This substantial item was written on November 26, 1903, and may perhaps be a version of Volumes 7 and 8 of "The Science Library"; this copy is a 7th edition prepared in 1906. The preface to the first edition declares: "The author's object in bringing this little work before the public is to acquaint all with the principal facts concerning our moon. The ignorance displayed by otherwise educated persons is apalling, [*sic*] but I hope that this volume will do at least *something* to remove the clouds that have hitherto shrouded moon-study."

Astronomy and the *Monthly Almanack* survive in nine issues, from August 1903 to February 1904; sometimes they are combined with each other. These issues are not of compelling interest, consisting largely of data on the moon's phases for that month, planetary aspects, drawings of the

planets, and the like. The issue for November 1903 features an article, "Annual of Astronomy '03":

> The Year 1903 has been quite good for astronomy, many clear nights prevailing. The most important discovery was that of a comet on Jn. 21., by Prof. Borelly. The comet was visible to the naked eye from Jul. 17 to Aug. 2nd inclusive., and had a tail, which, however, was not visible to the unassisted eye. . . . During it's visibility it travelled from Cygnus to Urs. Maj. A lunar eclipse that was nearly total occured on Apl. 11. 11 digits was the maximum totality. The dark part was hardly visible.

And so on. All issues are, again, profusely illustrated.

The *Planet* survived for only one issue (August 29, 1903). In appearance this looks like most of Lovecraft's other juvenile scientific periodicals, being about 4 × 7 inches in dimensions and written in two long vertical columns per page. Amusingly enough, this periodical combines scientific information with dime-novel sensationalism, as the titles of the articles are frequently followed by exclamation marks: "Jupiter Visible!" "Venus Has Gone!" "Telescopes!" A "Notice!" informs us of what we might have suspected: "This number is only an experiment, possibly no more will be issued."

A good many of these periodicals were reproduced using a process called the hectograph (or hektograph). This was a sheet of gelatin in a pan rendered hard by glycerine. A master page is prepared either in written form by the use of special hectograph inks or in typed form using hectograph typewriter ribbon; artwork of all sorts could also be drawn upon it. The surface of the pan would then be moistened and the master page pressed down upon it; this page would then be removed and sheets of paper would be pressed upon the gelatin surface, which had now picked up whatever writing or art had been on the master. The surface would be good for up to 50 copies, at which time the impression would begin to fade. Different colours could also be used.[9] Lovecraft must have had more than one such pan, since no more than one page could be hectographed in a day, as the inks must be given time to settle to the bottom. Although the hectograph was a relatively inexpensive reproductive process, the sheer quantity of work Lovecraft was running off must have come to no small expense—inks, carbon paper, gelatin, pans, and the like. No doubt his mother and grandfather were happy to foot the bill, given the precocity and enthusiasm Lovecraft must have exhibited.

We can now finally come to the most significant of Lovecraft's astronomical periodicals, the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy.* Even Lovecraft, with his seemingly boundless energy, must have had difficulty writing his other juvenile treatises and periodicals while the weekly deadline of the *Rhode Island Journal* continually impended. The journal, of which sixty-nine issues survive, was issued weekly on Sundays beginning on August 2, 1903; this schedule was kept up quite regularly until January 31, 1904 (the end of Volume I). The surviving issues resume on April 16, 1905 (the beginning of Volume III), continuing weekly until November 12, 1905 (the last page of which was written on November 23). Beginning in January 1906, the journal becomes a monthly, until it is abandoned with the issue of April 1907. There are two anomalously late issues, January and February 1909. Lovecraft states that the journal "was printed in editions of 15 to 25 on the hectograph" ("Autobiography of Howard Phillips Lovecraft").[10] At the moment I wish to study only the issues of 1903–04.

An average issue would contain a number of different columns, features, and charts, along with news notes, advertisements (both for works by Lovecraft and items from his collection and for others, including Kirtland Brothers and the ubiquitous R. L. Allen), and fillers. They make wholly entertaining reading. Consider the first part of a serial, "How to Become Familiar with the Constellations," beginning with the issue of January 10, 1904:

> Familiarity with the constellations is an utmost requisite for astronomers.
>
> There are many treatises that take up the subject in a masterful manner, but they are beyond the reach of many, so this article had better be read carefully by those who wish to gain a knowledge of the constellations.

Lovecraft then instructs the reader how to identify the pole star, appending four diagrams to the article. It continues for three more issues, and would have continued for more if Lovecraft had not suspended the journal at this point for more than a year.

The issue for September 20, 1903, announces that "NUMEROUS SERIALS are now appearing in this paper in a form less complete than the original MS. Those who desire to be fully informed must apply at office [i.e., 454 Angell Street], where (,if they can decipher the writing,) they may read the original & complete MS." The serials are enumerated as follows:

Title No. Pages
The Telescope 12
The Moon 12
On Venus 10
Atlas Wld. 7 maps
Practical Geom. 34
ASTRONOMY 60
Solar System 27

Those last three certainly seem like substantial items. The treatises on "Astronomy" and "Practical Geometry" seem particularly impressive, especially given that Lovecraft had probably not taken geometry at Slater Avenue and would not do so at Hope Street until his second year there (1906–07).

The issue for November 1, 1903, makes an interesting announcement: "The Ladd Observatory Visited by a Correspondent Last Night." The correspondent, of course, is Lovecraft. The Ladd Observatory, situated on Doyle Avenue off Hope Street, is a charming small observatory operated by Brown University; the fact that a thirteen-year-old boy who was not even attending school at the time was allowed to use this facility is a testament to the degree of expertise Lovecraft had gained in astronomy, largely on his own. He states that "The late Prof. Upton of Brown, a friend of the family, gave me the freedom of the college observatory, (Ladd Observatory) & I came & went there at will on my bicycle."[11] He goes on to say that the perpetual craning of his neck to look through the telescope there caused him "much pain" and "resulted in a permanent curvature perceptible today to a closer observer." Winslow Upton (1853–1914) was a respected astronomer whose *Star Atlas* (1896), and probably other volumes, Lovecraft owned. One wonders whether he was a friend of Dr Franklin Chase Clark, who had married Lovecraft's aunt Lillian in 1902. It is not clear when Lovecraft first visited Ladd; he states in 1926 that he was to have met Prof. Upton there in April or May of 1903, but that the worst cold of his life prevented it.[12] Probably, therefore, he did go to Ladd sometime that summer. He may have seen Borelli's comet in August at Ladd or with his own telescope. In any event, on this October 31 visit Lovecraft was bold enough to find fault with the telescope: "The telescope is a 12 in. equatorial, but does not perform in

the manner that a glass of it's size should. Chromatic aberration is the principal defect. every lunar crater and every bright object is surrounded by a violet halo." He adds, however, in extenuation: "The observatory has an excellent time system, with 3 siderial clocks, 1 chronograph, 1 telegraph, and 2 transits. The library is excellent, containing all the standard works on astronomy, besides having current issues of all the periodicals of the Science."

The issue of 27 December 1903, announces:

> For the past few nights a course of Lectures has been given by this office on the solar system.
>
> It was illustrated by a dozen lantern slides which were made by Mr. Edwards of the Ladd Observatory. The slides are:
>
> 1: The Solar System.
> 2: Sun-spots.
> 3: Total Solar Eclipse.
> 4: Venus: 2 views.
> 5: Full Moon.
> 6: Gibbous Moon. (*Defective*)
> 7: Mars.
> 8: Jupiter.
> 9: Saturn.
> 10: Comet of 1811.
> 11: Ærolite falling.
> 12: Lunar Scenery.
>
> The Lectures are given at the office of this paper and the admission is free.

The audience no doubt consisted of his immediate family and probably some of his Slater Avenue friends. Ever the perfectionist, Lovecraft cannot help pointing out that one of the slides made by John Edwards—whom Lovecraft elsewhere describes as "an affable little cockney from England"[13]—was defective; it must have been a mortifying interruption of his lecture.

Incredibly, while producing the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* every Sunday, issuing other occasional weekly or monthly magazines, and writing separate treatises, Lovecraft resumed his chemical journal, the *Scientific Gazette.* As I have mentioned, after the first issue (March 4, 1899) we have no issue until May 12, 1902 (labelled Vol. XCI, No. III [New Issue Vol. I, No. 1]). This issue declares: "The Scientific Gazette, so long

discontinued, has been resumed. It is better printed, on better paper, &c &c the price is raised [to 2¢], but is subject to reduction at any time[.] The *Sunday Gazette* has discontinued." This three-page issue is largely concerned with the causes of volcanism, although there is one odd note: over a picture of a chemical retort is written the bold notice, "KEEP THIS RETORT!" Perhaps this was intended to serve as a coupon of some sort, something that we find occasionally in the *Rhode Island Journal.* It is difficult to know for how long the journal had been discontinued prior to this issue; in the final extant issue (January 1909) Lovecraft announces that he is returning to the "plan of 1899–1902." In any event, we again have no more issues for more than a year, but by the issue of August 16, 1903 (two weeks after the commencement of the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy*), Lovecraft was ready to resume this journal as a weekly, doing so quite regularly until January 31, 1904, with sundry extra issues. Counting the issues for 1899 and 1902, there are a total of thirty-two surviving numbers. No doubt this was printed on the hectograph like the *Rhode Island Journal.* (Of the very earliest issues, of 1899 and following, Lovecraft states that he "made four carbon copies for 'circulation.'"[14])

The journal strayed from its chemical focus pretty early on in the 1903 sequence, discussing such matters as Venus' rotation, how to construct a camera obscura, perpetual motion, telescopes (a series taken over from the *Rhode Island Journal* and later to return there), microscopy, and the like. When the journal was resurrected in October 1906 (for which see below), ads in the *Rhode Island Journal* declare that it is "A popular epitome of general science"; it had become that long ago.

These scientific interests also manifested themselves in fictional composition. Lovecraft admits to being a "Verne enthusiast" and that "many of my tales showed the literary influence of the immortal Jules". He goes on to say: "I wrote one story about that side of the moon which is forever turned away from us—using, for fictional purposes, the Hansen theory that air and water still exist there as the result of an abnormal centre of gravity in the moon. I hardly need add that the theory is really exploded—I was even aware of that fact at the time—but I desired to compose a 'thriller.'"[15] This would presumably qualify, if it survived, as Lovecraft's first authentic tale of science fiction; and the fact that he labelled it a "thriller" evidently means that he was still under the influence of the dime novels of the day, which he

—with that bewildering catholicity of taste he displayed throughout his life —was no doubt still reading.

I have mentioned that Lovecraft was writing most of these scientific treatises and journals while not in school. He attended the Slater Avenue school in 1898–99, but was then withdrawn; he resumed schooling there for the 1902–03 school year, and was withdrawn again. He adds that "In 1903–04 I had private tutors."[16] We know of one such tutor, A. P. May, although Lovecraft did not have a very high opinion of him. There is an unwontedly sarcastic ad for this person in the January 3, 1904, issue of the *Rhode Island Journal,* proclaiming May as a "10th rate Private Tutor" who is offering "Low Grade Instruction at High Rates"; the ad concludes: "HIRE ME. I CAN'T DO THE WORK BUT I NEED THE MONEY." Perhaps May was teaching Lovecraft things he already knew. Years later he spoke of May a little more charitably, if condescendingly, as "my odd, shy private tutor Arthur P. May—a theological student whom I loved to shock with my pagan materialism . . ."[17] In any case, it is not surprising that the flood of scientific periodicals began during the summer of 1903, when he probably had much time to himself.

We actually do not know much of what Lovecraft did in school during this second stint at Slater Avenue, since the school records do not survive. There was a class photograph taken at the end of the term,[18] but it has not turned up and is not likely to do so. All we know about this school year comes from Lovecraft himself. He observes that when he resumed attendance in 1902, his attitude was very different from what it had been in 1898: he had learnt in the interim that childhood was customarily regarded as a sort of golden age, and so he resolutely set about ensuring that this would be the case. Actually, he did not need much encouragement; for it was in this year of Slater Avenue that he developed two of his earliest but strongest friendships—with Chester and Harold Munroe, who lived about four blocks away from him at 66 Patterson Avenue (corner of Patterson and Angell Streets).[19] Other friends were Ronald Upham, two years younger than Lovecraft,[20] who lived at 21 Adelphi Avenue[21] (about three blocks from 454 Angell Street), and Stuart Coleman,[22] who had known him from his earlier Slater Avenue session. Another friend Lovecraft mentions only by the first name Ken; subsequent research has identified him as one Kenneth Tanner.[23] Twenty-five years later Lovecraft could still rattle off names of

other classmates: “Reginald & Percival Miller, Tom Leeman & Sidney Sherman, ‘Goo-Goo’ [Stuart] Coleman & Dan Fairchild the teacher’s pet, ‘Monk’ McCurdy the rough guy whose voice had changed . . . old days, old days!”[24] Lovecraft also reports being friendly with three brothers named Banigan who were neighbours of his, although it is not clear whether they went to school with him.[25] I suspect that these brothers were the sons of John J. Banigan, who from 1898 through at least 1908 lived at 468 Angell Street—not quite “next-door neighbours,” as Lovecraft states, but perhaps two or three houses down from 454. These brothers were the grandsons of Joseph and Mary Banigan, who, I have conjectured (following the research of Kenneth W. Faig, Jr), represent the connecting link between Lovecraft’s mother and Louise Imogen Guiney.

It is difficult to know which of the Munroe brothers Lovecraft felt closest to. In a 1921 letter he mentions Harold as “my best friend of my youth,”[26] but consider the following passage from a 1915 essay:

> Visitors at the Slater Avenue Primary and Grammar School in Providence, examining the desks and walls of the building, or the fence and the long bench in the boys’ yard, may today discern among the multitude of names unlawfully carved by generations of youthful irrepressibles frequent repetitions of the initials “C. P. M. & H. P. L.”, which the vicissitudes of sixteen years have failed completely to efface. The two friends whose initials are thus early associated have not been separated in spirit during the ensuing years . . . (“Introducing Mr. Chester Pierce Munroe,” *Conservative,* April 1915)

Elsewhere Lovecraft remarks: “. . . Chester Pierce Munroe & I claimed the proud joint distinction of being the worst boys in Slater Ave. School . . . We were not so actively destructive as merely antinomian in an arrogant & sardonic way—the protest of individuality against capricious, arbitrary, & excessively detailed authority.”[27] This comment at least is confirmed by another letter: “At school I was considered a bad boy, for I would never submit to discipline. When censured by my teacher for disregard of rules, I used to point out to her the essential emptiness of conventionality, in such a satirical way, that her patience must have been quite severely strained; but withal she was remarkably kind, considering my intractable disposition.”[28] Lovecraft certainly got an early start as a moral relativist.

This "disregard of rules" came to the fore during the graduation ceremony for Lovecraft's class in June 1903. He was asked to make a speech for the occasion—which may or may not suggest that he was the valedictorian and therefore ranked first in his class—but had initially refused to do so; then, while the ceremony was actually in progress, he changed his mind. Approaching Abbie A. Hathaway, his teacher, he announced boldly that he wished to make the speech after all, and she acquiesced and duly had him announced. Lovecraft had, in the interim, written a hasty biography of Sir William Herschel, the astronomer; and as he mounted the podium he declaimed in "my best Georgian mode of speech":

> "Ladies and gentlemen: I had not thought to trespass upon your time and patience today, but when the Muse impels, it becomes a man but ill to stifle her demand. When I speak of the Muse, I do not mean to say that I am about to inflict my bad verses upon you—far be that from my intention. My Muse this day is Clio, who presides over affairs of history; and my subject, a very revered one to me, is the career of one who rose from the most unfortunate condition of insignificance to the utmost height of deserved eminence—Sir William Herschel, who from an Hanoverian peasant became the greatest astronomer of England, and therefore of the World!"

He adds:

> I think these are nearly the words I used. I kept them long in memory (through egotism) though I have not a copy beside me now. If this version be incorrect, it is because there are not enough long words present. . . . Much to my concern, this offering elicited smiles, rather than attention, from the adult part of my audience; but after I had done, I received a round of applause which well compensated for my trouble, and sent me off the platform with the self-satisfied glow of a triumphant Garrick.[29]

That Lovecraft was a smart-aleck would be a considerable understatement.

But school was the least significant of Lovecraft's and his friends' concerns; they were primarily interested—as all boys of that age, however precocious, are—in playing. And play they did. This was the heyday of the Providence Detective Agency, which Lovecraft describes in 1918 as follows:

> As to "Sherlock Holmes"—I used to be infatuated with him! I read every Sherlock Holmes story published, and even organised a *detective agency* when I was thirteen, arrogating to myself the proud pseudonym of S.H. This P.D.A. [Providence Detective Agency]—whose members ranged between nine & fourteen in years, was a most wonderful thing—how many murders & robberies we unravelled! Our headquarters were in a deserted house just out of the thickly settled area, and we there enacted, and "solved", many a gruesome tragedy. I still remember my labours in producing artificial "bloodstains on the floor!!!"[30]

In a 1931 letter he elaborates:

> Our force had very rigid regulations and carried in its pockets a standard working equipment of police whistle, magnifying glass, electric flashlight, handcuffs, (sometimes plain twine, but "handcuffs" for all that!) tin badge, (I have mine still!!) tape measure, (for footprints) revolver, (mine was the real thing, but Inspector Munro [*sic*] (aet 12) had a water squirt-pistol while Inspector Upham (aet 10) worried along with a cap-pistol) and copies of all newspaper accounts of desperate criminals at large —plus a paper called "The Detective", which printed pictures and descriptions of outstanding "wanted" malefactors! Did our pockets bulge and sag with this equipment? I'll say they did!! We also had elaborately prepared "credentials"—certificates attesting our good standing in the agency. Mere scandals we scorned. Nothing short of bank robbers and murderers were good enough for us. We shadowed many desperate-looking customers, and diligently compared their physiognomies with the "mugs" in "The Detective", yet never made a full-fledged arrest. Ah, me— the good old days![31]

How engaging it is to see Lovecraft, for perhaps the first (and last) time in his life, behaving like a "normal" boy!

These accounts are full of interest. First let us consider the Sherlock Holmes connexion. If Lovecraft is correct in saying that he read every Holmes story published up to that time (circa 1903), then this would include the novels *A Study in Scarlet* (1888), *The Sign of Four* (1890), and *The Hound of the Baskervilles* (1902), and the collections *The Adventures of Sherlock Holmes* (1892) and *The Memoirs of Sherlock Holmes* (1894); the

tales that would make up *The Return of Sherlock Holmes* (1905) had begun appearing in the United States in *Collier's Weekly* beginning with the issue of September 26, 1903, so Lovecraft probably read at least some of these. Indeed, the resurrection of Holmes in these tales (he had, let us recall, been killed off in the last story in *Memoirs,* "The Final Problem") perhaps gave Lovecraft and his pals the impetus to imitate him. Lovecraft later states that he read no more Holmes stories aside from the works mentioned above and "an odd (& rather mediocre) pair or series of tales appearing about '08";[32] which leads one to suspect that his interest in Holmes—and detective fiction—died at the end of his high school years. Indeed, he declares that "I had a vilely narrow taste at 16 or 17—phantasy or nothing!"[33] Probably it is just as well for literature that this was the case.

The Conan Doyle stories were, clearly, not the only detective stories he read at this time; no doubt he continued to read the dime and nickel novels, which were light on abstract detection but heavy on the sort of "bloodstains on the floor" and other sensational imagery Lovecraft seemed at this time to delight in. Some of the early Munsey magazines, which he may already have been reading in 1903, carried detective, mystery, and suspense fiction as well.

Lovecraft did some actual detective writing at this time. He writes in 1916 that "I used to write detective stories very often, the works of A. Conan Doyle being my model so far as plot was concerned," and then goes on to describe one such work:

> One long-destroyed tale was of twin brothers—one murders the other, but conceals the body, and tries to *live the life of both*—appearing in one place as himself, and elsewhere as his victim. (Resemblance had been remarkable.) He meets sudden death (lightning) when posing as the dead man—is identified by a scar, and the secret is finally revealed in his diary. This, I think, antedates my 11th year.[34]

This tale does not seem to me especially influenced by Doyle. If Lovecraft is accurate in the dating of this tale, it would predate "The Mysterious Ship," and sounds rather more entertaining than that specimen.

The mention of *The Detective* is of interest. This is clearly a reference to the magazine published from 1885 to 1922; its subtitle is: "Official Journal of the Police Authorities and Sheriffs of the United States," and it no doubt carried the images of any number of redoubtable suspected criminals who

needed to be brought to justice. It is difficult to imagine that Lovecraft's family, or that of any of his friends, actually subscribed to the monthly magazine; possibly the boys consulted copies at the Providence Public Library.

Among the enthusiasms which Lovecraft and his boyhood friends shared was railroads. I have noted that the coachman at 454 Angell Street built a summer-house for Lovecraft when the latter was about five. Lovecraft named this building "The Engine House" and himself built "a splendid engine . . . by mounting a sort of queer boiler on a tiny express-waggon." Then, when the coachmen left (probably around 1900) and the stable vacated of its horses and carriage, the stable itself became his playground, with "its immense carriage room, its neat-looking 'office', and its vast upstairs, with the colossal (almost scareful) expanse of the grain loft, and the little three-room apartment where the coachmen and his wife had lived."[35]

Some odd literary works were produced as a result of this interest in railroads. First there is a single issue of a magazine called the *Railroad Review* (December 1901), a three-page item full of Lovecraft's usual profusion of illustrations. Much more interesting is a 106-line poem dated to 1901 whose title on the cover reads: *An Account in Verse of the Marvellous Adventures of H. Lovecraft, Esq. Whilst Travelling on the W. & B. Branch of the N.Y.N.H. & H.R.R. in Jany. 1901 in One of Those Most Modern of Devices, to Wit: An Electric Train.* Like "The Poem of Ulysses," this work bears an alternate title in its interior: "H. Lovecraft's Attempted Journey betwixt Providence & Fall River on the N.Y.N.H. & H.R.R."

This poem is notable for being the first—and, as it happens, one of the best—instances of Lovecraft's *humorous* verse. A little historical background for this piece is useful. The New York, New Haven, and Hartford Railroad (N.Y.N.H. & H.R.R.) had by 1893 become the principal operator of all railroads in the state of Rhode Island.[36] The first electric street cars in Providence had begun running in 1892,[37] and the extension of this service to the outlying localities of Warren, Bristol (the W. & B. Branch), and Fall River appears to have occurred in 1900.[38] With his fascination for railroads, Lovecraft not surprisingly became one of the first patrons of the new service; and the result is a delightfully witty poem on a very modern theme.

The poem begins:

> Long, long ago, in prehistoric times

Began the subject of these ill-form'd rhymes,
When some craz'd mind, which engines did disdain,
Conceiv'd a plan for an electric train.

Lovecraft mentions that the trains were "by Osgood Bradley built," and that "One winter's morn, when all man kind did shiver, / I took a train, directed toward Fall-River." As the train labours up steep College Hill, it leaps off its track and crashes into "the front of Leonard's Groc'ry store!" Order is eventually restored, and the train is set on its course again. But at a junction one part of the train seeks to go toward Wickenden Street, while another yearns to go to South Main (at right angles to Wickenden); "The motor-car in dizzy fashion tips." Once again things are put to right, and the conductor comes around to collect the fares. "Quoth one old man, 'Take what ye will from me', / 'But in my damage suit I'll take from thee!'" This is one of the best poetic jokes Lovecraft ever made in his undistinguished career as a versifier. The train groans up Brook Street, but cannot quite make it up the hill; as it starts to slide back, "We're tow'd to safety by a one-horse hack." Soon it crosses a bridge "(This bridge was in the middle ages made)," and the car seeks to make a bold turn: "The monstrous car our bodies threats to mangle, / For this strange curve resembles a right angle." Finally the train begins to pick up speed, passing through various rural communities where "the rustics in confusion gape." Coming to Barrington, the passengers learn that "Warren's ceased to give us pow'r" and the car must be pulled by a locomotive. After yet another delay, "With crippled motors, and the wires dead," Lovecraft leaves the car and finds

A willing yokel with an ox-drawn cart
Who when with most of my spare change I part,
Consents to take me where I wish to go,
If I demur not at his progress slow.

In this way Lovecraft finally reaches Fall River, where he spends the night in a hotel. "Next day *by boat* safe homeward I return'd," only to learn that the trolley, though bound for Fall River, had ended up in Bristol.

All this is great fun, and I don't know that we need draw any overwhelmingly serious messages from it: the fact that Lovecraft had to take an ox-cart to Fall River may connect with his belief in the supremacy of the past over the present, but it certainly seems as if he had developed a great fondness for railroads, trolleys, and other forms of modernity in transport. How autobiographical the poem is cannot, of course, now be ascertained; no

doubt Lovecraft really did take a ride on the trolley, and probably it did encounter tedious delays, breakdowns, and perhaps even some minor accidents or mishaps; but the comic exaggeration of the poem is clearly evident.

Lovecraft's and his friends' railroad enthusiasms gradually expanded or metamorphosed in a more military direction, and the railroad station in his backyard became "a little village":

> Many new roads and garden spots were made, and the whole was protected from the Indians (who dwelt somewhere to the north) by a large and impregnable fort with massive earthworks. The boy who suggested that fort and supervised its construction was deeply interested in military things . . . My new village was called "New Anvik", after the Alaskan village of "Anvik", which about that time became known to me through the boys' book *Snow-Shoes and Sledges,* by Kirk Munroe.[39]

Elsewhere Lovecraft admits to reading Munroe's *Rick Dale: A Story of the Northwest Coast* (1896) and *The Fur-Seal's Tooth: A Story of Alaskan Adventure* (1894).[40] *Snow-Shoes and Sledges* (1895) is in fact a sequel to *The Fur-Seal's Tooth.* Kirk Munroe (1850–1930) was a prolific author of boys' adventure novels: he published at least thirty-seven books, mostly between the years 1887 and 1905. Many of them have as their locales various exciting places in the United States (especially the Florida Everglades, Alaska, California, and Texas) or, in a few instances, overseas (China, Japan, the West Indies). I do not imagine he was related to Chester and Harold Munroe.

In discussing Lovecraft's boyhood pastimes it is impossible to pass over the Blackstone Military Band. Lovecraft's violin lessons may have been a disaster, but this was something altogether different. Here's how he tells it:

> When, at the age of 11, I was a member of the Blackstone Military Band, (whose youthful members were all virtuosi on what was called the "zobo"—a brass horn with a membrane at one end, which would transform humming to a delightfully brassy impressiveness!) my almost unique ability to keep time was rewarded by my promotion to the post of drummer. That was a difficult thing, insomuch as I was also a star zobo soloist; but the obstacle was surmounted by the discovery of a small papier-mache zobo at the toy store, which I could grip with my teeth

> without using my hands. Thus my hands were free for drumming —whilst one foot worked a mechanical triangle-beater and the other worked the cymbals—or rather, a wire (adapted from a second triangle-beater) which crashed down on a single horizontal cymbal and made exactly the right cacophony . . . Had jazz-bands been known at that remote aera, I would certainly have qualified as an ideal general-utility-man—capable of working rattles, cow-bells, and everything that two hands, two feet, and one mouth could handle.[41]

I don't think I can add much to this. The zobo appears to have been a sort of combined harmonica and kazoo. Lovecraft himself elsewhere describes it as "a brass horn with a membrane at the mouthpieces, which would make the human voice sound like the tones of a band instrument," although he goes on to say that it could also be made out of cardboard.[42] Recall the delightful passage in "Waste Paper" (1923), Lovecraft's parody of T. S. Eliot's *The Waste Land:*

> I used to sit on the stairs of the house where I was born
> After we left it but before it was sold
> And play on a zobo with two other boys.
> We called ourselves the Blackstone Military Band

Lovecraft always regretted his insensitivity to classical music, but he also found tremendous nostalgic relish in recalling the popular songs of his boyhood—and recall them he did. It was, let us remember, because he was "forever whistling & humming in defiance of convention & good breeding"[43] that led to his abortive violin lessons. It becomes clear that what he was whistling were the barbershop tunes of the day. In a 1934 letter he writes down the lyrics of "Bedelia," the big hit of 1903—"a veritable knockout—a stampede—lasting well into 1904."[44] He continues: "But by the fall of '04 it was played out as a serious offering. After that—like 'On the Banks of the Wabash'—it became a typical back number, for humorous or parodic use. 'You're the Flower of My Heart, Sweet Adeline' (Spring '04) was its principal immediate successor in popular favour—& then in '05 the new riot—'In the Shade of the Old Apple Tree' appeared." We shall presently see where this led.

All this may seem to give the impression that Lovecraft, in spite of his precociousness, his early health problems, his solitude as a very young boy, and his unsettled nervous condition, was evolving into a relatively "normal"

youth with vigorous teenage enthusiasms (except sports and girls, in which he never took any interest). He also seems to have been the leader of his "gang" of boys. But how normal, really, was he? The later testimony of Stuart Coleman is striking: ". . . from the age of 8 to 18, I saw quite a bit of him as we went to schools together and I was many times at his home. I won't say I knew him 'well' as I doubt if any of his contemporaries at that time did. He was definitely not a normal child and his companions were few."[45]

Winfield Townley Scott, who was in touch with some of Lovecraft's boyhood friends in the 1940s, adds another anecdote that he learned from Clarence Horace Philbrick, who graduated from Hope Street High School in 1909 and therefore must have been in school with Lovecraft for at least a few years:

> Clarence H. Philbrick told me that he and others in high school with Lovecraft made attempts at friendliness but always were rebuffed by a chill disinterest or a shyness that seemed like it; they finally quit the attempts. Lovecraft later did have a few local friends, and loyal ones; the sort who failed to understand him and yet were impressed by his extraordinary range of interests, by his phenomenally exact memory, and by the brilliance of his talk; who found, when they gave him affection, the depth of goodwill and charm to which his later literary friends have testified.[46]

Lovecraft was slow to make friends, but once he made them he remained firm and devoted. This is a pattern that persisted throughout his life, and in fact he became still more forthcoming with his time, knowledge, and friendship by means of correspondence, writing enormous treatises to perfect strangers when they had asked him a few simple questions or made some simple requests.

Clara Hess, the same age as Lovecraft, supplies a telling and poignant memory of Lovecraft's devotion to astronomy around this time:

> Howard used to go out into the fields in back of my home to study the stars. One early fall evening several of the children in the vicinity assembled to watch him from a distance. Feeling sorry for his loneliness I went up to him and asked him about his telescope and was permitted to look through it. But his language was so technical that I could not understand it and I returned to my group and left him to his lonely study of the heavens.[47]

This is certainly touching, but one should not conclude that Lovecraft's "loneliness" was inveterate or even that he necessarily found in it anything to regret: intellectual interests were always dominant in his temperament, and he was willing to sacrifice conventional gregariousness for its sake.

One does not wish to belabour this point, nor to deny Lovecraft's own frequent admissions that his youth was an idyllic time of carefree play and pleasurable intellectual stimulation. I also do not know what overwhelming virtues there are in being "normal," whatever criteria one cares to apply to that word.

But Lovecraft's days of innocence came to an abrupt end. Whipple Phillips's Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company had suffered another serious setback when a drainage ditch was washed out by floods in the spring of 1904; Whipple, now an old man of seventy, cracked under the strain, suffering a stroke and dying on March 28, 1904. This blow was bad enough, but there was still worse to come:

> His death brought financial disaster besides its more serious grief. . . . [W]ith his passing, the rest of the board [of the Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company] lost their initiative & courage. The corporation was unwisely dissolved at a time when my grandfather would have *persevered*—with the result that others reaped the wealth which should have gone to its stockholders. My mother & I were forced to vacate the beautiful estate at 454 Angell Street, & to enter the less spacious abode at 598, three squares eastward.[48]

This was probably the most traumatic event Lovecraft experienced prior to the death of his mother in 1921. By 1904 he and his mother were living alone with his widowed grandfather at 454 Angell Street, as both of his aunts and his uncle had married. With Whipple gone, it would have been both financially and practically absurd to have maintained the huge house at Angell and Elmgrove just for the two of them, and the residence at 598 Angell Street was no doubt chosen because of its propinquity. It was, however, a duplex (the address is 598–600 Angell Street), and Lovecraft and his mother occupied only the western side of the smallish house. One would imagine that these quarters—which Lovecraft describes as five rooms and an attic[49]—would, in literal terms, still be adequate for a boy and his mother; but psychologically the loss of his birthplace, to one so endowed with a sense of place, was shattering.

I am not sure who was occupying the eastern side of the house in 1904; in 1911 the Providence house directory lists three members of the Metcalf family: Jennie T., a widow, and two boarders (perhaps her sons), Houghton and Henry K., the latter a clerk. Lovecraft never mentions these people to my knowledge, and I suspect he avoided them where possible.

The death of Whipple Phillips was, of course, the most severe financial blow to the family up to that time, but even the young boy Lovecraft had been noticing the gradual cutbacks in amenities since at least 1900. At the time of his birth the Phillips household had four servants, three horses,[50] and a coachman to tend them. One by one Lovecraft saw all these go. The coachman probably left around 1900, when the horses and carriage were dispensed with. Lovecraft supplies an amusing but poignant recollection of him and of another servant:

> I sadly missed Kelly, the coachman, who was an indisputable authority on all matters pertaining to Hibernian dialect, and who had the forbearance to listen placidly to my laudation of Mother England. By the time of his departure I had acquired a beautiful brogue, which I occasionally aired for the amusement of myself and those about me—particularly Miss Norah _____ (last name forgotten!) who presided over the culinary department.[51]

Then the servants began to depart. Twenty years later Lovecraft still remembered their names: Norah, Delia, Svea, Jennie, Bridget, and Delilah.[52] These are six, so perhaps some had been replaced by others. Delilah (who at a later date worked for Lovecraft's aunt Lillian) was black. Lovecraft claims that Bridget Mullaney (presumably an Irishwoman) was the last servant to go;[53] the U.S. census for 1900, however, lists only one live-in servant at 454 Angell Street, Maggie Corcoran. Lovecraft makes clear that the financial decline well predated Whipple's death:

> Money as a definite conception was wholly absent from my horizon. Rather was I a simple, unplaced entity like the carefree figures moving through the Hellenick myths. But actual decline did set in when I was about ten years old; so that I saw a steady dropping of servants, horses, and other adjuncts of domestick management. Even before my grandfather's death a sense of peril and falling-off was strong within me, so that I felt a kinship to Poe's gloomy heroes with their broken fortunes.[54]

To compound the tragedy, Lovecraft's beloved black cat, Nigger-Man, disappeared sometime in 1904. This was the only pet Lovecraft ever owned in his life, in spite of his almost idolatrous adoration of the felidae. Its name, it need hardly be pointed out, was not regarded as offensive at the time—or at least not as offensive as it would be now. It is not clear when Lovecraft was first given this pet; conceivably he could have received it as early as when he and his mother moved back to 454 Angell Street in 1893. Late in life he rhapsodised about the creature:

> What a boy he was! I watched him grow from a tiny black handful to one of the most fascinating & understanding creatures I've ever seen. He used to talk in a genuine language of varied intonation—a special tone for every different meaning. There was even a special "prrr'p" for the smell of roast chestnuts, on which he doted. He used to play ball with me—kicking a large rubber sphere back at me from half across the room with all four feet as he lay on the floor. And on summer evenings in the twilight he would prove his kinship to the elfin things of shadow by racing across the lawn on nameless errands, darting into the blackness of the shrubbery now & then, & occasionally leaping at me from ambush & then bounding away again into invisibility before I could catch him.[55]

Nigger-Man's loss perhaps symbolised the loss of his birthplace as no other event could.

To see exactly what an impact the death of his grandfather, the loss of the family fortune (whatever of it was left by this time—Whipple had left an estate only valued at $25,000, of which $5000 went to Susie and $2500 to Lovecraft[56]), and the move from his birthplace had on the thirteen-year-old boy, we must read a remarkable letter of 1934:

> . . . for the first time I knew what a congested, servantless home —with another family in the same house—was. . . . I felt that I had lost my entire adjustment to the cosmos—for what indeed was HPL without the remembered rooms & hallways & hangings & staircases & statuary & paintings . . . & yard & walks & cherry-trees & fountain & ivy-grown arch & stable & gardens & all the rest? How could an old man of 14 (& I surely felt that way!) readjust his existence to a skimpy flat & new household programme & inferior outdoor setting in which almost nothing

> familiar remained? It seemed like a damned futile business to keep on living. No more tutors—high school next September which would probably be a devilish bore, since one couldn't be as free & easy in high school as one had been during brief snatches at the neighbourly Slater Ave. school. . . . Oh, hell! Why not slough off consciousness altogether?

Was Lovecraft actually contemplating suicide? It certainly seems so—and, incidentally, this seems virtually the *only* time in Lovecraft's entire life (idle speculation by later critics notwithstanding) when he seriously thought of self-extinction. His letter goes on to state, with a certain wry relish, that "the *method* was the only trouble": poisons were hard to get, bullets were messy and unreliable, hanging was disgraceful, daggers were tricky, falls from a cliff were completely out of the question in view of the "probable state of the remains," and so on and so on. Then he thought of the Barrington River—far to the east of Providence, on the border between Rhode Island and Massachusetts—and went riding there on his bicycle frequently in the summer of 1904, pondering its weed-grown depths and wondering what it might be like to rest placidly at its bottom. What stopped him? Let us read on:

> And yet certain elements—notably scientific curiosity & a sense of world drama—held me back. Much in the universe baffled me, yet I knew I could pry the answers out of books if I lived & studied longer. Geology, for example. Just *how* did these ancient sediments & stratifications get crystallised & upheaved into granite peaks? Geography—just *what* would Scott & Shackleton & Borchgrevink find in the great white antarctic on their next expeditions . . . which I could—if I wished—live to see described? And as to history—as I contemplated an exit without further knowledge I became uncomfortably conscious of what I didn't know. Tantalising gaps existed everywhere. When did people stop speaking Latin & begin to talk Italian & Spanish & French? What on earth ever happened in the black Middle Ages in those parts of the world other than Britain & France (whose story I knew)? What of the vast gulfs of space outside all familiar lands—desert reaches hinted of by Sir John Mandeville & Marco Polo . . . Tartary, Thibet . . . What of unknown Africa?[57]

This is a defining moment in the life of H. P. Lovecraft. How prototypical that it was not family ties, religious beliefs, or even—so far as the evidence of the above letter indicates—the urge to write that kept him from suicide, but scientific curiosity. Lovecraft may never have finished high school, may never have attained a degree from Brown University, and may have been eternally ashamed of his lack of formal schooling; but he was one of the most prodigious autodidacts in modern history, and he continued not merely to add to his store of knowledge to the end of his life but to revise his world view in light of that knowledge. This, perhaps, is what we ought most to admire about him.

In the short term the dreaded commencement of high school proved—to both Lovecraft's and his family's surprise—a delight. Hope Street English and Classical High School, at the corner of Hope and Olney Streets (the building, opened in 1898, was on the southeast corner; the present building, on the southwest corner, was opened in 1938), was a good mile from Lovecraft's 598 Angell Street home, but there was no closer public high school to which he could have gone. I suspect that Lovecraft rode his bicycle most of the time—he reports that the period 1900–1913 was the heyday of his bicycle-riding[58]—perhaps skirting the large property housing the Dexter Asylum (a home for the indigent), which obtruded along his path. (This area is now the Aldrich-Dexter Field, owned by the athletic department of Brown University; Dexter Asylum was torn down long ago.) The trip was not insignificant, as is perhaps reflected in the fair number of times during his first term of 1904–05 that Lovecraft reported late (seventeen times in four quarters); his twenty-seven absences are no doubt the result of his always precarious nervous condition. But Lovecraft on the whole had a very nice time:

> Knowing of my ungovernable temperament, & of my lawless conduct at Slater Avenue, most of my friends (if friends they may be called) predicted disaster for me, when my will should conflict with the authority of Hope Street's masculine teachers. But a disappointment of the happier sort occurred. The Hope Street preceptors quickly *understood* my disposition as "Abbie" [i.e., Abbie Hathaway, his teacher at the Slater Avenue School] never understood it; & by *removing all restraint,* made me apparently their comrade & equal; so that I ceased to think of

> discipline, but merely comported myself as a gentleman among gentlemen.[59]

Since there are no independent accounts of Lovecraft's high school years, we have to accept this statement at face value.

Things were not always entirely harmonious between Lovecraft and his teachers, however. He notes several occasions in which he had various academic disputes: one professor did not like Lovecraft's method in solving algebraic problems, even though the solutions were correct; another doubted Lovecraft's assertion that there were *two* native races of Europe, Caucasian and Mongolian, until Lovecraft reminded him that the Lapps were Mongol. But the most celebrated encounter was with a "fat old lady English teacher" named Mrs Blake. Let Lovecraft tell it in his inimitable way:

> I had handed in a theme entitled "Can the Moon Be Reached by Man"? And something about it (gawd knows what) led her to question its originality. She said it sounded like a magazine article. Well—chance was with me that day, for I had the ammunition to stage a peach of a tableau. Did I deny the magazine-article charge? Not so! Instead, I calmly informed the lady that the theme was indeed a verbatim parallel of an article which had appeared in a rural weekly only a few days before. I felt sure, I said, that no one could possibly object to the parallelism! Indeed, I added—as the good soul's bewilderment became almost apoplectic—I would be glad to show her the printed article in question! Then, reaching in my pocket, I produced a badly printed cutting from a Rhode Island village paper (which would accept almost anything sent to it). Sure enough—here was the selfsame article. And mixed were the emotions of the honest Mrs. Blake when she perused the heading —CAN THE MOON BE REACHED BY MAN? BY H. P. LOVECRAFT.[60]

This, of course, was an article he had published in the *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* for October 12, 1906. Once again, as in several of his Slater Avenue antics, Lovecraft comes off as a show-off and smart-aleck, and it is perhaps not surprising that his teachers—unsuccessfully, at least as he recounts it—attempted now and again to put him in his place.

It is worth studying in detail what courses Lovecraft actually took during his three years at Hope Street. His transcript fortunately survives, and it is

full of interesting and suggestive information. The school year lasted for 39 weeks, and most of the courses Lovecraft took covered an entire year; occasionally he took courses lasting only one term, either 19 or 20 weeks. (In the following enumeration, classes are for 39 weeks save where listed.) Numerical grades were issued; an 80 represented a Certificate grade, 70 a passing grade. During the 1904–05 year, Lovecraft took Elementary Algebra, Botany, English, Ancient History, and Latin. These are the grades Lovecraft received:

Elementary Algebra 74
Botany 85
English 77
Ancient History 82
Latin 87

There is not much that is unusual here, except the surprisingly low grade Lovecraft received in English. Lovecraft was absent 18 days and tardy 17 days during this year.

Lovecraft returned to Hope High in September 1905, but his transcript states that he left on November 7 of that year, not returning until September 10, 1906 (presumably the beginning of the 1906–07 school year). This is no doubt the period of his "near-breakdown" of 1906. There is not much evidence as to the nature of this illness. The final page of the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for November 12, 1905, declares: "The stress of events has delayed the R.I. JOURNAL for 11 days, it being published on NOV. 23, 1905 instead of NOV. 12, 1905. The next issue we hope to have out promptly on DEC. 3, 1905." No such issue evidently appeared, and the next one we have is dated January 1906. But the magazine continues regularly on a monthly schedule until January 1907, and is in fact rather more sizeable and substantial than the previous weekly issues. It is surely peculiar that Lovecraft does *not* admit to a "near-breakdown" in 1904, when he faced the trauma of Whipple Phillips's death and the move from 454 Angell Street; the 1906 breakdown does not appear to have been as serious as its two predecessors (1898 and 1900), even if it did mean his withdrawal from high school for nearly a year.

When Lovecraft returned for the 1906–07 school year he received the following grades:

Intermediate Algebra (20 weeks) 75
Drawing (19 weeks) 85
English (19 weeks) 90
Plane Geometry 92
Greek Texts (19 weeks) 85
Latin Grammar (19 weeks) 85
Latin Texts (20 weeks) 85
Physics 95

The ominous thing here is the continuing low marks for algebra, for which more below. For all Lovecraft's later laments on his inability to draw, his marks in drawing were respectable. High marks in physics were also to be expected, and he is now also applying himself more in English. He is recorded as being absent 6 days and tardy 25 days during the first term, the only period for which such information is available.

In his final year at Hope High (1907–08) Lovecraft took only the following:

Intermediate Algebra (10 weeks) 85
Chemistry 95
Physics 95

Here the interesting thing is his retaking Algebra, Lovecraft himself remarks: "The first year I barely passed in algebra, but was so little satisfied with what I had accomplished, that I voluntarily repeated the last half of the term."[61] There is a slight inaccuracy here, since it was not the Elementary Algebra of his first year that he retook, but the Intermediate Algebra of the second year; and he does seem to have finally achieved a better grade this time. Elsewhere he states that it was "only a supreme effort of the will that gained for me the highest marks in Algebra and Geometry at school."[62]

The transcript states that Lovecraft left on June 10, 1908, presumably at the end of the term, since he is recorded as having attended the full 39 weeks of chemistry and physics. (No record of days absent or tardy is given.) But Lovecraft clearly did not receive a diploma, and indeed it is evident that he has only finished the eleventh grade—or perhaps not even that, since he anomalously took only two full courses during this third year. He would

surely have required at least another full year of schooling to qualify for graduation.

Lovecraft, aside from finding the teachers more or less congenial, had the usual scrapes with his classmates. He had been called "Lovey" at Slater Avenue, but by the time he became well-established at Hope Street he was nicknamed "Professor" because of his published astronomical articles.[63] He admits to having an "ungovernable temper" and being "decidedly pugnacious":

> Any affront—especially any reflection on my truthfulness or honour as an 18th century gentleman—roused in me a tremendous fury, & I would always start a fight if an immediate retraction were not furnished. Being of scant physical strength, I did not fare well in these encounters; though I would never ask for their termination. I thought it disgraceful, even in defeat, not to maintain a wholly "you-go-to-hell" attitude until the victor ceased pummelling of his own accord. . . . Occasionally I won fights—aided by my habit of assuming a dramatically ferocious aspect frightening to the nervous . . . the "by God, I'll kill you!" stuff.[64]

Evidently he managed to survive these encounters. One wonders if he ever tangled with "Monk" McCurdy, the seventeen-year-old bully at Slater Avenue.

The sense of foreboding Lovecraft mentions as preceding his grandfather's death is evident in his juvenile scientific work—or, rather, in the absence of such work. Both the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* and the *Scientific Gazette* come to an abrupt end with the issues of January 31, 1904; the last issue of *Astronomy* (now combined with the *Monthly Almanack*) dates to February 1904. Note that this is more than a month *before* Whipple's death. Lovecraft states that the *Scientific Gazette* and the *Rhode Island Journal* both resumed as monthlies, the first in May 1904 and the second in August 1904, but that both were stopped after a few weeks;[65] these issues do not survive. Advertisements for the *Scientific Gazette* appear in the *Rhode Island Journal* throughout the summer of 1905, until in the issue of September 17, 1905, it is announced as discontinued. We have, therefore, clearly lost several issues of the *Scientific Gazette,* as we have none between January 31, 1904, and the final issue of January 1909.

And yet, Lovecraft clearly retained his interest in chemistry and, even if he had given up chemical writing, continued conducting experiments in chemistry and obtaining new instruments. Among the latter were a spectroscope (which Lovecraft still owned in 1918) and a spinthariscope for the detection of radioactivity; Lovecraft notes in a letter that it contained "a minute quantity of radio-active matter."[66] He goes on to relate a "physical memorial" of his chemical interests: ". . . the third finger of my right hand—whose palm side is permanently scarred by a mighty phosphorus burn sustained in 1907. At the time, the loss of the finger seemed likely, but the skill of my uncle [F. C. Clark]—a physician—saved it."

As for the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy,* the later issues (beginning on April 16, 1905) are not appreciably different from their predecessors. Lovecraft was now experimenting with using various colours in the magazine, the only result of which is that some of the issues are extremely difficult to read; by the issue of May 14, 1905, Lovecraft declared that no more colour will be used. Some of Lovecraft's crochets begin to appear, as in the article on "Astronomical Cranks" (June 11, 1905), hurling abuse on those (mostly leaders of eccentric religious sects) who refuse to accept the Copernican theory. A lengthy serial on "How to Make and Use a Telescope" (evidently adapted from a similar series in the *Scientific Gazette* in 1903) appears all through the summer, along with articles on the history of the telescope, ancient astronomy, the sighting of Jupiter's seventh satellite, and much else besides.

These issues provide some indication of who exactly was reading the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy.* It is scarcely to be doubted that members of his own family had done so at the outset; now that only his mother remained in the house with him, perhaps Lovecraft concentrated on selling copies (still priced at 1¢ per copy, 25¢ for six months, and 50¢ for a year) to his friends and to relatives living in the vicinity. A startling "Notice!!" in the issue of October 8, 1905, states: "Subscribers residing outside of Providence will receive their papers in a bunch once a month by mail." This notice would not have been necessary unless there were at least a handful of such subscribers. Perhaps one can suspect Lovecraft's aunt Annie, now living in Cambridge, Massachusetts, with her husband; and there may have been other relatives.

Still more startling is a notice in the issue of October 22, 1905: "Since we have started, others are constantly copying, there is a new paper just out

that is a direct copy. PAY NO ATTENTION to these but to the GENUINE." Lovecraft's schoolmates at Hope Street were apparently offering him the sincerest form of flattery, but Lovecraft did not appreciate it. The later issues of his journal bear a stamped notice, "ORIGINAL COPY," to ensure the genuineness of the paper.

One of Lovecraft's imitators was Chester Pierce Munroe, although he wisely did not emulate Lovecraft in the realm of science. the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for April 30, 1905, announces the establishment of the *East Side News,* C. P. Munroe, Editor. The price is the same as for Lovecraft's journal (1¢ per issue, 25¢ for six months, 50¢ for a year). This magazine—described by Lovecraft in the issue of May 21, 1905, as "a very superior sort of paper, . . . which, besides local news, contains much of general interest"—suffered considerably greater vicissitudes in issuance than Lovecraft's. The paper was suspended for the summer of 1905, but resumed in September when the Munroe family returned from vacation. Shortly thereafter the paper is renamed the *Providence Times;* Lovecraft "personally recommends the 'TIMES' as the best paper of it's kind published anywhere" (September 17, 1905). But by October 8, 1905, there is the following announcement: "PROVIDENCE TIMES! BIG NOTICE! We have not been able to continue this paper and have *failed!* We hope sometime to resume it, or the East Side News." This was probably written by Chester. The paper did in fact resume in early 1906, but by July it had sold out to the *Blackstone News,* a paper begun by Chester's brother Harold in May 1905. It is not clear how long this paper continued to run.

One new enthusiasm that emerged around the fall of 1905 was meteorology. This interest had initially developed toward the end of 1903, as notices in the *Scientific Gazette* suggest. The issue of January 24, 1904, announced a new "Climatological Station" that "belongs to the publishers [*sic*] of this paper"; it had "6 circular windows with shutters, in case of severe storm. The instruments have not all arrived yet . . . Although the station is not, as yet, fully equipped, it *can* do much practice-work, for the storm glass is very accurate, and the wet-bulb thermometer, which was made by the observer works to perfection." We can probably connect this with another surviving juvenile item, a "Providence Observatory Forecast" for April 5, 1904, made on the 4th. This is a single sheet giving a prediction of the weather for the next day ("no clouds will cross the sky—excepting a few sunset strata").

Whipple's death halted this work for at least a few months, but then we learn in the *Rhode Island Journal* for September 3, 1905, that Lovecraft has entered a contest by a New York lawyer, F. R. Fast, for the best weather forecasts. He adds smugly that his "forecasts have been right 1/3 more times than the local weather station since October [1904?]." There is no announcement that he won the prize, so presumably he did not. But Lovecraft went on to state that daily forecasts would be issued after October 15 for 50¢ a year. There seems to have been some hiatus in the forecasts (probably in November and December 1905, which is likely to have been the time of the onset of his "near-breakdown" of 1906), for the January 1906 issue of the *Rhode Island Journal* states that the forecasts will now resume. In February we learn that a great many new instruments have now been added to the meteorological observatory, including a barometer, a maximum and minimum thermometer, a dry bulb thermometer, a wet thermometer, a rain gauge, a hair hygrometer, a storm-glass, and other things. The April 1906 issue informs us that Lovecraft has "just constructed a new wind-vane for the station. It was Finished on March 28, and works finely." But in May 1906 it is announced that "Of late many accidents have happened to the instruments at our station, so the records are badly broken." These were evidently repaired, and later such things as a quadrant, sundial, and magnetic compass were added. A small pamphlet dating to this period—*Third Annual Report of the Prov. Meteorological Station* (dated January 16, 1907)[67]—clearly suggests that there were two previous annual reports, now non-extant.

Lovecraft was also continuing to add to his astronomical collection as well: his 3" telescope was obtained on September 14, 1906, and somewhat earlier he acquired a 12" celestial globe and a Barritt-Serviss Planet Finder. The generosity of Lovecraft's family—for these items could only have come from his mother or aunts or uncle—even in their relatively straitened circumstances cannot be overstressed.

Still another activity in which Lovecraft engaged was amateur printing. This, too, had begun as early as 1902, as an ad in the *Rhode Island Journal* for January 3, 1904, has a notice for a "Providence Printing Co. / Card & Job Work at Low Rates / Estab. 1902." Not much is heard of this until 1905, when another ad (April 30, 1905) states: "We have re-opened at our old location with a new press, type, and outfit. We now do *card work only* but we do it in a way much superior to that which we used last year. ALL

COLOURS SAME RATES." In the issue of October 22, 1905, we learn that the Providence Printing Co. has "re-opened with new double cylinder rotary press! Jobs done also hecto. work." The issue of November 12, 1905 informs us that H. P. Lovecraft, Printer, successor of the Prov. Printing Co., is now equipped with three presses and five new styles of type. Cards only 5¢ per dozen. A very professional-looking printed card is affixed to the last page of the *Rhode Island Journal* for January 1906:

H. P. LOVECRAFT
CARD & JOB PRINTER
Established 1902 598, Angell St.

Best quality work of any kind (up to size 3 × 5) done promptly, and at lowest rates.
NEW "EXCELSIOR" PRESS & ALL KINDS OF TYPE.
CARDS ONLY 5¢ PER DOZEN.
Trial order solicited.

It would seem likely, given Lovecraft's vigorous ad campaign, that he was actually receiving offers for small-scale printing from friends and family. But by April 1906 Lovecraft "permanently discontinued" his card printing owing to "the stress of the R.I. Journal," whatever that may have been; he referred patrons to Mr Reginald Miller, 7 Irving Avenue, and offered all his presses, types, and supplies for sale.

Lovecraft, then, was making a game effort to resume his normal life and writing after his grandfather's death and the move to 598 Angell Street. And perhaps his friends lent their assistance. One of the first things they did was to re-establish "New Anvik" in the vacant lot next door:

> This was my aesthetic masterpiece, for besides a little village of painted huts erected by myself and Chester and Harold Munroe, there was a landscape garden, all of mine own handiwork. I chopped down certain trees and preserved others, laid out paths and gardens, and set at the proper points shrubbery and ornamental urns taken from the old home. My paths were of gravel, bordered with stones, and here and there a bit of stone wall or an impressive cairn of my own making added to the picture. Between two trees I made a rustic bench, later

> duplicating it betwixt two other trees. A large grassy space I levelled and transformed into a Georgian lawn, with a sundial in the centre. Other parts were uneven, and I sought to catch certain sylvan or bower-like effects. The whole was drained by a system of channels terminating in a cess-pool of my own excavation. Such was the paradise of my adolescent years, and amidst such scenes were many of my early works written.[68]

Lovecraft kept this up till the age of seventeen, when he realised "with horror" that he was growing too old for such an enterprise; he turned it over to a younger boy who lived across the lot from him.

The Providence Detective Agency was similarly revived in 1905 or thereabouts. In the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for May 7, 1905, appears this announcement: "The Providence Detective Agency has again opened for business. Rates etc. same as before. All civil or criminal cases quickly attended to. Low Prices. H. P. Lovecraft, C. P. Munroe, Detectives." Then, however, in the issue of May 21, 1905, there appear two *separate* ads, one for "H. P. Lovecraft, Priv. Detec., Formerly with the P.D.A.," and a similar one for Chester Munroe. Was there some sort of schism? If so, it does not appear to have been of long duration, for the very next issue (May 28, 1905) lists something called the "East Side Detective Agency / Organised—May 1905" ("Best on the East Side"); no names are mentioned, but surely Lovecraft and Munroe had teamed up again. An amusing announcement in the *Rhode Island Journal* for June 1906 states that the P.D.A. has resumed: "It is the same as before. Beware of imitators. Carter & Brady, Mgrs." Are these two new boys? Hardly: Lovecraft and Chester Munroe have clearly adopted as pseudonyms the names of two of the most illustrious of the dime-novel detectives, Nick Carter and Old King Brady. But, as with the rank imitators of the *Rhode Island Journal,* the P.D.A. apparently spawned its share of copycats; the July 1906 issue declares huffily that "a cheap agency is trying to compete with us. BEWARE!!!" As no more such notices appear, we can be confident that the temerity of these imitators was roundly upbraided.

The Blackstone Orchestra likewise resumed. the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for April 16, 1905, prints an ad listing H. P. Lovecraft and C. P. Munroe as the leaders ("Fine music cheap"). The ads continue to appear as late as October 1906. In January 1906 we learn of its "New Repertoire—Tenor & Baritone Solos" as well as "Phonograph Concerts." Can it be that

Lovecraft was actually attempting to sing? It certainly seems that way; consider a letter of 1918:

> Something over a decade ago I conceived the idea of displacing Sig. Caruso as the world's greatest lyric vocalist, and accordingly inflicted some weird and wondrous ululations upon a perfectly innocent Edison blank. My mother actually liked the results—mothers are not always unbiased critics—but I saw to it that an accident soon removed the incriminating evidence. Later I tried something less ambitious; a simple, touching, plaintive, ballad sort of thing a la John McCormack. This was a better success, but reminded me so much of the wail of a dying fox-terrier that I very carelessly happened to drop it soon after it was made.[69]

Much as we might like to have such recordings—there is much doubt as to what Lovecraft's voice actually sounded like—it is clear that they do not survive. Since Lovecraft in a 1933 letter rattles off many of the hit songs of 1906—"When the Whippoorwill Sings, Marguerite," "When the Mocking-Bird Is Singing in the Wildwood," "I'll Be Waiting in the Gloaming, Genevieve," "In the Golden Autumn Time, My Sweet Elaine"—we can imagine that these were the songs he both performed in public and recorded on the phonograph. Indeed, he adds in this letter: ". . . weren't the Blackstone Military Band's voices changing? . . . From bad to worse, as an impartial outsider might have observed with uncharitable accuracy. But how we howled & bellowed those damned old barber-shop tunes!"[70]

This period was also the heyday of the Great Meadow Country Clubhouse. Lovecraft and his pals would ride on bicycles along the Taunton Pike (now State Road 44) to the rural village of Rehoboth, about eight miles from Providence just across the state line into Massachusetts. Here they found a small wooden hut with stone chimney and built an addition to it —"larger than the hut itself"[71]—where they could conduct whatever games they fancied. The hut and chimney had been built by an old Civil War veteran named James Kay, who probably also assisted them in building the addition.[72] When Lovecraft and Harold Munroe returned to this site in 1921, they found very little changed: "Tables stood about as of yore, pictures we knew still adorned the walls with unbroken glass. Not an inch of tar paper was ripped off, & in the cement hearth we found still embedded the small pebbles we stamped in when it was new & wet—pebbles arranged to form the initials G. M. C. C."[73] I saw those pebbles myself about twenty-

five years ago, although on a more recent trip I found them almost entirely scattered. Now, of course, only the stone chimney remains, and even that is disintegrating. In its day it must have been a sight. Lovecraft dates this entire episode to the ages of about sixteen to eighteen and mentions Ronald Upham, Stuart Coleman, and Kenneth Tanner as part of the gang along with the Munroes. One wonders how they stumbled upon Rehoboth as the locale of their adventures; perhaps one of the other boys had relations nearby.

Also at this time Lovecraft himself developed an interest in firearms. Recall that during the initial creation of the Providence Detective Agency he himself, unlike the other boys, sported a real revolver. Lovecraft evidently amassed a fairly impressive collection of rifles, revolvers, and other firearms: "After 1904 I had a long succession of 22-calibre rifles, & became a fair shot till my eyes played hell with my accuracy."[74] At this point Lovecraft seemed to lose interest, and ads like the following begin to appear in the *Rhode Island Journal:* "Wanted to Trade / Sharp 50-70 breech loading rifle carbine, new, for Astronomical goods" (May 7, 1905). A later issue (October 8, 1905) states that this rifle was originally purchased for $12.00 and is now going for $2.50. Also advertised for trade is a Stevens $5.00 Diamond Model .22 caliber target pistol, "only shot 2 or 3 times" (May 14, 1905). Even with Whipple Phillips's fortune gone, whatever Lovecraft wanted, he got.

Rifle-shooting was, however, the only sport that might remotely be said to have interested Lovecraft. Other team or individual sports he shunned with disdain as unfit for an intelligent person. Harold W. Munro (another high-school friend of Lovecraft's, not to be confused with Harold Bateman Munroe) recounts that he and Lovecraft had frequent arguments in high school over the merits of athletics: "On one occasion I confidently observed that athletics develop better bodies which in turn develop better brains. Without a moment of hesitation Howard beamingly cited one of Hope's foremost athletes whose classroom performances varied between disappointing and pathetic." One wonders whether this anecdote can be connected with another one told by Munro: "Henry G. Marsh, Hope quarterback and third baseman, lived opposite Howard on Angell Street. Buoyed by school spirit, Henry once ventured to sell Howard a ticket to a championship game. There were no recriminations but the venture fell very flat. Henry never tried again. Howard and athletics just did not mix."[75] This attitude persisted throughout Lovecraft's life: nothing would inspire his

scorn or disgust more quickly than an offer to play cards or do crossword puzzles or watch a sporting event.

Interestingly, Lovecraft began to guide Chester and Harold Munroe into more academic interests, enlisting them as assistants and even colleagues in some of his own intellectual work. The *Rhode Island Journal* for March 1906 states that a meteorological sub-station has been opened by Harold at his home at 66 Patterson Street. Three months later we hear of the establishment of a Providence Astronomical Society. This society had apparently been formed as early as 1904, although there is no mention of it in earlier issues of the *Rhode Island Journal;* but consider the following notice (attached to the April 1907 issue and surely printed by Lovecraft):

PROV. ASTRONOMICAL SCY.
ESTAB. 1904 H. P. LOVECRAFT, PRES'T.

An organisation designed to encourage the study of the heavens.
All persons interested in Astronomy should at once join, as this society affords valuable instruction and cooperation. All business transacted by mail, so those far from Providence may join. Persons unfamiliar with the science are taught. Members are required only to send in monthly reports. ALL FREE

Write for directions and membership certificate NOW
598, Angell St., Providence, R.I., U.S.A.

In June 1906 one of the Munroes is noted as assisting Lovecraft in giving a lecture on the sun at the East Side Historical Club by showing lantern slides. In the July 1906 issue we are told that the society is flourishing and gaining members, and all members are now urged to keep an astronomical and meteorological diary. More lectures were given on December 7, 1906, and January 4, 1907, the latter with 50 slides ("A large number attended"). I do not imagine that the East Side Historical Club was anything but a group of Lovecraft's high school friends; we shall see later that they continued to meet in this fashion for several years.

Rather different was the lecture Lovecraft gave to the Boys' Club of the First Baptist Church on January 25, 1907.[76] This was clearly a formal organisation, although I am not convinced that Lovecraft was a member: if the contretemps with his Sunday school class (for which see below) dates to 1902, it is not likely that he would have been invited back anytime soon. But the mere fact that he gave the lecture may indicate that he had achieved a

certain celebrity as an astronomical authority; for he had already become widely published in the local papers by this time.

The death of Lovecraft's grandfather roughly coincided with the emergence of two new elderly male figures in his personal and intellectual life: his uncles, Dr Franklin Chase Clark (1847–1915) and Edward Francis Gamwell (1869–1936).

Lovecraft became acquainted with Gamwell in 1895, when the latter began courting his aunt Annie Emeline Phillips.[77] Edward and Annie married on January 3, 1897, with the six-year-old Lovecraft serving as usher.[78] Annie went to live with Edward in Cambridge, Massachusetts, where Edward was the city editor of the *Cambridge Chronicle* (1896–1901), then the *Cambridge Tribune* (1901–12), and then the *Boston Budget and Beacon* (1913–15).[79] It appears, however, that Annie and Edward visited Providence frequently, especially after the birth on April 23, 1898, of Phillips Gamwell, Lovecraft's only first cousin on the maternal side. (A second child, Marion Roby Gamwell, lived for only five days in February 1900.) Lovecraft reports that his uncle Edward was one of his favourite subjects of mimicry when the latter would call on Annie at 454 Angell Street.[80] Gamwell taught Lovecraft to recite the Greek alphabet at the age of six, and Lovecraft even maintains that it was his uncle's extensive editorial capacities that incited him to start the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy.*[81]

Lovecraft was much closer to Dr Clark than to Gamwell, and indeed the former became after Whipple's death exactly the sort of father replacement Whipple himself had been. Franklin Chase Clark had received an A.B. from Brown University in 1869, as Edward F. Gamwell would in 1894, had attended Harvard Medical School in 1869–70 (where he is likely to have studied with Oliver Wendell Holmes), and had gone on to attain his M.D. at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York. He also obtained an M.A. from Columbia College.[82] He married Lillian Delora Phillips on April 10, 1902, presumably in Providence, as he was both residing and operating a medical practice at 80 Olney Street at the time. Lovecraft does not mention being involved with the wedding, but he probably served in some capacity. One imagines that Lillian left 454 Angell Street at that time and moved in with her husband. Kenneth W. Faig says of Clark: "He was a

prolific writer on medicine, natural history, local history and genealogy and was elected a member of the Rhode Island Historical Society in 1905."[83]

In spite of Clark's scientific background, it was in the area of belles lettres that he exerted the greatest influence on the young Lovecraft. Clark had translated Homer, Virgil, Lucretius, and Statius into English verse (Lovecraft retained Clark's unpublished translations of the *Georgics* and *Aeneid* of Virgil to the end of his life,[84] but it is not clear what subsequently happened to them), and Lovecraft reports that he "did much to correct & purify my faulty style," specifically in verse but also in prose. He goes on to say: "I regarded, & still regard, his level as unattainable by myself; but I was so desirous of his approbation, that I would labour hours with my work to win a word of praise from his lips. I hung upon his conversation as Boswell hung upon Dr. Johnson's; yet was ever oppressed by a sense of hopeless inferiority."[85] We can perhaps see Clark's influence so early as the accomplished classical verses in *Poemata Minora, Volume II* (1902).

One hopes, however, that Clark did not have any influence on the only surviving poem by Lovecraft between *Poemata Minora* and the several poems written in 1912: "De Triumpho Naturae: The Triumph of Nature over Northern Ignorance" (July 1905). This poem, dedicated to William Benjamin Smith, author of *The Color Line: A Brief in Behalf of the Unborn* (1905), is the first explicitly racist document Lovecraft ever produced; but it was not to be the last. In twenty-four lines Lovecraft paraphrases several central arguments out of Smith's book: that the Civil War was a tragic mistake; that freeing blacks and granting them civil and political rights is folly; and that in so doing the abolitionists have actually ensured the extinction of the black race in America:

> The savage black, the ape-resembling beast,
> Hath held too long his Saturnalian feast.
> From out the land, by act of far'way Heav'n,
> To ling'ring death his numbers shall be driv'n.
> Against God's will the Yankee freed the slave
> And in the act consign'd him to the grave.

Let us ignore the highly disingenuous appeals to God, in whom Lovecraft had long ceased to believe. How does he imagine that "God's will" will ensure the destruction of blacks? The argument here expressed is a little cryptic, and in fact cannot be understood without recourse to Smith's book. Smith maintains that the inherent biological inferiority of blacks, their

physiological and psychological weaknesses, will cause them to perish over time. Smith quotes at length a Professor W. B. Willcox who states:

> "The medical evidence available points to the conclusion that they are more than ever afflicted with the scourges of disease, such as typhoid fever and consumption, and with the physical ills entailed by sexual vice. I have argued elsewhere to show that both in the North and in the South crime among the Negroes is rapidly increasing. Whether the race as a whole is as happy, as joyous, as confident of the future, or thoughtless of it, as it was before the war, you, my hearers, know far better than I. I can only say that in my studies I have found not one expression of dissent from the opinion that the joyous buuyancy of the race is passing away; that they feel upon them a burden of responsibility to which they are unequal; that the lower classes of Negroes are resentful, and that the better classes [are] not certain or sanguine of the outcome. If this judgment be true, I can only say that it is perhaps the most fatal source of race as of national decay and death."[86]

This allows Smith to conclude, in a passage Lovecraft clearly copied in his poem:

> But what a weird light is now cast upon the War between the States, its cause, and its ultimate result! Aside from questions of political theory, the North sought to free to Negro, the South to hold him in bondage. As a slave he had led a protected, indeed a hothouse, existence and had flourished marvellously. His high-hearted champions shed torrents of blood and treasure to shatter the walls of his prison-house, to dispel the pent-up, stifling gloom of his dungeon, and to pour in upon him the free air and light of heaven. But the sum of liberty is no sooner arisen with burning breath than, lo! smitten by the breeze and the beam, he withers and dies![87]

All that can be said in defence of "De Triumpho Naturae" is that it is a little less virulent than Smith.

The whole issue of Lovecraft's racism is one I shall have to treat throughout this book; it is an issue that cannot be dodged, but it is also one that we must attempt to discuss—difficult as it may be—without yielding to emotionalism and by placing Lovecraft's views in the context of the

prevailing intellectual currents of the time. It is not likely that at the age of fifteen Lovecraft had formulated clear views on the matter of race, and his attitudes were surely influenced by his environment and upbringing. Recall Winfield Scott Lovecraft's hallucinations regarding a "negro" who was molesting his wife; it is conceivable that he could have passed on his prejudice against blacks even to his two-year-old son. Lovecraft's most virulently prejudiced letters were written to his aunt Lillian in the 1920s, who in all likelihood shared his sentiments, as probably did most of the other members of his family.

Lovecraft himself supplies a highly illuminating account of his early views on the subject when he notes his reaction to entering Hope Street High School in 1904:

> But Hope Street is near enough to the "North End" to have a considerable *Jewish* attendance. It was there that I formed my ineradicable aversion to the Semitic race. The Jews were brilliant in their classes—calculatingly and schemingly brilliant—but their ideals were sordid and their manners coarse. I became rather well known as an anti-Semite before I had been at Hope Street many days.[88]

Lovecraft appears to make that last utterance with some pride. This whole passage is considerably embarrassing to those who wish to exculpate Lovecraft on the ground that he never took any direct actions against the racial or ethnic groups he despised but merely confined his remarks to paper. It is not clear, of course, exactly what he did to earn the reputation of an anti-Semite in high school, but clearly some sort of overt demonstration, if only verbal, is suggested.

Lovecraft's racism manifested itself in many different forms, but here I wish to consider specifically his prejudice against blacks. To the end of his life Lovecraft retained a belief in the *biological* (as opposed to the cultural) inferiority of blacks, and maintained that a strict colour line must be enforced in order to prevent miscegenation. This view began to emerge in the late eighteenth century—both Jefferson and Voltaire were convinced of the black's biological inferiority—and gained ground throughout the nineteenth century. Robert Chambers's *Vestiges of Creation* (1843), which Lovecraft had in his library, put forth a pre-Darwinian evolutionary hypothesis that maintained that the human race had passed through various stages, from the lowest (blacks) to the highest (Caucasians). In 1858

Abraham Lincoln stated that "there is a physical difference between the white and black races which I believe will for ever forbid the two races living together on terms of social and political equality." Theodore Roosevelt in a 1906 letter declared: "I entirely agree with you that as a race and in the mass they are altogether inferior to whites." Henry James in 1907 referred to a "group of tatterdemalion darkies [who] lounged and sunned themselves within range."[89]

I do not cite these passages in extenuation of Lovecraft but to demonstrate how widely, in 1905, such views were prevalent even among the intellectual classes. New Englanders were particularly hostile to foreigners and blacks, for a variety of reasons, largely economic and social. The Immigration Restriction League was founded in Boston in 1894, and John Fiske—whose anthropological work Lovecraft later admired—was its first president. In Providence, as in most other large cities, there was a clearly defined "Negro" district; in Lovecraft's boyhood it was the area north of Olney Street. In a letter reminiscing about his boyhood he speaks of "the dark stretch of Cole's Woods to the north, with niggerville beyond, whence would troop [to Slater Avenue] Clarence Parnell & Asa Morse, & the ash-cart Brannons, & the white-trash Taylors whose father tended the furnace at Slater Ave. & East Manning St. schools . . ."[90]

The curious thing is that Lovecraft's offensive little poem was written at exactly the time when a new generation of African American intellectuals and political leaders was emerging to challenge these stereotypes of black inferiority. W. E. B. Du Bois's landmark collection of essays, *The Souls of Black Folk* (1903), made a sensation when it was published, although obviously not to Lovecraft. Paul Laurence Dunbar's poetry (*Lyrics of Lowly Life,* 1896) and novels (*The Sport of the Gods,* 1902) were winning high praise from William Dean Howells and other critics. African American writers would, of course, continue to work in obscurity until the 1920s and the heyday of the Harlem Renaissance, when Zora Neale Hurston, Claude McKay, Jean Toomer, and Langston Hughes would make their mark. Lovecraft never read any of this literature, even though he was in New York at the height of this movement.

What he did read, naturally, was the racist white literature of the time, whether it be Southern nostalgia writers as Thomas Nelson Page (who propagated the view, shared by Lovecraft and William Benjamin Smith, of the black slave's "idyllic" life on the plantation), actual negrophobes such as

Thomas Dixon, Jr, or writers like Frank Norris and Jack London who axiomatically accepted the inferiority of "primitive" peoples and the moral rightness of whites to dominate them. Lovecraft later admitted to having read both the novel (*The Clansman,* 1905) and the play (*The Clansman: An American Drama,* 1905) by Dixon on which *The Birth of a Nation* was based,[91] and he may have read them when they first appeared. Dixon's *The Leopard's Spots* (1902), another viciously anti-black novel, was in his library. Lovecraft's sympathy for the Southern cause in the Civil War was of very long standing and would persist throughout his life. He states that he and Harold Munroe were "Confederates in sympathy, & used to act out all the battles of the War in Blackstone Park."[92] As early as 1902 he wrote a brief poem in defence of the Confederacy—"C. S. A. 1861–1865: To the Starry Cross of the SOUTH"—and placed it on the desk of Abbie A. Hathaway of the Slater Avenue School, whose father had fought in the Union army.[93]

The scientific refutation of racism was only beginning at the turn of the century, led by the pioneering work of Franz Boas (1858–1942) and others under his direction. If it is excusable for a fifteen-year-old not to have paid much attention to this work in 1905, it would be much less excusable for a forty-year-old not to have done so in 1930; it is exactly here, as I shall discuss later, that Lovecraft deserves censure.

"De Triumpho Naturae" appears to be an isolated example of this ugly strain in Lovecraft's early thought and writing; in other regards he continued to pursue abstract intellectual endeavour. A more significant literary product of 1905—one for which Franklin Chase Clark probably provided impetus and guidance—was *A Manual of Roman Antiquities.* This was first announced, under the title *A Handbook of Roman Antiquities,* as "Soon to Appear" in the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for July 30, 1905. Here is the description:

> A handbook of Roman Antiquities by H. P. Lovecraft. To which is added, the biographies of certain great Romans, including Romulus, L. Tarquinius, L. Quntius [*sic*] Cincinnatus, M. Tullius Cicero, C. Iulius Caesar, C. Octavius, M. Ulpius Trajanus, T. Flavius Sabinus Vespasianus, Flav. Anicius Justinianus, and many others, extending from A.V.C. 1 to 1353 (B.C. 753 to A.D. 600). price 50 cts.

The *Rhode Island Journal* for August 13, 1905, declares that the volume is now ready and that "The work will be issued on the hecto. by subscription." Regrettably, the "Lives of Great Romans" was not able to be included, but instead there is other, unspecified matter "invaluable to small students of Roman History or Literature." At 50¢ this was very likely the most substantial—at least the lengthiest—single work Lovecraft had produced up to this time; it is unfortunate that it does not survive. The proposed list of biographies is a good selection of celebrated figures from the Republic as well as some of the leading emperors. Lovecraft no doubt delighted in using Roman years (A.V.C. = "Ab Urbe Condita," from the founding of the city) rather than the parvenu calendar imposed by the Christians.

This work very likely gave Lovecraft much-needed practice in sustained prose composition; certainly his prose needed work, if "The Mysterious Ship" was the best he could do in 1902. I am not sure that Clark was much inclined toward the weird tale, but if he did nothing more than to urge Lovecraft to read fewer dime novels and read more standard literature, it would have been a benefit. Something remarkable certainly seems to have happened in the three years subsequent to the writing of "The Mysterious Ship," and it is highly unfortunate that we have no tales from this period, including those stories written under the influence of Verne, which probably date to this time. In any event, we find ourselves wholly unprepared for the surprising competence and maturity of the tale entitled "The Beast in the Cave."

The first draft of this tale was written prior to the move from 454 Angell Street in the spring of 1904,[94] and the finished version dates to April 21, 1905. Lovecraft reports having spent "days of boning at the library"[95] (i.e., the Providence Public Library) in researching the locale of the tale, Mammoth Cave in Kentucky. It would take Lovecraft quite some time to learn the wisdom of basing a tale's locale on first-hand, rather than second-hand, information.

"The Beast in the Cave" deals with a man who is slowly facing the realisation that he is lost in Mammoth Cave and may never be found. He wavers between resignation at his fate and a desire for self-preservation; but when he begins shouting to call attention to himself, he summons not the guide who had led his tour group but an anomalous, shambling beast whom he cannot see in the blackness of the cave but can only hear. In attempting to protect himself from the creature he hurls rocks at it, and appears to have

fatally injured it. Fleeing from the scene, he comes upon the guide and leads him back to the site of his encounter with the beast. The "beast" turns out to be a man who has been lost in the cave for years.

The tale is admirably well-told and suspenseful, although not many will have failed to guess the conclusion before it is hyperbolically announced ("The creature I had killed, the strange beast of the unfathomed cave was, or had at one time been, a **MAN!!!**"). What is most interesting about the tale is its detailed portrayal of the narrator-protagonist, who in the first person recounts his fluctuating mental state as he experiences the anomalous phenomena. At the outset he—like Lovecraft—maintains that, in spite of his dire condition, and because he is "indoctrinated . . . by a life of philosophical study," "I derived no small measure of satisfaction from my unimpassioned demeanour." And yet, this phlegmatic exterior gives way as the darkness of the cave, and the creature's propinquity, begin to oppress him: "My disordered fancy conjured up hideous and fearsome shapes from the sinister darkness that surrounded me, and that actually seemed to *press* upon my body." Later he confesses that "groundless, superstitious fear had entered my brain." Like many of Lovecraft's later protagonists, outward rationalism collapses in the face of the unknown.

The climax of the tale is deftly foretold in the fourth paragraph, well before he has encountered the "beast":

> I remembered the accounts which I had heard of the colony of consumptives, who, taking their residence in this gigantic grotto to find health from the apparently salubrious air of the underground world, with its steady, uniform temperature, pure air, and peaceful quiet, had found, instead, death in strange and ghastly form. I had seen the sad remains of their ill-made cottages as I passed them by with the party, and had wondered what unnatural influence a long sojourn in this immense and silent cavern would exert upon one as healthy and as vigorous as I.

This sort of foreshadowing would become very common in Lovecraft's later tales, where the conclusion is virtually announced at the outset and the principal element of suspense comes to reside in seeing how exactly that conclusion is to be reached. In the present instance, however, this foreshadowing serves to establish a queer bond between the narrator and the "beast" that other aspects of the tale are seeking to repudiate. The very title

of the story suggests that the victim has renounced his humanity by virtue of his isolated condition, and the tale continually refers to him as a "wild beast," "animal," "creature," and at one point even a *"thing."* And yet, the narrator is aware of anomalies. "Certainly, the conduct of the creature was exceedingly strange," for the entity sometimes walks on two feet, sometimes on four. When the figure is dimly seen, the narrator takes it for "an anthropoid ape of large proportions"; but closer examination reveals physiological peculiarities that no normal ape could possibly bear. In effect, the tale suggests that the narrator himself, although "healthy and vigorous," might have been reduced to the "beast's" status if he had not been rescued; indeed, when he is rescued, he begins "gibbering" as if he were an animal himself.

In spite of Lovecraft's later dismissal of it as "ineffably pompous and Johnsonese,"[96] "The Beast in the Cave" is a remarkable story for a fourteen-year-old and represents a quantum leap over the crudeness of "The Mysterious Ship." Lovecraft is right to declare that in it "I first wrote a story worth reading."[97] I do not know if any significant literary influence can be adduced. Perhaps we can think of this tale as a sort of mirror-image of Poe's "The Murders in the Rue Morgue": in that story what are taken to be the actions of a man turn out to have been performed by an ape, whereas here what is initially taken for an ape proves to be a man. I do not wish to belabour this point, but I must again note that this tale is also not supernatural. The style is indeed very antiquated, especially for a tale that appears to be set in the present day, and is also a trifle overwrought ("That nevermore should I behold the blessed light of day, or scan the pleasant hills and dales of the beautiful world outside, my reason could no longer entertain the slightest unbelief"). "The Beast in the Cave" is, however, the first tale of Lovecraft's that actually bears a recognisable resemblance to his later work; he had found his idiom, and it would now only be a matter of refining it.

"The Alchemist" (1908) is still more of an advance in style and technique. Antoine, last of the Comtes de C——, tells the tale of his life and ancestry. This ancient aristocratic line has occupied a lofty castle in France surrounded by a dense forest; but a deadly curse seems to weigh upon it. Antoine finally learns the apparent cause when he comes of age and reads a paper handed down through the generations. In the thirteenth century an ancient man, Michel ("usually designated by the surname of Mauvais, the Evil, on account of his sinister reputation"), dwelt on the estate together with

his son Charles, nicknamed Le Sorcier. These two practised the black arts, and it was rumoured that they were seeking the elixir of life. Many disappearances of children were attributed to them. When Godfrey, the young son of Henri the Comte, is missing, Henri accosts Michel and kills him in a rage; just then Godfrey is found, and Charles, who learns of the deed, pronounces a curse:

> May ne'er a noble of thy murd'rous line
> Survive to reach a greater age than thine!

He thrusts a vial in the face of Henri, who dies instantly. From that time on no comte of the line lives beyond the age of thirty-two, the age of Henri when he died. This curse continues for hundreds of years, and Antoine has no recourse but to believe that he will suffer a similar fate. Wandering alone over his deserted and cobweb-festooned castle, he comes upon a hidden cellar and encounters a hideous-looking man "clad in a skull-cap and long mediaeval tunic of dark colour." This man tells of how Charles Le Sorcier killed Henri and also Godfrey when the latter reached Henri's age; but Antoine wonders how the curse could have been continued thereafter, "when Charles Le Sorcier must in the course of Nature have died." As the man attacks Antoine, the latter hurls a torch at him, setting him afire. Just before he expires, however, he reveals the truth:

> "Fool," he shrieked, "can you not guess my secret? Have you no brain whereby you may recognise the will which has through six centuries fulfilled the dreadful curse upon your house? Have I not told you of the great elixir of eternal life? Know you not how the secret of Alchemy was solved? I tell you, it is I! I! *I! that have lived for six hundred years to maintain my revenge,* FOR I AM CHARLES LE SORCIER!"

This conclusion, too, will not be a surprise to any attentive reader, for again Lovecraft has anticipated it well in advance. The remarkable thing about "The Alchemist," however, is its atmosphere. If the murder of Michel Mauvais occurred in the thirteenth century and Charles Le Sorcier has lived for six hundred years, then the tale must actually have been set in the nineteenth century; and it is one of Lovecraft's minor triumphs to have created a convincing aura of mediaeval antiquity in this tale. The narrator at one point even remarks that "Isolated as I was, modern science made no impression upon me, and I laboured as in the Middle Ages."

As with "The Beast in the Cave," the narrator's emotions are really at the heart of the tale. This tale, much more than its predecessor, betrays the influence of Poe in the narrator's obsessive interest in his own psychological state; indeed, many details in the story make us think of Lovecraft's remark that he himself "felt a kinship to Poe's gloomy heroes with their broken fortunes." Antoine is of a lofty and ancient line; but "poverty but little above the level of dire want, together with a pride of name that forbids its alleviation by the pursuits of commercial life, have prevented the scions of our line from maintaining their estates in pristine splendour." As a result, Antoine—an only child—spends his years alone, "poring over the ancient tomes that filled the shadow-haunted library of the chateau, and in roaming without aim or purpose through the perpetual dusk of the spectral wood"; he is kept away from the "peasant children" who dwell nearby. All this can be seen as a deliberately distorted, but still recognisable, reflexion of Lovecraft's own childhood and upbringing.

"The Alchemist" is, at last, the first extant tale by Lovecraft to be avowedly supernatural. And yet, even here the supernaturalism is manifested from a somewhat unexpected direction. All along we have been led to believe that the supernatural element of the tale is the curse that causes the Comtes to die around the age of thirty-two; but in fact these deaths are now seen to be mere murders. It is the murderer, Charles Le Sorcier, who is the supernatural component, for it is he who has unnaturally prolonged his life through sorcery and "will" so as to exact revenge for his father's death. The conclusion of the story reveals that Lovecraft is still overly given to histrionics; he would, in fact, find it one of the hardest faults to correct in his entire career.

The last page of the autograph manuscript of "The Beast in the Cave" bears the following notation:

> Tales of Terror
> I. The Beast in the Cave
> By H. P. Lovecraft
> (Period—Modern)

It is interesting to note that Lovecraft was already at this time thinking of assembling a collection of his tales; we do not know what other tales, if any, were to make up the volume. The autograph manuscript of "The Alchemist"

does not survive, so we do not know whether it formed part of this volume. It may well have, for if "The Beast in the Cave" is a "modern" story, then "The Alchemist" could have formed part of a putative subsection of "ancient" tales, even though, as I have noted, the central action of the story occurs in the nineteenth century.

It is, however, highly significant that, so far as we can tell, "The Beast in the Cave" is the first work for which Lovecraft did not undertake the elaborate "publishing" procedures which we have seen for all his other juvenilia: there is no price affixed, no invented imprint, and no attached catalogue of works. This story becomes, therefore, the first exemplar of that abstract and disinterested self-expression which was to become the pillar of Lovecraft's later aesthetic theory.

We have only hints of what further tales Lovecraft wrote in the next three years, for he declares that in 1908 he destroyed all but two of the stories he had been writing over the past five years.[98] Late in life Lovecraft discovered a composition book bearing the title of one lost story dating to 1905: "Gone—But Whither?" He remarks wryly: "I'll bet it was a hell-raiser! The title expresses the fate of the tale itself."[99] Then there was something called "The Picture" (1907), which in his Commonplace Book he describes as concerning a "painting of ultimate horror". Elsewhere he says of it:

> I had a man in a Paris garret paint a mysterious canvas embodying the quintessential essence of all horror. He is found clawed & mangled one morning before his easel. The picture is destroyed, as in a titanic struggle—but in one corner of the frame a bit of canvas remains . . . & on it the coroner finds to his horror the painted counterpart of the sort of claw which evidently killed the artist.[100]

Perhaps one can dimly infer the influence of Poe's "The Oval Portrait," in which a painter, in painting a portrait of his wife, insidiously sucks the life out of the woman and transfers it into the portrait.

For one other tale we know its subject but not its title. "The idea of a Roman settlement in America is something which occurred to me years ago —in fact, I began a story with that theme (only it was about Central America & not U.S.) in 1906 or 1907, tho' I never finish'd it."[101] This story would have been fascinating, for it combined two of the traits that he claimed to make up the core of his personality—love of the ancient and love of the

weird. Actually, it is not likely to have been supernatural, hence would probably not—even if finished—have formed part of the contents of the prospective *Tales of Terror* volume. It seems instead to have been an historical fantasy about a voyage by a Roman trireme across the Atlantic to South America and encounters between the Romans and the Mayans of the region. No doubt Lovecraft was already fascinated by the mystery-shrouded ancient civilisations of central and south America, as he would be for the rest of his life.

By 1908, the time of the fourth "near-breakdown" of his young life, Lovecraft had decided that he was not a fiction-writer and resolved instead to devote himself to science and belles-lettres. At that time, in spite of the promise shown by "The Beast in the Cave" and "The Alchemist," his decision would not have been entirely unwarranted. It is not likely that either of his surviving tales—or any others, for that matter—were actually submitted to magazines or book publishers; if they had been, they would probably have been rejected, largely on account of their antiquated style. But Lovecraft had by this time already amassed an impressive record of publications on science, and it would have been a reasonable conjecture that he would have continued to pursue such a course to become a professional writer in this field.

Lovecraft first broke into true print with a letter (dated May 27, 1906) printed in the *Providence Sunday Journal* for June 3. This letter, titled (surely by the editor) "No Transit of Mars," points out an elementary fallacy —there can be no transit of Mars over the sun, since Mars is outside the earth's orbit—in a letter to the editor published on May 27. The letter in question was by an astrologer, one Thomas Hines, Jr, of Central Falls, R.I., and bears the title "Hard Times Coming"; his remark was: "According to the transit of Mars and Saturn, I judge that Providence and Boston will suffer from great fires this summer."[102] Hines went on to predict such things as the deaths of Pope Pius X (d. 1914) and the Czar Nicholas II of Russia (d. 1918) and earthquakes in New England. This was too much for Lovecraft to bear, and he prefaces his factual correction with the scornful: "Passing over the fact that astrology is but a pseudo-science, not entitled to intelligent consideration . . ."

On July 16, 1906, Lovecraft wrote a letter to the *Scientific American* on the subject of finding planets in the solar system beyond Neptune. Much to

his delight, it was published in the issue of August 25, 1906, under the title "Trans-Neptunian Planets." This letter does not seem to have been written in response to any article in the *Scientific American,* but merely proposes that the observatories of the world team up to locate planets of the solar system beyond Neptune, as had been suspected by many astronomers; if they "band together and minutely photograph the ecliptic, as is done in asteroid hunting, the bodies might be revealed on their plates." Curiously, Lovecraft discounts the possibility that mathematical calculations alone could locate such planets, even though it was in fact such calculations that largely impelled the discovery of Pluto in 1930.

Lovecraft was not finished with his letter campaign in the cause of science. The *Providence Sunday Journal* for August 12, 1906, published, under the title "The Earth Not Hollow," a letter he had written six days earlier concerning the hollow-earth theory as advanced in a book, William Reed's *The Phantom of the Poles* (1906), that had served as the basis of an article in the *Journal* for August 5. Lovecraft systematically destroys the arguments for the theory as expressed in the book (or, rather, in the article, as he admits not having read the book itself): the compression of the earth is not due to apertures at the poles but the centrifugal force; the Auroras are not burning volcanoes; there are no "open Polar seas," as whatever land masses are around both poles appear to be bound by frozen seas; surface gravity of the earth is not greater at the poles but at the equator; and so on.

This letter, which appears to have been printed complete, is considerably longer than the previous two (which may or may not have been abridged), being nine full paragraphs and totalling about 500 words. There could well be more such letters in the *Journal* and elsewhere, as I discovered "The Earth Not Hollow" by accident while looking for something else.

Around this time, however, Lovecraft simultaneously began to write two astronomy columns for local papers, the *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* and the *Providence Tribune* (morning, evening, and Sunday editions). The *Gleaner* articles begin on July 27, 1906, and after a hiatus of a month progress weekly until the end of the year. The *Tribune* articles commence on August 1, 1906, and proceed monthly until June 1, 1908.

The *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* was a weekly based in Phenix, R.I., a community now incorporated into the city of West Warwick, well to the west and south of Providence. The paper had been started in 1876 by John H. Campbell and Reuben Capron; sometime thereafter Campbell became sole

proprietor, being both the editor and publisher.[103] Lovecraft described it as a "country paper" and stated that the Phillipses had taken the paper when they were at Greene.[104] Elsewhere he elaborated:

> This rural paper was the oracle of that section of the country from which my mother's family had originally come, & was taken for old times' sake in our household. The name "Phillips" is a magic word in Western Rhode Island, & the *Gleaner* was more than willing to print & feature anything from Whipple V. Phillips' grandson. Only the failure of the *Gleaner* put an end to my activity in its columns.[105]

This raises the question of just how long Lovecraft contributed to the paper. In this letter he maintains that "During 1906, 1907, & 1908 I flooded the *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* with my prose articles"; but no issues subsequent to December 28, 1906, seem to survive. There was a competing paper by this time, the *Pawtuxet Valley Daily Times,* and various notices in that paper suggest that the *Gleaner* did in fact continue publication through at least 1907. Since Lovecraft wrote the above remark in 1916 and was therefore writing of events that had occurred less than a decade previously, one must accept his statement that the paper continued into 1908 and that he contributed to it until the end.

Given that Lovecraft was still producing the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* at the time, it was natural that he would draw from that hectographed monthly for the articles in the *Gleaner.* In one remarkable instance—"Is There Life on the Moon?" (*Gleaner,* September 14, 1906)—he reached back a year to a series of that title published in the *Rhode Island Journal* for September 3, 10, and 17, 1905. "Can the Moon Be Reached by Man?" (*Gleaner,* October 12, 1906) had appeared in the *Rhode Island Journal* as a series from April to July 1906. "The Moon" (*Gleaner,* October 19, 1906), the longest of the *Gleaner* articles, was a serial that started in the *Rhode Island Journal* in August 1906 and was not finished there until January 1907. A note in the October 1906 issue states that the entire serial "can be had complete in book form, bound in pasteboard for 50¢," which shows that it was already finished at that time.

The *Gleaner* articles do more than merely provide information on the astronomical phenomena for the month; they are among the first of several attempts by Lovecraft over the years to educate the public on the fundamentals of astronomy. In the present instance, Lovecraft chose

provocative queries about Mars, the moon, and the solar system which he believed (probably rightly) the public would find stimulating. He tentatively endorsed as "not only possible, but even probable" Percival Lowell's belief that the Martian canals have been made artificially and are for purposes of irrigation; returning to the question of lunar canals, he now accepted Pickering's theory that they are deep furrows full of hoar frost; he discounted the theory of Vulcan (a supposed intra-Mercurial planet)[106] but reiterated his *Scientific American* letter in stating that trans-Neptunian planets ought to be sought by means of celestial photography. On the critical question of "Can the Moon Be Reached by Man?," Lovecraft maintained that all other difficulties—lack of air, absence of gravity, extreme cold—could all be overcome; the big sticking point was "motive power," i.e., getting a satellite off the earth. He considered three possibilities:

> (a) To fire an inhabited projectile from an immense cannon.
> (b) To interpose between the earth and the selected vehicle a screen, consisting of some material impervious to gravity.
> (c) To send off a projectile by electrical repulsion.

Of these, Lovecraft believed the third the most likely; but he doubted whether such a journey would occur "within the lifetime of anyone who now reads these pages."

The articles for the *Providence Tribune* tend to be less interesting only because they rather mechanically deal with the purportedly noteworthy celestial phenomena of each month, becoming somewhat repetitive in the process. They are distinguished, however, for the fact that they constitute one of the few occasions when illustrations by Lovecraft were published: of the twenty articles, sixteen were accompanied by hand-drawn star charts; in one anomalous instance (the *Evening Tribune* for March 3, 1908), only the illustration, not the article, was published (the article and the illustration appeared in the *Morning Tribune* the previous day).

Lovecraft stated that it was one of these articles that almost caused great awkwardness on one occasion—the occasion in 1907 when he was introduced by Winslow Upton to Percival Lowell when the astronomer was lecturing at Sayles Hall at Brown University. Lovecraft goes on:

> With the egotism of my 17 years, I feared that Lowell had read what I had written! I tried to be as non-committal as possible in

> speaking, and fortunately discovered that the eminent observer was more disposed to ask me about my telescope, studies, etc., than to discuss Mars. Prof. Upton soon led him away to the platform, and I congratulated myself that a disaster had been averted![107]

There are several troubling features in this seemingly innocuous account. First, there is no mention of Lowell's speculations on the canals or possible inhabitants of Mars in the *Tribune* articles; secondly, although Lovecraft in this letter declares that "I never had, have not, and never will have the slightest belief in Lowell's speculations," we have just seen that he had explicitly approved them as "probable" in a *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* article. One wonders, then, about the exact nature of Lovecraft's meeting with Lowell.

My feeling is that a purchase Lovecraft made at this time with his own money—a rebuilt 1906 Remington typewriter[108]—was connected with these published astronomy articles. The typewriter was not used not for preparing his hectographed scientific journals (for they remain handwritten to the very end) nor even, apparently, the fiction he was writing (no typescripts from this period survive), so that the preparation of the astronomy columns—the only things he was submitting to a publisher at this time—would be the only logical purpose for securing a typewriter. It was the only typewriter Lovecraft would ever own in his life.

Lovecraft also stated that he wrote a lengthy treatise, *A Brief Course in Astronomy—Descriptive, Practical, and Observational; for Beginners and General Readers,* in 1906: "it got as far as the typed and hand-illustrated stage (circa one hundred fifty pages), though no copy survives."[109] Not only does no copy survive, but there does not appear to be any mention of it in any issues of the *Rhode Island Journal* for 1906 or 1907. This strikes me as very odd. In a 1918 letter Lovecraft said that in 1906 "I set about writing a book—a complete treatise on astronomy,"[110] but does not explicitly say that he finished it; one must assume, however, that he did. Only one part of this work—clearly the most substantial scientific work he had ever written or ever would write—is extant: a separate treatise titled "Celestial Objects for All," whose preface declares that "The greater part of this work is also printed in 'A Brief Course in Astronomy' by the same author."

The quotation from "A Confession of Unfaith" with which I opened this chapter suggests how radically the study of astronomy affected Lovecraft's entire philosophical conception of the universe. Indeed, it is around the period of 1906 that we can definitively date his philosophical awakening. Previous to that there had only been his various conflicts with church authorities in Sunday school. His first attendance, if it truly dates to the age of five or seven, saw him taking sides with the Romans against the Christians, but only because of his fondness for Roman history and culture and not out of any specifically anticlerical bias. By the age of nine, as he declares, he was conducting a sort of experimental course in comparative religion, pretending to believe in various faiths to see whether they convinced him; evidently none did. This led to his final Sunday school encounter:

> How well I recall my tilts with Sunday-School teachers during my last period of compulsory attendance! I was 12 years of age, and the despair of the institution. None of the answers of my pious preceptors would satisfy me, and my demands that they cease taking things for granted quite upset them. Close reasoning was something new in their little world of Semitic mythology. At last I saw that they were hopelessly bound to unfounded dogmata and traditions, and thenceforward ceased to treat them seriously. Sunday-School became to me simply a place wherein to have a little harmless fun spoofing the pious mossbacks. My mother observed this, and no longer sought to enforce my attendance. [111]

I would give much to have been able to attend one of these sessions. They presumably occurred at the First Baptist Church, where his mother was still on the rolls. It is not clear to me why she insisted on his attendance after a presumable lapse of years and after the previous episode was such a signal failure; perhaps she was becoming concerned about his isolation—no doubt he was already deep in astronomy at this time—and perhaps she even found his atheism and scepticism, which he is likely to have voiced openly, dismaying.

But years of astronomical study triggered the "cosmicism" that would form so central a pillar of both his philosophical and aesthetic thought:

> By my thirteenth birthday I was thoroughly impressed with man's impermanence and insignificance, and by my seventeenth, about which time I did some particularly detailed writing on the

> subject, I had formed in all essential particulars my present pessimistic cosmic views. The futility of all existence began to impress and oppress me; and my references to human progress, formerly hopeful, began to decline in enthusiasm. ("A Confession of Unfaith")

There is no explicit account here of *why* Lovecraft developed these "pessimistic cosmic views" from the study of astronomy; a later remark in this essay—"My attitude has always been cosmic, and I looked on man as if from another planet. He was merely an interesting species presented for study and classification"—is suggestive, but no more. Having sloughed off any belief in deity as scientifically unjustified (recall his later statement that "A mere knowledge of the approximate dimensions of the visible universe is enough to destroy forever the notion of a personal godhead whose whole care is expended upon puny mankind"[112]), Lovecraft was left with the awareness that mankind was (probably) alone in the universe—at least, we have no way to establish contact with extraterrestrial races—and that the *quantitative* insignificance of the planet and all its inhabitants, both spatially and temporally, carried with it the corollary of a *qualitative* insignificance. I shall have more to say about the validity of this view, but it is best to wait until it is more fully developed in Lovecraft's mind.

A rather remarkable consequence of Lovecraft's philosophical interests was a reformist instinct that led him to attempt to educate the masses—or, at least, one member of them:

> I came across a superficially bright Swedish boy in the Public Library—he worked in the "stack" where the books are kept—and invited him to the house to broaden his mentality (I was fifteen and he was about the same, though he was smaller and seemed younger.) I thought I had uncovered a mute inglorious Milton (he professed a great interest in my work), and despite maternal protest entertained him frequently in my library. I believed in equality then, and reproved him when he called my mother "Ma'am"—I said that a future scientist should not talk like a servant! But ere long he uncovered qualities which did not appeal to me, and I was forced to abandon him to his plebeian fate.[113]

This account is full of interest. We know who this boy was: he was Arthur Fredlund, who lived at 1048 Eddy Street on the West Side of Providence,

just across the Providence River. The degree to which Lovecraft took Fredlund under his wing is suggested by an ad that appears in the back cover of the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* for September 1906: this declares that Fredlund has (no doubt with Lovecraft's aid) revived and become the editor of the *Scientific Gazette,* which had been defunct since September 1905. That Lovecraft would have allowed Fredlund to take over the earliest of his scientific periodicals must have meant that he saw great things in the boy. What "qualities" he revealed that did not appeal to Lovecraft we do not know, as there is no other account of this incident.

The fact that Lovecraft's mother objected to Fredlund's coming to their house—whereas she presumably did not object to other of Lovecraft's friends, as Stuart Coleman's lack of any mention of "maternal objections" to his coming over implies—seems indicative of Susie's social snobbery. Lovecraft, of course, as a member of the Providence Yankee aristocracy, was not devoid of class consciousness himself, as his reference to the "white-trash Taylors" who attended Slater Avenue reveals. Throughout his life he believed alternately, and sometimes simultaneously, in an aristocracy of class and breeding and an aristocracy of intellect; very gradually the latter took over more and more, but he never renounced the former. At this time we can see how scientific enthusiasm and the pleasure of having a disciple who "professed a great interest" in his work caused his intellectual aristocracy to come to the fore; perhaps, indeed, the "qualities" that revealed Fredlund to be a "plebeian" made Lovecraft believe that the aristocracy of breeding was not wholly to be despised.

In 1908 Lovecraft stood at the threshold of adulthood: he was doing reasonably well at Hope Street High School, he had become prodigiously learned in chemistry, geography, astronomy, and meteorology, and he was accomplished in belles lettres as a Latinist, poet, and fiction writer. He seemed destined for a career as an academician of some sort; perhaps he would be a sort of transatlantic version of those later Oxford dons who wrote detective stories, teaching astronomy at a university while writing horror tales in his spare time. In any event, the future for so precocious and accomplished a young man seemed assured.

What derailed that future—and what ensured that Lovecraft would never lead a "normal" life—was his fourth "near-breakdown," clearly the most serious of his life. In some ways he never recovered from it.

5. Barbarian and Alien

(1908–1914)

Lovecraft is very reticent about the causes or sources of what we can only regard as a full-fledged nervous breakdown in the summer of 1908. Beyond the mere fact of its occurrence, we know little. Consider four statements, made from 1915 to 1935:

> In 1908 I should have entered Brown University, but the broken state of my health rendered the idea absurd. I was and am a prey to intense headaches, insomnia, and general nervous weakness which prevents my continuous application to any thing.[1]
>
> In 1908 I was about to enter Brown University, when my health completely gave way—causing the necessary abandonment of my college career.[2]
>
> . . . after all, high-school was a mistake. I liked it, but the strain was too keen for my health, and I suffered a nervous collapse in 1908 immediately after graduating, which prevented altogether my attending college.[3]
>
> My health did not permit me to go to the university—indeed, the steady application to high-school gave me a sort of breakdown.[4]

In the first, second, and fourth of these statements Lovecraft is a little disingenuous, even tendentious: he implies that his entry into Brown University was a matter of course, but in fact he *never* graduated from high school, and certainly would have required at least another year of schooling before he could have done so. The third statement, which states that he actually did graduate, is one of the few instances I have found where Lovecraft plainly lies about himself.

Since we are generally left in the dark about the nature of this breakdown, we can work only on conjecture. We have two pieces of external evidence. One comes from Harry Brobst, who spoke to a woman who had gone to high school with Lovecraft: "She . . . described these terrible tics that he had—he'd be sitting in his seat and he'd suddenly up and jump—I think they referred to them as seizures. The family took him out of high school, and then whatever education he got presumably was done by private tutors, whatever that meant. She said, oh, yes, she remembered him. I guess he scared the student body half to death."[5] This certainly is a remarkable account, and it suggests that Lovecraft's chorea minor (if indeed he was afflicted with that disease) had not entirely worn off even by this time. Brobst, a Ph.D. in psychology who was trained as a psychiatric nurse, considers the possibility of "chorea-like symptoms" and also conjectures that a hysteroid seizure—a purely psychological ailment without any organic basis—may have been involved. Whether these seizures were the actual cause of his removal from high school is something that cannot now be settled.

The other piece of evidence comes from Harold W. Munro, who writes of an accident suffered by Lovecraft:

> . . . a new house was going up, which of course intrigued the youth of the neighborhood, especially after the carpenters had left for the day. There were many inspections and generous samplings from open kegs of nails. Ladders were still the only means of going up or down. The more challenging upper floors were the favourites. The mystery of it also appealed to little Howard, who never ran with the pack but waited until near darkness when the field was clear for his solo visitations. Then came news that a boy, the Lovecraft boy, had fallen (nobody ever knew how far) and landed on his head. As excitement of the fall was subsiding, word followed that day and night the injured head was kept "packed in ice."[6]

Munro does not date this incident (which he himself did not see but only heard about from a girl "a little younger than Howard" who later became Munro's wife), but he tells it directly after writing: "Lovecraft did not graduate from Hope Street or anywhere else. He wanted credits to enter Brown University but long before the rest of us graduated failing health had

compelled him to drop out." Munro, therefore, implicitly links this incident with his withdrawal from high school.

Lovecraft's breakdown—whether purely mental or nervous or a combination of mental and physical factors—was, clearly, something related to his schoolwork, the same sort of thing that may have caused his milder breakdown of 1906; and yet, even "steady application" in only three classes (all he was taking in his third year at Hope Street) would not seem sufficient to induce so severe a collapse. Note, however, what three courses he was taking: chemistry, physics, and algebra. He was receiving the highest marks in the first two; in algebra he was repeating a part of the course he had taken the previous year. My feeling, therefore, is that Lovecraft's relative failure to master algebra made him gradually awaken to the realisation that he could never do serious professional work in either chemistry or astronomy, and that therefore a career in these two fields was an impossibility. This would have been a shattering conception, requiring a complete revaluation of his career goals. Consider this remark, made in 1931:

> In studies I was not bad—except for mathematics, which repelled and exhausted me. I passed in these subjects—but just about that. Or rather, it was *algebra* which formed the bugbear. Geometry was not so bad. But the whole thing disappointed me bitterly, for I was then intending to pursue *astronomy* as a career, and of course advanced astronomy is simply a mass of mathematics. That was the first major set-back I ever received—the first time I was ever brought up short against a consciousness of my own limitations. It was clear to me that I hadn't brains enough to be an astronomer—and that was a pill I couldn't swallow with equanimity.[7]

Again, Lovecraft does not connect this with his breakdown of 1908, but I think the implication of a connexion is strong. I repeat that this is a conjecture, but until further evidence is forthcoming, it may be the best we have.

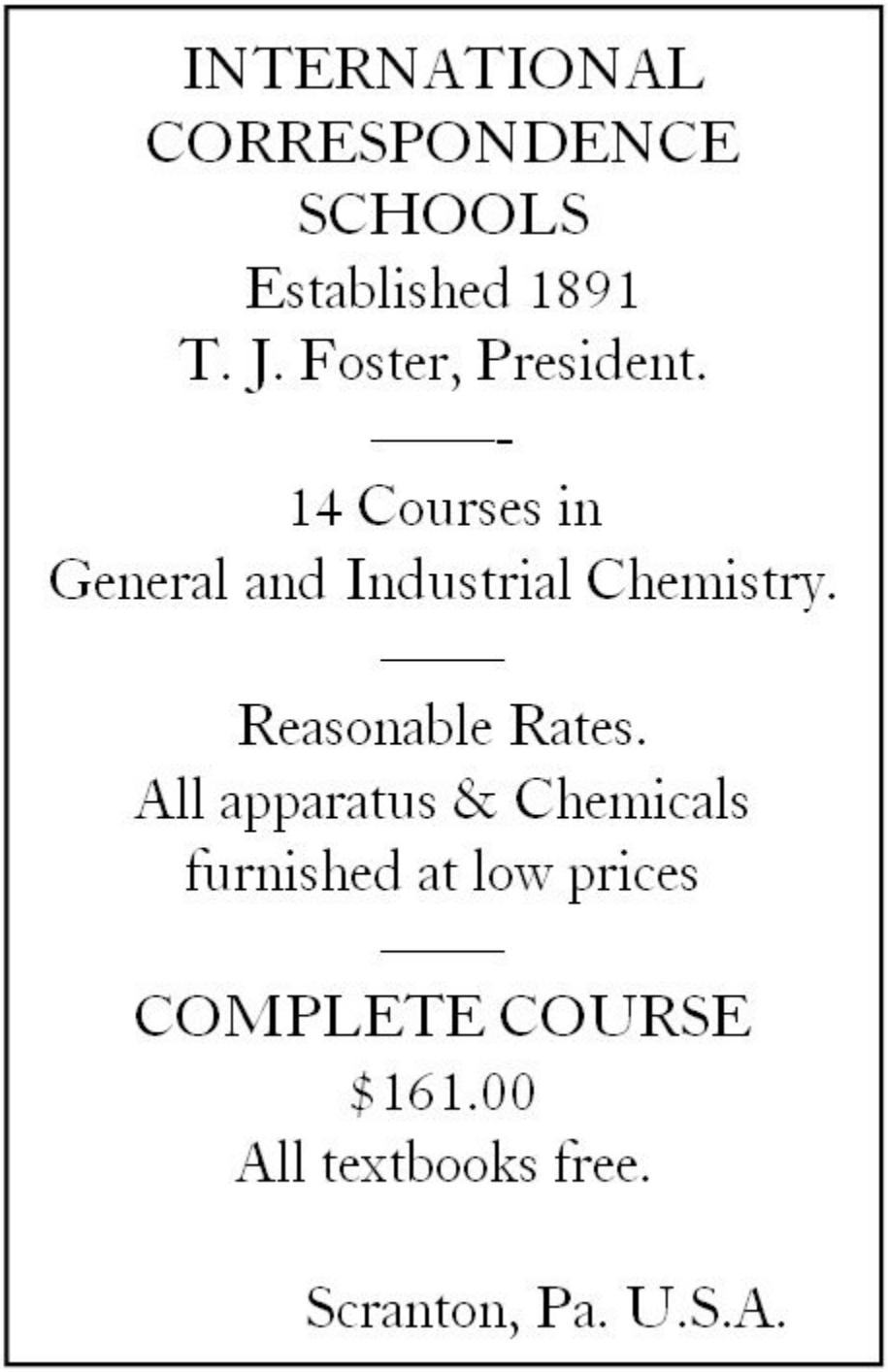
One more small piece of evidence comes from Lovecraft's wife, who reports that Lovecraft told her that his sexual instincts were at their greatest at the age of nineteen.[8] It is conceivable that sex frustration—for I do not imagine Lovecraft actually acted upon his urges at this time—may have been a contributory cause of his breakdown; but for one whose sexuality

was, in general, so sluggish as Lovecraft's, I am not convinced that this was a significant factor.

Lovecraft provides a stark picture of what this breakdown meant in terms of his psychological outlook:

> Many times in my youth I was so exhausted by the sheer burden of consciousness & mental & physical activity that I had to drop out of school for a greater or lesser period & take a complete rest free from all responsibilities; & when I was 18 I suffered such a breakdown that I had to forego college. In those days I could hardly bear to see or speak to anyone, & liked to shut out the world by pulling down dark shades & using artificial light.[9]

As a result, the period 1908–13 is a virtual blank in the life of H. P. Lovecraft. It is the only time in his life when we do not have a significant amount of information on what he was doing from day to day, who his friends and associates were, and what he was writing. It is also the only time of his life when the term "eccentric recluse"—which many have used with careless ignorance in reference to his entire life—can rightly be applied to him. Accordingly, we know the merest scraps of his life and activities, mostly from random remarks made in letters years later.



Lovecraft doggedly attempted to maintain his scientific interests, although it seems a little pathetic that he revived his juvenile periodicals, the *Scientific Gazette* and the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy,* in early 1909, the latter after two years', the former after four years' hiatus (not

counting the apparently brief revival by Arthur Fredlund). The sole issue of the *Gazette* for this period (January 1909) has an interesting ad:
This is no doubt the correspondence course Lovecraft admits to taking "for a time."[10] There is no indication of how long he took the course. As to where he learned of this organisation, I shall have more to say presently. That Lovecraft's mother was willing to pay out $161 for such a thing suggests that she was still allowing him the freedom to pursue his interests; perhaps she thought this course might lead to a job, although that likelihood was surely remote. Once again, however, it was the more technical or tedious parts of the science that caused him difficulty:

> Between 1909 & 1912 I tried to perfect myself as a chemist, conquering inorganic chemistry & qualitative analysis with ease, since they had been favourite pastimes of my youth. But in the midst of *organic* chemistry, with its frightfully dull theoretical problems, & involved cases of isomerism of hydrocarbon radicals—the benzene ring—&c., &c., &c.—I found myself so wretched bored that I positively could not study for more than fifteen minutes without acquiring an excruciating headache which prostrated me completely for the rest of the day.[11]

One significant work did come out of this, however: *A Brief Course in Inorganic Chemistry,* written in 1910 and deemed by Lovecraft a "bulky manuscript."[12] This work, so far as I know, does not survive, and we know nothing of its contents.

The two issues of the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* (January and February 1909) are not especially revealing. Incredibly, Lovecraft picks up the serialisation of "The Moon," suspended after the April 1907 issue—as if readers had been avidly awaiting its continuation! The second issue is rather sad: the first page presents four news articles, but the second page never got beyond the writing of the masthead; the rest of the page is blank aside from two vertical lines to separate the columns. Perhaps Lovecraft realised the absurdity of maintaining what was really a boy's undertaking: he was eighteen and a half years old by this time.

Lovecraft did attempt a more ambitious astronomical project, but it was not designed for publication. This is an astronomical notebook, once in the possession of David H. Keller and later in the Grill-Binkin collection of Lovecraftiana. The notebook bears the title "Astronomical Observations Made by H. P. Lovecraft, 598 Angell St., Providence, R.I., U.S.A., Years

1909 / 1910 / 1911 / 1912 / 1913 / 1914 / 1915."[13] Keller[14] reports that the book contains at least 100 pages of writing; page 99 has the following:

Principal Astronomical Work

1. To keep track of all celestial phenomena month by month, as positions of planets, phases of the moon, Sign of Sun, occultations, Meteor Showers, unusual phenomena (record) also new discoveries.
2. To keep up a working knowledge of the constellations and their seasons.
3. To observe all planets, etc. with a large telescope when they are favourably situated (at 7 h 30" in winter, abt. 9 h in summer, supplemented by morning observations)
4. To observe opera or field glass objects among the stars with a low power instruments, recording results.
5. To keep a careful record of each night's work.
6. To contribute a monthly astronomical article of about 7p. Ms. or 4p. Type to the Providence Evening News[15] (begun Jan. 1, 1914.)

This sounds like an impressive agenda, but Lovecraft did not maintain it consistently; in fact, Keller reports that for the years 1911 and 1913 there are no observations at all. Otherwise what we have are things like an eclipse of the moon on June 3, 1909, a "lengthy description" of Halley's Comet on May 26, 1910, a partial eclipse of the moon on March 11–12, 1914, and a long discussion of Delavan's Comet on September 16–17, 1914. I have not been able to consult this document myself and am reliant on Keller's account of it; but it does not seem to offer much evidence that Lovecraft was doing anything either to relieve his reclusiveness or to find a useful position in the outside world. It is, once again, a sort of retreat into his young adulthood.

Later in life Lovecraft knew that, in spite of his lack of university education, he should have received training in some sort of clerical or other white-collar position that would at least have allowed him to secure employment rather than moping about at home:

> I made the mistake in youth of not realising that literary endeavour does not always mean an income. I ought to have trained myself for some routine clerical work (like Charles Lamb's or Hawthorne's) affording a dependable stipend yet leaving my mind free enough for a certain amount of creative

> activity—but in the absence of immediate need I was too damned a fool to look ahead. I seemed to think that sufficient money for ordinary needs was something which everyone had as a matter of course—and if I ran short, I "could always sell a story or poem or something". Well—my calculations were inaccurate![16]

And so Lovecraft condemned himself to a life of ever-increasing poverty.

What was his mother doing in this entire situation? It is a little hard to say. Recall her own medical record at Butler Hospital (now destroyed) as paraphrased by Winfield Townley Scott: "a woman of narrow interests who received, with a traumatic psychosis, an awareness of approaching bankruptcy."[17] This assessment was made in 1919, but the condition must have been developing for years, at the very least since the death of Susie's own father, Whipple Phillips. Although she had high praise for her son ("a poet of the highest order"), Scott rightly conjectures: "However she adored him, there may have been a subconscious criticism of Howard, so brilliant but so economically useless." No doubt her disappointment with her son's inability to finish high school, go to college, and support himself did not help this situation any.

Lovecraft, in speaking of the steady economic decline of the family, notes "several sharp jogs downward, as when an uncle lost a lot of dough for my mother and me in 1911."[18] Faig is almost certainly correct in identifying this uncle as Susie's brother Edwin E. Phillips.[19] Edwin had difficulty even maintaining his own economic position, as his chequered employment record indicates. We do not, of course, know how Edwin lost money for Susie and Howard, but one suspects that bad investments—which not only failed to yield interest but also dissolved the capital—might have been a factor.

The effect of all this on Susie, and on her view of her son, can only be conjectured. Lovecraft's wife, although she never knew Susie, makes a plausible claim that Susie "lavished both her love and her hate on her only child";[20] this comment may receive confirmation from the following disturbing anecdote related by Clara Hess, which I believe dates to around this time if not a little earlier:

> . . . when she [Susie] moved into the little downstairs flat in the house on Angell Street around the corner from Butler Avenue I met her often on the Butler Avenue cars, and one day after many

> urgent invitations I went in to call upon her. She was considered then to be getting rather odd. My call was pleasant enough but the house had a strange and shutup air and the atmosphere seemed weird and Mrs. Lovecraft talked continuously of her unfortunate son who was so hideous that he hid from everyone and did not like to walk upon the streets where people could gaze at him.
>
> When I protested that she was exaggerating and that he should not feel that way, she looked at me with a rather pitiful look as though I did not understand about it. I remember that I was glad to get out in the fresh air and sunshine and that I did not repeat my visit.[21]

This is one of the most notorious pieces of evidence regarding Lovecraft and his mother, and I see no reason why we should not accept it. The reference to "hideous" is presumably to his physical appearance, and this is why I want to date the anecdote to Lovecraft's late teens or early twenties: as a younger boy he is so normal-looking that no one—even a mother who was getting a little "odd"—could have deemed him hideous; but by the age of eighteen or twenty he had perhaps reached his full height of five feet eleven inches, and had probably developed that long, prognathous jaw which he himself in later years considered a physical defect. Harold W. Munro testifies that as early as his high school years Lovecraft was bothered by ingrown facial hairs; but when Munro speaks of "mean red cuts" on Lovecraft's face he evidently believes these to have been the product of a dull razor.[22] In fact, as Lovecraft attests, these cuts came from his using a needle and tweezers to pull out the ingrown hairs.[23] This recurring ailment—which did not subside until Lovecraft was well into his thirties—may also have had a negative effect on his perception of his appearance. As late as February 1921, only a few months before his mother's death, Lovecraft writes to his mother of a new suit that "made me appear as nearly respectable as my face permits."[24]

I am of course not trying to defend this remark by Lovecraft's mother—surely no mother ought ever to say such a thing about her son, no matter how ugly he in fact is—and it may also be that her comment has a somewhat broader implication. It is often conjectured that she was transferring to her son the hatred and disgust she felt at her husband after he was stricken with syphilis, and I think this is very likely. Susie, of course, is

not likely to have known the exact nature or causes of her husband's ailment—the doctors themselves did not—but she must have sensed that something relating to sex had afflicted him; and now that her own son was developing into an adult male with burgeoning sexual instincts, she may have suspected that he would turn out very much like her husband—especially if Lovecraft was at this time wearing his father's clothing. In any case, I do not think we have any grounds to deny that she made the "hideous" remark; Lovecraft himself once (and only once) admitted to his wife that his mother's attitude to him was (and this is his word) "devastating,"[25] and we need look no further for the reasons for that than this single comment.

Both Clara Hess and Harold W. Munro give evidence that Lovecraft did indeed avoid human contact in his post–high school period. Hess, when asked by August Derleth to elaborate upon her remarks, wrote: "Sometimes I would see Howard when walking up Angell Street, but he would not speak and would stare ahead with his coat collar turned up and chin down."[26] Munro states: "Very much an introvert, he darted about like a sleuth, hunched over, always with books or papers clutched under his arm, peering straight ahead recognizing nobody."[27]

We have the merest scraps of information as to what Lovecraft was actually doing during this entire period. One highly suggestive datum is his admission that he visited Moosup Valley, and specifically the Stephen Place house in Foster (birthplace of his mother and grandmother), in 1908.[28] This visit can scarcely have been purely recreational, since his previous trip, in 1896, is likely to have occurred after his grandmother's death. His mother accompanied him, as there is a photograph of her (probably taken by Lovecraft himself) standing in front of the house.[29] Once again it seems as if Lovecraft required some sort of renewal of ancestral ties to help him out of a difficult psychological trauma; but in this case the visit seems to have accomplished little.

The record for 1909 (aside from his astronomical observations and the correspondence courses) is entirely blank. For 1910 we know that he saw Halley's Comet, but probably not at Ladd Observatory. In 1918 he states: "I no more visit the Ladd Observatory or various other attractions of Brown University. Once I expected to utilise them as a regularly entered student, and some day perhaps control some of them as a faculty member. But

having known them with this 'inside' attitude, I am today unwilling to visit them as a casual outsider and non-university barbarian and alien."[30] This sense of alienation presumably began soon after his collapse in 1908, and he probably saw Halley's with his own telescope. He mentions that he missed seeing a bright comet earlier that year "by being flat in bed with a hellish case of measles!"[31] Elsewhere he states that he lost fifty-four pounds during this bout with the measles and nearly died.[32] The year 1910 was, however, the period of his most frequent attendance of stage plays, and he reports seeing many Shakespeare productions at the Providence Opera House.[33] He also visited Cambridge, Massachusetts—probably to see his aunt Annie Gamwell and his twelve-year-old cousin Phillips.[34] He also took a balloon ride in Brockton, Massachusetts—a city about equidistant between Providence and Boston.[35] These visits suggest that he was not at least a total hermit; indeed, perhaps Phillips Gamwell accompanied him on the balloon-ride. He celebrated his twenty-first birthday—August 20, 1911—by riding the electric trolley cars all day:

> Though in poor health, I attempted an all-day electric-car trip as a celebration—riding westward through the picturesque countryside of my maternal ancestors, eating lunch at Putnam, Conn., going north to Webster, Mass., (near which my first actual *memories* begin), then turning northeast to Worcester, keeping on to Boston, & finally returning home at night after a virtually record-breaking circuit.[36]

Perhaps this too was a sort of reversion to his childhood: no doubt he recalled his ride of 1900 or 1901, which led to the writing of his amusing "Attempted Journey" poem.

Also in 1911 (probably toward the end of the year) he saw President Willam Howard Taft on a campaign stop in Providence.[37] In later years he expressed great admiration for Theodore Roosevelt, and one would imagine that he would have voted for (or at least supported) Roosevelt, who had had a falling out with his protégé Taft and ran furiously against him on the Bull Moose ticket from the fall of 1911 onward. Although Lovecraft admits to seeing Roosevelt at the Providence Opera House in August 1912,[38] just two or three months before the election, he makes a startling revelation late in life: "As for Woodrow Wilson—he is a hard bird to analyse. I was for him in 1912 because I thought he represented a civilised form of

government as distinguished from the frankly thieving plutocracy of the Taft die-hards and from the blindly rebellious Bull Moosers. His vacillating policy toward Mexico, however, alienated me almost at once."[39] Lovecraft thereby ended up on the winning side of the 1912 election: since Taft and Roosevelt split the Republican vote, the Democrat Wilson captured the presidency. The reference to Mexico relates to the Mexican Civil War, which would embroil the United States into Mexican politics sporadically for the next three years. It is unclear from the above remark whether Lovecraft actually voted in the 1912 election, as he was eligible to do.

On August 12, 1912, Lovecraft made his one and only will. I shall have more to say about this document at a later time, but in its essentials it spells out what is to be done with his estate and effects upon his death: they will go to his mother, Sarah S. Lovecraft or, in the case of her predeceasing him, to his aunts Lillie D. Clark (two-thirds) and Annie E. Gamwell (one-third) or, if they predecease him, to their descendants. The witnesses to the will were Addison P. Munroe (father of Harold and Chester), Chester P. Munroe, and Albert A. Baker, Lovecraft's lawyer who, up to his majority, had been his guardian.

This brings up the issue of Lovecraft's continued association with his friends. The evidence is a little ambiguous. No doubt Lovecraft felt a certain sense of failure and defeat as he saw his high school friends marry, find jobs, and in general take on the responsibilities of adult life. Harold Munroe married, moved to East Providence, and became deputy sheriff.[40] Chester Munroe, as we shall see presently, went to North Carolina. Stuart Coleman at some point joined the army, rising at least to the rank of Major. Ronald Upham became a salesman.[41] One schoolmate whose compositions Lovecraft used to correct later published at least one article in the *New York Tribune*.[42] All this led him to state in 1916: "Of my non-university education, I never cease to be ashamed; but I know, at least, that I could not have done differently. I busied myself at home with chemistry, literature, & the like . . . I shunned all human society, deeming myself too much of a failure in life to be seen socially by those who had known me in youth, & had foolishly expected such great things of me."[43]

But consider this remarkable testimony from Addison P. Munroe, whom Winfield Townley Scott interviewed:

> He lived but a few houses distant from our own home and was quite frequently over here with our sons. I remember that

> we had a room fixed up in our basement for the boys to use as a club room, which was a popular place with Howard. The club, so called, consisted of about a half-dozen of the neighborhood boys, around twenty years of age, and when they had a so-called "banquet," improvised and usually self-cooked, Howard was always the speaker of the evening and my boys always said he delivered addresses that were gems.[44]

This appears to be East Side Historical Club, still meeting even after the boys had graduated from high school. If Munroe is right about the boys' age, then these sessions would have occurred exactly at the time (1910) when Lovecraft was maintaining that he "shunned all human society," in particular his friends. Harold W. Munro (who was presumably not a member of the club) remarks that "After Hope Street days I never talked with Howard, but saw him several times";[45] but Munro does not appear to have been one of Lovecraft's close friends. In any event, there seems no reason to doubt that Addison P. Munroe was right about both the nature and the date of these meetings. He continues:

> Occasionally I would have an opportunity to talk with him and he always surprised me with the maturity and logic of his talk. I remember one time in particular, when I was a member of the R.I. Senate, 1911–1914, we had several important measures before that body; Howard, being over here one evening, started to discuss some of these measures, and I was astounded by the knowledge he displayed in regard to measures that ordinarily would be of no interest to a young fellow of twenty. In fact he knew more about them than 75 per cent of the Senators who would finally vote on them.[46]

Munroe is not likely to be mistaken about his own term of office in the Rhode Island Senate, so I am confident that his recollections here are accurate. Lovecraft's knowledge of Rhode Island politics no doubt derived, in part, from the fact that—probably at this time—he read the entire run of the *Providence Gazette and Country-Journal* (1762–1825) at the Providence Public Library.[47] No doubt he also read the *Providence Journal* (or, more likely, the *Evening Bulletin,* the paper to which he subscribed in later years) regularly.

That Lovecraft did not sever all ties with at least one of the Munroes is made clear by the existence of two curious if lacklustre poems, "Verses

Designed to Be Sent by a Friend of the Author to His Brother-in-Law on New-Year's Day" and "To Mr. Munroe, on His Instructive and Entertaining Account of Switzerland." The first poem is undated, but probably dates to around 1914; the manuscript of the second is dated 1 January 1914. The "friend of the author" in the first poem is a Munroe, but I do not know which one. Lovecraft elsewhere states ("Introducing Mr. Chester Pierce Munroe") that the treatise on Switzerland was written by Chester, although he does not state its purpose; perhaps it was part of some college course. One couplet unintentionally betrays Lovecraft's hermitry during this period: "Th' untravell'd student, close within his doors, / The lofty peak and crystal lake explores." Lovecraft—who would not set foot outside of the three states of Rhode Island, Massachusetts, and Connecticut until 1921,[48] who would not sleep under a roof other than his own between 1901 and 1920,[49] and who (largely for economic reasons) never left the North American continent—must have found the idea of visiting Switzerland as fantastic as visiting Antarctica.

Lovecraft gives a picture of his literary production during this "empty" period:

> Chemical writing—plus a little historical and antiquarian research—filled my years of feebleness till about 1911, when I had a reaction toward literature. I then gave my prose style the greatest overhauling it has ever had; purging it at once of some vile journalese and some absurd Johnsonianism. Little by little I felt that I was forging the instrument I ought to have forged a decade ago—a decent style capable of expressing what I wished to say. But I still wrote verse and persisted in the delusion that I was a poet.[50]

The curious thing about this is that we have very few examples of his expository prose between "The Alchemist" (1908)—or the last astronomy column for the Providence *Tribune,* "Solar Eclipse Feature of June Heavens" (June 1, 1908), whichever was later—and the beginning of his astronomy column for the *Providence Evening News* on January 1, 1914. There is a curious letter to the editor of the *Providence Sunday Journal* for August 3, 1913, complaining of the inadequate seating for band concerts at Roger Williams Park (the letter suggests that Lovecraft was a frequent attendant of these concerts) and recommending, a trifle implausibly, that the

city build a huge auditorium resembling the Dionysiac Theatre in Athens. And there are a few other letters that I shall mention presently.

What we do have are a series of poems presumably written "about 1911" or sometime thereafter. Few of these are at all distinguished, but one is of consuming biographical interest: "The Members of the Men's Club of the First Universalist Church of Providence, R.I., to Its President, About to Leave for Florida on Account of His Health."

There is no clear way of dating this poem, and it may have been written as early as 1910 or as late as 1914; but what is remarkable about it is its mere existence, indicating that Lovecraft was a member of this men's club. The First Universalist Society had been established in Providence since 1821, and had initially set up a chapel at Westminster and Union Streets in what is now downtown Providence. A new church was built in 1872 at the corner of Greene and Washington Streets[51] (at the western end of downtown Providence, near the Providence Public Library), and this must have been where Lovecraft went when he participated in the men's club. I can only sense the hand of Lovecraft's mother in this entire enterprise: having failed on at least two occasions to inculcate standard Sunday school training in him as a boy, she perhaps felt that a less rigidly doctrinal church would be more to his liking. Actually, in all likelihood it was a means of preventing Lovecraft from becoming wholly withdrawn from society—in effect, a way of getting him out of the house every now and then. The poem sings the praises of the unnamed founder and president of the club:

> The club's foundations by your hands were laid;
> Beneath your rule its guiding laws were made;
> Your efforts caus'd the social band to gain
> The pow'r at once to teach and entertain.
> With careful thought, its policy you fix'd,
> The grave and gay in just proportion mix'd;
> Nor let its frequent meetings know a dearth
> Of lofty learning, or diverting mirth.

This does not tell us very precisely what this club's purpose and functions were, but those are things we are not likely ever to know.

The other poems written around this time similarly concern themselves with local affairs, and unfortunately their one clear thematic link is racism. "Providence in 2000 A.D." is Lovecraft's first published poem, appearing in the *Evening Bulletin* for March 4, 1912. It is actually quite funny, although

much of the humour would not be very well received today. The parenthetical prose paragraph that prefaces the poem—"(It is announced in the *Providence Journal* that the Italians desire to alter the name of Atwell's Avenue to 'Columbus Avenue')"—tells the whole story: Lovecraft ridicules the idea that the Italians of the Federal Hill area have any right to change the Yankee-bestowed name of the principal thoroughfare of their own district. (The street was not in fact renamed.) The satire is quite devastating, telling of an Englishman who, in the year 2000, returns to Rhode Island, the land of his forbears, and finds everything foreignised. He disembarks at the port in Narragansett Bay: "I left the ship, and with astonish'd eyes / Survey'd a city fill'd with foreign cries." He finds that Fox Point has been changed by the Portuguese to Sao Miguel's Cape; that the Irish have changed South Main Street to O'Murphy's Avenue; that the Jews have changed Market Square to Goldstein's Court and Turk's Head to Finklestein's Cross-ways. Finally he reaches the Italian district:

> I next climb'd on a car northwestward bound,
> And soon 'mid swarthy men myself I found
> On La Collina Federale's brow,
> Near Il Passagio di Colombo.

He finds that the entire town of Pawtucket has been renamed New Dublin Town, and Woonsocket has become Nouvelle Paris. In Olneyville he has the following experience: "In what was once called 'Olneyville' I saw / A street sign painted: "Wsjzxypq$?&%$ ladislaw." Fleeing in horror back to the wharf, he finds a "shrivell'd form" who declares himself a "monstrous prodigy": "Last of my kind, a lone unhappy man, / My name is Smith! I'm an American!" The fact that the *Evening Bulletin* published this thing must have meant that others aside from Lovecraft found it funny. At least he does not discriminate against anyone in this poem: *all* the ethnic minorities of Providence—Italians, Portuguese, Jews, Poles, Irish, French-Canadians—are skewered.

Other poems of this period are much nastier, but were fortunately not published at the time. "New-England Fallen" (April 1912) is a wretched 152-line spasm headed predictably with an epigraph from Juvenal's third satire (on the mongrelisation of Rome) and speaking of some mythical time when hard-working, pious Anglo-Saxon yeomen established the dominant culture of New England—

> Oft to the village drove good Farmer John,

To stock his larder, and supply his barn.
'Mid shady streets he sought the village store,
And hail'd the rustics cluster'd 'round the door.

—only to have "foreign boors" infiltrate the society and corrupt it from within:

The village rings with ribald foreign cries;
Around the wine-shops loaf with bleary eyes
A vicious crew, that mock the name of "man",
Yet dare to call themselves "American".

This is surely close to the nadir of Lovecraft's poetic output—not only for the ignorant racism involved, but for its array of trite, hackneyed imagery and nauseating sentimentality in depicting the blissful life of the stolid yeoman farmer. Perhaps only the notorious "On the Creation of Niggers" (1912) exceeds this specimen in vileness. This is the entire poem:

When, long ago, the Gods created Earth,
In Jove's fair image Man was shap'd at birth.
The beasts for lesser parts were next design'd;
Yet were they too remote from humankind.
To fill this gap, and join the rest to man,
Th' Olympian host conceiv'd a clever plan.
A beast they wrought, in semi-human figure,
Fill'd it with vice, and call'd the thing a NIGGER.

The only thing that can be said for this is that it at least does not, like "De Triumpho Naturae" or "New-England Fallen," hypocritically convey its racism by appealing to the Christian imagery in which Lovecraft did not believe. No publication has been found for this poem, and one can only hope there is none. The text survives, however, in a hectographed copy, which suggests that Lovecraft may at least have passed this poem around to friends or family; it is likely that they approved—or at least did not object—to his sentiments.

"On a New-England Village Seen by Moonlight" is dated to September 7, 1913, on the manuscript; it was not published until 1915. Its introductory paragraph is all one needs to read: "(The peaceful old villages of New England are fast losing their original Yankee inhabitants and their agricultural atmosphere, being now the seats of manufacturing industries peopled by Southern European and Western Asiatic immigrants of low grade.)" This poem, in eight quatrains, returns to the theme of "New-

England Fallen" but lays somewhat more emphasis on the loss of agriculture and its ways of life and the dominance of machinery than on the incursion of foreigners, although to Lovecraft the two phenomena worked together.

A somewhat more innocuous poem is "Quinsnicket Park," which Lovecraft dates to 1913.[52] Quinsnicket Park (now called Lincoln Woods Park) is situated four miles north of Providence and was one of Lovecraft's favourite sylvan retreats; throughout his life he would walk there and read or write in the open air. His 117-line paean to this rustic haven is trite, wooden, and mechanical, but contains at least this interesting passage:

> In yonder reedy pool we half expect
> Some timid Nymph or Satyr to detect:
> Our raptur'd eyes for fleeing Naiads scan,
> And ears are strain'd to hear the pipes of Pan.

One thinks of Lovecraft's mystical vision of "the hoofed Pan and the sisters of the Hesperian Phaëthusa" at the age of seven, although that is more likely to have occurred at Blackstone Park on the banks of the Seekonk rather than in Quinsnicket.

We do not know much else about Lovecraft's specific activities during these years. It is likely that he sequestered himself in his study and read enormous quantities of books, whether it be science or belles lettres; it was probably at this time that he laid the foundations for that later erudition in so many fields which astounded his colleagues. No doubt he continued to read weird fiction also. He states in 1925 that he read Conan Doyle's *The Lost World* "fifteen or more years ago,"[53] but actually he could not have read it any earlier than 1912, when it was published; and he probably did read it on that occasion.

One specific type of fiction we know he read in great quantities was the early pulp magazines. In the only extant issue of the *Rhode Island Journal of Science & Astronomy* (September 27, 1903) makes reference to an article by E. G. Dodge entitled "Can Men Visit the Moon?" in the October issue of *Munsey's Magazine,* which if nothing else indicates that Lovecraft was reading the journal at least as early as this. It is a point of debate whether the various magazines founded by Frank A. Munsey are or are not pulps; for our purposes it will suffice to say that they were significant forerunners of the pulp magazines and form a natural chain of continuity in popular

magazine fiction from the dime and nickel novels of the later nineteenth century to the genuine pulps of the 1920s. As avid a dime novel reader as Lovecraft appears to have been, it is in no way surprising that he would ultimately find the Munsey magazines a compelling if guilty pleasure. What he did not know at the time was that they would radically transform his life and his career—largely, but not uniformly, for the better.

There is no evidence of how long Lovecraft had read *Munsey's* prior to the October 1903 issue (which, as with most popular magazines, was on the stands well before the cover date), nor how long he continued to read it. But there is no gainsaying the following letter to the *All-Story Weekly* for March 7, 1914:

> Having read every number of your magazine since its beginning in January, 1905, I feel in some measure privileged to write a few words of approbation and criticism concerning its contents.
>
> In the present age of vulgar taste and sordid realism it is a relief to peruse a publication such as *The All-Story,* which has ever been and still remains under the influence of the imaginative school of Poe and Verne.

Elsewhere Lovecraft stated that that first issue, January 1905, was available on the newsstands as early as November 1904.[54] The *All-Story* was a companion magazine to the *Argosy,* which Munsey had changed to an all-fiction magazine in October 1896.[55] It went through many permutations of title, changing to a weekly on March 7, 1914, and then combining with the *Cavalier* (which had commenced in October 1908) to become the *All-Story Cavalier Weekly* on May 16, 1914. Lovecraft of course read the *Argosy* also, as we shall presently see, although it is difficult to know how early he began reading it. Lovecraft in 1916 admitted a little sheepishly that "In 1913 I had formed the reprehensible habit of picking up cheap magazines like *The Argosy* to divert my mind from the tedium of reality,"[56] but it is now evident that this is, at the very least, an equivocation as far as the *All-Story* is concerned. It is quite conceivable that Lovecraft read the *Argosy* from as early as 1905 or even before, but at the moment this will have to remain a conjecture. One further bit of evidence is the fact that full-page advertisements for the International Correspondence Schools of Scranton, Pennsylvania, regularly appear in the *Argosy,* and it is very likely from this source that Lovecraft learned of this organisation and used its services

around 1909. In 1935 he reports reading the *Popular Magazine* (Street & Smith's rival to the *Argosy*) "25 or 30 years ago,"[57] hence about the period 1905–10; but it is not clear how long or how regularly he read this periodical, which on the whole did not feature as much weird material as the Munseys.

One other interesting—indeed, almost alarming—fact is that Lovecraft read the entire run of the *Railroad Man's Magazine* (1906–19),[58] a staggering quantity of fiction and articles about railroads. This was the first specialised Munsey pulp, and the image of Lovecraft reading 150 monthly issues of this magazine is somewhat unnerving. Perhaps the very fact that he had to give up his "New Anvik" at the age of seventeen compelled him to satisfy his enthusiasm for railroads through print.

What was the fascination of these magazines for Lovecraft? The letter quoted above supplies a part of the answer: they contained a significant amount of horror, fantasy, mystery, and science fiction, material that was already ceasing to appear in the standard "slick" or literary magazines of the day. As Lovecraft noted in 1932: "In general . . . the Munsey publications did more to publish weird fiction than any other magazine enterprise of the early 20th century."[59] Elsewhere he remarks that he "first began to notice"[60] the *Black Cat* (1895–1922) around 1904, and that that magazine and the *All-Story* "were the first source of *contemporary* weird material I ever stumbled on."[61] To one who had nurtured himself on Poe, W. Clark Russell, and other nineteenth-century authors, the notion that weird fiction was being written in his own day must have been both stimulating and, perhaps, inspiring.

And yet, I have refrained from mentioning Lovecraft's prodigious reading of the Munsey pulps until now because, unlike the dime and nickel novels, they do not appear to have influenced the two surviving tales of the 1903–08 period, "The Beast in the Cave" and "The Alchemist." The influence of Poe, the Gothics, and the Augustan essayists (in prose style) seems dominant there, a somewhat anomalous fact given Lovecraft's obvious enthusiasm for the Munseys. In any event, we now know another thing Lovecraft continued to do during his "blank" period of 1908–13: he may have had a nervous breakdown, but he never missed an issue of the *All-Story.*

Lovecraft's first published letter to the Munsey magazines—discovered only recently—appeared in the *Argosy* for November 1911.[62] The letter-

column of the *Argosy*—entitled "The Log-Book"—had only been established in the February 1911 issue, and letters were initially slow to come in; but by the end of the year many letters (identified only by the initials of the writer and his or her city of residence) were being published, with running commentary by the editor. In the November 1911 issue the editor announces: "And now comes H. P. L., of Providence, Rhode Island," and goes on to quote some actual portions of Lovecraft's letter: his favourite writer is Albert Payson Terhune (at this time an author of historical novels and tales, not yet the creator of Lassie); he disapproves of the slang in some stories, and prefers tales set in the past or in some other exciting locale rather than those set in the present. All this is entirely typical of Lovecraft, although his lack of critical acumen in praising Terhune, who was no better than a competent hack writer, is painfully evident. An undated poetic paean to Terhune—"To Mr. Terhune, on His Historical Fiction"—may date to this time. It is, in fact, in the form of a letter to the editor of the *Argosy,* although perhaps it was not actually submitted to the magazine; in any event, it did not appear there.

Lovecraft's next letter, appearing in the February 8, 1913, issue of the *All-Story Cavalier,* is a comment on Irvin S. Cobb's magnificent tale of a half-man, half-fish hybrid, "Fishhead," of which Lovecraft says: "It is the belief of the writer that very few short stories of equal merit have been published anywhere during recent years." I believe that this powerful tale lodged in Lovecraft's mind and would form a significant influence on one of his major stories, as I shall have occasion to note later.

In the fall of that year Lovecraft's letter-writing campaign shifts back to the *Argosy;* but at the moment I wish to return to the letter of 1914 that I have already quoted, a letter of close to 2000 words, taking up nearly two full printed pages. It is a sort of grand summation of everything he liked in the magazine and an encapsulation of what he thought it stood for. Scorning the plea of one G. W. F. of Dundee, Scotland, for more "probable" stories, Lovecraft declaims:

> If, in fact, man is unable to create living beings out of inorganic matter, to hypnotise beasts of the forest to do his will, to swing from tree to tree with the apes of the African jungle, to restore to life the mummified corpses of the Pharaohs and the Incas, or to explore the atmosphere of Venus and the deserts of Mars, permit us, at least, in fancy, to witness these miracles, and

> to satisfy that craving for the unknown, the weird, and the impossible which exists in every active human brain.

That last statement is certainly a little sanguine: if everyone had a craving for the unknown, then weird fiction would not be as unrecognised a literary mode as it is. But the catalogue presented above is not only a series of synopses of some of the celebrated tales published in the *All-Story* but, in several instances, a selection of plot-elements that Lovecraft himself would use in his own later work (and, for all we know, had already used in the destroyed tales of 1903–08).

There follow paeans to many of the *All-Story*'s most popular writers. Who is first to be named? "At or near the head of your list of writers Edgar Rice Burroughs undoubtedly stands." Lovecraft goes on to single out *Tarzan of the Apes* (October 1912), *The Gods of Mars* (January–May 1913), and *Warlord of Mars* (December 1913–March 1914), although it is typical that while praising these stories he takes care to point out astronomical and other factual errors in the works. Later in life Lovecraft seemed embarrassed at his juvenile (or not so juvenile: he was twenty-three when he wrote this letter) fondness for Burroughs, and he sought to distance himself from the creator of Tarzan. In 1929, when urging a correspondent not to yield to the temptations of the market and write hackwork, he lumps Burroughs with Edgar A. Guest and Harold Bell Wright as examples of the fact that "the veriest idiot and ignoramus can sometimes bring down fame on a luck-shot."[63] Not long thereafter, in saying that "I shall sooner or later get around to the interplanetary field myself," he adds explicitly: "you may depend upon it that I shall not choose Edmond Hamilton, Ray Cummings, or Edgar Rice Burroughs as my model!"[64] This gives no indication of how much he had enjoyed the John Carter Martian novels fifteen years before.

In his letter Lovecraft goes on to praise many other writers, few of whom are of any note—William Patterson White, Lee Robinet, William Tillinghast Eldridge, William Loren Curtiss, Donald Francis McGrew, and others. A later letter (published in the *All-Story Cavalier Weekly* for August 15, 1914) praises George Allan England, Albert Payson Terhune, and Zane Grey. What is remarkable is that most of these writers did not even write weird fiction: Zane Grey, of course, was the legendary Western writer; Terhune, as just noted, became famous for dog stories; McGrew was an adventure writer whose "red-blooded" stories met with Lovecraft's thunderous approval; and Lovecraft even liked the many humorous tales in

the magazine. This means that Lovecraft read each issue—sometimes 192 pages, sometimes 240 pages—from cover to cover, month after month or even (when it changed to a weekly) week after week. This is an appalling amount of popular fiction for anyone to read, and in fact it contravened the purpose of the magazines, whereby each member of the family would read only those stories or those types of stories that were of interest to him or her.[65] One begins to develop the impression that Lovecraft was compulsive in whatever he did: his discovery of classical antiquity led him to write a paraphrase of the *Odyssey, Iliad,* and other works; his discovery of chemistry led him to launch a *daily* scientific paper; his discovery of astronomy led him to publish a weekly paper for years; and now his discovery of pulp fiction caused him to be a voracious reader of both the good and the bad, both the work that appealed to his special tastes and the work that did not.

It is possible that the *All-Story* published this long letter in its issue of March 7, 1914, because Lovecraft himself had become, after a fashion, a celebrity in the entire Munsey chain. This had come about in a very odd way. Lovecraft, reading everything the *Argosy* put in front of him, found some material less appealing to his fastidious taste than others. Consider a comment in his long letter:

> "The Souls of Men," by Martha M. Stanley, was a distinctly disagreeable tale, but "Pilgrims in Love," by De Lysle Ferrée Cass, is contemptibly disgusting, unspeakably nauseating. Mr. G. W. S., of Chicago, has written that Cass "diplomatically handles a very difficult subject—Oriental love."
>
> We do not care for subjects so near allied to vulgarity, however "diplomatically" they may be "handled." Of such "Oriental love" we may speak in the words of the lazy but ingenious schoolboy, who when asked by his tutor to describe the reign of Caligula, replied, "that the less said about it, the better."

This gives some idea of the trend of Lovecraft's thinking at this time: rousing action plots by Edgar Rice Burroughs he did not consider "vulgar," but anything that suggested anything even remotely off-colour earned the puritanical Lovecraft's quick and vicious condemnation. I have not read the Cass story,[66] but it is quite possible that it did explore sexual situations somewhat more daringly than was customary in the standard literature of

the day; one gets the impression, however, that no such work, however artistic, would have met with Lovecraft's favour.

It is, then, no surprise that a very popular *Argosy* writer named Fred Jackson would be blasted by Lovecraft in the issue for September 1913. Jackson had become an *Argosy* staple, and two of his short novels had appeared complete in recent issues, "The First Law" in April 1913 and "The Third Act" in June 1913. This really was an unprecedented amount of space to give to a single author, and the subject-matter of these works was not of a kind to sit well with Lovecraft. "The First Law" is an unbelievably sappy, melodramatic, and verbose story of an opera singer; here is a sample:

> She struggled against him fiercely, her whole being outraged, but he was by far the stronger. He held her fast, and his lips touched her ear, her throat, her chin, and eyes, and at last crushed her mouth until she gasped for breath.
>
> Then he drew back and she lay passive in his arms, trembling, terrified at the madness that possessed her. It was as though he had awakened some sleeping demon—a creature unknown to her, a creature thirsty for his kisses, aching for his embrace.[67]

Jackson would probably have made a good Harlequin romance writer today.

What is frequently overlooked is that Lovecraft's tirade was not inspired merely by the unwonted dominance of Jackson in the pages of *Argosy* but by a letter purportedly attacking him in the July 1913 issue. This letter—by one F. V. Bennett of Hanover, Illinois—is, however, so illiterate that Lovecraft believed it to be a sort of self-parody designed indirectly to praise Jackson:

> do you know why I stoped taking *The Cavalier* It was Fred Jackson to mutch of him I should Say Now I have to Pay for THE ARGOSY when he takes up Nearly half of It . . . I shall not Subscribe for THE ARGOSY again If you Publish Jackson's Stories so often for I don't Read them any more Just Cant stand them and I see you are to Publish another Book Length Novel by Jackson in June supose you won't Like this Letter.

Lovecraft could well be excused for thinking as he did, especially since the editor added the wry note: "Oh, no, you are mistaken—I do like this letter."

Lovecraft's own letter in the September 1913 issue could hardly be taken as a self-parody. He begins by quoting Thomas Tickell's preface to

Addison's *Cato* ("Too long hath love engross'd Britannia's stage, / And sunk to softness all our tragic rage"), and goes on to express his opinion that Bennett's letter "is in reality a sly attempt at augmenting the fame of your contributor, Fred Jackson." He continues: "To the eye of a disinterested observer it appears as though an effort were being made forcibly to obtrude Mr. Jackson upon the reading public by an unexampled campaign of advertising, and by the selection for publication in the Log-Book of those letters wherein he receives the greatest amount of adulation." There is something to be said for this, too: "The Log-Book" of the previous several issues had been filled with praise for Jackson, many of them from men, curiously enough. Of course, Lovecraft overlooks the possibility that Jackson really was popular with *Argosy* readers; or, rather, overlooks the undoubted fact that most of the magazine's readers had very lax literary standards and were only interested in cheap entertainment. Lovecraft, indeed, does not claim that Jackson's novels "are wholly wanting in merit," noting a little dryly that "There is a numerous set of people whose chief literary delight is obtained in the following of imaginary nymphs and swains through the labyrinthine paths of amorous adventure"; but he strenuously objects to the dominance of such work in the *Argosy.* And it is a fact, maintains Lovecraft, that Jackson is simply a bad writer:

> Apart from the mere choice of subject, let me venture to describe the Jacksonine type of tale as trivial, effeminate, and, in places, coarse.
>
> . . .
>
> Into the breasts of his characters, and appearing to dominate them to the exclusion of reason, he places the delicate passions and emotions proper to negroes or anthropoid apes.
>
> His literary style is feeble, and often excessively familiar. He abounds in "split" infinitives, and occasionally falls into the use of outlandish words, as, for instance, "live-in-able," instead of "habitable."

The remark about "negroes or anthropoid apes" is only what one would expect from someone who the previous year had written "On the Creation of Niggers."

The response to this letter is not likely to have been predicted either by Lovecraft or by Matthew White, Jr, editor of the *Argosy.* The November 1913 issue contained several more letters on Jackson: one by the

redoubtable F. V. Bennett, just as illiterate as its predecessor and evidently unaware that Lovecraft had ranked him as a Jackson supporter ("H. P. Lovecraft Is Right he gets My Meaning give us a Rest from Jackson Stuff"); one, by "E. F. W. C." of Paris, Kentucky, attacking Bennett but not alluding to Lovecraft; and two others specifically supporting Jackson and attacking both Lovecraft and Bennett. One of these, by T. P. Crean of Syracuse, New York, claims: "I am still puzzling over H. P. Lovecraft's letter. I can understand how the brilliant F. V. Bennett cannot go Jackson's stories. But Mr. Lovecraft, from his letter, should be able to tell a good story when he reads one. I am personally of the opinion that this letter was merely to display to THE ARGOSY world his vocabulary . . ." This is a refrain that would frequently be rung in the entire controversy. The affair, however, might not have taken the peculiar turn it did had not the other letter, by John Russell of Tampa, Florida, been written *in verse.* This is a whimsical four-stanza piece which begins:

> Does Mr. Lovecraft think it wise
> With such long words to criticize
> An author whom we greatly prize?
> That's Freddie Jackson.

Lovecraft describes it as "a piece of tetrameter verse . . . which had in it so much native wit, that I resolved to answer it."[68] Sure enough, he responded in the January 1914 issue with a verse epistle of his own in what he fancied was the manner of Pope's *Dunciad.* In fact, it is a very clever poem, and reveals that penchant for stinging satire which would be one of the few virtues of his poetic output.

The manuscript of the poem is headed "Ad Criticos" ("To [my] critics") (with the subtitle "Liber Primus," probably added at a later date as Lovecraft continued to add to the cycle); in the published version it is titled "Lovecraft Comes Back: Ad Criticos." It opens thunderously:

> What vig'rous protests now assail my eyes?
> See Jackson's satellites in anger rise!
> His ardent readers, steep'd in tales of love,
> Sincere devotion to their leader prove;
> In brave defence of sickly gallantry,
> They damn the critic, and beleaguer me.

The pun on "ardent" is very good. Lovecraft praises Russell for his cleverness and wit, and then proceeds to take his other enemies to task. To

T. P. Crean he replies:

> In truth, my words are not beyond the reach
> Of him who understands the English speech;
> But Crean, I fear, by reading Jackson long,
> Hath lost the pow'r to read his mother tongue.

Lovecraft concludes the poem by comparing the present time to "Charles the Second's vulgar age," when "Gross Wycherley and Dryden soil'd the stage."

But before Lovecraft's verse letter was printed, he was ferociously assailed in the December 1913 issue. Some of the titles which the editor affixed to the letters give some idea of the outrage Lovecraft had provoked: "Challenge to Lovecraft" (G. E. Bonner, Springfield, Ohio); "Virginia *vs.* Providence" (Miss E. E. Blankenship, Richmond, Virginia); "Elmira *vs.* Providence" (Elizabeth E. Loop, Elmira, New York); "Bomb for Lovecraft" (F. W. Saunders, Coalgate, Oklahoma). Miss Blankenship wrote: "I think you are very ungenerous in your attitude, Mr. Lovecraft. Your words 'erratic [*sic*] fiction' I fail to acknowledge. Instead I find pages filled with innocence, sweetness, loveliness, and fascination." G. E. Bonner, praising Jackson's two recent novels, wrote: ". . . when a man gets weary of reading that kind of a story I think the trouble is with the man himself and not with the author." Elizabeth E. Loop found Lovecraft's polysyllables tiresome and confusing, concluding: "I am an admirer of Mr. Jackson's stories, but this letter of Mr. Lovecraft's filled me with a distaste for our friend from Providence."

Saunders' "Bomb for Lovecraft" was the longest attack, but it has little substance; and in the process he reveals his own ignorance. He maintains: "It seems to me that Mr. L. is inconsistent, in that he charges Fred Jackson with a number of faults, among them being the use of outlandish words. In this respect, I think Mr. L. is equally at fault, if it be a fault." Complaining, like Elizabeth Loop, of Lovecraft's long words, he states that he cannot find such words as "Josh-Billingsgate" and "Hanoverian" in his dictionary: "If any of the readers have a dictionary with these expressions, please tear the leaf out and send it to me so that I may 'study up' on 'em."

Two letters did take Lovecraft's side, however; they were each headed "Agrees with Lovecraft." One, by A. Missbaum of Paris, France, expressed sentiments very similar to Lovecraft's: ". . . I entirely agree . . . with H. P. Lovecraft . . . Yes, Fred Jackson is rotten. Give us less love stories (unless

they are live ones) and more scientific mystery tales." The other letter, by H. F. B. of Los Angeles, complains merely that Jackson is given too much space in the magazine while other "excellent first-class writers" are given short shrift.

In a "Liber Secundus" published in the February 1914 *Argosy* Lovecraft takes potshots at these new opponents. The tone of this poem is much sharper than that of its predecessor. Lovecraft was, of course, in a position of overwhelming intellectual superiority to most of his victims, and sometimes it seems as if he is shooting fish in a barrel; but the satire is nonetheless withering for all that. To F. W. Saunders and his dictionary-hunting, Lovecraft advises: "Too much upon your lexicon you lean, / For *proper names* in such are seldom seen." And as for the flocks of women who attacked him:

> Now fairer forms from out the ranks emerge;
> The Amazons in reckless fury charge.
> Good Madam Loop, like Crean of Syracuse,
> Protests unkindly 'gainst the words I use:
> Whoe'er this lady's firm esteem would seek,
> In monosyllables must ever speak.

He could hardly have passed up Miss Blankenship's error of "erratic" for "erotic":

> Exactitude the fair one hardly heeds,
> Since she "erratic" for "erotic" reads,
> But unimportant 'tis, for by my troth,
> Jackson's erratic and erotic both!

In this issue Lovecraft begins to gather both friends and enemies—mostly the latter. One of the staunchest of the former is no other than F. V. Bennett, who had unwittingly begun the controversy. Now becoming literate (or having his letter corrected of spelling mistakes and of erroneous or absent punctuation), he writes, "well, shake, H.P.L.," and claims that "we started the ball that called a halt to the rush of Jackson soft stuff." This remark is confirmed by a note by Bob Davis in the issue: "I can promise that you won't get too much Jackson in 1914 . . ." This does not mean, of course, that readers would get *no* Jackson: another short novel, "Ambushed" (a mystery story with a romance element), had already appeared in the October 1913 issue, and "Winged Feet" was published in February 1914; but after this there was nothing until "The Marriage

Auction" in January 1915. Thereafter, however, Jackson returns with a vengeance: "Red Robin" appeared in July 1915, "The Diamond Necklace" in October and November 1915, "Where's the Woman?" from October 6 to November 3, 1917, and "A Woman's Prey" in November 24, 1917; "Young Blood" appeared serially in *Munsey's* beginning in October 1917. In this sense it could hardly be said that Lovecraft and his supporters had helped to effect any sort of change in the *Argosy's* editorial policy; the fact is that, as various editor's notes make clear, Jackson finally ceased to appear in the Munsey magazines because he decided to take up the writing of plays, and in later years gained considerable success at this new career.

In a lengthy response in the February 1914 issue, headed "Replies to Lovecraft," T. P. Crean maintains that "I admire very much his use of the English language and his poetic ability" but goes on to say that

> He tells Mr. Russell, one of Mr. Jackson's defenders, that his (Russell's) poem was worthy of a better cause. In the same sense it strikes me that Mr. Lovecraft's extensive vocabulary and easily adapted rimes should be employed other than roasting an author, who, although he may have a few defects in a story, produces a tale that is interesting from start to finish, which is all that a reader of a fiction magazine can ask for.

Amusingly, he concludes with "Ta-ta, Lovey," unwittingly exhuming the derogatory nickname Lovecraft had endured at the Slater Avenue School.

In the March 1914 issue there is a curious interruption in the controversy. There are, of course, any number of letters attacking Lovecraft. Clifford D. Ennis of Buffalo, New York, makes a now familiar argument: "If Mr. Lovecraft wishes to display his vocabulary I wish, for the sake of Mr. Jackson's many admirers, he would exhibit it in praising, not criticizing." W. J. Thompson of Winnipeg, Canada, claims: "Unlike our friend, 'The Rhode Island Scholar and Critic' (H. P. Lovecraft), I did not expect to get five dollars' worth of reading for fifteen cents. Bring on Jackson as often as you can." H. M. Fisher of Atlanta makes a snide reference to "Mr. H. P. Lovecraft's 'bee-u-ti-ful' poem," adding:

> Mr. Lovecraft must feel better since he got rid of his "Mary had a little lamb" effort.
>
> However, if a man can be judged by the stories he writes, Mr. Jackson, to use the vernacular of the day, is "some" man. I consider him one of the best writers THE ARGOSY has on its

staff, and I feel certain that Mr. Lovecraft had better thank his stars that his disposition is expressed in letter form and not personally.

Congratulate Mr. Jackson for me, please, on his stories, from one who has possibly more books *on* his book-case than Mr. Lovecraft has perused in his career, although they may not be "high-brow" caliber.

But the principal item in "The Log-Book" is a long (prose) letter by Lovecraft entitled "Correction for Lovecraft." Here he cites two lines of his first verse epistle as printed in the *Argosy* for January 1914: "Think not, good rimester, that I sought to *shew* / In my last letter, merely what I *knew*." Lovecraft had, of course, written "know," but the copy editor, no doubt puzzled by Lovecraft's British usage, made the alteration in the belief that "shew" was pronounced "shoe." This brought down Lovecraft's wrath: ". . . three faults remain: (1) The rime is destroyed. (2) The sense of 'know' is changed from present to past, and (3) 'shew' remains unaltered and inharmonious with the general spelling of the verse." This letter brought a devastating response from John Russell in the May 1914 issue:

Lovecraft has dropped from rime to prose,
To shew that what he knew, he knows.
I say that really to my view
'Twas little that he ever knew.

In April 1914 Lovecraft was attacked from several different directions. Ira B. Forrest (Messick, Virginia) unwittingly made perhaps the most acute analysis of Lovecraft's position when he noted: "Possible [*sic*] Mr. Lovecraft is a grouchy old bachelor and dislikes sentiment in any form." E. P. Rahs also notes perspicaciously: "Be considerate and remember the magazine is not published for any one of us exclusively"; he concludes: "Give us more Jackson and less Lovecraft." Russell responded with a pungent verse:

Say! Lovecraft in his last epistle
Has jumped upon a Scottish thistle.
I hold no brief for Jackson
(His stories give me satisfaction).
He scoffed at everything romantic;
He talks about an am'rous pest
Well, take the Author's proven best.

Dickens and Fenny, Shakespeare, Scott,
You'll find the same in all the lot;
Where there's a tale, there's love, of course;
Sometimes it's better, sometimes worse.

Lovecraft no doubt violently objected to that last conception and would strive as far as possible to exemplify his disagreement with it in his own tales. F. W. Saunders also attempted to respond in verse, with a poem entitled "Ruat Caelum" ("Let the heavens shake"), written in heroic couplets clearly meant to mimic and parody Lovecraft's:

With humbled horn, and hide with fat well filled,
I waddle forth to meet this chieftain skilled
In martial notes. Then on doth pout [*sic*] my feet
To battleground, upon fair Angell Street.

This entire long poem is really rather clever, if at times a bit incoherent.

Something strange now happens: no more replies by Lovecraft are published in the *Argosy* until October 1914. There are two further books of Lovecraft's "Ad Criticos" in manuscript: did he not submit them for publication? or were they not accepted? The latter seems unlikely, since an editorial note at the end of "Correction for Lovecraft" declares: "You are always welcome in the Log-Book." Whatever the situation, Lovecraft's "Liber Tertius" first addresses Russell—

"Behold," he cries, "through classic pages move
The sweet delusions of idyllic love."
Russell, 'tis true. Give proper love its own,
But let us not be fed on love alone!

—and then Rahs, whose name he cannot resist punning:

But what shrill shoutings now offend my ear?
Methinks, some rough and raucous Rahs I hear.
No brutal force my new opponent lacks;
He bluntly yells, I should receive the axe!

He also takes note of Saunders's poem—"His verse is modell'd after Pope's (or mine)."

But when Lovecraft was writing this response, he did not know that the April 14, 1914, issue of the *All-Story Weekly* would contain a bombshell from an S. P. N. (Kennett Square, Pennsylvania) who blasted Lovecraft's own long letter in the March 7 issue.

> I have become acquainted with that gentleman before. He seems to be a born knocker and an egoist of the worst type. His vanity is awful. His assumed eloquence and literary powers are disgusting.
>
> This is the first time I have seen him in the *All-Story* and I don't wish to see him again.

This goes on for half a column ("Wait till he starts firing some of his rotten poetry at you. Oh, my!"). Lovecraft does not seem ever to have made a public response to this bit of venom.

By summer the controversy is beginning to die down. An editorial note in the May 1914 issue declares that "The same old warfare over Jackson is going on, in prose and verse," and this issue does indeed contain (aside from Russell's verse, already cited) a number of other poems attacking Lovecraft. J. C. Cummings of Chicago writes in blundering verse:

> I think, indeed, he has no sense
> When he has no *love* for Jackson,
> For, unlike the bard of Providence,
> His *craft* brings satisfaction.

Here is Richard Forster of Rothwell, Wyoming:

> I think, indeed, it would be best
> To let poor Jackson have a rest,
> And Lovecraft try his bitter spite
> On some other poor luckless wight.

Mrs W. S. Ritter of Cleveland objects to "the amount of space given this person Lovecraft when two or three *interesting* letters might have been printed in the space so used." But the most vicious response is a prose letter by Jack E. Brown of Kellogg, Idaho: "I get sore at people like H. P. L. I will pay his fifteen cents a month if he will quit reading the ARGOSY. . . . I am a cow-puncher, and certainly would like to loosen up my .44-six on that man Lovecraft." Lovecraft had no defenders in this issue, although H. R. G. of Cedar Rapids, Nebraska, writes ambiguously: "The Log-Book has become very interesting lately on account of the comments on H. P. Lovecraft." But with Lovecraft himself not replying (or, at least, with his replies not being printed), the debate had little to feed itself upon. The unpublished "Liber Quartus" of "Ad Criticos" does address Russell's acid lines in the May issue:

> He shuns politeness in his spleenful scrawl,

And swears my stock of learning is but small.
In well-turn'd lines, with sickly venom writ,
He counts my failings to display his wit.

Clearly Russell's squib got under his skin. As for J. C. Cummings, he "gains distinction and eternal fame / From neatly playing on a hated name"; and Lovecraft devastatingly points out the clumsiness in Forster's attempt at verse:

In true trochaic rage the bard begins,
When, lo! an odd iambus intervenes.
Some eight lines down, he strikes the ballad form,
But soon a dactyl swells the shapeless swarm:
The fifteenth line assumes heroic length,
And stands apart in solitary strength.

This is an entirely valid criticism, for unlike free verse Forster's poem attempted to adhere to regular metre but simply failed to do so. Lovecraft then unleashes an argument that he would use over and over again in regard to free verse:

As for the rest, what man among us knows
If it be verse, or merely rhyming prose?
On Forster's sense I waste but little care,
For why discuss a thing that is not there?

In June Russell comes back with a poem entitled "Love Versus Lovecraft," responding to Lovecraft's "Liber Secundus." He puts forth an interesting speculation:

If by mischance some fair, false maid
Has havoc with his feelings played,
He should in silence bear the pain
And from his jeers at love refrain.
Perchance he thinks in his smart way
That woman is of meaner clay;
That love is but a thing of jest,
He stands, a cynic, self-confessed.

C. M. Turner's letter is headed "Lovecraft in Irons" and states: ". . . I think Mr. Jackson's stories are the very best you publish, Mr. Lovecraft to the contrary notwithstanding, and I sincerely trust that you will not listen to the unjust criticism of Mr. Lovecraft and his ilk . . . So, please put Mr. Lovecraft in 'irons,' and place Mr. Fred Jackson in the position of first mate

and let the good old ARGOSY sail on." The issue contains many other defences of Jackson (spurred, probably, by the editor's challenge in the April 1914 issue for Jackson fans to write letters in support of their favourite: "People are much more likely to object to a thing than to admit that it pleases them. It is up to the Jackson fans"), but with fewer specific attacks on Lovecraft.

The July 1914 issue contains only a few letters of interest. Ed. Ellisen of Stratford, Ontario, declares: "Please tell that Mr. H. P. Lovecraft if he does any more kicking to come up here in Canada to do it, as there are places up here to put him in." E. M. W. of Fallon, California, utters a complaint that would gain force in the coming months: ". . . I do not approve of the way Messrs. Lovecraft and Russell use the Log-Book as a medium in which to vent their sarcasm at each other."

In August and September there is very little on the matter: letters in praise of Jackson continue to appear, but neither Lovecraft nor Russell is specifically mentioned. G. E. Bonner returns, crowing about how many more defenders Jackson has than attackers, but he directs his remarks to "friend Bennett" and not to Lovecraft.

The controversy comes to an end in the October 1914 issue. An entire section of "The Log-Book" bears the heading "Fred Jackson, Pro and Con"; inevitably, the "Jackson Boosters" outnumber the "Jackson Knockers." None of the former addresses Lovecraft specifically, but of the latter the loyal F. V. Bennett stands up for his mentor and attacks his principal opponent: "As for the writers who attack Mr. Lovecraft, I don't agree with them, as Mr. Lovecraft is of the same mind about such trash. As for John Russell Potery, [*sic*] it's—well in the same class with Jackson." But the most interesting item is a poem headed "The Critics' Farewell" and bearing both Lovecraft's and Russell's names. They did not actually collaborate on the poem; rather, Lovecraft wrote the first part (headed "The End of the Jackson War") and Russell wrote the second (headed "Our Apology to E. M. W."). Lovecraft's, naturally, is in heroic couplets, and Russell's is in very racy short and irregular anapaests. Lovecraft notes that this truce was made at the insistence of an editor at the *Argosy* who "intimated that the poet's war must soon end, since correspondents were complaining of the prominence of our verses in their beloved magazine."[69] Lovecraft identifies this editor as T. N. Metcalf. We know that Matthew White, Jr, was editor of the *Argosy* proper, and Metcalf is known to have been a sub-editor

of the *All-Story* under Robert H. Davis;[70] perhaps Metcalf was in charge of the Log-Book. In any event, Lovecraft's section of the poem concludes:

> So do we now, conjoin'd in lasting peace,
> Lay down our pens, and mutual slander cease.
> What sound is this? 'Tis but a joyous yell
> From thankful thousands, as we say farewell.

The December 1914 Log-Book has an editorial heading, "Fred Jackson's Coming Back!," with several paeans to that author. Stanley H. Watson of Stockton, Manitoba, writes: "I hope by this time some one has squelched Mr. Lovecraft for running down Jackson. He must be one of those smart Alecs who could write better himself."

There are some other items among Lovecraft's papers that relate to the Jackson controversy, although they do not appear to have been published. There are two poems, "I. Frustra Praemunitus" ("Fortified in vain") and "II. De Scriptore Mulieroso" ("On an effeminate writer"). Both are responses to John Russell's "Love Versus Lovecraft" poem (June 1914); they were evidently written at that time, but again Lovecraft either did not submit them or the editor declined to publish them. The first poem ironically seeks to reassure Russell that, even if Lovecraft attacks Jackson's "Winged Feet," it will simply allow Russell—"The *Argosy's* crown'd Laureate"—to shine all the more with some response of his own. The second takes up the charge that Lovecraft is merely a man who has been disappointed in love and turned into a cynic—an accusation we have already seen many other Jackson defenders make. Two other poems, "Sors Poetae" and "'The Poetical Punch' Pushed from His Pedestal," seem generally related to the controversy—the first mentions Jackson explicitly and the other is a satire on love stories—but these were perhaps never submitted.

It is worth reflecting on what the whole *Argosy/All-Story* battle over Fred Jackson meant to Lovecraft. In a sense we owe thanks to Mr Jackson (or perhaps F. V. Bennett) for making the rest of Lovecraft's career possible, for there is no telling how long he would have continued to vegetate in the increasingly hothouse atmosphere of 598 Angell Street. Lovecraft had no job, was only toying with chemistry and astronomy, was living with a mother who was steadily losing her mental stability, was writing random undistinguished bits of verse about his native region, and was devouring the Munsey magazines but had no thought of contributing any fiction to them

or to any other market. But Jackson's work so irritated Lovecraft that he emerged from his hermitry at least to the extent of bombarding letters to the magazines in question. While it was John Russell who initiated the habit of writing in verse, Lovecraft found it in a golden opportunity to adapt his beloved Augustan satire against a very modern target, as he would do again later in 1914. He probably did not even think it especially odd that he was using the *Dunciad* as a model; recall that he would later assert, with some plausibility, that "I am probably the only living person to whom the ancient 18th century idiom is actually a prose and poetic mother-tongue."[71] On the other hand, Matthew White, Jr (or T. N. Metcalf) probably found Lovecraft's work interesting precisely because it was so quaintly old-fashioned, as well as being rousingly controversial.

Lovecraft seems to have responded reasonably well to the abuse with which he was bombarded, although it is evident that at least a few items—especially by Russell—irritated and perhaps even wounded him. Possibly he ceased to submit his work to the *Argosy* after the first few items because he felt the cause was hopeless: it was obvious that he was not changing very many people's minds and was only annoying many loyal readers. Some of the responses to Lovecraft are surprisingly bitter and hostile, suggesting—whimsically, one hopes—that physical violence be done to the opponent of the beloved Fred Jackson.

The curious thing about the responses to Lovecraft is that many readers took offence at his mere voicing of criticism of Jackson, as if such a thing were in itself somehow off-limits. Some of these comments were on target—those that maintain that the *Argosy* was not published exclusively for one reader's benefit, or that no one is under the obligation to read the magazine—but many readers expressed indignation at the mere levelling of criticism of any kind. The slang terms used to designate this adverse criticism—to "knock" or "kick"—are inherently pejorative, and were interpreted as a sort of personal failing, as if Lovecraft were a misanthrope who could not say anything good about anyone.

One also wonders whether Lovecraft would have engendered the response that he did had he attacked any other writer but Fred Jackson. It certainly appears as if Jackson had a very loyal following both in the *Cavalier* and in the *Argosy;* and I repeat my amazement at the number of men who seemed genuinely to enjoy his love stories. Here again some of the personal attacks are interesting: Lovecraft as the crusty bachelor, as one

who has been jilted and is therefore hostile to any expressions of tender emotion, as a cynic who scorns the romantic element in life. Some of these accusations are, indeed, on the mark, but they are irrelevant to the issue of the actual merits of Jackson as a writer; and here Lovecraft is correct in declaring Jackson to be sentimental, stylistically careless, and catering rather calculatingly to the expectations of his audience. But Jackson's defenders were on the whole so pathetically ill-educated that they could not even begin to make the fundamental critical distinction between a story they happened to like and a story that had genuine literary substance. Of course, Jackson's attackers were by and large not much better in this regard.

The ramifications of this entire episode, for Lovecraft, go far beyond the exchange of abuse on a mediocre and insignificant writer. It was, perhaps, the first occasion when he encountered opinions differing radically from his own and coming from a group of people very different (and, quite honestly, quite inferior) in education, culture, and socioeconomic status from his. Although he does not seem to have had much respect for many of his opponents—except, again, Russell—and indeed seems to have had a fairly easy time dynamiting their positions, he would later find such differences of opinion among his friends, colleagues, and correspondents invaluable in shaking him out of his certitudes and broadening his perspective.

The principal immediate benefit of the *Argosy* experience was, of course, his discovery of—or, rather, by—the world of amateur journalism. Edward F. Daas, then Official Editor of the United Amateur Press Association, noticed the poetic battle between Lovecraft and Russell and invited both to join the organisation. Both did so, Lovecraft officially enrolling on April 6, 1914. In a few years he would be transformed both as a writer and as a human being.

6. A Renewed Will to Live

(1914–1917 [1])

The world of amateur journalism which Lovecraft entered in April 1914 with wide-eyed curiosity was a peculiar if fascinating institution. The papers produced by the members exhibited the widest possible range in content, format, style, and quality; in general they were quite inferior to the "little magazines" of their day but considerably superior (both in typography and in actual literary content) to the science fiction and fantasy "fanzines" of a later period, although few were so focused on a single topic as the fanzines were. Lovecraft himself gives a potted history of amateur journalism in *United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism,* a recruiting pamphlet he wrote early in his term as First Vice-President of the United Amateur Press Association (UAPA), August 1915–July 1916. Here he notes that amateur journalism as a formal institution began around 1866, with a short-lived society being formed by the publisher Charles Scribner and others around 1869. This society collapsed in 1874, but in 1876 the National Amateur Press Association (NAPA) definitively took form; it continues to exist today. In 1895 the UAPA was formed by William H. Greenfield (at that time only fourteen years old[1]) and others who (as Lovecraft believed) wished for an organisation more devoted to serious intellectual endeavour; it was this branch that Lovecraft initially joined. There still exists an alumni association of amateur journalists, The Fossils, who continue to issue a paper, the *Fossil,* on an irregular basis.

By general consensus, the high-water mark of the original amateur journalism movement was the decade of 1885–95, later deemed the "Halcyon Days." It was immortalised, after a fashion, in Truman J. Spencer's anthology, *Cyclopaedia of the Literature of Amateur Journalism* (1891). Not many of the prominent figures of that time were still active during Lovecraft's early days, although a few of them—notably Ernest A. Edkins and James F. Morton—eventually became close friends of Lovecraft. But the period 1916–21 in the UAPA can be thought of as another period when literary quality was at a relatively high level, and Lovecraft can take much of the credit for it. It is, however, a sad fact that no one aside from Lovecraft himself has ever emerged from amateurdom to

general literary recognition. This is not to say that others do not deserve to do so: the poetry of Samuel Loveman and Rheinhart Kleiner, the fiction of Edith Miniter (much of it professionally published), and the critical work of Edkins, Morton, and Edward H. Cole need fear no comparison with their analogues in the standard literature of the day. It is, unfortunately, unlikely that much of this work will ever be revived or even taken note of except in connexion with Lovecraft himself.

Amateur journalism was rather more hierarchical and organised than the fantasy fandom movement of the 1930s and following: nearly every issue of the *United Amateur* and the *National Amateur* (the "official organs" of their respective associations) contained detailed membership lists, arranged by state and sometimes by city, and both organisations had an extensive array of officers and departments. They were, in addition, much larger in scope and rather differently organised than the amateur press associations of today: whereas members of the latter send copies of their self-published journals to an Official Editor for distribution to each member, old-time amateur journalists would themselves mail issues of their papers to members of their own choice—and Lovecraft notes (in the "Encouraging Recruits" section of "Finale" [*Badger,* June 1915]) that members occasionally exercised unfortunate prejudices in determining who would receive their papers. These papers were in many instances highly distinguished: at a time when typesetting, printing, paper, and mailing costs were relatively low, such products as W. Paul Cook's *Vagrant,* John Milton Samples's *Silver Clarion,* Lovecraft's own *Conservative,* and the two official organs are as polished in appearance—if not always in contents—as many of the little magazines of their day, and somewhat superior to such things as the *Fantasy Fan* or the *Phantagraph.* Other journals were, of course, very humbly produced, utilising mimeograph, ditto, and other elementary reproduction procedures. In a few anomalous cases, members would simply type or even handwrite sheets of paper and send them on a designated round of circulation.

It is not the case that all, or even the majority, of amateur journalists were young. The members of the UAPA were regularly designated by number and age group: "a" stood for members under 16, "b" for members 16 to 21, and "c" for members over 21 (Lovecraft's number was 1945c). The last category was significantly in the majority. The NAPA in its earlier days was perhaps more youth-oriented: in 1920 Lovecraft makes note of a

NAPA convention in 1915 in which the Fossils sought to drive out from amateurdom anyone over twenty;[2] the attempt was unsuccessful, but bespeaks the prejudice toward youth prevailing among the founders of amateur journalism.

And yet, the young were perhaps always the driving forces of amateurdom, lending to it their enthusiasm and energy. In his 1920 essay, *Looking Backward,* Lovecraft, poring over some old amateur journals lent to him by a friend, refers to a semi-professional journal entitled *Young Nova Scotia* that contained "the usual melange of verses, fictional thrillers, puzzles, jests, philately, numismatics, curiosities, and bits of general information." This sounds uncannily like Lovecraft's own juvenile periodicals, especially when he takes note of the advertisements in *Young Nova Scotia* for "such things as chromos, stamps, acquaintance cards, popular songs, lovers' garlands, and printing materials." Lovecraft frequently remarks how the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* and the *Scientific Gazette* were entirely in the spirit of amateur journalism, even though he knew nothing about the institution at the time.

It was not required of amateur journalists of Lovecraft's day—as it is of members of today's amateur press associations—that they produce their own journals. Indeed, no more than a fraction of the members were editors of their own papers, and some of these papers were extremely irregular. In most cases members would send contributions directly to editors of existing amateur journals or to two "Manuscript Bureaux," one for the eastern part of the country, one for the western part; the managers of these bureaux would then dole out the manuscripts to journals in need of material. Individuals with printing apparatus were greatly in demand; indeed, NAPA was originally an organisation not for disinterested *littérateurs* to excel in the art of self-expression but for youthful printers to practise the art of typography. The expense really was very nominal: Lovecraft reports that in 1915 a 5" × 7" paper at 250 copies would cost only 55 or 60 cents a page, while a 7" × 10" paper would cost $1.60 per page.[3] Most journals averaged 4, 8, or 12 pages, although a few ran to as many as 60 or 70 pages.

The literature produced by members varied widely in both content and quality: poetry, essays, fiction, reviews, news items, polemics, and every other form of writing that can fit into a small compass. If it is generally true that most of this material is the work of tyros—"amateurs" in the pejorative sense—then it only means that amateur journalism was performing a

perfectly sound if humble function as a proving-ground for writers. Some amateurs did in fact go on to publish professionally. And yet, Lovecraft was all too correct when, late in life, he summed up the general qualitative level of amateur work: "God, what crap!"[4]

In *Looking Backward* Lovecraft reported an old-time amateur's division of members into three types: the literati, the plodders, and the politicians. To Lovecraft the third group was always the most pernicious, and yet it was exactly the elaborate political system of organised amateurdom that fostered the type. Each association held an annual convention—NAPA in early July, UAPA in late July—at which the officers for the next official year were elected. These officers (for the UAPA) included President; First and Second Vice-President; Treasurer; Official Editor; and three members of the Board of Directors. Other officers—Historian, Laureate Recorder, the two Manuscript Managers, and, for a time, a Third and Fourth Vice-President—were appointed by the President, as were the members of the Departments of Criticism (Public and Private), the Supervisor of Amendments, the Official Publisher, and the Secretary. The functions of most of these offices is self-explanatory: the Laureate Recorder was in charge of conducting laureateship awards for best poems, stories, essays, and editorials each year; the Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism would write a critique of amateur journals for that season in each issue of the official organ; the Department of Private Criticism would privately assist cruder members in improving their work. With this elaborate hierarchy, it was no surprise that some members became interested only in attaining eminence in the organisation by holding office, and that intensely bitter, personal, and vituperative election campaigns were held to ensure the victory of a given individual or faction. Lovecraft writes of these people:

> They sought office for its own sake; and their ideals and triumphs were of tinsel only. They had no issues to champion, and their standard of success was merely the ability to sway those about them. Office to them was not an opportunity to serve, but a mere prize to be captured for its own intrinsic value as an advertisement of cunning and popularity. The politicians saw in amateurdom an easy field for the exercise of cheap subtlety on a small scale . . . (*Looking Backward*)

The subtlety was cheap and the scale was small because the number of individuals involved in amateurdom was always relatively modest. The

November 1918 *United Amateur* lists only 247 active members; the November 1917 *National Amateur* lists 227 (many individuals belonged to both associations). It is exactly for this reason that both the politicians—and, indeed, Lovecraft, even though his goals were loftier and his capabilities far superior—could achieve eminence in this field: they did not have a great deal of competition.

Amateur journalism was exactly the right thing for Lovecraft at this critical juncture in his life. For the next ten years he devoted himself with unflagging energy to the amateur cause, and for the rest of his life he maintained some contact with it. For someone so unworldly, so sequestered, and—because of his failure to graduate from high school and become a scientist—so diffident as to his own abilities, the tiny world of amateur journalism was a place where he could shine. Lovecraft realised the beneficial effects of amateurdom when he wrote in 1921:

> . . . Amateur Journalism has provided me with the very world in which I live. Of a nervous and reserved temperament, and cursed with an aspiration which far exceeds my endowments, I am a typical misfit in the larger world of endeavour, and singularly unable to derive enjoyment from ordinary miscellaneous activities. In 1914, when the kindly hand of amateurdom was first extended to me, I was as close to the state of vegetation as any animal well can be—perhaps I might best have been compared to the lowly potato in its secluded and subterranean quiescence. With the advent of the United I obtained a renewed will to live; a renewed sense of existence as other than a superfluous weight; and found a sphere in which I could feel that my efforts were not wholly futile. For the first time I could imagine that my clumsy gropings after art were a little more than faint cries lost in the unlistening void. ("What Amateurdom and I Have Done for Each Other")[5]

To this analysis there is really very little to add, although a wealth of detail is necessary to flesh out the picture and to pinpoint exactly how this transformation occurred. As for what Lovecraft did for amateurdom, that too is a long story, and one worth studying carefully.

In 1914, when Lovecraft entered amateur journalism, he found two schisms that were creating much bad blood and using up valuable energy. The first

was, of course, the split between the National and United Amateur Press Associations, which had occurred when the latter was founded in 1895. Perhaps schism is not quite the correct term here, for ostensible reason for the establishment of the UAPA was the desire of certain members to devote themselves more concentratedly to literature and less to fraternal good cheer and mutual back-patting. As I have mentioned, a good many members belonged to both associations; Lovecraft, in spite of labelling himself repeatedly and ostentatiously a loyal "United man," joined the National himself as early as 1917, and would later serve as interim president.

The other split—a schism in the full and proper sense of the word—was one within the United itself, with the result that the very name of the organisation was (as a few hostile NAPA members gleefully pointed out) a cause for embarrassment. Lovecraft addresses this matter in two essays, "The Pseudo-United" (1920) and "A Matter of Uniteds" (1927). (The former was published anonymously in the *United Amateur* for May 1920, but Lovecraft was credited as the author when the piece won the Editorial Laureateship for that year.) In 1912 occurred a hotly contested election at the UAPA convention in La Grande, Oregon; the result was that both of the two candidates for president, Helene E. Hoffman and Harry Shepherd, declared themselves the winner. Lovecraft states in his earlier article that "it was determined to the satisfaction of all impartial observers that . . . Miss Hoffman was safely and lawfully elected"; in his later piece, either because at that time he had become less passionately devoted to his own side and was attempting to reconcile the two factions or because he had gained more accurate information on the matter, he declares more neutrally that "the final vote [was] so close and so dependent on a technically accurate interpretation of the voting status of many members that no one can say even now with absolute finality which side gained the legal victory." What actually happened was that, although Hoffman had received 56 proxy votes and Shepherd 48 (with 9 others going to other candidates), a complicated technicality awarded the presidency to Shepherd.[6]

In his various remarks Lovecraft never points out that it was the Hoffman faction that refused to accept the verdict of the UAPA directors (who confirmed the election of Shepherd) and withdrew. Indeed, if all one knows of the controversy comes from Lovecraft, one would think it was the Shepherd group that was the rebel organisation; but in fact the amateur world to this day regards the Hoffman group as the rebels and the

discontents, even though many acknowledge their literary and numerical superiority.

In any event, the Hoffman supporters established their own association, retaining the title United Amateur Press Association, while the group around Shepherd called itself the United Amateur Press Association of America. Lovecraft joined the former because he had been recruited by Edward F. Daas of that faction; probably he did not at the time even know of the existence of the other, as it was largely centred on Seattle. This latter really was the smaller and less consequential group (it had only 149 members in September 1919, and that was a considerable increase over the figure of some years before), even though it doggedly published its own *United Amateur* for years, largely through the financial and editorial support of J. F. Roy Erford. From 1917 to 1919 this faction had no official editor and was essentially quiescent; in 1917 Lovecraft wrote, a little sanguinely, that it "seems to have disappeared beneath the horizon of adversity" ("Editorially," *United Amateur,* July 1917), and he urged its remaining members to join his United. Not many appear to have done so. In late 1919 the group revived after a fashion, and it was exactly some members' hostility to another of Lovecraft's overtures at amalgamation that led to the writing of "The Pseudo-United." Now deciding to hold nothing back, Lovecraft presents a devastating portrayal of the intellectual backwardness of this group: "Its cultural tone has steadily declined, until today the majority of its members are of extreme crudity—mostly superficial near-Bolsheviki and soulful plumbers and truck-drivers who are still at the moralising stage. Their little schoolboy compositions on 'Individualism', 'The Fulfilment of Life', 'The Will', 'Giving Power to the Best', and so on, are really touching." Let it pass that Lovecraft himself would become a near-Bolshevik ten or fifteen years after writing this.

It is somewhat ironic that the "pseudo-United" actually outlasted Lovecraft's United; the latter essentially collapsed from disorganisation and apathy around 1926, while the other United carried on until 1939. But for all practical purposes it was a moribund association, and when Lovecraft was persuaded to resume amateur activity in the 1930s he saw no option but to work for the NAPA.

The United's split with the National was something Lovecraft vigorously supported and never wished to see healed. His contempt for the older group—which he fancied (perhaps rightly) to be a haven of old-timers

resting on their laurels, men and women who looked back fondly to their lost youth as amateur printers and typographers, and politicians devoted to furthering their own causes and gaining transient and meaningless power in an insignificant arena—is unremitting. In "Consolidation's Autopsy" (published in the *Lake Breeze* for April 1915 under the not very accurate pseudonym "El Imparcial") he dynamites the position of those Nationalites who are seeking some sort of rapport with the United. Dismissing the National as "an inactive Old Men's Home," he writes:

> The National has never more ingenuously confessed its fundamental failing than when referring affectionately to "the small boy with a printing press". This is the much-vaunted grandeur of the National. Not literary, not educational, grandeur, but a record of mere juvenile typographical achievement; a development of the small-boy ideal. While this may be eminently laudable in its way, it is not the kind of grandeur that our United is seeking, and we would certainly hesitate before bartering our own literary traditions for any print-shop record like the National's.

There are several interesting things here. First, that "small-boy ideal" was something Lovecraft himself would have found very congenial during his own youth when he was diligently hectographing the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* and other periodicals; and the fact that he now scorns this ideal may bespeak his realisation that, as a man of twenty-five, he must move on toward some higher literary goal. Indeed, perhaps the vehemence of his response rests precisely in his awareness that he himself had a somewhat arrested adolescence and was anomalously long in separating himself from boyhood interests. Second, Lovecraft may perhaps be exaggerating the degree to which the United was at this time literarily superior to the National. In the late teens the National had some very fine papers—notably W. Paul Cook's *Vagrant,* to which Lovecraft himself would contribute a number of tales and poems—which the United would have had difficulty matching. It is true that the *United Amateur,* especially under Lovecraft's editorship, evolved into a much more substantial and interesting literary organ than the *National Amateur,* which tended to remain a dry chronicle of official business—convention reports, membership lists, financial statements, and the like. But ultimately the

literary distinction between the two associations was one of degree and not of kind.

Lovecraft was always ready to defend his association from attacks by the other. In "A Reply to *The Lingerer*" (*Tryout,* June 1917) he is quick to rebut the Rev. Graeme Davis, who would become Official Editor of the NAPA for the 1917–18 term and who in his amateur journal, the *Lingerer,* alliteratively accused the United of "permanent puerility and immutable immaturity." To this Lovecraft responded, correctly, that "all amateurdom is more or less homogeneously tinctured with a certain delicious callowness," so that "it ill becomes the pot to call the kettle black."

And yet, it was only a few months after this that Lovecraft joined the NAPA; but he did so, he reports, for the overall good of amateurdom. On November 8, 1917, he wrote to Rheinhart Kleiner:

> At the repeated solicitation of many persons who declared that my aloofness from the National was a barrier to inter-associational harmony, I sent in an application for membership about a week ago. My connexion, however, will be purely nominal; as I gave the Nationalites very clearly to understand. I have time and strength only for my own association, yet was willing to have my name on the National's list if it would help any.[7]

The "many persons" referred to here may have included several NAPA members who had by this time become close friends of Lovecraft: Edward H. Cole, Charles W. Smith (editor of the long-running amateur journal, the *Tryout*), and W. Paul Cook (whose allegiance for years wavered between the NAPA and the "other" United). For several years Lovecraft contented himself with sending occasional contributions to NAPA journals; only in the exceptional circumstances of the winter of 1922–23 did he consent to become actual interim president of the association he had for scorned for so long, fulfilling his obligations admirably.

It was only in 1925, when his own association was in its long death-agony, that Lovecraft even considered an offer—this time made by C. W. Smith—for the consolidation of the UAPA and NAPA. Even here, however, he held out a hope against hope for the revival of his own association: "It may be that the new board, by crusading far afield for youthful, energetic, and superior membership, will be able to inaugurate a new era of active writing, criticism, stimulation, and discussion in the traditional United

manner . . .” (“Editorial,” *United Amateur,* July 1925). But it was all a pipe-dream.

But that was eleven years in the future. In 1914 Lovecraft entered a thriving if unfocused organisation of heterogeneous membership but substantial promise. As he plunged into amateur activity, contributing essays and poems (later stories) to amateur journals, becoming involved in heated controversies, and in general taking stock of the little world he had stumbled upon, he gradually formulated a belief—one that he gained remarkably early and maintained to the end of his life—that amateur journalism was an ideal vehicle for the effecting of two important goals: first, abstract self-expression without thought of remuneration; and second, education, especially for those who had not had the benefit of formal schooling. The first became a cardinal tenet in Lovecraft’s later aesthetic theory, and its development during his amateur period may be the most important contribution of amateur journalism to his literary outlook. It is not, of course, likely that amateurdom actually originated this idea in Lovecraft’s mind; indeed, Lovecraft would not have responded so vigorously to amateurdom if he had not already held this view of literature as an elegant diversion. His statement of 1923—“A gentleman shouldn’t write all his images down for a plebeian rabble to stare at. If he writes at all, it shou’d be in private letters to other gentlemen of sensitiveness and discrimination”[8]—could, if shorn if its tongue-in-cheek snobbery, apply to the whole of his writing career.

Lovecraft very much stressed the *amateur* in amateur journalism. In public he vigorously denied that “amateur” was equivalent to “tyro” or “bungler” (even though privately he knew there were many such in amateurdom), preferring to maintain: “Our amateurs write purely for love of their art, without the stultifying influence of commercialism. Many of them are prominent professional authors in the outside world, but their professionalism never creeps into their association work. The atmosphere is wholly fraternal, and courtesy takes the place of currency” (*United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism*). This was, of course, more wishful thinking than fact; but Lovecraft tried his best to make it a reality. His proposal in 1916—whether jocular or not—to retitle the UAPA “The United Association for the Cultivation of Letters” (“Editorial,” *Providence Amateur,* February 1916) gives sufficient indication of the

direction of his thought. His most idealistic utterance comes in "For What Does the United Stand?" (*United Amateur,* May 1920):

> . . . the United now aims at the development of its adherents in the direction of purely artistic literary perception and expression; to be effected by the encouragement of writing, the giving of constructive criticism, and the cultivation of correspondence friendships among scholars and aspirants capable of stimulating and aiding one another's efforts. It aims at the revival of the uncommercial spirit; the real creative thought which modern conditions have done their worst to suppress and eradicate. It seeks to banish mediocrity as a goal and standard; to place before its members the classical and the universal and to draw their minds from the commonplace to the beautiful.

A noble utterance, but again largely wish-fulfilment—or, rather, a poignant testimonial to all that amateurdom meant for Lovecraft himself. Gone were the days when he would charge anywhere from a penny to a half-dollar for his hectographed magazines or treatises or stories; art for art's sake (although he would not so term it until a little later) was now the desideratum.

Lovecraft never tired of attacking the commercial spirit, whether in the amateur world or outside it. A hilarious broadside is "The Proposed Authors' Union" (*Conservative,* October 1916), in which the attempt by "a certain class of American professional authors" to form a union and join the American Federation of Labor is viciously derided. He remarks archly that "the professions of the average modern author and of the day-labourer are remarkably alike":

> Both types shew a certain rough vigour of technique which contrasts very strikingly with the polish of more formal times, and both seem equally pervaded with that spirit of progress and enlightenment which manifests itself in destructiveness. The modern author destroys the English language, whilst the modern strike-loving labourer destroys public and private property.

And how is one to adjudicate pay for poets, since some (like Thomas Gray) spend seven years on a poem only 128 lines long, while "speedy labourers" like Coleridge and Southey can collaborate on an entire verse drama in an

evening? What about possible violence against scabs? Would it manifest itself in the form of "stoning or of satire"? And so on.

At the same time that Lovecraft was hailing the non-mercenary spirit of amateurdom, he was regarding the amateur world as a practice arena for professional publication. This is not a paradox because what he meant by "professional publication" was not hackwork but publication in distinguished magazines or with reputed book publishers. In so doing one is not buckling down to produce insincere pseudo-literature simply for money but allowing the polished products of one's "self-expression" to achieve a worthy audience. "The normal goal of the amateur writer is the outside world of letters, and the United should certainly be able to provide improved facilities for the progress of its members into the professional field" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* August 1916).

The means to achieve these lofty goals in amateurdom was education. It is surely plausible to believe that Lovecraft's own failures in formal education caused him to espouse this goal as fervently as he did; in effect, it was his own way of fulfilling the promise of that nickname "Professor" which he probably acknowledged secretly, or even openly, in high school. Consider the wording of "For What Does the United Stand?":

> The United aims to assist those whom other forms of literary influence cannot reach. The non-university man, the dwellers in different places, the recluse, the invalid, the very young, the elderly; all these are included within our scope. And beside our novices stand persons of mature cultivation and experience, ready to assist for the sheer joy of assisting. In no other society does wealth or previous learning count for so little. . . . It is an university, stripped of every artificiality and conventionality, and thrown open to all without distinction. Here may every man shine according to his genius, and here may the small as well as the great writer know the bliss of appreciation and the glory of recognised achievement.

This all sounds very well, but Lovecraft regarded it as axiomatic that he was one of the "great" writers in this little realm, one of the "persons of mature cultivation and experience" who would raise his lessers to whatever heights they could achieve. This was not arrogance on Lovecraft's part but plain truth; he really was one of the leading figures of amateurdom at this time, and his reputation has remained high in this small field. This ideal of

amateurdom as a sort of informal university was something Lovecraft found compelling and attempted—ultimately in vain—to bring about.

Lovecraft was by no means alone in holding this view of amateur journalism; one of the reasons he became so enthusiastic about the UAPA was his awareness that others had the same vision. In *United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism* he cites an article by Maurice W. Moe, "Amateur Journalism and the English Teacher," published in the high school edition of the *English Journal* for February 1915. This article was an address delivered at a meeting of the National Council of Teachers of English (then and now the leading organisation for high school teachers) at Chicago on November 27, 1914, and recommended the formation of amateur press clubs in high schools—Moe himself had organised such a group in Appleton High School in Appleton, Wisconsin. Moe speaks of the virtues of amateurdom in much the same tones as Lovecraft: "Every endeavor is made to promote a friendly spirit and a love of writing among the members, through correspondence and mutual criticism and even through a bureau of private criticism conducted by professionals, who give their services without charge."[9] Lovecraft maintained that Moe's address "created so much enthusiasm for the *United,* that scores of instructors have subsequently joined our ranks, many of them forming school clubs on the model of the original club at Appleton."

Lovecraft tirelessly promoted this idea; at one point (in "Finale," *Badger,* June 1915) he declared explicitly and personally his regret that such a thing had not been available at Hope Street High School. Speaking of himself in the third person, Lovecraft wrote:

> He himself published an amateur paper from 1903 to 1907 in absolute ignorance of his organised contemporaries, and placed before the indifferent and uncritical readers of rural newspapers and cheap magazines those immature literary efforts of his which might have received a far warmer welcome and a far sounder criticism in the congenial atmosphere of the United. Had he found a copy of the *United Amateur* at the high-school or library, he would certainly have been enjoying the privileges of amateur journalism for more than a decade instead of being at this moment a raw recruit.

This was written in connexion with Lovecraft's support for two proposals made by Paul J. Campbell: the first would transform the *United Amateur*

into a monthly magazine that would feature both literary works as well as official business; the second would make an aggressive effort to bring amateurdom to the attention of high schools and colleges. The first of these proposals was formalised into an amendment to be voted upon by the membership at the UAPA convention in July 1915. It passed, and in August 1915 the *United Amateur* began monthly publication, continuing until January 1917, when—probably because of lack of funds—it reverted to its customary bi-monthly schedule. But throughout this whole period the official organ did substantially increase its proportion of literary as opposed to official matter, and would continue to do so in later years under the official editorship of Verna McGeoch, Anne Tillery Renshaw, and Lovecraft himself. As for attracting high school students, Lovecraft during his term as President of the UAPA (August 1917–July 1918) won approval for the creation of a third and fourth Vice-President to assist in recruiting at, respectively, colleges and high schools. The fourth Vice-President during Lovecraft's term was his friend Alfred Galpin, then at Appleton High School. It is not clear how much these two offices contributed to increasing United membership; as apathy set in among the members in the early 1920s, these positions—as well as even the second Vice-President for a time—disappeared.

Another proposal Lovecraft backed was the formation of a Department of Instruction, "which may teach in an easy and gradual manner the basic principles of grammar, rhetoric, and versification, as well as direct the aspirant to a well-graded and selected course of reading in the works of the best authors" ("New Department Proposed: Instruction for the Recruit," *Lake Breeze,* June 1915). Interestingly, Lovecraft excluded himself from consideration for such a department by maintaining that "all amateurs not engaged in the educational profession should be debarred *ipso facto* from participation in the activities of such a department, however great their general scholarship." This may not have been quite as altruistic as it sounds: earlier in this essay he noted that both critical bureaux (the Departments of Public and Private Criticism) were overwhelmed with requests for revisory services, and it is conceivable that part of Lovecraft's motive for proposing the Department of Instruction was to relieve himself of some of the burdens of this task. In June 1916 he wrote: "I am now struggling with reams of crude MSS. for the forthcoming paper of credentials; in fact, I have before me the entire contents of both MSS. Bureaus for revision."[10]

This idea does not appear to have met with much enthusiasm. By August 1916 Lovecraft announced that he had "learned that under present conditions such a department is not perfectly feasible" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* August 1916); he did not explain this remark, but perhaps lack of money to set up the department was a factor. The UAPA was chronically short of funds and frequently required donations from members in addition to their $1.00 dues for printing the *United Amateur* and other purposes. Lovecraft, in spite of his declining financial situation, would frequently contribute to this "Official Organ Fund." In any event, he now proposed that each of the "cultivated" members take one or more of the "cruder" members under his or her wing and tutor them privately. So far as I can tell, this idea too fell flat.

By this time, however, Lovecraft had acquired a more concrete vehicle for pushing his literary agenda. His first prose contribution to the UAPA was a short essay, "A Task for Amateur Journalists" (*New Member,* July 1914), in which he urged the amateur world to assist in preserving the language from "pernicious" corruptions. This is, of course, a theme Lovecraft would sound throughout his life: as one who had raised himself to regard eighteenth-century prose as the norm, any modern prose—especially the occasionally slovenly and colloquial prose of amateurs less well-educated than he—could only be offensive. A few months thereafter Lovecraft obtained a forum whereby he could more materially keep amateurs linguistically in line: around October 1914 he was appointed by President Dora M. Hepner to take over the chairmanship of the Department of Public Criticism, presumably because the previous chairman, Ada P. Campbell, retired or withdrew. It was the first office Lovecraft held, and he made the most of it.

The office entailed Lovecraft's writing a lengthy article for the *United Amateur* criticising in detail each and every amateur journal that was submitted for review. His first article appeared in the November 1914 issue, and over the next five years Lovecraft wrote twenty more. These pieces must be read to gain some idea of his devotion to the amateur cause. Here is a representative passage:

> *Aurora* for April is a delightful individual leaflet by Mrs. Ida C. Haughton, exclusively devoted to poetical matters. The first poem, "Aurora", is truly exquisite as a verbal picture of the summer dawn, though rather rough-hewn metrically. Most open

> to criticism of all the features of this piece, is the dissimilarity of the separate stanzas. In a stanzaic poem the method of rhyming should be identical in every stanza, yet Mrs. Haughton has here wavered between couplets and alternate rhymes. In the opening stanza we behold first a quatrain, then a quadruple rhyme. In the second we find couplets only. In the third a quatrain is followed by an arrangement in which two rhyming lines enclose a couplet, while in the final stanza the couplet again reigns supreme. The metre also lacks uniformity, veering from iambic to anapaestic form. These defects are, of course, merely technical, not affecting the beautiful thought and imagery of the poem; yet the sentiment would seem even more pleasing were it adorned with the garb of metrical regularity. "On the Banks of the Old Wegee" is a sentimental poem of considerable merit, which suffers, however, from the same faults that affect "Aurora". Most of these defects might have been obviated when the stanzas were composed, by a careful counting of syllables in each line, and a constant consultation of some one, definite plan of rhyming. ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* September 1915)

Plodding and schoolmasterly as this is, it is exactly the sort of criticism the amateurs needed. It would have been futile to present a lofty dissection of the philosophical substance of their work when many were struggling to achieve the barest minimum of grammatical correctness in prose and verse. Lovecraft is tireless in the patient, careful advice he gives: he always attempts to find some merit in the work under consideration, but he never lets a technical flaw go by.

Naturally, Lovecraft had his biases. As early as January 1915 Lovecraft took note of Leo Fritter's complaint (not addressed toward Lovecraft himself) that "some authorised amateur critics deal far too roughly with the half-formed products of the young author." Lovecraft was not guilty of this exact charge; rather, his flaws as an official critic (at least in his early phase) were political and social prejudices and an unwillingness to realise that not everyone wished a return to "tasteful Georgian models" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* August 1916). Slang and colloquialism particularly offended him. In writing of William J. Dowdell's *Dowdell's Bearcat,* he noted:

> While the general style of the paper is fluent and pleasing, we believe that "Bruno" might gain much force of expression through the exercise of a little more care and dignity in his prose. For instance, many colloquial contractions like "don't", "won't", or "can't" might be eliminated, while such slang phrases as "neck of the woods", "make good", "somewhat off", or "bunch of yellow-backs" were better omitted. ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* May 1915)

Poor Dowdell faced another barrage when, in the *Cleveland Sun,* he introduced a sports page:

> Of "The Best Sport Page in Amateurdom" we find it difficult to speak or write. . . . We learn with interest that a former United member named "Handsome Harry" has now graduated from literature to *left field,* and has, through sheer genius, risen from the lowly level of the ambitious author, to the exalted eminence of the *classy slugger*. . . . Speaking without levity, we cannot but censure Mr. Dowdell's introduction of the ringside or ballfield spirit into an Association purporting to promote culture and lettered skill. ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* September 1916)

"Too many of our authors," writes Lovecraft in 1916, "are contaminated with modern theories which cause them to abandon grace, dignity, and precision, and to cultivate the lowest forms of slang" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* August 1916).

Lovecraft summed up his early views on this issue in "The Dignity of Journalism"—published, perhaps with some irony, in *Dowdell's Bearcat* for July 1915. Opening with a lofty and Johnsonian dictum—"It is a particular weakness of the modern American press, that it seems unable to use advantageously the language of the nation"—Lovecraft lashed out at the use of slang in amateurdom, doing so in a manner that remarkably fuses intellectual and social snobbery:

> The idea that slang-infested literature is more readable and pleasing than that which conforms to refined taste is nearly parallel to that of the Italian peasant immigrant, who fondly considers his soiled but flaming kerchief and other greasy but gaudy apparel far more beautiful than the spotless white linen and plain, neat suit of the American for whom he works. While

good English may in unskilful hands sometimes become
monotonous, this defect cannot justify the introduction of a
dialect gathered from thieves, ploughboys, and chimney sweeps.

But Lovecraft did present other arguments that are a little sounder. In rebutting the charge that "the slang of today is the classic language of tomorrow," he keenly advised the interested reader to examine "any one of the numerous dictionaries of slang and Americanisms" wherein are contained words that, though once common, had now fallen completely out of usage. Lovecraft himself owned at least one such volume: John Russell Bartlett's *Dictionary of Americanisms* (1877), which the author had inscribed and presented to F. C. Clark.

Another frequent target was simplified spelling. We may find Lovecraft's comments on this subject somewhat heavy-handed—akin to using a sledgehammer to crack a nut—but simple spelling was being advocated by a great many distinguished critics and grammarians of the day, including Brander Matthews, whom Lovecraft skewered at the conclusion of his witty satiric poem, "The Simple Speller's Tale" (*Conservative,* April 1915): "Yet why on us your angry hand or wrath use? / We do but ape Professor B——— M———!" This poem really is a delight, telling of how the protagonist, seeking a way to avert other amateurs' criticism "because I could not spell," goes past a madhouse and hears a man "Who had from too much study lost his mind":

"Aha!" quoth he, "the men that made our tongue
Were arrant rogues, and I shall have them hung.
For long-establish'd customs what care we?
Come, let us tear down etymology.
Let spelling fly, and naught but sound remain;
The world is mad, and I alone am sane!"

Lovecraft delivers a learned lecture on the history of simplified spelling in "The Simple Spelling Mania" (*United Co-operative,* December 1918), starting from Sir Thomas Smith's "radical and artificial scheme of phonetic spelling" in the Elizabethan period, "which defied every law of conservatism and natural growth," through other attempts in the seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries. Curiously, his historical survey ends around 1805, thereby failing to take much note of the vigorous campaigns for "spelling reform" undertaken in his own time, including such things as the new alphabet proposed by George Bernard Shaw and the

simplified spelling utilised by Robert Bridges. Lovecraft ends with the plea: "Are there not enough sound critics in amateurdom to conduct a systematic campaign, both by example and precept, against 'simplified' spelling?"

Lovecraft's main thrust in this debate—aside from his desire to "conserve" the traditions of English usage—is that the etymological system of orthography enshrined in Samuel Johnson's dictionary (1755; Lovecraft owned a 12th edition [1802]) should be maintained because it has now become so uniform and widespread throughout the English-speaking world; Johnsonian orthography was conveyed to America, as Lovecraft notes, through the *New England Primer* (1760), of the first edition of which he had three ancestral copies. This danger to the English language appears to have passed, and Lovecraft has ended up on the right side of the argument; although he would look askance at the encroachments of "advertising English" and the bastardised forms—*nite, thru,* and the like—propagated in its name.

The degree to which Lovecraft was devoted to the literary standards of the eighteenth century is no more evident than in "The Case for Classicism" (*United Co-operative,* June 1919), in which he took to task one Prof. Philip B. McDonald—Chairman of the Department of Private Criticism and identified as Assistant Professor of Engineering English (whatever that is) at the University of Colorado—for belittling the relevance of classic authors in developing effective style and rhetoric. Although Lovecraft claimed that "It is not my purpose here to engage in any extensive battle of ancient and modern books, such as that fought in Saint-James's Library and veraciously chronicled by Dean Swift," such a battle of the books was exactly what Lovecraft conducted here: ". . . I cannot refrain from insisting on the permanent paramountcy of classical literature as opposed to the superficial productions of this disturbed and degenerate age." As if this were not enough, Lovecraft continued: "The literary genius of Greece and Rome, developed under peculiarly favourable circumstances, may fairly be said to have completed the art and science of expression. Unhurried and profound, the classical author achieved a standard of simplicity, moderation, and elegance of taste, which all succeeding time has been powerless to excel or even to equal."

This utterance is quite remarkable. Many who read the masterworks of Latin and Greek literature find them so perfect of their kind that reactions like the above are not uncommon. Indeed, taken in a very literal sense,

Lovecraft's statement is fundamentally true. But to say that the ancients "completed the art and science of expression" means that there is nothing left for subsequent writers to do but to imitate; and Lovecraft in fact went on to say that "those modern periods have been most cultivated, in which the models of antiquity have been most faithfully followed." What Lovecraft ignores here is that even in the eighteenth century it was the adaptation of classical models to the contemporary world that produced the most viable literature of the period. The brilliance of Johnson's *London* or Pope's *Dunciad* stems not from their aping of the forms of Roman verse satire but from their application of these forms to vivify very modern concerns. Lovecraft, indeed, attempted to do something similar in his own poetry—using eighteenth-century forms in writing poems about World War I, for example—but, as we shall later see, his efforts were on the whole quite unsuccessful.

Lovecraft was, however, correct in refuting McDonald's claim that "the classical style is too restrained, and lacking in humanity"; he added, a little impishly, "So far as restraint goes, a malicious commentator might easily use Prof. McDonald's own bare and staccato prose style as an illustration of inconsistency betwixt precept and practice." It should again be emphasised that Lovecraft was so intent on rebutting McDonald precisely because he felt McDonald's recommendation to abandon classicism would set a bad precedent and undo much of his own work in weaning the amateur world away from informality, slang, and colloquialism: "I am an advocate of the highest classical standard in amateur journalism, and shall continue to bend all my energies toward its maintenance."

With attitudes like these, it is not surprising that Lovecraft was, throughout the course of his amateur career, forced to defend himself against those who felt that his criticism was both too harsh and misguided. In "A Criticism of Amateur Journals," published in Lovecraft's own amateur journal, the *Conservative* (July 1918), Philip B. McDonald noted that "it is more important to be interesting than to be correct." In "Amateur Criticism," an article in the very same issue, Lovecraft attempted to blast this position: "We may pardon a *dull* writer, since his Boeotian offences arise from the incurable mediocrity of his genius; but can we thus excuse the *careless* scribbler whose worst blunders could be corrected by an extra hour of attention or research?" This really evades the question of whether there is a place for slang or colloquialism in writing, since it is a truism that

elementary errors of grammar and syntax ought to be corrected if a piece is written in an orthodox style. This leads, in any event, to a discussion of "the element of individual taste and personal preferences in official criticism":

> . . . it would be foolish to insist that the reviewer suppress all honest convictions of his own; foolish because such suppression is an impossibility. It is, however, to be expected that such an one will differentiate between personal and general dicta, nor fail to state all sides of any matter involving more than one point of view. This course *The Conservative* sought to follow during his tenure of the critical chairmanship . . .

This answer did not seem to satisfy everyone, for in 1921 the controversy arose again, this time from John Clinton Pryor (editor of *Pine Cones*) and, of all people, Lovecraft's close friend W. Paul Cook. Even though Lovecraft had by this time ceased to be an official critic (his last stint as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism ended in July 1919), something in Pryor's and Cook's remarks touched a raw nerve, and Lovecraft felt obliged to respond with one of the most vitriolic articles of his entire literary career, "Lucubrations Lovecraftian" (*United Co-operative,* April 1921). One section in particular, entitled "Criticism Again!," attempts a direct rebuttal of attacks against the severity of official criticism. It opens with towering cynicism:

> It would be futile for the United's Department of Public Criticism to reply to most of the querulous complaints levelled against it. In nine cases out of ten the circumstances are very simple—one mediocre and egotistical author plus one honest review equals one plaintive plea that the bureau, or part of it, is engaged in a diabolical plot to suppress incipient genius. The complainer, as a type, is one who candidly opposes any attempt at genuine constructive criticism, but who expects the department to mince along as a medium of flattery. He feels that his dollar dues entitle him to a certain amount of praise irrespective of merit.

And yet, Lovecraft acknowledged that "there is another sort of complaint which must be received very differently—a calm, balanced sort prompted by intelligent difference in opinion, and connected only subconsciously with personal feelings anent reviews"; and he claimed—outwardly at least—that the criticism of Pryor and Cook was of this latter variety. But his

treatment of it is nonetheless harsh. The essence of both articles[11] was, as Lovecraft states it, that "personal opinions on various subjects have been expressed on various subjects in the official critical reviews" and that this practice is "harmful," in that "it causes the views of individuals to be published as the official views of the United as a body."

Lovecraft's response is similar to, but more pointed than, that of his earlier article, "Amateur Criticism." He announces with emphasis: *"Official criticism is 'official' only so far as it concerns the relation of the work criticised to the artistic standards recognised as universal."* Again, *"no personal opinions are given the stamp of officialdom, because officialdom does not extend beyond art."* It is actually preferable for a critic to state his or her position on a literary or philosophical or political subject in the course of a review rather than to suppress it, for it will inevitably emerge in the very tenor of the critic's remarks. "Seldom have our critics failed to separate general and personal views"; and this statement can apply to virtually all of Lovecraft's own official reviews.

The tone of Lovecraft's rebuttal is so sharp precisely because he placed so much value in the Department of Public Criticism as a tool for the educational improvement of amateur writing. Lovecraft himself certainly felt so during the three terms he was Chairman of the department (1915–16, 1916–17, and 1918–19), and he very likely inculcated his views to the two other chairmen who served between 1915 and 1922 (Rheinhart Kleiner [1917–18] and Alfred Galpin [1919–22]), since both were close friends of his. (Lovecraft in fact quietly took over the position when Kleiner fell ill and was unable to fulfil his duties, so that the unsigned articles for January, March, and May 1918 are by Lovecraft.) The fact that both these individuals shared many of Lovecraft's strict views on the "dignity of journalism" may have caused resentment from those members who did not.

Beginning sometime in 1914 Lovecraft made an attempt to practise his educational ideal very close to home, by assisting in the formation of a Providence Amateur Press Club. The impetus for this club came from one Victor L. Basinet, who on the suggestion of Edward H. Cole (a Boston amateur journalist associated with the NAPA) formed an amateur press club among some working-class people in the "North End" of Providence who were attending night classes at a local high school.[12] Cole—who was very likely already in touch with Lovecraft—probably urged the group to gain

assistance from the UAPA's only Rhode Island member; and Lovecraft, thinking that this attempt to "uplift the masses" might succeed better than the incident with Arthur Fredlund eight years earlier, gave considerable assistance. The group met at the end of each month,[13] and no doubt Lovecraft attended these meetings as often as he could.

Most of the members were Irish; among them was a particularly feisty young man, about a year and a half older than Lovecraft, named John T. Dunn (1889–1983). In the first issue of the *Providence Amateur* (June 1915) Basinet is listed as President, Eugene M. Kern as Vice President, Caroline Miller as Secretary-Treasurer, Lovecraft as Literary Director, and Dunn as Official Editor; other members listed are Edmund L. Shehan, Fred A. Byland, Mildred Metcalf, and Peter J. MacManus.

The poem that opens the issue, Lovecraft's "To the Members of the United Amateur Press Ass'n from the Providence Amateur Press Club," gives some idea of who these people were. Basinet at this point seems to have been the guiding force ("By his bright genius all the club was made"); his radical political views are treated with studied politeness ("With fearless mien he scorns oppressive laws, / And stands a champion of the people's cause"), although elsewhere Lovecraft alluded to the fact that Basinet was a socialist,[14] which could hardly have sat well with him at this time. Dunn was rabidly anti-English, and he and Lovecraft sparred with each other on this issue in letters for at least two years. In his poem Lovecraft alluded to arguments over historical matters ("Skill'd in dispute, with none he fears to vie, / But picks up L————'s faults in history"); although Dunn himself later confessed that Lovecraft "knew . . . his history,"[15] at least as far as the Irish question was concerned. As for the other members, we learn that Edmund L. Shehan was a movie buff but evidently found some films objectionable on moral grounds; Caroline Miller was a writer of heart-rending love stories; one Reilly (not listed in the staff list of the first issue) was a writer of unspecified prose work; and "the quiet" Fred A. Byland wrote prose of "forceful logic" and "pleasing style." We are reliant on Lovecraft's (no doubt flattering) portraits of these individuals, since very few of them actually had any contributions published in the two issues of the *Providence Amateur.*

The first issue, indeed, appears to have been written entirely by Lovecraft and Dunn, although only three of the six pieces are signed. The poem is signed by Lovecraft; there follows an article, "Our Candidate"

(probably by Lovecraft), supporting Leo Fritter for President of the UAPA at the next election (Fritter in fact won the election); "Exchanges" (what in later amateur press circles would be termed "mailing comments"), brief remarks on other amateur journals received by the club (probably by Lovecraft); an "Editorial" (signed "J. T. D.") declaring that the Providence Amateur Press Club is emphatically part of the UAPA as opposed to the NAPA, and (in contradistinction to the "other" United) part of "the association of which Miss Hepner is now President"; "On Acknowledgements" (signed "J. T. D."), on Dunn's failure to receive many amateur publications even though he is a member; and "For Historian—Ira A. Cole" (probably by Lovecraft), supporting Cole's candidacy for that office.

It is by no means an insignificant issue. The last page declares that it has been printed at the Lincoln Press, Cambridge. There is considerable evidence (see below) that the printer was fellow-amateur Albert A. ("Sandy") Sandusky, and it is likely that Cole had recommended Sandusky to the club. Lovecraft elsewhere made note of "some unauthorised omissions made by the printer" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* September 1915), so presumably more contributions (perhaps by other members) were to have been included. The "Office of Publication" of the *Providence Amateur* is given as 83 Commodore Street in Providence (Dunn's residence), and one imagines that the monthly meetings of the group, with Lovecraft in attendance, occurred here at least on some occasions.

Basinet seems to have severed his connexion with the club shortly after the first issue. Lovecraft wrote to Dunn in July 1915 that Basinet was about to issue his own paper, the *Rebel,*[16] but no such paper appears to have been published. Indeed, a later remark by Lovecraft to Dunn—that Basinet is "about to revisit Providence"[17]—indicates that Basinet had moved out of the city altogether; he had in fact gone to Brooklyn. As a result, the leadership of the club fell almost entirely to Lovecraft and Dunn.

The second issue of the *Providence Amateur* (February 1916) is more substantial than the first, although the typographical accuracy is very poor. It was also printed by the Lincoln Press, but one hopes that Lovecraft was not in charge of the proofreading. It opens with a weighty poem, "Death," by Edmund L. Shehan. There follows a curious article by Peter J. MacManus, "The Irish and the Fairies," in which the author recounts what

he believes to have been a sighting of fairies when he was seven years old and living in Connacht. Part of this article is likely to have been revised, or even written, by Lovecraft; the following sentence almost certainly came from his pen: "I observed in the field adjoining ours what appeared to be a graceful procession of about twelve young maidens, all draped in robes whose hue rivalled that of the fleecy clouds in the azure vault above." Lovecraft has added an "Editor's Note" in which he regards MacManus as a sort of quaint *naïf* from some primitive age: "The Irish of today, as startlingly shewn by Mr. MacManus, have as vital and as real a belief in the various Aryan personifications of Nature as had the Greeks of the Homeric period." MacManus, however, is deadly serious and really believes what he writes ("let no man doubt the existence of fairies on the Green Isle"). Lovecraft may have dealt with him kindly because the incident perhaps recalled his own fancied sighting of Greek deities at exactly the same age.

John T. Dunn follows with a humorous poem, "A Post-Christmas Lament"; Edmund L. Shehan then adds an interesting brief piece, "The Making of a Motion Picture," on visiting the Eastern Film Company in Providence; Lovecraft then supplies a four-page "Editorial" lamenting the paucity of good prose in amateurdom and urging more members to issue their own journals; the issue concludes with two of Lovecraft's poems, "To Charlie of the Comics" (unsigned) and "The Bride of the Sea" (as by "Lewis Theobald, Jr."). In this issue Lovecraft is listed as Official Editor and his address is given as the office of publication.

Dunn, interviewed by L. Sprague de Camp in 1975, provides some fascinating glimpses of Lovecraft's personal comportment at the meetings of the club:

> Dunn found Lovecraft . . . odd or even eccentric. At gatherings, Lovecraft sat stiffly staring forward, except when he turned his head towards someone who spoke to him. He spoke in a low monotone.
>
> "He sat—he usually sat like that, looking straight ahead, see? Then he'd answer a question, and go back again," said Father Dunn. "I can see him now . . . and he looked straight ahead; and . . . he didn't emphasize things. He nodded sometimes to emphasize a word or an expression.
>
> "I liked the fellow," he continued. "I didn't have anything against him at all, see? Only we did disagree; but I hope we

> disagreed like gentlemen, see?"
>
> . . .
>
> Lovecraft's voice was high-pitched but not what one would call shrill; Dunn said it was about like his own. Lovecraft had great self-control, never losing his temper no matter how heated the argument. "He—ah—I never saw him show any temper, see? But when he wrote, he wrote very vigorously; there's no doubt about that, see . . .? And he never got excited like I would get excited."[18]

Dunn and Lovecraft certainly did have some epistolary fireworks, as I shall discuss later.

Lovecraft washed his hands of the club shortly after the appearance of the second issue, although he continued to keep in touch with Dunn for another year or so. In a mid-1915 letter he spoke of hoping to aid one "Mr. Wright" (Hubert A. Wright) form a similar club in Pawtucket, but this never came about. The club itself had definitely folded by the fall of 1916, for a poem by Lovecraft, "Providence Amateur Press Club (Deceased) to the Athenaeum Club of Journalism"—evidently unpublished in his lifetime but dated November 24, 1916—speaks gloomily of the collapse of the group:

> What can we say, who on Rhode Island's shore
> Were once a club, but are a club no more;
> Whose puny petals ne'er to bloom unclos'd,
> Nor on Pierus' sacred slopes repos'd:
> Who stand apart, disorganis'd and weak,
> With naught save one *Conservative* to speak?

So ended Lovecraft's second attempt to uplift the masses.

I have made frequent reference to the *Conservative.* This was, of course, Lovecraft's own amateur journal, and the first periodical he edited since the demise of the *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* in February 1909. Although Lovecraft was on the editorial board of several other amateur journals, the *Conservative* was the only one of which he was the sole editor. Thirteen issues appeared from 1915 to 1923, broken down as follows:

> Volume I: April 1915, July 1915, October 1915, January 1916

Volume II: April 1916, July 1916, October 1916, January 1917
Volume III: July 1917
Volume IV: July 1918
Volume V: July 1919
No. 12: March 1923
No. 13: July 1923

The issues range from 4 to 28 pages. The first three issues were written almost entirely by Lovecraft, but thereafter his contributions decline considerably except for occasional poems and—beginning with the October 1916 issue—a regular editorial column entitled "In the Editor's Study." The first issue is 8 unnumbered pages and contains one poem, six articles, and some random notes on amateur affairs, all written by Lovecraft. I shall examine the content of these and other issues presently; right now I wish to concern myself with mechanical matters of printing and distribution. Lovecraft reported that 210 copies of the first issue were printed[19] and were already sent out by mid-March. No printer is listed for the issue, so it was probably printed locally. There is, in fact, a curious note directly below the masthead on the first page: "*The Conservative* desires to apologise for any errors in proofreading which may be found in this issue. Circumstances necessitated a change of printer at the last moment, and an already great delay rendered haste a prime essential." I am not sure what this means, especially since the issue clearly appeared at least a week or two before the cover date. Lovecraft probably sent out copies to every member of the UAPA.

The next four issues were printed by The Lincoln Press. Lovecraft wrote to Dunn on October 25, 1915: "*The Conservative* was promised to me today, but it has not yet arrived. I hope Sandusky will have it soon enough for me to send out during the month for which it is dated."[20] This makes it clear that the printer for these issues (as well as for the two issues of the *Providence Amateur*) was Albert A. Sandusky, an amateur in Cambridge, Massachusetts, whom Lovecraft later met on several occasions. Probably Lovecraft's disgust with the "stupid printer" ("Amateur Notes," *Conservative,* July 1915) of the first issue, and the relative success of Sandusky's printing of the first *Providence Amateur,* persuaded Lovecraft to use him as his regular printer. Sandusky's typographical and printing work

was generally good; Lovecraft (or Sandusky) now adopted a two-column format except for poems whose lines could not be so accommodated.

On August 15, 1916, Lovecraft reported to Dunn that "Sandusky cannot print *The Conservative* any more, so I am now in quest of a suitable typographical artist."[21] In this same letter Lovecraft stated: "The July number, sadly overdue, has been expressed to me, but is delayed in transit. If I do not receive it soon, I shall have to ask Sandusky to have the package traced." This suggests that Sandusky printed the July 1916 issue, even though it does not bear any notice for the Lincoln Press and the issue has a very different typeface and design from those of its predecessors. This four-page issue, containing only a single article by Henry Clapham McGavack, reverts to the single-column format.

The next three issues are clearly printed by the same printer. Lovecraft noted to Dunn on November 13, 1916, that "*The Conservative* for October is in the hands of a local printer, and has been promised for delivery today."[22] Lovecraft went on to say that this issue, "the largest ever published," cost him $30.00. This rate is considerably higher than what Lovecraft was citing in his recruiting pamphlet for papers of this size (5" × 7"). By "largest" Lovecraft presumably meant cumulative wordage, for it is only 12 pages whereas the issue for October 1915 had been 16.

In September 1917 Lovecraft wrote to Kleiner that he had decided to have the *Conservative* printed in future by W. Paul Cook of Athol, Massachusetts, whom he had just met: "His low rates are a philanthropic favour to amateurdom, & are based upon a complete sacrifice of personal profit. He is so anxious to establish a revival of amateur journalism, that he is doing the work absolutely at cost."[23] Lovecraft then cited Cook's rates:

> 300 copies 5 × 7 = $0.85 per page
> 300 copies 6 × 9 = $1.05 per page
> 300 copies 7 × 10 = $1.25 per page

It would be nearly a year, however, before Lovecraft took advantage of Cook's cheap rates. The next *Conservative,* July 1918, is 8 pages in a 5" × 7" format, which means it must have cost Lovecraft only $6.80. Cook may have printed only this issue and that of July 1919; the last, and possibly the second to last, were printed by Charles A. A. Parker.

Although Lovecraft, in the "Editorial" for the first issue, declared with "trembling humility" that he was "thrusting upon an unsuspecting public this first issue of what purports to be a paper" and concluded the editorial by wistfully saying that "he may never perpetrate another number of this modest magazine," it is clear that he welcomed the prospect of editing his own paper rather than merely contributing random pieces to other amateur journals or appearing in the official organ. In particular, what this allowed him to do—aside from promoting his own vision of amateurdom as a haven for literary excellence and a tool for humanist education—was to express his own opinions fearlessly. He did just that. The "Editorial" in the July 1915 issue contains his statement of editorial policy:

> That the arts of literature and literary criticism will receive prime attention from *The Conservative* seems very probable. The increasing use among us of slovenly prose and lame metre, supported and sustained by the light reviewers of the amateur press, demands an active opponent, even though a lone one, and the profound reverence of *The Conservative* for the polished writers of a more correct age, fits him for a task to which his mediocre talent might not otherwise recommend him.
>
> . . .
>
> Outside the domain of pure literature, *The Conservative* will ever be found an enthusiastic champion of total abstinence and prohibition; of moderate, healthy militarism as contrasted with dangerous and unpatriotic peace-preaching; of Pan-Saxonism, or the domination by the English and kindred races over the lesser divisions of mankind; and of constitutional representative government, as opposed to the pernicious and contemptible false schemes of anarchy and socialism.

A mighty tall agenda. I have already touched on some of the controversies over literature in which Lovecraft engaged; his political debates—both in published works and in private correspondence—were no less vigorous, and I shall treat them in due course. We will find that some of Lovecraft's early opinions are quite repugnant, and many of them are uttered in a cocksure, dogmatic manner greatly in contrast with his later views. Nevertheless, it was evident to all amateurs that the editor of the *Conservative* was an intellectual force to be dealt with. Rheinhart Kleiner gives some idea of how the first issue of the journal was received:

> . . . many were immediately aware that a brilliant new talent had made itself known. The entire contents of the issue, both prose and verse, were the work of the editor, who obviously knew exactly what he wished to say, and no less exactly how to say it. *The Conservative* took a unique place among the valuable publications of its time, and held that place with ease through the period of seven or eight years during which it made occasional pronouncements. Its critical pronouncements were relished by some and resented by others, but there was no doubt of the respect in which they were held by all.[24]

Kleiner, in referring to the controversies stirred up by Lovecraft's articles and poems, goes on to say: "Those of his opponents who were able to withdraw from such encounters with dignity and prestige unimpaired were somewhat few." But we shall find that Lovecraft did not always get the better of an argument.

Lovecraft's official career in amateur journalism was augmented by his election in July 1915 as First Vice-President of the UAPA. Leo Fritter (whom Lovecraft supported as a proponent of his literary agenda in "For President—Leo Fritter" in the April 1915 *Conservative*) renewed his appointment as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism, a position he would hold until July 1917. Part of his responsibility as First Vice-President was to be the head of the Recruiting Committee, for which he wrote the pamphlet *United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism.* This, the second separate publication by Lovecraft (for the first, *The Crime of Crimes* [1915], see the next chapter), appears to have been issued in late 1915. In "Report of First Vice-President" (*United Amateur,* November 1915) he wrote that the "long-promised recruiting booklet is now in press at Columbus, O., having been financed jointly by President Fritter and the undersigned." I would have thought that, since the item was an official publication, it would have been printed by the then Official Printer (E. E. Ericson of Elroy, Wisconsin), but evidently Fritter decided to have it printed locally. Lovecraft went on to add a little smugly: "The text is of dignified nature, offering a sharp contrast to the sensational advertising of some of the inferior associations." The reference can scarcely be to anything but the NAPA.

Other official duties fell upon Lovecraft. In the second "Report of First Vice-President" (*United Amateur,* January 1916) he notes working on a "paper of credentials"; that is, a journal collecting pieces by new or prospective members establishing their literary capability. (Lovecraft's own credential, "The Alchemist," did not appear until the November 1916 *United Amateur*.) By June Lovecraft was declaring that he was still "struggling with with reams of crude MSS. for the forthcoming paper of credentials."[25] (There is a certain paradox in this: why would the mss. need revision, since their very purpose was to verify a potential member's literary ability?) I am not sure that this paper—which was to have been edited by Mrs E. L. Whitehead[26]—ever appeared. There is a much later journal, the *Credential* (April 1920), for which Lovecraft is listed as assistant editor, but Anne Tillery Renshaw is the editor. In the spring of 1916 Lovecraft was offered the official editorship of the UAPA upon the resignation of Edward F. Daas; he declined on the grounds of "ill health,"[27] and the task fell to George S. Schilling.

For the next term (1916–17) Lovecraft had no official function except Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism. Schilling, as a member of the Ohio National Guard, was summoned to duty in Mexico and was therefore unavailable as Official Editor. Paul J. Campbell, running for President, wished Lovecraft to run as Official Editor, but again Lovecraft declined on account of ill health. He also refused to accept another term as First Vice-President, urging instead his young protégé David H. Whittier.[28] Whittier was in fact elected to the office but withdrew by October for some reson, being replaced by Ira A. Cole. Lovecraft was nevertheless on the ballot for President and Official Editor at the UAPA convention in July; presumably because most members knew that he was not a declared candidate, Lovecraft lost to Campbell for President by a vote of 38-2, and lost to Andrew F. Lockhart for Official Editor by a vote of 28-1.

Late in 1916 Campbell appointed Lovecraft Chairman of the Year Book Committee, and for the next several months he was occupied with the compilation of a "biographical directory of United members"[29] for 1916–17. The "other" United actually did issue a yearbook for 1914, published by W. Paul Cook and consisting largely of laureate-award-winning items and lists of officers.[30] Perhaps in order not to be outdone by its rival, the UAPA decided to do one of its own. There had been talk of a yearbook for 1915–16, but I do not believe it was ever published. In the January 1917

Conservative, in the brief article "A Request," Lovecraft urged members to send him information on their amateur careers. By November 1917 ("President's Message," *United Amateur*) Lovecraft announced that the yearbook—which contained a revised version of his recruiting pamphlet, *United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism*—was complete in "sixty-three closely typed manuscript pages" (which probably means single-spaced pages, Lovecraft's customary manner of typing at the time), but he expressed concern that there was not enough money in the Year Book Fund actually to publish the volume. The yearbook, so far as I know, never appeared, and it is very likely that lack of funds—which would have to have come from contributions by UAPA members—was the cause of its non-issuance.

In July 1917, however, the *United Amateur* listed Lovecraft as Official Editor. This came about in a somewhat peculiar way. The Official Editor of the 1916–17 term, Andrew F. Lockhart of Milbank, South Dakota, was a vigorous temperance advocate, achieving notable success in his efforts in 1915 and 1916. But in May 1917 he suffered, according to Lovecraft, "defeat at the hands of his enemies—the vice & liquor interests of South Dakota—and has been sent to the Federal Prison at Ft. Leavenworth, Kansas, after a farcially unfair trial."[31] The UAPA membership lists indicate that Lockhart remained at Leavenworth through 1919. President Paul J. Campbell appointed Lovecraft Official Editor for the final issue of the term (July 1917); Lovecraft stated his intention of "planning an issue which will be long remembered in amateurdom, though I am not certain that I shall succeed."[32]

Whether it was a long-remembered issue or not, the July 1917 issue was certainly full of Lovecraft's own work. It contained five substantial pieces by him: an editorial (pretentiously entitled "Editorially"); a lengthy "Department of Public Criticism" article; a section of "News Notes" (brief notes about amateurs, customarily written by the Official Editor); an article on Eleanor J. Barnhart in a column entitled "Little Journeys to the Homes of Prominent Amateurs"; and the poem "Ode for July Fourth, 1917." The editorial, in countering the attacks of Graeme Davis, resoundingly asserts the literary supremacy of the UAPA over the NAPA:

> As the United Amateur Press Association concludes its twenty-second year of existence, its members may well pause to consider the commanding position it now occupies in the world

> of amateur letters. Beginning as an obscure competitor to an association big with pride of achievement and hoary with years and traditions, our United has forged to the front rank with a steady certainty which speaks well for its equal loftiness and liberality of ideals.

As this was being written, however, Lovecraft was anticipating a still greater distinction in the association. "I am named as candidate for the Presidency next year, and Campbell informs me that my election is very probable."[33] True enough, Lovecraft was elected President at the UAPA convention in late July, and most of the other elected or appointed officials were those who were as eager to promote his literary programme as he: Wesley H. Porter, First Vice-President; Winifred Virginia Jordan, Second Vice-President; Verna McGeoch, Official Editor; W. Paul Cook, Official Publisher; and Rheinhart Kleiner, Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism. Although Lovecraft had declared in June 1916 that "I shall never give up my place on the Department of Public Criticism till some future President refuses to appoint me,"[34] the burdens of the presidency clearly made a continuance of this office impossible, and the meticulous Kleiner was a logical choice. For the next five years Lovecraft and his associates essentially controlled the UAPA, and the result really was a very significant raising of the literary tone. For a time it looked as if Lovecraft's goals for amateurdom would be grandly fulfilled.

During this whole period Lovecraft had recommenced the writing of monthly astronomy articles, this time for the *Providence Evening News.* The first one appears in the issue for January 1, 1914, hence actually predates his entry into amateur journalism. I do not know how Lovecraft got this assignment, which lasted until May 1918 and is by far his most extensive astronomical series; he stated in 1916 that the series in the *Tribune* was "transferred"[35] to the *Evening News,* but the former had ceased in 1908, and there was moreover no connexion between the two papers. As for its termination, Lovecraft made the cryptic remark that "a change of management produced a demand for a changed style to which I refused to accede."[36] Elsewhere he was more forthright: ". . . the request of its editor for me to make my articles 'so simple that a child might understand them' caused me to withdraw from the field."[37] I have no

doubt that Lovecraft was paid for each of the fifty-three articles he published, even if the pay is likely to have been insignificant.

The *Evening News* articles become tedious and repetitious if read all at once, for they are in large part merely accounts of the notable celestial phenomena for the month: the phases of the moon, the constellations visible in the morning or evening sky, any eclipses, meteor showers, or other events of note, and the like. After a year, of course, many of the same phenomena will recur. Nevertheless, Lovecraft gradually made attempts to loosen up a little and to introduce other sidelights along the way. In particular, he took it upon himself to explain the origin of the Greek or Roman names for the constellations, and this naturally allows him to recount, sometimes at considerable length, the myths behind such names as Castor and Pollux, Argo Navis (recall his lost juvenile work, "The Argonauts"), and many others. His early reading of Bulfinch and other mythographers held in him good stead here. Consider his charming elucidation of "dog days" (*dies caniculares*):

> The traditions surrounding the Dies Caniculares are very interesting and very ancient. In Egyptian times the appearance of Sirius in the morning twilight, preceding the rising of the Nile, counselled the farmers to sow their grain. From this important function, the star acquired a religious significance, and was the object of much worship. Seven ruined temples have been discovered which were so built that the beams of Sirius, heliacally rising, should strike the great altars. Even the name "Sirius" is thought by some students to be derived from "Osiris", the name of the greatest of the Egyptian gods. In Asia, the heliacal rising of Sirius was regarded as the source of the extreme heat of late summer, a belief to which Virgil more than once alludes; whilst among the Romans a dog was each year sacrificed to the star at this season. ("The August Sky," August 1, 1914)

What becomes even more charming is his increasingly frequent citation of poems by himself or by others. The entirety of his poem "On Receiving a Picture of Swans" is quoted in the article for August 1916; a recasting of part of "The Poe-et's Nightmare" appears in the article for May 1917; there are poetry extracts by Lovecraft—evidently original to these articles—in October and November 1916. Needless to say, Lovecraft does not

acknowledge himself as the author of these poems, referring instead to "a recent bard" or "the following lines."

In the fall of 1914, however, as Lovecraft was steadily writing article after article for the *News,* a rude interruption occurred. An article entitled "Astrology and the European War" by one J. F. Hartmann appeared in the issue for September 4, 1914—only three days after Lovecraft's astronomy column for that month, and in the exact place in the newspaper (the centre of the last page) occupied by his column. Joachim Friedrich Hartmann (1848–1930) was, one imagines, of German ancestry, but was born in Pennsylvania. He came to Providence no later than 1912, and through his life held such occupations as masseur, shoe store clerk, and Santa Claus.[38] In 1914 he was residing at 77 Aborn Street in downtown Providence. Hartmann's article begins resoundingly:

> The vulgar prejudice against the noble science of astrology by otherwise learned men is greatly to be deplored.
>
> Almost every author on astronomy, mythology, anthropology and philosophy; school teachers, professors of universities and the clergy, while willfully ignorant of astrology, yet never tire loading it with slurs and abuse, ridicule and misrepresentation; ever insinuating that astrologers must either be fools or knaves.

Hartmann went on to attack both scientists and the clergy for their hostility to astronomy, then transcribed certain predictions for the rest of the year, culled from *Raphael's Ephemeris,* published the previous year. Given the state of international relations in Europe in 1913, the predictions are not especially remarkable: "The influences operating in King George's horoscope are very unfavourable"; "The kaiser is under very adverse directions, and danger both to health and person is indicated"; and so on.

This was just the sort of thing to make Lovecraft see red. Writing to Maurice W. Moe in early December 1914, he noted: "Recently a quack named Hartmann, a devotee of the pseudo-science of Astrology, commenced to disseminate the usual pernicious fallacies of that occult art through the columns of *The News,* so that in the interests of true Astronomy I was forced into a campaign of invective and satire."[39]

Lovecraft began with a straightforward but somewhat intemperate response entitled (probably by Lovecraft rather than the editor of the *News*) "Science versus Charlatanry," published in the issue for September 9. In all honesty, the response is not especially effective, merely asserting without

much argument "the utter absurdity of the idea that our daily affairs can be governed by the mere apparent motions of infinitely distant bodies whose seeming arrangements and configurations, on which the calculations of judicial astrology are based, arise only from perspective as seen from our particular place in the universe." Lovecraft does keenly point out the dubious nature of the *Raphael* predictions: "War in the Balkans, unrest in Russia, and revolutions in Central or South America are among the events most successfully predicted." And he cannot help referring to his very first appearance in print, when the "learned astrologer of Central Falls, R.I." who spoke of a "transit of Mars" also asserted that Pope Pius X (1835–1914) would die in 1906.

But Lovecraft had underestimated his foe. Hartmann responded with a direct rebuttal to Lovecraft's letter in the issue for October 7, addressing Lovecraft's points systematically and actually scoring a few telling blows. Lovecraft had asserted that astrology had been "exploded over 200 years ago"; Hartmann hurls the rejoinder: "No one ever heard the explosion; where and when did it occur?" The thrust of Hartmann's response, however, is that Lovecraft and other astronomers had not truly examined astrology: "If they really feel 'obliged' to disprove astrology, why don't they try it, and in a manner becoming the scientific method." As for the many astrological predictions that had not come true, Hartmann responded:

> But just think of all the astronomers who have made mistakes. Then astronomy must be a superstition. There is no science but its votaries have made mistakes. Then all the sciences must be false.
>
> Think of all the mistakes in calculation made by bookkeepers and bank clerks. Then what a wretched pseudo-science must be arithmetic.
>
> What a poor rule that won't work both ways!

Sophistical as some of this is, it required a stronger and more systematic attack than Lovecraft had given it in his initial letter. He was not slow to take up the challenge.

Three days later, on October 10, a letter by Lovecraft appeared under the title "The Falsity of Astrology." This letter is still more intemperate than the first, opening with the assertion that "the ordinary modern astrologer is merely a mountebank who seeks to defraud the ignorant by means of crude gibberish which he knows to be untrue" but maintaining that Hartmann was

of that more troublesome class "who actually believe in their own ridiculous teachings, and who can therefore invest their fallacious arguments with the convincing force of genuine though misplaced enthusiasm." While asserting that Hartmann had said little new in his response, Lovecraft's own letter does little to flesh out his argument. He added an amusing personal note: "The baleful effect of Astrology upon the reputation of Astronomy is far too patent for Mr. Hartmann to argue away. I was not long ago asked by a man who had seen my astronomical articles, 'if I did not cast horoscopes or calculate nativities'! It is not pleasant for a serious student of the heavens to be taken for a petty fortune-teller." I would give much to have been present at this encounter. The one important point Lovecraft here asserts—important more for his own philosophical development rather than for the present controversy—is an appeal to anthropology:

> Astrology is the legacy of prehistoric ignorance. Since our primitive ancestors saw that the motion of the sun through the Zodiac influenced their affairs by the change of season which it causes, or that the movements and phases of the moon affected their nocturnal pursuits by the alternative presence and absence of moonlight, they must have believed themselves under the direct control of these bodies. . . . In time, the ancients came to seek explanations for all the phenomena of earthin the phenomena of the heavens, and arbitrarily to assign a celestial cuase for every terrestrial occurrence.

We shall see this exact argument used as a significant weapon in Lovecraft's dismissal of the metaphysical claims of religion.

But before Hartmann could respond to this latest attack, Lovecraft struck back in a different manner. He explained in a letter: ". . . eventually the stupid persistence of the modern Nostradamus forced me to adopt ridicule as my weapon. I thereupon went back to my beloved age of Queen Anne for a precedent, and decided to emulate Dean Swift's famous attacks on the astrologer Partridge, conducted under the nom de plume of Isaac Bickerstaffe (or Bickerstaff—I have seen it spelled both ways)."[40] The result is an article in the issue for October 13 entitled "Astrology and the Future" (true to the *News*'s typographical standards, the first word in the headline was misprinted "Astrologh") by "Isaac Bickerstaffe, Jr." This really is an exquisite—if rather broad and obvious—piece of satire.

Lovecraft does not follow Swift in exact particulars—Swift's *tour de force* had been to predict the death of Partridge, and then to follow up with a very convincing account of Partridge's death, after which the poor devil had a very difficult time proving that he was still alive—but merely maintains that, by its own principles, astrology ought to be able to predict events far in the future rather than merely a year or so in advance. Consider the following: "The crossed transit of Jupiter and Uranus over the alternately radical sun and moon on March 9, 2448, is certain evidence that the American monarch will be overthrown in that year as a result of a popular uprising led by Gen. José Francisco Artmano and a new republic established; the capital being moved from Mexico City back to Washington." Note the reference to a "transit" of a superior planet, which is of course impossible; similarly a later reference to the "sextile opposition of Vulcan in Gemini," even though Lovecraft asserted frequently in his astronomy columns that the existence of the conjectured intra-Mercurial planet Vulcan had been definitively disproven. But this is not the worst:

> Last and most terrible of all, the collusive quaternary trine of Mars, Mercury, Vulcan, and Saturn, in the 13th progressed house of the sign Cancer on Feb. 26, 4954, stands out as plainly as the handwriting on the wall to shew us the awful day on which this earth will finally and infallibly perish through a sudden and unexpected explosion of volcanic gases in the interior.

Hartmann battled gamely on, however. The October 22 issue contains the lengthiest of his pieces, a long and sober article entitled "The Science of Astrology" in which he systematically lays down the "principles" of astrological science in a relatively orderly manner. He made no allusion either to Lovecraft's "Falsity of Astrology" or to the Bickerstaffe squib.

In turn, Lovecraft parried with "Delavan's Comet and Astrology," a Bickerstaffe article printed in the October 26 issue, which takes up where its predecessor left off, making the following proclamation: ". . . the computed alternating back eccentric transit of the future projection of Delavan's comet around the progressed quartile square of the prolonged inclination of the retrograde orbit of Saturn clears up the perplexing situation in a moment, renders the whole matter most simple and obvious, and restores to man that hope without which the heart would sicken and break." In short, Delavan's comet will strike the earth fifty-six years prior to

the explosion of our planet, and will take all the inhabitants of the globe on its tail to dwell "for evermore . . . in peace and plenty" on Venus. Humanity is saved! But not everyone will emerge unscathed:

> I find to my extreme regret that several fragments from the terrestrial explosion of 4954 will strike the planet Venus, there creating much damage, and causing grave injuries to Señor Nostradamo Artmano, a lineal descendant of our talented Prof. Hartmann. Señor Artmano, a wise astrologer, will be hit in the cranial region by a large volume of astronomy, blown from the Providence Public Library, and his mind will be so affected by the concussion that he will no longer be able to appreciate the divine precepts of astrology.

Crude, but effective.

This second parody seems to have stunned Hartmann for a time, for it was not until the issue of December 14 that he finally came back. He now sounds extremely resentful against Lovecraft for what he believes (not entirely unjustly) are his "false statements, angry contempt, abusive language, and vulgar personalities." But the most exquisite passage in his lengthy tirade is the following:

> Two recent articles in these columns, by an enemy falsely posing as an astrologer, are real "gibberish," the kind which our critic does not criticise.
>
> Real astrologers never write such ridiculous parodies upon their own sacred science, which Mr. Lovecraft calls a "base superstition."

It is pitifully obvious that Hartmann, although recognising that the Bickerstaffe articles are parodies, has not deduced that they are also the work of his enemy.

Lovecraft responded more soberly with "The Fall of Astrology" in the December 17 issue, elaborating the anthropological argument and maintaining that "The downfall of astrology was the inevitable result of intellectual progress; of new discoveries in science, improved methods of reasoning, more intelligent examination of history, and more discriminating investigation of the prophecies of astrologers."

But Lovecraft couldn't help piling it on. A final letter by Isaac Bickerstaffe, Jr, printed without title in the December 21 issue, parodies the vagueness and obviousness of some astrological predictions, giving some

glimpses of what can be expected in the first six months of 1915: January ("Conjunction of Mercury and Mars on first indicates prosperous and disastrous year"); March ("Entrance of Sun into sign Aries shews that spring will begin on the 21st"); May ("Superior Conjunction of Mercury on 1st shews that weather will be much warmer than January"); June ("Summer will probably commence this month"); and so on. Of course, he expresses sorrow and disappointment at the base attacks on him by "Prof. Hartmann," asserting: "How can we astrologers hope successfully to promulgate our glorious science, if we have such bitter dissensions amongst ourselves?"

Hartmann evidently decided to give up at this point. Amusingly enough, however, in the issue for December 23 he published an article on "Santa Claus and the Christmas Tree: Their Origin and Meaning"; but as this article was inoffensive to Lovecraft's scientific principles, it did not earn a rebuttal.

Lovecraft did not quite let Hartmann off the hook, however. He continued to jab at him, usually without mentioning him, in later astronomical columns in the *News.* In October 1914, at the height of the controversy, Lovecraft wrote huffily:

> It is with regret that the writer notes at the present time a rather virulent epidemic of astrological quackery in this city. Belief in the fortune-telling power of the stars and planets is of course superstition of the grossest sort, and a most incongruous feature of this enlightened age; yet astrology is a plague which has proved most difficult to eradicate, and only too many persons of indifferent education are still the dupes of its absurd pretensions. ("The November Sky," October 31, 1914)

As late as May 1915, in recounting the origin of the name Coma Berenices, Lovecraft makes reference to "Conon, the court astrologer [of Egypt], a sage no doubt almost as wise as our star-gazing contemporary Mr. Hartmann" ("The May Sky," April 30, 1915).

I do not know that much need be made of the Lovecraft-Hartmann feud. In some particulars it resembles the *Argosy* controversy, although on the whole John Russell was a more formidable opponent than Hartmann; but the latter was by no means a pushover, and his vigorous defence of his views clearly took Lovecraft aback. Lovecraft really gained the victory by the Bickerstaffe pieces rather than by his formal rebuttals, which are not as

strong and convincing as one would like. But perhaps they showed Lovecraft that satire could be effective in both prose and verse: over the years he would write a number of charmingly vituperative prose sketches that occupy a perhaps minor but nonetheless distinctive place in his corpus.

The March 1917 astronomy article for the *News* begins rather awkwardly: "To many readers of these monthly chronicles of the heavens, certain technical terms used in describing the apparent motions of the planets have doubtless seemed obscure and meaningless. It is accordingly the writer's design to attempt an explanation of those which most frequently occur in articles of this sort." This was a somewhat belated attempt to convey systematic instruction to the layman, and one would have expected such a thing to have occurred at the very commencement of the series. Perhaps readers had actually written to the paper complaining of the unexplained use of technical terms; indeed, it may have been complaints of this kind that led the editor, a year later, to demand that Lovecraft simplify his language, although after the above article he does not appear to have made much effort to do so.

Two years earlier Lovecraft was given a chance to begin a series more auspiciously, and he took full advantage of it. A series of fourteen articles entitled "Mysteries of the Heavens Revealed by Astronomy" appeared in the *Asheville* (N.C.) *Gazette-News* from February to May 1915, although part of the thirteenth and the fourteenth article have not come to light. What we have, however, is a systematic and elementary treatise on all phases of astronomy for the complete novice. As Lovecraft announced at the head of the first article:

> The series beginning with this article is designed for persons having no previous knowledge of astronomy. Only the simplest and most interesting parts of the subject have here been included. It is hoped that this series may help in a small way to diffuse a knowledge of the heavens amongst the readers of *The Gazette-News,* to destroy in their minds the pernicious and contemptible superstition of judicial astrology, and to lead at least a few of them to a more particular study of astronomical science. ("The Sky and Its Contents," February 16, 1915)

The allusion to the J. F. Hartmann controversy, then concluded only a few months previously, is of note, as is the almost desperate attempt to avoid

any of the technicalities of the subject; in the *Providence Evening News* article of September 1915 he would speak of the benefits of astronomical knowledge "disencumbered of its dull mathematical complexities," a bittersweet reference to the principal cause of his own failure to become a professional astronomer. "Mysteries of the Heavens" is, then, a good example of what Lovecraft might have done had he decided to become merely a popular science writer. Mildly interesting as the series is, it is good for the sake of literature that he did not so limit his horizons.

But how did Lovecraft arrange to write an astronomy series for a newspaper in Asheville, North Carolina? The solution appears in Lovecraft's early article "Introducing Mr. Chester Pierce Munroe" (1915), where we are told that Lovecraft's boyhood friend has now "established himself at the Grove Park Inn, Asheville." I have little doubt that Chester, wishing to give his friend some remunerative work (Lovecraft is almost certain to have been paid for the series), spoke with the editor of the *Gazette-News,* perhaps even offering him some of Lovecraft's *Providence Evening News* articles as samples.

The result is an orderly and workmanlike series discussing, in sequence, the solar system (including specific discussions of the sun and each of the planets), comets and meteors, the stars, clusters and nebulae, the constellations, and telescopes and observatories. Some of the articles were split into two or more parts and were not always published in sequence: in one anomalous instance, the first part of "The Outer Planets" was followed by the first part of "Comets and Meteors," followed by two segments of "The Stars," followed by the second parts, respectively, of "The Outer Planets" and "Comets and Meteors." A segment was published every three to six days in the paper. The last surviving article, "Telescopes and Observatories," appeared in two parts in the issues for May 11 and 17, 1915, and the second part ends with "(TO BE CONTINUED)" prominently displayed; but some issues subsequent to May 17 appear to be no longer extant, so that we have either lost the end of this article (the thirteenth) or—if "Telescopes and Observatories" concluded here—the fourteenth. My feeling is that there should be another segment of the thirteenth article in addition to an entire fourteenth article, since this final segment only broaches the topic of observatories, concluding after a single lengthy paragraph on the subject.

There is not much one can say about the *Asheville Gazette-News* save that they are competent pieces of popular science. Naturally, Lovecraft harps on some of his favourite topics, especially cosmicism. In speaking of the possibility that the farthest known star may be 578,000 light-years away, he notes:

> Our intellects cannot adequately imagine such a quantity as this. . . . Yet is it not improbable that all the great universe unfolded to our eyes is but an illimitable heven studded with an infinite number of other and perhaps vastly larger clustes? To what mean and ridiculous proportions is thus reduced our tiny globe, with its vain, pompous inhabitants and arrogant, quarrelsome nations! ("[The Stars, Part II]," March 23, 1915)

As with the later *Evening News* articles, Lovecraft gradually introduced larger cosmological conceptions such as the nebular hypothesis and entropy, something I shall discuss in the context of his philosophical development. Otherwise the *Gazette-News* articles are dry and undistinguished. Toward the end of his life Lovecraft dug up the articles from his files; "their obsoleteness completely bowled me over."[41] If anything, they—and the amateur journalism work—show that Lovecraft had still not realised where his true literary strengths lay: it would be two years before he would recommence the writing of fiction.

7. Metrical Mechanic

(1914–1917 [II])

If Lovecraft's views on prose style were conservative and old-fashioned, in poetry they were still more so, both in precept and in practice. We have seen that the prose of his teenage years bears a self-consciously antiquated cast, and is in some ways *more* archaistic than even some of his juvenile verse, which (as in the "Attempted Journey") at least features some contemporaneousness in subject.

The interesting thing is that, right from the beginning, Lovecraft was aware that his poetry had relatively little intrinsic merit aside from academic correctness in metre and rhyme. Writing in 1914 to Maurice W. Moe, a high-school English teacher and one of his earliest amateur colleagues, he stated in defence of his inveterate use of the heroic couplet: "Take the form away, and nothing remains. I have no real poetic ability, and all that saves my verse from utter worthlessness is the care which I bestow on its metrical construction."[1] He goes on to say:

> Now I am perfectly aware that this is no more than downright perverted taste. I know as well as any man that the beauties of poetry lie not in the tinsel of flowing metre, or the veneer of epigrammatical couplets; but in the real richness of images, delicacy of imagination, and keenness of perception, which are independent of outward form or superficial brilliancy; yet I were false and hypocritical, should I not admit my actual preference for the old resounding decasyllabics. Verily, I ought to be wearing a powdered wig and knee-breeches.

That last remark is telling, as we shall see in a moment. What the above comment generally reveals is Lovecraft's keenness as a critic of poetry but his utter inability to exemplify its fundamental principles in his own work. One wonders why he wrote the 250 to 300 poems he did over his career, most of them in the eighteenth-century mode. In 1918, after supplying an exhaustive list of the amateur publications of his poetry, he adds an entirely sound summation: "What a mess of mediocre & miserable junk. He hath sharp eyes indeed, who can discover any trace of merit in so worthless an array of bad verse."[2] Lovecraft seems to have derived a sort of masochistic thrill in flagellating himself over the wretchedness of his own poetry.

In 1929 Lovecraft articulated perhaps the soundest evaluation of his verse-writing career that it is possible to give:

> In my metrical novitiate I was, alas, a chronic & inveterate mimic; allowing my antiquarian tendencies to get the better of my abstract poetic feeling. As a result, the whole purpose of my writing soon became distorted—till at length I wrote only as a means of re-creating around me the atmosphere of my 18th century favourites. Self-expression as such sank out of sight, & my sole test of excellence was the degree with which I approached the style of Mr. Pope, Dr. Young, Mr. Thomson, Mr. Addison, Mr. Tickell, Mr. Parnell, Dr. Goldsmith, Dr. Johnson, & so on. My verse lost every vestige of originality & sincerity, its only core being to reproduce the typical forms & sentiments of the Georgian scene amidst which it was supposed to be produced. Language, vocabulary, ideas, imagery—everything succumbed to my own intense purpose of thinking & dreaming myself back into that world of periwigs & long s's which for some odd reason seemed to me the normal world.[3]

To this analysis very little need be added. What it demonstrates is that Lovecraft utilised poetry not for *aesthetic* but for *psychological* ends: as a means of tricking himself into believing that the eighteenth century still existed—or, at the very least, that he was a product of the eighteenth century who had somehow been transported into an alien and repulsive era. And if the "sole test of excellence" of Lovecraft's verse was its success in duplicating the style of the great Georgian poets, then it must flatly be declared that his poetry is a resounding failure.

Lovecraft did, indeed, have an enviable array of works by late seventeenth- and eighteenth-century poets in his library, beginning with Samuel Butler's *Hudibras,* the poetical works of Dryden (including his translation of Virgil's *Aeneid*), Samuel Garth's *Dispensary* (1699), and, of course, Milton, and moving on to the poetical works of Joseph Addison, James Beattie, Robert Bloomfield (*The Farmer's Boy*), Thomas Chatterton, William Collins, William Cowper, George Crabbe, Erasmus Darwin (*The Botanick Garden*), William Falconer (*The Shipwreck*), Oliver Goldsmith, Thomas Gray, "Ossian" (James Macpherson), Alexander Pope, Matthew Prior, William Shenstone, Robert Tannahill, James Thomson, "Peter Pindar" (John Wolcot), and Edward Young, along with several anthologies

of eighteenth-century poetry. He also had the poems of the early American poet John Trumbull and was familiar with the work of Joel Barlow,[4] although he did not own it. This list does not include some of the authors cited in the above letter (Thomas Tickell, Thomas Parnell), but no doubt Lovecraft read these and still other poets at the Providence Public Library or elsewhere. In other words, Lovecraft was, for a layman, a near-authority on eighteenth-century poetry.

It should not be thought that Lovecraft was striving to imitate specific eighteenth-century poems in his own metrical work; such similarities are uncommon and imprecise. He early stated that he had "made a close study of Pope's Dunciad,"[5] but we need not have been told of the fact after reading "Ad Criticos"; although perhaps that poem, with its unusually direct attacks on various individuals, owes more to Dryden's "Mac Flecknoe" than it does to Pope. In fact, much of Lovecraft's poetry is really more similar to the casual occasional poetry of Dryden than it is to Pope, whose compact and scintillating poetical rhetoric Lovecraft could not hope to match. His many seasonal poems may perhaps owe something to Thomson's *The Seasons,* but again Lovecraft never succeeded in the use of seemingly conventional descriptions of seasons for the conveying of moral or philosophical messages that gives such substance to Thomson's work. The one case of clear imitation that I have found (and even this may be unconscious) is the first stanza of "Sunset" (1917):

> The cloudless day is richer at its close;
> A golden glory settles on the lea;
> Soft, stealing shadows hint of cool repose
> To mellowing landscape, and to calming sea.

No reader can fail to recall the opening of Gray's *Elegy:*

> The Curfew tolls the knell of parting day,
> The lowing herd wind slowly o'er the lea,
> The plowman homeward plods his weary way,
> And leaves the world to darkness and to me.[6]

"Sunset," incidentally, was reprinted in, of all places, the *Presbyterian Advocate* for April 18, 1918—one of the earliest instances where his work appeared outside the narrow confines of amateurdom.

Lovecraft's poetry falls into a number of groupings differentiated generally by subject-matter. The bulk of his verse must fall under the broad rubric of occasional poetry; within this class there are such things as poems

to friends and associates, seasonal poems, poems on amateur affairs, imitations of classical poetry (especially Ovid's *Metamorphoses*), and other miscellaneous verse. There is, at least up to about 1919, a large array of political or patriotic verse, almost entirely worthless. There is also a small group of mediocre philosophical or didactic verse. Satiric poetry bulks large in Lovecraft's early period, and this is perhaps the most consistently meritorious of his early metrical output. Weird verse does not become extensive until 1917—the precise time when Lovecraft resumed the writing of weird fiction—so shall be considered later. These categories of course overlap: some of the satiric poetry is directed toward colleagues or individuals in the amateur circle, or is on political subjects. The poetry of 1914–17 exemplifies nearly all the above types with the exception of the weird verse.

Of the occasional poetry in general it is difficult to speak kindly. In many instances one quite is literally at a loss to wonder what Lovecraft was attempting to accomplish with such verse. These poems appear frequently to have served merely as the equivalents of letters. Indeed, Lovecraft once confessed that "In youth I scarcely did any letter-writing—thanking anybody for a present was so much of an ordeal that I would rather have written a two-hundred-fifty-line pastoral or a twenty-page treatise on the rings of Saturn."[7] Thankfully for us, the following was not 250 lines, but it served the same purpose:

> Dear Madam (laugh not at the formal way
> Of one who celebrates your natal day):
> Receive the tribute of a stilted bard,
> Rememb'ring not his style, but his regard.
> Increasing joy, and added talent true,
> Each bright auspicious birthday brings to you;
> May they grow many, yet appear but few!

This poem—"To an Accomplished Young Gentlewoman on Her Birthday, Decr. 2, 1914"—is of course an acrostic. I do not know who Dorrie M. is. This poem was not published, so far as I know, in Lovecraft's lifetime. In any event, poems of this sort are lamentably common in Lovecraft's early work, many of them much longer and more tedious than this. "To the Rev. James Pyke" (*United Official Quarterly,* November 1914) is a poem to a neighbour, a retired Congregational minister, who (as Lovecraft writes in a brief note following the poem) "declines absolutely to have his works

published. He has written verse since early boyhood, and has in manuscript enough lyrics, dramas, epics, sacred poems, and the like to fill about ten good-sized volumes." At least as regards publication, one wishes Lovecraft had exercised restraint of this sort.

There are any number of poems on amateur matters. Lovecraft was keen on giving encouragement to individual amateurs or amateur press clubs, especially if the latter consisted of younger members. "To the Members of the Pin-Feathers on the Merits of Their Organisation, and on Their New Publication, *The Pinfeather,*" appeared in the first issue of the *Pin-Feather* (November 1914). The Pin-Feathers appear to have been a women's amateur press club ("Hail! learned ladies, banded to protect / The lib'ral arts from undeserv'd neglect"); I know nothing more about them. An evidently unpublished poem, "To 'The Scribblers'" (1915), pays tribute to a club apparently under the supervision of Edward F. Daas, as Lovecraft makes mention of Milwaukee, Daas's place of residence. "To Samuel Loveman, Esquire, on His Poetry and Drama, Writ in the Elizabethan Style" (*Dowdell's Bearcat,* December 1915), is a tribute to an old-time amateur with whom Lovecraft was not at this time acquainted. Later Loveman would become one of Lovecraft's closest friends.

Of the seasonal poems very little can be said. There are poems on almost every month of the year, as well as each of the individual seasons; but all are trite, mechanical, and quite without genuine feeling. One recently discovered poem, "New England," appeared in the *Providence Evening News* for December 18, 1914, along with John Russell's "Florida" (reprinted from the *Tampa Times*) under the general heading "Heat and Cold"; it shows, at least, that Lovecraft continued to keep in touch with his *All-Story* nemesis. The poem itself—aside from the use of a very long iambic line—is entirely undistinguished. A somewhat later poem, "Spring" (*Tryout,* April 1919), had a curious genesis, as the subtitle reveals: "Paraphrased from the Prose of Clifford Raymond, Esq., in the *Chicago Tribune.*" I have not attempted to find the article by Raymond in the *Tribune;* but this poem makes us think of what Lovecraft wrote in an early letter: "Impromptu verse, or 'poetry' to order, is easy only when approached in the coolly *prosaic* spirit. Given something to say, a *metrical mechanic* like myself can easily hammer the matter into technically correct verse, substituting formal poetic diction for real inspiration of thought."[8] One early poem, "A Mississippi Autumn" (*Ole Miss',* December 1915), was

actually signed “Howard Phillips Lovecraft, Metrical Mechanic.” Lovecraft in his letter goes on to say that the ten-line poem “On Receiving a Picture of Swans” (*Conservative,* January 1916) was written in about ten minutes.

One heroic work—in more ways than one—that requires some consideration is “Old Christmas” (*Tryout,* December 1918; written in late 1917[9]), a 332-line monstrosity that is Lovecraft’s single longest poem. Actually, if one can accept the premise of this poem—a re-creation of a typical Christmas night in the England of Queen Anne’s time—then one can derive considerable enjoyment from its resolutely wholesome and cheerful couplets. Occasionally Lovecraft’s desire to maintain sprightliness to the bitter end leads him astray, as when he depicts the family gathered in the old manor house:

> Here sport a merry train of young and old;
> Aunts, uncles, cousins, kindred shy and bold;
> The ample supper ev’ry care dispels,
> And each glad guest in happy concord dwells.

This could only have been written by one who has not attended many family gatherings. Nevertheless, the sheer geniality of the poem eventually wins one over if one can endure the antiquated diction. At times self-parodic humour enters in (“Assist, gay gastronomic Muse, whilst I / In noble strains sing pork and Christmas pie!”); and even when Lovecraft pays an obligatory tribute—which he clearly did not feel—to Christianity (“An age still newer blends the heathen glee / With the glad rites of Christ’s Nativity”), he gently dynamites it by depicting the guests anxious to begin the feast (“Th’ impatient throng half grudge the pious space / That the good Squire consumes in saying grace”). The pun on “consumes” is very nice.

Years later this poem received some very welcome praise from a Canadian associate of Lovecraft’s, John Ravenor Bullen, who had spent much time in England. Commenting on the work when Lovecraft submitted it in 1921 to the Anglo-American correspondence group called the Transatlantic Circulator, Bullen remarked that the poem was “English in every respect” and went on to say about Lovecraft’s poetry generally:

> May I point out that poets of each period have forged their lines in the temper and accent of their age, whereas Mr Lovecraft purposefully “plates over” his poetical works with “the impenetrable rococo” of his predecessors’ days, thereby running geat risks. But it may be that his discerning eyes perceive that

> many modern methods are mongrel and ephemeral. His devotion to Queen Anne style may make his compositions seem artificial, rhetorical descriptions to contemporary critics, but the ever-growing charm of eloquence (to which assonance, alliteration, onomatopoeic sound and rhythm, and tone colour contribute their entrancing effect) displayed in the poem under analysis, proclaims Mr Lovecraft a genuine poet, and "Old Christmas" an example of poetical architecture well-equipped to stand the test of time.[10]

This is, indeed, a very charitable assessment, but on the whole it is an accurate one. In later years Lovecraft produced some of his most unaffectedly delightful verse by writing original Christmas poems to friends and family; these poems, brief and humble as they are meant to be, contain some of his most heart-warming metrical work.

It should already be evident that the bulk of Lovecraft's poetry was published in the amateur press; and in many instances it appears that he was anxious to keep various magazines well supplied with copy to fill up a page. Lack of contributions was a constant problem in amateur circles, and Lovecraft was determined to counteract it as best he could. Hence he wrote "On the Cowboys of the West" for his colleague Ira A. Cole's paper, the *Plainsman* (December 1915). Naturally, Lovecraft had no first-hand acquaintance with any cowboys, and all he knew of them came from what Cole had presumably told him in correspondence; so he allowed himself to imagine that in them (as the subtitle of the poem states) "Is Embodied the Nature-Worshipping Spirit of Classical Antiquity." Cole, interestingly enough, agreed with Lovecraft's poetical assessment; writing in a note following the poem:

> Of a certainty, Mr. Lovecraft has described with a beautiful exactitude the fearless, carefree men who were my boyhood companions. . . . I can think of no better comparison, no more appropriate name than the poet has given them. "Children"—yes, they were children; they were young gods, they were heroes. . . . Only such fellows as I, who were boys among them, are left to tell their story, and as spokesman between their time and the present I feel it a great honor that words of mine should inspire so worthy poet [*sic*] as Howard P. Lovecraft to the writing of lines like the above.[11]

This sort of writing to order may account for some anomalies in the poetry, especially those instances where thoughts and conceptions quite alien to Lovecraft are expressed with apparent sincerity. In some instances this is sheer hypocrisy (as in "Lines on the 25th. Anniversary of the *Providence Evening News,* 1892–1917," where he champions that paper as "the people's friend" and as "The chosen mouthpiece of Democracy," even though he never believed in democracy); in other instances one may perhaps take a milder view. "Wisdom" (*Silver Clarion,* November 1918) contains an introductory note: "The 28th or 'Gold-Miner's' Chapter of Job, paraphrased from a literal translation of the original Hebrew text, supplied by Dr. S. Hall Young." Sure enough, this is a verse paraphrase of chapter 28 of the Book of Job, contrasting the value of gold, silver, and precious gems and the value of wisdom; it concludes:

Then did He see and search, and then proclaim
The truth supreme, that He alone could frame:
"Behold," He cries unto the mortal throng,
"This is the Wisdom ye have sought so long:
To reverence the Lord, and leave the paths of wrong!"

This is not something Lovecraft the atheist would have written of his own accord. But in fact he seems to have developed a half-patronising fondness for John Milton Samples, whose simple piety as editor of the *Silver Clarion* somehow affected him. Lovecraft wrote an evaluation of the magazine, entitled "Comment" (*Silver Clarion,* June 1918), in which he remarks that the paper is "an able and consistent exponent of that literary mildness and wholesomeness which in the professional world are exemplified by the *Youth's Companion* and the better grade of religious publications." A number of Lovecraft's more "wholesome" poems appeared in this paper.

Among the more delightful of Lovecraft's occasional poems are those that focon books and writers. Here he is in his element, for in his early years books were his life and his life was books. "The Bookstall" (*United Official Quarterly,* January 1916), dedicated to Rheinhart Kleiner, is one of the earliest and best of these. Casting off the modern age, Lovecraft's "fancy beckons me to nobler days":

Say, waking Muse, where ages best unfold,
And tales of times forgotten most are told;
Where weary pedants, dryer than the dust,
Like some lov'd incense scent their letter'd must;

Where crumbling tomes upon the groaning shelves
Cast their lost centuries about ourselves.

Lovecraft uses this poem to cite some of the curiouser books in his own library: "With Wittie's aid to count the Zodiac host" (referring to Robert Wittie's *Ouronoskopia; or, A Survey of the Heavens* [1681], at this time the oldest book he owned), "O'er Mather's prosy page, half dreaming, pore" (referring to his ancestral copy of the first edition of Cotton Mather's *Magnalia Christi Americana* [1702]), and, most delightful of all, "Go smell the drugs in Garth's Dispensary!" (referring to his copy of Sir Samuel Garth's *The Dispensary* [1699]). That last line is worth nearly all his other archaistic verse put together. And how can we not be touched by the little paean to the cat?

Upon the floor, in Sol's enfeebled blaze,
The coal-black puss with youthful ardour plays;
Yet what more ancient symbol may we scan
Than puss, the age-long satellite of Man?
Egyptian days a feline worship knew,
And Roman consuls heard the plaintive mew:
The glossy mite can win a scholar's glance,
Whilst sages pause to watch a kitten prance.

If Lovecraft had written more of this sort of thing, he could have deflected Winfield Townley Scott's severe but quite justified branding of his poetry as "eighteenth-century rubbish."[12]

Another poem of this sort is "To Mr. Kleiner, on Receiving from Him the Poetical Works of Addison, Gay, and Somerville" (dated on the manuscript April 10, 1918), evidently not published in Lovecraft's lifetime. Although he had by this time been corresponding with Kleiner for three years, Lovecraft still felt obligated to write a thank-you note in verse for so welcome and appropriate a gift. (The book was not found among Lovecraft's effects upon his death, hence is not listed in my compilation of his library.) There is another delightful image of ancient authors languishing in a dingy bookstall:

The shadowy cave, within whose depths are mass'd
The ling'ring relicts of a lustrous past:
Where drowse the ancients, free from modern strife,
That crusty pedants fain would wake to life!

Lovecraft goes on to describe, in a very felicitous way, the respective poetical merits of Joseph Addison, John Gay, and William Somerville.

Two facets of Lovecraft's poetry that must be passed over in merciful brevity are his classical imitations and his philosophical poetry. Lovecraft seemed endlessly fond of producing flaccid imitations of Ovid's *Metamorphoses*—one of his first poetic loves, let us recall—including such things as "Hylas and Myrrha: A Tale" (*Tryout,* May 1919), "Myrrha and Strephon" (*Tryout,* July 1919), and several others. Of the early philosophical poetry, only two are notable. "Inspiration" (*Conservative,* October 1916) is a delicate two-stanza poem on literary inspiration coming to a writer at an unexpected moment. It is of importance largely because it is the very first piece of *professionally* published poetry by Lovecraft outside of local newspaper appearances: it was reprinted in the *National Magazine* of Boston in November 1916. Lovecraft had a number of poems printed in this magazine over the next several years; I do not know what remuneration he received for them, but he clearly states that it was a professional magazine and he must have received at least a token payment. "Brotherhood" (*Tryout,* December 1916) is a genuinely meritorious poem and a surprising one for Lovecraft at this stage of his career to have written. We have already seen many instances of his social snobbery, so that it is no surprise that this poem begins:

> In prideful scorn I watch'd the farmer stride
> With step uncouth o'er road and mossy lane;
> How could I help but distantly deride
> The churlish, callous'd, coarse-clad country swain?

The narrator determines that he is "no kin to such as he"; but then he is taken aback to observe the farmer delicately avoiding stepping on the flowers in his path, and concludes:

> And while I gaz'd, my spirit swell'd apace;
> With the crude swain I own'd the human tie;
> The tend'rest impulse of a noble race
> Had prov'd the boor a finer man than I!

How sincere Lovecraft is in this poem is another matter; it would take him a long time to renounce distinctions of class and breeding, and in some ways —even as a socialist—he never did so. But "Brotherhood" is a poignant poem nonetheless.

As the years passed, it became evident to Lovecraft's readers in the amateur press (as it was always evident to Lovecraft himself) that in his poetry he was a self-consciously antiquated fossil with admirable technical skill but no real poetical feeling. Even W. Paul Cook, who so ardently encouraged Lovecraft the fiction-writer, said of his poetry in 1919: "I cannot fully appreciate Mr. Lovecraft as a poet . . . To me, most of his verse is too formal, too artificial, too stilted in phraseology and form."[13] Eventually Lovecraft began to poke fun at himself on this score; one of the most delightful of such specimens is "On the Death of a Rhyming Critic" (*Toledo Amateur,* July 1917). The satire here is emphatically double-edged. Speaking of the death of one Macer, the narrator of the poem remarks in tripping octosyllabics (the metre of choice of Samuel Butler and Swift, and also of Rheinhart Kleiner and John Russell):

A curious fellow in his time,
Fond of old books and prone to rhyme—
A scribbling pedant, of the sort
That scorn the age, and write for sport.
A little wit he sometimes had,
But half of what he wrote was bad;
In metre he was very fair;
Of rhetoric he had his share—
But of the past so much he'd prate,
That he was always out of date!

This and a later passage ("His numbers smooth enough would roll, / But after all—he had no soul!") show once again that Lovecraft was fully cognisant of his own deficiencies as a poet; but toward the end of the poem things take an unexpected turn. Lovecraft now plays upon his skill as a corrector of bad poetry—he had probably already by this time commenced his occupation as literary revisionist, as I shall explore later—by having the poem's narrator stumble incompetently toward the end. He must write an elegy on Macer for the *Morning Sun;* but who will help him with it? The poem literally disintegrates:

So many strugglers he befriended,
That rougher bards on him depended:
His death will still more pens than his—
I wonder where the fellow is!
He's in a better land—or worse—

(I wonder who'll revise this verse?)

A later poem, "The Dead Bookworm" (*United Amateur,* September 1919), deals somewhat with the same subject. Here the subject of mock-eulogy is someone simply named Bookworm—a "Temp'rance crank—confounded ass!," and one who "never seemed to thrive / I guess he was but half alive."

Well, now it's over! (Hello, Jack!
Enjoy your trip? I'm glad you're back!)
Yes—Bookworm's dead—what's that? Go slow!
Thought he was dead a year ago?

And so on. The sprightliness and colloquialism of this poem are highly unusual for Lovecraft, and may bespeak the influence of the *vers de société* of Rheinhart Kleiner, an unjustly forgotten master of this light form.

Lovecraft was as willing to parody others as himself. An amateur poet named James Laurence Crowley particularly irked Lovecraft, who roundly condemned him in the "Department of Public Criticism" (*United Amateur,* April 1916): "'My Dear, Sweet Southern Blossom' . . . is a saccharine and sentimental piece of verse reminiscent of the popular ballads which flourished ten or more years ago. Triteness is the cardinal defect, for each gentle image is what our discerning private critic Mr. Moe would call a 'rubber-stamp' phrase." Not content with delivering such an Olympian pronouncement, Lovecraft parodied him in a poem entitled "My Lost Love," written in late spring 1916:[14]

When the evening shadows come
Then my fancies they do roam
Round the dear old rustic cottage by the lane,
Where in days that are no more
Liv'd the maid I did adore,
Liv'd my own beloved sweetheart, darling Jane!
(Chorus)
O my dearest, sweetest pride,
Thou couldst never be my bride,
For the angels snatch'd you up one summer day;
Yet my heart is ever true,
And I love you yes I do,
And I'll mourn for you until I pine away!
I—pine—a—way— (by 1st Tenor).

No doubt this is the sort of stuff Lovecraft and his pals used to caterwaul in high school. Lovecraft did not in fact publish this poem, but he did write several poems under the obviously parodic name "Ames Dorrance Rowley," one of which—"Laeta; a Lament" (*Tryout,* February 1918)—is another parody, although a little more restrained than the above. A few years later Lovecraft expressed some regret at treating Crowley in this fashion, and he ended up revising Crowley's verse, probably without pay. [15]

In other instances Lovecraft did not so much write parodies as mere responses to verses by others. To Olive G. Owen's "The Modern Business Man to His Love" (*Tryout,* October 1916) Lovecraft countered with "The Nymph's Reply to the Modern Business Man" (*Tryout,* February 1917):

> Your silks and sapphires rouse my heart,
> But I can penetrate your art—
> My seventh husband fool'd my taste
> With shoddy silks and stones of paste!

Rheinhart Kleiner's "To Mary of the Movies" (*Piper,* September 1915) inspired Lovecraft's "To Charlie of the Comics." Kleiner's "To a Movie Star" brought forth Lovecraft's "To Mistress Sophia Simple, Queen of the Cinema"; both were published in the *United Amateur* for November 1919. I shall study both these poems a little later.

This brings us to Lovecraft's satiric poetry, which not only ranges over a very wide array of subject-matter but is clearly the only facet of his poetry aside from his weird verse that is of any account. Kleiner made this point in "A Note on Howard P. Lovecraft's Verse" (*United Amateur,* March 1919), the first critical article on Lovecraft:

> Many who cannot read his longer and more ambitious productions find Mr. Lovecraft's light or humorous verse decidedly refreshing. As a satirist along familiar lines, particularly those laid down by Butler, Swift and Pope, he is most himself—paradoxical as it seems. In reading his satires one cannot help but feel the zest with which the author has composed them. They are admirable for the way in which they reveal the depth and intensity of Mr. Lovecraft's convictions, while the wit, irony, sarcasm and humour to be found in them serve as an indication of his powers as a controversialist. The almost relentless ferocity of his satires is constantly relieved by

> an attendant broad humour which has the merit of causing the reader to chuckle more than once in the perusal of some attack levelled against the particular person or policy which may have incurred Mr. Lovecraft's displeasure.[16]

This analysis is exactly on target. Lovecraft himself remarked in 1921: "Whatever merriment I have is always derived from the satirical principle . . ."[17]

Fellow-amateurs were frequently an object of attack, since they left themselves open to ridicule on so many fronts. One of the first of his victims was one W. E. Griffin, who contributed a light-hearted article to the *Blarney-Stone* for May–June 1914 entitled "My Favorite Pastime—Flirting." Lovecraft, with his puritanical views about women and sex, was not about to let this go unpunished. He first wrote a short poem, "On a Modern Lothario" (*Blarney-Stone,* July–August 1914), attacking Griffin ("A dozen faces must he daily see / Red with the blush of maiden modesty"), then decided to make a pun on Griffin's name in a much longer poem, "Gryphus in Asinum Mutatus; or, How a Griffin Became an Ass." This poem bears the subtitle "(after the manner of Ovid's *Metamorphoses*)" and is one of the few instances where Lovecraft used Ovid in a skilful and original way. I am not sure whether any real event is related in the poem—which speaks of a griffin who sets his eyes on the virgin goddess Diana but is turned by her into an ass—but the satire is sharp. The poem is undated, but was probably written late 1914; it remained in manuscript, so far as I know, so perhaps Lovecraft considered the satire a little too pungent for publication.

Literary faults or literary modernism (much the same thing to Lovecraft) are also the target of many satires. When Charles D. Isaacson in his amateur journal *In a Minor Key* championed Walt Whitman as the "Greatest American Thinker," Lovecraft responded with a sizzling rebuttal in prose entitled "In a Major Key" (*Conservative,* July 1915) in which he included an untitled poem on Whitman:

> Behold great *Whitman,* whose licentious line
> Delights the rake, and warms the souls of swine;
> Whose fever'd fancy shuns the measur'd place,
> And copies Ovid's filth without his grace.

And so on. Whitman was the perfect anathema for Lovecraft at this time, not only in his scornful abandonment of traditional metre but in his frank

discussions of both homosexual and heterosexual sex. It is not clear to me how much of Whitman Lovecraft actually read: he owned a volume of *Selections from Whitman,* but it dates to 1927. In any case, Lovecraft says in "In a Major Key" that the squib on Whitman was "written several years ago as part of an essay on the modern poets." I would give much to have this work, which I take to be a mixture of prose and verse; as it is, the only other piece that can be attributed to it is a satire on Browning quoted by Lovecraft in a letter:

> Thy lyrics, gifted Browning, charm the ear,
> And ev'ry mark of classic polish bear.
> With subtile raptures they enchain the heart;
> To soul and mind a mystic thrill impart:
> Yet would their rhythmic magic be more keen,
> If we could but discover what they mean![18]

This is a little more on the mark than the polemic on Whitman.

Isaacson, incidentally, was not about to take Lovecraft's attack on Whitman lying down, and he delivered a crushing rebuttal directed against Lovecraft's entire antiquated literary style:

> Mr. Lovecraft writes couplets in good rhyme against Whitman.
>
> I am impelled to inquire if Mr. Lovecraft ever really read Whitman.
>
> . . .
>
> I have said that Mr. Lovecraft's writings smell of the library. They are literary. They are of the play-world. Everything is so unreal about everything in the Conservative's writings.
>
> If only Mr. Lovecraft would come out into the open and breathe deeply of the ozone I am sure he would open himself.[19]

Toward the end of 1914 Maurice W. Moe urged Lovecraft to abandon the heroic couplet and attempt other metrical forms. Lovecraft replied:

> I have written in iambic octosyllabics like those of Swift, in decasyllabic quatrains, as in Gray's *Elegy,* in the old ballad metre of Chevy-Chase, in blank verse like Young's and Thomson's, and even in anapaests like those in Beattie's *Hermit,* but only in the formal couplet of Dryden and Pope can I really express myself. Once I privately tried imitations of modern poets, but turned away in distaste.[20]

Some of these metrical experiments do not appear to survive, and in other cases Lovecraft seems to be referring to his very early juvenile verse. “Ode to Selene or Diana” and “To the Old Pagan Religion” (from *Poemata Minora, Volume II,* 1902) are written in decasyllabic quatrains; by the “old ballad metre of Chevy-Chase” Lovecraft is perhaps referring to “On the Ruin of Rome”; “Frustra Praemunitus” (an apparently unpublished satire on John Russell) is in iambic octosyllabics; but I find no surviving instances prior to December 1914 of blank verse or of anapaests. Nor do I know what the “imitations of modern poets” could be: it cannot be the aforementioned “essay” on modern poets, since the poems on Browning and Whitman are not written in the manner of Browning or Whitman but are Popean satires on them.

In any event, this discussion with Moe seems ultimately to have led to the writing of a series of four poems under the general title “Perverted Poesie; or, Modern Metre.” The four poems are: “The Introduction”; “The Bride of the Sea”; “The Peace Advocate”; and “A Summer Sunset and Evening.” These poems appeared together only in the *O-Wash-Ta-Nong* for December 1937; the second and third appeared separately in 1916 and 1917, respectively. I am not clear whether all four were conceived as a unit, and if so, when. “The Bride of the Sea” is quoted in a letter to Rheinhart Kleiner of September 30, 1915,[21] with the following heading:

Unda

Or, The Bride of the Sea.

———————

Respectfully Dedicated without Permission to

MAURICE WINTER MOE, Esq.

———————

A Dull, Dark, Drear, Dactylic Delirium in Sixteen Silly,

Senseless, Sickly Stanzas

———————

($5000.00 Reward for the Apprehension, Alive or Dead, of the Person or Persons who can prove that This is the Work of

HOWARD PHILLIPS LOVECRAFT

The poem as quoted in this letter—as well as in its first appearance, in the *Providence Amateur* for February 1916—does not include an "Epilogue" in heroic couplets found at the conclusion of the *O-Wash-Ta-Nong* appearance; without the epilogue (and without the bombastic and self-parodic subtitle, which also was omitted from the *Providence Amateur* appearance), it actually becomes difficult to tell that this poem is in fact a parody of the Romantic ballad of the Byron or Thomas Moore type. "A Summer Sunset and Evening" is subtitled "In the Metre (though Perchance not the Manner) of the 'Poly-Olbion' of MIKE DRAYTON, ESQ."—hardly a parody of a "modern" form, since the *Poly-Olbion* of Michael Drayton (1563–1631) is an Elizabethan geographical poem. "The Peace Advocate" is not a parody at all but merely a satire on pacifism. But "The Introduction" attempts to link the three following poems together:

> Wise Doctor Moe prescribeth
> That I should change my Rhyming;
> So let him, pray, peruse each Lay,
> None with the other chiming.
> As for my lov'd Heroicks,
> Destroy 'em if you can, Sir!
> *These* silly Strains and wild Refrains
> Are but your Victim's Answer.

One curious specimen of this type is "Nathicana," which was probably written no later than 1920 although first published only in W. Paul Cook's much-delayed final issue of the *Vagrant* (Spring 1927). Lovecraft later stated that the poem was a "*joke* concocted by Galpin & myself in the old days—a parody on those stylistic excesses which really have no basic meaning."[22] The fact that the poem is a collaboration accounts for the pseudonym, Albert Frederick Willie, which Lovecraft in the same letter explains as "a Galpinian synthesis—Al(bert) fred(erick)—& 'Willie' is a variant of Willy, which is Galpin's mother's maiden name." It is now

difficult to know which parts were written by which collaborator, but in its overall effect the poem proves to be a parody of Poe with his sonorous repetition:

> And here in the swirl of the vapours
> I saw the divine Nathicana;
> The garlanded, white Nathicana;
> The slender, black-hair'd Nathicana;
> The sloe-ey'd, red-lipp'd Nathicana;
> The silver-voic'd, sweet Nathicana;
> The pale-rob'd, belov'd Nathicana.

Taken out of context this indeed sounds absurd; but there is actually something to be said for the view of a later colleague (Donald Wandrei) who noted: "It is a rare and curious kind of literary freak, a satire too good, so that, instead of parodying, it possesses, the original."[23]

Lovecraft ordinarily chose to satirise literary trends he did not care for not by parody but by simple condemnation. Occasionally these can be amusing. "The State of Poetry" (*Conservative,* October 1915) is an attack on bad (but not necessarily modern) poetry which has some clever bits. False rhymes are skewered wittily:

> How might we praise the lines so soft and sweet,
> Were they not lame in their poetic feet!
> Just as the reader's heart bursts into flame,
> The fire is quenched by rhyming "gain" with "name",
> And ecstasy becomes no easy task
> When fields of "grass" in Sol's bright radiance "bask"!

Lovecraft's repeated strictures on the subject in the "Department of Public Criticism" had apparently gone for naught. "The Magazine Poet" (*United Amateur,* October 1915) is an amusing squib on hack writing:

> The modern bard restrains poetic rage,
> To fit his couplets to a quarter-page.
> Who now regards his skill, or taste, or strength,
> When verse is writ and printed for its length?
> His soaring sentiment he needs must pinch,
> And sing his Amaryllis by the inch.

But Lovecraft's greatest poem in this regard is "Amissa Minerva" (*Toledo Amateur,* May 1919). Steven J. Mariconda has written a thorough commentary on this poem, and has illuminated many of its distinctive

features.[24] After supplying a highly encapsulated history of poetry from Homer to Swinburne, Lovecraft launches upon a systematic attack on modern poetry, mentioning Amy Lowell, Edgar Lee Masters, Carl Sandburg, and others by name. (One "Gould" is unidentified; it could perhaps be John Gould Fletcher, although why Lovecraft would refer to him by his middle name is a mystery.) Here is an excerpt:

> Yet see on ev'ry hand the antic train
> That swarm uncheck'd, and gibber o'er the plain.
> Here Librist, Cubist, Spectrist forms arise;
> With foetid vapours cloud the crystal skies;
> Or led by transient madness, rend the air
> With shrieks of bliss and whinings of despair.

The subject-matter of modern poetry offends Lovecraft ("Exempt from wit, each dullard pours his ink / In odes to bathtubs, or the kitchen sink") as much as its abandonment of traditional rhyme and metre. The former point is the subject of a poem (not published in Lovecraft's lifetime) included in the Kleicomolo correspondence cycle, "Ad Balneum" ("To the Bathtub").[25]

Actually, Lovecraft's first exposure to poetic radicalism had occurred some years before. "I have lately been amusing myself by a perusal of some of the 'Imagism' nonsense of the day," he wrote in August 1916.[26] "As a species of pathological phenomena it is interesting." This provides a sufficient indication of Lovecraft's attitude toward free verse in general and Imagism in particular. I am not sure what works Lovecraft read at this time; perhaps he read some of the three anthologies entitled *Some Imagist Poets,* which appeared between 1915 and 1917 and which Lovecraft might have found at the Providence Public Library. He continues in his letter:

> There is absolutely no artistic principle in their effusions; ugliness replaces beauty, and chaos supplies the vacant chair of sense. Some of the stuff, though, would mean something if neatly arranged and read as prose. Of the major portion no criticism is necessary, or even possible. It is the product of hopelessly decayed taste, and arouses a feeling of sympathetic sadness, rather than of mere contempt.

These arguments are repeated in "The Vers Libre Epidemic" (*Conservative,* January 1917). Here Lovecraft distinguishes between two forms of radicalism, one of mere form, the other of thought and ideals. For the first,

Lovecraft cites a fellow-amateur, Anne Tillery Renshaw, whom he admired greatly for her energies toward the amateur cause but whose poetic theories he found every opportunity to rebut. He frequently remarks that, for all the metrical novelty of her poetry, it very often lapses in spite of itself into fairly orthodox forms. In "Metrical Regularity" (*Conservative,* July 1915) Lovecraft paraphrases her theory ("the truly inspired bard must chant forth his feelings independently of form or language, permitting each changing impulse to alter the rhythm of his lay, and blindly resigning his reason to the 'fine frenzy' of his mood") as expressed in an article in her amateur journal, *Ole Miss',* for May 1915; to which Lovecraft makes the pointed response: "The 'language of the heart' must be clarified and made intelligible to other hearts, else its purport will forever be confined to its creator." This single sentence could serve as an adequate indictment of the entire tendency of twentieth-century poetry.

The second, more disturbing type of radicalism—of both thought and ideals—is treated more harshly. In "The Vers Libre Epidemic" this school is said to be represented by "Amy Lowell at her worst": "a motley horde of hysterical and half-witted rhapsodists whose basic principle is the recording of their momentary moods and psychopathic phenomena in whatever amorphous and meaningless phrases may come to their tongues or pens at the moment of inspirational (or epileptic) seizure." This is fine polemic, but not very good reasoned argument. Lovecraft, however, goes on to assert: "The type of impression they receive and record is abnormal, and cannot be transmitted to persons of normal psychology; wherefore there is no true art or even the rudiments of artistic impulse in their effusions. These radicals are animated by mental or emotional processes other than poetic." This allows Lovecraft to conclude: "They are not in any sense poets, and their work, being wholly alien to poetry, cannot be cited as an indication of poetical decadence." This is a clever rhetorical ploy, but that is all, and Lovecraft was probably aware of it. His contention that Imagism or free verse in general was not the vanguard of the future may have been a case of wishful thinking, even though the major poets of the day were still on the whole metrically orthodox. Lovecraft would carry on the battle against avant-garde poetry for the rest of his life, although one imagines that by the thirties he was beginning to feel that the struggle was hopeless. But this did not alter his devotion to conservative poetry, although in his later arguments he modified his position considerably and advocated the view that poetry

must speak straightforwardly, but elegantly and coherently, in the language of its own day.

Curiously, Lovecraft himself was accused of being lax—not in metre, but in rhyme—by Rheinhart Kleiner. In the May 1915 issue of his amateur journal, the *Piper,* Kleiner noted that Lovecraft in his critical utterances "is inclined to be a little too lenient, perhaps, in the case of 'allowable' rhymes, using the standards of another day, in fact, as his authority"; he continued, in reference to "The Simple Speller's Tale": ". . . the word 'art' is rhymed with 'shot.' This could not be considered 'allowable' even by a very liberal interpretation of the poet's own theory."[27]

Lovecraft was not about to take this sitting down, although as a friend of Kleiner's he did not wish to deal with him harshly. Lovecraft was aware that the "allowable rhyme"—the use of such rhymes as *sky* and *company,* or *love* and *grove*—was a hallmark of the poetry of Dryden and his successors, and that the absolute uniformity of rhyming sounds stressed by Kleiner emerged only in the poetical generation of Samuel Johnson, Oliver Goldsmith, and the whole nineteenth century. This is the burden of "The Allowable Rhyme" (*Conservative,* October 1915), which like "The Simple Spelling Mania" presents a history of the subject and correctly stresses the fact that Dryden's reformation of English metre made his use of the allowable rhyme far more pardonable than that of his predecessors. Lovecraft concludes with an obviously personal plea for leniency: "But exceptions should and must be made in the case of a few who have somehow absorbed the atmosphere of other days, and who long in their hearts for the stately sound of the old classic cadences." Truly, "I am certainly a relic of the 18th century both in prose and in verse."[28]

I have noted Lovecraft's use of the pseudonym "Ames Dorrance Rowley" to parody the work of James Laurence Crowley, at least in the one instance of "Laeta; a Lament." (Oddly enough, the three other poems published under this pseudonym—"To Maj.-Gen. Omar Bundy, U.S.A."; "The Last Pagan Speaks" [= "To the Old Pagan Religion"]; "The Volunteer"—are in no way parodies of Crowley.) The whole issue of Lovecraft's use of pseudonyms is a very large one: so far we have seen him use the pseudonym "Isaac Bickerstaffe, Jr." for the attacks on the astrologer J. F. Hartmann and "El Imparcial" for some articles on amateur journalism, but Lovecraft's pseudonyms are otherwise almost entirely restricted to poetry. A total of about twenty pseudonyms have been identified, and there

may even be one or two more lurking in the amateur press. Only a few, however, were used with any regularity: Humphry Littlewit, Esq.; Henry Paget-Lowe; Ward Phillips; Edward Softly; and, most frequent of all, Lewis Theobald, Jun. Some of these names are scarcely very concealing of Lovecraft's identity. The Lewis Theobald pseudonym, of course, derives from the hapless Shakespearean scholar whom Pope pilloried in the first version (1728) of *The Dunciad.*

In some cases Lovecraft used pseudonyms merely because he was contributing poetry so voluminously to the amateur press—especially to C. W. Smith's *Tryout*—that he perhaps did not wish to create the impression that he was hogging more space than he deserved. In other instances, he may have genuinely wished to disguise his identity because of the anomalous content of the poem involved: hence the curiously religious poem "Wisdom" appeared under the name Archibald Maynwaring, a name that only someone well-versed in eighteenth-century poetry—and familiar with Lovecraft's fondness for it—could trace to the minor Augustan poet Arthur Mainwaring, who translated a portion of the *Metamorphoses* for "Garth's Ovid." But it becomes very difficult to characterise some of Lovecraft's pseudonyms, especially those under which a large number of works were published, and Lovecraft evidently used them merely as the spirit moved him and without much thought of creating any sort of genuine persona for the pseudonyms in question.[29] I shall have occasion to comment on specific pseudonyms as they are coined for later works.

Many of Lovecraft's early poems were on political subjects. Political events of the period 1914–17 offered abundant opportunities for his polemical pen, given his early attitudes on race, social class, and militarism. Lovecraft could of course not know that his entry into amateur journalism in April 1914 would occur only four months before the outbreak of World War I; but once the war did commence, and once he saw that his country was not about to enter it anytime soon to stand with his beloved England, Lovecraft's ire was stirred. For prose attacks on world affairs his chosen vehicle was the *Conservative;* his verses on world affairs were scattered far and wide throughout amateurdom.

One event prior to the war that earned Lovecraft's notice, at least to the point of writing a sharp little satire, was the Mexican Civil War. Lovecraft reports that the poem "To General Villa" (*Blarney-Stone,* November–

December 1914) was written in the summer "for the purpose of defying those who had charged the author with pedantry and pomposity" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* March 1915). To be sure, aside from an opening "'Tis," the poem is modern, even colloquial in tone ("You can't read a word; your name you can't write, / But ¡Santa Maria! you know how to fight"). Lovecraft goes on to say that the last stanza has been rendered "sadly out of date" by "changes of time and revolutions":

> So while crafty old Huerta, half drunk with bad brandy,
> Still clings to his throne, 'cross the far Rio Grande,
> 'Tis to you our friend Bryan would lend his assistance:
> Si, General Villa, you'll do—at a distance.

What he means is that Victoriano Huerta, who had assumed the presidency upon the assassination of Francisco I. Madero in February 1913, had been overthrown on July 15, 1914, setting up a struggle for power between Pancho Villa and Venustiano Carranza. President Wilson did in fact briefly "lend assistance" to Villa, but after Villa lost the battle of Celaya in 1915 Wilson chose to recognise Carranza instead. In response, Villa actually invaded New Mexico in early March 1916. Some months later, to compound the insult in Lovecraft's eye, a man named Henry F. Thomas published a poem, "A Prayer for Peace and Justice," in the *Providence Evening News* for June 23, 1916, in which, Lovecraft claims, "he called it a 'shame' for America to prepare for defence against the Mexican bandits."[30] One has to assume that Lovecraft is correct in his understanding of the thrust of the work, since it is otherwise merely a sappy little poem urging pacifism and arbitration ("But let us build—not to destroy, / And thus create world-lasting joy") and making no mention of any specific enemies whom it would be wrong to fight. Lovecraft could not endure such folly, so he responded with "The Beauties of Peace" (*Providence Evening News,* June 27, 1916):

> Let blood-mad Villa drench the Texan plain;
> Let sly Carranza ev'ry right profane;
> To savage hordes a cordial hand extend,
> And greet th' invader as a welcome friend:
> What tho' he slew your brothers yesternight?
> We must be pious—and 'tis wrong to fight!

This becomes a sort of litany throughout the first three years of World War I, prior to American intervention in the summer of 1917. Lovecraft could simply not abide Americans not standing with their English brethren to battle the Huns, and it must have infuriated him not merely that the government failed to intervene in the European war but that American public opinion was resolutely against such intervention. Even the sinking of the British liner *Lusitania* on May 7, 1915—resulting in the loss of 128 Americans in its death toll of more than 1200—only began a slow change in people's minds against Germany. The incident led Lovecraft to write a thunderous polemic in verse, "The Crime of Crimes: Lusitania, 1915":

> Craz'd with the Belgian blood so lately shed,
> The bestial Prussian seeks the ocean's bed;
> In Neptune's realm the wretched coward lurks,
> And on the world his wonted evil works.

And on and on. There is no question of Lovecraft's burning sincerity in this poem; but the antiquated metre and diction he has used here makes it difficult to take the poem seriously, and it gains an unintentional air of frivolity, almost of self-parody. This could be said for much of Lovecraft's political verse.

"The Crime of Crimes" has the distinction of being Lovecraft's first separately published work. It appeared in a Welsh amateur journal, *Interesting Items,* for July 1915, and apparently at about the same time was issued as a four-page pamphlet by the editor of *Interesting Items,* Arthur Harris of Llandudno, Wales. This item is now one of the rarest of Lovecraft's publications; only three copies are known to exist. I do not know how Lovecraft came in touch with Harris; perhaps he sent him the first issue of the *Conservative.* In any event, he stayed sporadically in touch with Harris for the rest of his life.

The *Lusitania* incident led to President Wilson's celebrated utterance, "There is such a thing as a man being too proud to fight," something that made Lovecraft see red and which he threw back in Wilson's teeth at every opportunity, especially in poems. Lovecraft published an array of anti-pacifist poems ("Pacifist War Song—1917," *Tryout,* March 1917; "The Peace Advocate," *Tryout,* May 1917) and articles ("The Renaissance of Manhood," *Conservative,* October 1915), along with any number of truly awful poems expressing loyalty to England ("1914," *Interesting Items,* March 1915; "An American to Mother England," *Poesy,* January 1916;

"The Rose of England," *Scot,* October 1916; "Britannia Victura," *Inspiration,* April 1917; "An American to the British Flag," *Little Budget,* December 1917). It is not surprising that Lovecraft wrote a poem to the mediocre American poet Alan Seeger, who joined the French Foreign Legion at the outset of the war and died in July 1916. Seeger's "A Message to America" is almost as bad as Lovecraft's poetry:

> You have the grit and the guts, I know;
> You are ready to answer blow for blow
> You are virile, combative, stubborn, hard,
> But your honor ends with your own back-yard . . .[31]

Lovecraft's "To Alan Seeger" (*Tryout,* July 1918) goes like this:

> But while thou sleepest in an honour'd grave
> Beneath the Gallic sod thou bledst to save,
> May thy soul's vision scan the ravag'd plain,
> And tell thee that thou didst not fall in vain . . .

Years later Lovecraft, in the story "Herbert West—Reanimator" (1921–22), maintained that Herbert West and his sidekick were two "of the many Americans to precede the government itself into the gigantic struggle" by joining the Canadian army.

Lovecraft's immediate reaction to the war, however, was a curious one. He did not care what the actual causes of the war were, or who was to blame; his prime concern was in stopping what he saw was a suicidal racial civil war between the two sides of "Anglo-Saxondom." It is here that Lovecraft's racism comes fully to the forefront:

> High above such national crimes as the Servian plots against Austria or the German disregard of Belgian neutrality, high above such sad matters as the destruction of innocent lives and property, looms the supremest of all crimes, an offence not only against conventional morality but against Nature itself; the violation of race.
>
> In the unnatural racial alignment of the various warring powers we behold a defiance of anthropological principles that cannot but bode ill for the future of the world.

This is from "The Crime of the Century," one of the salvos in Lovecraft's first issue (April 1915) of the *Conservative.* What makes the war so appalling for Lovecraft is that England and Germany (as well as Belgium, Holland, Austria, Scandinavia, and Switzerland) are all part of the Teutonic

race, and therefore should on no account be battling each other. Political enemies though they may be, England and Germany are racially one:

> The Teuton is the summit of evolution. That we may consider intelligently his place in history we must cast aside the popular nomenclature which would confuse the names "Teuton" and "German", and view him not nationally but racially, identifying his fundamental stock with the tall, pale, blue-eyed, yellow-haired, long-headed "Xanthochroi" as described by Huxley, amongst whom the class of languages we call "Teutonic" arose, and who today constitute the majority of the Teutonic-speaking population of our globe.
>
> Though some ethnologists have declared that the Teuton is the only true Aryan, and that the languages and institutions of the other nominally Aryan races were derived alone from his superior speech and customs; it is nevertheless not necessary for us to accept this daring theory in order to appreciate his vast superiority to the rest of mankind.

We have already seen Lovecraft's prejudice against blacks manifest so early as the age of fourteen; whence did these ideas of Teutonic superiority arise? The above passage itself suggests one source: Thomas Henry Huxley. Huxley's work cannot carelessly be branded as racist, and he was very circumspect when it came to notions of racial superiority or inferiority; but in "The Crime of the Century" Lovecraft has made explicit reference to two essays by Huxley, "On the Methods and Results of Ethnology" (1865) and "On the Aryan Question" (1890), both included in *Man's Place in Nature and Other Anthropological Essays* (1894). In the former essay Huxley coins the term "Xanthochroi" (races that are yellow-haired and pale in complexion), applying it to the inhabitants of northern Europe, ultimate descendants of the "Nordic" barbarians. Along with the Melanochroi (pale-complexioned but dark-haired) who occupy the Mediterranean lands and the Middle East, the Xanthochroi were and are the pinnacle of civilisation: "It is needless to remark upon the civilization of these two great stocks. With them has originated everything that is highest in science, in art, in law, in politics, and in mechanical inventions. In their hands, at the present moment, lies the order of the social world, and to them its progress is committed."[32]

Although Lovecraft's statements make it evident that he was appealing to evolutionary theories in his vaunting of the Teuton, it had been fashionable for nearly a century to praise Teutons, Anglo-Saxons, Nordics, or Aryans (all these terms being extremely nebulous and frequently interchangeable in their application) as the summit of civilisation. English and American historians in particular—beginning with Sir Francis Palgrave's *Rise and Progress of the English Commonwealth* (1832), and continuing on through such distinguished scholars as Edward A. Freeman, J. R. Green, Francis Parkman, William H. Prescott, and John Fiske—became enamoured of the idea that the virtues of the English (hence the American) and German political systems owed their existence to the Teuton or Anglo-Saxon.[33] Lovecraft read many of these writers and had their books in his library. With authorities like these, it is not surprising that he would echo their racial theories, even if in a particularly strident and pompous manner.

There is a certain paradox in Lovecraft's praising the Teuton given his strong classical predilections. How can he account for the fact that, as he saw it, civilisation collapsed for centuries after the barbarian invasions of Rome? In "The Crime of the Century" Lovecraft tries to make the best of it by saying that the Teutons at least prevented the decline from being even worse than it was: "As the power of the Roman empire declined, the Teuton sent down into Italy, Gaul, and Spain the re-vivifying elements which saved those countries from complete destruction." This is certainly not the view of Lovecraft's old friends Hume and Gibbon, who regarded the barbarian invasions as an unmitigated disaster for civilisation. In this instance, at least, racial prejudice has overcome Lovecraft's allegiance both to the Georgians and to the ancients.

If Teutons or Aryans or Anglo-Saxons are the pinnacle of civilisation, then by necessity other races are below them, sometimes vastly below. Accordingly, in Lovecraft's view, these other races ought to allow themselves to be ruled by their betters for their own benefit and for the benefit of civilisation. In discussing whether the U.S. should maintain control of the Philippines, Lovecraft declares: "It is difficult to be patient with the political idiots who advocate the relinquishment of the archipelago by the United States, either now or at any future time. The mongrel natives, in whose blood the Malay strain predominates, are not and never will be

racially capable of maintaining a civilised condition by themselves." And later in the same article:

> Of the question raised regarding the treatment of the Indian by the white man in America it is best to admit in the words of Sir Roger de Coverly, 'that much might be said on both sides'. Whilst the driving back of the aborigines has indeed been ruthless and high-handed, it seems the destiny of the Anglo-Saxon to sweep inferior races from his path wherever he goes. There are few who love the Indian so deeply that they would wish this continent restored to its original condition, peopled by savage nomads instead of civilised colonists. ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* June 1916)

Lovecraft, to be sure, was not one of those few.

The question again arises as to the sources for Lovecraft's views. The anthropology of Huxley and others is a clear influence, and I have no doubt that his family played its role. Lovecraft, as a member of the New England Protestant aristocracy, would have come to such views as a matter of course, and he is only distinctive in expressing them in his early years with a certain vehemence and dogmatism. L. Sprague de Camp has maintained[34] that Lovecraft was significantly influenced by Houston Stewart Chamberlain's *Foundations of the Nineteenth Century,* published in German in 1899 and translated into English in 1911. But there is not a single reference to Chamberlain in any documents by Lovecraft that I have seen; and even a cursory examination of the specific tenets of Chamberlain's racism shows that Lovecraft's beliefs are very different. Chamberlain, according to one scholar, "set himself to reconcile Christianity, the religion of humility and forgiveness, with aggressive German nationalism,"[35] something Lovecraft never concerned himself to do; indeed, as we shall see, Lovecraft's anti-Christianity only gained force as he encountered Nietzsche around 1918. Chamberlain also praised the Teutonic barbarians who overthrow Rome, as being the bearers of "true Christianity" (i.e., a "strong" Christianity shorn of its elements of pity and tolerance), a view Lovecraft could never adopt given the belief he maintained to the end of his life that "To me the Roman Empire will always seem the central incident of human history."[36] In these and other ways did Lovecraft's racism differ fundamentally from Chamberlain's, so that any

influence of the latter seems remote, especially given the total absence of documentary evidence that Lovecraft was even familiar with Chamberlain.

A somewhat more likely source is Madison Grant's *The Passing of the Great Race,* which was a best-seller upon its emergence in December 1916.[37] And yet, there are also significant differences between Grant's views and Lovecraft's. Grant's basic notion is that Europe is populated by three races, the Nordic, the Alpine, and the Mediterranean; this does not correspond to analogous comments by Lovecraft, and in any event all the quotations from Lovecraft's works I have made here were written prior to the appearance of Grant's book, so that it is clear that Lovecraft's views were already well established by this time. We do not have much information on what other racist tracts Lovecraft may have read—we only know of his reading of William Benjamin Smith's *The Color Line* (1905) because of the dedication of "De Triumpho Naturae" to it—but it is clear that a variety of factors (familial influence, reading of specific volumes, and the general beliefs of his community and his class) led to these views. And it cannot be overemphasised that many of them were modified in the course of time.

Later in 1915 the issue of blacks was raised again. We have already seen how Lovecraft attacked Charles D. Isaacson's championing of Walt Whitman in his amateur paper, *In a Minor Key.* The bulk of Isaacson's paper, however, was a plea for racial tolerance, especially for African Americans. He is particularly harsh on D. W. Griffith's *The Birth of a Nation,* asserting that it presented a false view of the relations between blacks and whites after the Civil War and that it incited racial hatred.

Lovecraft, in "In a Major Key" (*Conservative,* July 1915), makes the astounding claim that "Mr. Isaacson's views on racial prejudice . . . are too subjective to be impartial" (had Lovecraft known Freud at this time, he would have been able to refer to this as "projection"). In regard to *The Birth of a Nation,* Lovecraft states that he has not yet seen the film (he would do so later[38]), but says that he has read both the novel (*The Clansman,* 1905) by Thomas Dixon, Jr, and the dramatic adaptation of the novel on which the film was based. He then launches into a predictable paean to the Ku Klux Klan, "that noble but much maligned band of Southerners who saved half of our country from destruction at the close of the Civil War." It is certainly uncanny that Lovecraft's remarks were made at exactly the time when the Klan was being revived in the South by William J. Simmons, although it

was not a force to be reckoned with until the 1920s. It can be pointed out here that Lovecraft is strangely silent on the thousands of lynchings of blacks throughout the early decades of the century; but he never mentions the KKK again until very late in life, and then he repudiates it. In any event, he attempts in "In a Major Key" to account for Isaacson's plea for racial tolerance:

> He has perhaps resented the more or less open aversion to the children of Israel which has ever pervaded Christendom, yet a man of his perspicuity should be able to distinguish this illiberal feeling, a religious and social animosity of one white race toward another white and equally intellectual race, from the natural and scientifically just sentiment which keeps the African black from contaminating the Caucasian population of the United States. The negro is fundamentally the biological inferior of all White and even Mongolian races, and the Northern people must occasionally be reminded of the danger which they incur in admitting him too freely to the privileges of society and government.

The best that can be said of this is that Lovecraft's remarks on Jews are relatively tolerant; we shall find that later remarks are less so. Ugly and ignorant as the above is, this view of blacks as biologically inferior—which we have seen to be common in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries—is one that Lovecraft in essence never renounced, in spite of massive evidence to the contrary that emerged in the course of the 1920s and 1930s.

As, however, with the pestiferous astrologer J. F. Hartmann, Lovecraft underestimated his opponent. The responses by both Isaacson and James Ferdinand Morton in the second issue of *In a Minor Key* (undated, but published in late 1915) are so devastating that they are worth quoting at length. In "Concerning the Conservative" Isaacson, keenly pointing out that "There comes a musty smell as of old books with the reading of the Conservative," goes on to say:

> . . . although I am confident he will not be able to realize it until he is shown very carefully—
>
> He is against free speech.
> He is against freedom of thought.
> He is against the liberty of the press.

> He is against tolerance of color, creed and equality.
>
> He is in favor of monarchy.
>
> Despite his repeated abeisance [*sic*] to the intellectuality and spirituality of the Jew, he continually attempts to place him apart —explaining away the ideas of an individual by his religion. It is unseemly for a man who boasts of his land and his ancestry that he should still cling to the Tory notion and defy the best spirit of America by refusing to acknowledge the nationality of an American, born here of American-born parents, a citizen, loyal, broad, [*sic*] eager to serve his nation, because of opposing creeds![39]

The reference to being against free speech applies to Lovecraft's outrageous remark that the publication of an article by Isaacson entitled "The Greater Courage" urging refusal to serve in the military "is a crime which in a native American of Aryan blood would be deserving of severe legal punishment." Lovecraft contrasts "Mr. Isaacson and his hyphenated fellow-pacifists" with "the real American people," leading to Isaacson's observation that he is as "real" an American as Lovecraft.

Morton's response is still more overwhelming. James Ferdinand Morton (1870–1941) was, as Lovecraft admits in a letter of the time,[40] a remarkable individual. He had gained a simultaneous B.A. and M.A. from Harvard in 1892 and became a vigorous advocate of black equality, free speech, the single tax, and secularism. He wrote many pamphlets on these subjects, most of them published either by himself or by The Truth Seeker Co.; among them are *The Rights of Periodicals* (1905?), *The Curse of Race Prejudice* (1906?), and many others.[41] He had been President of the NAPA in 1896–97 and would later become President of the Thomas Paine Natural History Association and Vice President of the Esperanto Association of North America. He would end his career (1925–41) as Curator of the Paterson (New Jersey) Museum. All this activity earned him an entry in *Who's Who in America,* a distinction Lovecraft never achieved.

In "'Conservatism' Gone Mad" Morton begins by stating presciently that "I presume that Mr. H. P. Lovecraft . . . is a rather young man, who will at some future day smile at the amusing dogmatism with which he now assumes to lay down the law." There then follows a broadside on Lovecraft's racism:

> It is not surprising to find a "conservative" of Mr. Lovecraft's type unashamed to advocate the base passion of race prejudice. Here again dogmatism is made to do duty for argument. As an enemy of democracy, Mr. Lovecraft holds that a mere accident of birth should determine for all time the social status of an individual; that the color of the skin should count for more than the quality of the brain or the character. That he gives no reasons for the reactionary assertions is not surprising. Race prejudice is not defensible by reason. . . . Lovecraft has no scientific warrant for the pretence that race prejudice is more "a gift of Nature" or an essential factor in social evolution than any other prejudice whatever. It is the product of specific historic causes, and does not strike its roots deep in the foundations of human nature. Like other vices it can be readily overcome by individuals capable of rising to a rational view of existence.

Taking up the notion that Isaacson should be muzzled for uttering unpatriotic sentiments, Morton counters: "One who is not even loyal to the Bill of Rights contained in our National Constitution is hardly in a position to set himself up as an authority on patriotism." In conclusion, Morton makes another wise prediction:

> From the sample afforded in the paper under discussion it is evident that Mr. Lovecraft needs to serve a long and humble apprenticeship before he will become qualified to sit in the master's seat and to thunder forth *ex cathedra* judgments. The one thing in his favor is his evident sincerity. Let him once come to realize the value of appreciating the many points of view shared by persons as sincere as he, and better informed in certain particulars, and he will become less narrow and intolerant. His vigor of style, when wedded to clearer conceptions based on a wider comprehension, will make him a writer of power.[42]

It is passages like this that led Lovecraft ultimately to make peace with Morton, who would then become one of his closest friends.

But that was several years in the future. At the moment Lovecraft had in mind no thought but a towering rebuttal. But the interesting thing is that no genuine rebuttal ever appeared. Lovecraft even anticipated Isaacson's rejoinder in the October 1915 *Conservative,* remarking in "The

Conservative and His Critics" that if "the predicted reprisal" comes, "it will find its object, as usual, not unwilling to deliver blow for blow." In a letter he says of Isaacson: "He will call me superficial, crude, barbaric in thought, imperfect in education, offensively arrogant and bigoted, filled with venomous prejudice, wanting in good taste, etc. etc. etc. But what I can and will say in reply is also violent and comprehensive."[43] But for all his bluster, when the double attack by Isaacson and Morton came, Lovecraft remained strangely quiet. In the October 1915 *Conservative* he had already delivered another broadside against Isaacson ("Gems from *In a Minor Key*"), but this must have been written before the Isaacson-Morton response. All we get afterward is a thinly veiled allusion to Isaacson in a section of "In the Editor's Study" (*Conservative,* October 1916) entitled "The Symphonic Ideal": ". . . his [Lovecraft's] whole literary style was condemned a year ago by a learned Jew, who with Semitic shrewdness declared that these pages, with their reverence for the storied past, savour of the 'play world.'" But this, of course, is directed toward Isaacson's attack on Lovecraft's literary work, not his political or racial views.

What Lovecraft did do was write a magnificent poem, "The Isaacsonio-Mortoniad," around September 1915;[44] but he did not allow it to be published in an amateur journal, and there is no evidence that he even showed it to anyone.[45] It is a splendid verse satire, as scintillating as some of the "Ad Criticos" pieces. Lovecraft naturally picks apart every little error made by Isaacson—his misspelling of "obeisance" as "abeisance"; his attribution of the phrase "Honi soit qui mal y pense" to the French court—and attempts systematically to refute his notions of political equality: "'All men are equal! Let us have no kings!' / (How tritely thus the well-worn sentence rings.)," and his remark that "Anything which incites to prejudice of any sort should be restrained" (a foreshadowing of current debates over political correctness):

> Whilst the brave Semite loud of freedom cants.
> Against this freedom he, forgetful, rants:
> Eternal licence for himself he pleads,
> Yet seeks restraint for his opponents' deeds;
> With the same force that at oppression rails,
> He'd bar *The Jeffersonian* from the mails!

Turning to Morton, who by this time he had learned was an evangelical atheist, Lovecraft treats him with much greater respect:

Sound now the trumpets, and awake the drums,
For matchless Morton in his chariot comes!
The Dean of Darkness, wrecker of the church,
Crowing with scorn from his exalted perch!

The conclusion is somewhat amusing. The poem ends, "Tho' like a bull at us he plunges one day, / Tomorrow he'll be goring Billy Sunday!" Evidently Lovecraft was unaware that Morton had done just that: a pamphlet published by The Truth Seeker Co. in 1915 entitled *The Case of Billy Sunday* contained a lengthy broadside by Morton, "Open Letter to the Clergy." Later Morton renounced his atheism and converted to the Baha'i faith.

Lovecraft claimed to be more charmed than offended by Morton's attack ("The raging blast, sent earthward to destroy, / Is watch'd and study'd with artistic joy"), but he must have been taken aback by it and was unable to discount it as easily as he might have wished. Beyond this poem, which lay in manuscript for seventy years before being posthumously published, Lovecraft said no more on the Isaacson-Morton controversy. Regrettably, however, the whole incident does not seem to have affected his own racial views in any particular.

A side-issue of the war that began to exercise Lovecraft's attention in 1915 was the Irish question. This issue was understandably raised in a heated letter-exchange with John T. Dunn. Lovecraft's correspondence with Dunn (1915–17) covers the most critical period in modern Irish history. Since the later nineteenth century, Irish politicians and voters had been split into three main factions: those who (like Lord Dunsany in the early part of the twentieth century) supported union with England, with Irish representation (in relatively small numbers) in the British Parliament; those who supported Home Rule, or the establishment of a separate Irish parliament that would have power over many aspects of local life but would still be subordinate to the British Crown; and those who wanted outright independence from England. Lovecraft was naturally at one end of this extreme, Dunn at the other.

Irish and English politicians had been moving toward Home Rule throughout the later nineteenth century, and a Home Rule Act was finally passed in September 1914, with the six counties of Ulster, which were vehemently Unionist, being exempted from its conditions; but the war

caused a suspension of its operation. The war itself proved a great strain in Anglo-Irish relations, as the more radical groups—including Sinn Féin, the Irish Republican Brotherhood (later to become the Irish Republican Army), and the Irish Volunteers—pressed for immediate independence from England.

When Lovecraft took up the whole issue with Dunn, he did not help matters any by very painstakingly drawing a fluttering Union Jack at the head of his first extant letter to him (July 20, 1915). But aside from this bit of malicious humour, Lovecraft makes a good case for moderation:

> You take a stand as an Irishman by descent, and enumerate all the past mistakes of England in the government of Ireland. Can you not see that past experience has mellowed the judgment of England in these matters? Can you not see that every effort is being made to give justice to the Irish? That the land is being transferred from absentee landlords to the Irish people? That effective Home Rule will be in force before long?[46]

When Lovecraft goes on to say that "I believe that you are more hostile to England than the Irish still in Ireland," he is quite correct; Lovecraft knew that Irish-Americans were in fact more radical than their compatriots in Ireland. The Fenian movement had had its origins amongst the Irish immigrants in New York and Chicago in the 1850s,[47] as a means of combating anti-Irish prejudice stirred up by the Know-Nothing party (a party that, incidentally, was very strong in Rhode Island at the time[48]).

What concerned Lovecraft most about Ireland was its neutrality during the war, a stance that he saw might lead insidiously to Irish tolerance or even support for Germany and the establishment of a hostile wedge at England's very doorstep. Lovecraft was also deeply offended by Irish-Americans who openly sided not only with Ireland in its quest for independence but also with Germany itself, or at least were hostile to the Allied cause. The April 1916 *Conservative* contains a vicious verse satire, "Ye Ballade of Patrick von Flynn; or, The Hibernio-German-American England-Hater." All that can be said of this piece is that it is crude but effective. Written entirely in a parodic Irish dialect, it tells of a band of Irish-Americans who join some German-Americans in lambasting England. As the two groups begin to mingle and drink together ("Thin all began to fraternise; McNulty and von Bohn— / O'Donovan and Munsterberg, von Bulow an' Malone"), the Irishman experiences a strange transition:

> Ochone! Ochone! Where am Oi now? What conflict am Oi in?
> Do Oi belong in Dublin town or back in Ould Berlin?
> A week ago me son was borrn; his christ'nin's not far off;
> Oi wonther will I call him Mike, or Friedrich Wilhelm Hoff?

But aside from things like this, Lovecraft does get in a few good jabs concerning the United States' supposed lack of neutrality ("They all denounc'd the Prisident an' currs'd the Yankee laws / Fer bein' too un-noothral loike to hilp the German cause"). Lovecraft had the bad taste to send the poem to Dunn, noting with incredible naiveté, "I sincerely hope you will take no personal offence at the 'Ballade of Patrick von Flynn' . . ."[49] Dunn's response, as recorded by Lovecraft, is what one might have expected: "I . . . am scarcely surprised that the 'von Flynn' ballad proved less than pleasing."[50]

"Ye Ballade of Patrick von Flynn" was published at the exact time that the Easter Rebellion of 1916 occurred. This movement, which sought to take over the government of Dublin on Easter Sunday with the aid of arms sent by Germany, was organised by a small and confused band of politicians, revolutionaries, and poets including Padraic Pearse, Joseph Plunkett, Sir Roger Casement, and others. By and large it had no popular support and was a spectacular failure: the German transport ship carrying arms was intercepted by the British navy, and the rebellion itself was put down within a week by the British army, with much loss of life on both sides (450 revolutionaries and civilians, more than 100 British soldiers) and with the principal revolutionaries executed for treason.

Lovecraft does not actually say much to Dunn about the rebellion, save to note that in his latest *Conservative* (presumably the April 1916 issue containing "Ye Ballade") "I have felt impelled to retaliate upon those who call my race 'murderers' when seeking only to quell sedition."[51] He continues to argue with Dunn as to why Ireland should—at least for the duration of the war—remain allied with England. In October 1916 Lovecraft published "Old England and the 'Hyphen'" in the *Conservative,* taking up again the issue of the Irish-Americans and other "hyphenates" using the United States as a base for launching anti-English propaganda:

> The Prussian propagandists and Irish irresponsibles, failing in their clumsy efforts to use the United States as a tool of vengeance upon the Mistress of the Seas, have seized with ingenious and unexpected eagerness on a current slogan coined

> to counteract their own traitorous machinations, and have begun to fling the trite demand "America first" in the face of every American who is unable to share their puerile hatred of the British Empire.

England, Lovecraft argues, is not really a foreign country, "nor is a true love of America possible without a corresponding love for the British race and ideals that created America." I shall return to this essay—and its emphatic rejection of the notion of the "melting pot"—at a later point.

Lovecraft was heartened when in late September President Wilson sent a "pretty stinging telegram"[52] to Jeremiah A. O'Leary, a radical Irish-American attempting to prevent American support of Britain. Wilson, in the final stages of his re-election campaign, had declared, in response to O'Leary's vow not to vote for him: "I would feel deeply mortified to have you or anybody like you vote for me. Since you have access to many disloyal Americans, and I have not, I will ask you to convey this message to them."[53] This certainly shows Wilson's increasingly open support of the Allied cause, although Lovecraft could not have been pleased when Wilson won re-election in November largely on the basis of the campaign slogan "He kept us out of war."

By early 1917 Lovecraft acceded to Dunn's wish to declare a "truce, armistice, or permanent peace"[54] regarding their discussion of the Irish question; but the matter inevitably flared up again a few months later. When, in late February 1917, the United States intercepted a telegram from Germany to Mexico promising Texas, New Mexico, and Arizona if Mexico were to enter the war, American invention became inevitable. Wilson appeared before Congress to declare war against Germany on April 2, 1917; the Senate approved the war resolution two days later, the House two days after that. A draft bill was signed on May 18, and the draft was to begin on June 5.

In early July Lovecraft expressed puzzlement at Dunn's "present war attitude,"[55] going on to say: "It is my honest opinion that your opinions have been perverted by a long devotion to a biased and partisan press." The correspondence abruptly ends here. What happened? Lovecraft explains in a letter written in the next year: "[Dunn] took the war very badly, & wrote treasonable letters by the score. When the draft came, he refused to register, & was arrested by government agents. In July he was drafted, but refused to respond to the summons—hence was court-martialled & sentenced to 20

years in the Atlanta Federal Prison—where he still languishes, I presume. I am done with Dunn!"[56] Dunn in fact spent only about two years in prison, and was released shortly after the end of the war. He went on to become a priest of the Catholic church, remaining in a diocese in Ohio for more than forty years until his death in 1983. Incredibly, he paralleled Bertrand Russell in protesting both World War I and the Vietnam War![57]

Rather more significant for our purposes is not Dunn's adventures with the draft but Lovecraft's; for he announces to Dunn on May 16, 1917: ". . . I have lately tried to assume my share of the present responsibility by applying, despite my invalid condition, for enlistment in the National Guard. My attempt met with ultimate failure, for I am really too feeble for military service; but I have at least done my best to prove that my consistent opposition to pacifism is not a matter of words only."[58] What has not been observed by commentators is that Lovecraft's entire episode with the Rhode Island National Guard (R.I.N.G.) occurred *before* Wilson's signing of the draft bill (May 18, 1917), and well before the institution of the draft itself. Lovecraft must have felt that, with the declaration of war in April, it was now appropriate for him to attempt to enter the hostilities himself as a matter of patriotic duty.

It is difficult to conceive of Lovecraft making this decision. In 1915, anticipating what he thinks will be Charles D. Isaacson's accusation of why he is not himself serving in the war given his militarism, he observes: "I shall not stoop to explain that I am an invalid who would certainly be fighting under the Union Jack if able . . ."[59] This is a refrain that can be found throughout Lovecraft's letters and essays of the period. Consider now his most detailed account of his attempt at enlistment in the R.I.N.G.:

> Some time ago, impressed by my entire uselessness in the world, I resolved to attempt enlistment despite my almost invalid condition. I argued that if I chose a regiment soon to depart for France; my sheer nervous force, which is not inconsiderable, might sustain me till a bullet or piece of shrapnel could more conclusively & effectively dispose of me. Accordingly I presented myself at the recruiting station of the R.I. National Guard & applied for entry into whichever unit should first proceed to the front. On account of my lack of technical or special training, I was told that I could not enter the Field Artillery, which leaves first; but was given a blank of

> application for the Coast Artillery, which will go after a short preliminary period of defence service at one of the forts of Narragansett Bay. The questions asked me were childishly inadequate, & so far as physical requirements are concerned, would have admitted a chronic invalid. The only diseases brought into discussion were specific ailments from which I had never suffered, & of some of which I had scarcely ever heard. The medical examination related only to major organic troubles, of which I have none, & I soon found myself (as I thought) a duly enrolled private in the 9th Co. R.I.N.G.![60]

This tells us a number of important things. First, if he had actually become a member of the R.I.N.G., Lovecraft would probably not have been sent overseas into actual combat, but instead would have been merely stationed near home (a later letter declares that the 9th Coast Artillery was stationed at Fort Standish in Boston Harbour[61]) in an auxiliary capacity. Second, Lovecraft took an actual physical examination which, however cursory, revealed no major physical ailments. He elaborates elsewhere: "The Guard examination . . . was conducted in an office whose privacy was absolute, & whose floor & temperature were both suitable. The physician who conducted this examination, Maj. Augustus W. Calder, has just been rejected himself by the Federal surgeons as physically unfit."[62] This examination, if it survives, has not come to light, but its results make one much inclined to think that Lovecraft's "ailments" were largely "nervous" or, to put it bluntly, psychosomatic.

If Lovecraft passed the examination, how was it that he was not serving in the R.I.N.G.? Let him tell the story:

> As you may have deduced, I embarked upon this desperate venture without informing my mother; & as you may also have deduced, the sensation created at home was far from slight. In fact, my mother was almost prostrated with the news, since she knew that only by rare chance could a weakling like myself survive the rigorous routine of camp life. Her activities soon brought my military career to a close for the present. It required but a few words from our family physician regarding my nervous condition to annul the enlistment, though the army surgeon declared that such an annulment was highly unusual &

> almost against the regulations of the service. . . . my final status is that of a man "Rejected for physical disability."[63]

This account too is full of interest. One wonders what exactly Susie and Lovecraft's physician told the R.I.N.G. officials. Some have speculated that the latter might have revealed the fact of Winfield Lovecraft's paretic condition. The connexion between paresis and syphilis had been established in 1911, and it is likely that both Susie and the physician now had a pretty good idea of the true cause of Winfield's death. But the physical examination had presumably indicated that Lovecraft himself was not afflicted with paresis or syphilis, so it is not clear what effect the information about Winfield would have had. I think it is safer to concur with Lovecraft's own testimony and assume that the physician's account of Lovecraft's "nervous condition" caused the annulment.

Psychologically, Lovecraft confessed to a feeling of depression and disappointment. "I am told that a week of camp life and its hardships would probably wreck my constitution forever; but who can tell until it is attempted? And besides, what is the life or health of one weakling, when thousands of sturdy and useful young men are to be killed, crippled, and disfigured in a few months?"[64] I am not sure what we are to make of these frequent expressions of a wish for—or at least a lack of concern about—self-destruction. A little later he writes:

> I am feeling desolate and lonely indeed as a civilian. Practically all my personal acquaintances are now in some branch of the service, mostly Plattsburg or R.I.N.G. Yesterday one of my closest friends entered the Medical . . . Corps of the regular army. The physical tests for this corps are very light, and in spite of my previous rejection for Coast Artillery I would try to enter, were it not for the almost frantic attitude of my mother; who makes me promise every time I leave the house that I will not make another attempt at enlistment! But it is disheartening to be the one non-combatant among a profusion of proud recruits.[65]

Here was one more indication, for Lovecraft, of his being left behind in life: having failed to finish high school and enter college, he had seen his boyhood friends go on to gain good jobs in journalism, trade, and law enforcement. Now he saw them go off to war while he remained behind to write for the amateur press.

Lovecraft did in fact register for the draft on June 5; indeed, he was legally obliged to do so. He gave his occupation as "Writer." "I am told that it is possible I may be used even though I fail to pass the physical test for active military service."[66] Clearly Lovecraft was not so used. His draft record, if it survives, has also not come to light.

Another sociopolitical interest that emerged in the earliest part of Lovecraft's amateur journalism phase was temperance. This had, indeed, been an enthusiasm of remarkably early development. He announces in 1916: "It was in the sombre period of 1896 [after the death of his maternal grandmother] that I discovered an old copy of John B. Gough's *Sunshine* [*sic*] *& Shadow* & read & re-read it, backward and forward. From that time to this, I have never been at a loss for something to say against liquor!"[67] Gough (1817–1886) is an interesting case in himself. A small-time actor, he found himself falling increasingly under the influence of alcohol until he met a member of the so-called Washingtonian Movement (a temperance organisation emerging in the 1840s and employing George Washington as a sort of moral symbol of upright living) and took a pledge of abstinence in 1842. In spite of several relapses in the next few years, he ultimately became a complete teetotaller and spent the rest of his life delivering hundreds of lectures across the country to enthralled audiences.[68] His *Sunlight and Shadow; or, Gleanings from My Life Work* was published in 1880. The mere fact that this volume was in the Phillips family library indicates that one member of the family at least was sympathetic to the temperance cause. Indeed, we may not have to look far, for the town of Delavan, Illinois, was founded by Lovecraft's maternal ancestors as a temperance town. We have seen that Whipple Phillips spent at least a year there as a young man in the 1850s.

Lovecraft himself did not get a chance to say anything in public on the subject until about 1915. About this time he discovered in the amateur world an ardent colleague in the fight against the demon rum—Andrew Francis Lockhart of Milbank, South Dakota. An article entitled "More *Chain Lightning*" (*United Official Quarterly,* October 1915) is a paean to Lockhart's efforts in the cause of temperance. *Chain Lightning* was a professional magazine edited by Lockhart which, according to Lovecraft, "last April succeeded in ridding the city of Milbank of its licenced saloons, and in securing the conviction of illicit retailers and resort proprietors."

Lovecraft was aware of the difficulty of the task: "The practical difficulty in enforcing Prohibition is admittedly great, but no man of virtue can do otherwise than work toward the final downfall of Rum." He realised the money, power, and influence of the liquor interests, and the unpopularity of abstinence among a broad cross-section of the populace who think that a social drink now and then is not a bad thing. Indeed, he took particular offence at an insidious advertising campaign launched by "a notorious beer-brewing corporation of St. Louis" in which the founding fathers were all portrayed as moderate drinkers. Lovecraft noted huffily that these ads are being published "by supposedly respectable newspapers, including those of the very highest class, such as the Providence *Daily Journal* and *Evening Bulletin.*"

This remark itself points to the fact that the temperance movement was quite unpopular in Rhode Island, for a variety of reasons. A prohibition amendment to the state constitution was passed in 1885 but was repealed four years later. Rhode Island did not, in fact, ratify the Eighteenth Amendment.[69] It is true that the Baptists—the denomination of many of Lovecraft's maternal ancestors—had long been proponents of abstinence; but the modern temperance cause was really an outgrowth of the Progressive movement of the 1890s, and gained ground particularly in the first decade and a half of the new century. It is not at all surprising that Lovecraft would have become converted to temperance, for the movement had strong class- and race-conscious overtones; as one historian notes, it was led by "old stock, Protestant middle-class Americans"[70] who were repelled by what they considered the excessive drinking habits of immigrants, particularly Germans and Italians. Lovecraft unwittingly confirms this bias in his account of a Prohibition lecture given by an Episcopal clergyman in Providence in October 1916:

> . . . scarcely less interesting than the speaker were the dregs of humanity who clustered closest about him. I may say truly, that I have never before seen so many human derelicts all at once, gathered in one spot. I beheld modifications of human physiognomy which would have startled even a Hogarth, and abnormal types of gait and bodily carriage which proclaim with startling vividness man's kinship to the jungle apes. And even in the open air the stench of whiskey was appalling. To this fiendish poison, I am certain, the greater part of the squalor I

> saw was due. Many of these vermin were obviously not foreigners—I counted at least five American countenances in which a certain vanished decency half showed through the red whiskey bloating.[71]

The implication of that last sentence is that even "Americans" could sink to the level of "foreigners" under the influence of liquor. We have already seen Lovecraft referring to the foreigners in New England who "Around the wine-shops loaf with bleary eyes" ("New-England Fallen"); and he would not fail to stress the imbibing habits of the Irish in "Ye Ballade of Patrick von Flynn" (1916).

Lovecraft never missed an opportunity to champion the cause or to excoriate its opponents. His detestation of Woodrow Wilson was only augmented when the president's new Secretary of State, Robert Lansing, reversed the policy of William Jennings Bryan and reintroduced the serving of wine at state dinners. In a stinging diatribe, "Liquor and Its Friends" (*Conservative,* October 1915), Lovecraft acidly cites Mrs Lansing's remark, "Mr. Lansing and I are not extremists in the advocacy of Temperance," and defends the moral character of Bryan against his "wine-bibbing, time-serving, vice-sanctioning successor." He ominously sees in the incident "a conscious disregard for natural law and moral rectitude; a hideous disregard which will eventually wreck civilisation."

"A Remarkable Document" (*Conservative,* July 1917) praises a temperance article by Booth Tarkington published in the *American Magazine* for January 1917 and reprinted in the professional temperance magazine, the *National Enquirer,* for April 12. There are some interesting philosophical ruminations in this article which I shall discuss later.

Lovecraft found in poetry another means of advocating the cause. His first such foray was "The Power of Wine: A Satire," first published in the *Providence Evening News* for January 13, 1915, reprinted in the *Tryout* for April 1916, and then in the *National Enquirer* for March 28, 1918. Some of the satiric touches here are moderately effective:

> The youthful Tom, with Dionysiac might,
> Waylaid and robb'd an aged Jew last night,
> Whilst reeling Dick, with Bacchic ire possess'd,
> Shot down his best beloved friend in jest.

I don't know that there is a more sympathetic reference to Jews in all Lovecraft's early work than in that second line. Toward the end of the poem

the imagery becomes fantastic and horrifying:

Shriek with delight, and writhe in ghoulish mirth;
With every draught another sin hath birth;
Beat your black wings, and prance with cloven feet;
With hideous rites the friends of Chaos greet!
Minions of Hell, your fiendish tones combine,
And chant in chorus of the Pow'r of Wine!

Rather less successful is "Temperance Song," published in the *Dixie Booster* for Spring 1916. This poem, in five stanzas with a chorus, was meant to be sung to the tune of "The Bonnie Blue Flag"; the first stanza will be sufficient:

We are a band of brothers
Who fight the demon Rum,
With all our strength until at length
A better time shall come.

That internal rhyme in the third line makes us think a little incongruously of "The Poem of Ulysses." Some poems that presumably date to around this time but which were apparently not published carry on the diatribe, their only virtue being their ingenious inclusion of the chemical compound for various types of alcohol within the metrical scheme. Here is the third stanza of "The Decline and Fall of a Man of the World":

$C_{17}H_{19}N$
$O_3 + H_2O$
The hapless youth took now and then,
And knew De Quincey's woe.

"The Road to Ruin" exists in a two-stanza and a one-stanza version, both expatiating on what happened when "Young Cyril / . . . first partook with curious mind / Of C_2H_6O."

Prohibition was ratified on January 15, 1919, and was deemed to go into effect in a year. On July 1, 1919, however, the government banned the manufacture and sale of liquor, and this appears to have been the occasion of Lovecraft's "Monody on the Late King Alcohol," published in the *Tryout* for August 1919. It does little but replay the message of "The Power of Wine" ("Less are the jokes, the nonsense, and the laughter— / And less the headaches of the morning after!").

One has to wonder why Lovecraft became so obsessed with temperance. He himself was fond of declaring that "I have never tasted

intoxicating liquor, and never intend to";[72] in later years, while continuing to be theoretically in favour of Prohibition, he began to doubt its effectiveness and accepted its repeal in 1933 with cynical resignation. There is clearly a philosophical aspect to his stance, as when he states that "I can't see that it [liquor] does much save to coarsen, animalise, and degrade,"[73] and I shall have more to say about this a little later. But when Lovecraft remarks that "I am nauseated by even the distant stink of any alcoholic liquor,"[74] one is reminded of his extreme aversion to fish and cannot help wondering whether some event in infancy or boyhood triggered this severe physiological and psychological response. We know nothing of the drinking habits of Lovecraft's immediate family; even for his father, whatever other sins he may have committed, we have no evidence of any inclination toward imbibing. It would, therefore, be irresponsible and unjust to make any conjectures on the subject. What must be said is that the cause of temperance is the only aspect of social reform for which Lovecraft showed any enthusiasm in his earlier years—an enthusiasm seemingly out of keeping with the "cosmic" philosophy he had already evolved, which led him outwardly to maintain a perfect indifference to the fate of the "flyspeck-inhabiting lice"[75] on this terraqueous globe.

I have already noted that among the great benefits Lovecraft claimed to derive from amateurdom was the association of sympathetic and like-minded (or contrary-minded) individuals. For one who had been a virtual recluse during the 1908–13 period, amateur journalism allowed Lovecraft a gradual exposure to human society—initially in an indirect manner (via correspondence or discussions in amateur papers), then by direct contact. It would take several years for him to become comfortable as even a limited member of human society, but the transformation did indeed take place; and some of his early amateur associates remained for the rest of his life his closest friends.

Curiously, Lovecraft does not seem to have become close to Edward F. Daas, who recruited him into the amateur world. He noted that Daas withdrew from active participation in amateurdom around February 1916,[76] but he had returned by no later than the autumn of 1918,[77] and he visited Lovecraft in June 1920.[78] He and Lovecraft did not have much in common intellectually, as Lovecraft confesses ("our tastes are not especially

similar"[79]). Lovecraft did, however, establish a fairly regular correspondence with his old *Argosy* opponent John Russell, although his letters to Russell have not come to light. Russell did not join the UAPA immediately when contacted by Daas; but Lovecraft ushered him into the association in "Introducing Mr. John Russell" (*Conservative,* July 1915).

It is not surprising that Lovecraft managed to convince his old boyhood chum Chester Pierce Munroe to join the UAPA. Averring in "Introducing Mr. Chester Pierce Munroe" (*Conservative,* April 1915) that Chester "was always of literary tastes," Lovecraft noted that Chester wrote several short stories as a youth "and in later years became the author of more than one unpublished novel." Chester's credential, the poem "Thoughts," appeared in the *Blarney-Stone* for March–April 1915, and random other poems—"To Flavia" in the *United Amateur* (May 1916), "To Chloris" in *Amateur Special* (July 1916) (also in the *Providence Evening News* for January 2, 1917), "Twilight" in Lovecraft's own *Conservative* (October 1916)—appeared from time to time. "To Flavia" had an unfortunate typographical error: the last line, which should have begun "Small maid . . .," read instead "Swell maid . . ." Chester also wrote a poem entitled "My Friend—H. L.: A Poet of the Old School," which appeared in the *Tryout* for March 1917. It is, frankly, a pretty poor excuse for a poem, and at that was probably revised by Lovecraft. It concludes, rather touchingly:

> The world too little knows you yet
> But I do, friend of mine!
> And when your name they shall have met
> Your skill will widely shine.
> When that bright time shall come at last,
> I shall be proud to know
> The great H. L., atop Fame's mast,
> My friend of long ago![80]

I do not know how long Chester remained in the UAPA: he is on the membership list until at least July 1920. He never issued his own paper.

Perhaps the three closest colleagues in Lovecraft's early amateur period were Maurice W. Moe, Edward H. Cole, and Rheinhart Kleiner. Moe (1882–1940) was a high school teacher at Appleton High School in Appleton, Wisconsin (later at the West Division High School in Milwaukee) and one of the giants of the amateur world at the time, even though he held relatively few offices. His religious orthodoxy was a constant source of

friction with Lovecraft, and it may have helped to develop and refine Lovecraft's own hostility to religion. None of the withering polemics on religion to which Lovecraft treated Moe in his letters seem to have had any effect on their recipient.

Edward H. Cole (1892–1966) was also a well-respected amateur, but he was a staunch supporter of the NAPA and inflexibly hostile to the UAPA. He was Official Editor of the NAPA for 1911–12 and President for 1912–13. His journal, the *Olympian,* is one of the jewels of amateur literature in both content and typography, even though it lapsed after 1917 and would not resume for two decades. It was, as we have seen, Cole who urged John T. Dunn, who was forming the Providence Amateur Press Club, to get in touch with Lovecraft. Perhaps Cole's influence led Dunn momentarily to consider joining the NAPA, something Lovecraft squelched immediately: ". . . I am sorry that you admit even the possibility of the local club's being National in name. . . . Since I am so wholly a United man, I could not continue to support *The Providence Amateur* if it should affiliate itself with the National."[81]

Cole was one of the first amateurs, aside from the members of the Providence Amateur Press Club, whom Lovecraft met. He resided in various Boston suburbs and attended a meeting of the club in North Providence in late November 1914.[82] Also in 1914—possibly before his meeting with Cole—Lovecraft met the amateur William B. Stoddard at the Crown Hotel in Providence.[83] Not much is known about these encounters, but Cole became a close correspondent of Lovecraft—Stoddard did not, perhaps because he attacked the first issue of the *Conservative*[84]—and, in later years, Lovecraft would always look up Cole when he went to Boston. In spite of his prejudice against the UAPA, Cole in 1917 married Helene E. Hoffman (who had been President of the UAPA in the 1913–14 term, the period when Lovecraft joined) and persuaded himself to appear on the UAPA membership list. Lovecraft's early letters to Cole are very stiff and formal, but eventually he unwinds and becomes less self-conscious. When Cole's son E. Sherman Cole was born in 1919, Lovecraft wrote some delightfully owlish letters to him.

Rheinhart Kleiner (1892–1949) of Brooklyn came in touch with Lovecraft when he received the first issue of the *Conservative* in late March 1915. An immediate and voluble correspondence sprang up, and Kleiner of course sent Lovecraft copies of his own sporadic amateur paper, the *Piper.*

The two first met on July 1, 1916, when Kleiner and some others—including Lovecraft's recent nemeses Charles D. Isaacson and W. E. Griffin—were passing through Providence on the way to the NAPA convention in Boston.[85] Thereafter—especially when Lovecraft himself lived in Brooklyn in 1924–26—he and Kleiner would form a strong bond of friendship.

In the summer of 1916 Moe suggested to Lovecraft that a rotating correspondence cycle be formed among UAPA members. Lovecraft, already a voluminous correspondent, readily assented to the plan and suggested Kleiner as a third member. Moe suggested a fourth—Ira A. Cole, an amateur in Bazine, Kansas, and editor of the *Plainsman.* Cole (no relation to Edward H. Cole) was a somewhat peculiar individual whom Lovecraft described in 1922 as follows:

> Ira A. Cole was a strange and brilliant character—an utterly illiterate ranchman and ex-cowboy of Western Kansas who possessed a streak of brilliant poetic genius. . . . His imagination was the most weird and active I have ever seen in any human being. But in the end that very streak of overdeveloped imagination and emotionalism was his aesthetic undoing. Worked upon by a hectic and freakish "Pentecostal" revivalist, he "got religion" and became an absolutely impossible fanatic in his eccentric sect. He even reached the hallucination stage—he fancied strange voices spoke gospel messages through his tongue—in languages he did not understand. He is a Pentecostal preacher and small farmer now, living in Boulder, Colorado.[86]

But that was several years in the future. Lovecraft published Cole's poems, "The Dream of a Golden Age" and "In Vita Elysium," in the *Conservative* for July 1915 and July 1917, respectively. The correspondence cycle started up, under the name (invented by Moe) Kleicomolo, derived from the first syllables of the last names of each member. (There is some debate in modern Lovecraft studies as to how to pronounce this coinage; I say Klei-co-MO-lo while others say Klei-CO-mo-lo.) Each member would write a letter addressed to the other three, in doing so leaving out his own syllable from the compound (hence Lovecraft would address the others as "Dear Kleicomo"; Kleiner as "Dear Comolo"; and so on). The idea at the outset was to rescue letter-writing as an art form from oblivion; whether or not the group succeeded, it certainly gave an impetus to Lovecraft's own letter-

writing and to the development of his philosophical thought. I shall study the substance of Lovecraft's remarks a little later; at the moment we can turn our attention to an unsigned article entitled "The Kleicomolo" published in the *United Amateur* for March 1919. Some have thought this the work of Lovecraft, but the style does not strike me as at all Lovecraftian. My feeling is that it was written by Kleiner. The author of the article, after giving potted biographies of the four members, goes on to describe the precise working of the correspondence cycle:

> Klei writes to Co, who adds his instalment and sends the whole to Mo. Mo does the same and sends it to Lo, and Lo completes the articles and sends it back to Klei, who takes out his letter, writes another, and starts the packet around again. With the admission of Gal [Alfred Galpin] and the gradual warming up of the writers to the opportunity, the time required for a whole circuit has gradually increased until now it takes from six to ten months, although prompt attention to the letter upon its arrival would cut that down to two or three months. One of the members [Moe?] was desirous of keeping a complete copy of the correspondence, and began by copying the letters as they went through his hands. This task soon became so great as to be impracticable, and the rest elected him librarian and promised to send him carbon copies of their instalments. It is not at all unlikely that the future may see the best parts of the *Kleicomolo* given to the public as a book.[87]

Such a book would be a consummation devoutly to be wished, but it is not clear what has happened to the sections of the Kleicomolo correspondence aside from Lovecraft's. If, as I believe, Moe was the librarian, he appears to have turned over only Lovecraft's segments to August Derleth and Donald Wandrei for publication in the *Selected Letters.* Even the whereabouts of the originals of these are not known. In any event, Lovecraft's career as letter-writer had emphatically begun.

A more distant colleague, Andrew Francis Lockhart, is of some interest in having written the first genuine article on Lovecraft. A long-running but intermittent series of articles entitled "Little Journeys to the Homes of Prominent Amateurs" was revived when Lockhart wrote a biographical piece on Lovecraft for the September 1915 issue of the *United Amateur.* It is a testimonial to Lovecraft's renown after only a year and a half in

amateurdom that he was chosen to be the first subject for this series. Lockhart, of course, did not visit Lovecraft but clearly corresponded extensively with him. The article is a little sentimental and somewhat of a panegyric, but perhaps that is to be expected: "Just why he holds a firm grip on my heart-strings is something of a mystery to me. Perhaps it is because of his wholesome ideals; perhaps it is because he is a recluse, content to nose among books of ancient lore; perhaps it's because of his physical afflictions; his love of things beautiful in Life, his ardent advocacy of temperance, cleanliness and purity—I don't know."[88] This passage itself reveals how Lovecraft is already fashioning a precise image of himself: the recluse buried in books; the man of frail health and therefore not suited to the turmoil of the outside world. What these "physical afflictions" could have been is a mystery: the article later notes that, just as he was about to enter college, "his feeble health gave way, and since then he has been physically incapacitated and rendered almost an invalid." Whether this is the case or not, it is clearly what Lovecraft wanted Lockhart (and the whole UAPA) to believe.

Lovecraft's photograph was printed on the cover of this issue of the *United Amateur*. He repaid Lockhart the favour by writing a biography of him (under his "El Imparcial" pseudonym) as the second instalment of the "Little Journeys" series in the *United Amateur* for October 1915. The fifth article in the series, published in July 1917, was signed "El Imparcial" and discusses the young amateur Eleanor J. Barnhart. Lovecraft expected great things of Barnhart, especially as he thought her one of the best fiction-writers in amateurdom, but she evidently dropped out shortly after the writing of this piece.

In the meantime changes of some significance were occurring in Lovecraft's family life. He had been living alone with his mother at 598 Angell Street since 1904: with his grandfather Whipple Phillips dead, his younger aunt Annie married and living in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and his elder aunt Lillian married and living in Providence but some distance away, the atmosphere of 598 might well have become somewhat claustrophobic. I have already noted Clara Hess describing the "strange and shutup air" of the house at about this time. Then, on April 26, 1915, after thirteen years of marriage to Lillian, Lovecraft's uncle Franklin Chase Clark died at the age of sixty-seven.

It is difficult to know how close Lovecraft was to Clark beyond his teenage years. After Whipple Phillips's death in 1904, Clark would have been the only adult male whom Lovecraft could have regarded as a father-figure. His other uncle by marriage, Edward Francis Gamwell, was much younger than Dr Clark and was in any case living in another state. As for Edwin E. Phillips, it is evident from Lovecraft's silence about him that he did not care much for his uncle. We can certainly not gauge Lovecraft's emotions about Dr Clark from his "Elegy on Franklin Chase Clark, M.D.," which appeared in the *Providence Evening News* three days after his death, for a more wooden, lifeless, and mechanical poem would be difficult to find. Not a particle of genuine feeling can be found in this piece; what we find instead is some obnoxious class consciousness in sharp contrast to the later "Brotherhood":

> Say not that in the void beyond Death's door
> The mighty and the lowly are the same;
> Can boorish dust, in life but little more,
> Equality with mental essence claim?

About a year and a half later, on the very last day of 1916, Lovecraft's cousin Phillips Gamwell died of tuberculosis at the age of eighteen. Phillips, the only one of Annie E. Phillips Gamwell's and Edward F. Gamwell's children to survive beyond infancy, was the only male member of Lovecraft's family of his own generation. Lovecraft's various references to him make it clear that he was very fond of Phillips, even though he could only have seen him when he visited Cambridge or when Phillips came down to Providence. Lovecraft observes that Phillips, when he was twelve years old (i.e., in 1910), had "blossomed out as a piquant letter-writer eager to discuss the various literary and scientific topics broached during our occasional personal coversations,"[89] and Lovecraft attributes his fondness for letter-writing to four or five years' correspondence with Phillips. Lovecraft also remarks attempting to tutor Phillips in mathematics in 1915, finding that he had no better command of the subject than his pupil.[90] The next year Lovecraft, Phillips, and Annie Gamwell explored Trinity Church in Newport.[91] Lovecraft also gave Phillips his stamp-collection at about this time.[92]

Annie had taken her son to Roswell, Colorado, in October 1916 for his health, but his tuberculosis had obviously advanced too far and he died there on December 31, 1916. Lovecraft's "Elegy on Phillips Gamwell,

Esq.," published in the *Providence Evening News* for January 5, 1917, is as uninspired as his tribute to Dr Clark: "Such was the youth, whose stainless mind and heart / Combin'd the best of Nature and of Art . . ." After Phillips's death, Annie returned to Providence, apparently living with her brother Edwin until his death on November 14, 1918 (and it is remarkable that Lovecraft says almost nothing about this event in any letters of the period or later), then probably in various rented quarters until early 1919, when she moved in with Lovecraft at 598 Angell Street.

Lovecraft, so far as I can tell, was not actually *doing* much during this period aside from writing; but he had discovered one entertaining form of relaxation—moviegoing. His enthusiasm for the drama had waned by around 1910, which roughly coincided with the emergence of film as a popular, if not an aesthetically distinguished, form of entertainment. By 1910 there were already 5000 nickelodeons throughout the country, even if these were regarded largely as entertainment for the working classes.[93] Lovecraft reports that the first cinema shows in Providence were in March 1906; and, even though he "knew too much of literature & drama not to recognise the utter & unrelieved hokum of the moving picture," he attended them anyway—"in the same spirit that I had read Nick Carter, Old King Brady, & Frank Reade in nickel-novel form."[94] One develops the idea that watching films may have occupied some, perhaps much, of the "blank" years of 1908–13, as a letter of 1915 suggests: "As you surmise, I am a devotee of the motion picture, since I can attend shows at any time, whereas my ill health seldom permits me to make definite engagements or purchase real theatre tickets in advance. Some modern films are really worth seeing, though when I first knew moving pictures their only value was to destroy time."[95] And yet, Lovecraft was willing at this time to entertain the possibility that film might eventually evolve into an aesthetically viable medium: "The moving picture has infinite possibilities for literary and artistic good when rightly presented, and having achieved a permanent place, seems destined eventually to convey the liberal arts to multitudes hitherto denied their enjoyment" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* May 1915). Nearly a century later we are perhaps still waiting for this eventuality to occur.

When Rheinhart Kleiner wrote "To Mary of the Movies" in the *Piper* for September 1915, Lovecraft immediately responded with "To Charlie of

the Comics" (*Providence Amateur,* February 1916). It is no surprise that the two poets chose to pay tribute to Mary Pickford and Charlie Chaplin, as they were the first true "stars" of the film industry. Lovecraft's undistinguished poem is notable only for its relative modernity of subject and style and its use of octosyllabic quatrains:

> I've seen you as an artist rare,
> With brush and paint-smear'd palette;
> I've seen you fan the empty air
> With ill-intention'd mallet.
> I've watch'd you woo a winsome fay
> (You must a dream to her be),
> But ne'er have caught you in a play
> Without that cane and derby!

The poem ends with an outrageous "rouse us / trousers" rhyme, which, as Lovecraft admitted to the metrical purist Kleiner, "is not meant to be perfect —merely *allowable.*"[96]

Lovecraft clearly had a fondness for Chaplin, remarking: "Chaplin is infinitely amusing—too good for the rather vulgar films he used to appear in—and I hope he will in future be an exponent of more refined comedy."[97] Douglas Fairbanks "doubtless has much less of actual genius," but Lovecraft enjoyed his films "because there is a certain wholesomeness present, which the Chaplin type sometimes lacks."[98]

But Lovecraft's doubt as to the aesthetic substance of film is evident in "To Mistress Sophia Simple, Queen of the Cinema," dated to August 1917 on the manuscript but not published until the November 1919 *United Amateur,* when it appeared along with the poem that inspired it, Kleiner's "To a Movie Star." This exquisite little satire in quatrains skewers the insipid film heroine very effectively:

> Your eyes, we vow, surpass the stars;
> Your mouth is like the bow of Cupid;
> Your rose-ting'd cheeks no wrinkle mars—
> Yet why are you so sweetly stupid?

This leads us to a rather peculiar episode that occurred in January 1917. Fay's Theatre, located at the corner of Union and Washington Streets in downtown Providence, offered a prize of $25 for the best review of a film that Lovecraft calls *The Image-Maker of Thebes,* but whose title as listed in reference works is simply *The Image Maker;* it was shown (according to

newspaper advertisements) on January 22–24, 1917. Lovecraft, having nothing better to do, went to see the film and participated in the contest. The five-reel film—about a modern-day couple in Florida who eventually realise that they are reincarnated counterparts of ancient Egyptians—was even worse than he expected: "a rough-hewn amateurish affair dealing with reincarnation in a pitifully feeble & hackneyed manner, containing not the slightest subtlety or technical skill in plot, directing, or acting."[99] Lovecraft, now giving up hope of winning the contest, wrote a sizzling four-page review "in my customary U.A.P.A. manner—which would, in colloquial parlance, be designated as a 'roast'!" To his amazement, he won the contest!

It would be a delight to have this review—the only movie review Lovecraft ever wrote, so far as I can tell—but efforts made by Marc A. Michaud and myself in 1977 to locate the files of Fay's Theatre (which had been torn down in 1951) proved unavailing. *The Image-Maker* was directed by Edgar Moore and starred Valda Valkyrien, the Baroness Dewitz. Although today a very obscure film (no copy appears to survive), it was actually well received in its day; but a representative review—from the *New York Dramatic Mirror*—may give some hint as to why Lovecraft himself found the film not at all to his taste: "'The Image Maker' will satisfy that multitude which likes Romance—spelt with a capital R—in motion pictures. . . . There are thrilling adventures frequently enough in both narratives to satisfy even the most blasé and the happily ended love affair will be liked. . . . This is the kind of a picture the crowd likes and an exhibitor will make no mistake in booking it."[100]

This episode is of interest only because Lovecraft's later comments on film are increasingly critical. As we have seen, he by no means lacked an appreciation of the artistic potential of film; but shortly after winning the Fay's Theatre award he remarked to Dunn:

> Save for a few Triangle, Paramount & Vitagraph pictures, everything I have seen is absolute trash—though some are quite harmless & amusing. Worst of all are the *serials*—whose authors are probably the same poor creatures that wrote the "dime novels" of yesterday. I have yet to see a serial film worth the time wasted in looking at it—or dozing over it. The technique could be surpassed by most ten year old children.[101]

In 1921 he remarked to his mother that "In matters of scenery the moving picture can of course leave the stage far behind; though this hardly atones for the lack of sound and colour."[102] Even with the advent of sound pictures in 1927, Lovecraft's low opinion of film persisted, and certain early horror films based upon some of his favourite literary works incited his especial ire. With rare exceptions, Lovecraft did not care for the surprising number of films he saw in the course of his life.

For three years Lovecraft had written reams of essays, poems, and reviews of amateur papers. Would he ever resume the fiction writing that had showed such promise up to 1908? In 1915 Lovecraft wrote to the amateur G. W. Macauley: "I wish that I could write fiction, but it seems almost an impossibility."[103] Macauley claims that he "violently disagreed"—not because he had actually seen any of Lovecraft's fiction but because, having sent a story to Lovecraft for comment, he had received such an acute and elaborate analysis that he became convinced that Lovecraft had the short-story writing faculty within him. Criticism of fiction and fiction-writing are, of course, two different things, but in Lovecraft's case one cannot help feeling that the frequency with which he remarks on the failings of stories published in the amateur press points to a growing urge to prove that he can do better. Fiction was, of course, always the weakest point in the amateur press, not only because it is generally harder to master than standard essay-writing but because the space limitations in amateur papers did not allow the publication of much beyond sketches or vignettes.

One comment in particular, discussing a story by William T. Harrington, is highly illuminating in showing a key shift of Lovecraft's preferences:

> In this tale, Mr. Harrington exhibits at least a strong ambition to write, and such energy, if well directed, may eventually make of him one of our leading authors of fiction. Just now, however, we must protest against his taste in subject and technique. His models are obviously not of the classical order, and his ideas of probability are far from unexceptionable. In developing the power of narration, it is generally best . . . to discard the thought of elaborate plots and thrilling climaxes, and to begin instead with the plain and simple description of actual incidents with which the author is familiar. . . . Meanwhile, above all things he should read classic fiction, abstaining entirely from the *Wild*

> *West Weeklies* and the like. ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* March 1915)

So the "elaborate plots and thrilling climaxes" of the dime novels are now *verboten!* Even though Lovecraft was at this time still reading the *Argosy, All-Story,* and other early pulp magazines, he instead encouraged Harrington to read Scott, Cooper, and Poe. There are, certainly, plenty of thrills in these authors, but they are of a "classic" variety that Lovecraft could approve. About a year later he gave a lengthy criticism of the imaginatively titled "A Story" by David H. Whittier, a teenager whom Lovecraft had lauded in "The Youth of Today" (*Conservative,* October 1915). In particular, the use of coincidence offends him: "In an artistically constructed tale, the various situations all develop naturally out of that original cause which in the end brings about the climax . . ." Lovecraft could not, however, help adding tartly that "such . . . coincidences in stories are by no means uncommon among even the most prominent and widely advertised professional fiction-blacksmiths of the day" ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* June 1916).

Lovecraft finally allowed his credential, "The Alchemist," to be printed in the *United Amateur* for November 1916, two and a half years after he had entered amateurdom. It was to be expected that he would himself attack it in the "Department of Public Criticism" (*United Amateur,* May 1917):

> *The United Amateur* for November is heavily burdened with a sombre and sinister short story from our own pen, entitled "The Alchemist". This is our long unpublished credential to the United, and constitutes the first and only piece of fiction we have ever laid before a critical and discerning public; wherefore we must needs beg all the charitable indulgence the Association can extend to an humble though ambitious tyro.

The single word "ambitious" may suggest Lovecraft's desire to write more fiction if this one specimen, however much he may deprecate it himself, receives favourable notice. It appears to have done just that, but even so it would still be more than half a year before Lovecraft would break his self-imposed nine-year ban on fiction-writing. That he finally did so, writing "The Tomb" and "Dagon" in quick succession in the summer of 1917, can be attributed in large part to the encouragement of a new associate, W. Paul Cook of Athol, Massachusetts, who would be a significant presence throughout the rest of Lovecraft's life.

8. Dreamers and Visionaries

(1917–1919 [I])

W. Paul Cook (1881–1948), who also appeared in the amateur press as Willis Tete Crossman, had long been a giant in the amateur world. Cook was unmistakably a New Englander: he had been born in Vermont; he was, as Lovecraft was fond of pointing out, a direct descendant of the colonial governor Benning Wentworth of New Hampshire; and he resided for much of his adult life in Athol, Massachusetts. One of his earliest amateur journals was the *Monadnock Monthly,* named for the mountain in New Hampshire near his home in Athol. For years he was the head of the printing department of the *Athol Transcript,* and his access to printing equipment and his devotion to the amateur cause permitted him to be a remarkable philanthropist in printing amateur journals virtually at cost. We have seen that he began printing the *Conservative* in 1917. During his term as President of the UAPA Lovecraft appointed Cook Official Printer, a position he held for three consecutive years (1917–20) and again for three more years in 1922–25. Curiously, at the same time he served as Official Editor of the NAPA (1918–19) and its President (1919–20).[1]

After his first meeting with Cook in September 1917 (which I shall discuss in greater detail later) Lovecraft summed him up as follows: "Though not overwhelmingly bookish, he has a keen mind, dry humour, & an infinite & quite encyclopaedic knowledge of the events & personages of amateur journalism past & present."[2] What he does not say here is that Cook had a strong taste in weird fiction; indeed, Lovecraft would later admit that Cook's "library was the most remarkable collection of fantastic & other material that I have ever seen assembled in one place,"[3] and he would frequently borrow many rare books to which he himself did not have access. It is scarcely to be doubted that Cook, during his visit with Lovecraft, discussed this topic of mutual interest. Whether at this time he

convinced Lovecraft to let him print his other juvenile tale, "The Beast in the Cave," is not clear; at any rate, that story appeared in Cook's *Vagrant* (a NAPA paper) for June 1918.

Lovecraft makes it very clear that Cook's encouragement was instrumental in his resumption of weird writing:

> In 1908, when I was 18, I was disgusted by my lack of technical experience [in fiction-writing]; & *burned all my stories (of which the number was infinite) but two;* resolving (amusing thought!) to turn to verse in the future. Then, years later, I published these two yarns in an amateur paper; where they were so well received that I began to consider resumption. Finally an amateur editor & critic named W. Paul Cook . . . egged me on to the point of actual resumption, & "The Tomb"—with all its stiffness—was the result. Next came "Dagon" . . .[4]

The chronology here is a little confused: "The Beast in the Cave" was published well after Lovecraft resumed fiction-writing in the summer of 1917. In any event, Lovecraft—although he apparently did not know it at the time—had found his *métier*. "The Tomb" was written in June 1917, "Dagon" in July.[5] One instance of the encouragement Cook provided was an effusive article entitled "Howard P. Lovecraft's Fiction," prefacing his printing of "Dagon" in the *Vagrant* for November 1919:

> Howard P. Lovecraft is widely and favorably known throughout the amateur journalistic world as a poet, and in a lesser degree as an editorial and essay writer. As a story-writer he is practically unknown, partly because of the scarcity of publications large enough to accommodate much prose, and partly because he does not consider himself a competent story-teller. His first story to appear in the amateur press was "The Alchemist," published in the *United Amateur.* This story was enough to stamp him as a pupil of Poe in its unnatural, mystical and actually morbid outlook, without a hint of the bright outdoors or of real life. His second story, "The Beast in the Cave," published in the *Vagrant,* was far inferior in every respect, even in being given a modern setting, which may be counted as against it in Mr. Lovecraft's case. The outstanding feature of this really slight effort was the skill with which an atmosphere was created.

> In "Dagon," in this issue of the *Vagrant,* Mr. Lovecraft steps into his own as a writer of fiction. In reading this story, two or three names of short-story writers are immediately called to mind. First of all, of course, Poe; and Mr. Lovecraft, I believe, would be the first to acknowledge his allegiance to our American master. Second, Maupassant; and I am quite sure that Mr. Lovecraft would deny any kinship with the great Frenchman.
>
> Mr. Lovecraft with "Dagon" is not through as a contributor of fiction to the amateur press. He will never be as voluminous a fiction writer as a poet, but we may confidently expect to see him advance even beyond the high mark he has set in "Dagon."
>
> I cannot fully appreciate Mr. Lovecraft as a poet . . . But I can and do appreciate him as a story-writer. He is at this day the only amateur story-writer worthy of more than a polite passing notice.[6]

Almost everything in this statement is correct, except perhaps Cook's suspicion of an influence of Guy de Maupassant, whom Lovecraft had probably not read at this time, although he would later find much of Maupassant's weird work compelling. This remarkable paean—I know of nothing quite like it in the amateur press, even including Lovecraft's various "introductions" of his friends and colleagues into amateurdom—could only have heartened Lovecraft, who required the approbation of friends to overcome his ingrained diffidence over the quality of his fictional work. In this case, the approbation was entirely justified.

It is worth pondering the general influence of Poe on Lovecraft's early tales, since Poe certainly looms large over the bulk of Lovecraft's fiction up to at least 1923. We have seen that, for all his enthusiasm for Poe when he first discovered him in 1898, Lovecraft's juvenile fiction bears relatively few similarities to Poe's work. This changes abruptly with "The Tomb," which makes no secret of its borrowings from Poe. And yet, even "The Tomb" and "The Outsider" (1921), Lovecraft's most obviously Poe-esque tales, are far from being mere pastiches; but that Lovecraft found in Poe a model both in style and in overall short-story construction is evident. Many of Lovecraft's early tales—and, for that matter, even later ones—open with that ponderous enunciation of a general truth which the story itself purports to instantiate: recall Poe's memorable opening of "Berenice," "Misery is

manifold. The wretchedness of earth is multiform."[7] Poe himself may well have derived this pseudo-nonfictional opening from the eighteenth-century essayists, by whom he was influenced scarcely less than Lovecraft was; and we will see that both Poe and Lovecraft utilised it in order to create a sort of "hoax-like" atmosphere whereby the story actually passes for a factual account.

Late in life Lovecraft actually disputed that his style was directly derived from Poe. In remarking on a story by Richard F. Searight which some thought to be influenced by Lovecraft, he states:

> . . . I can't see this in any marked degree. Rather would I say that you have simply chosen the same general cast of language which I prefer—but which hundreds of others, long before I was born, have preferred. Many think I have derived this style exclusively from Poe—which (despite the strong influence of Poe on me) is another typical mistake of uninformed modernism. This style is no especial attribute of Poe, but is simply *the major traditional way of handling English narrative prose.* If I picked it up through any especial influence, that influence is probably the practice of the 18th century rather than Poe . . .[8]

I think there is a certain amount of posturing here. It is true enough that Lovecraft's fictional style is a sort of amalgam of the eighteenth-century essayists and Poe; and by the time he wrote the above (1935) he had indeed gotten well away from any direct stylistic imitation of Poe. But the fact is that the idiom Lovecraft evolved in his early tales—dense, a little overheated, laced with archaic and recondite terms, almost wholly lacking in "realistic" character portrayal, and almost entirely given over to exposition and narration, with a near-complete absence of dialogue—is clearly derived from Poe and is *not* the "major traditional way of handling English narrative prose," as the very different work of Hawthorne, Thackeray, or Joseph Conrad will amply testify.

Lovecraft elsewhere is a little more honest in assessing the Poe influence on himself: "Since Poe affected me most of all horror-writers, I can never feel that a tale starts out right unless it has something of his manner. I could never plunge into a thing abruptly, as the popular writers do. To my mind it is necessary to establish a setting & avenue of approach before the main show can adequately begin."[9] This is exactly a reference

to that quasi-nonfictional opening that both Poe and Lovecraft felt was essential to set the stage for the events to follow. So much, indeed, did Lovecraft customarily acknowledge the Poe influence that he would go to the opposite extreme, as in his famous lament of 1929: "There are my 'Poe' pieces & my 'Dunsany' pieces—but alas—where are any 'Lovecraft' pieces?"[10]

The most obvious stylistic feature common to both Poe and Lovecraft is the use of adjectives. In Lovecraft's case this has been derisively termed "adjectivitis," as if there is some canonical number of adjectives per square inch that are permissible and that the slightest excess is cause for frenzied condemnation. But this sort of criticism is merely a holdover from an outmoded and superficial realism that vaunted the barebones style of a Hemingway or a Sherwood Anderson as the sole acceptable model for English prose. We have seen that Lovecraft was predominantly influenced by the "Asianic" style of Johnson and Gibbon as opposed to the "Attic" style of Swift and Addison; and few nowadays—especially now that the Thomas Pynchons and Gore Vidals of the world have restored richness of texture to modern English fiction—will condemn Lovecraft without a hearing for the use of such a style.

The specific object of this criticism, however, is the use of words that transparently suggest or are meant to inspire horror. Edmund Wilson speaks for many when he declares pontifically:

> One of Lovecraft's worst faults is his incessant effort to work up the expectations of the reader by sprinkling his stories with such adjectives as "horrible," "terrible," "frightful," "awesome," "eerie," "weird," "forbidden," "unhallowed," "unholy," "blasphemous," "hellish" and "infernal." Surely one of the primary rules for writing an effective tale of horror is never to use any of these words . . .[11]

If Wilson's dictum were followed literally, there would scarcely be any horror stories in existence today. Firstly, Lovecraft clearly derived this stylistic device from Poe. Consider "A Descent into the Maelström": "To the right and left, as far as the eye could reach, there lay outstretched, like ramparts of the world, lines of horridly black and beetling cliff, whose character of gloom was but the more forcibly illustrated by the surf which reared high up against it its white and ghastly crest, howling and shrieking for ever."[12] It is only in Lovecraft's inferior work that this device becomes

overused or hackneyed. Secondly, it has incredibly escaped most observers that such a technique, especially in first-person narration, serves as a critical indication of the protagonist's state of mind, becoming therefore an element in character portrayal.

Nevertheless, I think a case could be made that Lovecraft spent the better part of his fictional career in attempting to escape—or, at best, master or refine—the stylistic influence of Poe, as his frequent remarks in the last decade of his life on the need for simplicity of expression and his exemplification of this principle in the evolution of his later "scientific" manner suggest.

If in style and texture Lovecraft owes much to Poe, he owes scarcely less to Poe's theory and practice of story-construction. I do not at the moment wish to examine Lovecraft's theory of weird fiction, as it does not seem to have taken shape until about 1921; but, right from the beginning, Lovecraft intuitively adopted many of the principles of short-story technique that (as he himself points out in "Supernatural Horror in Literature") Poe virtually invented and exemplified in his work—"such things as the maintenance of a single mood and achievement of a single impression in a tale, and the rigorous paring down of incidents to such as have a direct bearing on the plot and will figure prominently in the climax." This "paring down" applies both to word-choice and to overall structure, and we will find that all Lovecraft's tales—even those that might be classified as short novels—adhere to this principle.

There is, then, no question of the general influence of Poe upon Lovecraft's early work, and I shall point to the influence of specific works by Poe in my analysis of Lovecraft's stories; but a more recent influence on Lovecraft's actual commencement of fiction-writing in 1917 may be worth examining. In Lovecraft's library are two volumes on short-story writing: *Facts, Thought, and Imagination: A Book on Writing* by Henry Seidel Canby, Frederick Erastus Pierce, and W. H. Durham (1917), and *Writing the Short-Story* by J. Berg Esenwein (1909), of which Lovecraft had the 1918 printing. The fact that he apparently acquired these two volumes at the very outset of his fiction-writing career suggests that he wished some theoretical and practical advice on a literary mode he had not attempted in nearly a decade.

The book by Canby, Pierce, and Durham is a rather abstract study of the components of the short story and what it seeks to accomplish. Perhaps

most interesting for our purposes is the chapter on "Imagination" by W. H. Durham. Maintaining that any story that "does more than merely thrill or amuse the reader" has behind it "the effort to convey effectively some kind of idea," Durham emphasises that "Any writer of fiction who takes his work at all seriously is attempting to record his impression of life," and that a story must therefore be true to life.[13] It is important to realise that this volume is not stressing realism in the narrow sense, a point brought home by its inclusion of H. G. Wells's "The Story of the Last Trump" as one of several examples of the model short story; this book, therefore, may have helped to plant a seed in Lovecraft's mind that the weird tale could be a serious form of expression and not merely a potboiler—entertaining though that may be—of the sort found in the Munsey magazines.

Esenwein's treatise is more of a nuts-and-bolts practical guide to writing and selling the short story, complete with recommendations on how to type the manuscript, how to write a cover letter, what markets are suitable for various types of work, and other mundane details. Its orientation is much less aesthetically refined than the Canby volume, but it nevertheless stresses the fundamental way in which the short story differs from the novel: *"A short-story produces a singleness of effect denied to the novel."* [14] This principle is manifestly derived from Poe, and Esenwein makes no secret of the fact, going on to cite the canonical passage in Poe's essay-review of Hawthorne where it is first enunciated. Esenwein goes on to list seven characteristics of the short story: 1. A Single Predominating Incident. 2. A Single Preeminent Character. 3. Imagination. 4. Plot. 5. Compression. 6. Organization. 7. Unity of Impression.[15] There is nothing remarkable here, and this too is ultimately derived from Poe; Lovecraft adhered to many of these conceptions, but they are so general that he is likely to have derived them independently merely through an analytical study of Poe's stories.

One influence that some very recent research has rendered much more problematical is that of the Munsey magazines. It is certainly likely that Lovecraft continued to read some of these magazines after his contretemps in the *Argosy* in 1913–14; but some of the "evidence" that has hitherto been advanced on this point has now been shown to be invalid. Lovecraft frequently remarks that he preserved the issue of the *All-Story* containing A. Merritt's spectacular novelette, "The Moon Pool" (June 22, 1918), so that he probably read this magazine at least up to this date and perhaps up to the time it consolidated with the *Argosy* (July 24, 1920). But the belief that he

read the *Argosy* itself as late as 1919 or 1920 has long been based upon letters Lovecraft purportedly published in that magazine under the pseudonym "Augustus T. Swift." Two such letters have been discovered, in the issues for November 15, 1919, and May 22, 1920. But these letters are almost certain to be spurious.

At this time the *Argosy* letter column was no longer supplying complete addresses of letter-writers but merely the city of origin; both these letters are, to be sure, written from Providence, but a quick check of the Providence city directory for 1919–20 reveals an actual individual named Augustus T. Swift, a teacher, living at 122 Rochambeau Avenue. These letters have a superficially Lovecraftian tone to them (there is one complaint about too much "hugging and kissing" in some stories), but other features are highly peculiar, both in phraseology and in actual content. The second letter in particular, commenting on a whaling story by a writer named Reynolds, declares: "Being a native of New Bedford, Massachusetts, and having heard whale-ship talk from infancy, I followed the detailed descriptions of polar scenes with unusual interest." Lovecraft a native of New Bedford, Massachusetts? I don't think so.

The question arises as to how these letters were attributed to Lovecraft to begin with. The "culprit" is Larry Farsaci, editor of the fanzine *Golden Atom.* In the issue for December 1940 Farsaci—who was a well-known collector of early pulp magazines—reprinted these two letters along with a genuine letter by Lovecraft (from the *All-Story* of August 15, 1914). Elsewhere in the issue he gave a list of Lovecraft's pseudonyms, derived largely from a list printed earlier by R. H. Barlow, but with Augustus T. Swift added and with the note: "This last is your ed's belief."[16] From here, the Augustus T. Swift "pseudonym" was picked up by many subsequent scholars and bibliographers who, if they had actually seen the letters in question, should have known better. Contrived "explanations" for the "pseudonym" have also appeared ("Augustus" standing for the Augustan age; "Swift" standing either for the boy's writer Tom Swift or for Jonathan Swift). But the existence of a real Augustus T. Swift can, I think, put this entire episode to rest.

Some consequences follow from the exposure of the spuriousness of these letters. There is now no concrete evidence that Lovecraft read the *Argosy* subsequent to 1914. Much of A. Merritt's work, which Lovecraft did indeed enjoy, appeared here, although some of it much later (e.g., *The*

Dwellers in the Mirage was serialised in 1932, *Creep, Shadow!* in 1934); *The Metal Monster,* serialised in 1920, was not read by Lovecraft until 1934. The influence of Merritt on Lovecraft, and of Lovecraft on Merritt, is a fascinating subject that needs to be addressed later. Moreover, the two Augustus T. Swift letters effusively praise Francis Stevens (the pseudonym of Gertrude Bennett), although they believe the author to be a man. Stevens's *The Citadel of Fear* (serialised 1918) and *Claimed* (serialised 1920) are indeed quite striking works that Lovecraft might conceivably have enjoyed; but we shall now need other evidence to testify to his fondness for them. (Still more awkwardly, both these novels have been reprinted in paperback with blurbs from the Swift letters attributed to Lovecraft!)

I am still not certain why Lovecraft chose to resume fiction-writing at this exact time. Is it perhaps because his poetry was being showered with abuse in the amateur press for being antiquated and void of feeling? If Lovecraft expected his fiction to be better received, he was on the whole to be disappointed. His own colleagues certainly sang his praises in brief critical notices of his tales; but many amateurs, stolidly unreceptive to the weird, found his tales even less bearable than his poems. Is there a connexion with his failed attempt to enlist, which occurred only a month or so before he wrote "The Tomb"? One does not wish to engage in armchair psychoanalysis with so little evidence at hand; suffice it to say that literature is fortunate for Lovecraft's ultimate realisation that fiction, and not poetry or essays, was his chosen medium. His first several tales show remarkable promise, and they are the vanguard for the great work of the last decade of his life.

In "The Tomb" a first-person narrator tells of his lonely and secluded life: "My name is Jervas Dudley, and from earliest childhood I have been a dreamer and a visionary." We become immediately suspicious of his account, since he admits to telling it within the confines of an insane asylum; but he believes that his story will vindicate him and his belief that "there is no sharp distinction betwixt the real and the unreal." Dudley discovers, in a wooded hollow near his home, a tomb that houses the remains of a family, the Hydes, that dwelt in a mansion nearby. This mansion had been struck by lightning and burned to the ground, although only one member of the family had perished in the flame. The tomb exercises an unholy fascination upon Dudley, and he haunts it for hours at a

time. It is locked, but the door is "fastened *ajar* in a queerly sinister way by means of heavy iron chains and padlocks, according to a gruesome fashion of half a century ago." Dudley resolves to enter this tomb at any cost, but he is too young and weak to break open the lock (he is only ten years old at this time).

Gradually Dudley begins to display various odd traits, in particular a knowledge of very ancient things that he could not possibly have learnt from books. One night, as he is lying on a bower outside the tomb, he seems to hear voices from within: "Every shade of New England dialect, from the uncouth syllables of the Puritan colonists to the precise rhetoric of fifty years ago, seemed represented in that shadowy colloquy . . ." He does not say what the colloquy was about, but upon returning home he goes directly to a rotting chest in the attic and finds a key to unlock the tomb.

Dudley spends much time in the tomb. But now another peculiar change takes place in him: hitherto a sequestered recluse, he begins to show signs of "ribald revelry" as he returns from the tomb. In one instance he declaims, "in palpably liquorish accents," a drinking song of Georgian cast, but one "never recorded in a book." He also develops a fear of thunderstorms.

Dudley's parents, worried about his increasingly odd behaviour, now hire a "spy" to follow his actions. On one occasion Dudley thinks that this spy has seen him coming out of the tomb, but the spy tells his parents that Dudley had spent the night on the bower outside the tomb. Dudley, now convinced that he is under some sort of supernatural protection, frequents the tomb without fear or circumspection. One night, as thunder is in the air, he goes to the tomb and sees the mansion as it was in its heyday. A party is under way, and guests in powdered wigs are brought in by carriage. But a peal of thunder interrupts the "swinish revelry" and a fire breaks out. Dudley flees, but finds himself being restrained by two men. They maintain that Dudley had spent the entire night outside the tomb, and point to the rusted and unopened lock as evidence. Dudley is put away in a madhouse. A servant, "for whom I bore a fondness in infancy," goes to the tomb, breaks it open, and finds a porcelain miniature with the initials "J. H."; the picture could be of Dudley's twin. "On a slab in an alcove he found an old but empty coffin whose tarnished plate bears the single word *'Jervas'*. In that coffin and in that vault they have promised me I shall be buried."

Lovecraft gives an interesting account of the genesis of the story:

> . . . one June day in 1917 I was walking through Swan Point Cemetery with my aunt and saw a crumbling tombstone with a skull and crossbones dimly traced upon its slaty surface; the date, 1711, still plainly visible. It set me thinking. Here was a link with my favourite aera of periwigs—the body of a man who had worn a full-bottom'd wig and had perhaps read the original sheets of *The Spectator*. Here lay a man who had lived in Mr. Addison's day, and who might easily have seen Mr. Dryden had he been in the right part of London at the right time! Why could I not talk with him, and enter more intimately into the life of my chosen age? What had left his body, that it could no longer converse with me? I looked long at that grave, and the night after I returned home I began my first story of the new series —"The Tomb". . .[17]

Donovan K. Loucks has identified this tombstone as the grave of one Simon Smith (1662–1711), a distant ancestor of Lillian D. Clark.

"The Tomb" is, as it turns out, quite anomalous in Lovecraft's fictional work for a variety of reasons. In the first place, there is some doubt as to whether the horror is external or internal, supernatural or psychological: is Jervas Dudley possessed by the spirit of his ancestor and lookalike, Jervas Hyde, or has he imagined the entire thing? The supernatural explanation must, I think, in the end be accepted, especially because of Dudley's possession of knowledge about the past (e.g., that Squire Brewster was not dead when he was interred in 1711) and about the mansion that he could not otherwise have known: "On one occasion I startled a villager by leading him confidently to a shallow sub-cellar, of whose existence I seemed to know in spite of the fact that it had been unseen and forgotten for many generations." The fundamental idea is that the spirit of Jervas Hyde, who was burned to death in the fire that consumed his house, has reached across the centuries to seize a body who will at last fill his empty coffin in the tomb of the Hydes.

But how to account for the unbroken lock on the tomb and the fact that Dudley's spy claims to have seen him not in the tomb but on the bower outside it? Was Dudley (as he believes) being protected by a "supernatural agency"? But if he had actually entered the tomb, how did the lock remain unbroken and rusted? The servant at the end really does have to break it

open. Perhaps Dudley's body did in fact spend those nights on the bower but his spirit entered the tomb.

The other thing that makes "The Tomb" peculiar for Lovecraft is the degree of psychological analysis which Dudley's character undergoes. The influence of Poe and his "typical protagonist . . . a dark, handsome, proud, melancholy, intellectual, highly sensitive, capricious, introspective, isolated, and sometimes slightly mad gentleman of ancient family and opulent circumstances" (as Lovecraft wrote in "Supernatural Horror in Literature") is very evident in this regard. Lovecraft echoes "Berenice" ("Our line has been called a race of visionaries"[18]) in his opening sentence. This literary influence should make us cautious in reading autobiographical traits in the narrator of "The Tomb." When he says that he was "wealthy beyond the necessity of a commercial life," we may see this as wish-fulfilment on Lovecraft's part, but the narrator's need to be independently wealthy is crucial to the development of the tale. Lovecraft, too, may have been "temperamentally unfitted for the formal studies and social recreations of my acquaintances," but it is important that the narrator have these traits also. Nevertheless, in a broad sense the narrator reflects Lovecraft's own absorption in the Georgian age, and the sense of dislocation from his own time that this absorption brought about.

But there is much more probing of the narrator's psyche than this. Jervas Dudley is much more introspective, and much more concerned with analysing his own emotional state, than most of Lovecraft's other characters are. But again, the demands of the plot necessitate such self-scrutiny, for it is by the anomalous departures from his normal state of mind that we can gauge the insidious incursion of the soul of Jervas Hyde. Some of his reflexions are very poignant: "I was no longer a young man, though but twenty-one years had chilled my bodily frame." We *care* about this character as we do for few others in Lovecraft's corpus.

Although Lovecraft makes clear that the setting of the tale is New England, "The Tomb" contains so little topographical description that it could really be set almost anywhere. It is, of course, essential that the tale be situated in a region that has been settled for several centuries, so that the spectral hand of the distant past can reach forward into the present; but one wonders whether a setting in England—where several of Lovecraft's other early tales take place—might not have served a little better, since the contrast between the narrator's sober present-day demeanour and his

vivacious behaviour when possessed by Hyde might better have been achieved with an English background. The narrator in fact remarks that in his transformed state he "covered the flyleaves of my books with facile impromptu epigrams which brought up suggestions of Gay, Prior, and the sprightliest of the Augustan wits and rimesters."

This brings us to what has come to be called "The Drinking Song from 'The Tomb.'" This four-stanza song, inserted bodily into the story—a technique Lovecraft probably derived not so much from the Gothics (whose poetical interruptions are scarcely integral to the work) as from Poe, who included poems in "The Fall of the House of Usher" and "Ligeia" that are not only among his most memorable, but which are critical to the logic of the tales—has taken on a life of its own, especially when it was reprinted by itself in *Collected Poems* (1963). T. O. Mabbott, who charitably remarked that most of Lovecraft's poetry was "written 'with his left hand,'" quotes the magnificent line "Better under the table than under the ground" as an instance of what a fine poet Lovecraft might have been.[19] Indeed, it is difficult to resist something like this:

> Anacreon had a red nose, so they say;
> But what's a red nose if ye're happy and gay?
> Gad split me! I'd rather be red whilst I'm here,
> Than white as a lily—and dead half a year!
> So Betty, my miss,
> Come give me a kiss;
> In hell there's no innkeeper's daughter like this!

There is good reason for regarding this poem as a separate entity, for it was written separately and perhaps years before the story itself. Indeed, its inclusion in the story could be considered something of an indulgence. The manuscript of the poem survives in the John Hay Library: it is part of a letter, one perhaps that was never actually sent (the fifth page is incomplete, bearing no closing). We do not know to whom the letter was addressed, as the first two pages are missing. I suspect that Lovecraft kept these pages for himself solely because he liked the drinking song he had written; perhaps he even then conceived some future use for it.

The relevant part of the letter begins: "As for 'Gaudeamus', the best I can say is, that its rather too Epicurean subject is as ancient as literature itself, and its treatment mediocre. I believe, without any egotism, that I could do better myself—witness the following: . . ." There follows the

drinking song, entitled "Gaudeamus." The reference in the letter is evidently to a poem entitled "Gaudeamus" written by a Miss Renning or Ronning (the handwriting is difficult to read), presumably in the amateur press. I cannot date this letter from any internal references, but the handwriting is very youthful; it could date to as early as 1914.

Will Murray makes an interesting case that the song may have been inspired by a similar song contained in Thomas Morton's *New English Canaan or New Canaan* (1637);[20] but this is only one of many such songs Lovecraft may have been familiar with, and his letter suggests that he was attempting to imitate a Georgian (not a Jacobean) drinking song. Accordingly, a perhaps more likelier source (if one is to be sought) may be a song included in Sheridan's *School for Scandal* (1777), which we know Lovecraft to have read (he owned an 1874 edition of Sheridan's *Works*):

> Here's to the maiden of bashful fifteen;
> Here's to the widow of fifty;
> Here's to the flaunting extravagant quean,
> And here's to the housewife that's thrifty.
> *Chorus.* Let the toast pass,—
> Drink to the lass,
> I'll warrant she'll prove an excuse for a glass.[21]

William Fulwiler is, however, undoubtedly correct in pointing out some other literary influences on "The Tomb."[22] The use of the name Hyde is a clear tip of the hat to Stevenson's *Strange Case of Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde,* suggesting that both works involve a double. The theme of psychic possession—used again and again by Lovecraft—is in this instance very likely derived from Poe's "Ligeia," in which a man's dead wife insidiously possesses the spirit of his new wife to such a degree that the latter actually takes on the physical appearance of the former.

In spite of any borrowings, "The Tomb" is an admirable piece of work for a twenty-seven-year-old who had not written a line of fiction in nine years. Lovecraft himself retained a fondness for it, a significant fact in itself given his later repudiations of much his early work. Its brooding atmosphere, its mingling of horror and pathos, the subtlety of its supernatural manifestations, the psychological probing of the narrator, and the hilarious drinking song that does not quite shatter the atmosphere of the story make "The Tomb" a surprising success.

"Dagon" is also a commendable tale, although it is different in almost every way from its predecessor. Here we are also dealing with an individual whose hold on sanity does not appear firm: he is about to kill himself after writing his account because he has no more money for the morphine that prevents him from thinking of what he has experienced. A supercargo on a vessel during the Great War, this unnamed first-person narrator is captured by a German sea-raider but manages to escape five days later in a boat. As he drifts in the sea, encountering no land or other ship, he lapses into despair as to whether he will ever be rescued. One night he falls asleep, and awakes to find himself half-sucked in "a slimy expanse of hellish black mire which extended about me in monotonous undulations as far as I could see"; evidently there had been an upheaval of some subterranean land mass while he slept. In a few days the mud dries, permitting the narrator to walk along its vast expanse. He aims for a hummock far in the distance, and when finally attaining it finds himself looking down into "an immeasurable pit or canyon." Climbing down the side of the canyon, he notices a "vast and singular object" in the distance: it is a gigantic monolith "whose massive bulk had known the workmanship and perhaps the worship of living and thinking creatures."

Stunned by the awareness that such a civilisation existed unknown to human science, the narrator explores the monolith, finding repellent marine bas-reliefs and inscriptions on it. The figures depicted on it are highly anomalous: "Grotesque beyond the imagination of a Poe or a Bulwer, they were damnably human in general outline despite webbed hands and feet, shockingly wide and flabby lips, glassy, bulging eyes, and other features less pleasant to recall." But a still greater shock is coming to the narrator, for now a living creature emerges from the waves: "Vast, Polyphemus-like, and loathsome, it darted like a stupendous monster of nightmares to the monolith, about which it flung its gigantic scaly arms, the while it bowed its hideous head and gave vent to certain measured sounds." The narrator concludes: "I think I went mad then."

Fleeing, he somehow finds himself in a San Francisco hospital, having been rescued by an American ship. But his life is shattered; he cannot forget what he has seen, and morphine is only a temporary palliative. He is concluding his narrative when he suddenly cries out: "God, *that hand!* The window! The window!"

In spite of the rough similarity of the opening—a clearly deranged (or, at the very least, disturbed) individual telling his story after the fact—there is much less psychological analysis of the narrator of "Dagon" than there is of Jervas Dudley of "The Tomb." This is because it is essential to establish the fundamental rationality of the narrator prior to his encounter with the monster, for it not only inspires our confidence in the veracity of his account but also suggests that some genuinely horrific event (not merely a dream or hallucination) has led him to drugs and contemplated suicide. "Dagon" is the first of many tales in which knowledge *in itself* can cause mental disturbance. As the narrator remarks poignantly at the end:

> I cannot think of the deep sea without shuddering at the nameless things that may at this very moment be crawling and floundering on its slimy bed, worshipping their ancient stone idols and carving their own detestable likenesses on submarine obelisks of water-soaked granite. I dream of a day when they may rise above the billows to drag down in their reeking talons the remnants of puny, war-exhausted mankind—of a day when the land shall sink, and the dark ocean floor shall ascend amidst universal pandemonium.

True, there is potential danger from attacks by this alien race, but it is the simple knowledge of the race's existence that has unhinged the narrator. One should not, of course, hastily conclude that Lovecraft was somehow hostile to knowledge itself—a ridiculous assumption for one who so ardently pursued the life of the mind himself. Instead, it is the weakness of our psychological state that is at issue: "All rationalism tends to minimise the value and importance of life, and to decrease the sum total of human happiness. In many cases the truth may cause suicidal or nearly suicidal depression."[23] Lest one think that Lovecraft is placing too much value on the power of truth to affect the emotions, it should be noted that the above remark was made in the context of a discussion on religion, and he went on to maintain that the truth, as he saw it (i.e., the absence of a God governing the cosmos), could well cause irreparable harm to those who could not accept such a fact. Evidence suggests that he is correct on this point.

In "Dagon" the truth that so affects the narrator is the suddenly revealed existence, not merely of a single hideous monstrosity, but of an entire alien civilisation that had once dwelt literally on the underside of the world. As Matthew H. Onderdonk long ago remarked, the true horror of the tale is

"the terrible and acknowledged antiquity of the earth and man's tenuous sinecure thereon."[24] Onderdonk is right to see this is the central theme in all Lovecraft's work, and it would achieve deeper and more exhaustive expression in a dozen or more of his later tales.

Some features of the plot are worth examining. Our credulity is strained at the outset by two implausible occurrences: first, the ease with which the narrator escapes from the Germans (he tries to explain it by remarking that at that time "the ocean forces of the Hun had not completely sunk to their later degradation; so that . . . we . . . were treated with all the fairness and consideration due us as naval prisoners"); and secondly, the fact that the oceanic upheaval occurs while the narrator is asleep and fails to awaken him. But these are minor points. One critical issue is the very end of the tale: what, if anything, does the narrator see? Has the monster who made obeisances at the monolith come to pursue him? The idea that such a monster could walk down the streets of San Francisco and somehow know where the narrator is must surely be regarded as utterly preposterous; and yet, some readers evidently believe that the narrator's vision is genuine. But we are surely to understand that the narrator is hallucinating here. Passages from two letters may lend support to this view. In August 1917, a month after writing the story, he wrote: "Both ['The Tomb' and 'Dagon'] are analyses of strange monomania, involving hallucinations of the most hideous sort."[25] The only hallucination in "Dagon" is the concluding vision of the monster outside the window. (The "hallucinations" in "The Tomb" presumably refer to the narrator's seeming participation in events in the eighteenth century while possessed by his ancestor.) In 1930 Lovecraft wrote: "In 'Dagon' I shewed a horror that *may appear,* but that has not yet made any effort to do so."[26] Surely he would not have made this remark if he wished us to understand that the monster actually emerged from his slimy bed.

I am not wholly clear what the connexion with the Philistine fish-god Dagon is meant to be. Lovecraft cites the god by name toward the end of the story, but we are left to draw our own conclusions. Later Dagon appears as a figure in Lovecraft's pseudomythology, but whether he is to be literally identified with the Philistine god is certainly open to doubt.

"Dagon" is remarkable merely for its contrast in tone, theme, and setting from "The Tomb." Lovecraft, the eighteenth-century fossil, has found inspiration in the great cataclysm—World War I—going on across

the sea, and it is perhaps no accident that the story was written only a month or two after American forces actually entered the conflict. If the general stylistic influence of Poe is still evident, then we are nevertheless facing a substantially updated Poe, in a story whose *density* of idiom is by no means to be equated with *archaism* of idiom. Indeed, the mention of the Piltdown man—"discovered" as recently as 1912—foreshadows what would become a hallmark of Lovecraft's fiction: its scientific contemporaneousness. We will find that he would on occasion revise a story at the last moment in order to be as up to date on the scientific veracity of his tale as he could be. Ultimately, this sort of realism became a central component in Lovecraft's theory of the weird, and also led to his effecting a union between the supernatural tale and the nascent field of science fiction. "Dagon" itself could be considered proto-science-fiction in that the phenomena of the tale do not so much *defy* as *expand* our conceptions of reality.

On the whole, "Dagon" is a substantial bit of work. It broaches a number of themes that Lovecraft would develop in later tales, and its tense, forward-driving narration glosses over implausibilities and leads to a hypnotic and cataclysmic conclusion. A poignant moment occurs when the narrator flees after seeing the monster: "I believe I sang a great deal, and laughed oddly when I was unable to sing." Rarely has Lovecraft so concisely captured the unnerving effects of a cataclysmic revelation. "Dagon" was also a tale for which Lovecraft long retained a fondness; in this case, too, his approval was justified.

Lovecraft notes that "Dagon" was at least in part inspired by a dream. John Ravenor Bullen, writing in the Transatlantic Circulator about the story, noted: "We are told that [the narrator] crawled into the stranded boat (which lay grounded some distance away). Could he, half-sucked into mire, crawl to his boat?" Lovecraft responded: ". . . the hero-victim *is* half-sucked into the mire, yet he *does* crawl! He pulls himself along in the detestable ooze, tenaciously though it cling to him. I know, for I dreamed that whole hideous crawl, and can yet feel the ooze sucking me down!" ("The Defence Reopens!," 1921). Lovecraft does not make clear how much of the plot of "Dagon" was already in the dream.

As is, however, fitting for a tale set in the contemporary world, there may also be contemporary literary influences on the story. William Fulwiler[27] is probably correct in sensing the general influence of Irvin S. Cobb's "Fishhead"—a tale of a loathsome fishlike human being who haunts

an isolated lake, and a tale that Lovecraft praised in a letter to the editor when it appeared in the *Argosy* on January 11, 1913—although that story's influence on a later work by Lovecraft is still more evident. Fulwiler also points to some other works appearing in the *All-Story*—Edgar Rice Burroughs's *At the Earth's Core* and *Pellucidar;* Victor Rousseau's *The Sea Demons*—that involve underground realms or anthropomorphic amphibians; but I am less certain of the direct influence of these tales on Lovecraft's.

"The Tomb" was accepted by W. Paul Cook for the *Vagrant* as early as the middle of June 1917; Lovecraft thought it would appear around December, but it did not.[28] He then thought it might appear in Cook's *Monadnock Monthly*[29] around 1919 or 1920, but it did not appear there either. The story was only published in the *Vagrant* for March 1922. "Dagon" had been accepted by the amateur journal, the *Phoenician* (edited by James Mather Mosely),[30] but did not appear there. It was published, as we have seen, in the *Vagrant* for November 1919.

Around 1923 Lovecraft showed "Dagon" to Clark Ashton Smith, who in turn passed it on to his friend and mentor George Sterling. Sterling, while liking the tale, thought the ending needed pepping up a bit, so recommended that the monolith topple over and kill the monster. This piece of advice, Lovecraft wrote in a letter, "makes me feel that poets should stick to their sonneteering . . ."[31]

Both "The Tomb" and "Dagon" are, as we shall see, the nuclei of other and still better tales by Lovecraft: the former is the ultimate origin of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* (1927), and the latter was writ large in "The Call of Cthulhu" (1926) and "The Shadow over Innsmouth" (1931). This is a phenomenon we shall find repeatedly in his fictional work. A case could be made that Lovecraft conceived—or, more precisely, executed—only a relatively small number of different plots or scenarios and spent much of his career reworking and refining them. Even if this is the case, we ought to be grateful that in the end he did refine the plots so that many of them achieved transcendent levels of expression.

A third work of fiction presumably written in 1917 has frequently been overlooked. "A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" appeared in the *United Amateur* for September 1917 under the pseudonym "Humphry Littlewit, Esq."—one of the few instances in which Lovecraft published a story under a pseudonym. Even if, as is likely, it was written not long before

publication, it could still conceivably have been written even before "The Tomb" and "Dagon"; the *United Amateur* was, however, often late, appearing a month or two after its cover date. In any event, this work has no doubt been ignored simply because it is so singular; and yet, it ranks as one of Lovecraft's finest comic stories.

"A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" is not, of course, a weird tale, unless one interprets its premise—that the narrator is entering his 228th year, having been born on August 20, 1690—very literally. Lovecraft/Littlewit goes on to provide some familiar and not-so-familiar "reminiscences" of the Great Cham of Letters and of his literary circle—Boswell, Goldsmith, Gibbon, and others—all written in the most flawless re-creation of eighteenth-century English that I have ever read. Most of the information is clearly derived from Boswell's *Life* and from Johnson's own works. Lovecraft owned an impressive array of the latter, including the *Idler* and *Rambler,* the *Lives of the Poets, Rasselas, A Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland,* and a 12th (1802) edition of the *Dictionary.*

The piece is a delight from beginning to end. Clearly Lovecraft was having fun with what had by now become an endless refrain amongst amateurs that he was two centuries out of date. Lovecraft boldly plays upon this notion:

> Tho' many of my readers have at times observ'd and remark'd a Sort of antique Flow in my Stile of Writing, it hath pleased me to pass amongst the Members of this Generation as a young Man, giving out the Fiction that I was born in 1890, in *America.* I am now, however, resolv'd to unburthen myself of a secret which I have hitherto kept thro' Dread of Incredulity; and to impart to the Publick a true Knowledge of my long years, in order to gratifie their taste for authentick Information of an Age with whose famous Personages I was on familiar Terms.

Littlewit is the author of a periodical paper, the *Londoner,* like Johnson's *Rambler, Idler,* and *Adventurer,* and—like Lovecraft—he has a reputation for revising the poetry of others. When Boswell, "a little the worse for Wine," attempts to lampoon Littlewit with a squib, the latter chides Boswell that "he shou'd not try to pasquinade the Source of his Poesy." This leads to one of the most delightful touches in the whole piece, one that only those familiar with the *Life of Johnson* would understand. Johnson shows

Littlewit a wretched little poem written by a servant on the marriage of the Duke of Leeds:

> When the Duke of *Leeds* shall marry'd be
> To a fine young Lady of high Quality
> How happy will that Gentlewoman be
> In his Grace of *Leeds'* good Company.

This poem actually appears in the *Life of Johnson* as an instance of how Johnson "retained in his memory very slight and trivial, as well as important things."[32] What does not appear is Littlewit's revision of the poem:

> When Gallant LEEDS auspiciously shall wed
> The virtuous Fair, of antient Lineage bred,
> How must the Maid rejoice with conscious Pride
> To win so great an Husband to her Side!

This, of course, is Lovecraft's own emendation of the eighteenth-century doggerel. It is competent, but Johnson is right to note: "Sir, you have straightened out the Feet, but you have put neither Wit nor Poetry into the Lines."

"A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" is endlessly refreshing, and only the later stories "Sweet Ermengarde" and "Ibid" can match it for deft comic touches. It certainly dynamites the myth that Lovecraft had no sense of humour or took himself too seriously, and its perfect Georgianism makes one wonder whether he wasn't correct after all in stating that "I am probably the only living person to whom the ancient 18th century idiom is actually a prose and poetic mother-tongue."[33] And it may not be so clearly separable from Lovecraft's other fiction as one might imagine: does it not play, as "The Tomb" does, on Lovecraft's quite sincere longing to drift insensibly back into the eighteenth century? And does it not too embody what Lovecraft, in "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction," held to be the dominant theme in all his weird work—"conflict with time"?

It would be nearly a year before Lovecraft would write another tale—a fact that suggests that fiction-writing was still very far from the forefront of his mind. The result was "Polaris," a very short tale whose mere existence has given rise to some interesting speculation. In this story an unnamed narrator appears to have a dream in which he is initially a disembodied spirit contemplating some seemingly mythical realm, the land of Lomar, whose principal city Olathoë is threatened with attack from the Inutos,

"squat, hellish, yellow fiends." In a subsequent "dream" the narrator learns that he has a body, and is one of the Lomarians. He is "feeble and given to strange faintings when subjected to stress and hardships," so is denied a place in the actual army of defenders; but he is given the important task of manning the watch-tower of Thapnen, since "my eyes were the keenest of the city." Unfortunately, at the critical moment Polaris, the Pole Star, winks down at him and casts a spell so that he falls asleep; he strives to wake up, and finds that when he does so he is in a room through whose window he sees "the horrible swaying trees of a dream-swamp" (i.e., his "waking" life). He convinces himself that "I am still dreaming," and vainly tries to wake up, but is unable to do so.

There is much poignancy in this tale, which appears to describe a man who has confused the "real" and the dream worlds; but in fact the story is not a dream-fantasy at all but rather—like "The Tomb"—a case of psychic possession by a distant ancestor. This is the meaning of the poem inserted in the tale, which the narrator fancies the Pole Star speaks to him:

Slumber, watcher, till the spheres
Six and twenty thousand years
Have revolv'd, and I return
To the spot where now I burn.

This appears to be what the ancients called the "great year"—the period it would take for the constellations to resume their positions after an entire circuit of the heavens—although in antiquity the figure was thought to be about 15,000 years. In other words, the man's spirit has gone back twenty-six thousand years and identified with the spirit of his ancestor. This means that Lomar is postulated not as a dream-realm but as a truly existing land in the prehistory of the earth; moreover, it is situated somewhere in the Arctic, since the narrative suggests that modern-day Eskimos are the descendants of the Inutos. (The coined term "Inutos" is clearly meant to allude to *Inuit,* the native term for what Westerners call Eskimos. That term is the plural of *Inuk.*) This point is of significance only because many of Lovecraft's fantasies have been taken as dream-stories, when in fact only "Celephaïs" (1920) and *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* (1926–27) can be so regarded—and even these with significant qualifications.

What makes "Polaris" remarkable, however, is its apparently uncanny echo of the work of Lord Dunsany, whom Lovecraft would not read for

more than a year. Lovecraft himself commented on the resemblance in 1927:

> "Polaris" is rather interesting in that I wrote it in 1918, *before* I had ever read a word of Lord Dunsany's. Some find it hard to believe this, but I can give not only assurance but absolute proof that it is so. It is simply a case of similar types of vision facing the unknown, and harbouring similar stores of mythic and historical lore. Hence the parallelism in atmosphere, artificial nomenclature, treatment of the dream theme, etc.[34]

I do not wish entirely to downplay this parallelism—which really is remarkable—but it may be possible to adduce other factors that led to the apparent anomaly. In the first place, purely from the point of view of style, both Dunsany and Lovecraft were clearly influenced by Poe, although Lovecraft the more obviously; but Dunsany admits in his autobiography that he too came under Poe's spell at an early age: "One day at Cheam I was introduced to Poe's Tales, from the school library, and I read them all; and the haunted desolation and weird gloom of the misty mid-region of Weir remained for many years something that seemed to me more eerie than anything earth had . . ."[35] Whereas Lovecraft was influenced principally by Poe's tales of pure horror—"Ligeia," "The Fall of the House of Usher," "The Black Cat"—Dunsany may have found more inspiration in Poe's fantasies and prose-poems ("Silence—a Fable"; "Shadow—a Parable"; "The Masque of the Red Death"), which may have worked in tandem with his reading of the King James Bible to produce that sonorous, bejewelled manner associated with his early work. Lovecraft himself remarks in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" that these latter stories by Poe "employ[ed] that archaic and Orientalised style with jewelled phrase, quasi-Biblical repetition, and recurrent burthen" and that they had left their mark upon such "later writers [as] Oscar Wilde and Lord Dunsany." But clearly Lovecraft also found Poe's prose-poems affecting, and traces of their influence can be found in his own work.

What has gone relatively unnoticed is the fact that the immediate inspiration for "Polaris" is not a literary work by Poe or anyone else but a philosophical discussion in which Lovecraft was engaged with Maurice W. Moe. In a letter to Moe of May 1918 Lovecraft describes at length a dream he had just had, a dream that is manifestly the nucleus for "Polaris":

> Several nights ago I had a strange dream of a strange city—a city of many palaces and gilded domes, lying in a hollow betwixt ranges of grey, horrible hills. . . . I was, as I said, aware of this city visually. I was in it and around it. But certainly I had no corporeal existence. . . . I recall a lively curiosity at the scene, and a tormenting struggle to recall its identity; for I felt that I had once known it well, and that if I could remember, I should be carried back to a very remote period—many thousand years, when something vaguely horrible had happened. Once I was almost on the verge of realisation, and was frantic with fear at the prospect, though I did not know what it was that I should recall. But here I awaked . . . I have related this in detail because it impressed me very vividly.[36]

It is likely that the actual story was written shortly afterwards. Many features of the story match the account of the dream: the unbodied state of the narrator ("At first content to view the scene as an all-observant uncorporeal presence . . ."), the connexion with the distant past, the fear of some nameless realisation ("Vainly did I struggle with my drowsiness, seeking to connect these strange words with some lore of the skies which I had learnt from the Pnakotic manuscripts").

Much of the letter to Moe is a polemic on religion. What Lovecraft is keen on establishing is the "distinction between dream life and real life, between appearances and actualities." Moe was maintaining that belief in religion is useful for social and moral order regardless of the question of its truth or falsity. Lovecraft, after relating his dream, replies: ". . . according to your pragmatism that dream was as real as my presence at this table, pen in hand! If the truth or falsity of our beliefs and impressions be immaterial, then I am, or was, actually and indisputably an unbodied spirit hovering over a very singular, very silent, and very ancient city somewhere between grey, dead hills." This *reductio ad absurdum* is reflected a little impishly in the story:

> . . . I now desired to define my relation to [the scene], and to speak my mind amongst the grave men who conversed each day in the public squares. I said to myself, "This is no dream, for by what means can I prove the greater reality of that other life in the house of stone and brick south of the sinister swamp and the

> cemetery and the low hillock, where the Pole Star peers into my north window each night?"

The fact that the narrator at the end seems permanently confused between the real and the waking world (actually his present life and his past incarnation) may be a final tweaking of Moe's nose on the need to maintain such distinctions in real life.

"Polaris" is a quiet little triumph of prose-poetry, its incantatory rhythm and delicate pathos sustaining it in spite of its brevity. Critics have carped on a possible plot defect—why would the narrator, given to spells of fainting, be appointed the sole sentry in the watch-tower in spite of his keen eyes?—but only hard-headed literalists would see this as a significant flaw. The tale was first published in the one and only issue of Alfred Galpin's amateur journal, the *Philosopher* (December 1920).

The one other work of fiction that can definitively—or perhaps not so definitively—be dated to 1918 is one that we do not have. In a letter to Rheinhart Kleiner of June 27, 1918, Lovecraft speaks of his manuscript magazine, *Hesperia:*

> My *Hesperia* will be critical & educational in object, though I am "sugar-coating" the first number by "printing" a conclusion of the serial *The Mystery of Murdon Grange*. . . . It is outwardly done on the patchwork plan as before—each chapter bears one of my different *aliases*—Ward Phillips—Ames Dorrance Rowley—L. Theobald, &c. It was rather a good diversion to write it. Really, I think I could have been a passable dime novelist if I had been trained in that noble calling![37]

A mention of what appears to be a second issue of *Hesperia* occurs in a letter to Long in 1921: "I will send . . . two papers containing collaborated work which you have not seen before. *Hesperia* is a manuscript magazine which I circulate in Great Britain."[38] This second remark in some ways clarifies, and in other ways confuses, the first. All we know is that *Hesperia* was, in the parlance of amateur journalism, a "manuscript magazine"—a magazine typed on the typewriter[39] and sent on a definite round of circulation—distributed among amateur journalists in the United Kingdom. Arthur Harris, the Welshman who printed Lovecraft's *The Crime of Crimes,* was clearly on the circulation list, for an issue of *Interesting Items* contains the only known mention of *Hesperia* by someone other than Lovecraft: "MS. magazines have appeared again. . . . The second received was

‘Hesperia’ edited by H. P. Lovecraft of America, a noteworthy production, well-typewritten. ‘The Green Meadow’ is a fascinating story and the poems and editorial make up an excellent issue.”[40] This at least tells us that “The Green Meadow” (a collaborative tale written by Lovecraft and Winifred Virginia Jackson) was among the contents of what was probably a second issue, distributed in 1921. Of the first issue, distributed in 1918, Lovecraft remarks to Harris: “Its leading feature will be an able reply by Mr [Ernest Lionel] McKeag to the sociological article by Mr. Temple.”[41] This shows that *Hesperia* included material by writers other than Lovecraft.

Matters have been confused still further by the recent discovery of one segment of “The Mystery of Murdon Grange”—but it is not by Lovecraft. The Christmas 1917 issue of *Spindrift,* edited by Ernest Lionel McKeag of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, England, contains a segment of what appears to be a round-robin story entitled “The Mystery of Murdon Grange,” signed “B[enjamin] Winskill,” a British amateur of the period. Moreover, Lovecraft himself, in the unsigned “Department of Public Criticism” columns of January, March, and May 1918, discusses the work, noting that the first instalment (in an unspecified issue) was written by Joseph Parks, the second (published in the December 1917 issue) by Beryl Mappin, the third by Winskill (the one in the Christmas 1917 issue), and the fourth (in the January 1918) issue by McKeag. All this leads one to think that Lovecraft did in fact write only the “conclusion” to the story, probably published in the summer or fall of 1918. But if this conclusion appeared in *Spindrift,* why does Lovecraft say it will appear in *Hesperia,* along with other segments written under his own pseudonym? Is it possible that he did not like the way the story was evolving under its actual authors, and that he tried to do better? The matter still remains a considerable mystery.

Another item that may date to 1918 is a genuine collaboration, “The Green Meadow.” This story, written with Winifred Virginia Jackson, was not published until it appeared in the long-delayed final issue (Spring 1927) of the *Vagrant;* but Lovecraft, in speaking of this story and another collaboration with Jackson, “The Crawling Chaos,” says in a letter that the dream by Jackson that inspired the latter tale “occurred in the early part of 1919” and that the “Green Meadow” dream was “of earlier date,”[42] so that the dream itself may date to 1918, even if the actual writing of the story took place a little later. Indeed, Lovecraft’s confession that he did not complete the story until a few months after his mother “broke down”[43]

(i.e., her hospitalisation in March 1919) suggests that the full narrative was not finished until May or June 1919. Lovecraft goes on to note that Jackson's dream "was exceptionally singular in that I had one exactly like it myself—save that mine did not extend so far. It was only when I had related my dream that Miss J. related the similar and more fully developed one. The opening paragraph of 'The Green Meadow' was written for my own dream, but after hearing the other, I incorporated it into the tale which I developed therefrom."[44] Elsewhere Lovecraft says that Jackson supplied "a *map*" of the scene of "The Green Meadow," and that he added the "quasi-realistic . . . introduction from my own imagination." [45]

"The Green Meadow" is, quite frankly, a pretty sorry excuse for a story, its meandering vagueness robbing it of any cumulative power. The story was published as "Translated by Elizabeth Neville Berkeley and Lewis Theobald, Jun.," the respective pseudonyms of the collaborators. The ponderous introduction added by Lovecraft states that the document presented in the body of the text was found in a notebook embedded in a meteorite that landed in the sea near the coast of Maine. This notebook was made of some unearthly substance and the text was *"Greek of the purest classical quality."* The idea, evidently (as Lovecraft explains in a letter), is that this is the "narrative of an ancient Greek philosopher who had escaped from the earth and landed on some other planet",[46] although there are simply not enough clues in the text to arrive at such a conclusion.

The narrative itself tells of a person who finds himself (or, conceivably, herself) on a peninsula near a rushing stream, not knowing who he is and how he got there. The peninsula breaks off its land mass and floats down the river, which is gradually wearing away the soil of the newly created island. The narrator sees in the distance a green meadow, "which affected me oddly," whatever that means. His island is approaching the green meadow, and gradually he hears a weird singing on it; but as he approaches close enough to see "the *source* of the chanting," he suddenly experiences a cataclysmic revelation: "therein was revealed the hideous solution of all which had puzzled me." But after a few coy hints the text becomes illegible, since it was conveniently announced at the beginning that during the examination of the notebook "several pages, mostly at the conclusion of the narrative, were blurred to the point of utter effacement before being read . . ."

I am not at all clear what Lovecraft and Jackson were intending with this story. It seems as if they were merely trying to capture the impressions engendered by their curiously similar dreams, but they could not be bothered to make an actual *story* out of them, so that all we have here is a nebulous sketch or a study in mood. The prose (all Lovecraft's, surely, since he announces that "in prose technique she fails, hence can utilise *story* ideas only in collaboration with some technician"[47]) is actually rather good—smooth, hypnotic, and just on this side of being purple—but the story goes nowhere, and fails to be clear at exactly the moments it needs to be. To choose only one example, the narrator at one point looks behind him and sees "weird and terrible things": "in the sky dark vaporous forms hovered fantastically . . ." This won't do; no reader can visualise what those forms could be from such a description.

Lovecraft did learn better in early 1919, when he wrote "Beyond the Wall of Sleep." This is the story of Joe Slater, a denizen of the Catskill Mountains who in the year 1900 has been interred in a mental institution because of the horrible murder of another man. Slater seems clearly mad, filled with strange cosmic visions which his "debased patois" is unable to articulate coherently. The narrator, an interne at the asylum, takes a special interest in Slater because he feels that there is something "beyond my comprehension" in Slater's wild dreams and fancies. He contrives a "cosmic 'radio'" by which he hopes to be able to establish mental communication with Slater. After many fruitless attempts the sought-for communication finally occurs, prefaced by weird music and visions of spectacular beauty: Slater's body has in fact been occupied all his life by an extraterrestrial entity which for some reason has a burning desire for revenge against the star Algol (the Daemon-Star). With the impending death of Slater, the entity will now be free to exact the vengeance it has always desired. Sure enough, on February 22, 1901, come reports of a celebrated nova near Algol.

There are some powerful conceptions in this story, but on the whole it is marred by stilted prose, confusion in critical points of plot and conception, and a vicious class-consciousness. The first puzzle we have to examine is why Lovecraft chose the setting he did. He at this time had no first-hand knowledge of the Catskill Mountains; indeed, he never would do so, although in later years he would explore the colonial areas of New Paltz and Hurley considerably south of the Catskills. He probably first heard about

the area from the aged amateur poet Jonathan E. Hoag (1831–1927), who had come to Lovecraft's notice around 1916 and for whom, beginning in 1918, Lovecraft wrote annual birthday tributes. Hoag lived in Troy, New York, and Lovecraft's birthday poems appeared simultaneously in various amateur papers and in Hoag's hometown newspaper, the *Troy Times*. But Lovecraft himself supplies the source of the story when he notes that it was "written spontaneously after reading an account of some Catskill Mountain degenerates in a *N.Y. Tribune* article on the New York State Constabulary."[48] The article in question is "How Our State Police Have Spurred Their Way to Fame" by F. F. Van de Water, published in the *New York Tribune* for April 27, 1919. This extensive feature article actually mentions a backwoods family named Slater or Slahter (Lovecraft reflects the variant spelling by noting: "His name, as given on the records, was Joe Slater, or Slaader").

But the real reason, perhaps, that Lovecraft chose this area is that it allowed him to express a snobbishness based simultaneously upon class, region, and intellect. Slater's wild imaginings are regarded as so anomalous to this backwoodsman that they require a supernatural explanation. Lovecraft paints a harsh picture of the locale and its inhabitants:

> [Slater's] appearance was one of the typical denizen of the Catskill Mountain region; one of those strange, repellent scions of a primitive colonial peasant stock whose isolation for nearly three centuries in the hilly fastnesses of a little-travelled countryside has caused them to sink to a kind of barbaric degeneracy, rather than advance with their more fortunately placed brethren of the thickly settled districts. Among these odd folk, who correspond exactly to the decadent element of "white trash" in the South, law and morals are non-existent; and their general mental status is probably below that of any other section of the native American people.

For all Lovecraft's pretensions to a quasi-rural upbringing, the above is the scorn of a city man for crude and ignorant countryfolk. Slater is, for Lovecraft, scarcely human: when he dies he displays "repulsively rotten fangs" like some wild animal.

Then there is the problem of the extraterrestrial entity occupying Slater. Lovecraft never provides any rationale for *why* this entity finds itself trapped in Slater's body to begin with. The message delivered to the

narrator by this entity merely states that "He has been my torment and diurnal prison for forty-two of your terrestrial years" and that it has been prevented from exacting the revenge it seeks "by bodily encumbrances." But why this should be so is never explained, and Lovecraft does not seem to feel that it requires explanation.

Lovecraft concludes the story with a sober citation from Garrett P. Serviss: "On February 22, 1901, a marvellous new star was discovered by Dr. Anderson, of Edinburgh, *not very far from Algol.* No star had been visible at that point before. Within twenty-four hours the stranger had become so bright that it outshone Capella. In a week or two it had visibly faded, and in the course of a few months it was hardly discernible with the naked eye." This is taken verbatim from Serviss's *Astronomy with the Naked Eye,*[49] which Lovecraft owned in his library; and it of course accounts for why the tale is set in 1900–01. This nova really was a remarkable event in modern astronomy, as the most significant previous novas had been sighted as far back as 1054 and 1572.[50] The discovery just predates Lovecraft's boyhood interest in astronomy, but no doubt it was still being much discussed in the first decade of the twentieth century. But commentators have pointed out that, since Algol is many light-years away from the earth, the light from the nova originated well before 1901.

The tale does have a few virtues, even if they merely anticipate some features of Lovecraft's later tales. Still more than "Dagon," this is Lovecraft's first authentically "cosmic" story, using the entire universe as a backdrop for what appears to be merely a tale of a sordid crime. The "brother of light" who communicates with the narrator states at the end: "'We shall meet again—perhaps in the shining mists of Orion's Sword, perhaps on a bleak plateau in prehistoric Asia. Perhaps in unremembered dreams tonight; perhaps in some other form an aeon hence, when the solar system shall have been swept away.'" That concluding future perfect, already rare in English prose, adds a archaic stateliness strangely in keeping with the cosmicism of the conception.

The dream motif connects the tale to both "The Tomb" and "Polaris"; for what we have here again are not dreams as such but visions of some other realm of entity. Hence the narrator's rumination at the outset: "I have frequently wondered if the majority of mankind ever pause to reflect upon the occasionally titanic significance of dreams, and of the obscure world to which they belong." While most dreams are "no more than faint and

fantastic reflections of our waking experiences," there are some "whose immundane and ethereal character permits of no ordinary interpretation"; perhaps in these cases we are "sojourning in another and uncorporeal life of far different nature from the life we know." And the narrator of "Polaris" would agree with the narrator's conclusion that "Sometimes I believe this less material life is our truer life, and that our vain presence on the terraqueous globe is itself the secondary or merely virtual phenomenon."

"Beyond the Wall of Sleep" is Lovecraft's first quasi-science-fiction tale —"quasi" because the field of science fiction cannot be said to have been in existence at this time, and would not be for another decade or so. But the fact that the extraterrestrial entity in the tale cannot meaningfully be termed supernatural makes this story an important foreshadowing of those later works that abandon the supernatural altogether for what Matthew H. Onderdonk termed the "supernormal."[51]

The question of literary influence is worth some attention. Lovecraft notes[52] that Samuel Loveman introduced him to the work of Ambrose Bierce in 1919, and there is indeed a story in *Can Such Things Be?* (1893) entitled "Beyond the Wall"; but I think this is a coincidental similarity, for Bierce's tale is a conventional ghost story that bears no resemblance at all to Lovecraft's. Instead, I posit the influence of Jack London's *Before Adam* (1906), although I have no evidence that Lovecraft read this work. (Lovecraft did, however, have London's *Star Rover* in his library.) This novel is a fascinating account of hereditary memory, whereby a man from the modern age has dreams of the life of his remote ancestor in primitive times. At the very outset of the novel London's character remarks: "Nor . . . did any of my human kind ever break through the wall of my sleep."[53] Here the expression is used with exactly the same connotation as Lovecraft's. Later London's narrator declares:

> . . . the first law of dreaming . . . [is that] in one's dreams one sees only what he has seen in his waking life, or combinations of the things he has seen in his waking life. But all my dreams violated this law. In my dreams I never saw *anything* of which I had knowledge in my waking life. My dream life and my waking life were lives apart, with not one thing in common save myself.[54]

In effect, Lovecraft is presenting a mirror-image of *Before Adam:* whereas London's narrator is a modern (civilised) man who has visions of a

primitive past, Joe Slater is in effect a primitive human being whose visions, as Lovecraft declares, are such as "only a superior or even exceptional brain could conceive."

"Beyond the Wall of Sleep" appeared in the amateur journal *Pine Cones* (edited by John Clinton Pryor) for October 1919. *Pine Cones* was a mimeographed magazine, and the physical appearance of the story—with its text typed out on a typewriter and its title crudely drawn by hand at the top—is not very aesthetically pleasing, but the story was printed surprisingly accurately. Lovecraft—as he would do for many of his early tales—revised it slightly for later appearances.

Lovecraft continued his fictional experimentation with "Memory" (*United Co-operative,* June 1919), a very slight prose-poem that betrays the influence of Poe's own experiments in prose-poetry. Once again there is uncertainty on the exact date of writing, but it was probably written not long before its first appearance. "Memory" features a Daemon of the Valley who holds a colloquy with "the Genie that haunts the moonbeams" about the previous inhabitants of the valley of Nis, through which the river Than flows. The Genie has forgotten these creatures, but the Daemon declares:

> "I am Memory, and am wise in lore of the past, but I too am old. These beings were like the waters of the river Than, not to be understood. Their deeds I recall not, for they were but of the moment. Their aspect I recall dimly, for it was like to that of the little apes in the trees. Their name I recall clearly, for it rhymed with that of the river. These beings of yesterday were called Man."

All this is a trifle obvious, and Lovecraft would later learn to express his cosmicism and his belief in the insignificance of human beings more indirectly. Poe's influence dominates this very short piece: there is a Demon in Poe's "Silence—a Fable"; "the valley Nis" is mentioned in Poe's "The Valley of Unrest" (whose original title was "The Valley Nis,"[55] although Lovecraft may not have been aware of the fact); and "The Conversation of Eiros and Charmion," which features a dialogue like that of Lovecraft's tale, speaks of the destruction of all earth life by means of a fire caused by a comet passing near the earth. Nevertheless, as Lance Arney points out, this is Lovecraft's first tale involving, not merely the *insignificance* of mankind, but its *extinction;*[56] and the fact that mankind has left so few traces of

itself upon its extinction is as potent an expression of its insignificance as we are likely to find even in Lovecraft's later tales.

A tale that was never published in Lovecraft's lifetime is "The Transition of Juan Romero," dated on the manuscript September 16, 1919. It is the curious story of an incident occurring in 1894 at the Norton Mine (somewhere in the Southwest, one imagines, although Lovecraft is not specific as to the actual location). The narrator is an Englishman who because of nameless "calamities" has migrated from his native land (after spending many years in India) to work as a common labourer in America. At the Norton Mine he becomes friendly with a Mexican peon named Juan Romero, who exhibits a strange fascination for the Hindu ring he owns. One day it is decided to use dynamite to blast a cavity for further mining; but the result is the opening up of an immeasurable cavern that cannot be sounded. That night a storm gathers, but beyond the roar of the wind and rain there is another sound, which the frightened Romero can only deem *"el ritmo de la tierra*—THAT THROB DOWN IN THE GROUND!" The narrator also hears it—a huge rhythmical pounding in the newly opened abyss. Possessed by some fatality, they both descend down ladders into the cavern; Romero then dashes off ahead of the narrator, only to plunge into a further abyss, screaming hideously. The narrator cautiously peers over the edge, sees something—*"but God! I dare not tell you what I saw!"*—and flees back to the camp. That morning he and Romero are both found in their bunks, Romero dead. Other miners swear that neither of them left their cabin that night. The narrator later discovers that his Hindu ring is missing.

There are the elements of an interesting tale here, but the execution is confused and unsatisfying. Lovecraft would later claim that his later stories were marred by overexplanation; but, like "The Green Meadow" and a few later tales, "The Transition of Juan Romero" suffers from excessive vagueness. The narrator's coy refusal to tell what he saw in the abyss makes one think that Lovecraft himself is unsure of what the revelation could have been. In a late letter he advises Duane W. Rimel on a critical point in story-conception: "A sort of general clarification *in your own mind* (not necessarily to be revealed in toto to the reader) of what is supposed to happen, & why each thing happens as it does, would produce a certain added convincingness worth securing."[57] In "The Transition of Juan Romero" Lovecraft has apparently failed to follow this recommendation.

There is some suggestion that Romero is not in fact Mexican but is descended from the Aztecs, a suggestion enhanced by his crying out of the name *"Huitzilopotchli"* as he descends into the abyss. The narrator remarks of this word: "Later I definitely placed that word in the works of a great historian—and shuddered when the association came to me." Lovecraft explicitly footnotes Prescott's *Conquest of Mexico,* which contains the following passage on the Aztec god:

> At the head of all stood the terrible Huitzilopotchli, the Mexican Mars; although it is doing injustice to the heroic war-god of antiquity to identify him with this sanguinary monster. This was the patron deity of the nation. His fantastic image was loaded with costly ornaments. His temples were the most stately and august of the public edifices; and his altars reeked with the blood of human hecatombs in every city of the empire. Disastrous, indeed, must have been the influence of such a superstition on the character of the people.[58]

But again, the exact connexion is vague: is Lovecraft suggesting that the Aztec civilisation extended up into the American Southwest? And what is the relation of the Hindu ring? "Somehow I doubt if it was stolen by mortal hands," the narrator reflects, but it is difficult to know what to make of this.

The portrayal of Romero bears some resemblance to that of Joe Slater, but Lovecraft is thankfully less crudely class-conscious here. Although Romero is referred to as "one of a large herd of unkempt Mexicans" working at the mine, the narrator later remarks: "It was not the Castilian conquistador or the American pioneer, but the ancient and noble Aztec, whom imagination called to view when the silent peon would rise in the early morning and gaze in fascination at the sun as it crept above the eastern hills, meanwhile stretching out his arms to the orb as if in the performance of some rite whose nature he did not himself comprehend." This sounds like Joe Slater, possessed by some intelligence vastly greater than himself, but later the narrator cites Romero's "untutored but active mind," and at the end we feel a sympathy for Romero that Lovecraft emphatically denies us in Slater.

Lovecraft recognised that "The Transition of Juan Romero" was a false start, and he refused to allow it to be published, even in the amateur press. He disavowed it relatively early in life, and it fails to appear on most lists of his stories; he does not even seem to have shown it to anyone until 1932,

when R. H. Barlow badgered him into sending him the manuscript so that he could prepare a typescript of it. The story was finally published in *Marginalia* (1944).

Steven J. Mariconda has pointed out[59] that the first five surviving weird tales of Lovecraft's "mature" period—"The Tomb," "Dagon," "Polaris," "The Green Meadow," and "Beyond the Wall of Sleep"—are all experiments in variety of tone, mood, and setting. If we include "Memory" and "The Transition of Juan Romero"—as different from these stories as they are from each other—then we have still greater diversity. When the two comic stories, "A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" and "Old Bugs," are thrown in, then the first nine tales of Lovecraft's maturity, written over a two-year period, are about as varied as they possibly can be. It is clear that he was testing his own literary powers to see what type of work he wanted to write and what methods would best convey what he wished to convey. The weird tales break down fairly evenly between supernatural realism ("The Tomb," "Dagon," "The Transition of Juan Romero") and fantasy ("Polaris," "The Green Meadow," "Memory"), with "Beyond the Wall of Sleep" initiating Lovecraft's experiments in proto-science-fiction. The thematic links between many of these stories—dream as providing access to other realms of entity; the overwhelming influence of the past upon the present; the insignificance of humanity in the universe and its eventual obliteration from this planet—adumbrate many of the central concerns of Lovecraft's later fiction. The dominant influence, at least from the point of view of style, is Poe, although only two tales—"The Tomb" and "Memory"—can be said to echo Poe both stylistically and conceptually. Lovecraft was already emerging slowly as a fiction-writer of originality and power.

But in the fall of 1919 Lovecraft fell under the influence of the Irish fantaisiste Lord Dunsany, and for at least two years would do little but write imitations of his new mentor. In many ways the Dunsany influence was positive, in that it suggested to Lovecraft new ways of conveying his cosmicism and in demonstrating new modes of expression, particularly delicate prose-poetry; but in some ways it was a retarding influence, temporarily derailing that quest for topographical and historical realism which would ultimately be the hallmark of his work. It would take Lovecraft years to assimilate the Dunsany influence, but when at last he did so—having in the meantime encountered such other writers as Arthur

Machen and Algernon Blackwood—he was ready to initiate the most significant and characteristic phase of his writing.

In this period Lovecraft also learned to express weird conceptions in verse. Whereas up to 1917 his poetry had been wholly Georgian in character, Lovecraft now began to see that poetry could do more than merely recapture the atmosphere of the eighteenth century. The dominant influence on his early weird verse is, of course, Poe; for although Lovecraft owned and read the "Graveyard Poets" of the later eighteenth century—James Hervey's *Meditations and Contemplations* (1746–47), Edward Young's *Night-Thoughts* (1742–45), among others—they do not appear to have influenced him appreciably.

One spectacular anticipation of his weird verse is a 302-line poem written sometime in 1916,[60] "The Poe-et's Nightmare." As it stands, this work is something of a hodgepodge: it is introduced by 72 lines in heroic couplets; the body of the poem, in pentameter blank verse, bears the added title "Aletheia Phrikodes" ("The Frightful Truth"), with a delightful coined phrase in Latin (*Omnia risus et omnis pulvis et omnia nihil* = "All is laughter, all is dust, all is nothing"); this is then followed by a 38-line conclusion in heroic couplets. The general thrust of the poem is, in fact, a sort of tongue-in-cheek morality, suggested both by the subtitle of the poem itself ("A Fable") and its epigraph from Terence, *Luxus tumultus semper causa est* ("Disturbance is always caused by excess"). We are introduced to Lucullus Languish, who is at once a "student of the skies" and a "connoisseur of rarebits and mince pies"; in other words, he longs to write cosmic poetry, but is repeatedly distracted by his ravenous appetite. His name, as R. Boerem has pointed out,[61] is highly appropriate: Lucullus is a clear echo of the Roman general L. Licinius Lucullus, who gained notoriety as a gourmand; while Languish is a tip of the hat to Lydia Languish, the heroine in Sheridan's *The Rivals,* who, as Boerem notes, is like Lucullus Languish in being "a romantic of simple-minded display."

Although he is a "bard by choice," Lucullus is merely a "grocer's clerk" by actual trade. Then one day he stumbles upon a set of Poe; charmed by the "cheerful horrors there display'd," he turns his attention to the writing of horrific verse. In this, however, he has little success until one day he overindulges at a meal and experiences the wild nightmare related in the blank verse section. This comic introduction really is quite clever, directing

genial but sharp barbs at the hungry poetaster. Here is the description of the meal that brought on the Poe-et's nightmare:

> Tho' it were too prosaic to relate
> Th' exact particulars of what he ate
> (Such long-drawn lists the hasty reader skips,
> Like Homer's well-known catalogue of ships),
> This much we swear: that as adjournment near'd,
> A monstrous lot of cake had disappear'd!

One of the best strokes is an exquisite parody of Shakespeare: ". . . or cast a warning spell / On those who dine not wisely, but too well."

With the 192 lines in blank verse the mood changes abruptly—perhaps a little too abruptly. Here Lucullus narrates in the first person how his soul drifts into space and encounters a cosmic spirit who promises to unveil to him the secrets of the universe. This scenario allows Lovecraft to express his cosmicism in its purest form:

> Alone in space, I view'd a feeble fleck
> Of silvern light, marking the narrow ken
> Which mortals call the boundless universe.
> On ev'ry side, each as a tiny star,
> Shone more creations, vaster than our own,
> And teeming with unnumber'd forms of life;
> Tho' we as life would recognise it not,
> Being bound to earthy thoughts of human mould.

And yet, the cosmic spirit tells Lucullus that "all the universes in my view / Form'd but an atom in infinity . . ." The fundamental message of this section—that the universe is boundless both in time and in space; that there may be other forms of intelligent life in the universe aside from ourselves, life that we would scarcely recognise as such—is exactly that found in his early letters. This vision leads Lucullus to the contemplation of our own planet:

> Then turn'd my musings to that speck of dust
> Whereon my form corporeal took its rise;
> That speck, born but a second, which must die
> In one brief second more; that fragile earth;
> That crude experiment; that cosmic sport
> Which holds our proud, aspiring race of mites
> And mortal vermin; those presuming mites

> Whom ignorance with empty pomp adorns,
> And misinstructs in specious dignity . . .

Lucullus (and Lovecraft) gain contempt for humanity because of its "presumption" of cosmic importance in the universe. A letter of August 1916 exactly echoes these ideas:

> How arrogant of us, creatures of the moment, whose very species is but an experiment of the *Deus Naturae,* to arrogate to ourselves an immortal future and considerable status! . . . How do we know that that form of atomic and molecular motion called "life" is the highest of all forms? Perhaps the dominant creature—the most rational and God-like of all beings—is an invisible gas![62]

This section of "The Poe-et's Nightmare" embodies Lovecraft's early cosmic views as compactly as any work in his oeuvre. Lucullus, in any event, is horrified at this spectacle—truly it is to him a "frightful truth"—but the cosmic spirit now offers to unveil to him a still greater secret:

> Yet changing now his mien, he bade me scan
> The wid'ning rift that clave the walls of space;
> He bade me search it for the ultimate;
> He bade me find the Truth I sought so long;
> He bade me brave th' unutterable Thing,
> The final Truth of moving entity.

But the dream-Lucullus withdraws in fear, his spirit "shrieking in silence thro' the gibbering deeps."

At this point Lucullus wakes up, and the third-person heroic couplets resume. The narrator now ponderously relates the lesson Lucullus has learned: "He vows to all the Pantheon, high and low, / No more to feed on cake, or pie, or Poe." He is now glad to be a humble grocer's clerk; and the narrator warns other bad poets (who "bay the moon in numbers strange and new") to think before they write: "Reflect, ere ye the draught Pierian take, / What worthy clerks or plumbers ye might make . . ."

All this is clever too, but to my mind it has the effect of dynamiting the cosmicism of the previous section, rendering it retroactively parodic. Note especially these lines, where Lucullus "thanks his stars—or cosmoses—or such / That he survives the noxious nightmare's clutch." I think Lovecraft was trying to do too much here: he has produced both a piece of terrifying cosmicism and a satire against poetasters; but the two do not work well

together. Lovecraft ultimately came to realise this. Toward the end of his life, when R. H. Barlow wished to include "The Poe-et's Nightmare" in a collection of Lovecraft's verse, he advised Barlow to omit the comic framework.[63]

It should be pointed out that "The Poe-et's Nightmare" is not influenced by Poe. For all his fondness for Poe, Lovecraft came to realise that his mentor fundamentally lacked the cosmic sense; relatively little of his poetry is, in any case, horrific or fantastic, and there is not even the remotest parallel in Poe for this extended use of blank verse. If there is any influence at all on that central section, it is Lucretius, as certain lines in Lovecraft's poem—". . . whirling ether bore in eddying streams / The hot, unfinish'd stuff of nascent worlds"—make clear. Although Lucretius, in his fervent exposition of the atomic theory and the making of the worlds (especially in Books I and II of the *De Rerum Natura*), finds only awe and not horror in the contemplation of infinite space, both poets see in the vastness of the cosmos a refutation of human self-importance. As we examine Lovecraft's philosophy, it will become evident that he gained both the fundamentals of materialism and a sense of the cosmic in part from the line of ancient atomists beginning with Leucippus and Democritus and continuing through Epicurus and Lucretius.

Another, less striking anticipation of Lovecraft's later attempts in weird verse is the recently discovered "The Unknown." Actually, it is not the poem but its attribution that has only now come to light; for it appeared in the *Conservative* for October 1916, but under the byline of Elizabeth Berkeley (pseudonym of Winifred Virginia Jackson). In a later letter Lovecraft explains that he allowed this poem (as well as "The Peace Advocate" in the *Tryout* for May 1917) to appear under Jackson's pseudonym "in an effort to mystify the [amateur] public by having widely dissimilar work from the same nominal hand";[64] and in a still later letter he clearly acknowledges the work as "another of my old attempts at weird verse."[65] This very short three-stanza poem, in an iambic metre Lovecraft had never used before and would never use again, is a purely imagistic vignette that speaks of a "seething sky," a "mottled moon," and "Wild clouds a-reel"; it concludes:

> Thro' rift is shot
> The moon's wan grace—
> But *God! That blot*

Upon its face!

As an experiment in mood and metre it is interesting, but is too insubstantial to be of much account.

Later poems seek, like "The Poe-et's Nightmare," to unite a moral and a horrific message. There is in several poems a sense of the insignificance, even the vileness, of humanity even in the absence of a cosmic framework. Many poems unfortunately tend, however, toward stock images or contrived shudders. "The Rutted Road" (*Tryout,* January 1917) speaks of a man who, like Lucullus Languish, fears some revelation at the end of his traversing of a rutted road: "What lies ahead, my weary soul to greet? / *Why is it that I do not wish to know?"* But the preceding stanzas have been so contentless that one has not even the remotest sense of what such a revelation could be. Similarly, in "Astrophobos" (*United Amateur,* January 1918) the narrator hopes to find "Worlds of happiness unknown" in the heavens, but instead finds only horror and woe, for no reason anyone can tell. Even Lovecraft's most famous early weird poem, "Nemesis" (written in the "sinister small hours of the black morning after Hallowe'en" of 1917;[66] first published *Vagrant,* June 1918), is open to the charge of vagueness and empty horrific imagery. Lovecraft supplies the purported scenario of the poem: "It presents the conception, tenable to the orthodox mind, that nightmares are the punishments meted out to the soul for sins committed in previous incarnations—perhaps millions of years ago!"[67] Tenable or not, this framework seems only to provide Lovecraft an excuse for poetic cosmicism:

I have whirl'd with the earth at the dawning,
When the sky was a vaporous flame,
I have heard the dark universe yawning,
Where the black planets roll without aim;

Where they roll in their horror unheeded, without knowledge or lustre or name.

This is quite effective, and Lovecraft is justified in using some of these lines as the epigraph to his late tale "The Haunter of the Dark" (1935); but what, ultimately, is their import? Like many of Lovecraft's poems, "Nemesis" is open to Winfield Townley Scott's brutal charge: "To scare is a slim purpose in poetry."[68]

Fortunately, some poems go beyond this shudder-coining. "The Eidolon" (*Tryout,* October 1918) may be superficially derived in part from

Poe (Lovecraft speaks of a quest to find "the Eidolon call'd *Life,"* while Poe in "Dream-Land" makes note of "an Eidolon, named Night"[69]), but beyond this, and the use of the octosyllabic metre, the resemblances to Poe are not strong. Here the narrator, "at a nameless hour of night," fancies he looks upon a beauteous landscape:

> Fair beyond words the mountain stood,
> Its base encircled by a wood;
> Adown its side a brooklet bright
> Ran dancing in the spectral light.
> Each city that adorn'd the crest
> Seem'd anxious to outvie the rest,
> For carven columns, domes, and fanes
> Gleam'd rich and lovely o'er the plains.

But the daylight shows a grimmer scene:

> The East is hideous with the flare
> Of blood-hued light—a garish glare—
> While ghastly grey the mountain stands,
> The terror of the neighb'ring lands.

Lovecraft is careful to indicate that the horror is more than a spook or a haunted wood:

> Aloft the light of knowledge crawls,
> Staining the crumbling city walls
> Thro' which in troops ungainly squirm
> The foetid lizard and the worm.

Repelled by the sight, the narrator asks to see "the living glory—Man!" But an even more loathsome sight greets his eyes:

> Now on the streets the houses spew
> A loathsome pestilence, a crew
> Of things I cannot, dare not name,
> So vile their form, so black their shame.

In its way "The Eidolon" is as nihilistic as "The Poe-et's Nightmare," although lacking its cosmic scope. What is more interesting is the notion—which we have already seen in "Dagon"—that knowledge (here symbolised by the light of day) is in itself a source of horror and tragedy. This same conception is found in another fine poem, "Revelation" (*Tryout,* March 1919). The narrator, "in a vale of light and laughter," decides to scan "the naked skies of Jove"; but the result is that he emerges "ever wiser, ever

sadder" from a realisation of his lowly place in the cosmic scheme of things. Seeking to return to earth, he now finds that the blight of revelation has poisoned it also:

> But my downward glance, returning,
> Shrank in fright from what it spy'd;
> Slopes in hideous torment burning,
> Terror in the brooklet's ride;
> For the dell, of shade denuded
> By my desecrating hand,
> 'Neath the bare sky blaz'd and brooded
> As a lost, accursed land.

Many later stories will harp on this theme: the inability to derive any pleasure from existence once the horrors of the cosmos are known.

Other weird poems of this period are less substantial but pleasant enough to read: a trilogy of poems entitled "A Cycle of Verse" ("Oceanus," "Clouds," and "Mother Earth"; *Tryout,* July 1919); "The House" (*Philosopher,* December 1920; written July 16, 1919[70]) and "The City" (*Vagrant,* October 1919), which adapt the metre of "Nemesis"—itself derived, of course, from Swinburne's "Hertha." "The House" is based upon the same house at 135 Benefit Street that later inspired "The Shunned House" (1924).

One long weird poem that may be worth a little consideration is "Psychopompos: A Tale in Rhyme." This 312-line poem was begun in the fall of 1917 but not completed until May or June of 1918.[71] Unlike the bulk of Lovecraft's weird verse written up to this time, the apparent influence on this poem—the second-longest single poem Lovecraft ever wrote, just shorter than "Old Christmas" and just longer than "The Poe-et's Nightmare"—is not Poe but the ballads of Sir Walter Scott, although I have not found any single work in Scott exactly analogous to "Psychompos." In this poem an aged grandam, Mère Allard, tells the story of Sieur and Dame De Blois, who occupy a shunned castle in the Auvergne region of France. They have developed a bad reputation because of whispered rumours about them: that they do not worship the god of the Christians; that the Dame has an evil eye and a serpentine gait. One Candlemas, the bailiff's son Jean falls ill and dies; it is then recalled that Dame De Blois had passed by the other day and spotted the child ("Nor did they like the smile which seem'd to trace / New lines of evil on her proud, dark face"). That night, when Jean's

grieving parents are holding a vigil over their dead son, a huge snake suddenly appears and makes for the corpse; but the bailiff's wife springs to action—"With ready axe the serpent's head she cleaves," and it crawls away with a mortal wound.

Later people notice a change in Sieur De Blois's bearing. He hears the gossip about the incident with the bailiff's wife and the snake, and "low'ring rode away, / Nor was he seen again for many a day." That summer the Dame is found in some shrubbery, her head cleaved with an axe. The body is brought to the castle of Sieur De Blois, where it is received "with anger, more than with surprise." The next Candlemas arrives, and that evening the bailiff and his family are startled to notice that their home is surrounded by a pack of anomalously intelligent wolves. The leader of the wolfpack bursts through the window and attacks the bailiff's wife, but her husband strikes the creature down with the same axe used on the hideous serpent. The wolf falls dead, but the rest of the pack begin to close in around the house as a furious storm rises. But at the sight of the shining cross on the chimney each wolf "Drops, fades, and vanishes in empty air!"

The listener, wearied of the confused story of Mère Allard, thinks that two stories have been intertwined into one—the tale of the De Blois's, and the tale of the wolfpack. But he receives little clarification from the grandam, who concludes: "For Sieur De Blois . . . / Was lost to sight for evermore."

Few readers will be so dense as the listener of this "tale in rhyme"; they will have quickly realised that the snake killed by the bailiff's wife was Dame De Blois and that the leader of the wolfpack was Sieur De Blois. In effect, they were werewolves or shapeshifters. This work is, in fact, the only instance of Lovecraft's use of this conventional myth (at least, in its orthodox form); and the general mediaeval setting of the poem makes "Psychopompos" a sort of versified Gothic tale. I am not clear what the significance of the title is: psychopomps (from the Greek *psychopompos,* "conveyer of the dead" [i.e., to the underworld]) are used in some later tales, but werewolves have never been regarded as psychopomps. Interestingly, Lovecraft himself seems to have classified the work among his prose tales, as it is found on several lists of his short stories.

I have pointed to the general influence of Scott on this poem; but a more immediate influence can also be adduced. Lovecraft prefaces the body of the poem (written in heroic couplets) with two striking quatrains:

I am He who howls in the night;
I am He who moans in the snow;
I am He who hath never seen light;
I am He who mounts from below.
My car is the car of Death;
My wings are the wings of dread;
My breath is the north wind's breath;
My prey are the cold and the dead.

This is manifestly an echo of the first stanza of a poem, "Insomnia," by Winifred Virginia Jordan (later Jackson), published by Lovecraft in his *Conservative* for October 1916:

The Thing, am I, that rides the Night,
That clips the wings of Sleep;
The Thing, am I, in sunshine bright
That goads, with hag-mind, deep;
The Thing, am I, with forked knife
That prods the weary brain,
And snarls when Pleasure strives for life
Within my haunts of Pain.

It is possible that Lovecraft revised this poem for Jackson, but she was herself an accomplished poet and probably did not require much help from Lovecraft. Another small point can be noted: the name De Blois is derived from a set of tombstones bearing this name in the churchyard of St John's Episcopal Church in Providence, a favourite haunt of Lovecraft's.

Regardless of its literary influences and the intentional obviousness of its plot, "Psychopompos" is a triumph, full of deft and subtle touches. The narrative opens as if in sympathy with the reclusiveness of the De Bloises: it is natural that evil legends would accrue against people who (like Lovecraft) were not conventionally religious and kept to themselves:

So liv'd the pair, like many another two
That shun the crowd, and shrink from public view.
They scorn'd the doubts by ev'ry peasant shewn,
And ask'd but one thing—to be let alone!

The use of the cross as the ultimate defence against the supernatural wolves —curious for an unbeliever—is merely a bow to weird tradition.

Lovecraft is surprisingly effective in depicting the grief of the parents of little Jean:

Around the corpse the holy candles burn'd,
The mourners sigh'd, the parents dumbly yearn'd.
Then one by one each sought his humble bed,
And left the lonely mother with her dead.

And sympathy is later extended even to Sieur De Blois as he contemplates the body of his wife, "By some assassin's stroke most foully slain."

"Psychopompos" appeared in Cook's *Vagrant* for October 1919. We have seen that Cook was not at all receptive to Lovecraft's Georgian poetry; but he clearly appreciated both his weird tales and his weird poems, and a good many of the latter were published in the *Vagrant,* including "Psychopompos" and "The Poe-et's Nightmare" (July 1918). I have not found much comment in the amateur papers on his weird verse, but it and the satiric poetry are easily the two most consistently meritorious branches of his poetic work.

Weird fiction and poetry was, as I have suggested, still a relatively minor concern in Lovecraft's life at this period; amateur politics, political events, relations with his mother, and his gradual emergence from the hermitry of his post-high-school years dominated his interests, and it is to these subjects that I shall now turn.

9. Feverish and Incessant Scribbling

(1917–1919 [II])

Meanwhile political events were not failing to attract Lovecraft's attention. Even if he could not himself serve in the Great War, he could at least closely follow the course of that conflict—especially America's belated entry into it. Lovecraft predictably wrote a number of poems commemorating the United States' joining of her "mother" England to battle Germany—"Iterum Conjunctae" (*Tryout,* May 1917), "An American to the British Flag" (*Little Budget,* December 1917), "The Link" (*Tryout,* July 1918)—or more generally urging on the British soldiers: "Britannia Victura" (*Inspiration,* April 1917), "Ad Britannos, 1918" (*Tryout,* April 1918). A number of these poems were reprinted in the professional *National Enquirer.* None of them amount to anything.

A few political poems of this period address slightly more interesting issues. "To Greece, 1917" (*Vagrant,* November 1917) is a fiery broadside urging the Greeks to take action against the invading Germans. At the outset of the war Greece was very divided on its course of action, and Lovecraft upbraids King Constantine I for his pledge of neutrality ("Shame on thee, Constantinos! Reign no more, / Thou second Hippias of the Attic shore!"). Naturally, Lovecraft lauds Eleutherios Venizelos, the Greek premier since 1909, who had sided with the Allies and in 1916 had established a separate government, forcing Constantine to flee the country:

> Say not your plains of heroes are bereft,
> Nor cry that Clisthenes no heir hath left;
> False is the tongue that such a slander gives
> To Grecian soil, while VENIZELOS lives!

If nothing else, it contains one memorable line, as it records how the Greeks at Thermopylae "Snatch'd infant Europe from a Persian grave." This poem must have been written before June 1917, when the Greeks actually entered the war on the Allied side.

"On a Battlefield in Picardy" (*National Enquirer,* May 30, 1918) is a poignant Pindaric ode about the devastation of France:

> Here all is dead.
> The charnel plain a spectral legion knows,
> That cannot find repose,
> And blank, grey vistas endless stretch ahead,
> Mud-carpeted,
> And stain'd with red,
> Where Valour's sons for Freedom bled.
> And in the scorching sky
> The carrion ravens fly,
> Scanning the treeless waste that rots around,
> Where trenches yawn, and craters pit the ground.
> And in the night the horn'd Astarte gleams,
> And sheds her evil beams.

This and several other poems show what a fine (or, at least, respectable) poet Lovecraft could have been had he not been so slavishly addicted to the heroic couplet in his youth. Less successful is "To the Nurses of the Red Cross" (written in 1917[1] but apparently not published in Lovecraft's lifetime), a maudlin poem about the "heav'n-descended train" who "ease the anguish and . . . purge the pain" of soldiers on the battlefield.

Lovecraft's most reprinted poem is "The Volunteer," which first appeared in the *Providence Evening News* for February 1, 1918, and was then reprinted in the *National Enquirer* (February 7, 1918), *Tryout* (April 1918), the *Appleton* [Wis.] *Post* (surely at the instigation of Maurice W. Moe), the *St. Petersburg* [Fla.] *Evening Independent* (perhaps through John Russell?), and *Trench and Camp,* the military paper at San Antonio, Texas. The dates of the latter three appearances have not been ascertained. The poem was a reply to "Only a Volunteer" by Sergeant Hayes P. Miller, 17th Aero-Squadron, U.S.A., which appeared in the *National Enquirer* for January 17, 1918, and also in the *Providence Evening News*. Neither poem is exactly a stellar piece of work: Miller laments bitterly that his treatment as a volunteer is far inferior to that of the drafted men (". . . the honor goes

to the drafted man, / And the work to the volunteer!"), forcing Lovecraft to counter that the volunteer is the true patriot and will be so recognised by the people:

> We honour the ranks of the conscripts,
> For we know they are average men—
> The plumber and clerk snatched up from their work
> To be thrown in the dragon's den;
> They are bearing their fate rather nobly,
> Who is perfect enough to sneer?
> But the laurels of fame and the patriot's name
> Go first to the volunteer!

This is worth comparing to a curious poem entitled "The Conscript," written probably in 1918 but apparently not published at the time. Here we are taken into the mind of an ordinary conscript ("I am a peaceful working man— / I am not wise or strong . . .") who has no idea why he has been "told . . . I must write my name / Upon a scroll of death":

> I hate no man, and yet they say
> That I must fight and kill;
> That I must suffer day by day
> To please a master's will.

These are highly uncharacteristic remarks for Lovecraft to make—if, that is, the poem is not intended somehow parodically or cynically. It is, indeed, a little difficult to know what the drift of the poem is, or what the significance of the final stanza can be:

> Yet hark—some fibre is o'erwrought—
> A giddying wine I quaff—
> Things seem so odd, I can do naught
> But laugh, and laugh, and laugh!

Does this mean that the conscript has suddenly gained a sense of his role in the great war machine? I am not at all clear as to the occasion or purpose of this poem.

By December 1917 Lovecraft noted that "My questionnaire arrived yesterday, and I discussed it with the head physician of the local draft board." At the advice of this individual—who was both a family friend and also a remote relative—Lovecraft, although he himself wished to place himself in Class I, put himself down in Class V, Division G—"totally and permanently unfit."[2] Lovecraft observed poignantly that "It is not

flattering to be reminded of my utter uselessness twice within the space of six months," but realised that the doctor was correct in noting that "my lack of physical endurance would make me a hindrance rather than a help in any work requiring schedule and discipline."

In terms of the actual progress of the war, Lovecraft here remarked: "As to the general situation, it seems very discouraging just now. It may take a second war to adjust things properly." This comment—seemingly but, surely, unwittingly prophetic—was made at the lowest point of the war for the Allies: the Germans were making considerable headway and seemed on the brink of winning the war before the new American forces could be mobilised. It is therefore possible that Lovecraft was actually conceiving the possibility of a victory for the Germans, so that the "second war" would be one required to restore national borders to the pre-1914 state. Curiously enough, I cannot find any remark by Lovecraft on the actual end of the war; but this may only be because letters of the 1918–19 period have probably been lost or destroyed and the surviving ones have not on the whole been made available to me.

Lovecraft's ponderous essay, "The League" (*Conservative,* July 1919), on the League of Nations, shows that he was paying considerable attention to the peace conference at Versailles. The essay was published only two months after the covenant of the League was unanimously adopted on April 28, 1919. "The League" is nothing more than a broadside on the inevitability of war and the uselessness of treaties to prevent it. Opening pompously with a grandiose pseudo-philosophical rumination like that used in some of his stories ("Endless is the credulity of the human mind"), Lovecraft goes on to say: "Having just passed through a period of indescribable devastation caused by the rapacity and treachery of an unwisely trusted nation which caught civilisation unarmed and unawares, the world purposes once more to adopt a policy of sweet trustfulness, and to place its faith again in those imposing 'scraps of paper' known as treaties or covenants . . ." Lovecraft's objections to the League focus on three issues: first, he does not see that it can genuinely do much to prevent war from occurring, since any nation that wants something badly enough will fight for it regardless of the consequences; second, the League's goal of universal disarmament is dangerous unless there is some means of verifying that countries are not secretly hoarding arms; and third, if a serious conflict did

arise, the League would quickly "be undermined by a score of clandestine inner leagues" based upon prior allegiance of the countries involved.

These objections are a mixture of hard-headed common sense and right-wing paranoia. The principal means by which the League would have "prevented" war by a single determined country would be the imposition of economic sanctions. Lovecraft no doubt gained tremendous satisfaction that the United States in early 1920 refused to ratify American entry into the League, the brainchild of the hated President Wilson; but what Lovecraft did not know is that the withdrawal of what was already the world's leading economic power effectively nullified the threat of economic sanctions, since the United States would always be theoretically capable of ignoring them against a country it supported. The point about disarmament is valid enough, and indeed the League's World Disarmament Conference, which met periodically during the later 1920s, essentially fell apart after being unable to resolve the question of Hitler's demand for rearmament in the early 1930s. The point about "clandestine inner leagues" does not seem borne out by the history of the League. In fact, the League of Nations worked quite well in resolving minor disputes in the 1920s, and the United States began half-officially participating in League business by the end of the decade. Lovecraft's alternate recommendation—that the major powers (United States, Great Britain, France, and Italy) form a "simple and practical alliance" to prevent Germany or some other belligerent from starting another war sounds good on paper, even though he could not predict that in three years the rise of Mussolini would cause Italy to go in a very different direction from the other Allied powers. Lovecraft always liked to think of himself as a tough, unsentimental political realist; and the man who would say in 1923 that "The one sound power in the world is the power of a hairy muscular right arm"[3] was not likely to look kindly on an organisation he considered soft-headed and leftist.

One comment in "The League" is very interesting: "It is to be a very nice and attractive League, we are told; brimful of safeguards against ordinary war, even though somewhat deficient in safeguards against Bolshevism." This signifies Lovecraft's predictable involvement in the "Red Scare" of the postwar period. I cannot find any remark contemporary with the October Revolution, but it was only in the immediate postwar period that the tendencies of Russian socialism became evident. In another essay in the July 1919 *Conservative,* "Bolshevism," Lovecraft worries

about the "alarming tendency observable in this age . . . a growing disregard for the established forces of law and order." Some of this disregard is caused by the "noxious example of the almost sub-human Russian rabble," but other factors are closer to home:

> . . . long-haired anarchists are preaching a social upheaval which means nothing more or less than a reversion to savagery or mediaeval barbarism. Even in this traditionally orderly nation the number of Bolsheviki, both open and veiled, is considerable enough to require remedial measures. The repeated and unreasonable strikes of important workers, seemingly with the object of indiscriminate extortion rather than rational wage increase, constitute a menace which should be checked.

All one can say about something like this is that Lovecraft changed his tune considerably—indeed, antipodally—in a decade. It is unlikely that he himself had any personal knowledge of any "Bolsheviki," either open or veiled; and as someone not in the workforce, he could of course have no conception of the appalling working conditions prevailing in many key industries at this period, and he is parroting many right-wing commentators in accepting the fantasy that labour unrest was largely led by foreign socialists. Once again, Lovecraft as an armchair political analyst proves himself to be naive, prejudiced, and fundamentally ignorant of the actual state of affairs in the nation.

The remark about a "reversion to savagery" suggests the basic tenet of Lovecraft's entire political philosophy at this juncture, one that was perhaps maintained throughout his life even if expressed slightly less hyperbolically. Lovecraft's statement in 1929—"All that I care about is *the civilisation*—the state of development and organisation which is capable of gratifying the complex mental-emotional-aesthetic needs of highly evolved and acutely sensitive men"[4]—could serve as the core of his entire political thought. It may be true that his idea of a "civilisation" was a state of society that would make things comfortable for people like him; but most philosophy and politics tend to be self-serving, so that Lovecraft is not unique on this point. His prime concern was to prevent a collapse of civilisation, a concern that became very keen in the period directly following the world war, especially given his low view of humanity.

The fact is, as Lovecraft states in "At the Root" (*United Amateur,* July 1918), we have not advanced very far from primitivism at all: "We must

recognise the essential underlying savagery in the animal called man, and return to older and sounder principles of national life and defence. We must realise that man's nature will remain the same so long as he remains man; that civilisation is but a slight coverlet beneath which the dominant beast sleeps lightly and ever ready to awake." Many things—liquor; war; Bolshevism—could bring about a collapse, and society must be constituted in such a way as to prevent a collapse from occurring. For Lovecraft, at this period (and, really, for his entire life, even during and after his conversion to moderate socialism), the answer was aristocracy. I shall examine this branch of his thought later.

Right now we can tie in Lovecraft's racism into the picture, since he manifestly regarded the influx of foreigners—who, to his mind, could not maintain the cultural standards he valued—as a threat to the dominant Anglo-Saxon civilisation of New England and the United States as a whole. The essay "Americanism" (*United Amateur,* July 1919) embodies this conception. For Lovecraft, Americanism is nothing more than "expanded Anglo-Saxondom": "It is the spirit of England, transplanted to a soil of vast extent and diversity, and nourished for a time under pioneer conditions calculated to increase its democratic aspects without impairing its fundamental virtues. . . . It is the expression of the world's highest race under the most favourable social, political, and geographical conditions." None of this is, as we have already seen, especially new or unusual for someone in Lovecraft's socioeconomic position. Nor, indeed, is the complete rejection of the "melting-pot" idea:

> Most dangerous and fallacious of the several misconceptions of Americanism is that of the so-called "melting-pot" of races and traditions. It is true that this country has received a vast influx of non-English immigrants who come hither to enjoy without hardship the liberties which our British ancestors carved out in toil and bloodshed. It is also true that such of them as belong to the Teutonic and Celtic races are capable of assimilation to our English types and of becoming valuable acquisitions to the population. But from this it does not follow that a mixture of really alien blood or ideas has accomplished or can accomplish anything but harm. . . . Immigration cannot, perhaps, be cut off altogether, but it should be understood that aliens who choose America as their residence must accept the

> prevailing language and culture as their own; and neither try to modify our institutions, nor to keep alive their own in our midst.

I repeat that this statement—offensive as it may be to many—was not in any way unusual amongst Yankees of Lovecraft's class. Let us bypass the flagrant untruth that immigrants have somehow come here merely to enjoy the "liberties" carved out by those sturdy Saxons: again Lovecraft's complete ignorance of the hardships willingly endured by immigrants to establish themselves in this country has betrayed him into clownish error. The critical term here is "assimilation"—the idea that foreign culture-streams should shed their own cultural heritage and adopt that of the prevailing (Anglo-Saxon) civilisation. Current thinking on this idea rejects the "melting-pot" idea as violently as Lovecraft did, although from a different direction. What Israel Zangwill envisioned in his play, *The Melting-Pot* (1909), was the fusing of cultures among the divergent culture-streams of America to produce a new civilisation unlike that of any of the separate cultures of Europe or Asia or Africa. Many of us now, evidently, wish to see ethnic or culture-groups retain their own folkways to produce a new metaphor—a "rainbow"; but it is by no means clear that the severe fragmentation of the American people along ethnic lines has produced much aside increased racial tensions and a fundamental lack of unity of purpose. In Lovecraft's time it was *expected* that immigrants would "assimilate"; as one modern historian has noted: "The predominant expectation [in the early twentieth century] has been that the newcomer, no matter what his place of origin, would conform to Anglo-Saxon patterns of behavior."[5] Lovecraft, although on the far right in his views on World War I and on the League of Nations, was a centrist in the matter of immigrant assimilation.

I have no doubt that Lovecraft approved of the three important immigration restriction laws of the period: those of 1917 (which introduced a literacy test), of 1921 (which limited immigration from Europe, Australia, the Near East, and Africa to 3% of each foreign nation's population then residing in the U.S.), and, most significantly, of 1924, reducing the quota to 2%, but taking as its basis the census of 1890, which had the added effect of radically reducing immigration from eastern and southern Europe, since immigrants from those countries were an insignificant number in 1890. Lovecraft does not mention any of these immigration laws, but his general silence on the matter of foreign incursions in the 1920s (except during his

New York period) suggests that he felt this matter had been, at least for the time being, satisfactorily dealt with. Politics during the relatively tranquil and Republican-governed 1920s becomes for Lovecraft less a matter of immediate crises than an opportunity for theoretical speculation. It was during this time that he evolved his notions of aristocracy and "civilisation," ideas that would undergo significant modification with the onset of the Depression but retain their fundamental outlines, leading to the evolution of the distinctive notion of "fascistic socialism."

The late teens saw Lovecraft emerge as a towering figure in the tiny world of amateur journalism. Having been elected President for the 1917–18 term, he seemed in a good position to carry out his programme for a UAPA that would both promote pure literature and serve as a tool for education. Under the capable official editorship of Verna McGeoch (pronounced Ma-GOO), who held the office for two consecutive terms (1917–19), the *United Amateur* really did flower into a substantial literary organ. But signs of trouble were already in the air. As early as January 1917, when Lovecraft published the article "Amateur Standards" in the *Conservative,* he was having to fend off attacks on the literary orientation of the UAPA. The piece opens resoundingly: "Amateur journalism has always been a battle-ground betwixt those who, cognisant of its better possibilities, wish to improve their literary skill; and those who, viewing it merely as a field of amusement to which they can obtain easy access, wish to indulge in mock-politics, pseudo-feuds, and cheap social frivolities." This is Lovecraft's old distinction of literati and politicians. He goes on to note that "there has arisen in opposition to the progressive policies of [the current administration] a reactionary movement of such blatant vulgarity and puerile crudeness, that the *Conservative* feels impelled to protest at the display of impotent malice and infantile bitterness shewn by some of the treacherous anti-administration elements." This refers, of course, to the administration of 1916–17, of which Paul J. Campbell was president. One phase of the attack cut Lovecraft to the quick: "One of these peace-disturbers has wailed against the improvement of the *The United Amateur,* declaring . . . that it has become a mere purveyor of 'literary twaddle' . . ." This is exactly the sort of "improvement" he was aiming to bring about, and his July 1917 *United Amateur* may have been a veiled response to such an accusation. I believe Lovecraft's object of attack is William J. Dowdell and

other members of what Lovecraft fancied to be a clique in the area of Cleveland, Ohio.

But for the time being Lovecraft was in a position to carry forward his own agenda. An amendment creating a third and fourth vice-president passed at the 1917 convention, and these officers were to be responsible for recruiting at the college and high-school levels, respectively. Lovecraft appointed Mary Henrietta Lehr as the third vice-president and, by November 1917, Alfred Galpin as the fourth vice-president.[6] Recruitment at these institutions would, in Lovecraft's view, markedly improve the overall literacy of the membership, counteracting the generally undereducated "boy printers" of the NAPA tradition and the tyros, young and old, who saw in amateurdom a place for the publication of ill-formed writings not publishable elsewhere.

Verna McGeoch originated a plan for a regular column in the *United Amateur* called "The Reading Table," which would offer elementary histories of the great literatures of the world and guides to the "great books" of the Western world.[7] The plan took a little while to get under way, but in the September 1918 issue McGeoch herself published an article on "Greek Literature." Lovecraft followed with "The Literature of Rome" in November 1918. This is a competent enough piece that allows Lovecraft to rhapsodise about the greatness of the Romans, to whom he always felt closer than to the Greeks. He confesses this bias openly:

> In considering Rome and her artistic history, we are conscious of a subjectivity impossible in the case of Greece or any other ancient nation. Whilst the Hellenes, with their strange beauty-worship and defective moral ideals, are to be admired and pitied at once, as luminous but remote phantoms; the Romans, with their greater practical sense, ancient virtue, and love of law and order, seem like our own people.

The "defective moral ideals" refers, apparently to Greek homosexuality. Lovecraft evidently went on a little too long in this piece, as parts of it were relegated to the back of the issue in small type without attribution; this section of the article was not reprinted until its appearance in the second volume of *Collected Essays* (2004).

A later piece, "Literary Composition" (*United Amateur,* January 1920), although not part of "The Reading Table," continues Lovecraft's effort to educate amateurs in basic literary craft. It is an elementary, sometimes

simple-minded, survey of grammar, syntax, and the rudiments of prose fiction. This bias toward fiction is itself interesting—as are the frequent citations of Poe, Bierce, and Lord Dunsany as models of style and narration—in pointing to Lovecraft's shift away from essays and poetry; he promises later articles on these latter subjects, but they were never written. Some features of the article reveal Lovecraft's antiquated grammatical and syntactical preferences, as when he objects to the use of "barbarous compound nouns" such as *viewpoint* or *upkeep,* which had already become relatively common in standard English; but he is dead right on the misuse of *like* for *as* or *as if,* even though this distinction is now virtually a lost cause thanks to the ignorance of the supposedly literate general public. He highlights this misuse with a piquant example: "I strive to write like Pope wrote."

Another idea Lovecraft put forward to encourage amateur activity was the issuing of cooperative papers—papers in which a number of individuals would pool their resources, both financial and literary. He announced in his "President's Message" of March 1918 that he was heading such an operation, and announced the rates: "$1.50 will pay for one page, 7 × 10, and each contributor is at liberty to take as many pages as he desires at that rate." But the next "President's Message" (May 1918) declared that "Responses to the proposal for a co-operative paper have been slow in coming in," so clearly the project did not take off as Lovecraft wished.

But no one could accuse Lovecraft of not trying to teach by example. He himself participated in such a journal, the *United Co-operative,* which published three issues: December 1918, June 1919, and April 1921. Lovecraft had contributions in each issue: "The Simple Spelling Mania" (3 pages) and the poem "Ambition" (½ page) in December 1918; "The Case for Classicism" (3 pages), the poem "John Oldham: A Defence" (½ page), and the prose-poem "Memory" (½ page) in June 1919; the collaborative story "The Crawling Chaos" (with Winifred Virginia Jackson; 6 pages) and "Lucubrations Lovecraftian" (8 pages) in April 1921. Jackson was also one of the cooperative editors.

Lovecraft also served on the editorial board of a paper, the *Bonnet,* which was the organ of the United Women's Press Club of Massachusetts. Winifred Virginia Jackson was official editor. I know of only one issue to appear (June 1919), containing an unsigned editorial undoubtedly by Lovecraft, "Trimmings," and an unsigned poem, "Helene Hoffman Cole:

1893–1919: The Club's Tribute," also clearly by him. I have already mentioned that Lovecraft was Assistant Editor of the *Credential* (April 1920). Earlier he had served as Assistant Editor for at least one issue (June 1915) of the *Badger* (edited by George S. Schilling) and for the Tribute Number (April 1917) of the *Inspiration* (edited by Edna von der Heide).

When Lovecraft's term as President expired in the summer of 1918, he was appointed to his old job of Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism by the new president, Rheinhart Kleiner. For the 1919–20 term Lovecraft held no office, although he was no doubt gratified to have won the Story, Essay, and Editorial laureateships for the year (for "The White Ship," "Americanism," and "The Pseudo-United," respectively). In the summer of 1920, however, he was elected Official Editor, serving for four of the next five years. He was now in still greater control of the editorial content of the *United Amateur,* and he made the most of it, opening its pages to literary matter by many of his colleagues old and new. Moreover, he wrote editorials for nearly every issue and was also in charge of writing "News Notes" recounting comings and goings of various amateurs, including himself.

The rumblings of discontent from some members became more emphatic around this time. In July 1919, in recommending Anne Tillery Renshaw for official editor (she in fact won the office), Lovecraft was forced to battle the "turbulent Cleveland element," waging a direct attack on William J. Dowdell—who was running against Renshaw—and his paper, the *Cleveland Sun:*

> Mr. Dowdell is clever, and could go far in literature if he chose; but up to now he has shewn no inclination to succeed except on a very low cultural plane—the plane of commercial "yellow" newspaper journalism. His artistic birth has not yet taken place. It is probably no exaggeration to say that the *Bearcat* and *Sun,* as now conducted, are fair specimens of the grade of official organ which Mr. Dowdell would give us—when he might condescend to give us any. Need more be said? Forewarned is forearmed! ("For Official Editor—Anne Tillery Renshaw," *Conservative,* July 1919)

By November 1920, now himself official editor, he was having to respond to this accusation:

> For several years our foes have reproached us for excessive centralisation of authority; asserting that the control of our society is anything from oligarchical to monarchial, and pointing to the large amount of influence wielded by a very few leaders. Denials on our part, prompted by the conspicuous absence of any dictatorial ambitions in the minds of our executives, have been largely nullified by the fact that while power has not been autocratically usurped and arbitrarily exercised, the burden of administrative work has certainly been thrust by common consent on a small number of reluctant though loyal shoulders. ("Editorial," *United Amateur,* November 1920)

At this point it is difficult to gauge the accuracy of Lovecraft's remarks. It is true that for the period 1917–22 a relatively small number of people held office in the UAPA, many of them doing so repeatedly: Winifred V. Jackson was Second Vice-President for 1917–20; Verna McGeoch was Official Editor for 1917–19; W. Paul Cook was Official Publisher for 1917–20 and E. E. Ericson for 1920–22; Alfred Galpin was Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism for 1919–22; and, as I have noted, Lovecraft was Official Editor for 1920–22. It seems as if a certain apathy had set in among UAPA members whereby they were content to have these individuals continue holding office year in and year out. Individual papers were declining, and Lovecraft's own *Conservative,* because of his other official involvements, only appeared annually in 1918 and 1919, and then ceased altogether until 1923.

But there is also a case to be made that Lovecraft himself, if not his colleagues, was beginning to conduct himself in a sort of fascistic way. Perhaps irritated at the slowness of the progress in literary development on the part of most members, he increasingly called for improvement by main force. We have already seen his demands for editors to band together to eliminate simple spelling ("Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* May 1917) and his pleas for a Department of Instruction that would correct the contributions of the cruder members. Now, in a lecture entitled "Amateur Journalism: Its Possible Needs and Betterment" (probably delivered at an amateur convention in Boston on September 5, 1920),[8] he proposed establishing "some centralised authority capable of

exerting a kindly, reliable, and more or less invisible guidance in matters aesthetic and artistic." This is how the plan would work:

> Certain qualified members must undertake the entirely new burden of offering help to both writers and publishers. They must approach crude authors whose work shews promise, and crude publishers whose papers appear to possess the spark of aspiration; offering a revision and censorship which shall ensure the publication of the articles or journals in question, free from all the main errors in taste and technique.

Lovecraft attempted to anticipate the objections of "any idealistic and ultra-conscientious person" who might object to the plan's "possible oligarchical tendencies" by pointing to the fact that all great periods in literature—Periclean Athens, Augustan Rome, eighteenth-century England—were led by "dominant coteries." It is evident that Lovecraft had simply reached the limit of his patience with sporting pages, bad poetry, and unhelpful official criticism. It is needless to say that the plan was never adopted.

If criticism of Lovecraft had come from people like Dowdell, he might have been able to fend it off; but instead, it now came from more responsible elements. Lovecraft must have been taken aback when the October 1921 *Woodbee* contained an attack upon him by Leo Fritter, a longtime UAPA member whom Lovecraft himself had supported for president in 1915. Fritter had cited a "wide-spreading dissatisfaction" with Lovecraft's editorial policy in the *United Amateur* and went on to accuse Lovecraft of trying to force the members into a mould he had arbitrarily cast according to his own ideas. Lovecraft countered that he himself had received "numerous and enthusiastic assurances of an opposite nature," and repeated once more his ideal for the UAPA:

> What justifies the separate existence and support of the United is its higher aesthetic and intellectual cast; its demand for the unqualified best as a goal—which demand, by the way, must not be construed as discriminating against even the crudest beginner who honestly cherishes that goal. . . . We must envisage a genuine scale of values, and possess a model of genuine excellence toward which to strive. ("Editorial," *United Amateur,* September 1921)

When Lovecraft concluded that "The question is one which should ultimately be decided at the polls," he spoke better than he knew, as we

shall see presently.

This period, however, saw Lovecraft evolving socially from an extreme misfit to one who, while by no means gregarious, could take his place in the society of congenial individuals. This transformation, as successive waves of friends—most of them amateurs—came to visit him or as he actually ventured forth on brief excursions, is heart-warming to see.

Two visits by amateurs occurring in 1917 are instructive by their very contrast. In mid-September 1917 W. Paul Cook, who had only recently become acquainted with Lovecraft, paid him a call in Providence. Cook tells the story piquantly:

> The first time I met Howard I came very near not meeting him. . . . I was bound from New York to Boston, and broke my trip in Providence purposely to see Lovecraft. I was traveling by train, which enabled me to announce in advance the time of my arrival and with a variation of only a few minutes. Arriving at the address on Angell street which later was to be the best known street address in amateur journalism, I was met at the door by Howard's mother and aunt. Howard had been up all night studying and writing, had just now gone to bed, and must under no circumstances be disturbed. If I would go to the Crown hotel, register, get a room and wait, they would telephone when, and if, Howard woke up. This was one of the occasions in my life when I have blessed the gods for giving me a sense of humor, however perverted. It was essential that I be in Boston early that evening, which allowed me about three hours in Providence, but there was a train leaving in half an hour which I could catch if I kept moving. I had a life-like picture of myself hanging around Providence until His Majesty was ready to receive me! In later years Mrs. Clark and I laughed more than once in recalling the incident. I was part way to the sidewalk and the door was almost latched when Howard appeared in dressing gown and slippers. Wasn't that W. Paul Cook and didn't they understand that he was to see me immediately on my arrival? I was almost forcibly ushered by the guardians of the gate and into Howard's study.[9]

Cook's account of the three hours spent with Lovecraft—they mostly talked amateur journalism, naturally enough—is unremarkable save in one detail I shall consider later. Let us now hear Lovecraft's account of the meeting, recorded in a letter to Rheinhart Kleiner:

> Just a week ago I enjoyed the honour of a personal call from Mr. W. Paul Cook . . . I was rather surprised at his appearance, for he is rather more rustic & carelessly groomed than I had expected of a man of his celebrity to be. In fact, his antique derby hat, unpressed garments, frayed cravat, yellowish collar, ill-brushed hair, & none too immaculate hands made me think of my old friend Sam Johnson . . . But Cook's conversation makes up for whatever outward deficiencies he may possess.[10]

Before examining these accounts, we should consider the details of Rheinhart Kleiner's meeting with Lovecraft, which also occurred sometime in 1917—presumably after Cook's visit, since Lovecraft says in the above letter that he had previously met only William B. Stoddard and Edward H. Cole (in 1914), but does not mention having met Kleiner himself. Kleiner tells the story as follows: "I was greeted at the door of 598 Angell Street by his mother, who was a woman just a little below medium height, with graying hair, and eyes which seemed to be the chief point of resemblance between herself and her son. She was very cordial and even vivacious, and in another moment had ushered me into Lovecraft's room."[11] Why the very different responses by his mother to Cook and Kleiner? I believe that the overriding factor is social snobbery. Cook's unkempt appearance could not have sat well with either Susie or Lillian, and they were manifestly going to make it as difficult as possible for Cook to pass through their door. Lovecraft confesses in a candid moment that "Of amateurdom in general her [Susie's] opinion was not high, for she had a certain aesthetic hypersensitiveness which made its crudenesses very obvious and very annoying to her."[12] Elsewhere he goes on to admit that Lillian also did not care for amateurdom—"an institution whose extreme democracy and occasional heterogeneity have at times made it necessary for me to apologise for it."[13] If these were the reasons why Lillian did not like amateurdom, then it is clear that social considerations weighed heavily in her mind: "democracy and occasional heterogeneity" can scarcely stand for anything but the fact that people of all classes and educational backgrounds were involved in the amateur movement.

Kleiner, a polished and debonair Brooklynite, was cordially received because his social standing was, in Susie's eyes, at least equal to Lovecraft's. Kleiner's account continues:

> Just before broaching the subject of an outdoor stroll, I absentmindedly took my pipe out of my pocket. I don't know why, but I suddenly felt that pipe-smoking in that house might not be quite the thing, and put it back into my pocket. At that very moment his mother appeared in the doorway again and espied the pipe sliding back into my pocket. To my surprise, she gave an exclamation of pleasure and wished that I could persuade Howard to smoke a pipe, as it would be "so soothing" for him. This may have been New England courtesy to cover a guest's embarrassment, but I knew that I never made the slightest attempt to convert Lovecraft to pipe-smoking!

Lovecraft's hostility to smoking nearly equalled his disapprobation of drinking. Kleiner is not entirely accurate in saying that he never attempted to convert Lovecraft to pipe-smoking, for the general matter of smoking crops up several times in their correspondence. Lovecraft admits to Kleiner that "though I smoked when about twelve years old—just to seem like a grown man—I left off as soon as I acquired long trousers"; going on to say, "I cannot see yet what anyone finds attractive about the habit of imitating a smokestack!"[14] But the most interesting part of the above account is again social: Kleiner instinctively sensed that smoking in the house would be a *faux pas,* and perhaps Susie, acknowledging Kleiner's tact, tried to cover up his "embarrassment" with a suggestion that she must have known her son would have scorned.

These accounts are among the most illuminating as to Lovecraft's life—and his relations with his mother—in this period. Both Cook and Kleiner are united on the extreme solicitude exercised by Susie and Lillian over Lovecraft. Cook notes: "Every few minutes Howard's mother or his aunt, or both, peeped into the room to see if he had fainted or shown signs of strain . . ." Kleiner tells a more remarkable story: "I noticed that at every hour or so his mother appeared in the doorway with a glass of milk, and Lovecraft forthwith drank it." It is this constant babying of Lovecraft by Susie and Lillian that no doubt helped to foster in Lovecraft's own mind a sense of his "invalidism."

Kleiner suggested that they go out for a stroll, and Lovecraft took him to see the colonial antiquities of Providence—a tour he invariably gave to all his out-of-town guests, for he never tired of showing off the wondrous remains of the eighteenth century in his native city. But Lovecraft's unfamiliarity with normal social conduct is made evident when Kleiner states:

> On our way back to his home, and while we were still downtown, I suggested stopping in at a cafeteria for a cup of coffee. He agreed, but took milk himself, and watched me dispose of coffee and cake, or possibly pie, with some curiosity. It occurred to me later that this visit to a public eating-house—a most unpretentious one—might have been a distinct departure from his own usual habits.

This is very likely to be the case: not only because of the family's dwindling finances, but because of Lovecraft's continuing hermitry in spite of his ever-growing correspondence, a trip to a restaurant was at this time not likely to have been a common occurrence.

That correspondence, however, did lead at this time to Lovecraft's contact with two individuals, each remarkable in their own way, who would become lifelong friends—Samuel Loveman and Alfred Galpin. Loveman (1887–1976)—a friend or correspondent of three of the most distinctive writers in American literature (Ambrose Bierce, Hart Crane, and H. P. Lovecraft) and also well acquainted with George Sterling and Clark Ashton Smith—appears to be merely a sort of hanger-on to the great. But he was himself an accomplished poet—a greater poet than any in the Lovecraft circle except, perhaps, Clark Ashton Smith, and vastly superior to Lovecraft himself. His infrequently issued amateur journal, the *Saturnian,* contained his own exquisite, neo-Grecian, *fin-de-siècle* poems as well as translations from Baudelaire and Heine; and he scattered his poetry in other amateur or little magazines with bewildering insouciance, caring so little about its preservation that in the 1920s Lovecraft would compel Loveman to recite his poems so that Lovecraft could get them down on paper, something Loveman had not bothered to do. His greatest work is a long poem, *The Hermaphrodite* (written perhaps in the late teens and published in 1926 by W. Paul Cook), a gorgeous evocation of the spirit of classical Greece:

> I murmured: "For three thousand years
> Is that tale done, yet bitter tears

Come to me now—to clasp and close
The delicate ecstasy of those
That vanished by no fault of mine.
Radiant, remote, these friends of thine,
So long ago! Another says
That in Pieria many days
The vintage through an autumn mist
Shone purple amid amethyst,
While in their vines one eve of gold
The tortured god walked as of old,
Bacchus, no doubt."[15]

It was to Loveman that Bierce wrote one of his last letters before vanishing into Mexico in late 1913: "This is only to say goodbye. I am going away to South America in a few weeks, and have not the faintest notion when I shall return."[16]

Lovecraft states that he came in direct contact with Loveman in 1917.[17] Loveman was at this time stationed at an army base, Camp Gordon, in Georgia, where he was in Company H of the 4th Infantry, Replacement Regiment. According to the UAPA membership lists, he remained there until the middle of 1919, when he returned to his native Cleveland. In the early to mid-1910s, however, he must have been in California, where his friendships with Smith and Sterling were established. (Bierce, although a longtime San Franciscan, was mostly in Washington, D.C., at the time of his correspondence with Loveman [1908–13].) By November 1917 Lovecraft was already announcing that "Loveman has become reinstated in the United through me."[18] Loveman, although heavily involved in the amateur movement from about 1905 to 1910, had been out of organised amateurdom for some years, and he attests that Lovecraft's first letter was essentially a query as to whether Loveman was in fact still in the land of the living:

> The gist of the letter was this: the writer had long been an ardent admirer of my poetry, and its appearance had, from time to time, excited his admiration to such a degree that he had made bold to institute inquiries as to my whereabouts. He had, he asserted, practically given up any hope of finding me, when a clue to my location was indicated. Hence, his letter of inquiry: was I alive or dead?[19]

Loveman, finding the antique diction of the letter (which he here parodies) both charming and faintly ridiculous, duly relieved Lovecraft's doubts on this score.

Lovecraft proceeds in his letter: "Jew or not, I am rather proud to be his sponsor for the second advent to the Association." Robert H. Waugh[20] has pointed to the deliciously doubtful grammar of this remark—who is the Jew, Loveman or Lovecraft?—and it would be pleasant to think that Loveman had some eventual effect in relieving Lovecraft of his prejudice; but in fact Loveman was, in Lovecraft's mind, what all Jews and other non-Anglo-Saxons should be: a totally assimilated American who had renounced his cultural ties to Judaism. Whether this is in fact the case or not is another matter—I do not know enough about Loveman's own religious or cultural views to pass any judgment—but clearly Lovecraft thought it to be the case. In addition, the neoclassicism of Loveman's poetry and his general air of languid sophistication could only appeal to Lovecraft. For several years their association was largely conducted on paper, but in 1922 they met in Cleveland and then, in 1924–26, they became close friends in New York.

Alfred Galpin (1901–1983) is an entirely different case. This brilliant individual—as gifted in pure intellect as Loveman was in aesthetic sensitivity—would eventually become a philosopher, composer, and teacher of French, although his rapid alterations in intellectual aspirations may have prevented him from distinguishing himself in any one of them. Galpin first came to Lovecraft's attention in late 1917, when he was appointed to the new position of 4th Vice-President, in charge of recruiting high-school students into amateurdom. This appointment was very likely suggested by Maurice W. Moe, since Galpin was at that time already emerging as a star pupil in the Appleton (Wis.) High School and specifically in Moe's Appleton High School Press Club. By January 1918, the date of the first surviving letter by Lovecraft to Galpin, the two were already cordial correspondents.

Galpin's most profound effect upon Lovecraft may have been philosophical, for as early as August 1918 Lovecraft was announcing that Galpin's "system of philosophy . . . comes nearest to my own beliefs of any system I have ever known,"[21] and in 1921:

> he is intellectually *exactly like me* save in degree. In degree he is immensely my superior—he is what I should like to be but have not brains enough to be. Our minds are cast in precisely the

> same mould, save that his is finer. He alone can grasp the direction of my thoughts and amplify them. And so we go down the dark ways of knowledge; the poor plodding old man, and ahead of him the alert little link-boy holding the light and pointing out the path. . . .[22]

This obviously was meant half in jest, although Lovecraft clearly believed there was more than a grain of truth to it; and perhaps Galpin did indeed help to give shape to Lovecraft's still nebulous philosophical conceptions, encouraging this "old man" of thirty-one to hone his mechanistic materialism. But it is not that that I wish to study here; rather, Galpin had a more immediate effect upon Lovecraft's literary work, and it involved the production of some delightfully playful poetry.

Lovecraft of course wrote some more or less conventional tributes to Galpin, especially on his birthday ("To the Eighth of November," *Tryout,* November 1919; "To Alfred Galpin, Esq.," *Tryout,* December 1920; "To a Youth," *Tryout,* February 1921). "To the Eighth of November" was published a year late, as it commemorates Galpin's seventeenth birthday (November 8, 1918). About this time a student named Margaret Abraham joined the Appleton High School Press Club; curiously, she was exactly one year younger than Galpin, so in 1919 Lovecraft commemorated both their birthdays in "Birthday Lines to Margfred Galbraham," a poem that was apparently not published in Lovecraft's lifetime.

Whether Galpin had amorous inclinations toward Margaret Abraham is unclear; he certainly seems to have had such inclinations toward other girls in his high school, and Lovecraft had great fun with the whole subject. Galpin, in his memoir of Lovecraft, made brief note of "the petty incidents of a sophomore's (or junior's) life, including a number of 'crushes' in which he [Lovecraft] took an expressive interest—expressive to the point of commemorating them in verse."[23] Galpin refrains from elaborating on the matter, but an examination of Lovecraft's poetry of the period, as well as his letters to Galpin for 1918, will allow us to do so.

The poems we have to deal with are "Damon and Delia, a Pastoral" (*Tryout,* August 1918), "To Delia, Avoiding Damon" (*Tryout,* September 1918), "Damon—a Monody" (*United Amateur,* May 1919), and perhaps "Hylas and Myrrha" (*Tryout,* May 1919) and "Myrrha and Strephon" (*Tryout,* July 1919), if these latter two are in fact about Galpin. Damon in these poems is clearly Galpin; the name is derived from the shepherd who is

featured in the eighth eclogue of Virgil (a Damon also figures as a character in the first of Pope's *Pastorals*). Is Delia a real person? She certainly seems so, although her name too is taken from Graeco-Roman pastoral: she is a minor character in Virgil's third eclogue. In referring to some tongue-in-cheek love poems included in a letter to Galpin dated August 21, 1918, Lovecraft concluded: "They ought to melt even the beautiful perverse Delia!"[24] This is probably the same as the "Hibernian Chloë"[25] mentioned in a previous letter. If this girl was Irish, can we identify her? The membership list of the UAPA, printed in the *United Amateur* for November 1918, lists five girls of the proper age (the "b" category—16–21 years old) in Appleton: Gertrude L. Merkel, Muriel P. Kelly, Matilda E. Harriman, Ruth C. Schumacher, and Helen Mills. Perhaps Muriel P. Kelly is the Delia in question. A later reference by Lovecraft to "Delia-Margarita"[26] makes one think that perhaps Margaret Abraham herself is Delia. Of course, the girl need not have been in the UAPA at all. She was apparently scorning Galpin's overtures, and most of Lovecraft's poems play with this scenario. "To Delia, Avoiding Damon" opens with a prefatory note: "The old Bard *Tityrus* addresseth a Beautiful Perverse Nymph on behalf of his young Amorous Friend *Damon,* ending with a Threat of Satire if the Maid prove not kind to the youth." Then he rebukes Delia in no uncertain terms:

> Senseless creature! thus to scorn
> One to wit and glory born;
> Future times with proud acclaim
> Shall revere thy Damon's name:
> If thou prove not his, thy lot
> Bleak shall be—thy name forgot!

Well, Lovecraft's prediction has certainly come true. All this is amusing enough, although several hundred lines of this sort of thing can become a little wearying.

In May 1918 another girl came to Galpin's attention, one to whom Lovecraft refers as "the beauteous Miltonico-Shakespearian fellow-prodigy"[27] at the Appleton High School. This girl seems to have been of French extraction, as Lovecraft later calls her Mlle Shakespeare. I cannot identify this person, as no one with a French-sounding name appears on the UAPA membership list for Appleton; perhaps she never joined the association. In August Lovecraft wrote to her, singing Galpin's praises:

> In my Galpinian interpolations, I took care to avoid any appearance of fulsomeness, but merely stated casually that Mr. Galpin is indeed a very remarkable young man, who despite his few years has come to be one of the leading workers in our cause, *& who has a great future before him.* Note this last item. By predicting a great future, I imply, of course, that anyone who *shares* that future will be fortunate indeed! . . . All hail to Theobald the Matchmaker!![28]

Lovecraft spoke a little too soon, for Galpin did not marry for another several years—although, by coincidence, he did in fact marry a Frenchwoman.

By October Galpin has apparently been lured back to Delia, and a new girl—called by Lovecraft "the wingèd Eleanora"[29]—has taken second place, with Mlle Shakespeare dropping to third. This is probably Eleanor Evans Wing, who shows up in the UAPA membership list for Appleton in November 1919; her classification is "a," meaning that she is under sixteen. Lovecraft urges Galpin to pay more attention to the latter two than to Delia, who appears only to have good looks but does not have a keen mind like the others and is also shrewish and quarrelsome.

All this is great entertainment, and some of the best of Lovecraft's parodic love poetry is found in letters to Galpin. The letter for May 27, 1918, contains "A Pastoral Tragedy of Appleton, Wisconsin." Galpin had himself evidently attracted the attention of some other girl—apparently not very good looking—and Lovecraft urges Galpin to cultivate her affections so as to prick Delia's jealousy: "Such is the approved method of fiction." In the poem he depicts this scenario, with the result that the blighted Hecatissa—the ugly girl whom Strephon uses only to make Chloë jealous—hurls herself "with desperate intent / Into the swift Fox River!" But there is an anomalous P.S.:

> The river-god her face espy'd,
> And felt a sudden pain—
> Declin'd to claim her as his bride,
> And cast her back again!

The letter of August 21, 1918, contains a handful of parodies of love poems designed for "a lady's album," playing off an actual poem for such an album written by Rheinhart Kleiner. Lovecraft affixes hilarious

pseudonyms to the poems—Kleinhart Reiner, Anacreon Microcephalos, and (my favourite) A. Saphead. Here is Saphead's poem:

Were the blue of the sea and the blue of the skies
Half as sweet and as pure as the blue of your eyes;
Were the scent of the fields, and the flow'r-laden air
Half as potent and rich as your dear golden hair

Then the world were an Heaven, and mine were the bliss
To write verses forever as freely as this!

Lovecraft adds: "Note the adaptability of the above gem to all varieties of maidens. True, there is no alternative for *blue* eyes—but in poesy all eyes are blue." Lovecraft gives Galpin permission to "use any or all of these specimens if occasion arises . . ."

Lovecraft's final word on Galpin's schoolboy crushes occurs in the delightful two-act play in pentameter blank verse entitled *Alfredo: A Tragedy,* the manuscript of which declares it to be "By Beaumont and Fletcher" and which is dated September 14, 1918. This date makes it clear that two of the chief characters—Rinarto, King of Castile and Aragon, and Alfredo, the Prince Regent—are meant to be Kleiner and Galpin, since Kleiner was president of the UAPA and Galpin was 1st vice-president during the 1918–19 term. Other obviously recognisable characters are Mauricio (= Maurice W. Moe), a Cardinal, Teobaldo (= Lovecraft), the prime minister, and three principal female characters: Margarita (= Delia =

Margaret Abraham?), Hypatia (= Mlle Shakespeare), and Hecatissa (= the unattractive girl who had a crush on Galpin).

Those who have read Lovecraft's earlier poems on Damon and Delia will find little new here in terms of plot. Alfredo burns for Margarita, but she scorns him. Teobaldo advises him to pretend to be attracted to Hecatissa in order to arouse Margarita's jealousy, but Alfredo discounts the idea. Meanwhile Teobaldo perceives that Alfredo is close friends with Hypatia, who combines beauty and a love of books; Teobaldo urges him to forget Margarita and make Hypatia his wife. Alfredo takes the advice, but in the process excites the ire of both Margarita and Hecatissa. At the nuptials a play written by Teobaldo is to be acted as a preface to the marriage ceremony; but Hecatissa, who is from the East, has devised a fatal poison which both Alfredo and Hypatia unwittingly drink in the course of the play. At this point characters begin killing one another in revenge until scarcely anyone is left alive.

Alfredo was not published until 1966, and clearly Lovecraft wrote it as a jeu d'esprit. But there are some fine touches, especially the now customary deprecation of his own dour bookishness (Hypatia refers to "that ancient prattler Teobaldo, / Whose very face casts gloom on youthful bliss"). Lovecraft really does capture the flavour of Elizabethan tragedy—or perhaps tragicomedy—with songs and other interruptions of the predominant pentameter metre; and—as in "The Poe-et's Nightmare"—the blank verse permits a liberal use of enjambement:

> ALF. Fair nymphs,
> I greet you all! No lovelier train e'er danc'd
> O'er velvet turf, and 'mid the vernal flow'rs,
> Since Cytheraea, fresh from Paphos, led
> Her melting followers o'er Arcadian meads!

The portrayals of characters aside from Alfredo and Teobaldo are not especially distinctive—at least, there seems little in the character of Rinarto to make us recall Kleiner. Mauricio is virtually the only character left alive at the end of the play, and Lovecraft cannot help poking fun at Moe's religiosity by having Mauricio trudge off the stage counting his beads.

I don't know that we need read a great deal into all these mock-love poems about Galpin: certainly Lovecraft's beloved Georgians had made a specialty of it, and *The Rape of the Lock* is only the best-known example. But I think there is something to be said for the view that by consistently

deflating the emotion of love in these and other poems Lovecraft was thereby shielding himself from falling under its influence. The probability that he would so fall was, at the moment, comparatively small, but Lovecraft was not about to take any chances. During his involvement with the Providence Amateur Press Club in 1914–16 a few of the members decided to play a rather malicious joke on him by having one of the female members call him up and ask him to take her out on a date. Lovecraft stated soberly, "I'll have to ask my mother," and of course nothing came of the matter.[30] In a letter to Galpin Lovecraft notes in passing that "so far as I know, no feminine freak ever took the trouble to note or recognise my colossal and transcendent intellect."[31] Whether this was exactly true or not is something I shall take up later.

Galpin did have one further effect on Lovecraft's literary work—he was the inspiration for the curious piece called "Old Bugs." This too is a charming little frivolity, even though it treats a subject Lovecraft customarily regarded with great seriousness: liquor. Galpin had become interested in getting one quick taste of alcohol before Prohibition took effect in July 1919, so he purchased a bottle of whiskey and a bottle of port wine and drank them (in their entirety?) in the woods behind the Appleton golf course. He managed to drag himself back home without attracting notice, but when he recounted the event in a letter to Lovecraft, "Old Bugs" was the response.

This tale is set in the year 1950 and speaks of a derelict, Old Bugs, who haunts Sheehan's Pool Room in Chicago. Although a drunkard, he exhibits traces of refinement and intelligence; and no one can figure out why he carries an old picture of a lovely and elegant woman on his person at all times. One day a young man named Alfred Trever enters the place in order to "see life as it really is." Trever is the son of Karl Trever, an attorney, and a woman who writes poetry under the name Eleanor Wing (recall Eleanor Evans Wing in the Appleton High School Press Club). Eleanor had once been married to a man named Alfred Galpin, a brilliant scholar but one imbued with "evil habits, dating from a first drink taken years before in woodland seclusion." These habits cause the termination of the marriage; Galpin gains fleeting fame for his writing but eventually drops out of sight. Meanwhile Old Bugs, listening to Alfred Trever tell of his background, suddenly leaps up and dashes the uplifted glass from Trever's lips, shattering a number of bottles in the process. (At this point "Numbers of

men, or things which had been men, dropped to the floor and began lapping at the puddles of spilled liquor . . .") Old Bugs dies of overexertion, but Trever is sufficiently repulsed at the whole turn of events that his curiosity for liquor is permanently quenched. Naturally, when the picture of the woman found on Old Bugs is passed around, Trever realises that it is of his own mother.

The story is not nearly as ponderous as it sounds, even though no reader can have failed to predict the outcome after the first few paragraphs. Lovecraft does manage to poke fun at himself (through Old Bugs) in the course of his heavy-handed moralising: "Old Bugs, obtaining a firmer hold on his mop, began to wield it like the javelin of a Macedonian hoplite, and soon cleared a considerable space around himself, meanwhile shouting various disconnected bits of quotation, among which was prominently repeated, '. . . the sons of Belial, blown with insolence and wine.'" And his attempt at lower-class slang isn't bad: "'Well, here's yer stuff,' announced Sheehan jovially as a tray of bottles and glasses was wheeled into the room. 'Good old rye, an' as fiery as ya kin find anyw'eres in Chi'.'" Galpin notes that at the end of the story Lovecraft has added: "*Now* will you be good?!"

Although Lovecraft suggested that his closeness to Galpin stemmed largely from the similarity of their philosophical views, Galpin also had a taste for weird fiction. This taste did not persist very long, and Galpin noted in his memoir that in high school "I was in a passing phase of fondness for Poe and the weird." But that phase allowed the production of at least two interesting experiments by Galpin in weird writing, the poem "Selenaio-Phantasma" (*Conservative,* July 1918) and the story "Marsh-Mad: A Nightmare" (*Philosopher,* December 1920), written under Galpin's pseudonym Consul Hasting. "Selenaio-Phantasma" is a rather able pastiche of Lovecraft's "Nemesis":

> When, in midst of this immundane dreaming
> Come effulgent the first rays of light,
> Bringing back my rapt soul with their beaming,
> Lending splendour to all within sight;

And I wake to the sunrise at dawning, fit close to the dusk's mad delight. "Marsh-Mad" is just what its title declares: a nightmare about being lost in a weird, quasi-sentient swamp. It is an effective piece of atmosphere, although it doesn't amount to much as a story and is more adjective-choked than Lovecraft's work ever was. It was written in August 1918, and

Lovecraft claimed to find great merit in the piece: he addressed his letter to Galpin of August 29, 1918 to "Edgar A. Poe, Esq.," deeming the tale "fully up to your usual standard, though in some respects surpassed by your former story 'The Fall of the House of Usher.'"

***

Although the amateur world was still the focal point of Lovecraft's world, he was slowly—probably through his mother's urging—making tentative forays at professional employment. His scorn of commercial writing prevented him from submitting his work to paying magazines, and the small number of his poems that were reprinted in the *National Magazine* all saw prior publication in amateur journals, and moreover were presumably not sent in by Lovecraft but were selected by the editors of the magazine itself from an examination of amateur papers. But if Lovecraft was not at the moment inclined to make money by writing, in what way could he earn an income? Whipple Phillips's inheritance, some of it already squandered by bad investments, was slowly but inexorably diminishing; even Lovecraft probably saw that he could not indulge himself as a gentleman-author forever.

The first sign we have that Lovecraft was actually attempting to earn an income occurs in a letter to John T. Dunn in October 1916. In explaining why he is unable to participate as thoroughly in amateur affairs as he would like, Lovecraft stated: "Many of my present duties are outside the association, in connection with the Symphony Literary Service, which is now handling a goodly amount of verse."[32] There was no mention of this service in previous letters to Dunn, so one imagines that Lovecraft's participation in it commenced about this time. This was a revisory or ghostwriting service featuring Lovecraft, Anne Tillery Renshaw (who edited the amateur journal the *Symphony*), and Mrs J. G. Smith, a colleague of Renshaw's (although not in the UAPA), both of whom lived at this time in Coffeeville, Mississippi. Three years later, in "For Official Editor—Anne Tillery Renshaw" (*Conservative,* July 1919), Lovecraft noted that Renshaw was now an instructor at Pennsylvania State College; he did not mention any revisory service, but perhaps that is because it was irrelevant to her amateur activity or because it had already ceased to exist.

If all this is a reasonable conjecture, then it means that Lovecraft had already commenced what would become his only true remunerative occupation: revising and ghostwriting. He never managed to turn this occupation into anything like a regular source of income, as he generally took on jobs only from colleagues and placed advertisements for his services very sporadically and, apparently, with little result. In many senses it was exactly the wrong job for him in terms of his creative work: first, it was too similar in nature to his fiction writing, so that it frequently left him too physically and mentally drained to attempt work of his own; and second, the very low rates he charged, and the unusual amount of effort he would put into some jobs, netted him far less money than a comparable amount of work in some other profession.

Nevertheless, it is clear that this work grew directly out of his amateur activity, specifically his work as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism, his editing of the *Conservative,* and his assistance in issuing the paper of "credentials" in 1916 (which, as we have seen, may never have appeared): "I am now struggling with reams of crude MSS. for the forthcoming paper of credentials; in fact, I have before me the entire contents of both MSS. Bureaus for revision. It is a monstrous task, and I fear I shall delay the appearance of the paper with my tardiness in completing work."[33] This is exactly the sort of thing he would later do for pay. As for editing the *Conservative,* the frequency with which Lovecraft remarks how some item or other by a contributor had *not* been revised shows how routinely he did revise the contributions he received: in the "Department of Public Criticism" for July 1917 he noted that Ira A. Cole's poem "In Vita Elysium" was printed "practically without revision." No doubt he touched up most of the contributions to the two issues of the *Providence Amateur* and also to the *United Amateur* during his editorship. This work very likely would now be classified as copy editing, and it is a pity that Lovecraft could not have secured an actual position in this capacity with a publisher. He attempted to do so during his New York period, but in vain.

The reference to the Symphony Literary Service in October 1916 is anomalous in that there appears to be no mention of it in any subsequent correspondence that I have seen, although in a later letter to Dunn he made note of "the increasing amount of professional work I am doing for writers outside the Association."[34] There is then little on this subject until early

1920, when Lovecraft noted that "I have just emerged from a veritable 'killer' [i.e., a headache], contracted by working half the forenoon and all the afternoon on Bush junk."[35] This, of course, refers to Lovecraft's most pestiferous revision client, the Rev. David Van Bush (1882–1959), a preacher, itinerant lecturer, pop psychologist, and would-be poet who would be the bane of Lovecraft's existence for several years. In the "News Notes" section of the *United Amateur* for May 1922 Lovecraft described him as follows:

> Dr. David V. Bush, introduced to the United in 1916 by Andrew Francis Lockhart, is rejoining this year and observing the progress lately achieved. Dr. Bush is now a psychological lecturer, speaking in the largest cities of the country and drawing record-breaking crowds wherever he goes. He is the author of several published volumes of verse and prose, the latter mainly psychological in nature, and has been rewarded by phenomenally extensive sales.

This is clearly a "puff," but it tells us several things of importance. First, it is obvious that Lovecraft came into contact with Bush through his amateur connexions. A letter by Bush (February 28, 1917) to the Symphony Literary Service requests information on "the costs for Mr. Lovecraft's revising of 38 pages of poetry."[36] As the bulk of Lovecraft's work for Bush occurred at a slightly later date, I shall discuss him in greater detail later.

One further enigmatic reference to possible remunerative work occurs in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays of 1921. Lovecraft remarked that one of his "verses on America and England," when published in the professional *National Magazine* of Boston, "brought me an offer (albeit an impracticable one) from the book-publishing house of Sherman, French, & Co." I know neither what the poem might have been (probably "Ode for July Fourth, 1917," the only poem by Lovecraft in the *National Magazine* that might be thought to be about America and England) nor what sort of "offer" might have been involved. Was Lovecraft asked to write a book of patriotic propaganda? Actually, it is likely that Sherman, French & Co. was offering to publish a book of Lovecraft's poetry—at his expense. This is no doubt why he found the suggestion "impracticable," and he must have turned it down.

In August 1919 Lovecraft and Maurice W. Moe claimed to have teamed up in a "new professional literary partnership": hack writing. In a letter to

Kleiner, Lovecraft outlines the plan:

> Mo has long been urging me to try professionalism, but I have been reluctant on account of my variation from the tastes of the period. Now, however, Mo has proposed a plan for collaboration in which his modern personality will be merged with my antique one. I am to write the material—mainly fiction—because I am the more fertile in plots; whilst he is to revise to suit the market, since he is the more familiar with contemporary conditions. He will do all the business part, also; since I detest commercialism. Then, IF he is able to "land" anything with a remunerative magazine, we shall "go halves" on the spoils of victory.
>
> The pseudonym under which we shall offer our composite wares for sale, is a compound of our own full names: *Horace Philter Mocraft.*[37]

All this sounds very amusing, and no doubt Lovecraft regarded it as a lark; but it came to nothing, and probably he and Moe never really made any attempt to put the plan into practice. In later years he would scorn the idea of writing for a specific market, and one of the pillars of his aesthetic theory became the need for "self-expression" without any thought of an audience. Collaboration, too, proved very difficult for Lovecraft, as he and his coauthors could never mesh their ideas into a satisfactory amalgam. It is one of Lovecraft's great virtues that he never buckled down to hackwork even in the face of ever-increasing poverty; as he wrote poignantly in 1924, "Writing after all is the essence of whatever is left in my life, and if the ability or opportunity for that goes, I have no further reason for—or mind to endure—the joke of existence."[38]

What of Lovecraft and his family at this time? We have seen that aunt Lillian, upon the death of her husband Franklin Chase Clark in 1915, lived in various rented quarters in the city. W. Paul Cook's account of his visit in 1917 makes it clear that she spent considerable time with her sister and nephew. Aunt Annie, upon her separation from Edward F. Gamwell (probably in 1915 or 1916) and the death of her son Phillips at the end of 1916, returned from Cambridge and probably lived with her brother Edwin in Providence. The death of Edwin E. Phillips on November 14, 1918, passes entirely unnoticed in the surviving correspondence by Lovecraft that I have seen; letters from this period are admittedly few, but the silence is

nonetheless significant. I have no doubt that Lovecraft attended Edwin's funeral in Swan Point Cemetery as a matter of duty, but he was clearly on less intimate terms with Edwin than he was with any of Whipple Phillips's other surviving offspring.

Meanwhile Lovecraft himself, as he had been doing since 1904, continued to live alone with his mother at 598 Angell Street. The nature of their relations for much of the period 1904–19 is a mystery. We have seen that both Susie and Lillian disapproved of amateur journalism in general and Lovecraft's ardent enthusiasm for it in particular. Susie's son may have quickly become a giant in this tiny field, but that was not helping in any way to retard the family's inexorable decline into shabby gentility. His sporadic efforts to earn an income by revision, and his whimsical thoughts of turning into a hack writer, give the impression that he was not very serious about supporting himself; but we shall see that Susie was very concerned about this matter. Lovecraft may have come out of his hermitry of 1908–13 to some degree, but his singular lack of interest in women did not bode well for the eventual continuance of the Lovecraft family in America.

All in all, relations between Lovecraft and Susie could not have been very wholesome. Lovecraft was still doing almost no travelling outside the city, and the lack of a regular office job must have kept him at home nearly all day, week after week. And yet, Clara Hess, their neighbour of twenty-five years, remarks disturbingly: "In looking back, I cannot ever remember to have seen Mrs. Lovecraft and her son together. I never heard one speak to the other. It probably just happened that way, but it does seem rather strange . . ."[39]

Then, in May 1917, came Lovecraft's attempt at enlistment in the R.I.N.G. and, later, in the regular army. We have seen how Susie put a stop to the first of these efforts by pulling strings; but Lovecraft's remark to Kleiner that she was "almost prostrated with the news"[40] speaks eloquently of the mental perturbation she must have felt at the prospect (relatively remote, admittedly, since it is unlikely that Lovecraft would actually have been sent overseas) of losing her only son to the war. Lovecraft goes on in this letter to say: "My mother has threatened to go to any lengths, legal or otherwise, if I do not reveal all the ills which unfit me for the army." And if he is sincere in declaring that "If I had realised to the full how much she would suffer through my enlistment, I should have been

less eager to attempt it," then it reveals a staggering failure of communication and empathy between mother and son. Susie must have been aware of Lovecraft's militarism and his eagerness to see the United States enter the war on England's side; but she must genuinely have been caught off guard at this attempt at enlistment—which, let us recall, came before President Wilson's announcement of the resumption of the draft. Susie was forced to acquiesce in Lovecraft's registering for the draft, since Lovecraft was legally obliged to do so; but it was by then a foregone conclusion that he would have been deemed suitable only for clerical work, and in the end he was rejected even for that.

Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, is surely correct in noting that "Susie's sharp decline . . . seems to have begun at about the time of her brother's death"[41] in November 1918. Edwin was the closest surviving male member of Susie's generation: of two cousins (both sons of Whipple Phillips's brother James Wheaton Phillips), Jeremiah W. Phillips had died in 1902, while Walter H. Phillips (1854–1924) was still alive, but his whereabouts at this time are not well known and in any event he does not seem to have had much contact with Susie or her sisters.[42] This means that Susie, Lillian, and Annie were all wholly reliant on Whipple Phillips's and (in the case of Lillian) Franklin C. Clark's estates for their income. (Since Annie never formally divorced her husband, Edward F. Gamwell, it is not clear whether she received any financial support from him; I think it unlikely.) Lovecraft was the only possible wage-earner in the family, and he was clearly not doing much to support himself, let alone his mother and aunts.

The result, for Susie, was perhaps inevitable. In the winter of 1918–19 she finally cracked under the strain of financial worries. On January 18, 1919, Lovecraft wrote to Kleiner: "My mother, feeling no better here, has gone on a visit to my elder aunt for purposes of complete rest; leaving my younger aunt as autocrat of this dwelling."[43] It is not entirely clear where Lillian was residing at this time: the 1917 city directory gives her address as 144 Dodge Street (in the West Side, several miles away from 598 Angell Street), but she disappears from the city directories thereafter; the 1920 federal census lists her as residing with a Mrs C. H. Babbit at 135 Benefit Street on the East Side,[44] but here she was serving as a companion to Mrs Babbit and it is not likely that Susie was staying there in early 1919. On March 13, Susie, "showing no signs of recovery,"[45] was admitted to Butler

Hospital, where her husband had died more than twenty years before and where she herself would remain until her death two years later.[46]

Lovecraft noted in his January letter to Kleiner that "such infirmity & absence on her part is so *unprecedented,*" but one wonders whether this was really the case. Once again Clara Hess provides some very disturbing testimony:

> I remember that Mrs. Lovecraft spoke to me about weird and fantastic creatures that rushed out from behind buildings and from corners at dark, and that she shivered and looked about apprehensively as she told her story.
>
> The last time I saw Mrs. Lovecraft we were both going "down street" on the Butler Avenue car. She was excited and apparently did not know where she was. She attracted the attention of everyone. I was greatly embarrassed, as I was the object of all her attention.[47]

I believe that these incidents occurred just before Susie's breakdown. But Clara Hess already noted, when finally visiting at 598 Angell Street after Susie's frequent urgings, that "She was considered then to be getting rather odd"; this may have occurred as early as 1908, since it was the time when Susie referred to Lovecraft as being "hideous." Again, if Lovecraft was oblivious to Susie's gradual decline, he must have had very little close or meaningful contact with his mother.

And yet, Lovecraft himself was profoundly shaken by Susie's nervous collapse. In the January letter to Kleiner he wrote:

> . . . you above all others can imagine the effect of maternal illness & absence. I cannot eat, nor can I stay up long at a time. Pen-writing or typewriting nearly drives me insane. My nervous system seems to find its vent in feverish & incessant scribbling with a pencil. . . . She writes optimistic letters each day, & I try to make my replies equally optimistic; though I do not find it possible to "cheer up", eat, & go out, as she encourages me to do.

One of the things he was "scribbling" was a poem, "Despair," which he included in his February 19, 1919, letter to Kleiner. It is one of his most powerful weird poems, even if its general atmosphere, and even some of its specific language, are clearly influenced by Poe's late poem "For Annie." "Once," the narrator writes, "I think I half remember . . . Liv'd there such a

thing as bliss," but now there is only the "Deadly drowsiness of Dis"; what will be the end?

> Thus the living, lone and sobbing,
> In the throes of anguish throbbing,
> With the loathsome Furies robbing
> Night and noon of peace and rest.
> But beyond the groans and grating
> Of abhorrent Life, is waiting
> Sweet Oblivion, culminating
> All the years of fruitless quest.

Rarely has Lovecraft's "cosmic pessimism" achieved such concentrated expression as this.

It is obvious that Lovecraft felt very close to his mother, however much he may have failed to understand her or she to understand him. I have no warrant for saying that his response to her illness is pathological; rather, I see it as part of a pattern whereby any serious alteration in his familial environment leads to extreme nervous disturbance. The death of his grandmother in 1896 leads to dreams of "night-gaunts"; the death of his father in 1898 brings on some sort of "near-breakdown"; the death of Whipple Phillips and the loss of his birthplace in 1904 cause Lovecraft seriously to consider suicide. Even less tragic events result in severe traumas: school attendance in 1898–99 and violin lessons produce another "near-breakdown"; yet another breakdown causes or is caused by his inability to complete high school and leads to a several-year period of vegetation and hermitry.

The state of Lovecraft's own health during this entire period is somewhat of a mystery, since we have only his own testimony on the matter. He obviously had no physical ailments: his R.I.N.G. examination, however cursory, was clear on that score. To Arthur Harris, Lovecraft made the remarkable assertion in 1915: "I can remain out of bed but three or four hours each day, and those three or four hours are generally burdened with an array of amateur work far beyond my capabilities."[48] His letters to John Dunn and Alfred Galpin of the period 1915–18 are full of references to his pseudo-invalidism:

> I was offered the official editorship [of the UAPA in June 1916], but was forced to decline on account of ill health.[49]

> . . . it is rather difficult for me to determine how I can best help [in the war effort]; for my feeble health makes me very unreliable where steady work is concerned.[50]
>
> I am only about half alive—a large part of my strength is consumed in sitting up or walking. My nervous system is a shattered wreck, and I am absolutely bored & listless save when I come upon something which peculiarly interests me. However —so many things *do* interest me, & interest me intensely, . . . that I have never actually desired to die . . .[51]

That last remark is, strictly speaking, untrue, if we believe that his thoughts of suicide in 1904 were seriously conceived; there may also be a certain amount of posturing here, as Lovecraft appears to have become wryly (if perhaps unconsciously) fond of appearing to the world as a feeble invalid or valetudinarian. But on the whole these statements unwittingly reveal that many of Lovecraft's ailments were purely psychological—perhaps fostered, as I have noted before, by his mother's and his aunts' oversolicitousness—and that whenever he became engrossed in some intellectual subject, his "ill health" would be sloughed off and he would pursue studies as vigorously as anyone. It is perhaps not too early to bring in the testimony of a relatively impartial witness, George Julian Houtain, who met Lovecraft in Boston in 1920:

> Lovecraft honestly believes he is not strong—that he has an inherited nervousness and fatigue wished upon him. One would never suspect in his massive form and well constructed body that there could be any ailment. To look at him one would think seriously before 'squaring off.' . . .
>
> Many of us are Lovecrafts, in the peculiar sense, that we have lots of things wished upon us—and are ignorant how to throw them off. We react always to the suggestion—shall I call it curse?—placed upon us. It was never intended in the great scheme of things that such a magnificent physique should succumb to any mental dictation that commanded it to be subject to nervous ills and fatigue—nor that that wonderful mentality should weakly and childishly listen to that—WHICH ISN'T.[52]

Lovecraft responded to this in a letter to Frank Belknap Long:

> If Houtain knew how constant are my struggles against the devastating headaches, dizzy spells, and spells of poor concentrating power which hedge me in on all sides, and how feverishly I try to utilise every available moment for work, he would be less confident in classifying my ills as imaginary. I do not arbitrarily pronounce myself in invalid *because* of a nervous heredity. The condition itself is only too apparent—the hereditary part is only one explanatory factor.[53]

Lovecraft's account must be given its due, but in the event it appears that Houtain was more on the mark, and eventually Lovecraft realised it:

> Lovecraft did not express surprise at my pronouncements. In fact he was receptive to them. I came to the conclusion that he was willing to overcome this and would but he isn't allowed to do so, because others in his immediate household won't permit him to forget this hereditary nervousness. As it is Lovecraft is a mental and physical giant, not because of, but in spite of these conditions. I venture the prediction that were he to lose all thoughts of this handed down idea, get out in the world, and rub elbows with the maddening crowd, that he would stand out as a National figure in Belles-Lettres; that his name would top the list in the annals of the literature of the day and I will go so far as to say it would become a house-hold name throughout the breadth and length of this land.

Even now that final pronouncement is a bit of an exaggeration, but it is more accurate than Houtain—or Lovecraft—could ever have imagined. How Lovecraft finally emerged—intellectually, creatively, and personally—from the claustrophobic influence of 598 Angell Street to become the writer, thinker, and human being we know will be the subject of the subsequent chapters of this book.

10. Cynical Materialist

(1919–1921 [I])

The immediate effects of Susie's absence from the household at 598 Angell Street were mixed: at times Lovecraft seemed incapable of doing anything because of "nerve strain";[1] at other times he found himself possessed of unwonted energy: "I wrote an entire March critical report [i.e., the "Department of Public Criticism" for March 1919] one evening recently, & I am this morning able to write letters after having been up all night."[2] A month after Susie came to Butler, Lovecraft reported that she was "slightly improved in general physical condition, but not so far as nerves are concerned";[3] two months later it seems that "My mother's health remains so stationary that I fear present arrangements must be considered as semi-permanent."[4] In a sense, this turn of events—especially in light of Lovecraft's repeated assurances, which he himself no doubt received from Susie's doctors, that she was in no physical danger—may have been a relief, for it definitively moved Susie out of the picture as far as Lovecraft's daily life was concerned.

What exactly was the matter with Susie is now difficult to say, since her Butler Hospital records were among those destroyed in a fire several decades ago. Winfield Townley Scott, however, consulted them when they were still in existence, and he paraphrases them as follows:

> She suffered periods of mental and physical exhaustion. She wept frequently under emotional strains. In common lingo, she was a woman who had gone to pieces. When interviewed, she stressed her economic worries, and she spoke . . . of all she had done for "a poet of the highest order"; that is, of course, her son. The psychiatrist's record takes note of an Oedipus complex, a "psycho-sexual contact" with the son, but observes that the effects of such a complex are usually more important on the son than on the mother, and does not pursue the point.
>
> It was presumed that Mrs. Lovecraft was suffering from an "insufficiency complex." This had been brought about by the increasingly perilous state of her finances, complicated by the fact that neither she nor her son was a wage earner. However she adored him, there may have been a subconscious criticism of

> Howard, so brilliant in promise but so economically useless. Or perhaps not; perhaps she would not have changed him any more than she could have changed herself, and so, distraught and helpless, she at last collapsed.[5]

I imagine the second paragraph is Scott's, not Susie's doctor's, interpretation of the medical evidence. The most seemingly spectacular item is the curious mention of a "psycho-sexual contact"; but it is surely inconceivable that any actual abuse could have occurred between two individuals who so obviously shared the rigid Victorian sexual mores of the time. There seems every reason to regard Susie's collapse as primarily brought on by financial worries: there was, let us recall, only $7500 for the two of them from Whipple's estate, and in addition there was a tiny sum in mortgage payments (usually $37.08 twice a year, in February and August[6]) from a quarry in Providence, the Providence Crushed Stone and Sand Co., managed by a tenant, Mariano de Magistris. Given that Lovecraft at the age of twenty-eight was still showing no ability at—nor even much inclination toward—economic self-sufficiency, Susie's distress was entirely understandable.

Scott adds one further note of interest: "[Lovecraft] used to visit his mother at the hospital, but he never entered the buildings: always she met him on the grounds, usually at 'the grotto,' and they would stroll together through the Butler woods above the river. To other patients she spoke constantly and pridefully of her son, but they never saw him. And in her final illness, when she was confined to her bed, he apparently did not visit her." I do not know that much need be made of this: there are many who are disinclined to enter hospitals—especially someone who had suffered so many youthful ailments as Lovecraft—and the grounds at Butler are to this day exquisitely maintained and very pleasant for strolling. It may not even be very surprising that Lovecraft did not see her during her final illness; for it was not believed to be life-threatening until almost the very end.

In the meantime Lovecraft restricted himself to visiting Susie on the grounds and to writing leters and occasional birthday and Christmas poems to her. Even if he himself was never seen by other patients, perhaps Susie showed these brief and insignificant ditties as proof that her son was a "poet of the highest order." The first birthday tribute, "Oct. 17, 1919," is a slight eight-line poem that concludes with the wish "that future birthdays bright / May this excel, as noon excels the night!" No Christmas poem for this year

survives, but probably Lovecraft did write one. For her next birthday Lovecraft wrote "To S. S. L.—October 17, 1920," which evidently accompanied a box of chocolates, which are designed to "shew that life, howe'er its course unfold, / Amidst the gall some sweetness yet can hold." "S. S. L.: Christmas 1920" was written to accompany some further unspecified "trivial tokens of a festive day." Oddly enough, the only two surviving letters by Lovecraft to Susie date to February and March of 1921; there were probably others, now lost.

It was perhaps inevitable that Susie's absence from 598 produced at least the possibility of a certain liberation on Lovecraft's part, if only in terms of his physical activities. By now a giant in the world of amateur journalism, he was increasingly in demand at various local and national amateur conventions. It was some time before Lovecraft actually ventured forth; but when he did so, it betokened the definitive end of his period of "eccentric reclusiveness." In October 1919 (as I shall relate in detail in the next chapter) he accompanied several amateurs to Boston to hear his new literary idol, Lord Dunsany. On the evening of June 21, 1920, Edward F. Daas—the man who had introduced Lovecraft to amateur journalism six years before, and was currently First Vice-President of the UAPA—came to Providence. Lovecraft met him at Union Station at 9 P.M. and took him back to 598 for conversation till midnight. The next day he met Daas downtown and showed him various points of interest. Daas caught the 2:20 train to Boston to meet with the members of the Hub Club (a NAPA group). [7] That summer and fall Lovecraft himself made three separate trips to the Boston area for amateur gatherings.

The first meeting took place at 20 Webster Street in the suburb of Allston. This house—occupied jointly by Winifred Jackson, Laurie A. Sawyer, and Edith Miniter—no longer exists, as the entire block has been razed; but at the time it was a central meeting-place for the Hub Club. The members had decided that, since most of them could not attend the national NAPA convention in Cleveland, they would hold their own gathering—one that appeared to go on for nearly two weeks. Lovecraft arrived on Monday, July 4, in the company of Rheinhart Kleiner, who—along with others of a New York delegation of amateurs including E. Dorothy McLaughlin and George Julian Houtain—had come to Providence the day before. On this occasion Lovecraft spent the night under a roof other than his own for the first time since 1901.[8] His sleeping-place was the home of Alice Hamlet at

109 Greenbriar Street in Dorchester. But, lest we look askance at Lovecraft's spending the night alone in a young lady's home, let us be reassured: a convention report in the *Epgephi* for September 1920 discreetly informs us that "he said he'd just got to have a 'quiet room to himself'" and that he and Hamlet were properly chaperoned by Michael Oscar White and a Mrs Thompson.[9] The Dorchester party returned to 20 Webster Street the next day to resume festivities, and Lovecraft caught a train home in the early evening. He commemorated the event with a whimsical piece in *Epgephi,* "The Conquest of the Hub Club," in which he declared that the club had been "captured" by such stalwart UAPA members as himself and Winifred V. Jordan.

Edith Miniter (1869–1934) was perhaps the most noted literary figure at the gathering. In 1916 she had published a realistic novel, *Our Natupski Neighbors,* to good reviews, and her short stories had been widely published in professional magazines. But in spite of her professional success, she was devoted to the amateur cause; she had entered amateurdom as early as 1883 and remained a lifelong member. Her loyalty, however, extended to the NAPA and not the UAPA: she was NAPA's Official Editor for part of the 1895–96 term and its President in 1909–10. Among her amateur journals were *Aftermath,* generally issued after conventions and giving lively convention reports, *The Varied Year,* and *True Blue.* She also issued at least one issue of a journal entitled the *Muffin Man* in April 1921, which contained her exquisite parody of Lovecraft, "Falco Ossifracus: By Mr. Goodguile." It is, perhaps, the first such work of its kind and deserves some attention in its own right.

This little squib is a clear take-off of "The Statement of Randolph Carter." It opens: "Any form of inquisition into the meaning of this will be fruitless. Favour me, an' you will, with eternal confinement in a gaol, and everything that I now relate will be repeated with perfect candour." Along the way Miniter manages to get in effective jabs at Lovecraft's heavily laid-on atmosphere of grue ("A few skulls and crossbones lay in the foreground, while coffinplates, shreds of shrouds, and mattocks which I instinctively knew appertained to gravediggers, scattered around loosely, completed the remarkable scene"), his occasionally *recherché* diction ("'I am really sorry to have to ask you to absquatulate'"), and even his habit of Latinising his friends's names ("the name was originally John Smith, but it is always my will that my friends bear a name of my choosing and as cumbersome a one

as possible"). I am sure Lovecraft took the whole thing in good humour: in his 1934 memoir of Miniter he notes her "highly amusing parody . . . though it was not of a nature to arouse hostility."[10]

Miniter had invited Lovecraft to attend the Hub Club picnic on August 7. Lovecraft accepted, although he did so largely in the hope of meeting his ex-nemesis James F. Morton; Morton, however, was called away to New Hampshire. This gathering consisted largely of old-time amateurs who had been active before the turn of the century. At one point, as the group was wandering through the Middlesex Fells Reservation, Miniter fashioned a chaplet of bays for Lovecraft and insisted that he wear them at a banquet that evening in honour of his triple laureateship. Lovecraft caught a late train from South Station, reached Providence at 1.30 A.M., came home half an hour later, and "slept like a mummy until the following noon."[11]

Lovecraft's third Boston trip began on September 5. He arrived at noon at 20 Webster Street and unexpectedly encountered Morton, whom he had not realised would be at the gathering: "Never have I met so thoroughly erudite a conversationalist before, and I was quite surprised by the geniality and friendliness which overlay his unusual attainments. I could but regret the limited opportunities which I have of meeting him, for Morton is one who commands my most unreserved liking."[12] Clearly, the rancour surrounding Isaacson's *In a Minor Key*—which led to Lovecraft's unpublished poem "The Isaacsonio-Mortoniad"—had died away. Lovecraft would later have plenty of opportunities to meet Morton during his two-year stay in New York. In the afternoon Lovecraft delivered his lecture, "Amateur Journalism: Its Possible Needs and Betterment," which he reports "was received with admirable courtesy."[13] Again he caught a late train back to Providence.

Some months earlier, at the very beginning of 1920, Lovecraft met an individual who would play a very large role in his life: Frank Belknap Long, Jr (1901–1994). At this time Long, a lifelong New Yorker, was not quite nineteen,[14] and would enter New York University that fall to study journalism, transferring two years later to Columbia. His family was quite well-to-do—his father was a prominent New York dentist—and resided in comfortable quarters on the Upper West Side of Manhattan, at 823 West End Avenue (the building does not now survive). Long had developed an interest in the weird by reading the Oz books, Verne, and Wells in youth, and he exercised his talents both in prose and in poetry. He discovered

amateurdom when he won a prize for the *Boy's World* and received an invitation to join the UAPA; he seems to have done so around the end of 1919.[15] In an unsigned article, "The Work of Frank Belknap Long, Jr." (*United Amateur,* May 1924) Lovecraft declares that Long's first published work in amateurdom—"Dr. Whitlock's Price" (*United Amateur,* March 1920)—was "a frankly boyish and elementary story"; it is, in fact, a wildly flamboyant and rather ridiculous mad scientist tale. His next work of fiction —"The Eye above the Mantel" (*United Amateur,* March 1921)—is, however, a very different proposition.

The story is also a trifle sophomoric, but still very striking in its way. In a rhythmic and incantatory prose that occasionally recalls Dunsany, but with an atmosphere of clutching horror that is clearly Poe-esque, "The Eye above the Mantel" professes to tell of the end of the human race and the "supermen" who will succeed it. It is scarcely to be wondered that Lovecraft would be attracted to it, since he had already indirectly dealt with this theme in "Memory." Lovecraft also published, in the May 1922 *United Amateur,* Long's "At the Home of Poe," a brief prose-poem about the Poe cottage in Fordham. And in his own *Conservative* for July 1923 he published Long's "Felis: A Prose Poem." an exquisite story inspired by his pet cat. How could the ailurophile Lovecraft have resisted this passage?

> Some day I shall drown in a sea of cats. I shall go down, smothered by their embraces, feeling their warm breath upon my face, gazing into their large eyes, hearing in my ears their soft purring. I shall sink lazily down through oceans of fur, between myriads of claws, clutching innumerable tails, and I shall surrender my wretched soul to the selfish and insatiate god of felines.

It is not difficult to see why Lovecraft took to Long, and why he saw in him a sort of pendant to his other young disciple, Alfred Galpin. Long may not have had Galpin's incandescent brilliance as a philosopher, but he was an aesthete, fictionist, and poet; and it was exactly at this time that Lovecraft's own creative focus was shifting from arid antiquarian poetry and essays to weird fiction. Indeed, in a letter to Kleiner in which he notes getting in touch with Long, Lovecraft remarks: "Naturally my changed literary province tends to group around me a new set of proteges and clients —the budding story writers."[16] Long's early Poe-esque work, by no means

markedly inferior to Lovecraft's, no doubt helped convince the latter that the new direction in which he was heading was a potentially fruitful one.

Long, of course, was not at all temperamentally or intellectually similar to Lovecraft. His aesthetic foci were the Italian Renaissance and nineteenth-century French literature. As befits a fiery youth, he tended to go through phases of passionate rapture—for avant-garde literary sophistication, for mediaeval Catholicism (although he himself was an agnostic and perhaps an atheist), and, some years later, Bolshevism. Lovecraft looked upon these sudden shifts of interest with a certain cynical amusement, but he could not remain unaffected by them; if nothing else, they inspired voluminous argumentative letters that helped to clarify his own aesthetic, philosophical, and political views. Indeed, it is very likely that Long helped to initiate a significant shift in Lovecraft's own aesthetic.

For now, however, the bond that linked the two men was weird fiction, and Long would be the privileged first reader of many of Lovecraft's stories in manuscript. They could know that they would remain the closest of friends for the next seventeen years.

Toward the end of 1919 Lovecraft and Kleiner began a desultory discussion of women, love, and sex. Kleiner, apparently, had always been susceptible to the temptations of the fair, and Lovecraft looked upon his varied involvements with a mixture of mild surprise, amusement, and perhaps a certain lofty contempt. At one point he remarks:

> Of course, I am unfamiliar with amatory phenomena save through cursory reading. I always assumed that one waited till he encountered some nymph who seemed radically different to him from the rest of her sex, and without whom he felt he could no longer exist. Then, I fancied, he commenced to lay siege to her heart in businesslike fashion, not desisting till either he won her for life, or was blighted by rejection.[17]

On the matter of sex, Lovecraft was equally resolute: "Eroticism belongs to a lower order of instincts, and is an animal rather than nobly human quality. . . . The primal savage or ape merely looks about his native forest to find a mate; the exalted Aryan should lift his eyes to the worlds of space and consider his relation to infinity!!" One suspects that that double exclamation mark, plus the generally bombastic tone of the entire passage, are indicative of a certain self-parody. But Lovecraft goes on:

> About romance and affection I never have felt the slightest interest; whereas the sky, with its tale of eternities past and to come, and its gorgeous panoply of whirling universes, has always held me enthralled. And in truth, is this not the natural attitude of an analytical mind? What is a beauteous nymph? Carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen, a dash or two of phosphorus and other elements—all to decay soon. But what is *the cosmos?* What is the secret of time, space, and the things that lie beyond time and space?[18]

Well, that seems to settle that. But is it really the case that Lovecraft was "unfamiliar with amatory phenomena"? that he had "never felt the slightest interest" in romance? There is perhaps some small reason for doubt on the matter; and it centres upon an individual who has been mentioned sporadically during the last several chapters—Winifred Virginia Jackson (1876–1959).

According to research done by George T. Wetzel and R. Alain Everts, Jackson had married Horace Jordan, an African American, around 1915; at that time she resided at 57 Morton Street in Newton Centre, Massachusetts, a suburb of Boston. Wetzel and Everts believe that she divorced in early 1919,[19] although she continues to be listed in the UAPA membership list under her married name until September 1921. By January 1920 she is living, along with two other female amateurs, at 20 Webster Street in Allston.

Jackson had joined the UAPA in October 1915,[20] and Lovecraft must have got in touch with her, at least by correspondence, very shortly thereafter, for the January 1916 issue of the *Conservative* contains two poems by her (signed Winifred Virginia Jordan), "Song of the North Wind" and "Galileo and Swammerdam." Three of her poems—"April," "In Morven's Mead," and "The Night Wind Bared My Heart"—appeared in the *Conservative* for April 1916. Two more, "Insomnia" and "The Pool," were published in the October 1916 issue; and I have noted already that Lovecraft's poem "The Unknown" appeared in this issue under Jackson's pseudonym, "Elizabeth Berkeley," a situation that was repeated in May 1917 when "The Peace Advocate" appeared under the same pseudonym in the *Tryout.*

Jackson and Lovecraft certainly do seem to have done a considerable amount of amateur work together. She herself issued only a single issue of

the amateur journal *Eurus* (February 1918), which contained Lovecraft's poem on Jonathan E. Hoag's eighty-seventh birthday; as President of the United Women's Press Club of Massachusetts, she helped to publish one issue of the *Bonnet* (June 1919). She and Lovecraft, along with several others, edited and published three issues of the *United Co-operative* (1918–21), and she was associate editor of the *Silver Clarion* at a time when Lovecraft was giving a certain amount of attention to that journal. Jackson was Second Vice-President of the UAPA for three consecutive years (1917–20), when Lovecraft was President (1917–18) and Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism (1918–19).

Then, of course, there are the two stories co-written by Jackson and Lovecraft. One, "The Green Meadow" (1918/19), has already been discussed. The other, "The Crawling Chaos" (1920/21), was similarly based on a dream by Jackson and is similarly insubstantial; it was published in the *United Co-operative* for April 1921. All this suggests that a considerable amount of correspondence must have passed between the two, but only five letters by Lovecraft for the period 1920–21 survive, and these only in transcripts made by R. H. Barlow; there are, to my knowledge, no surviving letters by Jackson to Lovecraft.

None of this would suggest that Lovecraft and Jackson were anything but occasionally close working colleagues were it not for some remarks made by Willametta Keffer, an amateur of a somewhat later period, to George T. Wetzel in the 1950s. According to Wetzel, Keffer told him that (and here Wetzel is paraphrasing a letter by Keffer) "everybody in Amateur Journalism thought Lovecraft would marry Winifred Jordan"; Keffer herself stated to Wetzel, "A long time member of NAPA who knew and met both HPL and Winifred Virginia told me of the 'romance.'"[21]

It is difficult to know what to make of this. Lovecraft must have met Jackson in person no later than the summer of 1920, since she was then residing at 20 Webster Street in Allston, where Lovecraft stopped on at least two occasions; but strangely enough, he does not mention her in any of his various accounts of his trips there. He did write an effusive article, "Winifred Virginia Jackson: A 'Different' Poetess," in the *United Amateur* for March 1921; and he spent Christmas Day of 1920 writing a quaint poem upon receiving a photograph of her—presumably her Christmas gift to him. "On Receiving a Portraiture of Mrs. Berkeley, y^{e} Poetess" is rather charming, and naturally lauds both her beauty and her poetical skill:

Tho’ outward form the fair indeed would place
Within the ranks of Venus’ comely race,
Yon shapely head so great an art contains
That *Pallas’* self must own inferior strains.

Jackson really was a very attractive woman, and the fact that she was fourteen years older than Lovecraft need not preclude a romance between the two. But one other fact must now be adduced: although by this time divorced, Jackson (according to Wetzel and Everts) was carrying on an affair with the noted black poet and critic William Stanley Braithwaite (1878–1962), and she would remain his mistress for many years.[22] Did Lovecraft know this? I find it impossible to believe, given his extraordinarily strict views on the need to maintain an absolute “colour line” prohibiting any sort of sexual union between blacks and whites; if he had known, he would have dropped Jackson immediately even as a colleague. He might not even have known that Horace Jordan was black. Lovecraft of course did know of Braithwaite, who by this time was already the most prominent black critic in the country; he would correspond with him briefly in 1930. As literary editor of the influential *Boston Transcript* and as editor of the annual *Anthology of Magazine Verse* (1913–29), Braithwaite occupied a formidable position in American poetry at this time. Lovecraft casually mentions that Jackson’s verse had appeared in the *Boston Transcript,*[23] and her verse was also reprinted in a number of the Braithwaite anthologies; it would be uncharitable to think that they did so merely because she was Braithwaite’s mistress, for much of her poetry is rather good—better as a whole than Lovecraft’s early verse. Lovecraft was no doubt appreciative of what he in his 1921 article called her “poems of potent terror and dark suggestion”; and I see no reason to believe that he had much of a hand in writing or revising them, although he does mention revising a poem for Jackson in 1916.[24] Her poem “April” (*Conservative,* April 1916) has a delicacy Lovecraft could not hope to duplicate:

Winter’s sway
Pass’d away
’Neath a blue sky’s leaven;
In its place
Out of space
Dropp’d a golden heaven!

There are two further bits of evidence that seem to clinch the matter of a romance between Lovecraft and Jackson. A photograph was taken at some point by Lovecraft (probably in 1921) of Jackson at the seaside; and Lovecraft's wife Sonia Greene told R. Alain Everts in 1967 that "I stole HPL away from Winifred Jackson."[25] How this happened will be the subject of a later chapter; but this romance, if it could really be called that, appears to have been very languidly pursued on both sides. There is no evidence that Jackson ever came to Providence to visit Lovecraft, as Sonia frequently did even though she lived much farther away (Brooklyn), and after Sonia "stole" him we hear little of Winifred either from Lovecraft or in the amateur press generally. She published only two books of verse, *Backroads: Maine Narratives, with Lyrics* (1927) and *Selected Poems* (with Major Ralph Temple Jackson) (1944).

One also does not know what, if anything, to make of some of the other amateur women who were associated with Lovecraft at this time. It is understandable that he would go to Boston to hear Lord Dunsany in the company of Alice Hamlet, since she was the one who introduced him to the Irish master; and we hear very little of her after that point. Lovecraft visited Myrta Alice Little a few times in New Hampshire during 1921, and one long and rambling letter to her survives. Then there is the enigma of Anna Helen Crofts, the only other woman with whom Lovecraft collaborated (as opposed to doing unsigned revision work), in the curious fantasy "Poetry and the Gods" (*United Amateur,* September 1920). I shall investigate each of these relationships further in their proper place, but I doubt if anything romantic was involved, at least on Lovecraft's side. It is not unlikely that a man of Lovecraft's great accomplishment in the tiny amateur world might have been the object of affection on the part of female amateurs, but aside from the Jackson matter we have not even the remotest evidence of any such thing.

Meanwhile Lovecraft was not done travelling. Two more trips to Boston were made in the early months of 1921, both again for amateur conventions. On February 22 the Boston Conference of Amateur Journalists was held at Quincy House. In the afternoon session, beginning at 2 P.M., Lovecraft delivered a paper, written the previous day,[26] on a prescribed subject, "What Amateurdom and I Have Done for Each Other." I have earlier noted the benefits Lovecraft claims (rightly) to have derived from

amateur journalism: the broadening of his perspective by encountering other minds, and the chance to offer his writings to an appreciative public. Lovecraft is also perspicacious, if predictably modest, on what he has done for the amateur cause: he initiated a searching but constructive brand of criticism through the official public and private criticism bureaux; he issued his own paper, the *Conservative,* from 1915 to 1919, even if "circumstances have since forced me to suspend its publication" (he would fleetingly resume it in 1923); he contributed voluminously to other papers; and he performed "my share of administrative drudgery both official and unofficial." It is, on the whole, an eloquent statement, full of keen self-awareness. Lovecraft writes to his mother: "My own remarks were received with a surprising amount of applause, which naturally gratified me immensely."[27]

Lovecraft, still largely a United man, found himself greatly outnumbered by Nationalites at the conference; so he kept closely in the company of Winifred Jackson and Mrs S. Lilian McMullen (Lilian Middleton) as a "compact minority of purely United enthusiasts."[28] His skill in conversational repartee—which would reach its height at gatherings of the Kalem Club in New York in 1924–26—was beginning to emerge. When Laurie A. Sawyer, a devoted Nationalite, pointed out that her association was older and larger, Lovecraft produced a biological analogy: just as the dinosaur was older and larger than man, so was it also slower and duller!

After the banquet Lovecraft was to give a set speech on the designated subject, "The Best Poet." He reports not reading it verbatim from the manuscript but instead making a number of extemporaneous asides which "evoked fairly thunderous applause."[29] Lovecraft does not specify the content of this speech, but it may possibly be the essay published in the March 1921 *United Amateur* as "Winifred Virginia Jackson: A 'Different' Poetess." This is, however, only a conjecture.

Afterward Lovecraft engaged in various discussion—mostly with W. Paul Cook and George Julian Houtain—but declined an invitation to sing, even though he had apparently done so at the September 1920 gathering.[30] So Lovecraft's days as a plaintive tenor were not wholly over! He caught a late train home, but because of an accident to a previous train did not reach 598 Angell Street until 3.30 A.M.

A month later Lovecraft returned to Boston for a St Patrick's Day gathering of amateurs on March 10.[31] This took place at 20 Webster Street. Members were seated in a circle in the parlour, and literary contributions were recited in sequence. Lovecraft on this occasion read the story "The Moon-Bog," written expressly for the occasion; it received abundant applause, but did not win the prize. In the general discussion that followed, Lovecraft got into a philosophical discussion with a new recruit, Dr Joseph Homer (listed in the UAPA membership lists as living in Roxbury); this was not an argumentative debate, since Lovecraft and Homer saw things pretty much eye to eye, but it "drew about us rather a large circle of wide-eyed listeners; two or three of whom may have understood some of the words we used."[32]

Lovecraft was the only out-of-town guest at the gathering, and was to stay overnight; so that the discussion proceeded far into the night. He stayed up till 1.30 A.M. talking with Winifred Jackson and Edith Miniter, then retired to a guest room. The next day (Friday the 11th) was spent largely in varied discussions and in Lovecraft's playing with the household cat, named Tat; ordinarily a shy creature, it deigned to be picked up by Lovecraft and sat purring in his lap. Lovecraft again caught a late train, but this time there were no mishaps and he returned home by 1.30 A.M.

Lovecraft was planning yet another trip in early June, this time to New Hampshire to visit Myrta Alice Little in Hampstead, near Westville (just over the Massachusetts border, a few miles north of Haverhill). I am not sure how Lovecraft got in touch with Miss Little; she had been a member since at least September 1920, and she may have been a friend of Charles W. ("Tryout") Smith of Haverhill, whom Lovecraft had known at least by correspondence since 1917. Lovecraft reports that Little was a former college professor who was now attempting to be a professional writer.[33] In spite of the length of the proposed trip, he wished to stay only one night, since he had felt very tired on the second days of his two overnight stops in Boston (July 1920 and March 1921). He planned therefore to visit Little on June 8, stay overnight, and then move on to Boston to attend a Hub Club meeting in Boston on the 9th. This would have been only the fourth state he had set foot in—Rhode Island and Massachusetts in 1890, Connecticut in 1903 (a visit about which we know nothing), and now New Hampshire. But Lovecraft's one surviving letter to Little, written on May 17, 1921,[34] was written only a week before the most traumatic event of his entire life up to

this point: the death of his mother on May 24. How this happened, and how Lovecraft dealt with it, I shall examine in a later chapter.

In "A Confession of Unfaith" Lovecraft suggests that the immediate postwar period led to the solidification of his philosophical thought: "The Peace Conference, Friedrich Nietzsche, Samuel Butler (the modern), H. L. Mencken, and other influences have perfected my cynicism; a quality which grows more intense as the advent of middle life removes the blind prejudice whereby youth clings to the vapid 'all's right with the world' hallucination from sheer force of desire to have it so." These "influences" are certainly a heterogeneous lot, and they seem primarily influential in Lovecraft's ethical, political, and social philosophy. What he does not state here are what appear to be the two central influences on his metaphysical thought of the time—Ernst Haeckel's *The Riddle of the Universe* (1899; English translation 1900) and Hugh Elliot's *Modern Science and Materialism* (1919). This is by no means to say that these two volumes alone shaped Lovecraft's metaphysics, which in many important particulars can be traced back to the Presocratics, Epicurus, and nineteenth-century science; but these volumes, read apparently in 1918–19, helped to give direction to his views for several years to come, until new influences would compel him to modify his outlook significantly.

It cannot be said that Lovecraft chose especially eminent figures as the immediate sources for his metaphysics. Ernst Haeckel (1834–1919) was, indeed, a highly noted biologist, zoologist, and anthropologist, and with Thomas Henry Huxley was one of the leading proponents of Darwin's theory of evolution. Lovecraft also read his *The Evolution of Man* (1903; a translation of *Anthropogenie,* 1874). *The Riddle of the Universe* (a translation of *Die Welträthsel*) is the summation of nineteenth-century thought on biology and physics, but the biological section is much sounder than the physical section, which was significantly vitiated only half a decade later by the Einstein theory. Haeckel is, perhaps justifiably, no longer held in much esteem as a pure philosopher. The English writer Hugh Elliot (1881–1930) was never held in much esteem as a philosopher, since he was merely a populariser of the subject and not a pioneer in any capacity; he wrote a few other books, including *Modern Science and the Illusions of Professor Bergson* (1912) and *Herbert Spencer* (1917). I cannot find any evidence that Lovecraft read any other work of his except *Modern*

Science and Materialism, but this book encapsulated the doctrine of pure materialism ably enough to give him a clear foundation for his metaphysics.

Elliot lays down three main principles of mechanistic materialism:

> 1. The uniformity of law.
> 2. The denial of teleology.
> 3. The denial of any form of existence other than those envisaged by physics and chemistry, that is to say, other existences that have some kind of palpable material characteristics and qualities.[35]

Lovecraft espoused all these tenets to the end of his life, feeling that even the revolutionary findings of relativity and quantum theory did not upset them in essence. Let us consider each of these principles in greater detail.

1) The uniformity of law means that the sequence of cause and effect is constant throughout the universe, from the smallest sub-atomic particle to the largest quasar or nebula. This is the "mechanistic" part of mechanistic materialism—the universe is a mechanism that runs by fixed laws of Nature. It is not necessary for us to know all these laws—indeed, according to most materialists it is not even possible for us to do so—but it is theoretically conceivable. But what Elliot and many other nineteenth-century materialists ignored—or, more likely, were careful to brush under the rug—is that the uniformity of law is not a datum of physics but (as Hume was the first to suggest) an inference from all the accumulated data of physics. Before the introduction of quantum theory, there never had been discovered any genuine violations of causality, as physics, chemistry, and biology were explaining with ever-increasing thoroughness the purely mechanical activity of all entity. Even after quantum theory it is possible to "save causality" after a fashion.

2) The denial of teleology generally refers to the denial that the cosmos *as a whole* is progressing in some direction, especially—as in religious metaphysics—under the direction of a deity. The more restricted notion that the human race is evolving toward some (presumably better) state of existence is not a purely metaphysical conception, even in its religious guise, for ethical and political considerations can enter into it; but as propounded by most religious or quasi-religious thinkers, the notion refers to the divine guidance of mankind to a more exalted spiritual state.

3) Elliot's formulation of this principle is a little unfortunate, since it is exactly the assertion of religionists and spiritualists that there are "other

existences" which do *not* have "palpable material characteristics"—i.e., soul or spirit. Nevertheless, denial of spirit—or any non-material entity—is really the cardinal tenet and defining quality of materialism. It is conceivable to reject the first two of Elliot's principles (most modern physicists would, at least in theory, reject the first, and several eighteenth-century *philosophes* denied the second, in that they asserted the ultimate perfectibility of the human race) and still remain a materialist; but the third cannot be so rejected.

Mechanistic materialism as a philosophy, of course, goes back to the Presocratics, specifically Leucippus and Democritus, the co-founders of atomism and very strong proponents of determinism. Epicurus followed Democritus in metaphysics but rejected him in ethics, at least insofar as he espoused free will, something that a rigid adherence to the "uniformity of law" principle renders theoretically impossible. The Roman poet Lucretius did no more than versify Epicurus' philosophy, although he did so with breathtaking panache, and in so doing helped to introduce Epicurean principles to the Roman world and, ultimately, to the Renaissance.

Lovecraft displays considerable familiarity with all these ancient thinkers, but I am still unclear how he gained this information. Leucippus, Democritus, and Epicurus exist only in fragments. The remains of the first two were collected in Hermann Diels's landmark compilation, *Die Fragmente der Vorsokratiker* (1903), but Lovecraft's Greek was never good enough to enable him to pore through this work; Epicurus' fragments were not definitively collected until Cyril Bailey's edition of 1926, long after Lovecraft was citing him as an influence. Perhaps he read (in translation) Diogenes Laertius' *Lives of the Philosophers,* which offer sound enough accounts of these philosophers' views, although they tend to be chatty, biographical, and at times unreliable. Lovecraft certainly read Lucretius in Latin: he owned Jacob Bernays's Teubner edition of 1879, and in 1927 he actually recited a line of Lucretius in a dream. Even handbooks on ancient philosophy were not common in Lovecraft's day, but one has to assume that he read some such at a relatively early stage—perhaps during his hermitry of 1908–13. He owned Fénélon's *Lives of the Ancient Philosophers* in an 1824 English translation, and this is as good a source as any.

Among modern thinkers materialism made considerable headway in the seventeenth (Hobbes), eighteenth (Helvétius, La Mettrie, d'Holbach), and nineteenth centuries, in part through the rediscovery of the ancient

materialists and much more importantly through increasing advances in science. It is, however, a myth that Lovecraft was in any significant way influenced by eighteenth-century philosophy. Although he was very much influenced by the (English) literature of the period, he shows little familiarity with the great thinkers of the age, not even with the *philosophes* whom he would have found congenial. He tends to rattle off names such as "La Mettrie, Diderot, Helvetius, Hume, & dozens of others . . . in the supremely rational 18th century,"[36] but with little suggestion that he has genuinely absorbed these philosophers.

In fact, Lovecraft's chief philosophical influences are all from the nineteenth century—Darwin, Huxley, Haeckel, and others who by their pioneering work in biology, chemistry, and physics systematically brought more and more phenomena under the realm of the known and the natural. There is nothing to criticise in all this—Lovecraft, as a creative artist, had no need to be an encyclopaedia on the history of philosophy, and his philosophical mentors were, on the whole, about as sound as one could want for the type of outlook he came to evolve.

Let us return to Elliot's three principles and see where Lovecraft stands in relation to them. The first—the uniformity of law—had by Lovecraft's day become such an axiom of science that he accepted it as a matter of course; indeed, it was because he so firmly accepted it—and made it the foundation not merely of his metaphysics but of certain features of his ethics and even aesthetics—that he had so much difficulty coming to terms with quantum theory. Nevertheless, he did accept Elliot's notion that human beings can never know all the "laws" of Nature because of the inescapable limitations of our senses. Elliot writes provocatively:

> Let us first ask why it is that all past efforts to solve ultimate riddles have failed, and why it is that they must continue to fail. It is, in the first place, due to the fact that all knowledge is based on sense-impressions, and cannot, therefore, go beyond what the senses can perceive. Men have five or six different senses only, and these are all founded on the one original sense of touch. . . . Now, supposing that we happened to have a thousand senses instead of five, it is clear that our conceptions of the Universe would be extremely different from what it now is. We cannot assume that the Universe has only five qualities because we have only five senses. We must assume, on the contrary, that the

> number of its qualities may be infinite, and that the more senses we had, the more we should discover about it. (2–3)

I shall return to this staggering conception later; it is one that Lovecraft clearly found very stirring to his imagination, and it led Elliot himself to write with unwonted cynicism, "Our achievements are like the scratchings of a field-mouse on the side of a mountain" (27). Lovecraft, in any case, echoes Elliot when he states in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays of 1921: "Beyond a certain limit knowledge may be impossible to acquire with man's present sensory and intellectual equipment." This seems to leave open the possibility of some future development of humanity's sensory and intellectual equipment, but Lovecraft probably did not intend such an implication; in any case, epistemology was the weakest area of his philosophical thought, simply because he did not pay much attention to it or felt it needed much attention.

It is on Elliot's second principle—the denial of teleology—that Lovecraft felt most passionate. His cosmicism, engendered by his astronomical studies, had relegated the entire history of the human race to an inessential nanosecond in the realm of infinite space and time; and any suggestion—whether in metaphysics or in ethics—that humanity might conceivably have some *cosmic* (as opposed to local) importance caused him to unleash all his rhetorical weapons with a vengeance. One of the theories he toyed with in his battle against teleology was Nietzsche's eternal recurrence—the idea that, given the infinity of space, time, and matter, all entities and events in the universe are bound to recur an infinite number of times. Nietzsche, like Lovecraft, used this argument against religious conceptions of the universe as divinely created for the human race. As early as 1918—perhaps even before he had read Nietzsche—Lovecraft wrote: "I am inclined to think that all entity evolves in cycles—that sooner or later everything occurs practically all over again."[37] In *In Defence of Dagon* he is a little more cautious:

> As to the origin of a supposed deity—if one *always existed* and *always will exist,* how can he be developing creation from one definite state to another? Nothing but a *cycle* is in any case conceivable—a cycle or an infinite rearrangement, if that be a tenable thought. Nietzsche saw this when he spoke of the *ewigen Wiederkunft.* In absolute eternity there is neither starting-point nor destination.

Gradually, however, Lovecraft was forced to give up the notion of eternal recurrence and replace it with the more scientifically plausible notion of entropy—the eventual degradation of all the energy of the cosmos to a state of mere radiant heat. Here he follows Elliot over Haeckel, who had denied entropy because he was so wedded to the conception of the eternity of the cosmos that he could not envision a time when all matter might be obliterated. Elliot counters:

> If transformations of matter and energy are entirely reversible, taking place with equal facility in any direction, then the Universe might be regarded as a permanent existence, in more or less its present form. . . . [But] transformations do *not* take place equally readily in all directions; they tend very unmistakably towards what may be called a degradation of matter and energy. The Universe is running down; and, theoretically at least, a time may be imagined when it will have run down altogether, becoming still and "lifeless." (61)

As early as 1915 Lovecraft postulated a similar conception in one of his astronomy articles: "A vast, sepulchral universe of unbroken midnight gloom and perpetual arctic frigidity, through which will roll dark, cold suns with their hordes of dead, frozen planets, on which will lie the dust of those unhappy mortals who will have perished as their dominant stars faded from their skies. Such is the depressing picture of a future too remote for calculation" ("Clusters and Nebulae," Part II, *Asheville Gazette-News,* 6 April 1915). This is in fact not entropy, since there would be no suns or planets at all; but the idea is analogous. We shall see it recur after a fashion in some of his stories, where he imagines the eventual cooling of the sun and the extinction of all life on this planet and throughout the solar system. It is not entirely certain that Lovecraft actually embraced entropy, for he too was very wedded to the notion of the eternity and infinity of the universe—he required these conceptions as the means to deflate human self-importance—and this is why he regarded Einstein's notion of curved space with a certain unease.

Another way in which Lovecraft differed from Haeckel is in the latter's wild extension of a very sound principle—Darwin's theory of evolution—to cosmic proportions. Like Lovecraft, Haeckel found in Darwin a great weapon against terrestrial teleology:

> Darwin was the first to point out that the "struggle for life" is the unconscious regulator which controls the reciprocal action of heredity and adaptation in the gradual transformation of species; it is the great "selective divinity" which, by a purely "natural choice," without preconceived design, creates new forms, just as selective man creates new types by an 'artificial choice" with a definite design. That gave us the solution of the great philosophical problem: "How can purposive contrivances be produced by purely mechanical processes without design?" . . . Thus have we got rid of the transcendental "design" of the teleological philosophy of the schools, which was the greatest obstacle to the growth of a rational and monistic conception of nature.[38]

The refutation of the religious "argument from design"—the notion that the entities of the world are so well adapted to their environments that they must have been produced by a deity—far antedates Voltaire's *Candide;* the Epicureans very powerfully pointed to the imperfections of the world in opposition to this conception. But the scientific proof had to wait till Darwin. But Haeckel then extravagantly assumes that the principle of evolution is somehow inherent in the cosmos at large: "It is true that there were philosophers who spoke of the evolution of things a thousand years ago; but the recognition that such a law dominates the entire universe, and that the world is nothing else than an eternal "evolution of substance," is a fruit of the nineteenth century" (4). Lovecraft, amusingly enough, refutes this argument soundly when, in *In Defence of Dagon,* he attacks a Mr Wickenden who was putting forth a somewhat analogous religious argument:

> [Wickenden] sees a process of evolution in operation at one particular cosmic moment in one particular point in space; and at once assumes gratuitously that *all the cosmos* is evolving steadily *in one direction* toward a fixed goal. Moreover, he *feels* that it all must amount to something—he calls it a thing of "heroism and splendour"! So when it is shewn that life on our world will (relatively) soon be extinct through the cooling of the sun; that space is full of such worlds which have died; that human life and the solar system itself are the merest *novelties* in an eternal cosmos; and that all indications point to a gradual

> breaking down of both matter and energy which will eventually nullify the results of evolution in any particular corner of space; when these things are shewn Mr. Wickenden recoils, and . . . cries out that it's all nonsense—it just *can't* be so!! But what of the actual probability, apart from man's futile wishes? If we cannot prove that the universe means *nothing,* how can we prove that it means *anything*—what right have we to invent a notion of purpose in the utter absence of evidence?

Elliot's third principle—denial of spirit—was scarcely less thoroughly espoused by Lovecraft. It is here that Elliot, Haeckel, and Lovecraft (and for that matter Nietzsche) are all in accord. At one point in *The Riddle of the Universe* (204–5) Haeckel posits a six-stage argument to demolish the notion of an immaterial soul, using physiological, histological, experimental, pathological, ontogenic, and phylogenetic arguments. Lovecraft follows Haeckel's argument closely in *In Defence of Dagon:*

> One might ask, to the confounding of those who aver that men have "souls" whilst beasts have not, . . . just how the evolving organism began to acquire "spirit" after it crossed the boundary betwixt advanced ape and primitive human? It is rather hard to believe in "soul" when one has not a jot of evidence for its existence; when all the psychic life of man is demonstrated to be precisely analogous to that of other animals—presumably "soulless". But all this is too childish. When we investigate both ontogeny and phylogeny we find that man had both individually and racially evolved from the unicellular condition. . . . This development occurs both pre-natally and post-natally in the individual, and can be followed with much exactitude. In the species, we can follow it hardly less exactly by means of comparative anatomy and biology.

It is clear that Lovecraft is heavily reliant on the theory of evolution in this argument. I am not certain whether Lovecraft actually read Darwin: his books are not found in Lovecraft's library (but then, neither are Elliot's, Haeckel's, or Nietzsche's), and although Lovecraft does mention *The Origin of Species* and *The Descent of Man* in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays, I cannot sense any genuine familiarity with these works. In all likelihood, he absorbed evolution chiefly from Thomas Henry Huxley and Haeckel.

It is somewhat interesting to note that both Elliot and Haeckel share, to some degree, Lovecraft's sense of cosmic insignificance. Haeckel branded as "anthropism" the mistaken idea that the human race had some sort of cosmic importance: "I designate by this term 'that powerful and world-wide group of erroneous opinions which opposes the human organism to the whole of the rest of nature, and represents it to be the preordained end of the organic creation, an entity essentially distinct from it, a godlike being'" (11; Haeckel is quoting an earlier work of his own). Elliot is no less explicit:

> Just as the savage supposes the whole Universe to be specially created for the benefit of himself or his tribe; just as the more civilised man supposes the Universe to be specially subservient to the human race; so in the most recondite problems of philosophy our arguments tend to be vitiated by infusion of the subjective element, in such a way that we read into external nature the human interests and egocentric habits which belong to our own minds. (167)

This passage is remarkable in that Lovecraft provided an anticipation of it in 1916: "Our philosophy is all childishly *subjective*—we imagine that the welfare of our race is the paramount consideration, when as a matter of fact the very existence of the race may be an obstacle to the predestined course of the aggregated universes of infinity!"[39] It is no wonder that Elliot's book was so stimulating for him: it may have seemed to Lovecraft that he had written it himself.

Lovecraft sees this "anthropism" working in most religious conceptions of the universe, and he devastates it in an argument on the subject with Maurice W. Moe in 1918:

> What am I? What is the nature of the energy about me, and how does it affect me? So far I have seen nothing which could possibly give me the notion that cosmic force is the manifestation of a mind and will like my own infinitely magnified; a potent and purposeful consciousness which deals individually and directly with the miserable denizens of a wretched little flyspeck on the back door of a microscopic universe, and which singles this putrid excrescence out as the one spot whereto to send an onlie-begotten Son, whose mission is to redeem these accursed flyspeck-inhabiting lice which we

> call human beings—bah!! Pardon the "bah!" I feel several "bahs!", but out of courtesy I say only one. But it is all so very childish. I cannot help taking exception to a philosophy which would force this rubbish down my throat.[40]

In all honesty, there is not much actual *reasoning* in this passage, and Lovecraft was aware of it; and of course he intentionally prejudices his account by all manner of pejorative designations ("miserable denizens," "putrid excrescence," etc.). If any argument can be derived from this, it is the argument from probability. And yet, Lovecraft knew that there was no other way to prove a negative proposition (i.e., the proposition that God does not exist). It is worth quoting a much later letter here, since its basic philosophic thrust is the same:

> I certainly can't see any sensible position to assume aside from that of *complete scepticism tempered by a leaning toward that which existing evidence makes most probable.* All I say is that I think it is *damned unlikely* that anything like a central cosmic will, a spirit world, or an eternal survival of personality exist. They are the most preposterous and unjustified of all the guesses which can be made about the universe, and I am not enough of a hair-splitter to pretend that I don't regard them as arrant and negligible moonshine. In theory I am an *agnostic,* but pending the appearance of rational evidence I must be classed, practically and provisionally, as an *atheist.* The chances of theism's truth being to my mind so microscopically small, I would be a pedant and a hypocrite to call myself anything else.[41]

One of the greatest weapons Lovecraft found in his battle against religious metaphysics (and, for that matter, ethics) was anthropology. The anthropological thought of the later nineteenth century had, in Lovecraft's mind, so convincingly accounted for the natural *origin* of religious belief that no further explanation was required for its tenacious hold on human beings. He writes in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays: "This matter of the explanation of 'spiritual' feelings is really the most important of all materialistic arguments; since the explanations are not only overwhelmingly forcible, but so adequate as to shew that man could not possibly have developed without acquiring just such false impressions." This conception is elaborated at length in the essay "Idealism and Materialism—A

Reflection," which was published in an issue of the *National Amateur* dated July 1919. This may not mean, however, that the essay was written at this time or earlier; for this issue (printed by W. Paul Cook) was held up for some two years, and seems to have come out shortly after the NAPA election in the summer of 1921.[42] In any event, Lovecraft's essay is a sort of updated "natural history of religion":

> Since to the untutored mind the conception of impersonal action is impossible, every natural phenomenon was invested with purpose and personality. If lightning struck the earth, it was wilfully hurled by an unseen being in the sky. If a river flowed toward the sea, it was because some unseen being wilfully propelled it. And since men understood no sources of action but themselves, these unseen creatures of imagination were endowed with human forms, despite their more than human powers. So rose the awesome race of anthropomorphic gods, destined to exert so long a sway over their creators.

This notion—that primitive human beings were, to put it crudely, merely bad philosophers who misapprehended the true nature of phenomena—was evolved by a number of important anthropologists of the later nineteenth century. I would like to believe that Lovecraft read Edward Burnett Tylor's *Primitive Culture* (1871), a landmark work in its field that is still of value, but can find no evidence that he ever did so. Tylor is cited as one of the anthropological authorities cited by Henry Wentworth Akeley in "The Whisperer in Darkness" (1930), and for some data in his stories Lovecraft pillaged several of Tylor's entries in the 9th edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* which he owned; but that is all. We are on more certain ground if we contend that Lovecraft's anthropology of religion comes from John Fiske's *Myths and Myth-Makers* (1872) and Sir James George Frazer's *The Golden Bough* (1890f.), which he clearly did read (although Frazer perhaps not this early). Fiske's book was in his library. Like Haeckel, John Fiske (1842–1901) has suffered somewhat of a decline in esteem, but in his day he was highly noted as an anthropologist, philosopher, and (in his later years) historian. Lovecraft also owned his *American Political Ideals Viewed from the Standpoint of Universal History* (1885) and *The Beginnings of New England; or, The Puritan Theocracy in Its Relation to Civil and Religious Liberty* (1889).

Here is Fiske on the subject of the origin of religion:

> The same mighty power of imagination which now, restrained and guided by scientific principles, leads us to discoveries and inventions, must have wildly run riot in mythologic fictions whereby to explain the phenomena of nature. Knowing nothing whatever of physical forces, of the blind steadiness with which a given effect invariably follows its cause, the men of primeval antiquity could interpret the actions of nature only after the analogy of their own actions. The only force they knew was the force of which they were directly conscious,—the force of will. Accordingly, they imagined all the outward world to be endowed with volition, and to be directed by it. They personified everything,—sky, clouds, thunder, sun, moon, ocean, earthquake, whirlwind.[43]

Fiske goes on to state that dreams and the fear of death led to the ideas of an immaterial soul that survives the body, and Lovecraft follows him in many essays and letters. And once religion became established in early civilised communities, it was perpetuated by the systematic brainwashing of the young into conventional religious belief. (There is relatively little in Lovecraft of Nietzsche's idea that religion is perpetuated by cynical clerics who wish to maintain their power and standing in their communities.) Curiously, in spite of Lovecraft's awareness of the pervasiveness of religious belief, in his early years he occasionally expressed sanguine beliefs about its downfall:

> The progress of science will eventually, I believe . . . put an end to spiritualism amongst the educated and even the half-educated. . . . A mere knowledge of the approximate dimensions of the visible universe is enough to destroy forever the notion of a personal godhead.[44]
>
> Dr. Sigmund Freud of Vienna, whose system of psycho-analysis I have begun to investigate, will probably prove the end of idealistic thought.[45]

This is one of the many occasions where Lovecraft places an exaggerated emphasis on the power of the rational mind to shape beliefs and to govern actions; and in a somewhat different way the notion enters into his fiction as well. Somewhat later Lovecraft came to a different and more seasoned view of religious belief:

> My contention is that religion is still useful amongst the herd—that it helps their orderly conduct as nothing else could, and that it gives them an emotional satisfaction they could not get elsewhere. I don't say that it does either of these things as well as it used to do, but I do say that I believe nothing else could do them so well even now. The crude human animal is ineradicably superstitious, and there is every biological and historical reason why he should be. An irreligious barbarian is a scientific impossibility. Rationalistic conceptions of the universe involve a type of mental victory over hereditary emotion quite impossible to the undeveloped and uneducated intellect. Agnosticism and atheism mean nothing to a peasant or workman. Mystic and teleological personification of natural forces is in his bone and blood—he cannot envisage the cosmos (i.e., the earth, the only cosmos he grasps) apart form them. Take away his Christian god and saints, and he will worship something else.[46]

Taking the cynicism of this passage into account, Lovecraft certainly seems to be pretty much on target here; what he would say about the recrudescence of very ignorant fundamentalist belief in the last three decades it is difficult to imagine. And yet, Lovecraft was perhaps not so wrong in thinking that a cleavage between the agnostic intelligentsia and the religious "herd" was occurring in his day and would continue to occur as science continued to advance. One historian, James Turner, has traced the rise of agnosticism in America after the Civil War to the weakening of three central arguments for religious belief: 1) Scripture (whose claim to be the "word of God" was thrown in doubt by the "higher criticism" of the middle nineteenth century, which found disturbing inconsistencies throughout the Old and New Testaments); 2) the argument from design (demolished by Darwin); and 3) the "hearts" of human beings (explained by psychology and anthropology).[47] Lovecraft, in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays, sympathetically if somewhat condescendingly discusses an anonymous article, "Whither?," published in the *Atlantic Monthly* for March 1915, which lamented the decline of religious belief:

> There is no real argument of importance in the harangue of the anonymous author, but the atmosphere of sorrow at the passing of the old illusions makes the whole complaint an absorbing human document. Certainly, there is much in the modern

> advance of knowledge which must of necessity shock and bewilder the mind accustomed to uncritical tradition. That the old illusions cheered and stimulated the average person to a more or less considerable degree cannot be denied—the dream-world of our grandsires was undoubtedly a sort of artificial paradise for mediocrity. . . . A phase of primitive allegory has retreated into the past, and we must make the best of what we cannot help. If we tried to believe now we should feel the sham, and despise ourselves for it—we simply know better, like the small boy deprived of "Santa Claus".

I want at last to return to those curious statements made in "A Confession of Unfaith," wherein Lovecraft attests to his "cynical materialism" and his "pessimistic cosmic views," for they will provide a transition to a study of Lovecraft's early ethics. Why cynical? why pessimistic? What is there in materialism or cosmicism that could lead to such an ethical stance? Well, as a matter of pure logic, nothing: materialism and cosmicism, as metaphysical principles, have *no* direct ethical corollaries, and it therefore becomes our task to ascertain how and why Lovecraft felt that they did. Let us consider some statements of the 1919–20 period:

> There is a real restfulness in the scientific conviction that nothing matters very much; that the only legitimate aim of humanity is to minimise acute suffering for the majority, and to derive whatever satisfaction is derivable from the exercise of the mind in the pursuit of truth.[48]
>
> The secret of true contentment . . . lies in the achievement of a *cosmical* point of view.[49]

Once again it must be emphasised that neither of these ethical precepts is a direct corollary of cosmicism; they are, rather, varying *psychological* responses to Lovecraft's awareness of the cosmic insignificance of humanity in a boundless universe. In effect, they are somewhat bizarre conjoinings of Epicureanism and Schopenhauerianism. Just prior to the utterance of the second statement above, Lovecraft has written: "To enjoy tranquillity, and to promote tranquillity in others, is the most enduring of delights. Such was the doctrine of Epicurus, the leading ethical philosopher of the world." But Lovecraft surrounds this utterance with the following:

> One should come to realise that all life is merely a comedy of vain desire, wherein those who strive are the clowns, and those who calmly and dispassionately watch are the fortunate ones who can laugh at the acts of the strivers. The utter emptiness of all the recognised goals of human endeavour is to the detached spectator deliciously apparent—the tomb yawns and grins so ironically! . . . If one's interest in life wanes, let him turn to the succour of others in a like plight, and some grounds for interest will be observed to return.

This is remarkably similar to a passage in Arthur Schopenhauer's *Studies in Pessimism,* virtually the only volume of Schopenhauer's that Lovecraft appears to have read: "The best consolation in misfortune or affliction of any kind will be the thought of other people who are in a still worse plight than yourself; and this is a form of consolation open to every one. But what an awful fate this means for mankind as a whole!"[50]

A later passage in this same letter of Lovecraft's is one of his most poignant early ethical remarks, and here he explicitly ties Epicureanism, Schopenhauerianism, and cosmicism into a neat (if not logically defensible) whole:

> About the time I joined the United I was none too fond of existence. I was 23 years of age, and realised that my infirmities would withhold me from success in the world at large. Feeling like a cipher, I felt I might as well be erased. But later I realised that even success is empty. Failure though I be, I shall reach a level with the greatest—and the smallest—in the damp earth or on the final pyre. And I saw that in the interim trivialities are not to be despised. Success is a relative thing—and the victory of a boy at marbles is equal to the victory of an Octavius at Actium when measured by the scale of cosmic infinity. So I turned to observe other mediocre and handicapped persons about me, and found pleasure in increasing the happiness of those who could be helped by such encouraging words or critical services as I am capable of furnishing. That I have been able to cheer here and there an aged man, an infirm old lady, a dull youth, or a person deprived by circumstances of education, affords to me a sense of being not altogether useless, which almost forms a substitute for the real success I shall never know. What matter if none hear of

> my labours, or if those labours touch only the afflicted and mediocre? Surely it is well that the happiness of the unfortunate be made as great as possible; and he who is kind, helpful, and patient with his fellow-sufferers, adds as truly to the world's combined fund of tranquillity as he who, with greater endowments, promotes the birth of empires, or advances the knowledge of civilisation and mankind.

Touching as this is, I wonder how it is to be reconciled with statements made in 1921 ("I expect nothing of man, and disown the race. . . . It is better to laugh at man from outside the universe, than to weep for him within"[51]) or 1923 ("Honestly, my hatred of the human animal mounts by leaps and bounds the more I see of the damned vermin, and the more I see exemplified the workings of their spiteful, shabby, and sadistic psychological processes"[52]). But perhaps there is no real contradiction: Lovecraft, without being a genuine pessimist or misanthrope, was never blind to the follies and contemptibilities of humanity. But the long quotation above may help us to understand why Lovecraft initially derived pessimism from cosmicism. His various comments to the contrary notwithstanding, I suspect he did suffer a sort of disillusion when he contemplated the myriad worlds of infinite space; the first reaction may well have been one of exhilaration, but perhaps not much later there came to him the sensation of the utter futility of all human effort in light of the vastness of the cosmos and the inconsequentiality of mankind in it. At a still later stage Lovecraft turned this pessimism to his advantage, and it became a bulwark against the little tragedies of his own existence—his failure to graduate from high school and enter college; his failure to secure a job; his dissatisfaction with the progress of his writing—since these things could be regarded as cosmically unimportant, however large they loomed in his own circumstances. Lovecraft largely abandoned Schopenhauerian pessimism over the next decade or so, evolving instead his notion of "indifferentism"; but this should be treated at a later stage.

I have adduced the influence of Nietzsche on a number of occasions, but it is again not entirely certain which of his works Lovecraft read. As early as 1916, in the "Department of Public Criticism" for June 1916, he makes passing reference to Nietzsche as the "German iconoclast"; but "A Confession of Unfaith" makes clear that Lovecraft read Nietzsche only after the war. The first mention I have found in Lovecraft occurs in September

1919: “With Nietzsche, I have been forced to confess that mankind as a whole has no goal or purpose whatever, but is a mere superfluous speck in the unfathomable vortices of infinity and eternity.”[53] So far as I know, Nietzsche never makes this exact utterance anywhere, and it may be Lovecraft’s not entirely sound inference from a variety of Nietzsche’s works. In a letter of 1921 he makes a pun on Kant’s name (cant), which Nietzsche had made (in English) in *Twilight of the Idols* (Poe had also made it in “How to Write a Blackwood Article”). In this same letter Lovecraft continues:

> Lest you fancy that I am making an idol of Nietzsche as others do of Kant, let me state clearly that I do not swallow him whole. His ethical system is a joke—or a poet’s dream, which amounts to the same thing. It is in his method, and his account of the basic origin and actual relation of existing ideas and standards, which make him the master figure of the modern age and founder of unvarnished sincerity in philosophical thought.[54]

This is a trifle vague, and I do not know what Lovecraft’s comment on Nietzsche’s ethical system is meant to suggest. But the second sentence is clearly a reference to several of Nietzsche’s works, chiefly *On the Genealogy of Morals,* which strove to find the natural (as opposed to divine or objective) origin of the notions of justice, democracy, and equality in primitive social customs. Lovecraft echoes these ideas in a single sentence of the *In Defence of Dagon* essays (“Then out of the principle of barter comes the illusion of ‘justice’”) and in his later philosophical thought as well. But Nietzsche’s influence on Lovecraft, at least in the short term, seemed chiefly to be manifested in the realm of social and political theory, and I shall examine this elsewhere.

The whole issue of how Lovecraft could offer moral precepts at all, even to himself, in light of his confirmed determinism and denial of free will did not trouble him much, as it has rarely troubled other determinists from Democritus on down. Lovecraft was indeed a determinist, and a very acute one, as he discusses the idea with Rheinhart Kleiner in 1921:

> Determinism—which you call Destiny—rules inexorably; though not exactly in the personal way you seem to fancy. We have no specific destiny against which we can fight—for the fighting would be as much a part of the destiny as the final end. The real fact is simply that every event in the cosmos is caused

> by the action of antecedent and circumjacent forces, so that whatever we do is unconsciously the inevitable product of Nature rather than of our own volition. If an act correspond with our wish, it is Nature that made the wish, and ensured its fulfilment.[55]

But Lovecraft was aware of the possible conflict between determinism and conventional ethics, as a much later essay, "Some Causes of Self-Immolation" (1931), establishes:

> It was of course recognised by determinists that behind any proximate base must lie the general flux of the universe, be it simple or complex; that is, that in the last analysis each human act can be no less than the inevitable result of every antecedent and circumambient condition in an eternal cosmos. This recognition, however, did not prevent such thinkers from continuing to seek for the more proximate base or bases, and to speculate upon the immediate strings by which human puppets are moved.

Perhaps Lovecraft is trying to have his cake and eat it too, here; but what he wishes to establish is simply that "free will" (in the conventional sense of conscious moral decisions for or against a given course of action) is in most, perhaps all, cases a myth because of those "antecedent and circumambient" conditions that cause a given ethical situation to occur and that cause each individual to make a decision in one way or another.

Curiously enough, Lovecraft once did believe in free will. In "A Confession of Unfaith" he records that among the benefits he derived from philosophical discussion with his fellow amateurs was that "I ceased my literal adherence to Epicurus and Lucretius, and reluctantly dismissed free-will in favour of determinism." This does not tell us *why* Lovecraft relinquished free will, and a letter of 1921 helps only marginally: "As to free-will—like the Epicureans, whose school I followed, I used to believe in it. Now, however, I am forced to admit that there is no room for it. It is fundamentally opposed to all those laws of causality which every phenomenon of Nature confirms and verifies."[56] If this tells us anything, it is that—Lovecraft's remark notwithstanding—he did not yield on free will through discussion with amateurs (unless it was with the Nietzschean Alfred Galpin) but through his absorption of the great trilogy of Nietzsche, Haeckel, and Elliot, who all unite on the issue. Incidentally, when Lovecraft

refers to his former "literal" adherence to Epicurean free will, I can hardly believe that he is referring to the bizarre contrivance by which Epicurus (and Lucretius) tried to save free will. Epicurus first unwisely deviated from Democritus by asserting that atoms primordially did not fly in all directions but all fell downward in space; this itself is bad enough, but then—solely in order to salvage free will—he postulated a random "swerve" of atoms that ultimately led to the creation of material objects, and which also in some fashion guaranteed free will. The notion was much ridiculed in antiquity, in spite of what we can now see as a wholly fortuitous similarity to quantum theory. I cannot imagine Lovecraft accepting the swerve: what he terms his "literal adherence" to Epicurus must be merely his provisional acceptance of the principle of free will and not the specifically Epicurean reasoning behind it.

I have referred frequently to the so-called *In Defence of Dagon* essays. This title was devised by R. H. Barlow for a series of three pieces, "The Defence Reopens!" (January 1921), "The Defence Remains Open!" (April 1921), and "Final Words" (September 1921), which Lovecraft sent through the Transatlantic Circulator; it was perhaps the first time when he was compelled to defend his entire metaphysical, ethical, and aesthetic philosophy, and these essays are among his most scintillating and rhetorically effective philosophical writing, far outshining the wooden and pedantic "Idealism and Materialism." Lovecraft's involvement in this group has been much misunderstood, and a detailed examination of it may be in order.

The Transatlantic Circulator has sometimes been taken to be an amateur journal of some kind, but in fact it was a loose organisation of amateur journalists in England and the United States who exchanged stories and poems in manuscript and criticised them. How long the organisation was in existence before Lovecraft's entrance into it in July 1920 is unknown, but it is certainly not correct, as some have believed, that Lovecraft himself organised the group. Indeed, there is nothing to suggest either this nor that the organisation collapsed after Lovecraft's exit from it in September 1921, for new members were entering it at precisely the time Lovecraft was withdrawing.

Also in doubt is the matter of who introduced Lovecraft to the Circulator. The choice would perhaps fall on John Ravenor Bullen, a

Canadian amateur and a central figure in the organisation. Bullen is the only one of the known members of the Circulator with whom Lovecraft continued an acquaintance in later life; but did he know Bullen as early as 1920? There is no especial reason to doubt it. Bullen shows up in the UAPA membership list for the first time in July 1920, and it is quite likely that he got in touch with Lovecraft—who had just been elected Official Editor of the UAPA—then or slightly later. Lovecraft published a poem of Bullen's in the July 1923 issue of the *Conservative,* but this issue may have been prepared much earlier; and in 1927 Lovecraft edited and wrote the preface to Bullen's posthumous collection of poems, *White Fire.*

The preserved letters of comment from other members of the Transatlantic Circulator allow us to know precisely the number and dates of the pieces by Lovecraft sent through the organisation. Lovecraft made his debut with "The White Ship," sent in July 1920; this was followed by two works, "Dagon" and "Old Christmas," sent in November 1920; then followed "The Tree," "Nemesis," and "Psychopompos" in January 1921; "The Nameless City," "To Mistress Sophia Simple, Queen of the Cinema," "On Religion," and "Quinsnicket Park" were submitted in June 1921; and "The Doom That Came to Sarnath," in September 1921, heralded Lovecraft's exit from the group. There must, however, have been at least one original essay, now evidently not extant, sent through the Circulator, as in "The Defence Reopens!" Lovecraft refers to "the Wickenden objections to my philosophical views"; this was presumably sent in November 1920. Indeed, the autograph manuscripts of the three surviving essays may be rough drafts that Lovecraft typed up for distribution through the Circulator. No letters or essays from Wickenden himself survive, so that we have no idea of his identity or location; but letters by several other members, mostly commenting on Lovecraft's stories and poems, are extant, and a number of these are quite acute. Lovecraft revised the final couplet of "Psychopompos" and the poem included in "Polaris" based on criticisms made in the Circulator.

Wickenden was Lovecraft's chief philosophical opponent, and he does not appear to have been a very astute one, for he allows Lovecraft many opportunities to demolish his obviously false and poorly conceived theistic views. If Lovecraft is occasionally a little hard on Wickenden, he never indulges in mere abuse and actually ends up taking Wickenden's views

more seriously than they deserve. At one point he makes one of his noblest utterances, as he attempts to free Wickenden from the immortality myth:

> No change of faith can dull the colours and magic of spring, or dampen the native exuberance of perfect health; and the consolations of taste and intellect are infinite. It is easy to remove the mind from harping on the lost illusion of immortality. The disciplined mind fears nothing and craves no sugar-plum at the day's end, but is content to accept life and serve society as best it may. Personally I should not care for immortality in the least. There is nothing better than oblivion, since in oblivion there is no wish unfulfilled. We had it before we were born, yet did not complain. Shall we then whine because we know it will return? It is Elysium enough for me, at any rate.

There is every reason to believe that Lovecraft actually practised the above precept in the subsequent course of his life.

Philosophy was only one of Lovecraft's many concerns in this period. Perhaps more significantly for his future career, he simultaneously began—or attempted to begin—separating himself from amateur activity and turning determinedly to fiction-writing. We can at last study the influence of Lord Dunsany on his fiction, as well as the many other tales of supernatural horror that laid the groundwork for his later, more substantial fiction.

11. Dunsanian Studies

(1919–1921 [II])

Edward John Moreton Drax Plunkett (1878–1957) became the eighteenth Lord Dunsany (pronounced Dun-SAY-ny) upon the death of his father in 1899. He could trace his lineage to the twelfth century, but few members of this Anglo-Norman line had shown much aptitude for literature. Dunsany himself did not do so in his early years, spent alternately in various homes in England and in Dunsany Castle in County Meath. He had gone to Eton and Sandhurst, had served in the Boer War, and appeared on his way to occupying an undistinguished place among the Anglo-Irish aristocracy as sportsman, hunter, and socialite. He married Beatrice Villiers, daughter of the Earl of Jersey, in 1904, the year he ran unsuccessfully for Parliament in England on the conservative ticket.

Dunsany had published a mediocre poem, "Rhymes from a Suburb," in the *Pall Mall Gazette* for September 1897 but otherwise gave little indication that he had any literary aspirations. But in 1904 he sat down and wrote *The Gods of Pegana.* Having no literary reputation, he was forced to pay for its publication with Elkin Mathews of London. Never again, however, would Dunsany have to resort to vanity publishing.

The Gods of Pegana opens thunderously:

> Before there stood gods upon Olympus, or even Allah was Allah, had wrought and rested Mana-Yood-Sushai.
>
> There are in Pegana—Mung and Sish and Kib, and the maker of all small gods, who is Mana-Yood-Sushai. Moreover, we have a faith in Roon and Slid.
>
> And it has been said of old that all things that have been were wrought by the small gods, excepting only Mana-Yood-Sushai, who made the gods amd hath thereafter rested.

> And none may pray to Mana-Yood-Sushai but only to the gods whom he hath made.[1]

This rhythmic prose and cosmic subject-matter, both self-consciously derived from the King James Bible—and, as Dunsany admits in his charming autobiography, *Patches of Sunlight* (1938), from recollections of Greek mythology in school[2]—introduced something unique to literature. The last decades of the nineteenth century had seen such things as the jewelled fairy tales of Oscar Wilde and the prose and verse epics of William Morris; but this was very different. Here was an entire theogony whose principal motivation was not the expression of religious fervour (Dunsany was in all likelihood an atheist) but an instantiation of Oscar Wilde's imperishable dictum: "The artist is the creator of beautiful things."[3] While there are a number of provocative philosophical undercurrents in *The Gods of Pegana,* as in Dunsany's work as a whole, its main function is merely the evocation of beauty—beauty of language, beauty of conception, beauty of image. Readers and critics alike responded to this rarefied creation of exotic loveliness, with its seamless mixture of naiveté and sophistication, archaism and modernity, sly humour and brooding horror, chilling remoteness and quiet pathos. Generally favourable reviews began to appear—including one by the poet Edward Thomas—and Dunsany's career was launched.

By the time Lovecraft discovered him, Dunsany had published much of the fiction and drama that would gain him fame, even adulation, on both sides of the Atlantic: *Time and the Gods* (1906); *The Sword of Welleran* (1908); *A Dreamer's Tales* (1910); *The Book of Wonder* (1912); *Five Plays* (1914); *Fifty-one Tales* (1915); *The Last Book of Wonder* (1916); *Plays of Gods and Men* (1917). *Tales of Three Hemispheres* would appear at the very end of 1919, marking the definite end of this phase of his work. By this time, however, Dunsany had achieved idolatrous fame in America, thanks in part to the editions of his work published by John W. Luce & Co. in Boston. In 1916 he became the only playwright to have five plays simultaneously produced in New York, as each of the *Five Plays* appeared in a different "little" theatre. His work was appearing in the most sophisticated and highbrow magazines—*Vanity Fair,* the *Smart Set, Harper's,* and (a little later) the *Golden Book.* By 1919 Dunsany would probably have been considered one of the ten greatest living writers in the English-speaking world. Shaw Desmond's article on him in the November

1923 *Bookman,* "Dunsany, Yeats and Shaw: Trinity of Magic," places him ahead of two now canonical figures.

It is difficult to specify in brief compass the principal characteristics of even this early work of Dunsany's, to say nothing of the novels, tales, and plays he wrote during the remaining four decades of his career; but Dunsany himself provides a few clues as to the basic import of all his work in *Patches of Sunlight,* as he recounts how at an early age he saw a hare in a garden: "If ever I have written of Pan, out in the evening, as though I had really seen him, it is mostly a memory of that hare. If I thought that I was a gifted individual whose inspirations came sheer from outside earth and transcended common things, I should not write this book; but I believe that the wildest flights of the fancies of any of us have their homes with Mother Earth . . .[4] Lovecraft would have been taken aback by this utterance, since it was precisely the apparent *remoteness* of Dunsany's realm—a realm of pure fantasy with no connexion with the human world—that initially captivated him; and, strangely enough, Lovecraft came to express dissatisfaction at what he thought was the "dilution" of this otherworldliness in Dunsany's later work, when in fact his own creative writing of the 1920s and 1930s was on a largely similar path to Dunsany's in its greater topographical realism and evocation of the natural world.

But many readers can be excused for seeing the early Dunsany in this light, since the pure exoticism and lack of any significant reference to the "real" world in his early volumes appeared to signal it as virtually the creation of some non-human imagination. The realm of Pegana (which is featured in *The Gods of Pegana* and *Time and the Gods,* and in those volumes only) is wholly distinct from the "real" world; the first sentence of *The Gods of Pegana* seems to refer to the *temporal* priority of Dunsany's God Mana-Yood-Sushai to the Graeco-Roman or Islamic gods, but beyond this citation there is no allusion to the "real" world at all. Dunsany himself, in his autobiography, remarks that his early tales were written "as though I were an inhabitant of an entirely different planet,"[5] something Lovecraft no doubt found very captivating, given his own cosmicism; but Dunsany could not keep this up for long, and already by *The Sword of Welleran* the real world has entered, as it would continue increasingly to do in his later writing. Indeed, it could be said that the uneasy mingling of the real and the unreal in *The Sword of Welleran* and *A Dreamer's Tales* produces some of the most distinctive work in Dunsany's entire canon.

It should, however, not be thought that Dunsany's early work is uniform either in import or in quality. By the time *A Dreamer's Tales* was published, he seems to have reached a certain exhaustion of imagination. Most of the tales in *The Book of Wonder* were written around pictures drawn by Sidney H. Sime, who had illustrated most of Dunsany's earlier volumes; and these tales show a regrettable tendency toward self-parody and ponderously owlish humour. The result is a sort of snickering sarcasm and cheap satire sadly out of keeping with the high seriousness of his early work. Lovecraft, in a late letter, put his finger directly on the problem:

> As he gained in age and sophistication, he lost in freshness and simplicity. He was ashamed to be uncritically naive, and began to step aside from his tales and visibly smile at them even as they unfolded. Instead of remaining what the true fantaisiste must be—a child in a child's world of dream—he became anxious to shew that he was really an adult good-naturedly pretending to be a child in a child's world. This hardening-up began to shew, I think, in *The Book of Wonder* . . .[6]

Lovecraft is exactly right on the result but not, I think, on the cause: it was not, certainly, that Dunsany was "uncritically naive" in his early work, for that work clearly displays his sophisticated awareness of the symbolic function of fantasy for the conveying of philosophical conceptions; it is simply that now Dunsany no longer wished to preserve the *illusion* of naiveté as he had done in the *Gods of Pegana* period. *The Last Book of Wonder,* some of which was written during the early stages of the war, is a little more in line with his earlier manner, but *Tales of Three Hemispheres* is easily his weakest collection, containing many ephemeral and insignificant items. It was just as well that, after a few years, Dunsany found a new direction with his early novels.

An examination of Dunsany's early tales and plays reveals many thematic and philosophical similarities with Lovecraft: cosmicism (largely restricted to *The Gods of Pegana*); the exaltation of Nature; hostility to industrialism; the power of dream to transform the mundane world into a realm of gorgeously exotic beauty; the awesome role of Time in human and divine affairs; and, of course, the evocative use of language. It is scarcely to be wondered at that Lovecraft felt for a time that Dunsany had said all he had wished to say in a given literary and philosophical direction.

Lovecraft could hardly have been unaware of Dunsany's reputation. He admits to knowing of him well before he read him in 1919, but he had passed him off as a writer of whimsical, benign fantasy of the J. M. Barrie sort. The first work he read was not Dunsany's own first volume, *The Gods of Pegana,* but *A Dreamer's Tales,* which may well be his best single short story collection in its diversity of contents and its several powerful tales of horror ("Poor Old Bill," "The Unhappy Body," "Bethmoora"). Lovecraft admits: "The book had been recommended to me by one whose judgment I did not highly esteem . . ."[7] This person was Alice M. Hamlet, an amateur journalist residing in Dorchester, Massachusetts, and probably a member of Winifred Virginia Jackson's informal coterie of writers. Some months later Lovecraft acknowledged Hamlet in a poem, "With a Copy of Wilde's Fairy Tales" (July 1920):

> Madam, in whom benignant gods have join'd
> The gifts of fancy, melody, and mind;
> Whose kindly guidance first enrich'd my sight
> With great DUNSANY'S Heliconian light . . .

Lovecraft's present of Wilde's fairy tales was a small recompense for the realms of wonder Hamlet had opened up in introducing him to Dunsany, for Lovecraft would repeatedly say, even late in life, that Dunsany "has certainly influenced me more than any other living writer."[8] The first paragraph of *A Dreamer's Tales* "arrested me as with an electrick shock, & I had not read two pages before I became a Dunsany devotee for life."[9]

Hamlet had given Lovecraft *A Dreamer's Tales* in anticipation of Dunsany's lecture at the Copley Plaza in Boston on October 20, 1919, part of his extensive American tour. Lovecraft read the book about a month or so before the visit, for he later remarks that he first encountered Dunsany in September.[10] In a letter of November 9 to Rheinhart Kleiner describing the lecture he states that "a party consisting of Miss H[amlet], her aunt, young Lee, and L. Theobald set out for the great event."[11] I do not know who young Lee is. There must have been others whom Lovecraft met in Boston prior to the lecture; in particular, at some point he met Kleiner, and with him wrote a series of light-hearted poems that I have grouped together under the title "On Collaboration" (derived from one poem so titled). One of these, written to Verna McGeoch, runs as follows:

> Madam, behold with startled eyes
> A source of wonder and surprise;

Your humble serfs are two of many
Who will this night hear L^{d} DUNSANY!

"Wonder" presumably prefers to Dunsany's *Book of Wonder.* But Kleiner clearly could not have accompanied Lovecraft and the others to the lecture, else Lovecraft would not have had to write to him about it in his letter. In any case, the group secured seats in the very front row, "not ten feet" from Dunsany; it was the closest Lovecraft would ever come to meeting one of his literary idols, since he was too diffident to meet or correspond with Machen, Blackwood, or M. R. James. Lovecraft describes Dunsany aptly: "He is of Galpinian build—6 ft. 2 in. in height, and very slender. His face is fair and pleasing, though marred by a slight moustache. In manner he is boyish and a trifle awkward; and his smile is winning and infectious. His hair is light brown. His voice is mellow and cultivated, and very clearly British. He pronounces *were* as *wair,* etc." After an account of his literary principles Dunsany read his magnificent short play, *The Queen's Enemies* (in *Plays of Gods and Men*), then an exquisite parody of himself, "Why the Milkman Shudders When He Perceives the Dawn" (in *The Last Book of Wonder*). After the lecture "Dunsany was encircled by autograph-seekers. Egged on by her aunt, Miss Hamlet almost mustered up courage enough to ask for an autograph, but weakened at the last moment. . . . For mine own part, I did not need a signature; for I detest fawning upon the great." Dunsany's own account of this lecture scarcely occupies more than a few sentences in his second autobiography, *While the Sirens Slept:* "At Boston in a big hall called the Copley Plaza the chair was taken for me by Mr. Baker, lecturer on the drama at Harvard . . . There Mr. Ellery Sedgewick, editor of the *Atlantic Monthly,* entertained us in what, as I said there was one word that I would not use here again, I may call the American way."[12] Clearly he was entirely unaware that the lanky, lantern-jawed gentleman in the front row would become his greatest disciple and a significant force in the preservation of his own work.

Alice Hamlet, however, could not give up the idea of an autograph by Dunsany, so she wrote him a personal letter, enclosing as a present an original letter by Abraham Lincoln. Dunsany acknowledged this gift with customary graciousness ("It is a stately letter, and above all, it is full of human kindness; and I doubt if any of us by any means can achieve anything better than that").[13] Perhaps it was this that led Dunsany to agree to act as Laureate Judge of Poetry of the UAPA for the 1919–20 term. In

this function Dunsany probably read some of Lovecraft's poetry published during that period, but in his letter to UAPA President Mary Faye Durr announcing his decision he makes no reference to any work by Lovecraft; instead, he grants top honours to a poem by Arthur Goodenough, second place to one by John Milton Samples, and third place to one by S. Lilian McMullen, also mentioning work by Rheinhart Kleiner and Winifred Jackson.[14]

Another gift to Dunsany by Hamlet was the *Tryout* for November 1919, which contained one of two poems written on Dunsany by Lovecraft. "To Edward John Moreton Drax Plunkett, 18th Baron Dunsany" (*Tryout,* November 1919) must have been written very shortly after Lovecraft's attendance of the lecture; it is a dreadful, wooden poem that starkly reveals the drawbacks of using the Georgian style for subjects manifestly unsuited to it:

> As when the sun above a dusky wold
> Springs into sight, and turns the gloom to gold,
> Lights with his magic beams the dew-deck'd bow'rs,
> And wakes to life the gay responsive flow'rs;
> So now o'er realms where dark'ning dulness lies,
> In solar state see shining *Plunkett* rise!

And so on for another sixty lines. Dunsany, however, remarked charitably in a letter published in the *Tryout* that the tribute was "magnificent" and that "I am most grateful to the author of that poem for his warm and generous enthusiasm, crystallised in verse."[15]

And yet, a few months later Lovecraft wrote a much better tribute in three simple stanzas of quatrains, "On Reading Lord Dunsany's *Book of Wonder*" (*Silver Clarion,* March 1920). Here is the last stanza:

> The lonely room no more is there—
> For to the sight in pomp appear
> Temples and cities pois'd in air,
> And blazing glories—sphere on sphere.

Dunsany apparently never read this poem.

Lovecraft very quickly acquired and read most or all of Dunsany's published books: *The Gods of Pegana* (given to him by his mother[16]); two Modern Library editions, one containing *A Dreamer's Tales* and *The Sword of Welleran* (1917), the other containing *The Book of Wonder* and *Time and the Gods* (1918); *Five Plays; Fifty-one Tales; The Last Book of Wonder;*

Plays of Gods and Men; Tales of Three Hemispheres; and *Unhappy Far-Off Things* (1919), Dunsany's pensive reflections on the end of the war. Lovecraft's edition of *Five Plays* dates to 1923, but he had probably read the contents earlier. He never seems to have acquired the non-fantastic *Tales of War* (1918), although he probably read it. For the rest of his life Lovecraft continued to acquire (or, at least, read) almost all of Dunsany's new books as they came out, in spite of his dwindling enthusiasm for Dunsany's later work.

It is easy to see why a figure like Dunsany would have had an immediate appeal for Lovecraft: his yearning for the unmechanised past, his purely aesthetic creation of a gorgeously evocative ersatz mythology, and his "crystalline singing prose" (as Lovecraft would memorably characterise it in "Supernatural Horror in Literature") made Lovecraft think that he had found a spiritual twin in the Irish fantaisiste. As late as 1923 he was still maintaining that "Dunsany *is myself* . . . His cosmic realm is the realm in which I live; his distant, emotionless vistas of the beauty of moonlight on quaint and ancient roofs are the vistas I know and cherish."[17] And one must also conjecture that Dunsany's position as an independently wealthy nobleman who wrote what he chose and paid no heed to popular expectations exercised a powerful fascination for Lovecraft: here was an "amateur" writer who had achieved tremendous popular and critical success; here was a case where the aristocracy of blood and the aristocracy of intellect were conjoined.

It is, of course, the prose style of those early works that is so fatally alluring, and it is this, more than the philosophy or themes in Dunsany's work, that Lovecraft first attempted to mimic. There is much truth in C. L. Moore's comment: "No one can imitate Dunsany, and probably everyone who's ever read him has tried."[18] Lovecraft's first consciously Dunsanian story is "The White Ship," which was probably written in October 1919. In early December he remarked to Kleiner: "As you infer, 'The White Ship' is in part influenced by my new Dunsanian studies."[19] The phrase "in part" is interesting, and in fact quite accurate: although it strives to imitate Dunsany's prose-poetic style, it is also in large part a philosophical allegory that reflects Lovecraft's, not Dunsany's, world view.

"The White Ship" tells of Basil Elton, "keeper of the North Point light," who one day "walk[s] out over the waters . . . on a bridge of moonbeams" to a White Ship that has come from the South, captained by an aged

bearded man. They sail to various fantastic realms: the Land of Zar, "where dwell all the dreams and thoughts of beauty that come to men once and then are forgotten"; the Land of Thalarion, "the City of a Thousand Wonders, wherein reside all those mysteries that man has striven in vain to fathom"; Xura, "the Land of Pleasures Unattained"; and finally Sona-Nyl, in which "there is neither time nor space, neither suffering nor death." Although Elton spends "many aeons" there in evident contentment, he gradually finds himself yearning for the realm of Cathuria, the Land of Hope, beyond the basalt pillars of the West, which he believes to be an even more wondrous realm than Sona-Nyl. The captain warns him against pursuing Cathuria, but Elton is adamant and compels the captain to launch his ship once more. But they discover that beyond the basalt pillars of the West is only a "monstrous cataract, wherein the oceans of the world drop down to abysmal nothingness." As their ship is destroyed, Elton finds himself on the platform of his lighthouse. The White Ship comes to him no more.

The surface plot of "The White Ship" is clearly derived from Dunsany's "Idle Days on the Yann" (in *A Dreamer's Tales*). The resemblance is, however, quite superficial, for Dunsany's delightful tale tells only of a dream-voyage by a man who boards a ship, the *Bird of the River,* and encounters one magical land after another; there is no significant philosophical content in these realms, and their principal function is merely an evocation of fantastic beauty. (Dunsany wrote the story in anticipation of a boat trip down the Nile.) Lovecraft's tale is meant to be interpreted allegorically or symbolically, and as such enunciates several central tenets of his philosophical thought.

The fundamental message of "The White Ship" is the folly of abandoning the Epicurean goal of *ataraxia,* tranquillity (interpreted as the absence of pain). Sona-Nyl is such a state, and by forsaking it Basil Elton brings upon his head a justified doom—not death, but sadness and discontent. The non-existence of Cathuria is anticipated by the land of Thalarion: this realm embodies all those "mysteries that man has striven in vain to fathom," and therein "walk only daemons and mad things that are no longer men"; such mysteries are not meant to be penetrated, and the hope of penetrating them (Cathuria is the Land of Hope) is both vain and foolish. Elton compounds his folly by egotism: as he approaches the basalt pillars of the West, he fancies that "there came the notes of singer and

lutanist; sweeter than the sweetest songs of Sona-Nyl, and sounding mine own praises."

It is worth pointing out that "The White Ship" is not a dream-fantasy. Both Dunsany's early tales and Lovecraft's Dunsanian imitations are carelessly referred to as dream-stories, but only a few by either author can be so designated. "Idle Days on the Yann" is one of them: the narrator tells his ship-captain that he comes "from Ireland, which is of Europe," feeling that this laborious circumlocution is necessary on the chance that the crew have not heard of such a place; but it is of no use: "the captain and all the sailors laughed, for they said, 'There is no such place in all the land of dreams.'"[20] But in most of Dunsany's stories, there is no clear distinction between dream and reality: the fantasy realm of Pegana *is* the "real" world, for there is no other. We will also find that this is the case in most of Lovecraft's tales; if anything, Lovecraft follows up dim suggestions in Dunsany that these fantastic realms have a *temporal* priority to the "real" world—i.e., that they existed in the distant past of the known world. "Polaris" already makes this clear. In "The White Ship" we do not know where the North Point lighthouse is, but the implication is that it exists in the real world; and yet, the realms visited by the White Ship are so patently symbolic that no suggestion of their actual existence is made, or is even required by the logic of the tale.

"The White Ship" was first published in the *United Amateur* for November 1919. Alfred Galpin, chairman of the Department of Public Criticism, gave a warm reception to the story, commending Lovecraft's turn to fiction-writing in general ("his natural trend is leading him toward more and more appropriate paths") and the story in particular ("The lover of dream literature will find all he might long for in the carefully sustained poetry of language, the simple narration, and the profound inner harmonies of 'The White Ship'"). Galpin concludes: "If this fickle devotion to other gods will subserve ultimately to the finding of Mr. Lovecaft's own original voice, it will sustain a purpose which will mean something to wider fields than amateur journalism."[21]

I wish to study "The Street" (*Wolverine,* December 1920) here for two reasons, even though it is probably the single worst tale Lovecraft ever wrote. Firstly, it was written late in 1919, sometime after "The White Ship";[22] and secondly, it is just possible that the tale was inspired at least indirectly by some of Dunsany's own war parables, particularly those in

Tales of War. The story is only marginally weird, and it in fact proves to be is a transparent and crude story of racism. It opens laboriously and ponderously: "There be those who say that things and places have souls, and there be those who say they have not; I dare not say, myself, but I will tell of The Street."

It is clear that this Street is in New England; for the "men of strength and honour" who built it were "good, valiant men of our blood who had come from the Blessed Isles across the sea." These were "grave men in conical hats" who had "bonneted wives and sober children" and enough "courage and goodness" to "subdue the forest and till the fields." Two wars came; after the first, there were no more Indians, and after the second "they furled the Old Flag and put up a new Banner of Stripes and Stars." After this, however, things become ominous; for there are "strange puffings and shrieks" from the river, and "the air was not quite so pure as before"; but, reassuringly, "the spirit of the place had not changed." But now come "days of evil," a time when "many who had known The Street of old knew it no more; and many knew it, who had not known it before." The houses fall into decay, the trees are all gone, and "cheap, ugly new buildings" go up. Another war comes, but by this time "only fear and hatred and ignorance" brood over the Street because of all the "swarthy and sinister" people who now dwell in it. There are now such unheard-of places as Petrovitch's Bakery, the Rifkin School of Modern Economics, and the Liberty Café.

There develops a rumour that the houses "contained the leaders of a vast band of terrorists," who on a designated day are to initiate an "orgy of slaughter for the extermination of America and of all the fine old traditions which The Street had loved"; this revolution is to occur, picturesquely, on the fourth of July. But a miracle occurs: "For without warning, in one of the small hours beyond midnight, all the ravages of the years and the storms and the worms came to a tremendous climax; and after the crash there was nothing left standing in The Street save two ancient chimneys and part of a stout brick wall. Nor did anything that had been alive come alive from the ruins." I guess this proves that streets have souls after all.

Lovecraft supplies the genesis of the story in a letter:

> The Boston police mutiny of last year is what prompted that attempt—the magnitude and significance of such an act appalled me. Last fall it was grimly impressive to see Boston without bluecoats, and to watch the musket-bearing State Guardsmen

> patrolling the streets as though military occupation were in force. They went in pairs, determined-looking and khaki-clad, as if symbols of the strife that lies ahead in civilisation's struggle with the monster of unrest and bolshevism.[23]

The Boston police had gone on strike on September 8, 1919, and remained on strike well into October. No doubt it was a very disturbing event, but at this time unionisation and strikes were almost the only option available to the working class for better wages and better working conditions.

I have gone into this wild, paranoid, racist fantasy in such excruciating detail to show how spectacularly awful Lovecraft can be when riding one of his hobby-horses, in particular his stereotyped lament on the decline of New England at the hands of foreigners. "The Street" is nothing more than a prose version of such early poems as "New-England Fallen" and "On a New-England Village Seen by Moonlight": there is the same naive glorification of the past, the same attribution of all evils to "strangers" (who seem to have ousted those hardy Anglo-Saxons with surprising ease), and, remarkably, even a gliding over of the devastating economic and social effects of the industrial revolution. Although in late 1920 he expressed a wish to see the tale published professionally,[24] he apparently did not make any such attempt, and eventually he included it among his disavowed tales; but the fact that he allowed it to be published twice in the amateur press (first in the *Wolverine* and then, just over a year later, in the *National Amateur* for January 1922), under his own name, suggests that, at least at the time of its writing (however much before its first publication that may have been), Lovecraft was fully prepared to acknowledge this tale and its sentiments as his own.

Things are very different with "The Doom That Came to Sarnath," the next of Lovecraft's Dunsanian imitations, written on December 3, 1919. This tale is less philosophically interesting than "The White Ship," but it too is rather more than a mere pastiche. The narrator tells the story of the land of Mnar, where "ten thousand years ago" stood the stone city of Ib near a vast still lake. Ib was inhabited by "beings not pleasing to behold": they were "in hue as green as the lake and the mists that rise above it . . . they had bulging eyes, pouting, flabby lips, and curious ears, and were without voice." Many aeons later new folk came to Mnar and founded the city of Sarnath; these were the first human beings of the region, "dark shepherd folk with their fleecy flocks." They loathed the creatures of Ib and

destroyed both the town and the inhabitants, preserving only the "sea-green stone idol chiselled in the likeness of Bokrug, the water-lizard." After this Sarnath flourished greatly, becoming the "wonder of the world and the pride of all mankind." Every year was a festival commemorating the destruction of Ib, and the thousandth year of this festival was to be of exceptional lavishness. But during the feasting and celebrating Sarnath is overrun by "a horde of indescribable green voiceless things with bulging eyes, pouting, flabby lips, and curious ears." Sarnath is destroyed.

In this rather elementary tale of vengeance the borrowings from Dunsany are all in externals. Lovecraft thought he had come by the name Sarnath independently, but maintained that he later found it in a story by Dunsany; this is not, however, the case. He may have been thinking of Sardathrion, the city mentioned repeatedly in the title story of Dunsany's *Time and the Gods.* Sarnath is also a real city in India, but Lovecraft was probably not aware of the fact. The green idol Bokrug is reminiscent of the green jade gods of Dunsany's magnificent play *The Gods of the Mountain* (in *Five Plays*). Mention of a throne "wrought of one piece of ivory, though no man lives who knows whence so vast a piece could have come" is an echo of a celebrated passage in "Idle Days on the Yann" (noted by Lovecraft in "Supernatural Horror in Literature") of an ivory gate "carved out of one solid piece!"[25] The style of "The Doom That Came to Sarnath" is also only superficially Dunsanian, and in fact reveals the degree to which Lovecraft (like many others) failed to understand the true sources of Dunsany's effectiveness as a prose-poet. The descriptions of Sarnath allow Lovecraft to unleash a lush, bejewelled style that is actually not Dunsanian in essence: "Many were the pillars of the palaces, all of tinted marble, and carven into designs of surpassing beauty. And in most of the palaces the floors were mosaics of beryl and lapis-lazuli and sardonyx and carbuncle and other choice materials, so disposed that the beholder might fancy himself walking over beds of the rarest flowers." It never seems to have occurred to Lovecraft that Dunsany achieved his most striking effects not through dense passages like this—which are more reminiscent of Wilde's fairy tales—but through a staggeringly bold use of metaphor. Consider that quixotic quest by King Karnith Zo and his army to lay siege to Time:

> But as the feet of the foremost touched the edge of the hill Time hurled five years against them, and the years passed over their heads and the army still came on, an army of older men.

> But the slope seemed steeper to the King and to every man in his army, and they breathed more heavily. And Time summoned up more years, and one by one he hurled them at Karnith Zo and at all his men. And the knees of the army stiffened, and the beards grew and turned grey . . .[26]

This is the sort of thing Lovecraft almost never managed in his Dunsanian imitations.

But "The Doom That Came to Sarnath" has other virtues. Simple as the moral here is, it can readily be seen that Lovecraft is portraying the doom of Sarnath as well deserved on account of its citizens' race prejudice against the inhabitants of Ib ("with their marvelling was mixed hate, for they thought it not meet that beings of such aspect should walk about the world of men at dusk") and their greed (Sarnath was founded "at a spot where precious metals were found in the earth"). Sarnath furthermore becomes increasingly artificial in its design, aping the natural world but in fact repudiating it. Each house in Sarnath has a "crystal lakelet," parodying the actual "vast still lake" where Sarnath had consigned the ruins of Ib. The gardens of Sarnath defy the seasons: "In summer the gardens were cooled with fresh odorous breezes skilfully wafted by fans, and in winter they were heated with concealed fires, so that in those gardens it was always spring." All this is presented in superficial terms of praise (or, at least, wonder), but in truth it is Sarnath's excessive wealth, its irrational hatred of Ib, and its corrupt religion, founded upon hate (for the priests of Sarnath "often performed the very ancient and very secret rite in detestation of Bokrug"), that bring about its doom.

Lovecraft also makes it abundantly clear that the setting of the tale is the primitive real world, not an imaginary realm or dream-world. Ib was founded "when the world was young," but we know little of its inhabitants because man "knows but little of the very ancient living things." At the very end we learn that "adventurous young men of yellow hair and blue eyes, who are no kin to the men of Mnar" enter the region, suggesting a racial succession of some kind. Most of Lovecraft's Dunsanian tales will follow this pattern.

"The Doom That Came to Sarnath" first appeared in the Scottish amateur journal the *Scot* (edited by Gavin T. McColl) for June 1920. McColl, living in Dundee, was the only Scottish member of the UAPA at this time. Several years earlier Lovecraft had written to McColl praising his

journal (a portion of his letter had been published in the *Scot* for March 1916), and no doubt he wished to do all he could to foster transatlantic amateur activity.

"The Terrible Old Man" (written on January 28, 1920) is not generally considered a Dunsanian story, and indeed it is not in the sense of being a tale set in an imaginary or ancient realm. We are here very clearly situated in contemporary New England, but the tale nevertheless is likely derived from some of Dunsany's work. It opens ponderously:

> It was the design of Angelo Ricci and Joe Czanek and Manuel Silva to call on the Terrible Old Man. This old man dwells all alone in a very ancient house on Water Street near the sea, and is reputed to be both exceedingly rich and exceedingly feeble; which forms a situation very attractive to men of the profession of Messrs. Ricci, Czanek, and Silva, for that profession was nothing less dignified than robbery.

The Terrible Old Man dwells in Kingsport, a city somewhere in New England. In the "far-off days of his unremembered youth" he was a sea-captain, and seems to have a vast collection of ancient Spanish gold and silver pieces. He has now become very eccentric, appearing to spend hours speaking to an array of bottles from which a small piece of lead is suspended from a string. On the night of the planned robbery Ricci and Silva enter the Terrible Old Man's house while Czanek waits outside. Screams are heard from the house, but there is no sign of the two robbers; and Czanek wonders whether his colleagues were forced to kill the old man and make a laborious search through his house for the treasure. But then the Terrible Old Man appears at the doorway, "leaning quietly on his knotted cane and smiling hideously." Later three unidentifiable bodies are found washed in by the tide.

The heavy-handed sarcasm with which "The Terrible Old Man" is told recalls many of the tales in *The Book of Wonder,* which similarly deal with owlish gravity of attempted robberies which usually end badly for the perpetrators. Consider the opening of "The Probable Adventure of the Three Literary Men": "When the nomads came to El Lola they had no more songs, and the question of stealing the golden box arose in all its magnitude. On the one hand, many had sought the golden box, the receptacle (as the Aethiopians know) of poems of fabulous value; and their doom is still the common talk of Arabia."[27] Although this tale is still set in an imaginary

realm, Dunsany had already allowed the real world to enter into his work as early as "The Highwayman" and "The Kith of the Elf-Folk" (in *The Sword of Welleran*). In "The Terrible Old Man" it is not clear where exactly the imaginary city of Kingsport is; it was only later, in "The Festival" (1923), that it was situated in Massachusetts and identified with the town of Marblehead. Here it is stated only that the three robbers in question "were not of Kingsport blood; they were of that new and heterogeneous alien stock which lies outside the charmed circle of New-England life and traditions."

This comment itself brings to the fore the issue of racism in this story. The remark is certainly double-edged—it can be considered as much a satire on New England Yankee social exclusiveness as an attack on foreigners—but the racist overtones cannot be ignored. Ricci, Czanek, and Silva each represent one of the three leading ethnic minorities in Providence—Italian, Polish, and Portuguese. It can scarcely be doubted that Lovecraft derived some measure of satisfaction from the dispatching of these three criminals.

Is the tale actually supernatural? There is certainly reason to think so. The Terrible Old Man may appear feeble, but he is clearly endowed with vast strength to be able to subdue two presumably young and vigorous thieves. Whence did he derive it? This is never made clear, but the suggestion is that the Terrible Old Man is not merely superhuman in strength but also preternaturally aged: the fact that he possesses only very old Spanish money implies that he may actually be hundreds of years old—especially since "no one can remember when he was young." And then there are those bottles with the pendulums: the Terrible Old Man has given them names such as Jack, Scar-Face, and Long Tom; and when he talks to them, "the little lead pendulum within makes certain definite vibrations as if in answer." What else can these things be but the souls of his old shipmates, whom he (or some other force) has trapped in the bottles?

"The Terrible Old Man" is the shortest of Lovecraft's horror tales (exclusive of his prose-poems), and—in spite of one critic's attempt to read it in mythic and psychoanalytical terms[28]—really does not amount to much. It first appeared in C. W. Smith's *Tryout* for July 1921.

The next of Lovecraft's "Dunsanian" tales is "The Tree," written sometime in the first half of 1920: in chronologies of Lovecraft's stories it is customarily listed after "The Terrible Old Man" (January 28) and before

"The Cats of Ulthar" (June 14). The story concerns a contest proposed by the "Tyrant of Syracuse" between the two great sculptors, Kalos and Musides, to carve a statue of Tyché for the Tyrant's city. The two artists are the closest of friends, but their lives are very different: whereas Musides "revelled by night amidst the urban gaieties of Tegea," Kalos remains home in quiet contemplation. The two begin working on their respective statues; but Kalos gradually takes ill, and in spite of Musides' constant nursing eventually dies. Musides wins the contest by default, but both he and his lovely statue are weirdly destroyed when a strange olive tree growing out of Kalos' tomb suddenly falls upon Musides' residence.

The clear implication of the tale is that Musides, for all his supposed devotion to his friend, has poisoned Kalos and suffers supernatural revenge. Lovecraft says as much when discussing the story with the Transatlantic Circulator the following year:

> Regarding "The Tree"—Mr. Brown finds the climax insufficient, but I doubt if a tale of that type could possess a more obvious denouement. The climactic effect sought, is merely an emphasis—amounting to the first direct intimation—of the fact that there is something hidden behind the simple events of the tale; that the growing suspicion of Musides' crime and recognition of Kalos' posthumous vengeance is well founded. It is to proclaim what has hitherto been doubtful—to shew that the things of Nature see behind human hypocrisy and perceive the baseness at the heart of outward virtue. All the world deems Musides a model of fraternal piety and devotion although in truth he poisoned Kalos when he saw his laurels in peril. Did not the Tegeans build to Musides a temple? But against all these illusions the trees whisper—the wise trees sacred to the gods—and reveal the truth to the midnight searcher as they chaunt knowingly over and over again *"Oida! Oida!"* This, then, is all the climax so nebulous a legend can possess. ("The Defence Remains Open!")

Lovecraft is, aware that this sort of supernatural justice is not even metaphorically true to life:

> About the plot of "The Tree"—it was the result of some rather cynical reflection on the possible real motives which may underlie even the most splendid appearing acts of mankind.

> With this nucleus I developed a tale based on the Greek idea of divine justice and retribution, (a very pretty though sadly mythical idea!) with the added Oriental notion of the soul of a man passing into something else.[29]

The story's relative lack of vital connexion to Dunsany's work can be gauged by the fact that the basic plot was evolved more than a year before Lovecraft ever read Dunsany. In an August 1918 letter to Alfred Galpin, Lovecraft outlined the plot of "The Tree," saying that it had already by that time been "long conceived but never elaborated into literary form";[30] he postponed writing the story because he evidently felt that Galpin's own tale "Marsh-Mad" had pre-empted him by utilising the "living tree" idea. The plot as recorded here is identical in all essential features to the story as we have it, save that at the end "the tree was found uprooted—as if the roots had voluntarily relinquished their hold upon the ground—and beneath the massive trunk lay the body of the faithful mourner—crushed to death, & with an expression of the most unutterable fear upon his countenance."

What was not included in this plot synopsis was the setting of the tale in ancient Greece; but even this feature is not likely to have been derived from Dunsany, save perhaps indirectly in the sense that many of Dunsany's early works have a vaguely Grecian or archaic air to them. Dunsany actually used the ancient world as a setting not in any tales but in two plays: *Alexander* (a play about Alexander the Great written in 1912, but not published until *Alexander and Three Small Plays* [1925], hence not read by Lovecraft until after he had written "The Tree") and *The Queen's Enemies* (published separately in 1916 and included the next year in *Plays of Gods and Men*), a delightful and celebrated play about Queen Nitokris of Egypt and the hideous (but not supernatural) vengeance she carries out upon her enemies. This was, let us recall, one of the works Dunsany read during his Boston appearance.

Wherever he derived the Grecian setting and atmosphere, Lovecraft pulls it off ably; his lifelong study of ancient history paid dividends in this satisfying and elegantly written little story. The names of the artists—Kalos ("handsome" or "fair") and Musides ("son of the Muse(s)")—are both apt, although they are not actual Greek names. Tyché means "chance" (or sometimes "fate"), and actual cults of Tyché were established in Greece sometime after 371 B.C.E. This helps to date the tale fairly precisely: there were tyrants of Syracuse (in Sicily) from c. 485 to c. 467 and again from c.

406 to 344, but the cult of Tyché clearly establishes the latter period as the temporal setting for the story. One other detail helps to establish an even more precise date: mention of a tomb for Kalos "more lovely than the tomb of Mausolus" refers to the tomb built for Mausolus, the satrap of Caria, in 353, so that "The Tree" must take place in the period 353–344, when Dionysius II was Tyrant of Syracuse.[31]

"The Tree" was first published, pitiably misprinted, in the *Tryout* for October 1921. Lovecraft later came to despise the story, maintaining that it, along with several other tales, "might—if typed on good stock—make excellent shelf-paper but little else."[32] The tale may be a trifle obvious, but it is an effective display of Lovecraft's skill in handling an historical setting.

"The Cats of Ulthar" (June 15, 1920), conversely, always remained one of Lovecraft's favourites, probably because cats are the central focus of the tale. This tale owes more to Dunsany than many of his other "Dunsanian" fantasies. The narrator proposes to explain how the town of Ulthar passed its "remarkable law" that no man may kill a cat. There was once a very evil couple who hated cats and who brutally murdered any that strayed on their property. One day a caravan of "dark wanderers" comes to Ulthar, among which is the little boy Menes, owner of a tiny black kitten. When the kitten disappears, the heartbroken boy, learning of the propensities of the cat-hating couple, "prayed in a tongue no villager could understand." That night all the cats in the town vanish, and when they return in the morning they refuse for two entire days to touch any food or drink. Later it is noticed that the couple has not been seen for days; when at last the villagers enter their house, they find two clean-picked skeletons.

Here too some of the borrowings from Dunsany may be only superficial: the name of the boy Menes may be derived from King Argimenes of the play, *King Argimenes and the Unknown Warrior* (in *Five Plays*); the "dark wanderers" seem an echo of the "Wanderers . . . a weird, dark tribe" mentioned toward the end of "Idle Days on the Yann."[33] But the entire scenario—once again a consciously elementary tale of vengeance—is likely inspired by the many similar tales in *The Book of Wonder*.

One wonders whether Lovecraft was thinking of himself when he wrote, with unexpected poignancy, of the orphan Menes, "when one is very young, one can find great relief in the lively antics of a black kitten." Is this a remembrance of Nigger-Man and all that that lone pet meant to Lovecraft? He had outlined the plot of the story to Kleiner as early as May

21,[34] but it would be another three weeks before he actually set it down. It first appeared in the *Tryout* for November 1920.

It would be some months before Lovecraft produced another Dunsanian tale, but it would be both one of his best and most significant in terms of his later work. "Celephaïs" (the dieresis over the *i* is frequently omitted) was written in early November 1920,[35] although it did not appear in print until Sonia Greene published it in her *Rainbow* for May 1922. Kuranes (who has a different name in waking life) escapes the prosy world of London by dream and drugs. In this state he comes upon the city of Celephaïs, in the Valley of Ooth-Nargai. It is a city of which he had dreamed as a child, and there "his spirit had dwelt all the eternity of an hour one summer afternoon very long ago, when he had slipt away from his nurse and let the warm sea-breeze lull him to sleep as he watched the clouds from the cliff near the village." It is a realm of pure beauty:

> When he entered the city, past the bronze gates and over the onyx pavements, the merchants and camel-drivers greeted him as if he had never been away; and it was the same at the turquoise temple of Nath-Horthath, where the orchid-wreathed priests told him that there is no time in Ooth-Nargai, but only perpetual youth. Then Kuranes walked through the Street of Pillars to the seaward wall, where gathered the traders and sailors, and strange men from the regions where the sea meets the sky.

But Kuranes awakes in his London garret and finds that he can return to Celephaïs no more. He dreams of other wondrous lands, but his sought-for city continues to elude him. He increases his intake of drugs, runs out of money, and is turned out of his flat. Then, as he wanders aimlessly through the streets, he comes upon a cortege of knights who "rode majestically through the downs of Surrey," seeming to gallop back in time as they do so. They leap off a precipice and drift softly down to Celephaïs, and Kuranes knows that he will be its king forever. Meanwhile, in the waking world, the tide at Innsmouth washes up the corpse of a tramp, while a "notably fat and offensive millionaire brewer" purchases Kuranes' ancestral mansion and "enjoys the purchased atmosphere of extinct nobility."

Lovecraft indicates that the story was ultimately based upon an entry in his commonplace book (for which see below) reading simply: "Dream of flying over city." Note that this is a pure *image,* and that none of the

philosophical or aesthetic conceptions actually imbedded in the story are at all suggested by it. We will come upon this phenomenon repeatedly: tales are triggered by some innocuous, fragmentary image that comes to occupy a very small place—or indeed no place—in the finished tale. Another entry in the commonplace book was perhaps also an inspiration: "Man journeys into the past—or imaginative realm—leaving bodily shell behind."

But if we are to find the inspiration for "Celephaïs," we shall not have to look far; for the tale is embarrassingly similar in conception to Dunsany's "The Coronation of Mr. Thomas Shap" (in *The Book of Wonder*). There a small businessman imagines himself the King of Larkar, and as he continues to dwell obsessively on (and in) this imaginary realm his work in the real world suffers, until finally he is placed in the madhouse of Hanwell. Other, less significant details also derive from Dunsany: the oft-repeated phrase "where the sea meets the sky" echoes "where sky meets ocean" from "When the Gods Slept"[36] (in *Time and the Gods*) and analogous phrases in other tales. Even the small detail whereby Kuranes floats down "past dark, shapeless, undreamed dreams, faintly glowing spheres that may have been partly dreamed dreams" is clearly derived from the opening pages of *The Gods of Pegana,* where all the gods and the separate worlds are seen to be merely the dreams of Mana-Yood-Sushai. And yet, it is also possible that this image of horses drifting dreamily over a cliff is an echo of a fantastic-seeming but very realistic story by Ambrose Bierce, "A Horseman in the Sky" (in *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians*), where a man seems to see such a sight after he has shot the rider—who proves to be his own father.

Nevertheless, "Celephaïs" enunciates issues of great importance to Lovecraft. It is difficult to resist an autobiographical interpretation of Kuranes at he appears at the outset:

> . . . he was the last of his family, and alone among the indifferent millions of London . . . His money and lands were gone, and he did not care for the ways of people about him, but preferred to dream and write of his dreams. What he wrote was laughed at by those to whom he shewed it, so that after a time he kept his writings to himself . . . Kuranes was not modern, and did not think like others who wrote. Whilst they strove to strip from life its embroidered robes of myth, and to shew in naked ugliness the foul thing that is reality, Kuranes sought for beauty alone.

This is a trifle maudlin and self-pitying, but we are clearly meant to empathise with Kuranes' psychological dissociation from his environment. That final sentence, perfectly encapsulating Lovecraft's aesthetic at this stage of his career, is worth studying in detail later. But "Celephaïs" seeks to do more than merely create beauty; the thrust of the story is nothing less than an escape from the "groans and grating / Of abhorrent life" (as he put it in "Despair") into a realm of pure imagination—one which, nevertheless, is derived from "the nebulous memories of childhood tales and dreams." The man who in January 1920 wrote "Adulthood is hell"[37] had found in Lord Dunsany a model for the glorious re-creation of those memories of youth for which he would yearn his entire life.

"Celephaïs" is a gorgeously evocative prose-poem that ranks close to the pinnacle of Lovecraft's Dunsanian tales. But it will gain added importance for the contrast it provides to a much later work superficially (and only superficially) in the Dunsanian vein, *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath.* This novel, written after Lovecraft's New York experience, exhibits a marked, almost antipodal, alteration in Lovecraft's aesthetic of beauty, and when Kuranes reappears in it he and his imagined realm will take on a very different cast.

"The Quest of Iranon" (February 28, 1921) may be the most beautiful of all Lovecraft's Dunsanian fantasies, although in later years he savagely condemned it as mawkish. A comment made shortly after the tale was written may be more on target: "I am picking up a new style lately—running to pathos as well as horror. The best thing I have yet done is 'The Quest of Iranon', whose English Loveman calls the most musical and flowing I have yet written, and whose sad plot made one prominent poet actually weep—not at the crudity of the story, but at the sadness."[38] The note about the "new style" presumably refers to "Celephaïs," the only other tale of this period that could be said to mix horror and pathos. "The Quest of Iranon" is really all pathos. A youthful singer named Iranon comes to the granite city of Teloth, saying that he is seeking his far-off home of Aira, where he was a prince. The men of Teloth, who have no beauty in their lives, do not look kindly on Iranon, and force him to work with a cobbler. He meets a boy named Romnod, who similarly yearns for "the warm groves and the distant lands of beauty and song." Romnod thinks that nearby Oonai, the city of lutes and dancing, might be Iranon's Aira. Iranon doubts it, but goes there with Romnod. It is indeed not Aira, but the two of them

find welcome there for a time. Iranon wins praises for his singing and lyre-playing, and Romnod learns the coarser pleasures of wine. Years pass; Iranon seems to grow no older, as he continues to hope one day to find Aira. Romnod eventually dies of drink, and Iranon leaves the town and continues his quest. He comes to "the squalid cot of an antique shepherd" and asks him about Aira. The shepherd looks at Iranon curiously and says:

> "O stranger, I have indeed heard the name of Aira, and the other names thou hast spoken, but they come to me from afar down the waste of long years. I heard them in my youth from the lips of a playmate, a beggar's boy given to strange dreams, who would weave long tales about the moon and the flowers and the west wind. We used to laugh at him, for we knew him from his birth though he thought himself a King's son."

At twilight an old, old man is seen walking calmly into the quicksand. "That night something of youth and beauty died in the elder world."

There is perhaps a certain sentimentality in this story—as well as the suggestion of social snobbery, since Iranon cannot bear the revelation that he is not a prince but only a beggar's boy—but the fundamental message of the shattering of hope is etched with great poignancy and delicacy. In a sense, "The Quest of Iranon" is a mirror-image of "Celephaïs": whereas Kuranes dies in the real world only to escape into the world of his childhood imaginings, Iranon dies because he is unable to preserve the illusion of the reality of those imaginings.

In the city of Teloth Lovecraft has devised a pungent satire of Christianity, specifically of the Protestant work ethic. When Iranon asks why he must work as a cobbler, the archon tells him: "All in Teloth must toil, . . . for that is the law." Iranon responds: "Wherefore do ye toil; is it not that ye may live and be happy? And if ye toil only that ye may toil more, when shall happiness find you?" To this the archon states: "'The words thou speakest are blasphemy, for the gods of Teloth have said that toil is good. Our gods have promised us a haven of light beyond death, where there shall be rest without end, and crystal coldness amidst which none shall vex his mind with thought or his eyes with beauty. . . . All here must serve, and song is folly.'"

Aside from its musical language, "The Quest of Iranon" bears no influence of any specific work by Dunsany, and may be the most original of Lovecraft's Dunsanian imitations. It was a long time appearing in print.

Lovecraft wished to use it in his own *Conservative* (whose last issue had appeared in July 1919), but the next issue did not appear until March 1923, and Lovecraft had by then evidently decided against using it there. It languished in manuscript until finally published in the *Galleon* for July–August 1935.

Lovecraft's final explicitly Dunsanian story is "The Other Gods" (August 14, 1921). The "gods of earth" have forsaken their beloved mountain Ngranek and have betaken themselves to "unknown Kadath in the cold waste where no man treads"; they have done this ever since a human being from Ulthar, Barzai the Wise, attempted to scale Mt. Ngranek and catch a glimpse of them. Barzai was much learned in the "seven cryptical books of Hsan" and the "Pnakotic Manuscripts of distant and frozen Lomar," and knew so much of the gods that he wished to see them dancing on Mt. Ngranek. He undertakes this bold journey with his friend, Atal the priest. For days they climb the rugged mountain, and as they approach the cloud-hung summit Barzai thinks he hears the gods; he redoubles his efforts, leaving Atal far behind. He cries out:

> "The mists are very thin, and the moon casts shadows on the slope; the voices of earth's gods are high and wild, and they fear the coming of Barzai the Wise, who is greater than they. . . . The moon's light flickers, as earth's gods dance against it; I shall see the dancing forms of the gods that leap and howl in the moonlight. . . . The light is dimmer and the gods are afraid. . . ."

But his eagerness turns to horror. He thinks he actually sees the gods of earth, but instead they are "'The *other* gods! The *other* gods! The gods of the outer hells that guard the feeble gods of earth!'" Barzai is swept up ("'Merciful gods of earth, *I am falling into the sky!* '") and is never seen again.

"The Other Gods" is a textbook example of hubris, and not an especially interesting one. Dunsany had already treated the matter several times in his own work; in "The Revolt of the Home Gods" (in *The Gods of Pegana*) the humble home gods Eimes, Zanes, and Segastrion declare: "We now play the game of the gods and slay men for our pleasure, and we be greater than the gods of Pegana."[39] But, even though they be gods, they suffer a dismal fate at the hands of the gods of Pegana.

"The Other Gods" is a little more interesting in that it establishes explicit links with other of Lovecraft's Dunsanian tales. The mention of the

Pnakotic Manuscripts ties the story to the pre-Dunsanian "Polaris"; the mention of Ulthar connects with "The Cats of Ulthar," as does the character Atal, who had already appeared in that story as an innkeeper's son. This sort of thing had in fact been happening all along in these tales: "The Quest of Iranon" made passing mention of Lomar ("Polaris") and to Thraa, Ilarnek, and Kadatheron (cited in "The Doom That Came to Sarnath"). The only tales exempt from this type of interconnexion are "The White Ship" (clearly an allegory), "The Tree" (set in ancient Greece), and "Celephaïs," where the distinction between the real world of Surrey and the realm of Celephaïs (a product of Kuranes' imagination) is at the heart of the story.

What this seems to suggest is that the Dunsanian tales (now including "Polaris") occupy a single imagined realm; but it should be pointed out that this realm is systematically and consistently presented as being situated not in a "dream-world" (there are no dream-stories among these works except, in a special way, "Polaris" and "Celephaïs") but in the distant past of the earth. I have already pointed out that the reference in "Polaris" to "Six and twenty thousand years" dates that story to 24,000 B.C. Other Dunsanian tales follow this pattern: Ib (in "The Doom That Came to Sarnath") stood "when the world was young"; "The Other Gods," by mentioning Lomar and Ulthar, incorporates the latter (and by extension the entire story "The Cats of Ulthar") into the earth's prehistory; and "The Quest of Iranon," by mentioning Lomar in conjunction with the cities named in "The Doom That Came to Sarnath," does the same (recall also the final sentence of "The Quest of Iranon": "That night something of youth and beauty died in the *elder world"*).

Some of this interconnectedness may have been inspired by Dunsany's example, although even in these early tales Lovecraft carries it to far greater lengths than Dunsany ever did. *The Gods of Pegana* and *Time and the Gods* are generally set in the realm of Pegana, but no other of Dunsany's works are. "Idle Days on the Yann" has two sequels, "The Shop in Go-by Street" and "The Avenger of Perdóndaris"; "The Hashish Man" is a lame sequel to "Bethmoora"; but this is all the cross-referencing that exists in Dunsany's work.

Lovecraft's non-Dunsanian stories, from as early as "The Nameless City" (1921), similarly refer to sites and artifacts from the Dunsanian stories, and in such a way as to suggest their existence in the distant past. This whole schema, however, becomes confused and even paradoxical

when Lovecraft writes *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath,* whose very title proclaims it to be a dream-fantasy.

For now it is of interest to realise the degree to which Lovecraft's stories are already becoming intertextually related, a phenomenon that would continue with his later stories. It is, to be sure, unusual for an author to be so self-referential, and there is certainly no doubt about the thematic or philosophical unity of all Lovecraft's work, from fiction to essays to poetry to letters; but it does not strike me as helpful to regard all his tales as interconnected on the level of plot—which they manifestly are not—or even in their glancing and frequently insignificant borrowings of names, entities, and characters. Nevertheless, it is a singular phenomenon that will require further analysis.

What, then, did Lovecraft learn from Dunsany? The answer may not be immediately evident, since it took several years for the Dunsany influence to be assimilated, and some of the most interesting and important aspects of the influence are manifested in tales that bear no superficial resemblance to Dunsany. For now, however, one lesson can be summed up in Lovecraft's somewhat simple-minded characterisation in "Supernatural Horror in Literature": "Beauty rather than terror is the keynote of Dunsany's work." Whereas, with the exceptions of "Polaris" and such non-weird ventures as "A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson," Lovecraft's experiments in fiction up to 1919 had been entirely within the realm of supernatural horror, he was now able to diversify his fictional palette with tales of languorous beauty, delicacy, and pathos. To be sure, horror is present as well; but the fantastic settings of the tales, even given the assumption that they are occurring in the earth's prehistory, causes the horror to seem more remote, less immediately threatening.

In this sense a remark made as early as March 1920 may stand as Lovecraft's most perceptive account of Dunsany's influence on him: "The flight of imagination, and the delineation of pastoral or natural beauty, can be accomplished as well in prose as in verse—often better. It is this lesson which the inimitable Dunsany hath taught me."[40] This comment was made in a discussion of Lovecraft's verse writing; and it is no accident that his verse output declined dramatically after 1920. There had been a dichotomy between Lovecraft's fictional and poetic output ever since he had resumed the writing of stories: how could tales of supernatural horror have any relation to the empty but superficially "pretty" Georgianism of his verse?

With the decline of verse writing, that dichotomy disappears—or, at least, narrows—as the quest for pure beauty now finds expression in tales. Is it any wonder, then, that as early as January 1920 Lovecraft is noting that, "since all habits must be broken gradually, I am breaking the poesy habit that way"?[41]

More to the point, Lovecraft learned from Dunsany how to enunciate his philosophical, aesthetic, and moral conceptions by means of fiction, beyond the simple cosmicism of "Dagon" or "Beyond the Wall of Sleep." The relation of dream and reality—dimly probed in "Polaris"—is treated exhaustively and poignantly in "Celephaïs"; the loss of hope is etched pensively in "The White Ship" and "The Quest of Iranon"; the perfidy of false friendship is the focus of "The Tree." Lovecraft found *Time and the Gods* "richly philosophical,"[42] and the whole of Dunsany's early—and later—work offers simple, affecting parables on fundamental human issues. Lovecraft would in later years express his philosophy in increasingly complex ways as his fiction itself gained in breadth, scope, and richness.

At the outset it was one particular phase of Dunsany's philosophy—cosmicism—that most attracted Lovecraft. He would maintain hyperbolically in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" that Dunsany's "point of view is the most truly cosmic of any held in the literature of any period," although later he would modify this opinion considerably. What is somewhat strange, therefore, is that Lovecraft's own imitations are—with the sole exception of "The Other Gods"—not at all cosmic in scope, and rarely involve that interplay of "gods and men" which is so striking a characteristic of Dunsany's early work. Perhaps Lovecraft felt that this *Gods of Pegana* style or subject-matter was simply not to be duplicated (in this he was probably right); but what we will discover is that this cosmicism becomes exhibited in Lovecraft's real-world stories, where the metaphysical and aesthetic implications are very different.

For it will become evident that Dunsany's influence extends far beyond Lovecraft's "Dunsanian" fantasies. We will find many instances of influence in small and large particulars in later tales; and Lovecraft's remarkable claim that it was Dunsany's imagined pantheon in *The Gods of Pegana* that led him to create his own pseudomythology will have to be given consideration at the proper time. In a later chapter I shall also wish to consider Dunsany's role in what proved to be a significant shift in Lovecraft's aesthetic stance over the next several years.

In spite of his own assertions to the contrary, Lovecraft's "Dunsanian" fantasies are far more than mechanical pastiches of a revered master: they reveal considerable originality of conception while being only superficially derived from Dunsany. It is true that Lovecraft might never have written these tales had he not had Dunsany's example at hand; but he was, at this early stage, an author searching for things of his own to say, and in Dunsany's style and manner he merely found suggestive ways to say them. Interestingly, Dunsany himself came to this conclusion: when Lovecraft's work was posthumously published in book form, Dunsany came upon it and confessed that he had "an odd interest in Lovecraft's work because in the few tales of his I have read I found that he was writing in my style, entirely originally & without in any way borrowing from me, & yet with my style & largely my material."[43] Lovecraft would have been grateful for the acknowledgement.

For the time being, however, Dunsany, more than Poe, was Lovecraft's "God of Fiction." He would write an interesting, but not notably perceptive, lecture, "Lord Dunsany and His Work," in late 1922; as early as May 1920, when "Literary Composition" was published in the *United Amateur,* he would single out Dunsany and Bierce as models of short story technique; and in 1921 he would complain that "Dunsany has met with nothing but coldness or lukewarm praise" ("The Defence Reopens!"). Lovecraft would, in fact, be indirectly responsible for the revival of Dunsany's work in the 1970s: his paean to Dunsany in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" caused August Derleth to take note of his work and to sign up the Irish writer for an early Arkham House title (*The Fourth Book of Jorkens,* 1948), which in turn led to efforts by Arthur C. Clarke, Ursula K. Le Guin, and Lin Carter to resurrect Dunsany's early work. Dunsany is still vastly underappreciated, and both the Irish and the fantasy communities appear either uninterested in or intimidated by him; but the richness and substance of his entire work, early and late, would seem to single him out for study and appreciation. A Dunsany renaissance has yet to occur, and one can only hope that it may one day do so, even if on Lovecraft's coattails.[44]

12. A Stranger in This Century

(1919–1921 [III])

During this period Lovecraft of course did not cease to write tales of supernatural horror, and a number of these display his increasing grasp of short story technique; some of them are also rather good in their own right. One of the most interesting of these, at least in terms of its genesis, is "The Statement of Randolph Carter." It is well known that this story is—or was claimed by Lovecraft to be—an almost literal transcript of a dream Lovecraft had, probably in early December 1919, in which he and Samuel Loveman make a fateful trip to an ancient cemetery and Loveman suffers some horrible but mysterious fate after he descends alone into a crypt. The story purports to be a kind of affidavit given to the police by Randolph Carter (Lovecraft) concerning the disappearance of Harley Warren (Loveman).

We have three separate phenomena to deal with here: 1) the dream itself; 2) a letter to the Gallomo (the correspondence cycle, analogous to the Kleicomolo, between Alfred Galpin, Lovecraft, and Maurice W. Moe) of December 11, 1919, in which Lovecraft recounts the dream;[1] and 3) the finished tale, written later in December. Only the last two, of course, are recoverable. This point is important because it is already evident in the letter that Lovecraft has begun to fashion the dream creatively so that it results in an effective and suspenseful narrative, with its powerful climactic last line ("YOU FOOL, LOVEMAN IS DEAD!" in the letter; *"YOU FOOL, WARREN IS DEAD!"* in the story). To what degree, then, the letter diverges from the dream it is now impossible to say; and all we can do is to study the suggestive similarities and differences between the letter and the story.

One of the most obvious changes, as noted above, is that of the names of the characters: H. P. Lovecraft and Samuel Loveman become Randolph

Carter and Harley Warren. This change, however, must be taken in conjunction with another possible, but not certain, change—a change of setting. Both the letter and the story are remarkably vague in the actual location of the events of the narrative. In the letter Lovecraft suggests, but does not explicitly declare, that the dream occurred in some old New England cemetery: writing to two Midwesterners, Lovecraft states, "I suppose no Wisconsinite can picture such a thing—but we have them in New-England; horrible old places where the slate stones are graven with odd letters and grotesque designs such as a skull and crossbones." Later in the letter he remarks that "my tale 'The Tomb' . . . was inspired by one of these places"; "The Tomb" clearly is set in New England, but nothing in the letter clearly commits the dream to this setting.

In "The Statement of Randolph Carter" mention is made of the "Gainsville [*sic*] pike" and "Big Cypress Swamp"; these are the only topographical sites mentioned in the story. It is here that the names of the characters gain some importance, for I have now been convinced by the arguments of James Turner[2] that the tale takes place in Florida: Lovecraft seems to have misspelled the name of the well-known city of Gainesville, and cypress swamps are certainly more common in the South than in New England. If we may draw upon evidence of later stories, we can note that in "The Silver Key" (1926) Harley Warren is referred to as "a man in the South," while in "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" (1932–33) he is called a "South Carolina mystic." Recall that Loveman had for part of the war been stationed at Camp Gordon, Georgia, so perhaps he described certain features of the local terrain to Lovecraft in letters.

The name Randolph Carter, however, offers ambiguous evidence. There certainly were Carters in New England, and Lovecraft was from an early age familiar with John Carter, founder of Providence's first newspaper in 1762. Lovecraft at this time probably already knew (as he declares in a letter of 1929) that John Carter himself came from the celebrated Virginia Carters; he goes on to add here that "This transposition of a Virginia line to New England always affected my fancy strongly—hence my frequently recurrent fictional character 'Randolph Carter.'"[3] This might lead one to believe that "The Statement of Randolph Carter" is set in New England: it is undeniable that all the other Randolph Carter tales ("The Unnamable" [1923], "The Silver Key" [1926], *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* [1926–27], "Through the Gates of the Silver Key") are set entirely or in part

in New England. In these later tales, of course, Carter becomes a resident of Boston. But Lovecraft is ordinarily quite explicit in declaring the New England locality of his tales—even "The Tomb," the most nebulously situated of these, contains references to "New England dialect," "Boston gentry," and the like—and the absence of any such references in "The Statement of Randolph Carter" is telling. Of course, Lovecraft clearly wished to retain some atmosphere of the dream—Carter's testimony is full of gaps and lapses of memory, as if he himself were in a dream—so that clear topographical specification may have been undesirable.

There are, of course, many details—and even points of language—common to the letter and the story. The dream itself, Lovecraft declares, had been inspired by a lengthy discussion of weird fiction, as Loveman had been recommending many books and authors (Bierce among them?) not familiar to Lovecraft. The correspondence between Loveman and Lovecraft for this period has, unfortunately, not come to light, so that we have no way of gauging the tenor of this discussion. In any event, Lovecraft in the letter declares complete ignorance of the *purpose* of the cemetery visit: "We were, for some terrible yet unknown reason, in a very strange and very ancient cemetery . . . He [Loveman] seemed to know exactly what he was about to do, and I also had an idea—though I cannot now remember what it was!" The letter does declare that in the dream Loveman had acquired some secret knowledge from "some rare old books," adding parenthetically: "Loveman, you may know, has a vast library of rare first editions and other treasures precious to the bibliophile's heart." Harley Warren is similarly endowed (Carter speaks of "his vast collection of strange, rare books on forbidden subjects"), but in the story Lovecraft feels it necessary to provide at least some motivation for the graveyard trek: "I remember how I shuddered at his facial expression on the night before the awful happening, when he talked so incessantly of his theory, *why certain corpses never decay, but rest firm and fat in their tombs for a thousand years.*"

Carter declares that this knowledge had been gained from a "fiend-inspired book which . . . he carried in his pocket out of the world." Many have believed this book to be the *Necronomicon,* Lovecraft's celebrated mythical book of forbidden lore, but it is very unlikely that this is the book in question. Carter declares that he had read every book in Warren's library in the languages known to him; this must mean that Carter is at least versed in the common languages (Latin, Greek, French, German, English), and he

even mentions that some books were in Arabic. But of the "fiend-inspired book" Carter declares that it was "written in characters whose like I never saw elsewhere," which suggests that the book was *not* in Arabic or any other common language; later Carter states that the book came from India. Since, according to Lovecraft's later testimony, the *Necronomicon* exists only in Arabic, Greek, Latin, and English, Warren's book cannot be that volume.

The degree to which Lovecraft drew upon the letter (which he probably recalled from memory) for the story is very evident by comparison of a passage in the two documents relating to the first sight of the cemetery:

> Such was the scene of my dream—a hideous hollow whose surface was covered with a coarse, repulsive sort of long grass, above which peeped the shocking stones and markers of decaying slate. In a hillside were several old tombs whose facades were in the last stages of decrepitude. I had an odd idea that no living thing had trodden that ground for many centuries till Loveman and I arrived.
>
> The place was an ancient cemetery; so ancient that I trembled at the manifold signs of immemorial years. It was in a deep, damp hollow, overgrown with rank grass, moss, and curious creeping weeds, and filled with a vague stench which my idle fancy associated absurdly with rotting stone. On every hand were the signs of neglect and decrepitude, and I seemed haunted by the notion that Warren and I were the first living creatures to invade a lethal silence of centuries.

The letter is already a little overheated; the story is more so. This sort of parallelism can be found throughout the two works, right down to the incessant repetition of "waning crescent moon." In both letter and story Loveman/Warren and Lovecraft/Carter pause at one particularly ancient sepulchre, lying flat on the ground; Loveman/Warren is unable to pry open the top of the sepulchre by his own spade, so Lovecraft/Carter lends him assistance with his own. An aperture is uncovered, revealing a long flight of steps descending downward, and a miasmal stench wafting from the cavity causes the two momentarily to pause (Lovecraft's dreams clearly brought every sense organ into play). At this point Loveman/Warren compels Lovecraft/Carter to remain on the surface while the former descends the crypt alone; in both letter and story the justification given is the fragile state

of Lovecraft/Carter's nerves. Although the latter protests, Loveman/Warren is adamant, threatening to cancel the entire enterprise if Lovecraft/Carter proves obdurate. The letter notes that Loveman threatened to bring in one "Dr. Burke" to replace Lovecraft; this detail is omitted from the story. The letter also adds one telling remark made by Loveman that Lovecraft quietly omitted from the story: "'At any rate, this is no place for anybody who can't pass an army physical examination.'" Two and a half years after the fact, Lovecraft's humiliating experience with the R.I.N.G. and the U.S. Army still rankled in his subconscious. But the two protagonists will stay in touch by means of a sort of telephone cable device; as letter and story identically have Loveman/Warren declare, "you see I've enough wire here to reach to the centre of the earth and back!" This is, admittedly, a trifle implausible, but by this time the atmosphere of the story has eliminated such concerns.

As Loveman/Warren descends into the crypt, he begins speaking to Lovecraft/Carter in tones of amazement at what he is seeing. In the story Warren's exclamations are much elaborated, going on for several italicised paragraphs; but in both letter and story Loveman/Warren soon finds his wonder turning to horror as he encounters some nameless entity which causes him to plead frantically to his companion on the ground above, with chilling colloquialism, *"Beat it!"* This single expression—repeated frequently in both letter and story—is one of the first instances of Lovecraft's sloughing off his customarily stately diction for the purpose of augmenting the horror of the situation; it is far more telling than Joe Slater's crude descriptions of his extraterrestrial possession in "Beyond the Wall of Sleep," since these are still expressed generally in the language of the sober narrator. In a very short time Lovecraft would evolve his use of a backwoods New England patois that could evoke the loathsomeness of a scenario far more powerfully than the most adjective-choked purple prose; and this—along with his concomitant adaptation of the prose-poetry of Dunsany—went far in replacing the stiff Johnsonianism of his early work with a much more fluid and wide-ranging prose style.

The rest of "The Statement of Randolph Carter" is very similar in diction to the letter. Of course, the actual entity that makes the final utterance—in English—is left unexplained: throughout the story Carter merely refers to it melodramatically as "the *thing*." The repeated use of this term is itself moderately interesting, in that it suggests a clearly material entity—as opposed to a ghost or spirit—and thereby indirectly confirms

Lovecraft's materialism. There will be those who find the complete silence as to the actual nature of the entity disappointing and even a sort of cop-out; but in the dream Lovecraft clearly had no idea what the entity was, and his similar inconclusiveness in the story is another attempt to preserve for himself the nightmarish qualities of his dream.

"The Statement of Randolph Carter" remained a favourite of Lovecraft's throughout his life, perhaps more because it captured a singularly distinctive and memorable dream than because it was a wholly successful weird tale. It first appeared in W. Paul Cook's *Vagrant* for May 1920.

Very shortly after writing "The Statement of Randolph Carter," Lovecraft initiated a project that would again signal a clear shift in his aesthetic focus from poetry and essays to fiction. It must have been around the very beginning of 1920 that he began his commonplace book; he describes its content and purpose in a brief preface to it written in 1934: "This book consists of ideas, images, & quotations hastily jotted down for possible future use in weird fiction. Very few are actually developed plots—for the most part they are merely suggestions or random impressions designed to set the memory or imagination working. Their sources are various—dreams, things read, casual incidents, idle conceptions, & so on." To this assessment there is little to add except masses of detail. David E. Schultz, whose annotated edition of the commonplace book is one of the landmarks of Lovecraft scholarship, has shown how virtually every one of the 222 entries in this book played a role in the shaping of Lovecraft's subsequent fictional output, and even some of his weird poetry. While the sources for some entries are still obscure, enough of them have been elucidated to confirm Lovecraft's statement as to their variegated nature: very few books, dreams, and personal events failed to leave their mark on Lovecraft's imagination.

There has been some debate as to when Lovecraft began keeping his commonplace book. The first reference to it appears to occur in a letter to the Gallomo written some months after the letter in which Lovecraft recorded the dream that inspired "The Statement of Randolph Carter." August Derleth printed this letter (apparently dating to April 1920) in *Dreams and Fancies* (1962), but not all of it; in an editorial note he remarks: "In this very long rambling letter . . . Lovecraft makes an intriguing reference to 'mere dreams' which he says, he has 'recorded for

future fictional development in my commonplace book.'"[4] There are other references to the commonplace book in letters to Kleiner dated January 23 and February 10, 1920. The first letter declares: "I have lately . . . been collecting ideas and images for subsequent use in fiction. For the first time in my life, I am keeping a 'commonplace-book'—if that term can be applied to a repository of gruesome and fantastick thoughts."[5] Since Lovecraft's previous letter to Kleiner is dated December 27, 1919, one presumes that the commonplace book was begun somewhere between this date and January 23, 1920. The February 10 letter quotes several actual entries from the commonplace book, none of them later than entry 21.

I have emphasised the likelihood of a very late 1919 or very early 1920 date for the commencement of the commonplace book because Lovecraft himself suggests a date of 1919. This is the date he has written between entries 24 and 25 in the commonplace book itself; but this and other dates were written around 1934 at the urging of R. H. Barlow, who was preparing a transcript of the item. In spite of some remarkable instances of memory of remote events (especially from his childhood), Lovecraft's memory was by no means infallible, and all the dates he has supplied in the commonplace book must be regarded as tentative and in some cases plainly erroneous. Entries 150 and 151 unquestionably date to 1928, but Lovecraft has dated them to 1926. Entry 6 explicitly derives from Dunsany's "Idle Days on the Yann"; but it is my belief that this entry was jotted down not when Lovecraft *first* read that story in *A Dreamer's Tales* in September 1919, but when he *reread* the story in its appearance in *Tales of Three Hemispheres,* probably in early 1920. That volume was published in November 1919 by John W. Luce & Co.,[6] and Lovecraft does not seem to have read it any earlier than the beginning of the next year. Entry 24 derives from Dunsany's "A Shop in Go-by Street," one of the sequels to "Idle Days on the Yann" in *Tales of Three Hemispheres.* The likelihood is that Lovecraft, having come up with the idea of a commonplace book, wrote many entries in a rush in the first few weeks, then wrote only a handful of entries a year for the remainder of his life.

In any event, the commonplace book would prove to be a mine of images and impressions upon which Lovecraft would draw for his subsequent fictional work. More significantly, it clearly calls attention to the fact that fiction is now to be his dominant mode of creative expression: we have no commonplace book entries for essays and very few for poetry,

and the rapid waning of these two later bodies of his work becomes evident from this point onward.

Lovecraft certainly seemed to be flexing his fictional muscles in 1920. By March he reported that "I am at present full of various ideas, including a hideous novel to be entitled 'The Club of the Seven Dreamers.'"[7] There is no other mention of this work in any other letters I have ever seen, and I suspect that the novel was never even begun. Lovecraft was simply not at the stage where he could undertake a novel-length work. Even though we know absolutely nothing about the work, it is possible to make some conjectures regarding it. Perhaps, indeed, it was not intended to be a genuine novel but rather a series of short stories with different narrators—these being the "seven dreamers" of the title. If so, then the conception would be somewhat similar to Poe's plans for a volume entitled *Tales of the Folio Club;* in his preface to this volume (first printed in James A. Harrison's collected edition of Poe [1902]) Poe declares that "The number of the club is limited to eleven."[8] One may perhaps also suspect the influence of John Osborne Austin's *More Seven Club Tales* (1900), a volume about strange happenings in Rhode Island which Lovecraft had in his library. This slim book contains seven stories, each narrated by a different individual, mostly figures from seventeenth-century Rhode Island. Only a few of the tales are genuinely weird, and even these are rather innocuous ghost stories; but Lovecraft may have found the format suggestive.

At this moment, however, Dunsany was still in the ascendant. Even if we include "The Terrible Old Man," it would be a half year or more before Lovecraft would write a non-Dunsanian tale of supernatural horror. "The Temple" was written sometime after "The Cats of Ulthar" (June 15, 1920) but before "Celephaïs" (early November), since it is so situated in Lovecraft's chronologies of his fiction. My guess is that it was written sometime in late summer. At nearly 6000 words it is the longest story Lovecraft had written up to this point, and amidst some painful flaws it reveals several points of interest.

A German submarine commanded by a Prussian nobleman, Karl Heinrich, Graf von Altberg-Ehrenstein, sinks a British freighter; later a dead seaman from the freighter is found clinging to the railing of the submarine, and in his pocket is found a "very odd bit of ivory carved to represent a youth's head crowned with laurel." The German crew sleep poorly, have

bad dreams, and some think that dead bodies are drifting past the portholes. Some crewmen actually go mad, claiming that a curse has fallen upon them; Altberg-Ehrenstein executes them to restore discipline.

Some days later an explosion in the engine room cripples the submarine, and still later a general mutiny breaks out, with some sailors further damaging the ship; the commander again executes the culprits. Finally only two men, Altberg-Ehreinstein and Lieutenant Klenze, are left alive. The ship sinks lower and lower toward the bottom of the ocean. Klenze then goes mad, shouting: "*He* is calling! *He* is calling! I hear him! We must go!" He voluntarily leaves the ship and plunges into the ocean. As the ship finally reaches the ocean floor, the commander sees a remarkable sight:

> What I saw was an extended and elaborate array of ruined edifices; all of magnificent though unclassified architecture, and in various stages of preservation. Most appeared to be of marble, gleaming whitely in the rays of the searchlight, and the general plan was of a large city at the bottom of a narrow valley, with numerous isolated temples and villas on the steep slopes above.

"Confronted at last with the Atlantis I had formerly deemed largely a myth," Altberg-Ehrenstein notices one especially large temple carved out of the solid rock; later he sees that a head sculpted on it is exactly like the figurine taken from the dead British sailor. The commander, finishing his written account of his adventure on August 20, 1917 (Lovecraft's twenty-seventh birthday), prepares to explore the temple after he sees an anomalous phosphorescence emerging from far within the temple. "So I will carefully don my diving suit and walk boldly up the steps into that primal shrine; that silent secret of unfathomed waters and uncounted years."

Like "Dagon," "The Temple" is aggressively contemporary in its World War I setting; this might have been considered a virtue were it not for the extraordinarily crude and clumsy satire directed against the German commander, who in his first-person account makes himself ridiculous by referring constantly to "our victorious German exploits," "our great German nation," "my own German will," and the like. Why Lovecraft, nearly two years after the war was over, felt the need to carry out this sort of vicious satire is difficult to imagine, especially since the commander actually proves to be quite admirable for his courage and his undaunted facing of the

unknown: “Though I knew that death was near, my curiosity was consuming . . .”—a sentiment we will find in many later tales.

Another serious flaw in the story is that it contains *too much supernaturalism.* There are too many anomalous phenomena, and they cannot be unified into a coherent pattern: why does the dead British sailor appear to swim away after his hands are pried off the railing? why do a school of dolphins follow the ship to the bottom of the sea and not come up for air? and what do these matters have to do with the undersea city and the temple? Lovecraft seems to have thrown these elements in to increase the general weirdness of the scenario, but their unaccountability dilutes the force of the central weird phenomenon.

But that central phenomenon—not so much the supposed existence of Atlantis (in which Lovecraft did not believe) as the existence of an entire human civilisation unknown to history—is what redeems “The Temple”: it will become a dominant motif in many of Lovecraft’s later tales, in which both human and extraterrestrial civilisations are found to have existed long before the emergence of known human civilisations, rendering our own physical and cultural supremacy tentative and perhaps transitory. One detail is of consuming interest: the commander notes that the pictorial and architectural art of the undersea city is “of the most phenomenal perfection, largely Hellenic in idea, yet strangely individual. It imparts an impression of terrible antiquity, as though it were the remotest rather than the immediate ancestor of Greek art.” The suggestion is that this civilisation was in fact the ancestor of all Western art, and that our own culture represents a sad decline from the “phenomenal perfection” of this race. That phosphorescence at the end seems to suggest that that race is perhaps not as extinct as the ruined state of the city implies, but Lovecraft in a letter remarks curiously that “the flame that the Graf von Altberg-Ehrenstein beheld was a witch-fire lit by spirits many millennia old”;[9] how any reader could ever make this deduction in the utter absence of any textual evidence escapes me.

Lovecraft seemed to retain a fondness for “The Temple,” but it never appeared in an amateur journal and was first published only in *Weird Tales* for September 1925. Perhaps its length made amateur publication difficult, since space was always at a premium.

Another tale of which Lovecraft was justifiably proud is “Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family,” written some time

after “The Temple,” probably no later than autumn. This compact story—notable for its taut, restrained language in contrast to the flamboyance of some of his other early tales—tells of why Sir Arthur Jermyn doused himself in oil and set himself aflame one night. He had come from a venerable but eccentric family. In the eighteenth century Sir Wade Jermyn “was one of the earliest explorers of the Congo region,” but was placed in a madhouse after speaking wildly of “a prehistoric white Congolese civilisation.” He had brought back from the Congo a wife—reportedly the daughter of a Portuguese trader—who was never seen. The offspring of the union were very peculiar both in physiognomy and mentality. In the middle of the nineteenth century a Sir Robert Jermyn killed off nearly his entire family as well as a fellow African explorer who had brought back strange tales (and perhaps other things) from the area of Sir Wade’s explorations.

Arthur Jermyn seeks to redeem the family name by continuing Sir Wade’s researches and perhaps vindicating him. Pursuing reports of a white ape who became a goddess in the prehistoric African civilisation, he comes upon the remains of the site in 1912 but finds little confirmation of the story of the white ape. This confirmation is supplied by a Belgian explorer who ships the object to Jermyn House. The hideous rotting thing is found to be wearing a locket containing the Jermyn coat of arms; and what remains of its face bears an uncanny resemblance to that of Arthur Jermyn. When he sees this object, Jermyn douses himself in oil and sets himself aflame.

This seemingly straightforward story—Sir Wade had married the ape-goddess, whose offspring bore the physical and mental stigmata of the unnatural union—is actually rather more complicated than it seems. Consider the resounding opening utterance, one of the most celebrated passages in Lovecraft’s fiction:

> Life is a hideous thing, and from the background behind what we know of it peer daemoniacal hints of truth which make it sometimes a thousandfold more hideous. Science, already oppressive with its shocking revelations, will perhaps be the ultimate exterminator of our human species—if separate species we be—for its reserve of unguessed horrors could never be borne by mortal brains if loosed upon the world.

The critical phrase here is the clause “if separate species we be”: this *generalised* statement concerning the possibility that human beings may not be entirely “human” is not logically deducible from a *single* case of

miscegenation. But let us return to that "prehistoric *white* Congolese civilisation" and a later description of it: "the living things that might haunt such a place [were] creatures half of the jungle and half of the impiously aged city—fabulous creatures which even a Pliny might describe with scepticism; things that might have sprung up after the great apes had overrun the dying city with the walls and the pillars, the vaults and the weird carvings." This, really, is the crux of the story, for what Lovecraft is suggesting is that the inhabitants of this city are not only the "missing link" between ape and human but also *the ultimate source for all white civilisation.* For someone of Lovecraft's well-known racialist bent, such a thing would be a horror surpassing any isolated case of miscegenation. Of course, the "white ape" whom Sir Wade marries is not a member of the original white civilisation (which is long extinct), but a product of the mingling of apes with the descendants of this civilisation. How else could the ape be "white"?

The overall implication of "Arthur Jermyn" is that all white civilisation is derived from this primal race in Africa, a race that has corrupted itself by intermingling with apes. This is the only explanation for the narrator's opening statement, "If we knew what we are, we should do as Sir Arthur Jermyn did [i.e., commit suicide]": we may not have a white ape in our immediate ancestry, but we are all the products of an ultimate miscegenation. More broadly, Lovecraft is suggesting that the distinction between apes and human beings is a highly tenuous one—not merely in the case of the Jermyns, but of us all. Recall "At the Root" (1918): "We must recognise the essential underlying savagery in the animal called man . . . civilisation is but a slight coverlet beneath which the dominant beast sleeps lightly and ever ready to awake."

Lovecraft made two suggestive remarks on the sources and genesis of this tale. First, he wrote to Arthur Harris: "The only tale of mine to be published in sections is 'Arthur Jermyn', & this was written with that form in mind."[10] What this means is that the tale was written expressly for the *Wolverine* (edited by Horace L. Lawson), where the tale appeared serially in the issues for March and June 1921. The two sections fall neatly into an account of the history of the Jermyn line and the narrative of Arthur Jermyn himself. Lovecraft's second comment is still more suggestive:

> [The] origin [of "Arthur Jermyn"] is rather curious—and far removed from the atmosphere it suggests. Somebody had been

> harassing me into reading some work of the iconoclastic moderns—these young chaps why pry behind exteriors and unveil nasty hidden motives and secret stigmata—and I had nearly fallen asleep over the tame backstairs gossip of Anderson's *Winesburg, Ohio.* The sainted Sherwood, as you know, laid bare the dark area which many whited village lives concealed, and it occurred to me that I, in my weirder medium, could probably devise some secret behind a man's ancestry which would make the worst of Anderson's disclosures sound like the annual report of a Sabbath school. Hence Arthur Jermyn.[11]

As I shall discuss later, it was just at this time when Lovecraft (perhaps in part through the influence of Frank Belknap Long) was attempting to bring himself literarily up to date by investigating the modernists. If the above is to be taken at its face value, it suggests Lovecraft's dawning realisation that weird fiction could be a mode of social criticism as probing in its way as the grimmest literary realism. "Arthur Jermyn," of course, represents only a minor foray of this sort, but a much later tale of which it is a source—"The Shadow over Innsmouth"—is a very different proposition.

"Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family" was, as I have mentioned, first published as a serial in the *Wolverine* for March and June 1921. This is the only appearance until the recent corrected edition in which the full, correct title as recorded on the surviving typescript was printed. It got a favourable notice in "The Vivisector" for November 1921, written (as I shall demonstrate later) by Alfred Galpin:

> "Facts Concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family", by Mr. Lovecraft, shows another phase of that writer's gloomy but powerful genius. It is perfect in execution, restrained in manner, complete, and marked by Mr. Lovecraft's uniquely effective handling of introductory and concluding portions. The legend is not so powerful as many of Mr. Lovecraft's dreamings have been, but it is unquestionably original and does not derive from Poe, Dunsany, or any other of Mr. Lovecraft's favorites and predecessors. Its affiliations are rather closer with Ambrose Bierce, and I personally should place it beside much of Bierce's best work without fearing for the fame of the United's representative.[12]

The comparison to Bierce seems to me a trifle strained, and may apply only in the relative plainness of the style and the brooding pessimism of the opening. Whether it is "unquestionably original" is another matter. I have not found any direct influence, but one wonders whether a novel that was serialised in the *Cavalier* (a Munsey magazine) in April 1912—*The Ape at the Helm* by Patrick Gallagher, which Sam Moskowitz describes as dealing with "a ship that loses its first mate and finds the captain taking aboard a half-man, half-ape from an island"[13]—is a source for the story. Since Lovecraft declares that "I read every number of *The Cavalier,*"[14] he must have read Gallagher's novel; I myself, however, have not done so, so can only note the very general similarity of conception between it and Lovecraft's story.

We now come to "Poetry and the Gods," published in the *United Amateur* for September 1920 as by "Anna Helen Crofts and Henry Paget-Lowe." Aside from the two stories written with Winifred Virginia Jackson, this is Lovecraft's only signed collaboration with a woman writer. Some have believed Anna Helen Crofts to be a pseudonym (perhaps for Jackson), but she appears under her own name in the UAPA membership lists, residing at 343 West Main Street in North Adams, Massachusetts, in the far northwestern corner of the state. I have no idea how Lovecraft came in touch with her or why he chose to collaborate on this tale; he never mentions it or his coauthor in any correspondence I have ever seen.

"Poetry and the Gods" tells the somewhat mawkish story of Marcia, a young woman who, though "outwardly a typical product of modern civilisation," feels strangely out of tune with her time. She picks up a magazine and reads a piece of free verse, finding it so evocative that she lapses into a languid dream in which Hermes comes to her and wafts her to Parnassus where Zeus is holding court. She is shown six individuals sitting before the Corycian cave; they are Homer, Dante, Shakespeare, Milton, Goethe, and Keats. "These were those messengers whom the Gods had sent to tell men that Pan had passed not away, but only slept; for it is in poetry that Gods speak to men." Zeus tells Marcia that she will meet a man who is "our latest-born messenger," a man whose poetry will somehow bring order to the chaos of the modern age. Sure enough, she later meets this person, "the young poet of poets at whose feet sits all the world," and he thrills her with his poetry.

This is surely one of the most peculiar items in Lovecraft's fictional corpus, not only for its utterly unknown genesis but for its anomalous theme. At whose urging was this story written? The fact that Crofts's name is placed before Lovecraft's does not mean much, as Lovecraft would have considered it gentlemanly to have taken second billing; much of the language clearly is Lovecraft's, and it is difficult to imagine what Crofts's contribution can have been. The prose verges on Dunsanianism, especially Hermes' long speech to Marcia; but in reality this bit sounds like a conventional translation of the period from Greek or Latin literature. It is facile to say that the idea of using a female protagonist must have come from Crofts, but perhaps not so facile to think that the description of her attire ("in a low-cut evening dress of black") is not likely to have been arrived at by a man so seemingly unworldly as Lovecraft.

Then there is the long bit of free verse in the story. Is this Crofts's addition? I have found only one other contribution by Crofts in the amateur press, but it is a one-page story, "Life" (*United Amateur,* March 1921), and not a poem; she could, however, have published poetry in other journals. Lovecraft, of course, cannot help poking fun at the specimen: "It was only a bit of *vers libre,* that pitiful compromise of the poet who overleaps prose yet falls short of the divine melody of numbers . . ."; but the passage goes on to say: "but it had in it all the unstudied music of a bard who lives and feels, and who gropes ecstatically for unveiled beauty. Devoid of regularity, it yet had the wild harmony of winged, spontaneous words; a harmony missing from the formal, convention-bound verse she had known." The poetic fragment—rather effective in its imagistic way—is certainly not meant parodically, and is presumably supposed to be by that "poet of poets" whom Marcia meets later. The encounters with Homer and the rest are a trifle embarrassing, as each soberly spouts some familiar chestnut which Marcia appreciates even though she does not know Greek, German, or Italian and hence cannot understand three of the six bards. On the whole, "Poetry and the Gods" is simply a curiosity, and will become of interest only if more information on its writing and its collaborator emerges.

A more representative story is "From Beyond," written on November 16, 1920, as noted on the autograph manuscript. Like so many of Lovecraft's early tales, it is severely flawed but full of significance for its adumbration of themes that are developed to much better advantage in later works. This is the histrionic story of Crawford Tillinghast, a scientist who

has devised a machine that will "break down the barriers" erected by our five senses that limit our perception of phenomena. He shows to his friend, the narrator, "a pale, outré colour or blend of colours" that he maintains is ultraviolet, ordinarily invisible to the human eye. As he continues his experiment, the narrator begins to perceive all sorts of amorphous, jellylike objects drifting through what he previously thoguht was empty air; he even sees them "brushing past me and occasionally *walking or drifting through my supposedly solid body.*" Later, as the experiment becomes increasingly peculiar and as Tillinghast begins shouting madly about the creatures he controls through his machine, the narrator suddenly fires a shot from a pistol, destroying the machine. Tillinghast is found dead of apoplexy.

This tale remained unpublished until its appearance in the *Fantasy Fan* for June 1934; at this time or earlier, Lovecraft made several changes that are not recorded on the surviving autograph manuscript. In the first place, the scientist's name has been changed from Henry Annesley. Perhaps Lovecraft thought this a little too colourless; Crawford Tillinghast is a combination of two celebrated old families in the history of Providence (as Lovecraft notes in *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward:* ". . . the great brigs of the Browns, Crawfords, and Tillinghasts") and befits a tale set, however nominally, in Providence: Tillinghast resides in an "ancient, lonely house set back from Benevolent Street," on College Hill near Brown University. There may in fact be a subtle historical in-joke here, since in the late eighteenth century property on Benevolent Street was owned, on one side of the street, by Joseph Crawford, and, on the other, by a J. Tillinghast.[15] Another curious addition is the narrator's account of why he has a revolver, something "I always carried after dark since the night I was held up in East Providence." To my knowledge, Lovecraft was never himself held up in East Providence or anywhere else; but perhaps this phrase was added after his frequent visits to the weird writer C. M. Eddy and his wife in East Providence, then and now a rather seedy community.

The true significance of the tale, however, is its spectacular idea of expanding the range of sense-perception to make visible what we otherwise think of as empty space. As one studies the wording of the story, it becomes clear that it is little more than a sort of extrapolation of some conceptions in Hugh Elliot's *Modern Science and Materialism.* Elliot's book not merely helped to firm up Lovecraft's early metaphysics, but also triggered his

imagination. Each of the following three entries in his commonplace book have fairly precise analogues in Elliot's work:

> 34 Moving away from earth more swiftly than light—past gradually unfolded—horrible revelation.
>
> 35 Special beings with special senses from remote universes. Advent of an external universe to view.
>
> 36 Disintegration of all matter to electrons and finally empty space assured, just as devolution of energy to radiant heat is known. Case of *acceleration*—man passes into space.

The first entry relates to the old conception (now rendered false by relativity) that it is possible to travel faster than the speed of light and that in doing so one would go backward in time. The third entry is merely an echo of the notion of entropy. For our present concerns, it is the second entry that is of greatest relevance, since it echoes the passage I have already quoted from Elliot in which he expresses the bold conjecture of how the universe might appear to us if we had a thousand senses. Compare this with Tillinghast's utterance near the beginning of "From Beyond":

> "What do we know," he had said, "of the world and the universe about us? Our means of receiving impressions are absurdly few, and our notions of surrounding objects infinitely narrow. We see things only as we are constructed to see them, and can gain no idea of their absolute nature. With five feeble senses we pretend to comprehend the boundlessly complex cosmos, yet other beings with a wider, stronger, or different range of senses might not only see very differently the things we see, but might see and study whole worlds of matter, energy, and life which lie close at hand yet can never be detected with the senses we have. . . ."

When Tillinghast shows the narrator the anomalous colour, he asks him, "Do you know what that is? . . . *That is ultra-violet.*" This is a direct echo of a passage in Elliot in which he mentions, "Not only are our senses few, but they are extremely limited in range," and he goes on specifically to cite the case of ultraviolet rays as one of the many phenomena we cannot see.

But the clearest borrowing from Elliot relates to the central weird phenomenon of the tale—the fact that every particle of space is populated by a mass of loathsome creatures that can flow through our own bodies. This is really nothing more than a horrific presentation of the common fact

that most material objects consist largely of empty space. Elliot writes about this notion at length:

> Let us now . . . see what matter would look like if magnified to, say, a thousand million diameters, so that the contents of a small thimble appeared to become the size of the earth. Even under this great magnification, the individual electrons would still be too small to be seen by the naked eye. . . . The first circumstance that strikes us is that nearly the whole structure of matter consists of the empty spaces between electrons. . . . It ceases, therefore, to be remarkable that X-rays can penetrate matter and come out on the other side.

"From Beyond" is, however, a very poorly written and conceived tale. Its use of the already hackneyed motif of the mad scientist (which entered weird fiction no later than *Frankenstein*) is crude to the point of caricature: "It is not pleasant to see a stout man suddenly grown thin, and it is even worse when the baggy skin becomes yellowed or greyed, the eyes sunken, circled, and uncannily glowing, the forehead veined and corrugated, and the hands tremulous and twitching." Tillinghast's speeches become comically grotesque in their self-important bombast; toward the end he makes the inexplicable assertion: "I have harnessed the shadows that stride from world to world to sow death and madness. . . . Space belongs to me, do you hear?" I am not even clear on some points of plot in the story. Some of Tillinghast's servants have died inexplicably; did the monsters evoked by the machine kill them, or Tillinghast himself dispose of them? The story offers contradictory clues on the matter.

But "From Beyond" is important for its adumbration of such issues as the expansion of sense-perception (we will see that several of Lovecraft's later extraterrestrials possess more senses than human beings), the strange "colour or blend of colours" (perhaps the ultimate nucleus of "The Colour out of Space"), and the attempt to visualise what a supra-sensory world might be like. For these reasons, "From Beyond" must be regarded as an important formative tale in Lovecraft's corpus—a tale that, like "Polaris" in a somewhat different way, shows him employing explicitly philosophical conceptions for the purpose of horror fiction.[16]

The two stories, "Nyarlathotep" (a prose-poem) and "The Crawling Chaos" (written in collaboration with Winifred Virginia Jackson), must be considered together for a reason I shall discuss presently. "Nyarlathotep"

was published in the issue of the *United Amateur* dated November 1920; but since the magazine was at this time habitually late, sometimes by two or three months, it is difficult to know exactly when the prose-poem was written. Lovecraft first discusses it in a letter to Rheinhart Kleiner dated December 14, 1920,[17] but it is unclear whether Lovecraft has sent the tale in manuscript to Kleiner or whether Kleiner has read the story in the presumably delayed *United Amateur.* The former seems somewhat more likely, since Lovecraft wrote the letter to accompany several recent stories he was then sending to Kleiner.

"Nyarlathotep" is of interest both intrinsically and for its genesis. Like "The Statement of Randolph Carter," it is the direct product of a dream; but more to the point, the first paragraph was written *"before I fully awaked,"* as Lovecraft wrote to Kleiner. By "first paragraph" Lovecraft cannot be referring to the brief, fragmentary opening ("Nyarlathotep . . . the crawling chaos . . . I am the last . . . I will tell the audient void. . . .") but the lengthy paragraph that follows; otherwise, his remark that he changed only three words of it would not be particularly noteworthy. In any case, the dream again involved Samuel Loveman, who writes Lovecraft the following note: "Don't fail to see Nyarlathotep if he comes to Providence. He is horrible—horrible beyond anything you can imagine—but wonderful. He haunts one for hours afterward. I am still shuddering at what he showed." Lovecraft notes that the peculiar name Nyarlathotep came to him in this dream, but one can conjecture at least a partial influence in the name of Dunsany's minor god Mynarthitep (mentioned fleetingly in "The Sorrow of Search," in *Time and the Gods*) or of the prophet Alhireth-Hotep (mentioned in *The Gods of Pegana*). Of course, *-hotep* is an Egyptian root, and Nyarlathotep is in fact said in the prose-poem to have come "out of Egypt . . . he was of the old native blood and looked like a Pharaoh." In the dream Nyarlathotep is supposed to be a sort of "itinerant showman or lecturer who held forth in publick halls and aroused widespread fear and discussion with his exhibitions"—exhibitions that included "a horrible—possibly prophetic—cinema reel" and, later, "some extraordinary experiments with scientific and electrical apparatus." Lovecraft decides to go hear Nyarlathotep, and the story follows the dream pretty closely up to the conclusion: Nyarlathotep's lecture seems to inspire a sort of collective madness, and people march mechanically in various mindless formations, never to be heard of again.

"Nyarlathotep" is, plainly, an allegory on the downfall of civilisation—the first of many such ruminations in the length and breadth of Lovecraft's fiction and his philosophical thought. In the tale we find ourselves in a "season of political and social upheaval" in which people "whispered warnings and prophecies which no one dared consciously repeat." And what does the narrator see "shadowed on a screen" during Nyarlathotep's cinema presentation? "And I saw the world battling against blackness; against the waves of destruction from ultimate space; whirling, churning; struggling around the dimming, cooling sun." Civilisation's downfall heralds the decline of the whole planet with the extinction of the sun. Later the world seems to be falling apart:

> Once we looked at the pavement and found the blocks loose and displaced by grass, with scarce a line of rusted metal to shew where the tramways had run. And again we saw a tram-car, lone, windowless, dilapidated, and almost on its side. When we gazed around the horizon, we could not find the third tower by the river, and noticed that the silhouette of the second tower was ragged at the top.

The entire prose-poem is one of Lovecraft's most powerful vignettes, and shows how deeply imbued was his mingled terror of and fascination with the decline of the West. The fact that Nyarlathotep "had risen up out of the blackness of twenty-seven centuries" places him at the end of the fourth dynasty of the Old Kingdom, either in the reign of Khufu (Cheops) in 2590–68 B.C.E. or in that of Khafre (Chephren) in 2559–35 B.C.E. Khafre, of course, is the builder of the Sphinx, and perhaps Lovecraft was wishing to draw indirectly upon the eternal mystery of this cryptic monument.[18]

Can there be a real source for Nyarlathotep? Will Murray[19] has made the provocative conjecture that this "itinerant showman" was based upon Nicola Tesla (1856–1943), the eccentric scientist and inventor who created a sensation at the turn of the century for his strange electrical experiments. Lovecraft mentions Tesla at least once in his correspondence—most tellingly in a letter in which he is free-associating about the events he recalls in the year 1900: "Nikola Tesla reports signals from Mars."[20] Physically, of course, Tesla looked nothing like Nyarlathotep: one biographer describes him as a "weird, storklike figure on the lecture platform in his white tie and tails" and "nearly seven feet tall" because of the cork soles he wore to protect himself during his electrical

demonstrations.[21] Nevertheless, there are enough suggestive similarities between Tesla's and Nyarlathotep's lecture performances—and the shock and disturbance they inspired—to make a connexion likely, even if, because of the dream-inspiration of "Nyarlathotep," such a connexion can only be regarded as subconscious.

Nyarlathotep, of course, recurs throughout Lovecraft's later fiction and becomes one of the chief "gods" in his invented pantheon. But he appears in such widely divergent forms that it may not be possible to establish a single or coherent symbolism for him; to say merely, as some critics have done, that he is a "shapeshifter" (something Lovecraft never genuinely suggests) is only to admit that even his physical form is not consistent from story to story, much less his thematic significance. But whatever the ultimate "meaning" of Nyarlathotep, he rarely made a more dramatic appearance than in the brief tale laconically bearing his name.

"The Crawling Chaos," as will now be evident, must be considered in conjunction with "Nyarlathotep" only because the title is clearly derived from the previously cited opening of the prose-poem, although Nyarlathotep himself makes no appearance in the story. Lovecraft admits in a letter: "I took the title C. C. from my Nyarlathotep sketch . . . because I liked the sound of it."[22] I do not know how helpful this is in dating the collaboration; it cannot, at least, have been written before the prose-poem, hence probably does not date any earlier than December 1920. It was published in the *United Co-operative* for April 1921 as by "Elizabeth Berkeley and Lewis Theobald, Jun." Lovecraft appears to allude to the genesis of the story in a letter of May 1920, in which he notes the previous collaboration with Jackson, "The Green Meadow": "I will enclose—subject to return—an account of a Jacksonian dream which occurred in the early part of 1919, and which I am some time going to weave into a horror story . . ."[23] It is, of course, not entirely certain whether this dream was the nucleus of "The Crawling Chaos"; but since there are no other story collaborations with Jackson, the conjecture seems likely.

In certain external features of the plot "The Crawling Chaos" is surprisingly reminiscent of "The Green Meadow"; but it is, on the whole, a somewhat more interesting tale than its predecessor, although still quite insubstantial. The narrator tells of his one experience with opium, when a doctor unwittingly gave him an overdose to ease his pain. After experiencing a sensation of falling, "curiously dissociated from the idea of

gravity or direction," he finds himself in a "strange and beautiful room lighted by many windows." A sense of fear comes over him, and he realises that it is inspired by a monotonous pounding that seems to be coming from below the house in which he finds himself. Looking out a window, he sees that the pounding is caused by titanic waves that are rapidly washing away the piece of land on which the house stands, transforming the land into an ever-narrowing peninsula. Fleeing through the back door of the house, the narrator finds himself walking along a sandy path and rests under a palm tree. Suddenly a child of radiant beauty drops from the branches of the tree, and presently two other individuals—"a god and goddess they must have been"—appear. They waft the narrator into the air and are joined by a singing chorus of other heavenly individuals who wish to lead the narrator to the wondrous land of Teloe. But the pounding of the sea disrupts this throng, and in imagery very reminiscent of "Nyarlathotep" ("Down through the aether I saw the accursed earth turning, ever turning, with angry and tempestuous seas gnawing at wild desolate shores and dashing foam against the tottering towers of deserted cities"), the narrator appears to witness the destruction of the world.

"The Crawling Chaos" is redeemed only by its apocalyptic conclusion; for up to this point it has merely been a confused, verbose, histrionic dream-phantasy without focus or direction. Various points in the account carry the implication that the narrator is not actually dreaming or hallucinating but envisioning the far future of the world—a point made very clumsily by his conceiving of Rudyard Kipling as an "ancient" author. But the final passage is impressive on its own as a set piece, and is the sole connexion with the prose-poem that inspired the story's title. It is manifest that the entire tale was written by Lovecraft; as with "The Green Meadow," Jackson's only contribution must have been the dream whose imagery probably laid the foundations for the opening segments.

Once again Alfred Galpin reviewed the story favourably: ". . . I recall the attention of amateurs to the most important story recently published, 'The Crawling Chaos,' pseudonymously written by Winifred Virginia Jackson and H. P. Lovecraft. The narrative power, vivid imagination and poetic merit of this story are such as to elevate it above certain minor but aggravating faults of organisation and composition."[24] But not everyone was so enthusiastic. Lovecraft, in the "News Notes" for the January 1922 *United Amateur,* takes a certain glee in reporting the hostile reaction of one

amateur: ". . . during a denunciation of Lovecraftian stories [he] remarked, 'We can hardly go them. That Crawling Chaos is the limit. His attempts at Poe-esque tales will hand him—'" I do not know who this person is; Lovecraft merely identifies him, archly, as a "prominent politician with a distaste for the 'wild, weird tales' of H. P. Lovecraft."

Another tale written late in 1920—"The Picture in the House," written on December 12—is a very different proposition, and can rank as one of Lovecraft's pioneering stories of his early period. Its opening is very celebrated:

> Searchers after horror haunt strange, far places. For them are the catacombs of Ptolemais, and the carven mausolea of the nightmare countries. They climb to the moonlit towers of ruined Rhine castles, and falter down black cobwebbed steps beneath the scattered stones of forgotten cities in Asia. The haunted wood and the desolate mountain are their shrines, and they linger around the sinister monoliths on uninhabited islands. But the true epicure in the terrible, to whom a new thrill of unutterable ghastliness is the chief end and justification of existence, esteems most of all the ancient, lonely farmhouses of backwoods New England; for there the dark elements of strength, solitude, grotesqueness, and ignorance combine to form the perfection of the hideous.

Resounding as this is, it is generally overlooked that the narrator of the tale is no "epicure in the terrible" but merely an individual "in quest of certain genealogical data" who, travelling on bicycle, finds himself forced to take shelter at a decrepit farmhouse in the "Miskatonic Valley." When his knocks fail to summon an occupant, he believes it to be uninhabited and enters; but shortly the occupant, who had been asleep upstairs, makes an appearance.

> In the doorway stood a person of such singular appearance that I should have exclaimed aloud but for the restraints of good breeding. Old, white-bearded, and ragged, my host possessed a countenance and physique which inspired equal wonder and respect. His height could not have been less than six feet, and despite a general air of age and poverty he was stout and powerful in proportion. His face, almost hidden by a long beard which grew high on the cheeks, seemed abnormally ruddy and

> less wrinkled than one might expect; while over a high forehead fell a shock of white hair little thinned by the years. His eyes, though a trifle bloodshot, seemed inexplicably keen and burning. But for his horrible unkemptness the man would have been as distinguished as he was impressive.

The old man, seemingly a harmless backwoods farmer speaking in "an extreme form of Yankee dialect I had thought long extinct" ("'Ketched in the rain, be ye?'"), notes that his visitor had been examining a very old book on a bookcase, Pigafetta's *Regnum Congo,* "printed in Frankfort in 1598." This book continually turns, as if from frequent consultation, to plate XII, depicting "in gruesome detail a butcher's shop of the cannibal Anziques." The old man avers that he obtained the book from a sailor from Salem years ago, and as he continues babbling on in his increasingly loathsome patois he begins to make vile confessions of the effects of that plate: "'Killin' sheep was kinder more fun—but d'ye know, 'twan't quite *satisfyin'*. Queer haow a *cravin'* gits a holt on ye— As ye love the Almighty, young man, don't tell nobody, but I swar ter Gawd thet picter begun ta make me *hungry fer victuals I couldn't raise nor buy*—'" At that point a drop of liquid falls from the ceiling directly upon the plate. The narrator thinks it is rain, but "rain is not red." "I did not shriek or move, but merely shut my eyes." But a thunderbolt destroys the house and its tenant, although somehow the narrator survives.

There are so many points of interest in this compact, 3000-word story that it is difficult to know where to begin. This tale is celebrated for its introduction of the second, and perhaps most famous, city in Lovecraft's mythical New England—Arkham. Here it is clearly implied that the city is in the Miskatonic Valley, since the narrator "found myself upon an apparently abandoned road which I had chosen as the shortest cut to Arkham." It is not entirely clear where the mythical Miskatonic Valley itself is, but there is no compelling reason to assume (as Will Murray did in a provocative series of articles whose conclusions were substantially refuted by Robert D. Marten) that Arkham was not at this time a fictional analogue of the coastal town Salem, as Lovecraft frequently declared in later years. Murray's conjecture that the name Arkham was founded on the central Massachusetts town of Oakham also seems implausible—no less implausible than Marten's conjecture that the source of the name was an archaic Rhode Island town, Arkwright.[25] Until further evidence emerges,

we shall have to remain in the dark as to the precise origin of the name Arkham.

More significant is the fact that "The Picture in the House" is the first of Lovecraft's tales not merely to utilise an authentic New England setting but to draw upon what Lovecraft himself clearly felt to be the weird heritage of New England history, specifically the history of Massachusetts. As a Rhode Islander (but one who spent his very early years in Massachusetts and would probably have become a resident of the state had his father not taken ill), Lovecraft could look upon the "Puritan theocracy" of Massachusetts with suitably abstract horror and even a certain condescension; in the story he somewhat flamboyantly paints the lurking hideousness of the repressed colonial tradition:

> In such houses have dwelt generations of strange people, whose like the world has never seen. Seized with a gloomy and fanatical belief which exiled them from their kind, their ancestors sought the wilderness for freedom. There the scions of a conquering race indeed flourished free from the restrictions of their fellows, but cowered in an appalling slavery to the dismal phantasms of their own minds. Divorced from the enlightenment of civilisation, the strength of these Puritans turned into singular channels; and in their isolation, morbid self-repression, and struggle for life with relentless Nature, there came to them dark furtive traits from the prehistoric depths of their cold Northern heritage. By necessity practical and by philosophy stern, these folk were not beautiful in their sins. Erring as all mortals must, they were forced by their rigid code to seek concealment above all else; so that they came to use less and less taste in what they concealed.

These sentiments, expressed perhaps less hyperbolically, would remain with Lovecraft throughout his life. It becomes clear from this passage that the principal cause, in the atheist Lovecraft's mind, of the Puritans' ills was their religion. In discussing "The Picture in the House" with Robert E. Howard in 1930, he remarks: "Bunch together a group of people deliberately chosen for strong religious feelings, and you have a practical guarantee of dark morbidities expressed in crime, perversion, and insanity."[26] In a much earlier discussion of Puritans with Frank Belknap Long, in 1923, Lovecraft says (again a trifle hyperbolically and

pretentiously): “Verily, the Puritans were the only really effective diabolists and decadents the world has known; because they hated life and scorned the platitude that it is worth living.”[27]

Regardless of the validity of Lovecraft’s interpretation of early New England, this gesture of imbuing horror in seventeenth-century Puritan Massachusetts was of vital significance to his entire aesthetic of horror. Maurice Lévy remarks correctly that the American fantastic tradition up to Lovecraft’s time “lacks unity and depth”; he goes on to contrast European and American weird writing:

> To create an adequate atmosphere for a fantastic tale, we must have old houses and medieval castles that materialize in space the hallucinatory presence of the past, the houses we can find *authentically* only on the old continent. We need an old, legendary foundation, a national heritage of obscure beliefs and antiquated superstitions. We need millennia of history, the progressive accumulation in the racial memory of prodigious facts and innumerable crimes, so that the necessary sublimations and schematizations can take place. Above all, we need a history that has become myth, so that the fantastic tale can be born through the irruption of myth into history.[28]

Lévy maintains that Lovecraft created a sort of ersatz historical tradition by drawing upon the colonial past—the only “ancient” historical period (aside from the Indians) that this country can acknowledge. We may not have millennia of history, but even two or three hundred years—in a land that was changing rapidly even in Lovecraft’s day, to say nothing of our own—is sufficient for those “sublimations and schematizations” to take place. Lovecraft did not know it yet, but he had found the locus of horror on his doorstep. At the moment, he was regarding the colonial past as a “pure other”—something of which he, the eighteenth-century Rhode Island rationalist, had no part; it was only after his New York period that he would come to internalise it, recognise it as his own, and treat the land, its people, and its history with both sympathy and horror.

Returning specifically to “The Picture in the House,” it is not merely the case that, as Colin Wilson remarks, the tale presents “a nearly convincing sketch of sadism.”[29] It is true that the old man is a sadist of sorts, or at least an individual who is psychologically very disturbed; but the tale is not simply a *conte cruel* but actually supernatural in its implication that the old

man has lived far beyond his normal span by resorting to cannibalism. He himself states, "'They say meat makes blood an' flesh, an' gives ye new life, so I wondered ef 'twudn't make a man live longer an' longer ef 'twas *more the same*—'" That sailor from Salem who gave the old man the *Regnum Congo* is someone whose name the narrator recognises only from the Revolutionary period.

The *Regnum Congo* by Filippo Pigafetta (1533–1604) is of some interest in revealing an embarrassing lapse on Lovecraft's part. The book was, to be sure, printed in Frankfort in 1598; but its first edition was not in Latin, as that edition was, but in Italian (*Relatione del reame di Congo et della cironvicine contrade,* Rome, 1591); it was subsequently translated into English (1597) and German (1597) prior to its Latin translation; and it was in the German (as well as the Latin) translation that the plates by the brothers De Bry were introduced. Lovecraft appears not to have known any of this because he derived his information on the book entirely from Thomas Henry Huxley's essay "On the History of the Man-like Apes," in *Man's Place in Nature and Other Anthropological Essays* (1894). Lovecraft must have read this book prior to 1915, for it was from another essay in it —"On the Methods and Results of Ethnology"—that he derived the term "Xanthochroi" mentioned in "The Crime of the Century" (*Conservative,* April 1915). What is more, Lovecraft never consulted the De Bry plates themselves but only some rather inaccurate engravings of them printed in an appendix to Huxley's essay. As a result, Lovecraft makes errors in describing the plates; for example, the old man thinks the natives drawn in them are anomalously white-looking, when in fact this is merely the result of a poor rendering of the plates by Huxley's illustrator. All this is only of interest because it reveals Lovecraft on occasion to have used exactly that "second-hand erudition"[30] for which he later chided Poe.[31]

Finally, what are we to make of the *deus ex machina* conclusion? Lovecraft has been roundly abused for it, but the convenient stroke of lightning seems clearly derived from Poe's "The Fall of the House of Usher," where a bolt of lightning causes the "once barely-discernible fissure" in the house to crack open so that the entire house collapses. This may or may not be much of an excuse, but Lovecraft at least has an impressive precedent for what is really a relatively insignificant aspect of a tale that otherwise offers tremendous richness of theme and conception.

The use of the backwoods New England dialect by the old man calls for some comment. The fact that the narrator believes it to have been "long extinct" is another clue that the old man must be hundreds of years old. But where, in fact, did Lovecraft derive this peculiar dialect, which he will use at considerable length in some later stories, notably "The Dunwich Horror" (1928) and "The Shadow over Innsmouth" (1931)? Lovecraft admits in 1929 that the dialect did not exist in the New England of his day:

> As for Yankee farmers—oddly enough, I haven't noticed that the majority talk any differently from myself; so that I've never regarded them as a separate class to whom one must use a special dialect. If I were to say, "Mornin', Zeke, haow ye be?" to anybody along the road during my numerous summer walks, I fancy I'd receive an icy stare in return—or perhaps a puzzled inquiry as to what theatrical troupe I had wandered out of![32]

We will, however, see that in the summer of 1928 he found some reason to modify this judgment. But if this dialect was not (or was no longer) in existence, where did Lovecraft come by it? Jason C. Eckhardt has, with much plausibility, suggested a literary source: James Russell Lowell's *Biglow Papers* (1848–62).[33] Lovecraft owned Lowell's poems and was clearly familiar with much of his work; he notes reading the *Biglow Papers* as early as August 1916.[34] In the introduction to the first series of *Biglow Papers* Lowell specifically addresses the issue of the "Yankee dialect" found in the poems, claiming that many of the dialectical variants derive from the usage of the earliest colonists. He presents a dialectical rendition of a celebrated passage:

> Neow is the winta uv eour discontent
> Med glorious summa by this sun o' Yock,
> An' all the cleouds thet leowered upon eour heouse
> In the deep buzzum o' the oshin buried . . .

These are not exactly the *same* dialectical variants found in Lovecraft, but they are close enough to make one suspect that he has chosen to make his own variations from them. Eckhardt goes on to note astutely that Lovecraft's awareness that this dialect was already regarded by Lowell as archaic further augments the sense of the preternatural age of the old man in "The Picture in the House."

"The Picture in the House" appeared, with "Idealism and Materialism—a Reflection," in the "July 1919" *National Amateur,* which I have already

noted was actually issued only in the summer of 1921. It remains one of Lovecraft's most reprinted stories. Later reprints derive from a revised version in which Lovecraft made some interesting changes. In particular, he subtilised his description of the old man. At the conclusion of his initial portrayal Lovecraft had added, in the *National Amateur* text: "On a beard which might have been patriarchal were unsightly stains, some of them disgustingly suggestive of blood." This would have been a catastrophic telegraphing of the final "punch," and Lovecraft wisely omitted it for subsequent appearances.

It may be worth covering some of the other stories that presumably date to 1920 before turning to those written in the early part of 1921. One of the most interesting items—interesting precisely because we do not have it—is "Life and Death." This is supposedly one of Lovecraft's few "lost" stories, and it has haunted generations of Lovecraftians by its very absence. The pieces of the puzzle are widely scattered, and we must begin with entry 27 in the commonplace book:

Life & Death

> Death—its desolation & horror—bleak spaces—sea-bottom —dead cities. But Life—the greater horror! Vast unheard-of reptiles & leviathans—hideous beasts of prehistoric jungle—rank slimy vegetation—evil instincts of primal man—Life is more horrible than death.

This entry is in a group of entries dated to 1919; but, as I have already indicated, the dates Lovecraft affixed to his commonplace book years after jotting the entries down are highly unreliable, and I have my doubts whether any part of the commonplace book dates to even late 1919.

The query we must face is whether the story was written at all; there are, of course, dozens of entries in the commonplace book that were not used, although few are of such detail and length. Aside from the very next entry (for "The Cats of Ulthar"), this is the only one that has a title affixed to it; but the entry for "The Cats of Ulthar" has been indicated as "used," whereas there is no such indication for "Life and Death." Was this story, then, actually written and published in an amateur journal?

The first piece of evidence that suggests that it was comes from the first Lovecraft bibliography, compiled by Francis T. Laney and William H. Evans and published in 1943. In the listing of stories there is the citation:

"LIFE AND DEATH. (c. 1920) (D) Unpublished?" (D indicates a disavowed story.) The bibliography was compiled with the assistance of many of Lovecraft's later associates, in particular R. H. Barlow, who may have been told of "Life and Death" in person by Lovecraft (it is not mentioned in the correspondence to Barlow). Barlow wrote to August Derleth in 1944: "As for the sort [of] pieces you ask about, I can be of no help . . . THE STREET I saw once, I think and LIFE AND DEATH."[35]

The most important piece of evidence, however, comes from George T. Wetzel, whose bibliography of 1955 was a landmark of Lovecraft scholarship. In an essay, "The Research of a Biblio" (1955), in which he told of his bibliographic work, Wetzel wrote:

> While in Philadelphia [in 1946] I showed some of my initial compilation to Oswald Train . . . The Lovecraft story "Life and Death" was found by me at this time, but the amateur paper and date were on one page of my biblio which vanished while I was visiting at Train's home. I attempted to re-locate this item on a later trip, but I feel I've not back-tracked enough. Suffice it to say that it exists in those files and may one day be uncovered by some one more blessed with funds for research expenses than myself.[36]

Wetzel's sanguine prediction has proved vain. His initial research on amateur appearances of Lovecraft was done at the Fossil Collection of Amateur Journalism, at that time in the Franklin Institute in Philadelphia. Later it was transferred to the Fales Library of New York University, where I consulted it in 1978; but by then the collection had been vandalised by someone who had cut out many Lovecraft appearances with a razor blade. I have looked through nearly every major repository of amateur journals in this country but have failed to turn up this item.

It is, I suppose, futile to speculate on the content of "Life and Death," but my feeling is that there really is no such work, and that researchers have confused it with an actual prose-poem that may date to this time, "Ex Oblivione." This work was published in the *United Amateur* for March 1921 under the "Ward Phillips" pseudonym, one of the few instances in which a story appeared under a pseudonym. This unusually bitter and cheerless fantasy ("When the last days were upon me, and the ugly trifles of existence began to drive me to madness like the small drops of water that torturers let fall ceaselessly upon one spot of their victim's body, I loved the

irradiate refuge of sleep") tells of a man who seeks various exotic worlds in dream as an antidote to the grinding prosiness of daily life; later, when "the days of waking became less and less bearable from their greyness and sameness," he begins to take drugs to augment his nightly visions. In the "dream-city of Zakarion" he comes upon a papyrus containing the thoughts of the dream-sages who once dwelt there, he reads of a "high wall pierced by a little bronze gate" which may or may not be the entrance to untold wonders. Realising that "no new horror can be more terrible than the daily torture of the commonplace," the narrator takes more and more drugs in an effort to find this gate. Finally he seems to come upon it—the door is ajar.

> But as the gate swung wider and the sorcery of drug and dream pushed me through, I knew that all sights and glories were at an end; for in that new realm was neither land nor sea, but only the white void of unpeopled and illimitable space. So, happier than I had ever dared hoped to be, I dissolved again into that native infinity of crystal oblivion from which the daemon Life had called me for one brief and desolate hour.

As can be seen, this is a precise instantiation of the "Life is more horrible than death" trope that "Life and Death" is supposed to have embodied. It is true that the prose-poem does not include much of the imagery found in the corresponding commonplace book entry (there is nothing about "vast unheard-of reptiles & leviathans" and so forth), but we have seen that many elements of an entry that inspired a tale do not actually make it into the finished story. "Ex Oblivione" also constitutes a parable on that poignant utterance in *In Defence of Dagon* (spoken there, however, with an awareness of the bountiful pleasures of life): "There is nothing better than oblivion, since in oblivion there is no wish unfulfilled." In its union of a powerful philosophical message with rhythmic, musical, yet relatively restrained diction it may be intrinsically the best of Lovecraft's four surviving prose-poems, although "Nyarlathotep" is perhaps a more central work in Lovecraft's *oeuvre.*

Then there is the oddity called "Sweet Ermengarde; or, The Heart of a Country Girl" (by "Percy Simple"). This is the only work of fiction by Lovecraft which we cannot date at all precisely. The manuscript of the story is written on stationery from the Edwin E. Phillips Refrigeration Company, which was a going concern around 1910 or so, but since the story alludes to the passage of the 18th Amendment it must clearly date to 1919 or later.

Since Phillips (Lovecraft's uncle) died on November 14, 1918, perhaps the stationery came into Lovecraft's possession shortly thereafter; but it is by no means certain that Lovecraft wrote the story at that time. From the handwriting the tale could date to as late as 1922 or 1923. The pseudonym may be a clue: Lovecraft's one surviving letter to Myrta Alice Little (May 17, 1921) includes a brief parody of a Sunday-school story entitled "George's Sacrifice: By Percy Vacuum, age 8." "Sweet Ermengarde," too, is very clearly a parody, this time on the Horatio Alger stories (which Lovecraft, conceivably, may have read in dime-novel form at the turn of the century). The tale makes me think of a curious P.S. to Lovecraft's letter in the *Argosy* for March 1914: "I have a design of writing a novel for the entertainment of those readers who complain that they cannot secure enough of Fred Jackson's work. It is to be entitled: 'The Primal Passion, or The Heart of 'Rastus Washington.'" It is, in fact, possible that Jackson is a subsidiary (or even primary) target for attack here. Jackson's "The First Law" has exactly the sort of implausibility of plot and sentimentality of action that is so hilariously lampooned in "Sweet Ermengarde." This story is, in short, a little masterpiece of comic deflation. In basic plot and even in tone and texture it oddly anticipates Nathanael West's *A Cool Million* (1936).

Ermengarde Stubbs is the "beauteous blonde daughter" of Hiram Stubbs, a "poor but honest farmer-bootlegger of Hogton, Vt." She admits to being sixteen years old, and "branded as mendacious all reports to the effect that she was thirty." She is pursued by two lovers who wish to marry her: 'Squire Hardman, who is "very rich and elderly" and, moreover, has a mortgage on Ermengarde's home; and Jack Manly, a childhood friend who is too bashful to declare his love, but who unfortunately has no money. Jack, however, manages to find the gumption to propose, and Ermengarde accepts with alacrity. Hardman observes this and in fury demands Ermengarde's hand from her father lest he foreclose on the mortgage (he has, incidentally, found that the Stubbses' land has gold buried in it). Jack, learning of the matter, vows to go to the city and make his fortune and save the farm.

Hardman, however, takes no chances and has two disreputable accomplices kidnap Ermengarde and hole her up in a hovel under the charge of Mother Maria, "a hideous old hag." But as Hardman ponders the matter, he wonders why he is even bothering with the girl, when all he

really wants is the farm and its buried gold. He lets Ermengarde go and continues to threaten to foreclose. Meanwhile a band of hunters strays on to the Stubbses' property and one of them, Algernon Reginald Jones, finds the gold; not revealing it to his companions or to the Stubbses, Algernon feigns snakebite and goes to the farm, where he instantly falls in love with Ermengarde and wins her over with his sophisticated city ways. She elopes with Algernon a week later, but on the train to the city a piece of paper falls out of Algernon's pocket; picking it up, she finds to her horror that it is a love letter from another woman. She pushes Algernon out the window.

Unfortunately, Ermengarde fails to take Algernon's wallet, so she has no money when she reaches the city. She spends a week on park benches and in bread-lines; she tries to look up Jack Manly, but can't find him. One day she finds a purse; finding that it has not much money in it, she decides to return it to its owner, a Mrs Van Itty. This aristocrat, amazed at the honesty of the "forlorn waif," takes Ermengarde under her wing. Later Mrs Van Itty hires a new chauffeur, and Ermengarde is startled to find that it is Algernon! "He had survived—this much was almost immediately evident." It turns out that he had married the woman who wrote the love letter, but that she had deserted him and run off with the milkman. Humbled, Algernon asks Ermengarde's forgiveness.

Ermengarde, now ensconced as a replacement for the daughter Mrs Van Itty lost many years ago, returns to the old farmstead and is about to buy off the mortgage from Hardman when Jack suddenly returns, bringing a wife, "the fair Bridget Goldstein," in tow. All this time Mrs Van Itty, sitting in the car, eyes Ermengarde's mother Hannah and finally shrieks: "You—you—Hannah Smith—I know you now! Twenty-eight years ago you were my baby Maude's nurse and stole her from the cradle!!" Then she realises that Ermengarde is in fact her long-lost daughter. But Ermengarde is now doing some pondering: "How could she get away with the sixteen-year-old stuff if she had been stolen twenty-eight years ago?" She, knowing of the gold on the Stubbses' farm, repudiates Mrs Van Itty and compels 'Squire Hardman's to foreclose on the mortgage and marry her lest she prosecute him for last year's kidnapping. "And the poor dub did."

The mere narration of this spectacularly convoluted and ridiculous plot (all told in 3000 words) clearly reveals the absurdity of the dime-novel sentimental romance being parodied here. Some of Lovecraft's humour is a bit sophomoric ("She was about 5 ft 5.33… in tall, weighed 115.47 lbs. on

her father's copy scales—also off them—and was adjudged most lovely by all the village swains who admired her father's farm and liked his liquid crops"), but on the other hand much of it is rather good. The portrayal of the stereotyped 'Squire Hardman is delightful—at one point he indulges "in his favourite pastime of gnashing his teeth and swishing his riding-crop." When Jack proposes to Ermengarde, she cries, "Jack—my angel—at last—I mean, this is so unexpected and quite unprecedented!" The conclusion of this tender love-scene can only be quoted:

> "Ermengarde, me love!"
> "Jack—my precious!"
> "My darling!"
> "My own!"
> "My Gawd!"

When Jack vows to the Stubbses that "You shall have the old home still," the narrator is forced to add in brackets: "[adverb, not noun—although Jack was by no means out of sympathy with Stubbs' kind of farm produce]."

It is a shame that Lovecraft never made an effort to prepare this outrageous little squib for publication, but perhaps he considered it a *jeu d'esprit* whose purpose had been served by the mere writing of it. With "A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" and "Ibid," "Sweet Ermengarde" forms a trilogy of Lovecraft's comic gems.

"The Nameless City" appears to be the first story of 1921, written in mid- to late January; in a letter to Frank Belknap Long of January 26, 1921, he reports it as "just finished and typed."[37] This tale, for which Lovecraft always retained an inexplicable fondness, is really one of the worst of his purely weird efforts—a fact Lovecraft should have suspected from its repeated rejections in professional markets over the years. After its predictable appearance in the amateur press (*Wolverine,* November 1921) it was finally published in the semi-professional fanzine *Fanciful Tales* for Fall 1936, a few months before Lovecraft's death. Like many of his early works, it is more important for what it suggests and foretells than for what it actually contains.

A somewhat overexcited archaeologist seeks to explore the nameless city, which lies "remote in the desert of Araby." It was of this place that Abdul Alhazred "the mad poet" dreamed the night before he wrote his "unexplainable couplet":

> That is not dead which can eternal lie,
> And in strange aeons even death may die.

The narrator burrows into the sand-choked apertures that lead into some of the larger structures of the city. He is disturbed by the odd proportions of a temple into which he crawls, for the ceiling is very low to the ground and the man can scarcely kneel upright in it. He descends an immense staircase that leads down into the bowels of the earth, where he finds a large but still very low-built hall with odd cases lining the walls and frescoes covering the walls and ceiling. The creatures in the cases are very peculiar:

> They were of the reptile kind, with body lines suggesting sometimes the crocodile, sometimes the seal, but more often nothing of which either the naturalist or the palaeontologist ever heard. In size they approximated a small man, and their fore legs bore delicate and evidently flexible feet curiously like human hands and fingers. But strangest of all were their heads, which presented a contour violating all known biological principles. To nothing can such things be well compared—in one flash I thought of comparisons as varied as the cat, the bulldog, the mythic Satyr, and the human being.

In spite of the fact that it is these anomalous entities who are portrayed in the frescoes, the narrator manages to convince himself that they are mere totem-animals for the human builders of the nameless city and that the historical tableaux depicted in the frescoes are metaphors for the actual (human) history of the place. But this comforting illusion is shattered when the narrator perceives a gust of cold wind emerging from the end of the hallway, where a great bronze gate lies open and from which a strange phosphorescence is emerging, and then sees in the luminous abyss the entities themselves rushing in a stream before him. Somehow he manages to escape and tell his story.

The absurdities and implausibilities in this tale, along with its wildly overheated prose, give it a very low place in the Lovecraft canon. Where, for example, did the creatures who built the nameless city come from? There are no indications that they came from another planet; but if they are simply early denizens of the earth, how did they come to possess their physical shape? Their curiously *composite* nature seems to rule out any evolutionary pattern known to earth's creatures. How do they continue to exist in the depths of the earth? The narrator must also be very foolish not

to realise at once that the entities were the ones who built the city. Lovecraft does not seem to have thought out the details of this story at all carefully.

Lovecraft admitted that it was largely inspired by a dream, which in turn was triggered by a suggestive phrase in Dunsany's *Book of Wonder,* "the unreverberate blackness of the abyss" (the last line of "The Probable Adventure of the Three Literary Men"). Lovecraft goes on to say that he began the story twice but was dissatisfied, and only "hit the right atmosphere the third time."[38] A slightly more concrete source, perhaps, is the entry on "Arabia" in the 9th edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* which Lovecraft owned. He copied down part of this entry in his commonplace book (entry 47), especially the part about "Irem, the City of Pillars . . . supposed to have been erected by Shedad, the latest despot of Ad, in the regions of Hudramut, and which yet, after the annihilation of its tenants, remains entire, so Arabs say, invisible to ordinary eyes, but occasionally, and at rare intervals, revealed to some heaven-favoured traveller." Lovecraft mentions Irem casually in his tale, suggesting that the nameless city was even older than this antediluvian place. The Irem connexion presumably accounts for the citation of the "unexplainable couplet" ("That is not dead which can eternal lie, / And with strange aeons even death may die") attributed to Abdul Alhazred, who here makes his first appearance in Lovecraft. A later entry in the commonplace book (59) is clearly an account of the dream that inspired the story: "Man in strange subterranean chamber—seeks to force door of bronze—overwhelmed by influx of waters."

The remarkable thing about "The Nameless City" is that Lovecraft took its basic scenario—a scientist investigating a millennia-abandoned city and deciphering historical bas-reliefs on the walls—and made it not only plausible but immensely powerful in a tale written exactly ten years later, *At the Mountains of Madness.* In that short novel we even find the same sort of desperate rationalising as the protagonists seek to convince themselves that the entities (extraterrestrials this time) depicted on the bas-reliefs are not the actual builders of the city but are somehow meant as symbols for human beings; but this feature too is handled more cogently and with greater psychological acuity.

"The Moon-Bog," as we have seen, was written to order for a St Patrick's Day gathering of amateurs in Boston, and it betrays its thinness of inspiration by being a very conventional supernatural revenge story. Denys

Barry, who comes from America to reclaim an ancestral estate in Kilderry, Ireland, decides to empty the bog on his hand: "For all his love of Ireland, America had not left him untouched, and he hated the beautiful wasted space where peat might be cut and land opened up." The peasants refuse to help him in this work for fear of disturbing the spirits of the bog; but Barry calls in outside workers and the project continues apace, even though the workers confess suffering from strange and troublesome dreams. One night the narrator, Barry's friend, awakes and hears a piping in the distance: "wild, weird airs that made me think of some dance of fauns on distant Maenalus" (a curious nod to "The Tree"). Then he sees the labourers dancing as if under some form of hypnosis, along with "strange airy beings in white, half indeterminate in nature, but suggesting pale wistful naiads from the haunted fountains of the bog." But the next morning the workers seem to remember nothing of the night's events. The next night things reach a climax: the piping is heard again, and the narrator again sees the "white-clad bog-wraiths" drifting toward the deeper waters of the bog, followed by the mesmerised labourers. Then a shaft of moonlight appears, and "upward along that pallid path my fevered fancy pictured a thin shadow slowly writhing; a vague contorted shadow struggling as if drawn by unseen daemons." It is Denys Barry, who is spirited off and never seen again.

The elementary nature of the moral in "The Moon-Bog"—the spirits of Nature avenging or warding off desecration by human beings—renders the story unusually trite and commonplace, even though some of the language is evocative and relatively subdued. Strangely enough, twelve years after Lovecraft wrote this story, Lord Dunsany would write a novel based very largely on the same conception—*The Curse of the Wise Woman* (1933)—but with infinitely greater richness of texture and complexity of theme. It need hardly be said that Dunsany could not possibly have been influenced by Lovecraft's harmless little story, whose only appearance prior to his death was in *Weird Tales* for June 1926.

The last story I wish to consider here is "The Outsider." This tale has been seen as prototypical of Lovecraft's work, and in some ways even emblematic of his entire life and thought; but I think there are reasons to doubt such assertions. As one of Lovecraft's most reprinted stories, its plot is very well known. A strange individual who has spent his entire life virtually alone except for some aged person who seems to take care of him decides to forsake the ancient castle in which he finds himself and seek the

light by climbing the tallest tower of the edifice. With great effort he manages to ascend the tower and experiences "the purest ecstasy I have ever known: for shining tranquilly through an ornate grating of iron . . . was the radiant full moon, which I had never before seen save in dreams and in vague visions I dared not call memories."

But horror follows this spectacle, for he now observes that he is not at some lofty height but has merely reached *"the solid ground."* Stunned by this revelation, he walks dazedly through a wooded park where a "venerable ivied castle" stands. This castle is "maddeningly familiar, yet full of perplexing strangeness to me"; but he detects the sights and sounds of joyous revelry within. He steps through a window of the castle to join the merry band, but at that instant "there occurred one of the most terrifying demonstrations I had ever conceived": the partygoers flee madly from some hideous sight, and the protagonist appears to be alone with the monster who has seemingly driven the crowd away in frenzy. He thinks he sees this creature "beyond the golden-arched doorway leading to another and somewhat similar room," and finally does catch a clear glimpse of it:

> I cannot even hint what it was like, for it was a compound of all that is unclean, uncanny, unwelcome, abnormal, and detestable. It was the ghoulish shade of decay, antiquity, and desolation; the putrid, dripping eidolon of unwholesome revelation; the awful baring of that which the merciful earth should always hide. God knows it was not of this world—or no longer of this world—yet to my horror I saw in its eaten-away and bone-revealing outlines a leering, abhorrent travesty on the human shape; and in its mouldy, disintegrating apparel an unspeakable quality that chilled me even more.

He seeks to escape the monster, but inadvertently falls forward instead of retreating; and at that instant he touches *"the rotting outstretched paw of the monster beneath the golden arch."* It is only then that he realises that that arch contains *"a cold and unyielding surface of polished glass."*

On the level of plot, "The Outsider" makes little sense. What exactly is the nature of the "castle" in which the Outsider dwells? If it is truly underground, how is it that the creature spends time in the "endless forest" surrounding it? Taking these and other implausibilities—if the story is to be held to rigid standards of realism—into account, and noting the epigraph from Keats's *Eve of St Agnes* ("That night the Baron dreamt of many a woe;

/ And all his warrior-guests . . . / Were long be-nightmared"), William Fulwiler has suggested that "The Outsider" is merely the account of a dream.[39] There is something to be said for this, and this explanation would certainly account for the seemingly "irrational" elements in the tale; but the story does offer some further complexities of plot. From the various remarks by the Outsider regarding his puzzlement at the present shape of the ivied castle he enters (as well as a path "where only occasional ruins bespoke the ancient presence of a forgotten road"), it becomes evident that the Outsider is some long-dead ancestor of the current occupants of the castle. His emergence in the topmost tower of his underground castle places him in a room containing "vast shelves of marble, bearing odious oblong boxes of disturbing size": clearly the mausoleum of the castle on the surface. Of course, even if the Outsider is some centuried ancestor, there is no explanation for how he has managed to survive—or rise from the dead—after all this time.

The conclusion of the story—in which the Outsider touches the mirror and realises that the monster is himself—can scarcely be a surprise to any reader, even though Lovecraft deftly puts off the actual stating of the revelation and allows the Outsider to tell of his actions following it: he suffers a merciful lapse of memory, finds himself unable to return to his underground castle, and now "ride[s] with the mocking and friendly ghouls on the night-wind, and play[s] by day amongst the catacombs of Nephren-Ka in the sealed and unknown valley of Hadoth by the Nile." But that climactic image of touching the glass has correctly been seen to be representative of a significant number of Lovecraft's fictional works. Donald R. Burleson writes:

> The rotting finger that touches the glass sets ringing a vibration that will endure, will continue to resonate in varying pitches and intensities, throughout the whole experience of Lovecraft's fiction. . . . The grand theme of the soul-shattering consequences of self-knowledge is the one defining notion into which Lovecraft's other themes feed in confluence, rivers running to a common sea.[40]

Many commentators have attempted to speculate on a literary influence for this image. Colin Wilson[41] has suggested both Poe's classic story of a double, "William Wilson," and also Wilde's fairy tale "The Birthday of the Infanta," in which a twelve-year-old princess is initially described as "the

most graceful of all and the most tastefully attired" but proves to be "a monster, the most grotesque monster he had ever beheld. Not properly shaped as all other people were, but hunchbacked, and crooked-limbed, with huge lolling head and a mane of black hair."[42] George T. Wetzel[43] has put forth Hawthorne's curious sketch, "Fragments from the Journal of a Solitary Man," in which a man has the following revelation in a dream: "'I passed not one step farther, but threw my eyes on a looking-glass which stood deep within the nearest shop. At first glimpse of my own figure I awoke, with a horrible sensation of self-terror and self-loathing. No wonder that the affrighted city fled! I had been promenading Broadway in my shroud!'" Then, of course, there is a celebrated passage in *Frankenstein:*

> "I had admired the perfect forms of my cottagers—their grace, beauty, and delicate complexions; but how was I terrified when I viewed myself in a transparent pool! At first I started back, unable to believe that it was indeed I who was reflected in the mirror; and when I became fully convinced that I was in reality the monster that I am, I was filled with the bitterest sensations of despondence and moritification."[44]

This influence seems more likely in view of the fact that the earlier scene, where the Outsider disturbs the party by stepping through the window, may also have been derived from *Frankenstein:* "'One of the best of [the cottages] I entered, but I had hardly placed my foot within the door before the children shrieked, and one of the women fainted.'"[45] A less distinguished predecessor is a story in the *All-Story Weekly* for September 2, 1916, "The Man in the Mirror" by Lillian B. Hunt, in which again the protagonist only learns of his own hideousness by looking in a mirror.

Preeminently, however, the story is a homage to Poe. August Derleth frequently bestowed upon "The Outsider" the dubious honour of claiming that it would pass as a lost tale of Poe's if presented as such; but Lovecraft's own later judgment, expressed in a 1931 letter to J. Vernon Shea, seems more accurate:

> Others . . . agree with you in liking "The Outsider", but I can't say that I share this opinion. To my mind this tale—written a decade ago—is too glibly *mechanical* in its climactic effect, & almost comic in the bombastic pomposity of its language. As I re-read it, I can hardly understand how I could have let myself be tangled up in such baroque & windy rhetoric as recently as

> ten years ago. It represents my literal though unconscious imitation of Poe at its very height.[46]

Lovecraft perhaps spoke better than he knew, for the opening of the tale is a startlingly close pastiche of the first four paragraphs of Poe's "Berenice"; and yet, Lovecraft probably is correct in speaking of the Poe influence as unconscious at this stage.

In 1934 Lovecraft provided an interesting sidelight into the composition of the story. As recollected by R. H. Barlow, Lovecraft stated: "'The Outsider' [is] a series of climaxes—originally intended to cease with the graveyard episode; then he wondered what would happen if people would see the ghoul; and so included the second climax; finally he decided to have the Thing see itself!"[47] There are those who think Lovecraft had too many "climaxes" here; among them is W. Paul Cook:

> When I first saw *The Outsider* it was in the typed manuscript, and at the bottom of a page were the words: "My fingers touched the rotting outstretched paw of the monster beneath the golden arch." There was the revelation; there was the story; and I thought that was the end of the story. I was struck with admiration at the artistic restraint of the work, and started a note of praise to Lovecraft when, lifting the sheet, I found there was more of it. Restraint disappeared and the author enjoyed himself throwing words around. All the rest was just verbiage, words, padding, anti-climax. I wrote him then that the story should have ended there. And I still think so.[48]

This somewhat jaundiced account perhaps has some merit as a criticism of the lack of a genuine "surprise" ending in the story; but, Cook's comments notwithstanding, if the story really had ended where Cook wished it to, there would have remained unacceptable ambiguity as to the actual revelation. Cook, however, frequently expressed dissatisfaction with Lovecraft's later stories, much preferring his early, nebulous, purely supernatural short narratives.

"The Outsider" will always remain a popular favourite, and indeed it is not entirely undeserving of its celebrity: its rhetoric, if a little overdone, is effective in its flamboyant, Asianic way; the climax, while predictable, is structurally clever in being placed at the very last line of the tale; and the figure of the Outsider is distinctive (although here again the influence of *Frankenstein* may perhaps be evident) in that it inspires both horror and

pathos. The tale was not published in an amateur journal: it was scheduled to appear in the first (and, as it proved, only) issue of Cook's *Recluse,*[49] but Lovecraft persuaded Cook to release it and allow it to be published in *Weird Tales* for April 1926, where it created a sensation.

It is, however, now time to examine the question of the story's autobiographical character. The opening sentence reads: "Unhappy is he to whom the memories of childhood bring only fear and sadness." One of the Outsider's final remarks—"I know always that I am an outsider; a stranger in this century and among those who are still men"—has been taken as prototypical of Lovecraft's entire life, the life of an "eccentric recluse" who wished himself intellectually, aesthetically, and spiritually in the rational haven of the eighteenth century. I think we have already learnt enough about Lovecraft to know that such an interpretation greatly overstates the case: without denying his emphatic and sincere fondness, and even to some degree nostalgia, for the eighteenth century, he was also very much a part of his time, and was an "outsider" only in the sense that most writers and intellectuals find a gulf between themselves and the commonality of citizens. Lovecraft's childhood was by no means unhappy, and he frequently looked back upon it as idyllic, carefree, and full of pleasurable intellectual stimulation and the close friendship of at least a small band of peers.

Is, then, "The Outsider" a symbol for Lovecraft's own self-image, particularly the image of one who always thought himself ugly and whose mother told at least one individual about her son's "hideous" face? I find this interpretation rather superficial, and it would have the effect of rendering the story maudlin and self-pitying. The plausibility of this view would perhaps be augmented if the exact date of writing of "The Outsider" could be ascertained—especially if it could be established that it was written on or around the time of Susie's death on May 24, 1921. But Lovecraft never discusses the story in any letters of 1921–22 that I have seen, never supplies an exact date of writing for the tale on the relatively few later instances where he talks about it, and in his various lists of stories it usually appears sandwiched between "The Moon-Bog" (March) and "The Other Gods" (August 14). I think it is more profitable not to read too much autobiographical significance in "The Outsider": its large number of apparent literary influences seem to make it more an experiment in pastiche than some deeply felt expression of psychological wounds.

It is difficult to characterise the non-Dunsanian stories of this period. Lovecraft was still experimenting in different tones, styles, moods, and themes in an effort to find out what might work the best. Once again we should note the relative absence of "cosmic" stories in this period, in spite of Lovecraft's manifest declaration (in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays) of his scorn for the "humanocentric" pose. Only the prose-poem "Nylarlathotep" can be considered genuinely cosmic. Still, other themes that would be greatly elaborated in later tales find their origins here: miscegenation ("Arthur Jermyn"); alien civilisations dwelling unknown in obscure corners of the world ("The Temple," "The Nameless City"); the horror latent in old New England ("The Picture in the House"); the transcending of the limitations of sense-perception ("From Beyond").

Perhaps the fact that so many of these tales were inspired by dreams is the most important thing about them. Lovecraft's letters of 1920 are full of accounts of incredibly bizarre dreams, some of which served as the nuclei for tales written years later. It would be a facile and inexpert psychoanalysis to maintain that Lovecraft's worries over Susie's health were the principal cause of these disturbances in his subconscious; as a matter of fact, it appears that Susie's health had, after a fashion, stabilised and that there was no suspicion of any impending collapse until only a few days before her death. Suffice it to say that the dozen or more stories Lovecraft wrote in 1920—more than he wrote in any other year of his life—point to a definitive shift in his aesthetic horizons. Lovecraft still did not know it yet, but he had come upon his life-work.

13. The High Tide of My Life

(1921–1922)

Sarah Susan Phillips Lovecraft died on May 24, 1921, at Butler Hospital, where she had been confined since March 13, 1919. Her death, however, was not a result of her nervous breakdown but rather of a gall bladder operation from which she did not recover. Winfield Townley Scott, who had access to Susie's now destroyed medical records, tells the story laconically: "She underwent a gall-bladder operation which was thought to be successful. Five days later her nurse noted that the patient expressed a wish to die because 'I will only live to suffer.' She died the next day . . ."[1] Her death certificate gives the cause of death as "cholecystitis cholangitis," or inflammation of the gall bladder and the bile ducts.

Lovecraft's reaction was pretty much what one might expect:

> I am answering letters promptly these last few days, because I lack the will and energy to do anything heavier. The death of my mother on May 24 gave me an extreme nervous shock, and I find concentration and continuous endeavour quite impossible. I am, of course, supremely unemotional; and do not weep or indulge in any of the lugubrious demonstrations of the vulgar—but the psychological effect of so vast and unexpected a disaster is none the less considerable, and I cannot sleep much, or labour with any particular spirit or success.[2]

Later on in this letter, written nine days after the event, Lovecraft adds disturbingly:

> For two years she had wished for little else [than death]—just as I myself wish for oblivion. Like me, she was an agnostic with no belief in immortality . . . For my part, I do not think I shall wait for a natural death; since there is no longer any particular reason why I should exist. During my mother's life-time I was aware that voluntary euthanasia on my part would cause her distress, but it is now possible for me to regulate the term of my existence with the assurance that my end would cause no one more than a passing annoyance . . .

Evidently his aunts did not figure much in this equation. But it was a passing phase, and three days later he was urging Frank Long: "The only

real tranquillity—the true Epicurean ataraxia,—comes from the assumption of the objective, external point of view whereby we stand off as spectators and watch ourselves without caring much; a triumph of mind over feeling."[3]

What, in the end, are we to make of Lovecraft's relations with his mother? He writes after her death: "My mother was, in all probability, the only person who thoroughly understood me, with the possible exception of Alfred Galpin."[4] There is too little evidence to judge whether this was truly the case, but it is of some interest that Lovecraft *thought* it to be so. Susie Lovecraft has not fared well at the hands of Lovecraft's biographers, and her flaws are readily discernible: she was overly possessive, clearly neurotic, failed (as Lovecraft himself and the rest of his family did) to foresee the need for training her son in some sort of remunerative occupation, and psychologically damaged Lovecraft at least to the point of declaring him physically hideous and perhaps in other ways that are now irrecoverable. It is telling that in one of the two surviving letters to her—February 24, 1921, telling of his trip to Boston—Lovecraft cannot help remarking on his appearance: "The new suit, worn for the first time, was a work of art, and made me appear as nearly respectable as my face permits—and even the face was almost at its best."

But the verdict on Susie should not be entirely negative. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr correctly remarks: "Lovecraft's finely honed aesthetic sensibilities and seasoned artistic judgment undoubtedly owed something to the early influence of his mother. . . . The wonderful home which Susie and her young son shared with her parents and sisters at 454 Angell Street during the 1890s must have been truly a delight . . ."[5] Her indulging Lovecraft in many of his early whims—the *Arabian Nights,* chemistry, astronomy—may seem excessive, but it allowed Lovecraft fully to develop these intellectual and aesthetic interests, and so to lay the groundwork for both the intellect and the creativity he displayed in later years.

The critical issue is whether Lovecraft knew and acknowledged—at least to himself—the ways in which his mother affected him, both positively and adversely. In letters both early and late he speaks of her with nothing but praise and respect. In many letters of the 1930s, when recalling his early years, he makes statements such as: "My health improved vastly and rapidly, though without any ascertainable cause, about 1920–21";[6] which gives—or appears to give—little hint that Susie's death might

actually have been a liberating factor of some kind. But was Lovecraft really so lacking in self-awareness on this issue? I have already cited Sonia's noting that Lovecraft once admitted to her that Susie's influence upon him had been "devastating." Another very interesting piece of evidence comes not from a letter or an essay, or from a memoir by a friend, but from a story.

"The Thing on the Doorstep" (1933) tells the tale of Edward Derby, who was an only child and "had organic weaknesses which startled his doting parents and caused them to keep him closely chained to their side. He was never allowed out without his nurse, and seldom had a chance to play unconstrainedly with other children." Is Lovecraft recollecting that summer vacation in Dudley, Massachusetts, in 1892, when Susie told Ella Sweeney to stoop when walking with Howard so as not to pull his arm out of its socket?

Lovecraft continues in the story: "Edward's mother died when he was thirty-four, and for months he was incapacitated by some odd psychological malady. His father took him to Europe, however, and he managed to pull out of his trouble without visible effects. Afterward he seemed to feel a sort of grotesque exhilaration, as if of partial escape from some unseen bondage." That last sentence is all the evidence we need: it makes it abundantly clear that Lovecraft knew (by 1933, at any rate) that Susie's death had in a sense made the rest of his own life possible. It is telling that, in his litany of "near-breakdowns" beginning in 1898, he lists no breakdown of 1921.

In the short term Lovecraft did the most sensible thing he could have done—continue the normal course of his existence. He may not, like Derby, have travelled to Europe, but there was always New Hampshire. He had naturally thought of cancelling Myrta Alice Little's invitation to visit her in Westville on June 8–9, but his aunts—Lillian Clark had by now moved into 598 Angell Street to accompany her sister Annie Emeline Phillips Gamwell, who had already been there since March 1919—urged him to go, and he did so. On the morning of the 9th both Little and Lovecraft went to visit Tryout Smith in Haverhill, Massachusetts, and Lovecraft found himself captivated by the old man (he was sixty-nine) with a young boy's heart. His *Tryout* was one of the most pathetically misprinted journals in the history of amateur journalism, but it emerged almost like clockwork month after month for thirty-four years (300 issues were produced from 1914 to 1948).

Smith, adhering in old age to the "boy printer" ideal of the NAPA, set the type himself in a shed behind his house at 408 Groveland Street. Lovecraft pays unaffected tribute to him:

> . . . I like him immeasurably, for he is the most unspoiled, simple, contented, artless, and altogether delightful small boy of his age that I have ever beheld. He never grew up, but lives on without any of the dull complexities of adulthood—active, busy with his little press, stamp album, cat, and woodland excursions—in short, a perfect old Damoetas whom Theocritus would have loved to delineate.[7]

Lovecraft wrote up the trip charmingly in "The Haverhill Convention" (*Tryout,* July 1921). He had already penned a whimsical poem to Smith, "Tryout's Lament for the Vanished Spider" (*Tryout,* January 1920), and when Smith's cat died on November 15, 1921, he produced a touching elegy, "Sir Thomas Tryout" (*Tryout,* December 1921):

> There's many an eye that fills tonight,
> And many a pensive strain
> That sounds for him who stole from sight
> In the November rain.

Lovecraft returned to New Hampshire in August. On the 25th he visited Tryout Smith in Haverhill; on the 26th he visited the museum of the Haverhill Historical Society with Myrta Alice Little and her mother, who were acquainted with the director and so were allowed into the museum even though it was not open to the public on that day; he returned home the next day.[8]

Need we make anything of these two visits to Little in quick succession? She seems virtually to drop out of the picture after this date, except for one further visit Lovecraft paid her in the summer of 1922. Even if, as I doubt, there was some romantic—or even the nascent nucleus of a romantic—involvement here, it was clearly terminated, perhaps for reasons that will soon become apparent.

August was, indeed, a travelling month for Lovecraft. On the 8th Harold Bateman Munroe summoned Lovecraft out of the bath at 9.30 A.M. to revisit their Great Meadow Country Clubhouse in Rehoboth. Munroe, now a businessman as well as a deputy sheriff, had some calls to make in nearby Taunton, and wanted to spend the rest of the day reminiscing with his boyhood pal about their long-lost youth. (An unnamed woman

accompanied them on this trip, but Lovecraft remarks that she was properly quiet and unobtrusive.) For Lovecraft, ever ready to return in spirit to his idyllic youth, the moment was full of emotion, especially since the clubhouse was found to be nearly intact in spite of its fifteen-year-long abandonment:

> There had been no decay, nor even vandalism. Tables stood about as of yore, pictures we knew still adorned the walls with unbroken glass. Not an inch of tar paper was ripped off, & in the cement hearth we found still embedded the small pebbles we stamped in when it was new & wet—pebbles arranged to form the initials G.M.C.C. Nothing was lacking—save the fire, the ambition, the ebulliency of youth in ourselves; & that can never be replaced. Thus two stolid middle-aged men caught for a moment a vision of the aureate & iridescent past—caught it, & sighed for days that are no more.[9]

Twelve days before his thirty-first birthday Lovecraft is declaring himself "middle-aged." But for an afternoon he could revel in the past. There was even a plan (suggested by Harold) to revive the G.M.C.C., and holding monthly meetings with Ronald Upham and Stuart Coleman, who were still in Providence. But Lovecraft correctly declared a week and a half later that "H B M has no doubt forgotten all about it now. He does not miss youth as I do." It was probably just as well: the worst thing that could have happened to Lovecraft, so soon after his mother's death, was a return to childhood and its irresponsibility: he needed to move on and engage himself in the world.

On August 17 Lovecraft made another trip to Boston to meet amateurs. An increasing tension between the UAPA and the NAPA created some awkwardness. Lovecraft was forced to meet his UAPA group on Wednesday the 17th rather than take in the Hub Club meeting (consisting mostly of Nationalites) on the next day. In addition, Alice Hamlet wanted Lovecraft to visit her in Dorchester, since she hated the Nationalites so much that she did not even wish to risk meeting any of them at the scheduled UAPA meeting. But Lovecraft missed the 11.00 A.M. train to Boston, and had to catch the 12.25 instead; he arrived in Dorchester at 1.44, but by this time Hamlet and her party had already left to visit an invalid friend in a nursing home in Quincy. "As a matter of prosaic fact, my loss of this trip caused me no very profound grief; but the Dorcastrians seemed amazingly disappointed. . . . Miss H. appeared to view the exploded

schedule as little short of calamitous."[10] One gets the impression that Alice Hamlet was more fond of Lovecraft than he was of her.

Moving on to Boston, Lovecraft went to the Curry School of Expression on Huntington Avenue near Copley Square, where he met for the first time Anne Tillery Renshaw, a longtime amateur whom he had supported for various official posts almost from the time he entered amateurdom. She had come from Washington, D.C., where she was head of the English department at Research University. Lovecraft pays her a mixed tribute: "In aspect stout & homely, she is in conversation pleasant, cultivated, & intelligent; with all the force of mind & speech becoming a philosopher, poet, & professor of English, drama, & public speaking." Lovecraft and Renshaw argued philosophy most of the afternoon. In the evening the main gathering occurred at Lilian McMullen's home at 53 Morton Street in Newton Centre, where Winifred Jackson, Edith Miniter, and others congregated; but Lovecraft was diverted all evening by a grey kitten brought by one of the amateurs. Once again he refused to sing, although both McMullen and Renshaw gave renditions. At one point Renshaw made a suggestion that Lovecraft write a textbook on English—an irony given that Renshaw herself would write a wretched textbook on speech which Lovecraft would revise at the end of his life. As usual, Lovecraft caught a late train and returned home at 1.20 A.M.

Meanwhile events in the amateur world were heating up. Lovecraft had easily been elected Official Editor for the 1920–21 and 1921–22 terms, and his "literary" faction was in both political and editorial control of the association: Alfred Galpin was President in 1920–21 (serving, anomalously, also as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism), and Ida C. Haughton of Columbus, Ohio, was President in 1921–22; other associates of Lovecraft such as Paul J. Campbell, Frank Belknap Long, and Alice Hamlet all held official positions. All this puts the lie to the statement Lovecraft had made as early as August 1919: "But I am gradually getting through with amateur journalism. What I have done for it has brought me only slights and insults, except from an intensely appreciated few to whom I shall ever be fervently grateful. I shall always cling to the Kleicomolo and Gallomo circle, and shall always be glad to help any writer who wishes me to do so; but with the organisation I am done."[11] But the picture was by no means rosy. Lovecraft had considerable disagreements with President

Haughton, and years later he claimed that she "ran the very gamut of abuse & positive insult—culminating even in an aspersion on my stewardship of the United funds!"[12] (This latter point refers to Lovecraft's running of the Official Organ Fund, a record of dues or donations by members for the publishing of the *United Amateur*.) It does not appear as if this dispute got into print, at least from Haughton's side; but Lovecraft did indeed respond by writing "Medusa: A Portrait" in late 1921. This is the most vicious and unrestrained of his poetic satires, and in it he mercilessly flays Haughton for her large bulk and her supposed foulness of temper:

> Soak'd in her noxious venom, puff'd with gall,
> Like some fat toad see dull MEDUSA sprawl;
> Foul with her spleen, repugnant to the sight,
> She crudely whines amidst eternal night.

When the poem was published in the *Tryout* for December 1921, it lacked the prefatory letter to Haughton (found in the typescript); even so, I suspect that the object of attack was evident to most of the amateur public.

There was trouble on other fronts also. I have already told how such individuals as William J. Dowdell and Leo Fritter had expressed resentment against what they believed to be Lovecraft's high-handed running of the *United Amateur,* filling it with material by his own colleagues. In the *Woodbee* for January 1922 Fritter continued his attacks, writing: "The Official Organ is the medium of all the members, and as such should become a clearing-house for all shades of literary endeavor within the Association."[13] Lovecraft spat back in his "Editorial" in the January 1922 *United Amateur:*

> Our constitution does not define the functions of *The United Amateur* beyond making imperative the publication of certain official documents. The rest is left to an unwritten combination of tradition and editorial judgment. Any editor, once elected, is absolutely in control of the magazine aside from the essential official matter; his only external obligation being a tacit recognition of the prevailing objects of the Association.

He fended off complaints of high-handedness by declaring that the standards he was attempting to maintain were those established when the UAPA split into two factions in 1912—what he now uncharitably called "the departure of the chronically political element." He continued: "Prior to that time the Official Organ was mainly a bulletin of reports; not, as the

present agitators would imply, a repository for indiscriminate amateur writings. The standard developed since then is the creation of no one person, but a logical outgrowth of the rising calibre of a vital and progressive society." To seal the matter, Lovecraft declared that "this office has received *not so much as one complaint* as to policy" save from two "politicians," and that "throughout the present editor's service *not more than three manuscripts have been rejected.*" Those italics betray Lovecraft's impatience and irritation even more than the general tone of the editorial does.

But in this case Lovecraft was not to prevail. In the UAPA election in July 1922, the "literature" side lost out to its opponents. Howard R. Conover was President; Edward T. Mazurewicz was First Vice-President; Stella V. Kellerman was Second Vice-President; Edward Delbert Jones was Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism. None of these individuals was a close associate of Lovecraft. He himself lost to Fritter for Official Editor by a vote of 44–29. It was, no doubt, a staggering blow, and may have gone a long way in showing Lovecraft that this phase of his amateur career was coming to an end.

But the battle over the content of the *United Amateur* was not over. Anthony F. Moitoret—who had been both Official Editor (1919–20) and President (1920–21) of the NAPA—greeted the first issue of Fritter's *United Amateur* as follows:

> Official Editor Fritter makes an auspicious beginning with his first number of "The United Amateur," happily issued and mailed in the month for which it is dated. In his conception of an official organ that is just what the name implies—a compilation of current official business communications and notes which it is the right of every member to scan—the September "United Amateur" returns to the practice of former days before the Association's paper became the dumping ground for a hodge-podge of alleged literary material that could not possibly find publication elsewhere.[14]

That last stinger was clearly a jab at Lovecraft (as was the bit about the timeliness of Fritter's issue, as issues under Lovecraft's editorship were indeed perennially late); but since he was not on the official board and since his own *Conservative* was in abeyance, Lovecraft did not reply. He had regarded Moitoret with apprehension for some years. As early as 1916 he

had noted that Moitoret "is working against the best literary interests of the association";[15] and in 1919, in the midst of an election controversy, Lovecraft reports that Moitoret "expresses his determination to 'kill off' the 'highbrow' element if he can."[16]

But if Lovecraft did not respond, his colleagues did so. Horace L. Lawson, editor of the *Wolverine,* wrote hotly: "Mr. Moitoret resorted to absolute falsehood in his rancor against the previous administration when he termed Mr. Lovecraft's excellent volume a 'dumping ground for a hodge-podge of alleged literary material that could not possibly find publication elsewhere.' The utter absurdity of this charge must be apparent even to Mr. Lovecraft's bitterest enemies."[17] Paul J. Campbell wrote with unwonted sarcasm just prior to the 1922 election:

> In order to save the association from the High-Brows every member must have access to the Official Organ on equal terms without literary restrictions. The raw recruit and the hungry yearner after space must be "encouraged" by having their grammatical errors conspicuously displayed on the front page. No longer will they submit to the insult of being told to improve their style or seek original ideas! Down with the tyrrany [*sic*] of literary standards![18]

But Lovecraft had the last laugh. The new official board did manage to produce six issues of the *United Amateur,* but at the convention in late July 1923 Lovecraft's literary party was almost entirely voted back into office; incredibly enough, Sonia H. Greene was elected President even though she had not knowingly placed herself on the ballot.[19] This whole turn of events appeared to rile Fritter, Moitoret, and their colleagues, and they acted in an obstructionist manner toward the new official board; the Secretary-Treasurer, Alma B. Sanger, withheld funds and failed to answer letters,[20] so that no *United Amateur* could be printed until May 1924. Sometime in the fall of 1923 Sonia issued a mimeographed flyer, "To the Members of the United,"[21] pleading with the members to pull together by resuming activity, renewing memberships, and in general making some effort to rescue the UAPA from its moribund condition.

In his "Editorial" in the May 1924 *United Amateur* Lovecraft responded to the entire situation with surprising bitterness:

> Once more the United, well-nigh asphyxiated by the tender ministrations of those who sought to shield it from the rude winds of literature, commences the long and arduous climb "back to normalcy". One is tempted to dilate upon the theme of "I-told-you-so", and draw various salutary morals from the utter disintegration following the revolt against high standards; but in sober fact such gloating de luxe would be supremely futile. The situation teaches its own lesson, and we are not yet far enough out of the woods to indulge in leisurely exultation. The future is in our own hands, and the downfall of the anti-literati will avail us nothing unless we are ready to rebuild on the ruins of the edifice they demolished in 1922.

The UAPA was not, indeed, out of the woods; in fact, it was in its terminal decline. Realising the apathy that was overtaking the entire membership in the absence of regularly issued *United Amateurs,* Lovecraft in the editorial endorses, with reservations and modifications, the plan of James F. Morton (who had joined the UAPA for the first time in thirty-five years of amateurdom, serving as the Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism) for a partial consolidation of the three amateur associations (UAPA, UAPA of A, and NAPA): the UAPA of A would cover the western portions of the country, since it was still largely based in Seattle; the NAPA would represent "amateurdom's historical tradition and diverse activities social and political"; and the UAPA would continue in its advocacy of pure literature. It was a pipe dream, and one senses that Lovecraft knew it. No convention was held in 1924, and evidently the official board for that year was reelected by a mail vote; but that administration produced only one more issue (July 1925)—an issue remarkable for its complete dominance by members of Lovecraft's literary circle (Frank Belknap Long, Samuel Loveman, Clark Ashton Smith, and of course Lovecraft himself). This ended Lovecraft's official involvement with the UAPA. Although he strove valiantly to establish the next official board (Edgar J. Davis as President, Victor E. Bacon as Official Editor), it never really took off and, after one or two skimpy issues of the *United Amateur,* it died sometime in 1926.

Although Lovecraft had not served as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism since 1919, he continued to offer his views on the state of current amateur prose and verse. One of the most curious venues he chose

for this enterprise was a column entitled "The Vivisector," published under the pseudonym (or, more properly, house name) Zoilus in Horace L. Lawson's *Wolverine.* The authorship of the five "Vivisector" pieces (which appeared in the *Wolverine* for March 1921, June 1921, November 1921, March 1922, and Spring 1923) has long been a matter of doubt, but correspondence between Lovecraft and Lawson clarifies the matter. All the articles could certainly not have been written by the same hand, since the November 1921 piece states, "My 'Zoilian' colleague shows fine common-sense in the March number . . ." Who, then, were the authors of these articles?

That Lovecraft wrote at least some of them is confirmed by an undated letter (perhaps early 1921) from Lawson to Lovecraft: "As for your 'Zoilus' article, it reads about like a review of *The Cleveland Sun.*"[22] This seems to refer to the March 1921 article. In a letter dated March 20, 1921, Lawson writes: "May I have the next instalment of 'The Visisector' soon? I must start preparation for the May number immediately." The issue, of course, actually came out in June, and Lawson's letter clinches Lovecraft's authorship of the first two pieces. The third article—clearly not by Lovecraft—is, as mentioned earlier, a lengthy analysis of Lovecraft's own "Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family." Lawson writes to Lovecraft in an undated letter (c. Autumn 1921):

> I think that a vivisection of the "Wolverine" might interest its readers, but I fear that you would not do justice to your own work in it. How would it do to do the larger part of the work yourself, and let Galpin or Kleiner or someone else criticize your own stories? That would help to justify my statement in regard to the department in the June "W". However, this is merely a suggestion. You are the editor of the department, and so may do as you see fit in the matter.

This establishes that Lovecraft was a sort of informal "editor" of "The Vivisector" and had control of what material was published in the column. A later letter by Lawson to Lovecraft (September 19, 1921) clarifies the authorship of the November 1921 article:

> I enclose Galpin's review of *The Wolverine,* written at your request. He suggests in an accompanying letter, that it be changed to suit. It could never be run as it is, for we do not wish to have it in the form of a letter written by request; in several

> places it mentions you as the author of the previous criticisms; and we should keep it anonymous, don't you think? If you will be kind enough to make this over to your taste, and return it, I'll try to get to work on the issue.

As it happens, Lovecraft does not seem to have revised the article greatly; it begins: "An invitation to criticise the last two issues of *The Wolverine* gives one an excellent opportunity for evil-doing. . . ." Mentions of Lovecraft's authorship of the previous "Vivisector" columns have, however, been eliminated. This letter raises the question of who decided that the column should be anonymous, and why. Was it Lawson's idea? Perhaps Lovecraft's views on amateur affairs were by this time so well known that anything appearing under his name might be subject to violent rebuttal or dismissal by those who disagreed with him.

For the authorship of the last two articles no external evidence is available, but internal evidence points to Lovecraft. The article for March 1922 discusses the work of Lovecraft's fellow amateur poet Lilian Middleton and seems to be largely an extract or abridgement of an essay written on January 14, 1922 (unpublished during his lifetime), entitled "The Poetry of Lilian Middleton." The final article studies the poetry of Lovecraft's close friend Rheinhart Kleiner.

The house name Zoilus—taken from the fourth-century B.C.E. Greek critic who gained notoriety for severely criticising the Homeric poems—is not very apt, since the articles are not notably censorious; most of them are quite lavish in their praise of amateur work. The first discusses several amateur papers, heaping especial praise on, of all things, George Julian Houtain's *Zenith* for January 1921, which contains Houtain's writeup of the amateur gathering at 20 Webster Street in July of the previous year; the second article lauds the one and only issue of Galpin's *Philosopher* (December 1920). The contents of the remaining articles have already been noted. No one would want to read great significance into the "Zoilus" pieces, but they can be seen as the ultimate distillation of all the plodding work that Lovecraft did as Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism.

I have already noted the lengthy tirade entitled "Lucubrations Lovecraftian," published in the *United Co-operative* for April 1921. Its laborious and surprisingly bitter defence of the role of public criticism in amateurdom seems to be anomalously late, given that Lovecraft himself had ceased to be Chairman of the Department of Public Criticism in July 1919;

but he still cherished enough hope for this department (now manned successively by his own colleagues, Alfred Galpin and James F. Morton) that he did not wish attacks upon it to go unanswered. The political content of this article will be discussed later. The only remarkable thing about this piece, aside from its sharpness of tone, is how Lovecraft bibliographers could have overlooked it in spite of a title that transparently betrays its authorship.

Lovecraft was by no means aloof from the affairs of the NAPA. It is somewhat ironic that the only two national conventions he ever attended, in 1921 and 1930, were those of the NAPA, not the UAPA. The NAPA convention of 1921 was held on July 2–4 in Boston. Oddly enough, I have been unable to find any discussions of the event in Lovecraft's correspondence—perhaps because, in spite of his devotion to the UAPA, he and most of his colleagues were also members of the NAPA and attended the convention, so that there would be no need to rehash it afterwards in letters—but two documents are of some interest. The first is an apparently unpublished essay, "The Convention Banquet," giving an account of the NAPA banquet held at the Hotel Brunswick in Boston on July 4 at 8 P.M. Lovecraft tells of speeches given by James F. Morton, William J. Dowdell, Edward H. Cole, and—to culminate events—a tribute to W. Paul Cook, who in spite of his long and fruitful amateur career was attending his first actual convention and was given a silver loving-cup for his services to the cause. After Cook gave a brief and halting speech, the audience—rather in the manner of a crowd at a sporting event or a campaign rally—began chanting, "What's the matter with Cook? He's all right! Who's all right? W. Paul Cook!" A number of other speeches—by George Julian Houtain, Laurie A. Sawyer, Edith Miniter, and others—followed.

In this account Lovecraft passes very briefly over a speech he himself gave at the banquet, one that apparently directly followed the opening remarks by Toastmaster Willard O. Wylie. The speech survives under the title: "Within the Gates: By 'One Sent by Providence.'" Next to some of his humorous short stories, it is one of the wittiest of Lovecraft's prose performances. The title alludes to the fact of his unbending devotion to the UAPA—or, as he puts it in the speech, "the presence of a strictly United man in the midst of the National's Babylonish revelry"—and he goes on to cite a line about another gate "which appears in the celebrated epic of my

fellow-poet Dante"—"All hope abandon, ye who enter here." The speech is full of genial barbs directed at Houtain, Edith Miniter, and other amateurs, and concludes by apologising for the "long and sonorous intellectual silence" of the speech (it is less than 1000 words).

Clever as "Within the Gates" is, it is of importance merely for its existence: six weeks after his mother's death, Lovecraft is resolutely making efforts to resume the course of his life, to the point of attending his first national amateur convention and being able to exchange harmless banter with amateur associates. In "The Convention Banquet" Lovecraft modestly fails to give any indication of how his speech was received, but I have no doubt it went over very well.

One of the individuals who must have been in the audience was Sonia Haft Greene (1883–1972).[23] Sonia had been introduced to amateur journalism by James F. Morton; in an autobiography written in 1967 she claims to have known him since 1917.[24] She was one of a contingent of NAPA members from the New York area (among them Morton, Rheinhart Kleiner, and others) to go to the convention, and Kleiner later testified that he introduced her to Lovecraft at the event.[25] Very shortly thereafter Sonia became an ardent supporter of the amateur cause, not only joining the UAPA but contributing the unheard-of sum of $50.00 to the Official Organ Fund. In the "News Notes" for the September 1921 *United Amateur* Lovecraft acknowledges this contribution as an "example of amateur devotion and enthusiasm which should be heeded by all members as an inspiration to renewed activity." In private letters he is less restrained:

> *Some* liberality! Upon sending in her United application, and merely after having read a few stray papers and old official organs, Mme. Greene unsolicitedly and unexpectedly came across with a pledge of FIFTY (count 'em—50!) refulgent rubles—HALF A HUNDRED scintillant simoleons—for the Official Organ Fund. Ten of 'em cash down. Oh, boy! Is that the ideal amateur spirit? We'll notify the cosmos!![26]

It is a pity that we know so relatively little about the woman whom Lovecraft would marry less than three years later. She was born Sonia Haft Shafirkin on March 16, 1883, in Ichnya (near Kiev) in the Ukraine. Her father, Simyon Shafirkin, apparently died when she was a child. Her mother, Racille Haft, left Sonia with her brother in Liverpool—where Sonia received her first schooling—and herself came to America, where she

married Solomon H——— in 1892. Sonia joined her mother later that year. She married Samuel Seckendorff in 1899—she was not quite sixteen, her husband twenty-six. A son, born in 1900, died after three months, and a daughter, Florence, was born on March 19, 1902. Seckendorff, a Russian, later adopted the name Greene from a friend in Boston, John Greene.[27] In her memoir of Lovecraft, Sonia tells very little about this marriage; but Alfred Galpin provides an interesting sidelight:

> Her first marriage in Russia [*sic*] had been most unhappy, to a man of brutal character, and quarrels became bitter. "Let me tell you, Alfred, things have happened to me that never, *never* happened before to *any living creature on earth!"* In one of their quarrels—the last?—"I walked to the window," which looked down several stories of the street, "and I said, 'Georgi Fedorovitch, *if you take one step forward, I shall hurl myself from this window!'"*[28]

I do not know what the name "Georgi Federovitch" is supposed to signify; perhaps this was a misrecollection on Galpin's part. Samuel Greene himself died in 1916, apparently by his own hand.

Sonia had taken some extension courses at Columbia University and had secured what she called "a highly paid executive position with a fashionable women's wear establishment in Fifth Avenue,"[29] with a salary of $10,000 a year—probably at least five to ten times as much as Lovecraft ever made in any given year of his entire career. This establishment is Ferle Heller's, which had two shops, one at 36 West 57th Street and the other at 9 East 46th Street; Sonia, whose specialty was hats, apparently worked at the former shop, since in her late autobiography she states that the establishment was "a few doors west of Fifth Avenue."[30] She resided at 259 Parkside Avenue in the then fashionable Flatbush section of Brooklyn.

Lovecraft supplies an effusive biographical account of her in the "News Notes" for the September 1921 *United Amateur,* an account surely derived from Sonia but with the lavish praise added by Lovecraft:

> Mrs. Greene is a Russian by birth, and descended from an illustrious line of artists and educators. Coming at an early age to the United States, she acquired a remarkable degree of erudition mainly through her own initiative; being now a master of several languages and deeply read in all the literatures and philosophies of modern Europe. Probably no more thorough

> student of Continental literature has ever held membership in amateurdom . . .

Kleiner describes her physically as "a very attractive woman of Junoesque proportions"; Galpin, while using exactly the same classical adjective, paints a more piquant portrait:

> When she dropped in on my reserved and bookish student life at Madison [in 1921 or 1922], I felt like an English sparrow transfixed by a cobra. Junoesque and commanding, with superb dark eyes and hair, she was too regal to be a Dostoievski character and seemed rather a heroine from some of the most martial pages of *War and Peace.* Proclaiming the glory of the free and enlightened human personality, she declared herself a person unique in depth and intensity of passion and urge me to Write, to Do, to Create.

Sonia was taken with Lovecraft from the start. Kleiner notes that "On our return to Brooklyn, she sought out all those who were friends of Lovecraft—myself among them—and spent most of the time talking about him." Sonia bluntly confesses that, when first meeting Lovecraft, "I admired his personality but frankly, at first, not his person"—a clear reference to Lovecraft's very plain looks (tall, gaunt frame, lantern jaw, possible problems with facial hair and skin) and perhaps also his stiff, formal conduct and (particularly annoying to one in the fashion industry) the archaic cut of his clothes.

But a correspondence promptly ensued. Lovecraft heard from Sonia as early as mid- to late July of 1921, by which time she had already read some of Lovecraft's stories that had appeared in the amateur press. Lovecraft professed to be taken with her, at least as an intellect: "Mrs. G. has an acute, receptive, and well-stored mind; but has yet to learn that impersonal point of view which weighs evidence irrespective of its palatability. She forms a welcome addition to the United's philosophical arena . . ."[31]

Up to this point, there does not seem any immediate attraction between the two except that of two intelligent and congenial minds. What of the fact, however, that (according to testimony cited earlier) Lovecraft and Winifred Virginia Jackson were considered to be having some sort of romance at this time? Lovecraft does not mention Jackson in his admittedly few discussions of the NAPA convention of 1921; and yet, it would have been remarkable (even given that she was a loyal UAPA member) for her not to have been

there. The last of Lovecraft's surviving letters to Jackson was written on June 7, 1921, two weeks after his mother's death, and contains the following interesting notes:

> It may indeed be said with justice that you have lost a friend in my mother, for although you never heard directly from her, she may be reckoned among the earliest and most enthusiastic admirers of your work. . . . In case it would interest you to know my mother's appearance during these latter days, I enclose a snap-shot—inadequate enough, I regret to say—which I took a year ago last autumn. Her appearance was as handsome as mine is homely, and her youthful pictures would form close rivals to your own in a contest for aesthetic supremacy.[32]

Kenneth W. Faig, Jr wryly remarks: "What Miss Jackson thought of a man who sent her a snapshot of his mother along with praises of her own beauty, history has not recorded . . ."[33] This letter is, however, still very formal, and I have trouble envisioning any real intimacy between the two. Perhaps, indeed, it was Susie who had been encouraging such a liaison (if that is what it was)—she would surely have approved of Winifred far more than she would have approved of Sonia had she lived to meet her. But we hear nothing of Winifred after this date.

It was Sonia who took things into her own hands. She visited Lovecraft in Providence on September 4–5, staying at the Crown Hotel. This is rather remarkable in itself—note that Winifred never seems to have made an effort to visit Lovecraft in his native city—and Sonia must have taken at least Monday the 5th off from work to make the trip. Lovecraft, as had already become customary with his out-of-town visitors, showed her the antiquarian treasures of Providence, took her back to 598, and introduced her to Aunt Lillian ("Both seemed delighted with each other, and my aunt has ever since been eloquent in her praise of Mme. G."[34]), and then Sonia invited both Lovecraft and Lillian to dinner at the Crown; but as the latter had already had a noon meal, Lillian declined and Lovecraft had only coffee and ice cream. Perhaps neither of them wished to give the impression of taking advantage of Sonia's generosity, since she manifestly wished to pick up the cheque for the meal. More antiquarian exploration followed, including the "cloistral hush" of the Brown University campus. The next day Sonia did manage to get Lovecraft and his aunt to come to the Crown for a noon meal, and presumably left on the long train ride back to New York (about

five hours) shortly thereafter. Lovecraft sang her praises: "Mme. G. is certainly a person of the most admirable qualities, whose generous and kindly cast of mind is by no means feigned, and whose intelligence and devotion to art merit the sincerest appreciation. The volatility incidental to a Continental and non-Aryan heritage should not blind the analytical observer to the solid work and genuine cultivation which underlie it."[35]

Prior to her departure Sonia strongly urged Lovecraft to participate in (as he termed it in this letter) a "convention of freaks and exotics" in New York, including Samuel Loveman and Alfred Galpin from Cleveland, Lovecraft from Providence, and such New Yorkers as Frank Belknap Long, Rheinhart Kleiner, and James F. Morton. Lovecraft was tempted by the prospect, but was doubtful whether the thing could come off.

In the meantime Sonia contributed to the amateur cause in other than monetary ways. In October 1921 the first of two issues of her *Rainbow* appeared; both would be forums for the poetic, fictional, essayistic, and polemical outpourings of Lovecraft and his inner circle of amateur colleagues. This first issue contains Galpin's substantial essay, "Nietzsche as a Practical Prophet," Lovecraft's "Nietzscheism and Realism," poems by Rheinhart Kleiner, Samuel Loveman, James F. Morton, and Sonia herself, and an editorial by Sonia, "Amateurdom and the Editor." Of her two poems, "Ode to Florence" is a rather sappy little ditty on her daughter; the other, "Mors Omnibus Communis (Written in a Hospital)," is of slightly greater interest. Lovecraft admitted to revising this poem for Sonia,[36] and it indeed features several characteristics of Lovecraft's own verse (including archaic elisions, absent from "Ode to Florence") and even some sentiments that seem much more his than hers:

> And as the dying groan and scream
> Beneath the futile knife,
> They pray their gods to end the dream;
> The noxious dream call'd life.

As for Lovecraft's own "Nietzscheism and Realism" (the first word unfortunately misprinted as "Nietscheism"), an editor's note announces: "This article is taken from correspondence not originally meant for publication." Lovecraft himself declared that the extracts were made from two letters to Sonia.[37] This compendium of philosophical *bon mots* comprises, sadly enough, almost the sole remnant (aside from a handful of postcards and one other item to be discussed later) of what must have been

an extensive and exceptionally fascinating correspondence—one which we would, from a biographical perspective, wish to have perhaps more than any other of Lovecraft's. But Sonia is clear on its fate: "I had a trunkful of his letters which he had written me throughout the years but before leaving New York for California [around 1935] I took them to a field and set a match to them."[38] No doubt Sonia, after all she had been through, was within her rights to do this, but all students of Lovecraft must groan when reading this terse utterance.

The first issue of the *Rainbow* was not only impressive in substance but exquisitely typeset and printed; it must have cost Sonia a significant sum. Kleiner hypothesises that it cost "a couple of hundred dollars."[39] It featured photographs of Alfred Galpin, Rheinhart Kleiner, Lovecraft (a rather wooden one, and one that appears already to show him becoming somewhat stout), and a very attractive one of Sonia wearing a fetching hat —of her own design, presumably. Lovecraft again praises the issue in the "News Notes" of the September 1921 *United Amateur:* "Beyond a doubt, the leading amateur publication of the season is Mrs. Sonia H. Greene's resplendent October *Rainbow.*"

Being a professional amateur was perfectly suited to Lovecraft's aristocratic temperament, but as time went on and the family inheritance increasingly dwindled, some thought must be paid to making money. He was surely aware of the principal reason for his mother's nervous collapse—her worries about the financial future of herself and her son. Perhaps it was this that finally led him to make some effort at earning an income. I have already noted his doing some revisory work around 1916 for some amateur writers, and his casual, flippant, and probably never realised plans to collaborate with Maurice W. Moe on hack fiction under the pseudonym Horace Philter Mocraft. Then David Van Bush appeared on the scene.

As noted earlier, Bush joined the UAPA in 1916. Lovecraft first mentions him, to my knowledge, in the summer of 1918. In speaking of helping a Mrs Arnold, an elderly woman friend of Alfred Galpin's, with some of her poetry, Lovecraft remarks: ". . . if she has any large amount of work to be prepared for outside publication, I shall be pleased to handle it as I handle Rev. David V. Bush's. It will not be such hard work, since Mrs. A. could not possibly perpetuate such utter & unqualified asininity as Rev.

D. V. B."[40] At this point it may be worth giving as complete a list of Bush's published books as is currently known, arranged chronologically:

Peace Poems and Sausages. [Webster, SD: Reporter & Farmer Print, 1915.]
"Pike's Peak or Bust"; or, The Possibilities of the Will. [Webster, SD: The Reporter & Farmer, 1916.]
Soul Poems and Love Lyrics. St Louis: David Van Bush, [1916].
What to Eat. St Louis: David Van Bush, [192-; rev. 1924].
Grit and Gumption. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1921.]
Inspirational Poems. St Louis: Hicks Almanac & Publishing Co., [1921].
Will Power and Success. [St Louis: Hicks Almanac & Publishing Co., 1921.]
Applied Psychology and Scientific Living. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1922; rev. 1923.]
The Law of Vibration and Its Use. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1922.]
Poems of Mastery and Love Verse. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1922.]
The Power of Visualization: How to Make Your Dreams Come True. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1922.]
Practical Psychology and Sex Life. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1922].
Affirmations and How to Use Them. Washington, DC: David Van Bush, [1923].
Character Analysis: How to Read People at Sight. With W. Waugh. [St Louis: David Van Bush, 1923; rev. 1925.]
Kinks in the Mind: How to Analyze Yourself and Others for Health. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1923].
The Universality of the Master Mind. Chicago, [1923].
What Is God? Dayton, OH: Otterbein Press, 1923.
Your Mind Power. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1923].
How to Put the Subconscious Mind to Work. Chicago: David Van Bush, 1924.
Psychology of Healing. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1924].

Psychology of Sex: How to Make Love and Marry. Chicago, [1924].
Spunk. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1924].
Concentration Made Effective and Easy. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1925].
The Influence of Suggestion: Auto-Suggestion. St Louis: David Van Bush, [1925?].
How to Hold "the Silence." Chicago: David Van Bush, [1925].
Relaxation Made Easy. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1925].
(Editor) *Practical Helps for Health, Poise, Power: Being Selected Articles from* Mind Power Plus. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1928].
The New Law, Radiation: How to Fulfill Your Desires. Chicago: David Van Bush, [1929].
If You Want to Be Rich. Mehoopany, PA, 1954.

Several things become evident from this list: first, most of Bush's works were self-published; second, Bush initially attempted to write poetry, but later switched to a sort of inspirational pop psychology that, at least from the number of books published, was relatively successful; third, most of his publications are in the 1922–25 period. It is a dreary possibility that Lovecraft revised the bulk of these books, both prose and verse; on a flyer for *Applied Psychology and Scientific Living* (1922), Lovecraft has written: "I did 2 or 3 chapters in this. His regular staff did the rest."[41] Since, however, he did not encounter Bush before 1917, it is mercifully unlikely that he revised the first three of Bush's books; of that first title Lovecraft notes, in discussing "Lord" Timothy Dexter's book, *A Pickle for the Knowing Ones,* "In 1796, stung by the ridicule of the publick, Dexter publish'd what was probably America's queerest book—Bush's *Peace Poems & Sausages* not excepted."[42]

The fact of the matter is that Bush became quite popular as a writer and lecturer on popular psychology. Lovecraft did not begin working in earnest for Bush until around 1920, and it is no accident that Bush's titles begin appearing at a rapid rate thereafter. Lovecraft regarded Bush with a mixture of irritation and lofty condescension. In speaking of headaches, he writes: "I have just emerged from a veritable 'killer', contracted by working half the forenoon and all the afternoon on Bush junk."[43] Lovecraft met him in the

summer of 1922, when Bush was lecturing in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and paints a vivid portrait of him:

> David V. Bush is a short, plump fellow of about forty-five, with a bland face, bald head, and very fair taste in attire. He is actually an immensely good sort—kindly, affable, winning, and smiling. Probably he has to be in order to induce people to let him live after they have read his verse. His keynote is a hearty good-fellowship, and I almost think he is rather sincere about it. His "success-in-life" stuff is no joke so far as finance is concerned; for with his present "psychological" mountebank outfit, his Theobaldised books of doggerel, and his newly-founded magazine, *Mind Power Plus,* he actually shovels in the coin at a very gratifying rate. Otherwise he'd never have a suite at the Copley-Plaza.[44]

The letter goes on at some length, touching on Bush's rural upbringing, his wife, his odd jobs (trick cyclist in a circus, "ham" actor, clergyman), and his "new gospel of dynamic psychology" ("which has all the virtues of 'New Thought' plus a saving vagueness which prevents its absurdity from being exposed before the credulous public amongst whom his missionary labours lie"). The above passage implies that Lovecraft only revised Bush's poetry volumes; but I suspect he must have had a hand with the psychology manuals as well. Sonia Davis suggests as much in her memoir:

> One man in particular . . . became a public lecturer on many scientific subjects of which he knew very little. When he wanted a quotation from the Bible or any other source, he would mention a word or two, not knowing what he really wanted, and H. P. would supply the necessary information. I listened to this man when he "lectured" on psychology in Los Angeles, to a large crowd, mostly women who were seeking healing for lost causes . . .[45]

Lovecraft, in his classified ad in the *New York Times* in 1924 (for which see Chapter 15), states that he "has for seven years handled all the *prose and verse* [my emphasis] of a leading American public speaker and editor," which can only be a reference to Bush. What is more, some of the psychology manuals contain bits of poetry, which Lovecraft no doubt revised. This poetry really is screamingly awful, and even Lovecraft could do little with it:

Grit Your Teeth

Are you bound down on every side,
With sorrow underneath?
Don't quail or stop—you'll land on top—
But you must grit your teeth!
You can do much in life, young man,
Though starting far beneath.
On top you'll rise, 'neath adverse skies,
If you but grit your teeth!
Are you the under dog today?
Dare not your sword to sheath,
But firmly stand—on top you'll land—
If you will grit your teeth!
Ay, set your jaw though gods and Fate
Their darkest ills bequeath;
You're bound to win if you but grin
And bravely grit your teeth![46]

This poem even employs that internal rhyme which we have seen in Lovecraft's own verse from as early as "The Poem of Ulysses."

The mention of *Mind Power Plus* is of some interest. The magazine is not listed in the *National Union Catalogue* or the *Union List of Serials,* and does not seem to be housed in any library in the world. Recently the issue of October 1923 was offered for sale, and it contains a wide array of articles, not merely on psychological subjects (e.g., "Psycho-Analysis: How It Is Done"), but a surprising number of pieces on religious or spiritualistic topics ("The Universal Consciousness of Christ," "Do the Spirits of the Dead Return?"), along with recommendations for a healthy diet and a concluding section of "laughs." It is not clear how typical this issue is. Otherwise, all we have is, among Lovecraft's papers, a one-sheet clipping from it containing a signed article by Lovecraft, "East and West Harvard Conservatism." This piece of frank promotion for Bush's New England lecture campaign is surely one of the most degrading things Lovecraft was ever forced to write—for no doubt Bush commissioned it and paid him for it. The article seeks to explain why the lecture tour was not quite as thunderously successful in New England as in other regions of the country, and Lovecraft trots out any number of hackneyed saws about the New England temperament (it "is uniquely non-receptive because of its extreme

unemotionalism . . . Spontaneous impulses have for so long been regarded as reprehensible weaknesses"); but he nonetheless concludes that "Dr. Bush . . . leaves behind him a gratifying number of new friends and active supporters." It is impossible to tell from the clipping which issue of *Mind Power Plus* this article appeared in, but it probably dates to the summer or fall of 1922; the remarkable thing is that Lovecraft felt it worth the bother of saving. He also admitted revising at least one issue of the magazine in 1923, adding charitably that the material (by various hands, evidently) is "not as technically bad as DVB's own drool."[47]

But Lovecraft could scarcely scorn David Van Bush: he was a regular customer, and he paid promptly and well. In 1917 Lovecraft was charging a rate of $1.00 for sixty lines of verse;[48] by 1920 Bush had agreed to pay $1.00 for forty-eight lines;[49] and by September 1922 Bush was paying $1.00 for every eight lines of verse revised.[50] This really is a pretty remarkable rate, given that the best Lovecraft could do with his own professionally published poetry was to get 25¢ per line for verse in *Weird Tales.* Lovecraft goes on to note: "I told him that only at this high price could I guarantee my own personal service—he doesn't like Morton's work so well, and asked me to do as much as possible myself." What this clearly means is that Lovecraft and Morton have teamed up to do revisory work. How formal was such an arrangement? It is difficult to tell, but consider the following ad that appeared in the amateur journal *L'Alouette* (edited by Charles A. A. Parker) in September 1924:

> THE CRAFTON SERVICE BUREAU offers the expert assistance of a group of highly trained and experienced specialists in the revision and typing of manuscripts of all kinds, prose or verse, at reasonable rates.
>
> THE BUREAU is also equipped with unusual facilities for all forms of research, having international affiliations of great importance. Its agents are in a position to prepare special articles on any topic at reasonable notice. It has a corps of able translators, and can offer the best of service in this department, covering all of the important classical and modern languages, including the international language Esperanto. It is also ready to prepare and supervise courses of home study or reading in any field, and to furnish expert confidential advice with reference to personal problems.

APPLICATIONS and INQUIRIES may be addressed to
either of the heads of THE BUREAU:
Howard P. Lovecraft,
598 ANGELL STREET, PROVIDENCE, R.I.
James F. Morton, Jr.,
211 WEST 138TH STREET, NEW YORK, N.Y.

Well, Lovecraft (or Morton) has certainly caught the spirit of advertising! I have no idea how much business this wildly exaggerated ad—suggesting that Lovecraft and Morton were "heads" of a non-existent bureau of editors, revisors, translators, and solvers of "personal problems"—brought in; Bush seemed to remain Lovecraft's chief revision client until well into the 1920s. It is likely that many of the "services" noted above were provided by Morton: it was he who was a former vice president of the Esperanto Association of North America, he who probably knew the modern languages better than Lovecraft, he who may have had better "international affiliations" than Lovecraft (unless this refers merely to amateur colleagues in Great Britain and the British Commonwealth). Even those "personal problems" were probably under Morton's jurisdiction, since among his published works was at least one collaborative treatise on sex morality. It is, in any case, difficult to imagine Lovecraft at this stage dealing with anyone's personal problems but his own.

There were other, possibly flippant or wistfully considered job prospects. At the beginning of 1920 Lovecraft became involved in correcting arithmetic papers for the Hughesdale Grammar School. Hughesdale is a village in the township of Johnston, now at the western edge of the Providence metropolitan area, and the school board had urgent need of a substitute mathematics teacher; as a result of family connexions, the job was offered to one of Lovecraft's aunts (probably Lillian), and Lovecraft himself was brought in to assist in the task. He did not actually go to the school, but merely corrected papers as they were brought back by his aunt.[51]

This job was of very short duration; but perhaps as a result of the experience, in early 1920 Lovecraft mused about the following:

> I have been wondering lately if I could ever manage, under the pressure of poverty, to accept a position in an *evening* school. A day school, of course, would be out of the question—

> for I can rarely keep up that long for two successive days. If fairly frequent absences could be pardoned, I might manage to keep up with the evening hours—but fancy my trying to hold in check a roomful of incipient gangsters! It seems as though every avenue of remunerative activity is closed to a total nervous wreck![52]

This is one of the most pathetic passages in Lovecraft's early letters. How he could have imagined that any night school would hire a high-school dropout who might be subject to "fairly frequent absences" is beyond fathoming. One wonders whether the remark about "incipient gangsters" is a recollection of the Providence Amateur Press Club, made up of seemingly quite normal, if lower-class, night-school students from North Providence.

In the midst of all this activity, both amateur and professional, Lovecraft finally embarked upon a career of professional fiction publication; inevitably, the opportunity was afforded him by amateur connexions. Around September 1921 George Julian Houtain (who had married the amateur writer E. Dorothy MacLaughlin) conceived the idea of launching a peppy and slightly off-colour humour magazine named *Home Brew.* As contributors he called upon his various amateur colleagues and managed to secure pieces from James F. Morton, Rheinhart Kleiner, and others for early issues. For some strange reason he wished Lovecraft to write a serial horror story, even though such a thing would seemingly clash with the general humorous tone of the magazine. He offered Lovecraft the princely sum of $5.00 per 2000-word instalment (¼¢ a word). "You can't make them too morbid," Lovecraft reports Houtain telling him.[53] The first issue of the magazine duly appeared in February 1922, selling for 25¢ and with a subtitle—"A Thirst Quencher for Lovers of Personal Liberty"—that was clearly a code for a certain element of sexual daring in both literary content and artwork. It was edited by "Missus and Mister George Julian Houtain." A blurb on the cover—"Do Dead Come to Life?"—refers to Lovecraft's serial, which he titled "Herbert West—Reanimator" but which Houtain ran under the title "Grewsome Tales" ("grewsome" was a legitimate variant of "gruesome" at this time). A later issue proclaims on the cover that the author of "Grewsome Tales" is "Better Than Edgar Allen [*sic*] Poe"!

Lovecraft takes a certain masochistic pleasure in complaining at being reduced to the level of a Grub Street hack. Over and over for the next

several months he emits whines like the following:

> In this enforced, laboured, and artificial sort of composition there is nothing of art or natural gracefulness; for of necessity there must be a superfluity of strainings and repetitions in order to make each history compleat. My sole inducement is the monetary reward, which is a guinea per tale . . .[54]
>
> Now this is manifestly inartistic. To write to order, to drag one figure through a series of artificial episodes, involves the violation of all that spontaneity and singleness of impression which should characterise short story work. It reduces the unhappy author from art to the commonplace level of mechanical and unimaginative hack-work. Nevertheless, when one needs the money one is not scrupulous—so I have accepted the job![55]

One gets the impression that Lovecraft actually got a kick out of this literary slumming.

In spite of the fact that the six episodes of "Herbert West—Reanimator" were clearly written over a long period—the first two were finished by early October;[56] the fourth was written in early March;[57] the sixth was finished no later than mid-June, and perhaps earlier[58]—the tale does maintain unity of a sort, and Lovecraft seems to have conceived it as a single entity from the beginning: in the final episode all the imperfectly resurrected corpses raised by Herbert West come back to despatch him hideously. In other ways the story builds up a certain cumulative power and suspense, and it is by no means Lovecraft's poorest fictional work. The structural weaknesses necessitated by the serial format are obvious and unavoidable: the need to recapitulate the plot of the foregoing episodes at the beginning of each new one, and the need for a horrific climax at the end of each episode. But, in fact, one wonders whether the plot summaries were in fact necessary: why did Lovecraft not have Houtain supply synopses as headnotes to each successive story? There are in fact headnotes to each segment, but they are wholly fatuous puffs or teasers written by Houtain to spur reader interest. Lovecraft appears to have learnt better in his second *Home Brew* serial, "The Lurking Fear," where he must have instructed Houtain to provide just such synopses to free him from the burden of doing so.

"Herbert West—Reanimator" is narrated in the first person by an unnamed friend and colleague of Dr Herbert West; both he and West attended the Miskatonic University Medical School in Arkham and later went on to experience various adventures as practising physicians. It was in medical school that West derived his peculiar theories about the possibility of reanimating the dead:

> His views . . . hinged on the essentially mechanistic nature of life; and concerned means for operating the organic machinery of mankind by calculated chemical action after the failure of natural processes. . . . Holding with Haeckel that all life is a chemical and physical process, and that the so-called "soul" is a myth, my friend believed that artificial reanimation of the dead can depend only on the condition of the tissues; and that unless actual decomposition has set in, a corpse fully equipped with organs may with suitable measures be set going again in the peculiar fashion known as life.

It is unlikely that even the most astute readers of *Home Brew* expected a mention of Ernst Haeckel in a story of this kind. The amusing thing, of course, is that the above actually expresses Lovecraft's own philosophical view, as noted in *In Defence of Dagon* and elsewhere; what is still more amusing is that the narrator later admits that he still "held vague instinctive remnants of the primitive faith of my forefathers." Clearly Lovecraft is having a little fun both at his own philosophy and at the naive beliefs of the average citizen as to the existence of the soul.

The six episodes show West producing more and more hideous instances of reanimation. In the first, West injects a serum in a corpse, but it seems to produce no results; the two doctors bury the corpse in the potter's field, only to learn later that it came to life after all. In the second, West impishly decides to resurrect Dr Allan Halsey, who as head of the medical school had vigorously opposed West's experiments and had died in the typhoid epidemic that raged through Arkham. The creature is caught and locked up in Sefton Asylum. In the third, West and the narrator have set up practice in the small Massachusetts town of Bolton, and attempt to resurrect the body of a black man—an amateur boxer named Buck Robinson, "The Harlem Smoke"—but seem to find that the serum "prepared from experience with white specimens only" will not work on black corpses; later they learn otherwise. In the fourth episode the narrator, returning from

a vacation with his parents in Illinois, finds West in a state of unusual excitement. He has designed an embalming fluid that will preserve a corpse in a state of freshness indefinitely, and claims that a travelling salesman who had come to visit West had died unexpectedly and would therefore serve as a perfect specimen because of the freshness of the corpse. When it is reanimated, the narrator finds that West's account of the matter is perhaps not wholly accurate. The fifth episode takes us to the horrors of the Great War, where West and the narrator have enlisted in a Canadian regiment in 1915. West now seeks to put into practice still more eccentric views on the reanimation of the dead, and does so in a loathsome manner. The sixth episode finds the two doctors in Boston after the war, and it ends with the various reanimated bodies returning to tear West to pieces and bear off the fragments of his corpse through ancient underground tunnels leading to a cemetery.

No one would deem "Herbert West—Reanimator" a masterpiece of subtlety, but it is rather engaging in its lurid way. It is also my belief that the story, while not *starting out* as a parody, *became* one as time went on. In other words, Lovecraft initially attempted to write a more or less serious, if quite "grewsome," supernatural tale but, as he perceived the increasing absurdity of the enterprise, abandoned the attempt and turned the story into what it in fact was all along, a self-parody. The philosophical subtext of the story may bear out this interpretation. We have already seen that Lovecraft initially endows West with his own mechanistic views, so that the reanimation of the dead becomes merely an extrapolation upon them. But consider West's later theories during his World War I experience:

> Two biological points he was exceedingly anxious to settle—first, whether any amount of consciousness and rational action be possible without the brain, proceeding from the spinal cord and various nerve-centres; and second, whether any kind of ethereal, intangible relation distinct from the material cells may exist to link the surgically separated parts of what has previously been a single living organism.

That second point is so manifestly a contradiction of materialism that it can only be intended parodically—or, rather, as an excuse for a particularly grisly tableau in which a severed head placed in a vat cries out when West reanimates the trunk. If this were not enough to indicate parody at this stage of the story, consider this passage in the same segment (the fifth): "The

scene I cannot describe—I should faint if I tried it, for there is madness in a room full of classified charnel things, with blood and lesser human debris almost ankle-deep on the slimy floor, and with hideous reptilian abnormalities sprouting, bubbling, and baking over a winking bluish-green spectre of dim flame in a far corner of black shadows." I have to believe this is intended more to provoke a smirk than a shudder.

The question of influence might be worth studying briefly. It has been taken for granted that the obvious influence upon the story is *Frankenstein;* but I wonder whether this is the case. The method of West's reanimation of the dead (whole bodies that have died only recently) is very different from that of Victor Frankenstein (the assembling of a huge composite body from disparate parts of bodies), and only the most general influence can perhaps be detected. The core of the story is so elementary a weird conception that no literary source need be postulated.

"Herbert West—Reanimator" does have some importance in Lovecraft's evolving imaginary New England topography. It is the first story where Miskatonic University is mentioned, although of course the word *Miskatonic* had already appeared in "The Picture in the House." Five of the six segments are set in New England, even if there is not much in the way of realistic landscape description in any of them. The mention of Bolton is interesting: it is a real town in east-central Massachusetts; but it was not at the time a "factory town" as Lovecraft describes it, but merely a tiny agricultural community. Lovecraft has a few topographical in-jokes along the way as well. In the first segment the two doctors find the "deserted Chapman farmhouse beyond Meadow Hill" a suitable place for their experiments; later it burns to the ground when their first experiment goes awry. Recall this passage from a letter to Rheinhart Kleiner of February 1920:

> But *the* event of the season was the burning of the large Chapman house last Wednesday night—the yellow house across two lawns to the north of #598 Angell. . . . There, in full view, was the most impressive sight I ever beheld. Where that evening had stood the unoccupied Chapman house, recently sold and undergoing repairs, was now a titanic pillar of roaring, living flame amidst the deserted night—reaching into the illimitable heavens and lighting the country for miles around.[59]

No one but Lovecraft—and perhaps Kleiner—would ever have gotten this joke.

I do not know whether much need be made of the apparent racism in the third episode. Buck Robinson is described as "a loathsome, gorilla-like thing, with abnormally long arms which I could not help calling fore legs, and a face that conjured up thoughts of unspeakable Congo secrets and tom-tom poundings under an eerie moon." The latter part of the sentence is so extravagant that I again suspect parody. And, interestingly, far from confirming the doctors' belief that the serum prepared for white patients would not work on a black corpse, the resurrection of Buck Robinson actually establishes the reverse.

It has frequently been believed—based upon Lovecraft's remark in June 1922 that "the pay was a myth after the second cheque"[60]—that Lovecraft was never fully paid for the serial; but a letter to Samuel Loveman in November 1922 reports that Houtain has "paid up his past debts" and even advanced Lovecraft $10 for the first two segments of "The Lurking Fear."[61]

Lovecraft managed to write two other stories while working desultorily on "Herbert West—Reanimator," and they are very different propositions altogether. "The Music of Erich Zann" appears to have been written in late 1921, probably December, since in Lovecraft's chronologies of his fiction it is always listed as the last story of the year; a letter of early February 1922 states: "'Erich Zann' I wrote only recently."[62] The first of its many appearances was in the *National Amateur* for March 1922.

"The Music of Erich Zann" justifiably remained one of Lovecraft's own favourite stories, for it reveals a restraint in its supernatural manifestations (bordering, for one of the few times in his entire work, on obscurity), a pathos in its depiction of its protagonist, and a general polish in its language that Lovecraft rarely achieved in later years.

The first-person narrator, again nameless, has "examined maps of the city with the greatest of care," but he cannot find the Rue d'Auseil, where he once dwelt as an "impoverished student of metaphysics" and heard the music of Erich Zann. Zann is a mute viol-player who played in a cheap theatre orchestra and dwelt in the garret apartment of a boarding-house run by "the paralytic Blandot"; the narrator, occupying a room on the fifth floor, occasionally hears Zann playing wild tunes featuring harmonies that seem to have no relation to any known style of music. One night he meets Zann

in the hallway and asks to listen in while he plays; Zann accedes, but plays only ordinary music, although it is nevertheless affecting and apparently of his own composition. When the narrator asks Zann to play some of his weirder numbers, and even begins to whistle one of them, Zann reacts with horror and covers the narrator's mouth with his hand. When the narrator then seeks to look out the curtained window of the apartment, Zann furiously tugs at his coat and prevents him from doing so. Later Zann has the narrator move to a lower floor so that he does not hear the music anymore.

One night, as the narrator comes to Zann's door, he hears "the shrieking viol swell into a chaotic babel of sound" and later hears an "awful, inarticulate cry which only the mute can utter, and which rises only in moments of the most terrible fear or anguish." Demanding entry, he is let in by a harried Zann, who manages to calm himself and writes a scribbled note saying that he will prepare "a full account in German of all the marvels and terrors which beset him." An hour passes while Zann writes; then a strange sound seems to come from the curtained window: ". . . it was not a horrible sound, but rather an exquisitely low and infinitely distant musical note . . ." Zann immediately stops writing, picks up his viol, and commences to play with daemoniac fury: "He was trying to make a noise; to ward something off or drown something out . . ." The glass of the window breaks, blowing out the candle and plunging the room into darkness; a sudden gust of wind catches up the manuscript and bears it out the window. As the narrator attempts to save it, he gains his first and last look out that lofty window: "Yet when I looked from that highest of all gable windows, looked while the candles sputtered and the insane viol howled with the night-wind, I saw no city outspread below, and no friendly lights gleaming from remembered streets, but only the blackness of space illimitable; unimagined space alive with motion and music, and having no semblance to anything on earth." The narrator runs into Zann in an effort to flee, encountering the mad player still playing mechanically even though he seems to be dead. Rushing out of the building, he finds the outside world seemingly normal: "And I recall that there was no wind, and that the moon was out, and that all the lights of the city twinkled." And he has, from that time, been unable to find the Rue d'Auseil.

Lovecraft in later years was aware that "The Music of Erich Zann" had a sort of negative value: it lacked the flaws—notably overexplicitness and

overwriting—that marred some of his other works, both before and after. He somewhat mechanically declared that it was his second-favourite of his own stories, next to "The Colour out of Space," but he admitted late in life that this was "because it isn't as bad as most of the rest. I like it for what it *hasn't* more than for what it *has*."[63] The reference, of course, is to the very nebulous nature of the horror involved. What, exactly, is Zann trying to "ward off"? Why does the narrator see empty space "alive with motion and music," and what is this supposed to signify? There are those who find this sort of restraint effective because it leaves so much to the imagination; and there are those who find it ineffective because it leaves *too much* to the imagination, and there is a suspicion that the author himself did not have a fully conceived understanding of what the central weird phenomenon of the story is actually meant to be. I fear I am in the latter camp. Lovecraft was, I think, regrettably correct in later years in believing that pulp fiction had insidiously and unwittingly corrupted his style by making his stories a little too histrionic and overexplanatory; but in "The Music of Erich Zann" I cannot help feeling that he has erred in the opposite direction.

Robert M. Price, in a provocative close reading of the story, finds tantalising hints that Zann is a kind of otherworldly figure who by the end of the tale has spiritually returned to the black abysses where he always belonged. Why, argues Price, would Zann's German be "execrable" even though he is presumably a native German? Why is Zann twice described as "satyr-like," and why does the narrator seem to see "shadowy satyrs and Bacchanals dancing and whirling insanely" at the end? Price's subtle analysis deserves much consideration, although it must inevitably leave some elements of the story unexplained.[64]

It should be pointed out that the instrument Zann is playing is a viol—the archaic stringed instrument played between the legs and shaped like a cello—not a violin. This may seem a little grotesque—even more so as Zann is supposed to be playing this instrument in a "cheap theatre orchestra"; but Lovecraft confirms the matter when in a letter he refers to Zann as a "'cellist."[65]

The setting of the story is worth considering. Is it, in fact, Paris? It has always been assumed to be so, but Lovecraft never states so explicitly, and the Rue d'Auseil is the only place name mentioned in the story. One curious piece of evidence—if it can be called that—comes from the French critic Jacques Bergier, who claimed to have corresponded with Lovecraft late in

the latter's life and specifically asked Lovecraft how and when he had ever seen Paris in order to derive the convincing atmosphere of the tale, to which Lovecraft is said to have replied, "In a dream, with Poe."[66] But there is, quite frankly, reason to doubt whether Bergier corresponded with Lovecraft at all, and the entire story may be apocryphal. In any case, Lovecraft declares shortly after writing the story, "It is not, as a whole, a dream, though I have dreamt of steep streets like the Rue d'Auseil."[67] The word *Auseil* does not exist in French (nor does *Zann* exist in German), but it has plausibly been suggested that the place name is meant to convey *au seuil* ("at the threshold")—i.e., that Zann's room (and his music) is at the threshold between the real and the unreal. Lovecraft had only a smattering of French, but he could have come up with an elementary coinage of this sort.

The other story of this period is "Hypnos," probably written in March 1922.[68] It is a curious but quite substantial tale that has not received the attention it deserves, perhaps because Lovecraft himself in later years came to dislike it. A recently discovered typescript of the tale bears the dedication "To S. L.," although it is not clear that Samuel Loveman was in any way instrumental in its conception or writing. Probably the dedication refers to the references to Greek antiquity, which Loveman included in much of his own verse. A relatively early entry in the commonplace book (23) provides the plot-germ for the story: "The man who would not sleep—dares not sleep—takes drugs to keep himself awake. Finally falls asleep—& *something* happens—"

"Hypnos" tells the tale of a sculptor who encounters another man at a railway station. This person had fallen unconscious, and the narrator, struck with the man's appearance ("the face [was] . . . oval and actually *beautiful* . . . I said to myself, with all the ardour of a sculptor, that this man was a faun's statue out of antique Hellas"), takes it upon himself to rescue the man, who becomes the sculptor's only friend. The two engage in "studies" of some nameless sort, studies "of that vaster and more appalling universe of dim entity and consciousness which lies deeper than matter, time, and space, and whose existence we suspect only in certain forms of sleep—those rare dreams beyond dreams which never come to common men, and but once or twice in the lifetime of imaginative men." The sensations experienced by the two in these "dreams" are almost inexpressible, but the narrator's teacher is always "vastly in advance" in the exploration of these

realms of quasi-entity. But at some point the teacher encounters some awesome horror that causes him to shriek into wakefulness. Previously they had augmented their dream-visions with drugs; now they take drugs in a desperate effort to keep awake. They reverse their previous reclusiveness (they had dwelt in an "old manor-house in hoary Kent") and seek as many "assemblies of the young and the gay" as they can. But it all goes for naught: one night the teacher cannot stay awake for all the efforts of his sculptor friend; something nameless happens, and all that is left of the teacher is an exquisitely sculpted bust of "a godlike head of such marble as only old Hellas could yield", with the word HYPNOS in Greek letters at the base. People maintain that the narrator never had a friend, but that "art, philosophy, and insanity had filled all my tragic life."

It would seem as if the interpretation of this story would rest on whether the narrator's friend actually existed or not; but this point may not affect the analysis appreciably. What we have here, ultimately, is, as with "The Other Gods," a case of hubris, but on a much subtler level. At one point the narrator states: "I will hint—only hint—that he had designs which involved the rulership of the visible universe and more; designs whereby the earth and the stars would move at his command, and the destinies of all living things be his." This sounds somewhat extravagant, but in the context of the story it is powerful and effective, even though (and perhaps this is a point in its favour) not much evidence is offered as to how the person could have effected this rulership of the universe. If the person really existed, then he is merely endowed with overweening pride and his doom—at the hands of the Greek god of sleep, Hypnos—is entirely merited. On a psychological interpretation, this "friend" becomes merely an aspect of the narrator's own personality; note how, after the above statement, he adds harriedly, "I affirm —I swear—that I had no share in these extreme aspirations"—a textbook instance of the conscious mind sloughing off responsibility for its subconscious fantasies.

In the end, "Hypnos" is a subtilisation of a theme already broached in several earlier tales, notably "Beyond the Wall of Sleep"—the notion that certain "dreams" provide access to other realms of entity beyond that of the five senses or waking world. There are, indeed, several points of similarity between "Hypnos" and "Beyond the Wall of Sleep": aside from the above passage on the nature of dreams, there is the narrator's sensations of "occasionally *tearing* through certain well-marked and typical obstacles,"

similar to Joe Slater's desire (or that of the astral body possessing him) to "soar through abysses of emptiness, *burning* every obstacle that stood in his way"; and just as Slater has some connexion with the star Algol, the narrator of "Hypnos" finds that his friend is weirdly attracted to the constellation Corona Borealis. "Hypnos," therefore, already begins that tendency which we will find over and over again in Lovecraft—the tendency to rewrite certain scenarios in order to produce the most effective treatment of the core idea.

The fact that the narrator of "Hypnos" is a sculptor is of some importance. A paper by Steven J. Mariconda provides a brilliant analysis of the story and its relation to Lovecraft's developing aesthetic theory.[69] I shall treat that theory at length in a later chapter, but here it is worth noting that the theme of expanding sense-perception—already broached in several tales, notably "From Beyond"—becomes a crucial element in Lovecraft's conception of the aesthetic process. In a 1929 letter he declares that the function of each work of art is to provide a distinctive vision of the world, in such a way that this vision becomes comprehensible to others:

> I'd say that good art means the ability of any one man to pin down in some permanent and intelligible medium a sort of idea of what he sees in Nature that nobody else sees. In other words, to make the other fellow grasp, through skilled selective care in interpretative reproduction or symbolism, some inkling of what only the artist himself could possibly see in the actual objective scene itself.

The result is that, by appreciating many different works of art each with their own distinctive vision, *"We see and feel more in Nature"* and accordingly attain a "faint approximation of an approach to *the mystic substance of absolute reality itself* . . ."[70] In "Hypnos" Lovecraft has rendered the conception horrific: the artist narrator and his friend (who, while not being an artist himself, is of such transcendent beauty that he is himself a work of art) now blasphemously seek to transfer this *aesthetic* conception into the realm of the real world—to attempt some actual (not aesthetic) mastery of the "visible universe and more . . ."

"Hypnos" appeared, without its dedication to Loveman, in the *National Amateur* for May 1923. It might be thought to be one of Lovecraft's few non-Dunsanian fantasies: while nominally set in England, so much of the action of the tale occurs either in the protagonists' minds or in the realms of

supra-reality to which they gain access that the result is quite otherworldly. Although perhaps slightly overwritten, it deserves neither the contempt Lovecraft heaped upon it in later years nor the casual dismissal it has received at the hands of later critics.

Shortly after writing "Hypnos" Lovecraft began a series of peregrinations that would not end until October. First on the agenda was Lovecraft's first trip out of New England—his New York jaunt of April 6–12. The trip was, of course, arranged by Sonia. She had visited Cleveland on business sometime in late 1921 or early 1922, and there met both Samuel Loveman and Alfred Galpin, who had temporarily settled there after finishing his work at Lawrence College. Still taken with the idea of convening a group of Lovecraft's best friends in New York, Sonia persuaded Loveman to come to the metropolis to look for work. Loveman arrived on April 1 but had little success in job-hunting, although in later years he would secure good work with various antiquarian book dealers. As a way of keeping Loveman in the city—and, coincidentally, of uprooting Lovecraft from his hermitry—Sonia telephoned Lovecraft and urged him to come down to meet his longtime correspondent. Loveman, Morton, and Kleiner added their encouragement, and Lovecraft's new protégé Frank Long was also likely to be on hand. These massed invitations did the trick, and Lovecraft caught the 10.06 train from Providence on the 6th.

Five hours later he saw the "Cyclopean outlines of New-York"[71] for the first time. Lovecraft's lengthiest account of his six-day journey, in a letter to Maurice W. Moe of May 18, 1922, is (at least as published in *Selected Letters*) a trifle difficult to follow on a day-to-day basis, but there was clearly an endless round of discussion along with museum visiting, sightseeing (they ascended to the top of the Woolworth Building, then the tallest structure in the city), bookstore-hunting, and all the other things that most tourists of a bookish sort do when they hit the big city. Sonia magnanimously turned over her own apartment at 259 Parkside Avenue in Brooklyn to Loveman and Lovecraft, herself sleeping in a neighbour's apartment. She reports in her memoir at being "amazed at myself" for her "boldness"[72] in inviting two men to be guests in her flat. She also notes that she took Lovecraft for the first time to an Italian restaurant, where he fell in love with spaghetti and meatballs but refused to drink wine.

Certainly the high point for Lovecraft was meeting two of his closest friends, Loveman and Long. Loveman read his works-in-progress, *The Hermaphrodite* and *The Sphinx* (a prose drama), which Lovecraft pronounced (correctly) to be masterpieces. As for Long, he is

> an exquisite boy of twenty who hardly looks fifteen. He is dark and slight, with a bushy wealth of almost black hair and a delicate, beautiful face still a stranger to the gillette. I think he likes the tiny collection of lip-hairs—about six on one side and five on the other—which may with assiduous care some day help to enhance his genuine resemblance to his chief idol—Edgar Allan Poe. . . . A scholar; a fantaisiste; a prose-poet; a sincere and intelligent disciple of Poe, Baudelaire, and the French decadents.[73]

Lovecraft—whose objection to moustaches and beards was unrelenting—would tease Long about his "moustachelet" for years. It really never did seem to get much bigger.

Lovecraft of course met often with Sonia, and even once met her "flapper offspring" Florence—a "pert, spoiled, and ultra-independent infant rather more hard-boiled of visage than her benignant mater." Sonia cooked several meals for the gang at her place, which even the ascetic Lovecraft admitted to enjoying. One of the most provocative passages in her memoir relates to an event toward the end of Lovecraft's stay:

> Soon S. L. returned to Cleveland and H. P. remained. My neighbor who so kindly made room for me had a beautiful Persian cat which she brought to my apartment. As soon as H. P. saw that cat he made "love" to it. He seemed to have a language that the feline brother understood, for it curled right up in his lap and purred contentedly.
>
> Half in earnest, half in jest I remarked, "What a lot of perfectly good affection to waste on a mere cat, when some woman might highly appreciate it!" His retort was, "How can any woman love a face like mine?" My counter-retort was, "A mother can and some who are not mothers would not have to try very hard." We all laughed while Felis was enjoying some more stroking.[74]

At this point one hardly need belabour Lovecraft's inferiority complex about his appearance, a simultaneous result of his mother's influence

(which makes Sonia's remark about mothers a trifle unfortunate) and an actual problem with ingrown facial hairs. But Sonia's intentions were already becoming clear, although she herself may not yet have been wholly aware of them. I doubt if anyone—even Winifred Jackson—had ever said anything like the above to Lovecraft before.

Lovecraft naturally rhapsodised about the spectacular New York skyline, which he saw from a fine vantage point on Manhattan Bridge. But when he examined some parts of the city at somewhat closer range, his views were quite different. Consider this description of the lower East Side:

> My gawd—what a filthy dump! I thought Providence had slums, and antique Bostonium as well; but damn me if I ever saw anything like the sprawling sty-atmosphere of N.Y.'s lower East Side. We walked—at my suggestion—in the middle of the street, for contact with the heterogeneous sidewalk denizens, spilled out of their bulging brick kennels as if by a spawning beyond the capacity of the places, was not by any means to be sought. At times, though, we struck peculiarly deserted areas—these swine have instinctive swarming movements, no doubt, which no ordinary biologist can fathom. Gawd knows what they are . . . a bastard mess of stewing mongrel flesh without intellect, repellent to eye, nose, and imagination—would to heaven a kindly gust of cyanogen could asphyxiate the whole gigantic abortion, end the misery, and clean out the place.[75]

The racism of this passage is only what one would have expected of Lovecraft; in effect, he was finally waking up to the realities of the world. The walls of his sheltered and sequestered life were tumbling brick by brick, and an initial reaction of fear and loathing was predictable.

By Tuesday, April 11, Lovecraft was already quite tired, and upon returning home on the 12th he found himself utterly exhausted; there was also a mass of letters, parcels, and papers awaiting him. He gradually pulled himself together and by early May was already expressing the opinion that "now I must meet that delectable little imp Galpin, and life would be complete!"[76] But Cleveland seemed such an enormous distance away that a trip there seemed a pipe dream. Instead, after six weeks Lovecraft undertook a further round of travelling a little closer to home.

In late May he visited Myrta Alice Little again in New Hampshire. After several days in Westville, Myrta dropped him off at Dover (the

"farthest north I ever was in my life!"[77]) as she and her mother continued up to their summer camp at Lake Winnepesaukee. Lovecraft found this car trip "the crowning event of the journey":

> . . . a trip back through Time, extending 75 to 200 years, and plunging me into the heart of an ancient New-England which I had mourned as dead and buried. Words cannot convey the charms of the winding, hilly road; the placid pastoral panoramas at every turn; the magic glimpses of cool centuried farmhouses amidst old gardens and under venerable and gigantic trees. . . . The villages were enchanting—opium-dreams of delicate foliage and old white houses. Portsmouth is a city of the Georgian age—there is a glorious atavism to be derived from a ride through its shady residence streets . . .[78]

It is not too early to remark here a feature that we will find again and again on Lovecraft's journeys—the *keenness of perception* that allows him to absorb to the full the topographical, historical, and social features of regions that many of us might heedlessly pass over. Lovecraft was exceptionally alive to whatever milieu he found himself in, and this accounts both for raptures like the above and for the violence of his reaction to places like Chinatown, which defied all his norms of beauty, repose, and historic rootedness.

In early or mid-June was the Cambridge trip to hear David Van Bush lecture. Coming back to Boston, he stopped off at a house jointly occupied by Edith Miniter and Charles A. A. Parker, spent the night at the Hotel Brunswick (where the NAPA convention had been held the year before), and "'did' the art museum and all the old grave-yards."[79]

Later that month Sonia, striking while the iron was hot, found a way to spend time in New England and do much visiting with Lovecraft. She was representing her firm at Magnolia, Massachusetts, which Lovecraft describes as "an ultra-fashionable watering-place on the coast near Gloucester, an hour's ride northeast from Boston."[80] She came down to Providence on Sunday, June 16, meeting both aunts and becoming so carried away that she tried to persuade Annie to move permanently to New York and share her apartment. Although this idea was naturally rejected, Lovecraft added tellingly: ". . . strange to say, my aunt [Annie] likes her immensely despite a racial and social chasm which she doesn't often

bridge." It is a plausible conjecture that Annie's friends were ordinarily neither Jewish nor independent businesswomen.

Sonia persuaded Lovecraft to spend several days with her in Gloucester and Magnolia in late June and early July. The cliffs of Magnolia really are a delight—a place where "pearl-grey mists surge out of the sky to mix with the sea."[81] Lovecraft went up around June 26 and stayed until July 5, stopping at the same house (whether a private residence or a boarding-house is unclear) in Magnolia where Sonia was staying and taking meals at a boarding-house in the main village square. Sonia tells what happened one evening when they were strolling along the esplanade:

> . . . the full moon reflecting its light in the water, a peculiar and unusual noise heard at a distance as of a loud snorting and grunting, the shimmering light forming a moon-path on the water, the round tops of the submerged piles in the water exposed a rope connecting them like a huge spider's guy-line, gave the vivid imagination full play for an interesting weird tale. "Oh, Howard," I exclaimed, "here you have the setting for a real strange and mysterious story." Said he, "Go ahead, and write it." "Oh, no, I couldn't do it justice," I answered. "Try it. Tell me what the scene pictures to your imagination." And as we walked along we neared the edge of the water. Here I described my interpretation of the scene and the noises. His encouragement was so enthusiastic and sincere that when we parted for the night, I sat up and wrote the general outline which he later revised and edited.[82]

The result was "The Horror at Martin's Beach," which appeared in *Weird Tales* for November 1923 (under Sonia's name only) as "The Invisible Monster." It is, I fear, not much of a story. Chronologically, this is the first weird story that Lovecraft could be said to have revised instead of collaborated on, although the distinction here is perhaps not very significant: it only affects his refusal to affix his name on the piece as an actual collaborator (as gentlemanly a gesture as his taking second billing for the collaborations with Winifred Jackson and Anna Helen Crofts); he certainly accepted no pay for his revisory work, as he would for later tales revised or ghostwritten for clients.

"The Horror at Martin's Beach" is the wild and improbable story of an enormous sea creature ("fifty feet in length, of roughly cylindrical shape,

and about ten feet in diameter") killed by the crew of a fishing smack at Martin's Beach—an unspecified and imaginary locale, but presumably near Gloucester, which is mentioned several times by name. The creature is proved by scientists to be a mere infant, hatched only a few days previously, and probably originating from the deep sea; the day after it is placed on a wooden frame for exhibition, it and the vessel that caught it disappear without a trace. Some days later a terrified cry for help emerges from the sea, and the lifeguards throw out a life-preserver to assist the stricken individual; but the life-preserver, attached to a long rope, appears to have been grasped by some nameless entity that pulls it out to sea, and when the lifeguards and other individuals attempt to reel it in, they not only find themselves unable to do so, but find that they cannot release their hands from the rope. They are inexorably dragged to their deaths in the sea.

The idea is that the parent of the huge infant creature has not only grasped the life-preserver but has also hypnotised the rescuers so that their wills no longer function (this is why a scholarly article, "Are Hypnotic Powers Confined to Recognized Humanity?" by a Prof. Alton, is cited early in the text). This does not seem a very compelling kernel for even a 3000-word short story, so Lovecraft (and it is surely he) is forced to pep up the narrative with his now typical verbal flamboyance: "I recall thinking of those heads, and the bulging eyes they must contain; eyes that might well reflect all the fright, panic, and delirium of a malignant universe—all the sorrow, sin, and misery, blasted hopes and unfulfilled desires, fear, loathing and anguish of the ages since time's beginning; eyes alight with all the soul-racking pain of eternally blazing infernos." A passage like this fails because it is *inappropriate to the circumstances:* there has been an insufficient build-up for it, and it comes off sounding forced and bathetic.

Another story that may have been written at this time is "Four O'Clock." In a letter to Winfield Townley Scott, Sonia declared that Lovecraft only suggested changes in the prose of the tale,[83] hence I concluded that it does not belong in the Lovecraft corpus and did not include it in the revised version of *The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions* (1989). Judging, however, from her later memoir, it does not appear as if Sonia was a very skilled, polished, or even coherent writer, so that Lovecraft probably did contribute something to this story, which is even slighter than its predecessor. Here we find some individual (whether a man or a woman is never made clear) whose mortal enemy died at four

o'clock in the morning and who now fears that some nameless fate will now overtake him at that same hour. He sees some cloud of vapour outside his window gradually form itself into the shape of a clock with hands pointing to four, and later sees other nebulous objects take the same shape. The vapour turns to flame and takes the form of the enemy's face, and the narrator realises that "the end is near."

As a study of monomania—it is never clarified whether the visions seen by the narrator are real or imagined—this story is intermittently effective, but it too is spoiled by overwriting. And it certainly seems as if some of the prose is Lovecraft's, since it features so many of the mannerisms—piled-up adjectives, frequent italicisation of key words, even characteristic punctuational usages—typical of his fiction at this time. But it is not a work we would be much the poorer without. The story was not published in Lovecraft's lifetime, appearing only in *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (1949). There is, apparently, a third and as yet unpublished weird tale by Sonia; whether Lovecraft had any involvement in it is not known.[84]

Sonia adds a startling note about what transpired the day after "The Horror at Martin's Beach" was conceived:

> His continued enthusiasm the next day was so genuine and sincere that in appreciation I surprised and shocked him right then and there by kissing him. He was so flustered that he blushed, then he turned pale. When I chaffed him about it he said he had not been kissed since he was a very small child and that he was never kissed by any woman, not even by his mother or aunts, since he grew to manhood, and that he would probably never be kissed again. (But I fooled him.)[85]

This really is pretty remarkable. First, if Lovecraft's statement here is true, it certainly makes his "romance" with Winifred Jackson an exceptionally platonic one. Second, the matter of his not being kissed even by his aunts or mother since he was a young man makes us wonder about the degree of reserve in this old New England family. Lovecraft's affection for his aunts—and theirs for him—is unquestioned; but such an unusual lack of physical intimacy is anomalous even for the time and for their social milieu. No wonder Lovecraft was so slow to respond to a woman who so openly expressed affection for him. His emotions had clearly been stunted in this direction.

This week-long trip with Sonia was, as far as I can tell, the first time Lovecraft had spent any considerable amount of time alone in the company of a woman with whom he was not related. There is no evidence that Lovecraft made any such excursions with Winifred Jackson. Sonia was keen on pursuing matters and managed to get up to Rhode Island again on Sunday, July 16, when she and Lovecraft went to Newport and wrote a joint postcard to Lillian (the predictable "wish you were here" stuff).[86]

Ten days later, on Wednesday, July 26, we find Lovecraft writing again from Sonia's apartment in Brooklyn: somehow she had managed to persuade him to undertake the long trip to Cleveland to see Galpin and Loveman. He spent only three days in a stopover in New York (clearly staying in Sonia's apartment, while she again presumably stayed with the neighbour), for on Saturday, July 29, at 6.30 P.M., he boarded the Lake Shore Limited at Grand Central Station for the long train ride to Cleveland. The midwestern scenery did not impress him: "It is quite unlike—and inferior to—New England, having vast level stretches, sparser vegetation and foliage, and different types of architecture. (Flatter roofs, etc.) The villages are insufferably dismal—like 'Main St.' They have no ancient features, and totally lack the mellow charm and scenery which make New-England villages so delightful."[87] The reference to Sinclair Lewis's novel of 1920 does not mean that Lovecraft had actually read it, since it was both a critical and popular success and was no doubt on everybody's tongue; *Babbitt* (1922) would come out later that summer and would add several words to the English language—Babbitesque, Babbitry—that Lovecraft, in his Decadent *épater le bourgeois* phase, would find very useful.

The train ride took sixteen hours, and Lovecraft arrived in Cleveland at 10.30 A.M. on the 30th. He was greeted at the station by Galpin, who, Lovecraft recognised immediately. Their initial exchange of greetings was not a very distinguished one for these two Nietzschean philosophers:

"So this is my Son Alfredus!"

"It sure is!"

But after that a steady stream of conversation flowed. Lovecraft stayed until August 15, mostly at Galpin's residence at 9231 Birchdale Avenue (the building is now no longer standing). Their habits were roughly in accord with Lovecraft's own behaviour-patterns at home: "We rise at noon, eat twice a day, and retire after midnight . . ." Lovecraft takes pride in telling Lillian how boyish and unconventional he has become: he has given up

wearing his vest and has bought a belt (probably because of the hot weather); he has bought *soft* collars for the first time; and he is going about *hatless* like Galpin except on formal occasions. "Can you picture me vestless, hatless, soft-collared, and belted, ambling about with a boy of twenty, as if I were no older?" But Lovecraft is careful to reassure Lillian that no social *faux pas* is being committed: "One can be free and easy in a provincial city—when I hit New York again I shall resume the solemn manner and sedate vestments befitting my advanced years . . ."

An interesting note on the state of Lovecraft's physical and psychological health is recorded in a later letter to Lillian:

As for the kind of time I am having—it is simply great! I have just the incentive I need to keep me active & free from melancholy, & I look so well that I doubt if any Providence person would know me by sight! I have no headaches or depressed spells—in short, I am for the time being really alive & in good health & spirits. The companionship of youth & artistic taste is what keeps one going![88]

And Lovecraft would later wonder why, around the age of thirty, his health suddenly began to improve! Freedom from his mother's (and, to a lesser degree, his aunts') stifling control, travel to different parts of the country, and the company of congenial friends who regarded him with fondness, respect, and admiration will do wonders for a cloistered recluse who never travelled more than a hundred miles away from home up to the age of thirty-one.

Naturally, they met Samuel Loveman (staying at the Lonore Apartments around the corner) frequently, and it was through Loveman that Lovecraft met several other distinguished littérateurs—George Kirk (1898–1962), the bookseller who had just published Loveman's edition of Ambrose Bierce's *Twenty-one Letters* (1922), and, most notably, the young Hart Crane (1899–1932) and his circle of literary and artistic friends. Lovecraft reports attending a meeting of "all the members of Loveman's literary circle": "It gave me a novel sensation to be 'lionised' so much beyond my deserts by men as able as the painter Summers [*sic*], Loveman, Galpin, &c. I met some new figures—Crane the poet, Lazar [*sic*], an ambitious young literary student now in the army, & a delightful young fellow named Carroll Lawrence, who writes weird stories & wants to see all of mine."[89] I shall have more to say about both Kirk and Crane later, since Lovecraft would meet them again during his New York period; for now we can note this

brief meeting with William Sommer, the watercolourist and draughtsman, William Lescaze, later to become an internationally known architect, Edward Lazare (whom Lovecraft would meet again in New York, and who in later years would become distinguished as a longtime editor of *American Book-Prices Current*), and others of Crane's circle. Crane had just begun to publish his poetry in magazines, although his first volume, *White Buildings,* would not appear until 1926. Lovecraft must, however, have read Crane's "Pastorale" (in the *Dial* for October 1921), for he wrote a parody of it entitled "Plaster-All." While an amusing take-off of what Lovecraft believed to be the formless free verse of the modernists, the poem is really a sort of impressionistic—dare one say imagistic?—account of his Cleveland trip:

> Here it was,
> That in the light of an interpreter,
> Soon I met and succeeded
> In surrounding myself
> With a few of the Intelligentsia
> That Cleveland affords,
> Loveman, Sommer, Lescaze, Hatfield, Guenther. . . .
> But Loveman
> Left the fold early—pity, yes!

The mention of the minor composer Gordon Hatfield is interesting, since by all accounts this is the first openly homosexual person Lovecraft ever met. His response—as recorded about a year and a half later—is predictable: "To be sure, I recall him! Dear, dear! how he used to sit cross-legged on the floor at Eglin's, little white sailor's cap tucked gracefully under one arm, sport shirt open at the neck, gazing soulfully up at Samuelus and discoursing of arts and harmonies of life! I'm afraid he thought me a very crude, stupid, commonplace, masculine sort of person . . ."[90] He says elsewhere: "I didn't know whether to kiss it or kill it!"[91] Interestingly, he remarks that Hatfield and Crane were mortal enemies. Evidently Lovecraft either did not know that Crane was gay (as was Loveman) or never held it against him—probably the former.

Another person with whom Lovecraft came into contact at this time, although only by correspondence, was Clark Ashton Smith. Loveman and Smith were longtime correspondents, and the former showed Lovecraft Smith's paintings and sketches, while Galpin and Kirk, respectively,

presented Lovecraft with copies of Smith's early collections of poetry, *The Star-Treader and Other Poems* (1912) and *Odes and Sonnets* (1918). So taken was Lovecraft with both the pictorial and literary material that he forthwith wrote Smith a fan letter toward the end of his Cleveland stay:

> I trust you will pardon the liberty taken by an absolute stranger in writing you, for I cannot refrain from expressing the appreciation aroused in me by your drawings & poetry, as shown me by my friend, Mr. Samuel Loveman, whom I am now visiting in Cleveland. Your book, containing matter only chronologically classifiable as juvenilia, impresses me as a work of the most distinguished genius . . .[92]

This almost effusively flattering letter initiated a fifteen-year correspondence that would end only with Lovecraft's death.

Clark Ashton Smith (1893–1961) has suffered an anomalous fate precisely because his work is so distinctive and unclassifiable. His two early collections of poetry—followed by several more, including *Ebony and Crystal* (1922), *Sandalwood* (1925), and *The Dark Chateau* (1951), and culminating with the enormous but much-delayed *Selected Poems* (1971)—were in a *fin de siècle* vein somewhat in the manner of Swinburne or George Sterling, but very distinctively Smith's own. Indeed, upon the publication of that first volume, at the age of nineteen, Smith—a native of California who was born in Long Valley and lived most of his life in Auburn—was hailed by local reviewers as a new Keats or Shelley. These accolades were perhaps not far from the truth. Consider the opening of "The Star-Treader":

> A voice cried to me in a dawn of dreams,
> Saying, "Make haste: the webs of death and birth
> Are brushed away, and all the threads of earth
> Wear to the breaking; spaceward gleams
> Thine ancient pathway of the suns,
> Whose flame is part of thee;
> And the deep gulfs abide coevally
> Whose darkness runs
> Through all thy spirit's mystery. . . ."

To my mind, this and other of Smith's early poems are quite superior to the "cosmic" poetry of George Sterling (1869–1926), although Smith has clearly learnt from Sterling's two long poems, *The Testimony of the Suns*

(1903) and *A Wine of Wizardry* (1907). The problem for Smith—or, rather, for his recognition as a significant poet—is that the tradition of weird or fantastic poetry is not very deep or substantial; moreover, modern enthusiasts (and critics) of weird literature seem uncomfortable with poetry, so that the tremendous body of Smith's verse has been ignored by exactly those readers who might be expected to champion it and keep it alive. And although Smith wrote some free verse, much of his work is written both in formal metres and in a very elevated, metaphor-laden diction in utter contrast to the flat, conversational, and (to my thinking) entirely prosaic work of the "poets" who, following the dreary example of William Carlos Williams and Ezra Pound, are currently fashionable. Is it any wonder that Smith's poetry, after its initial praise on the West Coast, fell on deaf ears and remains one of the lost jewels of twentieth-century literature?[93]

Smith did not help his cause by churning out reams of fantasy and science fiction tales in the late '20s and early '30s, some of it inspired by Lovecraft, or at least written under Lovecraft's encouragement. This body of work retains a following, although it is something of an acquired taste, but to me it is much inferior to his verse; I shall have more to say of it later. If Smith did any good work in prose, it is in the prose-poem, some of which Lovecraft read and admired in *Ebony and Crystal.* This work is toweringly impressive, and it could be maintained quite plausibly that Smith is the best prose-poet in English; but this form is too recondite to inspire much of a following or much critical attention.

As for Smith's art work, I find it quite amateurish and crude, and have no idea why Lovecraft so rhapsodised over it. Smith was a self-taught artist, and it shows; this work is, to be sure, reminiscent of primitive art, and occasionally some startlingly weird effects are produced, but much of it—in pen and ink, crayon, and oil—is imaginatively powerful but technically very backward. His small sculptures and figurines are somewhat more interesting. Lovecraft, however, never ceased to admire Smith as another Blake who could both write great work and illustrate it.

Smith did in fact come into contact with George Sterling prior to the publication of his first volume, and their voluminous joint correspondence —full of Sterling's careful dissections of Smith's early work—is highly revealing;[94] but even Sterling's star is falling, and it is an open question whether the forthcoming three-volume edition of his collected poems and verse plays will reverse his descent into obscurity.[95] Smith was at this time

living in Auburn with his aged and steadily declining parents. He affected a certain debonair, decadent air: he was fond of wine and women (although he would not marry until he was past sixty), and heaped towering scorn upon the ignorant suburbanites who failed to acknowledge his genius. In the early 1920s he had a column in the *Auburn Journal* that he filled with barbed aphorisms, but these are not very distinguished. His lack of financial success as a writer and his difficult home life left him in poverty for most of his career: his cottage outside of Auburn had no running water, and there were times when he was compelled to work at fruit-picking and other menial jobs. But literature remained his chief object of devotion until at least the mid-1930s. Two years before meeting Lovecraft he wrote his longest and greatest poem, *The Hashish-Eater; or, The Apocalypse of Evil* (included in *Ebony and Crystal*). It is by no means remarkable that Lovecraft would be transported by this nearly 600-line riot of cosmic imagery:

> Bow down: I am the emperor of dreams;
> I crown me with the million-colored sun
> Of secret worlds incredible, and take
> Their trailing skies for vestment when I soar,
> Throned on the mounting zenith, and illume
> The spaceward-flown horizon infinite.

As Lovecraft remarked: "The magnificence of *The Hashish-Eater* is beyond description . . ."[96] He would, in his small way, help to promote Smith by reviewing *Ebony and Crystal* in *L'Alouette* for January 1924—the only formal book review Lovecraft ever wrote.

For the time being, however, it was the benefits and delights of travel that were in the forefront of Lovecraft's mind. Leaving for New York on August 15, he spent at least two months as Sonia's guest in Brooklyn, making an unheard-of total of nearly three solid months away from 598 Angell Street. This long trip was made possible by the unstinting generosity of Lovecraft's friends: just as Loveman, Galpin, and Kirk insisted on picking up many of his expenses (especially meals) in Cleveland, so did Long (or, more precisely, his parents) frequently have Lovecraft over for lunch or dinner, and no doubt Sonia made or paid for many meals as well. I do not believe there was any condescension in this: Lovecraft's friends surely knew of his lean purse, but their hospitality was both a product of their own kindness and their genuine fondness for Lovecraft and their desire

to have him stay as long as possible. We shall find this becoming a repeated pattern in all Lovecraft's peregrinations for the rest of his life.

How did the aunts take this extended departure of their only nephew? As early as August 9, in Cleveland, Lovecraft writes to Lillian, rather touchingly: "I am sorry you miss me—though much flattered that you should do so!" In September Sonia and Lovecraft attempted to persuade one or both of the aunts to come and join them in New York; the staid Lillian declined, but Annie—who in her younger days was very much the socialite—accepted. On September 24 Sonia and Lovecraft wrote a joint letter to her; Sonia's bit is typically saccharine ("Gee! I'm so glad you can come! . . . My Dear, I do hope you can stay a long time!"), and Lovecraft's segment states that he has by now become such an expert guide to New York City that he can lead her anywhere.

Lovecraft's travels in the area were indeed becoming extensive. Among the sites taken in on this jaunt were the very recently opened George Grey Barnard Cloisters on the northern tip of Manhattan, a spectacular mediaeval French chapel brought piecemeal from Europe and reassembled stone by stone; the Van Cortlandt mansion (1748) and the Dyckman Cottage (1783); the lavish expanse of Prospect Park in Brooklyn (no doubt seen on his earlier trip also, since it is near 259 Parkside); the great second-hand bookshops on Fourth Avenue (on the lower East Side) and East 59th Street, which Long, although a native of the city, had incredibly never explored (they are now all gone); James Ferdinand Morton's apartment in Harlem (Lovecraft's first experience with the area that, for the past decade, had been steadily becoming a black enclave); the Jumel mansion (1765) on Washington Heights, containing relics of George Washington; Greenwich Village (whose bohemians did not impress him); the Bronx Zoo; the very fine New York Historical Society museum; the sleepy villages on Staten Island; Fraunces' Tavern (built as a residence in 1719, opened as a tavern in 1762), on the southern tip of Manhattan; and many other places. Lovecraft's accounts of these journeys, in long letters to his aunts, are a delight to read.

Relatively few new acquaintances were made on this trip, Lovecraft staying pretty much with Long, Morton, Kleiner, and Sonia (who was free only on weekends). In late September Lovecraft was introduced to the young amateur Paul Livingston Keil, who accompanied Lovecraft, Morton, and Long to the Poe cottage in Fordham and took a celebrated photograph

of them at that site. Years later Keil wrote a brief memoir of the excursion.[97]

Another interesting colleague encountered at this time was Everett McNeil, a writer of boys' stories whom Lovecraft would meet frequently during his New York period. He was then living in one of the worst areas of the city, Hell's Kitchen on the far west side of Manhattan in the 40s. Lovecraft, ever fascinated by urban and social decay, writes of the region vividly:

> Hell's Kitchen is the last remnant of the ancient slums—& by ancient I mean slums in which the denizens are not sly, cringing foreigners; but "tough" and energetic members of the superior Nordic stock—Irish, German, & American. The slinking Dago or Jew of the lower East Side is a strange, furtive animal . . . he uses poison instead of fists, automatic revolvers instead of bricks & blackjacks. But west of Broadway the old toughs have made their last stand. . . . Squalor is extreme, but not so odorous as in the foreign districts. Churches flourish—for all the natives are devout & violent Roman Catholics. It was odd to see slums in which the denizens are Nordic—with shapely faces, & often light hair & blue eyes.[98]

Lovecraft evidently failed to conclude from this that it was not "inferior" blood but socioeconomic disparity that produced these "Nordic" slums.

On the evening of September 16th Lovecraft and Kleiner explored the exquisite Dutch Reformed Church (1796) on Flatbush Avenue in Brooklyn, quite near to Sonia's apartment. This magnificent structure contains a sinister old churchyard at its rear, full of crumbling slabs in Dutch. What did Lovecraft do? "From one of the crumbling gravestones—dated 1747—I chipped a small piece to carry away. It lies before me as I write—& ought to suggest some sort of a horror-story. I must some night place it beneath my pillow as I sleep . . . who can say what *thing* might not come out of the centuried earth to exact vengeance for his desecrated tomb?"[99] True enough, the incident led directly to the writing of "The Hound," probably in October after he returned home.[100] This story involves the escapades of the narrator and his friend St John (based very loosely on Kleiner, whom Lovecraft referred to in correspondence as Randolph St John, as if he were a relative of Henry St John, Viscount Bolingbroke) in that "hideous extremity of human outrage, the abhorred practice of grave-robbing." These

two “neurotic virtuosi,” who are “wearied with the commonplaces of a prosaic world,” can find in this loathsome activity the only respite from their “devastating ennui.” They are true aesthetes in morbidity:

> The predatory excursions on which we collected our unmentionable treasures were always artistically memorable events. We were no vulgar ghouls, but worked only under certain conditions of mood, landscape, environment, weather, season, and moonlight. These pastimes were to us the most exquisite form of aesthetic expression, and we gave their details a fastidious technical care. An inappropriate hour, a jarring lighting effect, or a clumsy manipulation of the damp sod, would almost totally destroy for us that ecstatic titillation which followed the exhumation of some ominous, grinning secret of the earth.

One day they seek the grave of an especially redoubtable individual in Holland—“one buried for five centuries, who had himself been a ghoul in his time and had stolen a potent thing from a mighty sepulchre.” When they unearth this grave, they find “much—amazingly much” left of the object despite the lapse of half a millennium. They find an amulet depicting the “oddly conventionalised figure of a crouching winged hound, or sphinx with a semi-canine face,” and realise that they must bear this prize off for the unholy museum of charnel things they keep in their home in England.

Upon their return, strange things begin to happen. Their home seems besieged with a nameless whirring or flapping, and over the moors they hear the “faint, distant baying” as of a gigantic hound. One night, as St John is walking home alone from the station, he is torn to ribbons by some “frightful carnivorous thing.” As he lies dying, he manages to utter, “The amulet—that damned thing—” The narrator realises that he must return the amulet to the Holland grave, but one night in Rotterdam thieves rob him of the thing. Later the city is shocked by a “red death” in a “squalid thieves’ den,” The narrator, driven by some fatality, returns to the churchyard and digs up the old grave. As he uncovers it, he finds “the bony thing my friend and I had robbed; not clean and placid as we had seen it then, but covered with caked blood and shreds of alien flesh and hair, and leering sentiently at me with phosphorescent sockets and sharp ensanguined fangs yawning twistedly in mockery of my inevitable doom.” The narrator, after telling his

tale, proposes to "seek with my revolver the oblivion which is my only refuge from the unnamed and unnamable."

"The Hound" has been roundly abused for being wildly overwritten; but it has somehow managed to escape most critics' attention that the story is an obvious self-parody. Lovecraft has rarely been given credit for being master, not slave, of his prose style: we have already seen how earlier stories—"Beyond the Wall of Sleep," "Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family," "The Music of Erich Zann"—show an admirable restraint in diction and imagery, and it becomes transparently obvious that Lovecraft has chosen the overheated prose and histrionic incidents of "The Hound" deliberately. Parody becomes increasingly evident from the obvious literary allusions (St John's "that damned thing" echoing the celebrated tale by Ambrose Bierce; the "red death" and the indefinite manner of dating ["On the night of September 24, 19—"], meant as playful nods to Poe; the baying of the hound clearly meant to recall Doyle's *The Hound of the Baskervilles;* and, as Steven J. Mariconda has demonstrated, [101] many tips of the hat to Joris-Karl Huysmans, particularly *A Rebours*) and also from such grotesque utterances as "Bizarre manifestations were now too frequent to count." And yet, the story is undeniably successful as an experiment in sheer flamboyance and excess, so long as one keeps in mind that Lovecraft was clearly aiming for such an effect and was doing so at least partially with tongue in cheek.

Some autobiographical touches in the story are worth commenting upon. While St John is clearly meant to be Kleiner, the connexion rests only in the name, as there is not much description of his character. I wonder whether the museum of tomb-loot collected by the two protagonists is a playful reference to Samuel Loveman's quite impressive collection of *objets d'art* (not taken from tombs, one must hasten to add): Lovecraft first saw this collection in September and was tremendously impressed by it. The original typescript of the story includes a reference to a very recent colleague: "A locked portfolio, bound in tanned human skin, held the unknown and unnamable drawings of Clark Ashton Smith." Lovecraft revised this passage (on the advice of C. M. Eddy, Jr[102]) before submitting it to *Weird Tales,* where the tale was published in the issue for February 1924. Another piquant autobiographical connexion relates to one of the most striking images in the tale. As the narrator is attempting to rebury the amulet, he encounters a "queer interruption": "a lean vulture darted down

out of the cold sky and pecked frantically at the grave-earth until I killed him with a blow of my spade." Consider a letter to Maurice W. Moe in which he tells of his pilfering of the gravestone fragment: "A flock of birds descended from the sky and pecked queerly at the ancient turf, as if seeking some strange kind of nourishment in that hoary and sepulchral place."[103]

In terms of Lovecraft's developing pseudomythology, "The Hound" gains importance as the first explicit mention of the *Necronomicon* and as the first time that that work is clearly attributed to Abdul Alhazred. The passage is a curious one: "Alien it [the amulet] indeed was to all art and literature which sane and balanced readers know, but we recognised it as the thing hinted of in the forbidden *Necronomicon* of the mad Arab Abdul Alhazred; the ghastly soul-symbol of the corpse-eating cult of inaccessible Leng, in Central Asia." As with Nyarlathotep, the word "Necronomicon" came to Lovecraft in a dream; and when he, whose Greek was at best rudimentary, later attempted a derivation of the term (*nekros,* corpse; *nomos,* law; *eikon,* picture = "An Image [or Picture] of the Law of the Dead"[104]), the result was wildly inaccurate. In fact, by the rules of Greek etymology the derivation is: *nekros,* corpse; *nemo,* to consider or classify; -*ikon,* neuter adjectival suffix = "A Consideration [or Classification] of the Dead." In interpreting the term, however, one must at least take note of Lovecraft's mistaken derivation. In order to account for a Greek title to a work by an Arab, Lovecraft later claimed that the *Necronomicon* was the Greek translation of a work in Arabic entitled *Al Azif*—a term he cribbed from Samuel Henley's notes to William Beckford's *Vathek* (1786), where *azif,* referring to the buzzing of insects, is defined as "a nocturnal sound . . . believed to be the howling of demons."

Vathek—which Lovecraft first read in late July 1921[105]—is of some interest in itself, as this spectacular work of exotic fantasy—in which a decadent caliph is forced for his sins to descend to Eblis, the Islamic underworld, and face nameless tortures—seems to have fired Lovecraft's imagination at this time and later. The frequent mentions of ghouls in *Vathek* may have had some influence on "The Hound"; Henley notes: "Goul or *ghul,* in Arabic, signifies any terrifying object which deprives people of the use of their senses; hence it became the appellative of that species of monster which was supposed to haunt forests, cemeteries, and other lonely places, and believed not only to tear in pieces the living, but to dig up and devour the dead." Lovecraft was taken with this piquant idea and used

ghouls—rubbery, doglike creatures for the most part—in many later tales. *Vathek* also clearly influenced another work written a little earlier—a proposed novel entitled "Azathoth," which Lovecraft describes in June 1922 as a "weird Vathek-like novel."[106] What Lovecraft perhaps means by this is that "Azathoth" is an attempt both to capture *Vathek*'s air of dreamlike fantasy and to imitate its continuous flow of narrative and absence of chapter divisions. He had been thinking of writing "a weird Eastern tale in the 18th century manner; a tale perhaps too long for publication in amateurdom"[107] as early as October 1921, only a few months after reading *Vathek* and very shortly after borrowing *The Episodes of Vathek* (long stories narrated by various characters in *Vathek* but not published until 1912); but unlike Lovecraft's previous novel idea, *The Club of the Seven Dreamers,* which was probably never even begun, "Azathoth" was actually started, although only to the extent of about 500 words. Its opening is ponderous:

> When age fell upon the world, and wonder went out of the minds of men; when grey cities reared to smoky skies tall towers grim and ugly, in whose shadow none might dream of the sun or of spring's flowering meads; when learning stripped earth of her mantle of beauty, and poets sang no more save of twisted phantoms seen with bleared and inward-looking eyes; when these things had come to pass, and childish hopes had gone away forever, there was a man who travelled out of life on a quest into the spaces whither the world's dreams had fled.

Lovecraft quotes the entire extant text of "Azathoth" in a letter to Long, adding:

> The rest—for which this introduction prepares the reader, will be material of the *Arabian Nights* type. I shall defer to no modern critical canon, but shall frankly slip back through the centuries and become a myth-maker with that childish sincerity which no one but the earlier Dunsany has tried to achieve nowadays. I shall go out of the world when I write, with a mind centred not in literary usage, but in the dreams I dreamed when I was six years old or less—the dreams which followed my first knowledge of *Sinbad,* of *Agib,* of *Baba-Abdallah,* and of *Sidi-Nonman.*[108]

This may or may not suggest that "Azathoth" was to be a non-supernatural adventure story (such as Clark Ashton Smith wrote voluminously in his youth), but probably the work would at least have had some dreamlike elements. "Azathoth" gains its importance only in light of Lovecraft's developing aesthetics and in terms of some stories written several years later, so I will take it up again farther on.

Lovecraft did not do much other writing during his New York stay—he was too busy gallivanting about town and was also occasionally burdened by Bush work, which was tedious but at least brought prompt and welcome cheques that permitted him to extend his sojourn. One little spoof produced probably in late August was the poem "To Zara," which Lovecraft attempted to pass off to Galpin as a lost poem by Edgar Allan Poe. Although Galpin did not swallow the Poe authorship—he believed the poem to be copied from some standard poet, perhaps the obscure Arthur O'Shaughnessy—he nevertheless praised the poem highly. When, in September, he was let in on the joke, Galpin's enthusiasm waned. Lovecraft certainly had a laugh here, since Galpin was ordinarily very censorious of Lovecraft's poetry. The spasm is nothing to write home about: it attempts to imitate Poe's many variations on the "death of a beautiful woman" trope:

> Pale, lovely ghost—so young, so fair,
> To flutter in sepulchral air—
> To flutter where the taper dies
> Amidst a mourner's choking sighs!

Lovecraft finally returned home in mid-October, presumably writing "The Hound" shortly after he got back. Meanwhile Houtain was already asking him for another serial, this time to run in four parts. Lovecraft dawdled on the task through mid-November, but—perhaps because Houtain finally paid up for "Herbert West—Reanimator" and advanced him half the payment for the new story—finally got down to work and wrote "The Lurking Fear" later in the month.[109] Since this story was written in a far more condensed period of time than "Herbert West—Reanimator," it presents a somewhat greater impression of unity than its predecessor, in spite of the need to provide a shocking conclusion at the end of each segment.

No one is likely to regard "The Lurking Fear" as one of Lovecraft's masterworks, even among his early tales; and yet, it is not as contemptible a tale as many critics have deemed it, and once again it contains many

foreshadowings of techniques and devices used to better advantage in later works. In spite of a hackneyed melodramatic opening ("There was thunder in the air on the night I went to the deserted mansion atop Tempest Mountain to find the lurking fear") the tale moves briskly in its account of the narrator's search for the unknown entity that had wreaked havoc amongst the squatters of the Catskills near the Martense mansion. The narrator is convinced that the haunted mansion must be the seat or locus of the horror, and he takes two colleagues, George Bennett and William Tobey, with him to the place one night. They all sleep in the same bed in one room of the mansion, having provided exits either through the door of the room or the window. Although one of the three is to stay awake while the others rest, some strange drowsiness affects all three. The narrator wakes and finds to his horror that both Bennett and Tobey—sleeping on either side of him—have been snatched away by the thing. But why was he spared?

The second episode finds the narrator coming upon another associate, Arthur Munroe, to assist him in his endeavours. They know that the lurking fear customarily roams abroad during thunderstorms, and during one such storm they stop in a hamlet to wait it out. Munroe, who has been looking out the window, seems anomalously fascinated by something outside and does not respond to a summons. When the narrator shakes his shoulder, he finds that "Arthur Munroe was dead. And on what remained of his chewed and gouged head there was no longer a face."

In the third episode the narrator realises that he must explore the history of the mansion to come to terms with its lurking horror. The mansion had been built in 1670 by Gerrit Martense, a wealthy Dutchman who hated the English; his descendants similarly shunned the people around them and and took to intermarrying with the "numerous menial class about the estate." One descendant, Jan Martense, seeks to escape this unhealthy reclusiveness and is killed for his pains. The episode ends with a cataclysmic sight of a "nameless thing" in a subterranean tunnel he stumbles upon as he digs in Jan Martense's grave.

In the final episode the truth is finally learned: there is not one monster but a whole legion of them. The entire mountain is honeycombed with underground passageways housing loathsome creatures, half apes and half moles: they are the "ultimate product of mammalian degeneration; the frightful outcome of isolated spawning, multiplication, and cannibal nutrition above and below the ground; the embodiment of all the snarling

chaos and grinning fear that lurk behind life." In other words, they are the degenerate descendants of the house of Martense.

The theme of hereditary degeneration will be a significant one in Lovecraft's less openly "cosmic" tales; we have already seen it in "Arthur Jermyn," and we will see it again in "The Rats in the Walls" and "The Shadow over Innsmouth." Here the evils of inbreeding are exposed at their ghastliest. It would be easy to make an armchair Freudian analysis of this theme—involving such things as Lovecraft's general coolness toward sex, the frequency with which members of his own ancestry married their cousins, perhaps even his possible awareness of the cause of his father's death—but I think a racialist interpretation is perhaps more plausible. Perhaps the two work in tandem. But I do not think this theme can be explained away by appeal to the facts of biography: it is expressed with great power in several of Lovecraft's stories, and its social implications go well beyond the circumstances of his own life.

There are, of course, some autobiographical touches, although they are rather on the trivial side. Arthur Munroe's name is clearly borrowed from the Munroe brothers, while Jan Martense was probably taken from the Jan Martense Schenck house (1656) in Flatbush, the oldest existing house in New York City. Lovecraft did not see this house during either of his 1922 New York visits, and may not in fact have learnt of it until after writing "The Lurking Fear": he speaks of the house in a letter to Maurice W. Moe of July 31, 1923, but only visited it in 1928.[110] There is, however, a Martense Street very near 259 Parkside, so perhaps this is the origin of the name.

"The Lurking Fear" is more of a detective story than most of his other works, and Lovecraft ably conceals the true state of affairs until at least the third episode. It is only at the conclusion that we learn of the fatal error in reasoning—the belief in only a single monster as the cause of the horror—that led to the deaths of Bennett and Tobey: each were snatched away by different creatures coming from either direction.

The third episode is perhaps the most significant in terms of Lovecraft's later work: this historical investigation will be much elaborated in future tales, and reflects the sentiment Lovecraft expressed in a letter of 1929: "The past is *real*—it is *all there is*."[111] The narrator of "The Lurking Fear" makes a strangely poignant utterance in justifying his investigation of the past: "History, indeed, was all I had after everything else ended in mocking

Satanism." That the heavy hand of the past weighs upon the present and future; that historical study (and, by extension, all scientific enquiry) can somehow help us to come to terms with our fate; that there are facets of the past that are perhaps best left unexplored, but that nevertheless must be explored if we are to understand our place in the world—all these things are perhaps only suggested in "The Lurking Fear," but they will be treated much more exhaustively in the great tales of his final decade.

But we read "The Lurking Fear" not for its element of mystery or its historical or philosophical ruminations, but, quite simply, for its flagrantly overblown prose—a prose that so exquisitely treads the thin line between seriousness and parody, between humour and horror, that we scarcely know how to react to it. Throughout the tales of this period Lovecraft is fond of including, toward the end, an hysterical series of stream-of-consciousness ramblings that somehow epitomise the entire work; and he has never done it better than here:

> Shrieking, slithering, torrential shadows of red viscous madness chasing one another through endless, ensanguined corridors of purple fulgorous sky . . . formless phantasms and kaleidoscopic mutations of a ghoulish, remembered scene; forests of monstrous overnourished oaks with serpent roots twisting and sucking unnamable juices from an earth verminous with millions of cannibal devils; mound-like tentacles groping from underground nuclei of polypous perversion . . . insane lightning over malignant ivied walls and daemon arcades choking with fungous vegetation . . .

Later the narrator piquantly "destroy[s] certain overnourished trees whose very existence seemed an insult to sanity."

Presumably at Lovecraft's request, Clark Ashton Smith was commissioned to illustrate the serial, supplying two illustrations per instalment. They are very curious line drawings. Lovecraft later complained (to others, not to Smith) that Smith had not followed his text very well in the illustrations.[112] Still later Frank Long, probably thinking of these illustrations, pointed out that Smith's artwork contained systematically sexual implications; Lovecraft pooh-poohed the idea,[113] but Smith was clearly having a not-so-private laugh, for many of the trees and vegetation in the illustrations are obviously in the shape of penises, testicles, and

vaginas. Lovecraft quite literally could not conceive of such a thing, and I am convinced this joke never dawned upon him.

"The Lurking Fear" appeared in *Home Brew* from January to April 1923. I have not found any evidence that Lovecraft received the $10 he was owed for the last two instalments, but there is also no evidence that he did not. The last issue announces that the magazine will change its name to *High Life;* Lovecraft later reports that after this change of name the magazine folded in 1924.[114] He was no doubt glad to see the end of the "vile rag."[115]

Although it was late in the year and Lovecraft's sensitivity to cold would not allow him to venture abroad very much, his travels for 1922 were not quite over. In mid-December he visited Boston to participate in a Hub Club meeting with Edith Miniter and others. Afterward he decided to do some solitary antiquarian exploration of some of the towns on the North Shore, specifically Salem. This was either on Sunday the 17th or Monday the 18th.[116] Salem was certainly a delight—it was Lovecraft's first true experience of the seventeenth century, and he canvassed the Witch House (1642), the House of the Seven Gables, and other celebrated sites—but while there he learnt from natives that there was another town a little farther up the coast called Marblehead that was even quainter. Taking a bus there, Lovecraft was "borne into the most marvellous region I had ever dream'd of, and furnished with the most powerful single aesthetick impression I have receiv'd in years."[117]

Marblehead was—and, on the whole, today remains—one of the most charming little backwaters in Massachusetts, full of well-restored colonial houses, crooked and narrow streets, and a spectral hilltop burying-ground from which one can derive a magnificent panoramic view of the city and the nearby harbour. In the old part of town the antiquity is strangely *complete,* and very little of the modern intrudes there. It was this that so captivated Lovecraft:

> Immemorial pinnacle of fabulous antiquity! As evening came I look'd down at the quiet village where the lights came out one by one; at the calm contemplative chimney-pots and antique gables silhouetted against the west; at the glimmering small-paned windows; at the silent and unillumined fort frowning formidably over the snug harbour where it hath frown'd since

> 1742, when 'twas put up for defence against the French King's frigates. Shades of the past! How compleatly, O Mater Novanglia, am I moulded of thy venerable flesh and as one with thy century'd soul![118]

More than seven years later Lovecraft was still attesting to the poignancy of this vision:

> God! Shall I ever forget my first stupefying glimpse of MARBLEHEAD'S huddled and archaick roofs under the snow in the delirious sunset glory of four p.m., Dec. 17, 1922!!! I did not know until an hour before that I should ever behold such a place as Marblehead, and I did not know *until that moment itself* the full extent of the wonder I was to behold. I account that instant—about 4:05 to 4:10 p.m., Dec. 17, 1922—the most powerful single emotional climax experienced during my nearly forty years of existence. In a flash all the past of New England—all the past of Old England—all the past of Anglo-Saxondom and the Western World—swept over me and identified me with the stupendous totality of all things in such a way as it never did before and never will again. That was the high tide of my life.[119]

The most powerful emotional climax he had ever experienced—the high tide of his life: these statements were uttered after his marriage had begun and ended, after his two hellish years in New York and his ecstatic return to Providence, but before his sight of Charleston and Quebec in 1930, which in their way perhaps matched his Marblehead glimpse of 1922. What exactly was it about Marblehead that so struck him? Lovecraft clarifies it himself: with his tremendous imaginative faculty—and with the visible tokens of the present almost totally banished for at least a short interval—Lovecraft felt himself united with his entire cultural and racial past. The past is real—it is all there is; and for a few moments on a winter afternoon in Marblehead the past really was all there was.

It would take Lovecraft nearly a year—and several more trips to Marblehead—to internalise his impressions and transmute them into fiction; but when he did so, in "The Festival" (1923), he would be well on his way to revivifying Mater Novanglia in some of the most topographically and historically rooted weird fiction ever written. He had begun haltingly to head in this direction, with "The Picture in the House"; but New England

was still relatively undiscovered territory to him, and it would take many more excursions for him to imbibe the essence of the area—not merely its antiquities and its history, but its people and their intimate and centuried relations with the soil—and render it fit for fictional use. And it would also take those two years away from New England to make him realise how much he really was moulded of its flesh, so that he could express both the terror and the wonder of this ancient land.

14. For My Own Amusement

(1923–1924)

Amateur activities still loomed large, in spite of the eviction of Lovecraft's "literary" party in the 1922–23 term. Sonia's second issue of the *Rainbow* appeared in May 1922, and as before it was filled with contributions by Lovecraft and his associates. Among them were such things as a long rumination on amateur journalism ("Certain Ideals") by Edith Miniter, poems by Lilian Middleton and Samuel Loveman ("A Letter to G—— K ——," i.e., George Kirk), James F. Morton's disquisition "Misconceptions of Art," the first appearance of Lovecraft's "Celephaïs," and several pieces by Sonia. In the lead article ("Amateurdom and the Editor") she defends the editorial policy of the *United Amateur* against the attacks of Leo Fritter and others, although oddly enough she never mentions Lovecraft in the long piece. This may be a sign that Lovecraft co-wrote it, as indeed internal evidence suggests. "Commercialism—The Curse of Art" is an echo of Lovecraft's own views on the deleterious effects of writing for pay. As before, many photographs of the authors graced the issue, although there is none of Lovecraft this time.

Another piece, "Heins versus Houtain," although bearing Sonia's byline, also seems clearly co-written with Lovecraft, as it contains some of his characteristic mannerisms of style and some of his pet ideas in regard to the proper running of amateurdom. The article is a harsh censure of a feud in the NAPA between the young John Milton Heins and E. Dorothy Houtain; it takes no sides on the feud but criticises its mere existence, saying that its descent into vicious name-calling casts the whole of amateurdom in a bad light. It proposes establishing a "special committee or tribunal" to deal with such disputes and, if necessary, to eject repeat offenders from the world of amateur journalism. This seems very much Lovecraft's idea, echoing as it does his notion (expressed in "Amateur Journalism: Its Possible Needs and Betterment") of setting up an informal academy to correct and even censor inferior writing.

At just the time when Lovecraft's activity in the UAPA seemed on the wane, his involvement with the NAPA took on a sudden and wholly unforeseen turn: it was nothing less than his appointment as interim President to replace William J. Dowdell, who was forced to resign. It is not clear what led to Dowdell's decision: a scholar of amateur journalism has

curtly referred merely to "changes in his business life,"[1] but one wonders whether a remark Lovecraft let slip a few years later—that Dowdell "ran off with a chorus girl in 1922"[2]—has anything to do with the matter. In any case, the appointment was made by the three Executive Judges—Mrs E. Dorothy Houtain, Mrs Annie Cross Ellis, and A. V. Fingulin—who acted as adjudicators of constitutional amendments and had other supervisory functions, but who rarely involved themselves in the day-to-day operation of the association. The UAPA had a set of three Directors who appear to have served an analogous function.

Kleiner describes the remarkable turn of events vividly:

> The occasion of his capitulation, in the home of Mr. and Mrs. George Julian Houtain, on Bedford Avenue, Brooklyn, was a memorable one. It is true that he had begun to waver in his first resolution not to accept, but a final plea from Mrs. Houtain—a plea most irresistibly offered—completely shattered his last defences. The amateur world rocked with the sensation when Lovecraft's name was announced as that of the new president.[3]

It has been thought that this event occurred in September 1922, during Lovecraft's extended New York trip; but in fact the "capitulation" took place on November 30, as Lovecraft stated much later.[4] On that date he also wrote a letter to the Executive Judges (probably in their presence) accepting the position; the letter was published in the *National Amateur* for November [1922]–January 1923. One curious remark occurs so early as a letter to Lillian Clark for August 31: "I had not intended to be active in amateurdom this year; but such are recent developments, that I may shortly make a political move well fitted to startle the entire fraternity and jolt my ungrateful colleagues in the *United*—of this more later." But a footnote to this sentence reads: "Later—I probably shan't make the move after all!"[5] This may or may not refer to some preliminary broaching of the idea of the presidency. In "The President's Annual Report" (*National Amateur,* September 1923) Lovecraft for some reason dates the beginning of his appointment to November 20.

In any event, Lovecraft's first objective was to form an official board. Several other elected officials had resigned shortly after Dowdell; these included Wesley H. Porter (Secretary) and Elgie A. Andrione (Second Vice-President). They were replaced, respectively, by Juliette Harris and Mary F. Kennedy. Samuel Loveman, whom Dowdell had appointed Chairman of the

Bureau of Critics (the NAPA's department of public criticism), had initially chosen Lovecraft as a colleague; but upon his ascension to the presidency Lovecraft resigned this post, turning it over instead to Edward H. Cole. (Loveman's chairmanship had, incidentally, inspired a clever poem by Lovecraft, "To Saml: Loveman, Gent., with a Fellow-Martyr's Heartfelt Sympathy.") Harry E. Martin—whom Lovecraft had met briefly but cordially in Cleveland earlier that year—remained as Official Editor and did solid work.

Lovecraft made the first of five official reports (four "President's Messages" and a "President's Annual Report") for the *National Amateur* dated November [1922]–January 1923. There had been no *National Amateur* since September 1922; the July 1922 issue had been typeset but not issued, and it emerged only later that winter. Lovecraft's report, written on January 11, 1923, is an eloquent plea for the resumption of activity in light of the confusion involving the official board and the general apathy apparently overtaking all amateurdom; Lovecraft himself promised to issue another number or two of his *Conservative* and came through on the promise. He also announced a cooperative journal, the *National Co-operative,* which he planned to issue along the lines of the old *United Co-operative,* but I find no evidence that such a paper actually appeared. Most incredible of all, given his chronic poverty, Lovecraft himself contributed $10 (the equivalent of a week's rent in his New York period) to the official organ fund. Approaching the completion of his ninth year of amateur activity, Lovecraft found himself still drawn to the cause.

The actual content of the five issues of the *National Amateur* published under Lovecraft's presidency does not wholly reflect his predilections, since of course Harry E. Martin had editorial control of the official organ; but Lovecraft worked closely with Martin on the selection of contents, naturally recommending the work of his old and new colleagues. And, of course, the presidency gave him a bully pulpit from which to express his own views of the proper course and direction of amateur activity. Just as he had done with the UAPA, he stressed abstract literary expression as the loftiest desideratum of the amateur; but he was forced to be a little circumspect in so doing, since the NAPA had long emphasised the typographical, social, and political side of amateurdom and Lovecraft was clearly loath to create ill-will by attempting any sort of violent break with tradition. His first "President's Message" is a monument to tact on this matter. Recognising

that the NAPA had been initially founded for the purpose of "laying principal stress upon the mechanical exercise of typography and the wit-sharpening regimen of political manoeuvring," he claims that "social changes of the period"—in particular, the decreasing proportion of youthful members who could practice the "small boy ideal" of amateur printing—have rendered these goals obsolete. "Much more effective and desirable, as I view it, is the later conception developed by experience and exemplified in the golden age of the eighties and nineties, whereby literary advancement and liberal culture through mutual aid were recognised as paramount." Lovecraft could speak with authority on these "Halcyon days" of amateurdom, since three years earlier C. W. Smith had lent him the leading journals of that period from which Lovecraft had written *Looking Backward,* serialised in the *Tryout* from February to July 1920 and shortly thereafter issued by Smith as a booklet—one of the earliest and rarest of Lovecraft's separate publications.

Lovecraft's second "President's Message" was written on March 7, 1923, and published in the March *National Amateur.* In it he reports progress on various fronts. The official board was now filled, while Dowdell himself returned to act as Secretary of Publicity, using his own funds for the office. In January Lovecraft had written a letter and had it mimeographed by J. Bernard Lynch[6] (it has not yet come to light, nor is it likely to do so), in which he asked for further contributions to the official organ fund, and he reported gradual but sufficient responses to it. Individual papers were starting to appear, including Horace L. Lawson's *Wolverine* and Paul J. Campbell's *Liberal* (whose February 1922 issue had included Lovecraft's seminal autobiographical essay, "A Confession of Unfaith").

Lovecraft's final two "President's Messages" (May and July 1923) do not say much of consequence, but "The President's Annual Report" for September 1923 (written on July 1) is a substantial document in which Lovecraft both expressed relief at his "official emancipation" and regret that he was unable to attend the upcoming convention in Cleveland. He scattered praise liberally to his fellow-members of the official board (especially Official Editor Martin), noted that forty-six papers were issued during his term as President, regretted the relative lack of new recruits, and once again encouraged abstract "self-expression" as the highest goal for the amateur. His concluding statement is eloquent, and shows that he has

thoroughly enjoyed his official duties—perhaps because his being called upon to rescue a flagging organisation bolstered his self-esteem:

> The official year is over, and the present board will not be sorry to lay down its responsibilities. To the effective coöperation of my colleagues I owe whatever level short of failure my executive striving may have reached, and for that coöperation I wish to thank them as we retire. I have encountered no intentional obstacles and have found so much encouragement at every turn that I am forced to look outside the National in order to maintain my cosmic attitude of perfect cynicism. I believe that the coming year holds brilliant developments, and hope that the newly elected board may receive as undivided a support and as active a background as the members can give it. I for one shall not be half-hearted in my endeavours.

That last sentence was no doubt sincere, but it proved to be wish-fulfilment; for Lovecraft did not in fact do much more work for the NAPA in the short term. As early as February, Edward H. Cole was urging Lovecraft to run for President for the 1923–24 term; Lovecraft blanched at the idea (for he profoundly disliked the tedious administrative burdens that went with the office), and he discovered shortly thereafter that Hazel Pratt Adams was keen on running and was being supported vigorously by James F. Morton.[7] As a result, he felt that his own candidacy would cause a schism among his own colleagues. (Adams in fact won the presidency.) His reelection as Official Editor of the UAPA in July 1923 compelled him in any event to turn his attention back to his original amateur organisation. It would be a decade before he would resume ties with the NAPA.

Lovecraft's presidency did not by any means signify the end of his own individual amateur work. His *Conservative* was revived for two final issues in March and July 1923. These issues had been planned long in advance; one of the "News Notes" in the July 1921 *United Amateur* declares: "A revival of *The Conservative* is to be expected in the near future, at least two numbers being likely to appear during the official year. The first will contain a notable group of poems likely to win the approval of the discriminating." I do not know the causes for the long delay; perhaps there was a shortage of funds in the family coffers (especially given that Lillian, now head of the household, did not look at all kindly on amateur

journalism). Lovecraft's travels of April and August–September 1922 further depleted the exchequer, as Lovecraft confessed in letters to Samuel Loveman, who was urging him to visit Cleveland again for the NAPA convention in July (where, as president, Lovecraft would preside):

> De re Clevelandica—I wish to hell I could be more certain about the cash question! It looks like a damn gloomy season, for nerves & household illness have reduced my Bushic capacity to a minimum, & I gotta helluva lotta expenses ahead. . . . So as I say, when I think of finance, my naturally long face tends to acquire an exaggeration of its original proportions! But still—if I can get me noives together enough to punish a record pile of Bush junk, there's no telling what I can do by July . . . provided my conservative aunt doesn't make too big a kick against my barbaric extravagance.[8]

Among the expenses Lovecraft speaks of here is the printing of the *Conservative* and the purchase of a new suit. In this letter he avers that "nothing respectable comes for less than XXX shiners nowadays," but the suit ended up costing $42, which made his aunts "dead set against any wholesale expenditures at this melancholy season of monetary sterility."[9] Unfortunately, the suit was stolen two years later in Brooklyn.

The two issues of the *Conservative*—printed by Charles A. A. Parker of Boston, editor of *L'Alouette*—were, however, well worth of cost of printing. They feature many of Lovecraft's closest colleagues, including Loveman, Morton, Galpin, and Long. Issue number twelve (March 1923) is only eight pages, but contains Loveman's poignant poem, "Thomas Holley Chivers" (the friend of Poe), Long's "An Amateur Humorist" (on which more later), and editorial comments by Lovecraft. The thirteenth number, however (July 1923), is, at twenty-eight pages, the longest *Conservative* ever issued, although this is in some senses misleading, for the page dimensions of both these final issues are far smaller than those of earlier issues. In any event, this last issue leads off boldly with Loveman's exquisite ode "To Satan" (dedicated to Lovecraft), followed by "Felis: A Prose Poem" by Long (a tribute to his cat), an essay and a prose-poem by Galpin (under the pseudonyms A. T. Madison and Anatol Kleinst), a long poem in Scots dialect by Morton, poems by Lilian Middleton and John Ravenor Bullen, and more editorial matter by Lovecraft. It was a triumphant conclusion to his amateur periodical.

But even if Bush work was not providing much income, there were other venues for Lovecraft's revisory talents, even in the amateur community. One of the most notable was nothing less than Lovecraft's first appearance in hardcover, in a volume entitled *The Poetical Works of Jonathan E. Hoag.* Hoag, it will be remembered, was the ancient poet (born 1831) in Troy, New York, for whom Lovecraft had been writing annual birthday odes since 1918. Now he wished to see a bound book of his verse and enlisted Lovecraft to gather, revise, and publish his work. Lovecraft in turn called upon Loveman and Morton to aid him. By November 1922 he had received some of the poems as revised by Loveman; he instructed Hoag to pay Loveman $5.00 for 120 lines (or $1.00 for 20 lines, considerably less than the $1.00 for 8 lines that Lovecraft was getting from Bush). The book's publication was being funded by Allen C. Balch, a wealthy entrepreneur who was apparently a friend of Hoag. This point is worth emphasising, since it has long been believed that Lovecraft himself helped to subsidise the book, a highly unlikely prospect given the leanness of his purse. Morton also helped with the revision and was evidently responsible for overseeing the reading of the final page proofs: Lovecraft expresses irritation at Morton's failure to correct some last-minute errors.[10] Lovecraft had an unbound copy by late April, and presumably the finished book emerged shortly thereafter. In the end he waived "all monetary remuneration for my share of the editing"[11] in exchange for twenty copies of the book!

The Poetical Works of Jonathan E. Hoag contains an introduction by Lovecraft in which he bends over backwards to find something good to say about Hoag's mediocre and conventional poetry. Probably what attracted him to Hoag in the first place was that sense of defying time which was at the core of Lovecraft's own sense of the weird:

> Penned in this age of chaos and change, fever and flourish, by a man born when Andrew Jackson was President, when Poe was an unknown youth with his second thin volume of verses in the press, when Coleridge, Moore, Crabbe, Southey, and Wordsworth were living bards, and when the memory of Byron, Shelley, Blake, and Keats was still recent; the present collection of poems is probably unique in its defiance of time and whim.

Even here Lovecraft is exaggerating a bit, since Hoag began writing poetry only at about the age of eighty-five, or around 1915. Still, Lovecraft finds charitable things to say about Hoag's "odes to Nature's primal forces,"

which “sometimes reach impressive depths, as where in speaking of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado he refers to black caverns where ‘Vast nameless satyrs dance with noiseless feet.’” The volume also contains the first six of Lovecraft’s birthday odes (1918–23); he would write four more, followed by an elegy in the autumn of 1927, when Hoag died at the age of ninety-six.

Two poems in the volume are of some interest—“Death” and “To the American Flag.” They are of interest not because of any intrinsic merit in them—they are as conventional as the rest of Hoag’s verse—but because they have been attributed to Lovecraft. After Lovecraft’s death Rheinhart Kleiner supplied Hyman Bradofsky with a set of six poems for the memorial issue (Summer 1937) of the *Californian;* these included four poems undoubtedly by Lovecraft (“Sunset,” “Phaeton,” “August,” and “Providence”) along with the two Hoag poems; August Derleth subsequently included both in *Collected Poems* (1963). “Death” had already appeared, as by Hoag, in the amateur press (*Silver Clarion,* November 1918); there was probably an amateur periodical appearance for “To the American Flag,” but I have not found it. I asked Bradofsky why Kleiner had come to the opinion that these works were by Lovecraft, and Bradofsky said he did not know. It is possible that Lovecraft revised them rather more extensively than he did the remainder of Hoag’s poems; certainly “Death” has sentiments that might be thought Lovecraftian:

> What goal of growth could Life possess,
> If stretch’d out into emptiness,
> With bleak unbounded range?
> What bard with grace could ever sing
> The cloying charm of endless Spring,
> Or praise eternal day?

“To the American Flag” is no better or worse than Lovecraft’s own forgettable patriotic verse. In a 1925 letter Lovecraft speaks of virtually ghostwriting a poem for Hoag, “Alone” (I have found no published appearance for this work, but Lovecraft transcribed the entire poem in his letter),[12] so it is conceivable that these poems really are Lovecraft’s; but the matter will have to await further confirmation.

Meanwhile there was much more travel in the offing—in particular the wonders of Salem, Marblehead, and other Massachusetts sites, some of

which he had discovered late in 1922. Lovecraft visited the Salem-Marblehead area at least three times early in 1923—in early February,[13] in March, and again in April. Of the first trip we do not know much; of the second, occurring on March 10–11, Lovecraft took in a meeting of the Hub Club in Boston, stayed overnight with Edward H. Cole, and returned home. It was on this occasion that he met Albert A. Sandusky, who had printed the earliest issues of the *Conservative.* Sandusky indulged in the rampant use of contemporary slang, and his "wise-cracks"[14] charmed Lovecraft, who shortly thereafter wrote an engaging poem about the Hub Club dinner —"The Feast (Hub Journalist Club, March 10, 1923)"—with a ponderous dedicatory letter to "Wisecrack Sandusky, B.I., M.B.O. (Bachelor of Intelligence, Massachusetts Brotherhood of Owls)," in which he dynamited both his own adherence to archaism and Sandusky's very different orientation: "I, Sir, am an old-fashion'd man still partial to the language of Dr. Johnson's aera; you are a creator of that lively speech which will be classical a century hence." In the poem itself Lovecraft, aside from exhibiting Sandusky's lively speech ("'Nobody home there, bo—no use to knock on ye! / But bozo, can that line of low-grade Socony!'"), cannot resist making a gorgeous pun on Cole's name: "A radiant Cole supplies th' enlightening spark . . ."

We know more about Lovecraft's third trip. He first went to Boston on Thursday, April 12, for his now customary attendance of a Hub Club meeting; he spent the night at the residence jointly occupied by Charles A. A. Parker and Edith Miniter at 30 Waite Street in Malden (a suburb of Boston), being regaled by a tiny six-week-old kitten named Victory who crawled all over him and finally went to sleep on the back of his neck. The next day he proceeded to Salem, then continued on to Danvers—the town, once called Salem-Village, founded in 1636 by some members of the original settlement of 1626, and where the 1692 witch trials had taken place. Spotting an ancient brick residence—the Samuel Fowler house (1809)—that was open as a museum, Lovecraft got off the trolley, went up to the house, and knocked on the door. Let him tell the rest:

> My summons was answer'd simultaneously by two of the most pitiful and decrepit-looking persons imaginable—hideous old women more sinister than the witches of 1692, and certainly not under eighty. . . . The "ell" in which they dwelt was in a state of indescribable squalor; with heaps of rags, books, cooking

> utensils, and the like on every hand. One meagre wood stove fail'd altogether to heat the barren room against the cold of that sharp afternoon.

Lovecraft goes on to tell how one of the women spoke to him—"in a hoarse rattling voice that dimly suggested death," but expressing "a courtly and aristocratick welcome in language an accents beyond question bespeaking the gentlest birth and proudest cultivation!" Lovecraft explored the place thoroughly, finding it well preserved—it had been purchased from the women by the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities, which was allowing them to reside in the place until their deaths—but in the end it was the occupants, not the house, that most struck him: "Yes—it was the old, old New-England story of family decay and aristocratick pauperism . . ."[15] One wonders whether Lovecraft—who had already written about a roughly analogous phenomenon in "The Picture in the House" (1920)—reflected on the parallel between the Fowlers and his own line. The Phillipses were never aristocrats in the proper sense, but their decline was no less precipitous than that of these decrepit crones.

Lovecraft then proceeded out into the countryside, seeking the farmhouse built by Townsend Bishop in 1636—the place occupied by Rebekah Nurse in 1692 when she was accused of witchcraft by the slave woman Tituba and, at the age of seventy, hanged on Gallows Hill. He found both the farmhouse and Rebekah Nurse's grave some distance away. Unlike the Fowler place, the farmhouse was of a cramped seventeenth-century design with low rooms and massive wooden beams; it made him think of the fundamental difference between his beloved Augustan age and the period immediately preceding it: "to my imagination the 17th century is as full of macabre mystery, repression, & ghoulish adumbrations as the 18th is full of taste, gayety, grace, & beauty."[16] He was allowed by the caretaker of the farmhouse to climb all the way up into the attic:

> Thick dust covered everything, & unnatural shapes loomed on every hand as the evening twilight oozed through the little bleared panes of the ancient windows. I saw something hanging from the wormy ridge-pole—something that swayed as if in unison with the vesper breeze outside, though that breeze had no access to this funereal & forgotten place—shadows . . . shadows . . . shadows . . .[17]

Returning that evening to the Parker-Miniter abode, Lovecraft set out the next day (Saturday the 14th) for Merrimac, where his young amateur friend Edgar J. Davis (age fifteen) lived. (Davis would become president of the UAPA during its death-throes in 1925–26.) The two of them visited graveyards in nearby Amesbury (where Whittier lived), and the next day they headed for Newburyport. This coastal town has now been made into a yuppie resort, but in 1923 it was a quiet little backwater that preserved its antiquities in almost as complete a state as Marblehead. So little life did the town have that Lovecraft and Davis rode the trolley car all the way through it without realising that they had passed through the centre of town, which was their destination. Returning on foot to the central square, Lovecraft and Davis revelled in the atmosphere of the past of a once-thriving colonial seaport. They returned to the Davis residence that evening, and on Monday the 16th Lovecraft began the leisurely trip home, passing through Boston and reaching 598 around midnight.

In early June Lovecraft was planning a trip with Edward H. Cole to Concord and Lexington—"those harbours of Yankee sedition"[18]—but I am not certain whether this visit actually occurred. Later that month he went again to Marblehead. Entering one of the mansions open to visitors, he learned from the occupants that he had on his previous visits not even seen the best (i.e., the oldest and best-preserved) parts of the town, and he promptly took steps to remedy the oversight. Once more he took a late train back to Providence, returning at 2 A.M.

Another visit to Boston and a Hub Club meeting followed on July 3–4. This may have been a sort of informal regional NAPA convention for all those amateurs who could not attend the official gathering in Cleveland. On the second day the amateurs took in the Fourth of July celebrations at Boston Common, but when it was time to sing the "Star-Spangled Banner," Lovecraft sang the "correct" words—the drinking-song "To Anacreon in Heaven," the tune upon which Francis Scott Key based his ditty.

Sonia paid Lovecraft a call in Providence on July 15–17. This is the first we hear of the two meeting since Lovecraft's visit to New York the preceding September (although he could have seen Sonia when he returned to the metropolis in November for discussions anent the NAPA presidency), but Sonia makes clear that in the two years preceding their marriage in March 1924 they engaged in "almost daily correspondence—H. P. writing me about everything he did and everywhere he went, introducing names of

friends and his evaluation of them, sometimes filling 30, 40 and even 50 pages of finely written script."[19] What a shame that Sonia felt the need to burn all these letters! The visit in July was a joint business-pleasure trip on her part: on Monday the 16th Lovecraft showed Sonia the customary antiquities of Providence; then, on Tuesday the 17th, the two of them went to the coastal town of Narragansett Pier, in the southern part of the state overlooking the ocean, passing through Apponaug, East Greenwich, and Kingston along the way. On the return trip Sonia continued on to Boston while Lovecraft went home.

On August 10 occurred no less momentous an event than Lovecraft's first personal visit with his longtime friend Maurice W. Moe, who was making a tour of the East. Lovecraft met him at the Providence YMCA that morning, showing him all the local sites before boarding a bus to Boston, where they would meet Cole, Sandusky, and Moe's wife and two children, Robert (age eleven) and Donald (age nine). The next day Lovecraft performed his customary tour-guide act, as Cole relates in a memoir:

> I recall vividly the Saturday afternoon . . . when Lovecraft, Maurice Moe, Albert Sandusky, and I went to Old Marblehead to visit the numerous Colonial houses and other places of interest with which Howard was thoroughly familiar. He was so insistent that our friend from the West should not miss a single relic or point of view over lovely town and harbor that he walked us relentlessly for miles, impelled solely by his inexhaustible enthusiasm until our bodies rebelled and, against his protests, we dragged ourselves to the train. Lovecraft was still buoyant.[20]

Lovecraft himself tells the story still more piquantly: "I walked my associates so far that they rebelled—all lining up on a stone wall & refusing to budge an inch more except in a return direction!"[21] So much for the sickly recluse of a decade before! It is clear that Lovecraft functioned largely on nervous energy: he frequently admitted that he had no *intrinsic* interest in walking or other forms of exercise, but would undertake them only for some other purpose—in this case, the absorption of antiquity and, perhaps, the force-feeding of antiquity upon Moe, since just before his visit Moe had confessed that ancient things did not much attract him. This caused Lovecraft to unearth a withering contrast between the East and the West:

> For mine own Part, I do not see how any Man of acute Sensibilities can dwell in a new Town where there is nothing mellow & traditionally Beautiful. The West, Sir, is abominably crude & garish; because it rose up too quickly to possess any slow natural Growth, & because its Rise was in an Aera when nothing beautiful was created. Moreover, even its recent Adornments are of a blowsy mechanical kind, design'd at wholesale by some weary Hack who hath made plans for countless other Places, & who never expects to live in Sight of his Work. . . . Your Western towns, Sir, are as alike as Peas; so that any two of 'em cou'd be exchang'd without their Inhabitants being Sensible of the Fact.[22]

All this, of course, was based upon Lovecraft's one trip to Cleveland; but I think his point—when satiric exaggeration is taken into account—is still sound; at least, he felt it to be so for himself.

On Monday the 13th Lovecraft reluctantly bade Moe adieu as he put him on the New York bus. He did not know that another thirteen years would pass before he would meet him again; and in later years he expressed chagrin at the mental picture Moe must have carried of him, since at the time Lovecraft was rather portly. Clearly he was being well fed at home—perhaps for the last time. His later economies in diet—both during his New York period and during his last ten years in Providence—are painful to note.

On Tuesday the 14th Lovecraft went on a solitary tour of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, yet another colonial haven he had never seen; he was entirely captivated, for, unlike Marblehead and Newburyport, Portsmouth was a thriving and flourishing city that had nonetheless managed to keep its antiquities intact. Lovecraft found himself "merg'd for the first time in *the living whirl of the real eighteenth century*": "For Portsmouth is the one city which hath kept its own life and people as well as its houses and streets. There are scarce any inhabitants but the old families, and scarce any industries but the old ship-building and the navy yard which hath been there since 1800."[23] Much as Lovecraft found architectural antiquity charming, what most affected him *social continuity from the past.* Physical structures were not enough; it was when those structures were still used for their original purposes that he was most enthralled, perhaps again because it represented for him the sense of time-defiance that was so central to his imagination. Inevitably, there is a tinge of racism here: he makes particular

note of the "pure ENGLISH faces" he sees in Portsmouth, and when he notes that "the Colonial age still liv'd untainted" there, one can scarcely resist the suggestion that that final word meant nothing more than the absence of foreigners.

Travels were by no means over, for in September James F. Morton stopped by for several days. Naturally, Lovecraft took him to Marblehead, remarking in a postcard on September 15: ". . . this time I have a sage companion whom I can't fatigue!"[24] Evidently his being dragged away from the place during Moe's visit still rankled. We do not know much else about Morton's visit, but on Wednesday the 19th the two of them made an expedition to Chepachet, a sleepy little village in the northwestern part of Rhode Island. From there they took the Putnam Pike (now Route 44) in an attempt to reach Durfee Hill, but Morton took a wrong turn and they went astray. They went instead to the nearby town of Pascoag, which Lovecraft found delightful: "The scene is magical—it is the early, half-forgotten, beautiful simple America that Poe and Hawthorne knew—a village with narrow winding streets and Colonial facades, and a sleepy square where merchants sit in their doorways."[25] They returned by train to Providence and went to the ancient wharves where Morton was to catch a boat to take him back to New York. After Morton left, Lovecraft went home and slept for twenty-one hours continuously; later rests of eleven, thirteen, and twelve hours show how much the exertion of the Chepachet expedition, and perhaps of Morton's trip generally, had told upon him. This would be a recurring pattern in Lovecraft's travels—intense activity for several days, followed by collapse. But to someone who, largely for monetary reasons, needed to squeeze as much as he could out of a trip, it was a price well worth paying.

Although he was scarcely aware of it at the time, the summer of 1923 brought a radical change in Lovecraft's literary career—perhaps as radical as his discovery of amateur journalism nine years previously. Whether the change was all for the good is a matter we shall have to consider at a later stage. In March of 1923 the first issue of *Weird Tales* appeared, and a month or two later Lovecraft was urged—initially by Everett McNeil[26] and Morton,[27] but probably by Clark Ashton Smith and others as well—to submit to it.

Weird Tales was the brainchild of Jacob Clark Henneberger, who with J. M. Lansinger founded Rural Publications, Inc., in 1922 to publish a variety of popular magazines. Henneberger had already achieved great success with the magazine *College Humor,* and he now envisioned founding a line of varied periodicals in the detective and horror field. In spite of the fairly significant amount of space given to weird and science fiction in the Munsey magazines (especially *Argosy, All-Story,* and *Cavalier*), there had never before been a magazine solely devoted to the weird. Henneberger had received assurances from such established writers as Hamlin Garland and Ben Hecht that they would be willing to contribute stories of the "unconventional" which they could not land in the "slicks" or other magazines, but they failed to come through when the magazine was actually launched.[28] As later events will show, Henneberger founded *Weird Tales* not out of some altruistic goal of fostering artistic weird literature but largely in order to make money by featuring big-name writers; and when this did not happen, he was quick to free himself of his creation. *Weird Tales* never made any significant amount of money, and on several occasions—especially during the depression—it came close to folding; but somehow it managed to hang on for thirty-one years and 279 issues, an unprecedented run for a pulp magazine.

Henneberger selected Edwin Baird (1886–1957) as editor, with assistance from Farnsworth Wright and Otis Adelbert Kline. Lovecraft no doubt read Baird's short novel "The Heart of Virginia Keep" in the *Argosy* for April 1915, although as it was not a weird tale he probably did not take much notice of it. Baird, indeed, did not appear to have any great sensitivity to the weird. The first several issues—which varied in dimensions from 6 × 9 to an ungainly "bedsheet" size (8½ × 11), all with very crude and amateurish covers—are a decidedly mixed bag: the March 1923 issue featured a striking novelette, "Ooze" by Anthony M. Rud, which Lovecraft enjoyed, but otherwise contained a rag-tag farrago of crude and outlandish stories largely written by beginning writers; subsequent issues are similar, every now and then containing some fairly distinguished work amidst a mass of rubbish. Few established writers, even from the pulp field, appeared in these early issues: Harold Ward, Vincent Starrett, Don Mark Lemon, and Francis Stevens (the latter two of whom had distinguished themselves in the Munseys) are the only recognisable names; and throughout its run *Weird Tales* was much more congenial to new writers

than other pulps, a policy that had both advantages and drawbacks. In the May 1923 issue it began its long-running policy of reprinting weird "classics," in this case Bulwer-Lytton's "The Haunted and the Haunters"; as a result, some fairly rare weird fiction was indeed brought back into print, although valuable space was frequently occupied by very well-known and easily available works (the June 1923 issue contained Poe's "The Murders in the Rue Morgue," and years later the entirety of *Frankenstein* was serialised), and the magazine unconsciously lapsed into arrogance by reprinting "classic" tales from its own earlier issues.

Lovecraft, who may or may not have still been reading some of the Munseys at this time, no doubt read those early issues of *Weird Tales,* finding some of the tales quite powerful. Indeed, even if Morton and others had not advised him to submit to *Weird Tales,* he might eventually have done so on his own; for he was clearly making efforts—naive and clumsy as they may have been—to break into professional print on a somewhat higher grade than *Home Brew.* As early as late 1919, at the urging of one of his aunts, he submitted "The Tomb" to the *Black Cat;*[29] at some later date he submitted "Dagon" to *Black Mask.* Both stories were rejected.[30] This was perhaps not the wisest choice in either instance. Although Lovecraft read some of the early issues of *Black Cat* around the turn of the century, the magazine was not primarily devoted to weird fiction and published, proportionately, much less of it than the Munseys. As for *Black Mask,* it was initially founded as an all-purpose fiction magazine: its first issue (April 1920) featured the subtitle "An Illustrated Magazine of Detective, Mystery, Adventure, Romance, and Spiritualism." But it was just at this time that the earliest stories by Carroll John Daly and Dashiell Hammett were appearing in it, and under the editorship of Joseph T. Shaw, who took over in November 1926, *Black Mask* would by the end of the decade become the nurturing ground for the hard-boiled school of detective fiction. The occasional ghost story did appear, but such an excursion into archaic, Poe-esque horror as "The Tomb" was not likely to find a home there.

What is more, when Lovecraft did submit to *Weird Tales,* he sent five tales simultaneously—"Dagon," "Arthur Jermyn," "The Cats of Ulthar," "The Hound," and "The Statement of Randolph Carter"—along with a cover letter that took pains to point out the rejection of "Dagon" by *Black Cat.* Baird replied to Lovecraft in a personal letter, saying that he would consider accepting these tales if they were typed double-spaced. Lovecraft,

used to the relatively informal policies of the amateur journals and probably wanting to save paper, had typed them single spaced (these typescripts still survive in the John Hay Library). For one whose loathing of the typewriter would in later years reach epic proportions, the prospect of having to undergo such a labour for what he believed to be a not entirely certain assurance of acceptance was formidable; but he finally typed "Dagon," which was accepted, as were the other four.

It is one of the many anomalies of Lovecraft's involvement with *Weird Tales* that his first published work in the magazine was not a story but a letter. With a certain impishness, Baird printed the bulk of Lovecraft's cover letter accompanying his five tales; this letter appeared in the September 1923 issue, by which time his tales had been accepted. Baird's editorial preface to the letter (appearing in the letter column of the magazine, "The Eyrie") already calls Lovecraft a "master of the weird tale"; here are some extracts from the letter:

> My Dear Sir: Having a habit of writing weird, macabre, and fantastic stories for my own amusement, I have lately been simultaneously hounded by nearly a dozen well-meaning friends into deciding to submit a few of these Gothic horrors to your newly-founded periodical. . . .
>
> I have no idea that these things will be found suitable, for I pay no attention to the demands of commercial writing. My object is such pleasure as I can obtain from the creation of certain bizarre pictures, situations, or atmospheric effects; and the only reader I hold in mind is myself. . . .
>
> I like *Weird Tales* very much, though I have seen only the April number. Most of the stories, of course, are more or less commercial—or should I say conventional?—in technique, but they all have an enjoyable angle. . . .

No wonder Baird added at the end of this letter: "Despite the foregoing, or because of it, we are using some of Mr. Lovecraft's unusual stories . . ." One would like to think that the letter was in some senses a self-parody, but it does not appear to be. Highbrow and condescending as it may appear, it quite accurately reflects the aesthetic theory Lovecraft had by this time evolved. The mention of "half-a-dozen well-meaning friends" is interesting: a subsequent letter to Baird, published in the October 1923 issue, notes that "people in Massachusetts, New York, Ohio and California have been

equally prompt in calling my attention" to the magazine. The New Yorker is surely Morton, just as the Californian is Smith; the Massachusetts friend is probably W. Paul Cook, and the Ohio friends might have been Alfred Galpin or Samuel Loveman.

This second letter (published in the same issue that contained "Dagon") is interesting in that it indicates that Lovecraft was also submitting his weird verse to the magazine. He quotes the opening stanza of "Nemesis" and says that he will one day send it to *Weird Tales* as a "filler"; Baird, in an editorial note, quotes the "prologue" to "Psychopompos" and declares that he may "some day" print it. The magazine had evidently begun with a "no-poetry" policy, and as early as May 1923 Lovecraft declared[31] that he had convinced Baird to overturn it: the July 1923 issue contained two poems by Clark Ashton Smith, and Lovecraft must have urged both Smith to submit them and Baird to accept them. "Nemesis" did in fact appear in the April 1924 issue, but "Psychopompos" was published only posthumously.

Lovecraft quickly became a fixture with *Weird Tales,* appearing in five of the six issues from October 1923 to April 1924 (there was no issue for December 1923). He might even be thought to have appeared in all six, if the publication of Sonia Greene's "The Horror at Martin's Beach" (retitled, to Lovecraft's chagrin, "The Invisible Monster") in the November 1923 issue can count as one of his appearances. The five tales he had initially submitted took their time appearing, and the last one, "The Cats of Ulthar," was not published until the February 1926 issue, long after several other tales submitted subsequently had already been printed.

Lovecraft no doubt found the money he received from the magazine a small but welcome relief from poverty. As he wrote in jest in October 1924: "O cheques, come to papa!"[32] *Weird Tales* paid upon publication, not (as the better grade of pulps and all the "slicks" did) on acceptance; and judging from the evidence of his early payments, he appears initially to have received much better than the standard 1¢ a word. Later this rate would decline, but Lovecraft would still receive *Weird Tales'* "highest" rate of 1½¢ a word.

Another event of the summer of 1923 that significantly affected Lovecraft's weird fiction was the discovery of the great Welsh writer Arthur Machen (1863–1947; pronounced MACK-en). As with his discoveries of Ambrose Bierce and Lord Dunsany in 1919, it is a wonder that he had not read him

earlier, for Machen's greatest celebrity had been in the 1890s, and by 1923 he was already regarded (correctly, as it happens) as having done his best work long before. Machen had attained not merely fame but actual notoriety with such works as *The Great God Pan and The Inmost Light* (1894), *The Three Impostors* (1895), and *The House of Souls* (1906), which many believed to be the outpourings of a diseased mind; Machen soberly reprinted some of the bad reviews he had received in the volume *Precious Balms* (1924). In fact, Machen himself ascribed to the same Victorian sexual pruderies he seemingly flaunted; and the very covert intimations of aberrant sex in such tales as "The Great God Pan" and "The White People" were as horrifying to him as they were to his audience. Temperamentally Machen was not at all similar to Lovecraft: an unwavering Anglo-Catholic, violently hostile to science and materialism, seeking always for some mystical sense of "ecstasy" that might liberate him from what he fancied to be the prosiness of contemporary life, Machen would have found Lovecraft's mechanistic materialism and atheism repugnant in the extreme. They may have shared a general hostility to the modern age, but they were coming at it from very different directions. Lovecraft would sing Machen's praises in "Supernatural Horror in Literature," but in a letter of 1932 he offers a much more probing analysis:

> What Machen probably likes about perverted and forbidden things is their departure from and hostility to the commonplace. To him—whose imagination is not cosmic—they represent what Pegana and the River Yann represent to Dunsany, whose imagination *is* cosmic. People whose minds are—like Machen's—steeped in the orthodox myths of religion, naturally find a poignant fascination in the conception of things which religion brands with outlawry and horror. Such people take the artificial and obsolete concept of "sin" seriously, and find it full of dark allurement. On the other hand, people like myself, with a realistic and scientific point of view, see no charm or mystery whatever in things banned by religious mythology. We recognise the primitiveness and meaninglessness of the religious attitude, and in consequence find no element of attractive defiance or significant escape in those things which happen to contravene it. The whole idea of "sin", with its overtones of unholy fascination, is in 1932 simply a curiosity of intellectual history.

> The filth and perversion which to Machen's obsoletely orthodox mind meant profound defiances of the universe's foundations, mean to us only a rather prosaic and unfortunate species of organic maladjustment—no more frightful, and no more interesting, than a headache, a fit of colic, or an ulcer on the big toe.[33]

And yet, because Machen so sincerely feels the sense of sin and transgression in those things that "religion brands with outlawry and horror," he manages to convey his sentiments to the reader in such a way that his work remains powerful and effective. Lovecraft himself came to regard "The White People" as perhaps second to Algernon Blackwood's "The Willows" as the greatest weird tale of all time; he may well be right.

Not all Machen's fiction—let alone the oceans of essays and journalism he wrote over his career—is to be considered horrific, and some of his most successful and artistically finished works are only on the borderline of the weird. The short novel *A Fragment of Life* (in *The House of Souls*) is an exquisite probing of the mysteries and wonders of ordinary life, portraying a stolid bourgeois couple in London who feel the call of their ancestry and return to their native Wales. As for *The Hill of Dreams* (1907), that agonising depiction of the anguish of artistic creation, Lovecraft waxed enthusiastic when he read it:

> And I have read *The Hill of Dreams!* Surely a masterpiece—though I hope it isn't quite as autobiographical as some reviewers claim. I'd hate to think of Machen himself as that young neurotic with his sloppy sentimentalities, his couch of thorns, his urban eccentricities, and all that! But Pegana, what an imagination! Cut out the emotional hysteria, and you have a marvellously appealing character—how vivid is that exquisite Roman day-dreaming! . . . even if the *spirit* is sadly un-Roman. Machen is a Titan—perhaps the greatest living author—and I must read everything of his.[34]

Lovecraft's reaction is typical: the novel is indeed very autobiographical, and it would be impossible to "cut out" all the "emotional hysteria" without disfiguring the work.

Lovecraft's reference to the "Roman day-dreaming" in the novel—that great fourth chapter where Lucian Taylor imagines himself back in Roman times with the Second Augustan Legion at Isca Silurum (Caerleon-on-Usk,

where Machen himself grew up)—points to one of the bonds he immediately felt with Machen. In later life Lovecraft professed great fascination for Roman Britain—the one point where his Anglophilia and his love of Roman civilisation joined—and it is not surprising that Machen's own fascination helped to foster this interest.

Although Lovecraft dutifully read as much of Machen as he could—his quirky treatise on aesthetics, *Hieroglyphics: A Note upon Ecstasy in Literature* (1902), the curious mainstream novel *The Secret Glory* (1922), his three delightful autobiographies, *Far Off Things* (1922), *Things Near and Far* (1923), and *The London Adventure* (1924), even such minor works as *The Canning Wonder* (1926), a nonfiction account of a strange disappearance—it was the horror tales that remained closest to his heart. In particular, a whole series of works—including "The White People," "The Shining Pyramid," "Novel of the Black Seal" (a segment of the episodic novel *The Three Impostors*), and others—make use of the old legends of the "Little People," a supposedly pre-Aryan race of dwarfish devils who still live covertly in the secret places of the earth and occasionally steal human infants, leaving one of their own behind. Lovecraft would transform this topos into something even more sinister in some of his later tales.

Lovecraft's reference to Machen as the "greatest living author" was not a complete exaggeration, at least in terms of Machen's contemporary reputation. In 1923 Martin Secker issued a nine-volume collected edition of his work; the next year Knopf issued an exquisitely printed limited edition of his prose poems, *Ornaments in Jade;* the first edition of *The Hill of Dreams* was fetching enormous sums on the rare book market. Machen certainly was a distinctive figure, and the obscurity that has overtaken his work—partly because of the prejudice against weird fiction that continues to dominate the academic community, and partly because, like so many other writers, Machen wrote too much and in his later years babbled himself out into harmless verbosity—is quite undeserved. He, no less than Oscar Wilde or Walter Pater, helped to make the Yellow Nineties what they were; and although even his best work is marred by prolixity, formlessness, and even a certain self-indulgence, it remains a striking contribution to the literature of its time. On a much lesser scale than Lovecraft, Machen continues to attract a devoted band of followers who use the small press to keep his work alive after a fashion; he is one of those many authors who must suffer the indignity of periodic resurrection.

Lovecraft seems to have owed the discovery of Machen to Frank Long, as on one occasion he notes rereading "your Machen books."[35] I cannot detect any Machen influence on Lovecraft's tales prior to 1926, but the Welshman's work clearly filtered into Lovecraft's imagination and eventually emerged in a quite transformed but still perceptible manner in some of his best-known stories.

Lovecraft had, indeed, not written any stories since "The Lurking Fear" in November 1922; but then, in a matter of two or three months, he wrote three in quick succession—"The Rats in the Walls," "The Unnamable," and "The Festival." All three are of considerable interest, and the first is without question the greatest tale of Lovecraft's early period.

The plot of "The Rats in the Walls" is deceptively simple. A Virginian of British ancestry, a man named Delapore (his first name is never given), decides to spend his latter years in refurbishing and occupying his ancestral estate in southern England, Exham Priory, whose foundations go disturbingly far back in time, to a period even before the Roman conquest of the first century A.D. Delapore spares no expense in the restoration, and proudly moves into his estate on July 16, 1923. He has reverted to the ancestral spelling of his name, de la Poer, in spite of the fact that the family has a very unsavoury reputation with the local population—a reputation for murder, kidnapping, witchcraft, and other anomalies extending back to the first Baron Exham in 1261. Associated with the house or the family is the "dramatic epic of the rats—the lean, filthy, ravenous army which had swept all before it and devoured fowl, cats, dogs, hogs, sheep, and even two hapless human beings before its fury was spent."

All this seems merely conventional ghostly legendry, and de la Poer pays no attention to it. But shortly after his occupancy of Exham Priory, odd things begin to happen; in particular, he and his several cats seem to detect the scurrying of rats in the walls of the structure, even though such a thing is absurd in light of the centuries-long desertion of the place. The scurrying seems to be descending to the basement of the edifice, and one night de la Poer and his friend, Capt. Edward Norrys, spend a night there to see if they can elucidate the mystery. De la Poer wakes to hear the scurrying of the rats continuing "*still downward,* far underneath this deepest of sub-cellars," but Norrys hears nothing. They come upon a trap-door leading to a cavern beneath the basement, and decide to call in scientific specialists to

investigate the matter. As they descend into the nighted crypt, they come upon an awesome and horrific sight—an enormous expanse of bones: "Like a foamy sea they stretched, some fallen apart, but others wholly or partly articulated as skeletons; these latter invariably in postures of daemoniac frenzy, either fighting off some menace or clutching some other forms with cannibal intent." When de la Poer finds that some bones have rings bearing his own coat of arms, he realises the truth—his family has been the leaders of an ancient cannibalistic witch-cult that had its origins in primitive times—and he experiences a spectacular evolutionary reversal: "Curse you, Thornton, I'll teach you to faint at what my family do! . . . 'Sblood, thou stinkard, I'll learn ye how to gust . . . wolde ye swynke me thilke wys? . . . *magna Mater! Magna Mater! . . . Atys . . . Dia ad aghaidh 's ad aodann . . . agus bas dunach ort! Dhonas 's dholas ort, agus leat-sa! . . . Ungl . . . ungl . . . rrrlh . . . chchch . . .*" He is found bending over the half-eaten form of Capt. Norrys.

It is difficult to convey the richness and cumulative horror of this story in any synopsis; next to *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* it is Lovecraft's greatest triumph in the old-time "Gothic" vein—although even here the stock Gothic features (the ancient castle with a secret chamber; the ghostly legendry that proves to be founded on fact) have been modernised and refined so as to be chillingly convincing. And the fundamental premise of the story—that a human being can suddenly reverse the course of evolution—could only have been written by one who had accepted the Darwinian theory.

"The Rats in the Walls" must have been written in late August or early September, for Lovecraft announced its completion in a letter of September 4.[36] It is notable for being both one of the most historically rich and one of the most contemporary stories he had written to date. The very first sentence ("On July 16, 1923, I moved into Exham Priory . . .") boldly places us in the modern world, unlike the Poe-esque nebulosity of "The Hound" ("On the night of September 24, 19—"), the 1896 setting of "The Picture in the House," or the unspecified chronology of "The Outsider," "The Nameless City," and others. This contemporaneousness will become a hallmark of Lovecraft's later work, creating an immediacy of effect that must have augmented the horror for his earliest readers. At the same time, this tale reaches farther back into the historic and prehistoric past than any other previous tale except "Dagon" and perhaps "The Temple": by an

obvious but nonetheless effective symbolism, the narrator's descent into the successive layers of his cellar point to his descent into increasingly remote layers of history.

Lovecraft the Anglophile captures the English setting of the tale with notable felicity, although with some puzzling errors. The town nearest to Exham Priory is given as Anchester, but there is no such town in England. Lovecraft must have been thinking either of Ancaster in Lincolshire or (more likely) Alchester in the southern county of Oxfordshire. Perhaps this is a deliberate alteration; but then, what do we make of the statement that "Anchester had been the camp of the Third Augustan Legion"? Neither Alchester nor Ancaster were the sites of legionary fortresses in Roman Britain; what is more, the Third Augustan Legion was never in England at all, and it was the Second Augustan Legion that was stationed at Isca Silurum (Caerleon-on-Usk) in what is now Wales. This is a strange error for Lovecraft to have made, and he repeats it in the fragment "The Descendant" (1927?). Even if this is a deliberate change, it is too clearly at variance with the known facts to be plausible.

Certain surface features of the tale—and perhaps one essential kernel of the plot—were taken from other works. As Steven J. Mariconda has pointed out,[37] Lovecraft's account of the "epic of the rats" appears to be derived from a chapter in S. Baring-Gould's *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages* (1869), of which Lovecraft speaks highly in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" and which he had probably read by this time. The Gaelic portions of de la Poer's concluding cries were lifted directly from Fiona Macleod's "The Sin-Eater," which Lovecraft read in Joseph Lewis French's anthology, *Best Psychic Stories* (1920).

More significantly, the very idea of atavism or reversion to type seems to have been derived from a story by Irvin S. Cobb, "The Unbroken Chain," published in *Cosmopolitan* for September 1923 (the issue, as is still customary with many magazines, was probably on the stands at least a month before its cover date) and later collected in Cobb's collection *On an Island That Cost $24.00* (1926). Lovecraft admitted that Long gave him the magazine appearance of this story in 1923,[38] and he alluded to it without citing its title in "Supernatural Horror in Literature." This tale deals with a Frenchman who has a small proportion of negroid blood from a slave brought to America in 1819. When he is run down by a train, he cries out in an African language—*"Niama tumba!"*—the words that his black ancestor

shouted when he was attacked by a rhinoceros in Africa. The whole story, aside from being vilely racist, telegraphs its punch long before the end; but the sudden atavistic cry may have fired Lovecraft's imagination. It is, I suppose, to Lovecraft's credit that he has eliminated any racist overtones in his version. In an early passage in Cobb's story, a character ruminates on the general conception:

> ". . . the fear that some day, somehow, somewhere, some word from him, some involuntary spasmodic act of his, some throw-back manifestation of motive or thought that's been hiding in his breed for generation after generation, will betray his secret and utterly undo him. Call it by what scientific jargon or popular term you please—hereditary instinct, reversion to type, transmitted impulse, dormant primitivism, elemental recurrence —still the haunting dread of it must be walking with him in every waking minute."[39]

But it has to be admitted that Lovecraft has vastly enriched and subtilised the idea.

"The Rats in the Walls" is, technically, the first story Lovecraft wrote as a professional writer, for by this time his first tales had been accepted, though not published, in *Weird Tales*. It is, of course, a very different thing to say that Lovecraft somehow consciously wrote this story with a professional market in mind: I find no evidence of this. It is true that he did not submit this tale to an amateur journal; it is also true that he submitted the tale first, not to *Weird Tales,* but to the *Argosy All-Story Weekly,* a Munsey magazine whose managing editor, Robert H. Davis, rejected it as being (in Lovecraft's words) "too horrible for the tender sensibilities of a delicately nurtured publick."[40] Davis was, of course, the longtime editor of the *All-Story* during its entire run as a separate magazine (1905–20); when it was merged with the *Argosy* in 1920, he was forced to yield to Matthew White, Jr., who had edited the *Argosy* since 1886.[41] Davis left the Munsey organisation and founded his own literary agency, but it did not do well; around 1922 he returned to Munsey as managing editor under White. The *Argosy All-Story* may or may not have paid better than *Weird Tales* (it paid A. Merritt only 1¢ a word for *The Metal Monster* in 1920), but it clearly had a wider circulation and greater prestige; but when "The Rats in the Walls" was rejected, Lovecraft immediately sent it to Baird, who accepted it and ran it in the March 1924 issue. All this does not mean, however, that

Lovecraft was suddenly becoming (as he later derisively termed it) a "pulp-hound" who sought acceptance in the pulps as a vindication of his self-worth.

In a late letter Lovecraft stated a little curiously that "The Rats in the Walls" was "suggested by a very commonplace incident—the cracking of wall-paper late at night, and the chain of imaginings resulting from it."[42] This is curious because this specific image does not in fact occur in the story. Lovecraft has recorded the kernel of the idea in his commonplace book: "Wall paper cracks off in sinister shape—man dies of fright" (entry 107). And yet, an earlier entry (79) is also suggestive: "Horrible secret in crypt of ancient castle—discovered by dweller." (This latter entry was probably inspired by Bram Stoker's final novel, *The Lair of the White Worm* [1911], which Lovecraft read around this time.[43]) The story may then be a fusion of images and conceptions that had been percolating in his mind for years.

"The Rats in the Walls," the longest of Lovecraft's tales by far to date (aside from the episodic "Herbert West—Reanimator" and "The Lurking Fear"), is similarly the broadest in scope and the most meticulously written. It is, in one sense, the pinnacle of his work in the Gothic/Poe-esque vein (it is, in effect, his "Fall of the House of Usher"), but in another sense it is very much a work of his own in its adumbration of such central themes as the influence of the past upon the present, the fragility of human reason, the baleful call of ancestry, and the ever-present threat of a reversion to primitive barbarism. It represents an exponential leap in quality from his past work, and he would produce nothing so good until "The Call of Cthulhu" in 1926.

"The Unnamable" and "The Festival," Lovecraft's two other original stories of 1923, return to New England in their different ways. The former is slight, but could be thought of as a sort of veiled justification for the type of weird tale Lovecraft was evolving; much of it reads like a treatise on aesthetics. It has gone relatively unnoticed that "The Unnamable" is the second story to involve Randolph Carter, even though he is referred to only once as "Carter." Still more unnoticed is the fact that this Carter is very different in temperament from that of "The Statement of Randolph Carter," as the Carters in the three later tales involving him will be as well; so that the blithe assumption that Carter is simply a stand-in for Lovecraft must be severely qualified or, at any rate, be examined with care.

The tale takes place in an "old burying ground" in Arkham, where Carter and his friend Joel Manton (clearly based upon Maurice W. Moe) are discussing the horror tales that Carter has written. Through Manton, Lovecraft satirises the stolid bourgeois objections to the weird—as contrary to probability; as not based on "realism"; as extravagant and unrelated to life—that he himself no doubt received on many occasions in the amateur press; he did so in the Transatlantic Circulator of 1921, leading to the first coherent enunciation of his theory of the weird in the *In Defence of Dagon* papers. The narrator paraphrases Manton's views: "It was his view that only our normal, objective experiences possess any aesthetic significance, and that it is the province of the artist not so much to rouse strong emotion by action, ecstasy, and astonishment, as to maintain a placid interest and appreciation by accurate, detailed transcripts of every-day affairs." This, and the rest of the passage, testify to Lovecraft's absorption of Decadent aesthetics and his revulsion from Victorian standards of mundane realism. The mention of "ecstasy" may reflect his reading, around this time, of Machen's *Hieroglyphics: A Note upon Ecstasy in Literature* (1902), which Lovecraft, although not accepting it in its entirety, found stimulating in its championing of literature that frees itself from the commonplace. Manton's objection to supernaturalism in literature, in spite of the fact that he "believ[es] in the supernatural much more fully than I," is a snide reference to Moe's theism: anyone who believes in an omnipotent God and in the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead can scarcely object to the depiction of the supernatural in fiction! The rest of the story—in which Manton scoffs at the very idea of something being termed "unnamable" but later encounters just such an entity in the burying ground—does not require much comment.

Aside from its interesting aesthetic reflexions, "The Unnamable" fosters that sense of the lurking horror of New England history and topography which we have already seen in "The Picture in the House," and which would become a dominant topos in Lovecraft's later work. The tale is set in Arkham, but the actual inspiration for the setting—a "dilapidated seventeenth-century tomb" and, nearby, a "giant willow in the centre of the cemetery, whose trunk has nearly engulfed an ancient, illegible slab"—is the Charter Street Burying Ground in Salem, where just such a tree-engulfed slab can be found. Later in the story Lovecraft records various "old-wives' superstitions," some of which are taken from Cotton Mather's

Magnalia Christi Americana (1702), of which he owned an ancestral first edition. As in "The Picture in the House," Lovecraft's attempt to find horror in the seventeenth century is manifest: ". . . no wonder sensitive students shudder at the Puritan age in Massachusetts. So little is known of what went on beneath the surface—so little, yet such a ghastly festering as it bubbles up putrescently in occasional ghoulish glimpses."

One of those glimpses is presented in "The Festival" (written probably in October[44]), which for the sustained modulation of its prose can be considered a virtual 3000-word prose-poem. Although it is only in this tale that the mythical town of Kingsport (first cited in "The Terrible Old Man") is definitively identified with Marblehead, Lovecraft makes it clear that the seventeenth-century past is not in fact the true source of horror in the tale; in rhythmical, alliterative prose he suggests a horror of much older lineage: "It was the Yuletide, that men call Christmas though they know in their hearts it is older than Bethlehem and Babylon, older than Memphis and mankind." The Christian holiday is a mere veneer for a much older festival that reaches back to the agricultural rhythms of primitive man—the winter solstice, whose passing foretells the eventual reawakening of the earth in spring.

The narrator follows a course along the old town that can be traversed to this day. He passes by the old cemetery on the hill, where (in a literal borrowing from his letter of nearly a year previous) "black gravestones stuck ghoulishly through the snow like the decayed fingernails of a gigantic corpse," and makes his way to a house with an overhanging second story (a house clearly identifiable in the central square of Marblehead). There he encounters the past embodied in both furnishings and inhabitants:

> He beckoned me into a low, candle-lit room with massive exposed rafters and dark, stiff, sparse furniture of the seventeenth century. The past was vivid there, for not an attribute was missing. There was a cavernous fireplace and a spinning-wheel at which a bent old woman in loose wrapper and deep poke-bonnet sat back toward me, silently spinning despite the festive season.

For Lovecraft, the eighteenth-century rationalist, the seventeenth century in Massachusetts—dominated by the Puritans' rigid religion, bereft of the sprightliness of the Augustan wits, and culminating in the psychotic horror of the Salem witchcraft trials—represented an American "Dark Age" fully

as horrifying as the early mediaeval period in Europe he so despised. Religion—seen by Lovecraft as the overwhelming of the intellect by emotion, childish wish-fulfilment, and millennia of pernicious brainwashing—proves to be the source of terror in "The Festival," whose culminating scene occurs in an old church in Marblehead (probably—as Donovan K. Loucks has ascertained—one of two churches no longer extant: the First Meeting House, built in 1648 on Old Burial Hill, or the Second Congregational Church, built in 1715 at 28 Mugford Street). But Lovecraft sees this Christian edifice as a mere façade for rituals of much older provenance; and when the band of townspeople descend robotically down a "trap-door of the vaults which yawned loathsomely open just before the pulpit," we can see both a relationship to "The Rats in the Walls" (where also a physical descent symbolises a descent into the archaic past) and an indication of the superficiality of Christianity's formalisation of primitive festivals from the depths of prehistory.

The conclusion of "The Festival"—marred by the luridness of grotesque winged creatures who carry off each of the celebrants on their backs—is not commensurate with its mesmeric opening and middle sections; but its evocation of the centuried past, in prose as fluid, restrained, and throbbingly vital as Lovecraft ever wrote, will always give this tale a high place among his lesser works.

It seems odd that Lovecraft required almost a year and at least four or five trips to Marblehead after his first visit of December 1922 to write the tale; but we will find that he frequently needed lengthy periods of reflection before topographical or other impressions settled sufficiently in his mind to emerge in the form of weird fiction. There is a literary (or scientific) influence as well. In 1933 Lovecraft stated in reference to the tale: "In intimating an alien race I had in mind the survival of some clan of pre-Aryan sorcerers who preserved primitive rites like those of the witch-cult—I had just been reading Miss Murray's *The Witch-Cult in Western Europe.*"[45] This landmark work of anthropology by Margaret A. Murray, published in 1921, made the claim (now regarded by modern scholars as highly dubious) that the witch-cult in both Europe and America had its origin in a pre-Aryan race that was driven underground but continued to lurk in the hidden corners of the earth. Lovecraft—having just read a very similar fictional exposition of the idea in Machen's stories of the "Little People"—was much taken with this conception and would allude to it in

many subsequent references to the Salem witches in his tales; as late as 1930 he was presenting the theory seriously:

> Another and highly important factor in accounting for Massachusetts witch-belief and daemonology is the fact, now widely emphasised by anthropologists, that the traditional features of witch-practice and Sabbat-orgies *were by no means mythical. . . . Something actual was going on under the surface,* so that people really stumbled on *concrete experiences* from time to time which confirmed all they had ever heard of the witch species. . . . Miss Murray, the anthropologist, believes that the witch-cult actually established a "coven" (its only one in the New World) in the Salem region about 1690 . . . For my part—I doubt if a compact coven existed, but certainly think that people had come to Salem who had a direct personal knowledge of the cult, and who were perhaps initiated members of it. I think that some of the rites and formulae of the cult must have been talked about secretly among certain elements, and perhaps furtively practiced by the few degenerates involved. . . . Most of the people hanged were probably innocent, yet I do think there was a concrete, sordid background not present in any other New England witchcraft case.[46]

Lovecraft will not find many today who will agree with him on this point. I think that his enthusiastic response to Murray is one of those relatively few instances where his longing for some bizarre theory to be true convinced him that it actually was true. In this case the theory so perfectly meshed with some of his own *literary* tropes that he found it compelling in fact: he had conceived the notion of "alien" (i.e., non-human or not entirely human) races lurking on the underside of civilisation as early as "Dagon" and "The Temple," although the prime philosophical motivation had been the diminution of human self-importance and a refutation of the idea that we are the clear "rulers" of the planet; then he found it in an author (Machen) whose work he perhaps saw as a striking anticipation of his own; so that when a respected scholar actually propounded a theory that approximately echoed this trope, he naturally embraced it. Lovecraft makes the connexion explicit in a letter of 1924: "In this book the problem of witchcraft superstition is attacked from an entirely new angle—wherein the explanation of delusion and hysteria is discarded in favour of an hypothesis

almost exactly like . . . the one used by Arthur Machen in fiction . . .”[47] It is also a fact that Murray’s book was received as a significant work of anthropology, although many early reviewers disagreed with her conclusions; one critic, Robert Lynd (a literary man, not an anthropologist), wrote piquantly: “Miss Murray is to be congratulated on having produced a fascinating guide to the practices of witchcraft. Her book should be invaluable to romantic novelists.”[48] Lovecraft cannot be blamed if her views were only later overturned or, at the very least, regarded as highly implausible.

Meanwhile Lovecraft had actually met a writer of weird fiction in his own hometown—Clifford Martin Eddy, Jr (1896–1967), who with his wife Muriel became fairly close to Lovecraft in the year or two preceding his marriage. The Eddys were at that time residents of East Providence, across the Seekonk River, and after an initial round of correspondence and a few telephone calls, Lovecraft walked three miles to visit them at their home on Second Street in August 1923.[49]

But how did Lovecraft come into contact with the Eddys at all? There is some doubt on the matter. Muriel Eddy wrote two significant memoirs of Lovecraft, one published in 1945, the other in 1961. The first memoir seems on the whole quite reliable; the second, written in a gushing and histrionic manner, makes many statements not found in the first, including the claim that Lovecraft’s mother and Eddy’s mother (Mrs Grace Eddy) had become friends by meeting at a women’s suffrage meeting and that at this time (probably in 1918, although Muriel Eddy supplies no date) the two of them discovered their sons were both enthusiasts of the weird.[50] This is a remarkable assertion, and I am frankly sceptical of it. There is no other indication that Susie Lovecraft was interested in women’s suffrage; although, given the paucity of information about her, especially her later years, I suppose it is at least conceivable. Muriel Eddy goes on to claim that there was extensive correspondence between Lovecraft and the Eddys until Susie was taken to the hospital in the spring of 1919; Lovecraft responded by sending them application blanks for the UAPA. The Eddys do not appear on any UAPA membership lists I have seen. Muriel then claims that the correspondence abruptly ceased, only to resume two years later, after Susie’s death. Jim Dyer, Muriel Eddy’s grandson, claims to have letters from Lovecraft dating to as early as 1918, but he has not made them public.

Lovecraft does not, to my knowledge, mention the Eddys in correspondence prior to October 1923, at which time he refers to Eddy as "the new Providence amateur."[51] He certainly gives no indication that he had once been in touch with the Eddys and was only now reestablishing contact. My feeling, then, is that the whole story about Susie Lovecraft and Grace Eddy—and about the Eddys' early association with Lovecraft—is a fabrication, made by Muriel so as to augment the sense of her and her husband's importance in Lovecraft's life. Muriel went on to write several more self-published pamphlets about her relations with Lovecraft, and it seems to me that she was attempting to capitalise on Lovecraft's growing renown. The "facts" that she tells about Susie Lovecraft in her 1961 memoir could all have been gleaned from others' writings—notably Winfield Townley Scott's "His Own Most Fantastic Creation" (1944). There is no mention at all of Susie or any involvement with her in Muriel's 1945 memoir. Accordingly, I see no reason to believe that Lovecraft was in any way familiar with the Eddys prior to the summer of 1923.

In any event, C. M. Eddy was already a professionally published author by this time. His first published story, "Sign of the Dragon," appeared in *Mystery Magazine* for September 1, 1919, and he had other mystery and horror stories in other early pulp magazines. Although he had clearly met Lovecraft through the amateur journalism movement, he was very anxious to become an established professional writer; Muriel Eddy reports that her husband had long been acquainted with Edwin Baird and that both she and Clifford urged Lovecraft to submit to *Weird Tales.* She also gives a piquant account of Lovecraft's reading them "The Rats in the Walls" one evening:

> He started to read this creepy yarn to us at midnight—and continued, placing special emphasis on certain words as he read, his facial expressions changing as he became so absorbed in what he was reading aloud that it seemed he was actually *living* the story, making it come alive. . . . I'll never forget that night! Many houses in Providence were gas-lighted at that time, and Lovecraft's face, as seen by the flickering rays of gaslight, while he read aloud his own ultra-fanciful creation, was truly something "out of this world"—ever to be remembered. I shuddered myself to sleep that night!

In the meantime Eddy himself was working on stories for *Weird Tales*. Two of these—"Ashes" and "The Ghost-Eater"—had already been rejected,

but Lovecraft "corrected"[52] them and Baird thereupon accepted them. "Ashes" (*Weird Tales,* March 1924) is perhaps the single worst tale among Lovecraft's "revisions," and no one would suspect his hand in it if he had not admitted it himself. This maudlin and conventional story about a mad scientist who has discovered a chemical compound that will reduce any substance to fine white ashes contains a nauseously fatuous romance element that must have made Lovecraft queasy: "The feel of her soft, yielding body held close to my own was the last straw. I cast prudence to the winds and crushed her tightly to my breast. Kiss after kiss I pressed upon her full red lips, until her eyes opened and I saw the lovelight reflected in them." Shades of Fred Jackson!

"The Ghost-Eater" (*Weird Tales,* April 1924) is a little better, although it is nothing but a stereotypical werewolf story. Lovecraft wrote to Muriel Eddy on October 20: "Here, at last, is the amended 'Ghost-Eater', whose appearance I trust Mr. Eddy will find satisfactory. I made two or three minor revisions in my own revised version, so that as it stands, it ought to be fairly acceptable to an editor."[53] Here again I cannot detect much actual Lovecraft prose, unless he was deliberately altering his style to make it harmonise with Eddy's more choppy, less prose-poetic idiom.

Lovecraft reported in late October that Eddy was working on another story, entitled "The Loved Dead";[54] Muriel Eddy refers to the original title as "The Beloved Dead." There was, as with its two predecessors, in all likelihood a draft written by Eddy for this tale; but the published version (*Weird Tales,* May–June–July 1924) certainly reads as if Lovecraft had written the entire thing. Here there is the sort of adjective-choked prose we have seen in "The Hound" and other tales of this period—references to a "foetid hollow," "poison-tongued gossips," an "exotic elixir," and other such things. The tale is, of course, about a necrophile, who works for one undertaking establishment after another so as to secure that intimacy with corpses he desires; some passages are remarkably explicit for their day: "One morning Mr. Gresham came much earlier than usual—came to find me stretched out upon a cold slab deep in ghoulish slumber, my arms wrapped about the stark, stiff, naked body of a foetid corpse! He roused me from my salacious dreams, his eyes filled with mingled detestation and pity." The final paragraph presents the same sort of perfervid free-association that concludes "The Hound," ending preposterously: "I—can—write—no—more. . . ." Muriel Eddy reports that Lovecraft, when visiting

the Eddys on one occasion, was so "thoroughly delighted" with the tale as he had revised it that he read it to them aloud. What this suggests—as the tale itself does—is that "The Loved Dead" is a parody, both of itself and of this sort of lurid, sensationalist fiction. But, as we shall see, when it was published not everyone found it quite so amusing.

The final story revised for Eddy, "Deaf, Dumb, and Blind" (*Weird Tales,* April 1925), is a curious piece of work. It appears to have been revised by Lovecraft around February 1924, just prior to his move to New York. This tale about a deaf, dumb, and blind man who senses strange presences in his lonely cottage and records them in a manuscript or diary he is typing on the typewriter develops a curiously compelling power in spite of its stilted prose. Eddy reports: "He [Lovecraft] was unhappy with my handling of the note found in the typewriter at the very end of the protagonist's account of his eerie experiences, the final paragraph that seemed to have been typed by one of his persecutors. After several conferences over it, and an equal number of attempts on my part to do it justice, he finally agreed to rewrite the last paragraph."[55] This seems to suggest—although perhaps not by design—that Lovecraft revised only the last paragraph; in truth, the entire tale was probably revised, although again Eddy very likely had prepared a draft.

These four tales are among the earliest of Lovecraft's revisions of weird fiction, as opposed to collaborations (such as those with Winifred Jackson). The distinction between revisions and collaborations—in terms of Lovecraft's actual work on them—is perhaps not significant, for depending on the state of the original manuscript he would either merely touch it up or rewrite it wholesale. But there is some interest in ascertaining whether, and why, Lovecraft would affix his name to a work or not. In Eddy's case, the situation was close to the type of professional revision he would do later for Adolphe de Castro, Zealia Bishop, Hazel Heald, and others; but since the Eddys were friends of a sort, Lovecraft may have felt awkward actually charging them a fee for revisory work, so he seems to have worked out an agreement whereby they would type his manuscripts as recompense. Lovecraft declares explicitly that Eddy typed "The Hound" (that is, the double-spaced version that Baird wanted for *Weird Tales*) in exchange for the revised "Ghost-Eater."[56]

Eddy and Lovecraft did more than team up on writing projects. On November 4 the two of them returned to the Chepachet area where

Lovecraft had taken Morton a month and a half before; this time the goal was not Durfee Hill but something called Dark Swamp, of which Eddy had heard "sinister whispers from the rusticks."[57] They encountered difficulty finding anyone who knew anything about the place or its precise location; even the town clerk, who had heard strange rumours of people entering the swamp but never coming out, did not know where it was. They looked up several other individuals, each of whom told them to consult some other person who would assuredly know where Dark Swamp was. Finally they found that the swamp was in the property of one Ernest Law, a farmer, but by this time it was too late to make the actual trip there; they vowed to return at some later date, but do not seem to have done so. Lovecraft and Eddy had covered an enormous amount of ground on this trip, and—although Lovecraft himself does not mention it in his two accounts of the adventure (in letters to Frank Belknap Long and Edwin Baird)—Muriel Eddy writes pungently: ". . . Mr. Eddy almost had to carry Lovecraft back from the rural excursion, at least a mile, to the trolley line, for, unaccustomed to such vigorous jaunts at that time, the writer of tales macabre soon became so exhausted he could hardly move one foot after the other." This does not quite seem to harmonise with other accounts of Lovecraft's tirelessness on foot; but perhaps in this case he did overexert himself. Lovecraft adds that on the trolley ride home Eddy, becoming inspired merely from the descriptions of Dark Swamp they had received from various natives, began a story called "Black Noon." This story remained unfinished up to the time of his death and appeared only posthumously in Eddy's collection *Exit into Eternity* (1973).

Lovecraft said to Baird in late 1923: "I find Eddy rather a delight—I wish I had known him before"[58] (another indication that his relationship with the Eddys was of relatively recent origin). Eddy was a somewhat crude and rough-hewn individual, far inferior to Lovecraft in intelligence and literary skill; and Lovecraft could not help regarding him with a sort of genial condescension, although this did not prevent him from doing him several good turns in later years. He clearly found it refreshing to find someone, even of Eddy's calibre, in Providence who shared his interest in weird fiction, but although he refers to him on one occasion as his "adopted son,"[59] Eddy never became as close a colleague as Long, Galpin, Loveman, and several others. Their friendship resumed upon Lovecraft's

return to Providence in 1926, but we hear less and less of Eddy as the years pass.

In 1929 Lovecraft made the following evaluation of the progression of his aesthetic thought: "I can look back . . . at two distinct periods of opinion whose foundations I have successively come to distrust—a period before 1919 or so, when the weight of classic authority unduly influenced me, and another period from 1919 to about 1925, when I placed too high a value on the elements of revolt, florid colour, and emotional extravagance or intensity."[60] Simply put, these two phases (which would then be followed by a third and final phase combining the best features of both the previous two, and which might best be called "cosmic regionalism") are Classicism and Decadence. The classical phase I have treated already: Lovecraft's early absorption of the Augustan poets and essayists and the Graeco-Roman classics (either in the original or in translations deriving from the Augustan age), and his curious sense of psychic union with the eighteenth century, fostered a classicism that simultaneously condemned his poetry to antiquarian irrelevance and made him violently opposed to the radical aesthetic movements emerging in the early part of the century.

How, then, does an individual who professed himself, for the first thirty years of his life, more comfortable in the periwig and small-clothes of the eighteenth century suddenly adopt an attitude of "revolt, florid colour, and emotional extravagance or intensity"? How does someone who, in 1919, maintained that "The literary genius of Greece and Rome . . . may fairly be said to have completed the art and science of expression" ("The Case for Classicism") come to write, in 1923: "What is art but a matter of impressions, of pictures, emotions, and symmetrical sensations? It must have poignancy and beauty, but nothing else counts. It may or may not have coherence"? [61] The shift may seem radical, but there are many points of contact between the older and the newer view; and in many ways the change of perspective occurring in Lovecraft's mind was a mirror of the change occurring in Anglo-American aesthetics in general. Much as he might have found the idea surprising or even repellent, Lovecraft was becoming contemporary; he was starting to live, intellectually, in the twentieth, not the eighteenth, century.

I do not wish to underestimate the extent and significance of the shift in Lovecraft's aesthetic; clearly he himself thought that something

revolutionary was occurring. No longer was he concerned with antiquated notions of "metrical regularity" or the "allowable rhyme"; broader, deeper questions were now involved. Specifically, Lovecraft was attempting to come to terms with certain findings in the sciences that might have grave effects upon artistic creation, in particular the work of Sigmund Freud. One of Lovecraft's first references to Freud occurs only a week after his mother's death:

> Dr. Sigmund Freud of Vienna, whose system of psycho-analysis I have begun to investigate, will probably prove the end of idealistic thought. In details, I think he has his limitations; and I am inclined to accept the modifications of Adler, who in placing the ego above the eros makes a scientific return to the position which Nietzsche assumed for wholly philosophical reasons.[62]

All this is pretty nebulous, and it is not clear what work of Freud's (if any) Lovecraft had actually read; it is, in fact, more likely that he had read various accounts of it in books or magazines. A somewhat more revealing statement occurs in "The Defence Reopens!" (January 1921):

> Certainly, they [Freud's doctrines] reduce man's boasted nobility to a hollowness woeful to contemplate. . . . we are forced to admit that the Freudians have in most respects excelled their predecessors, and that while many of Freud's most important details may be erroneous—one should not be too hasty in substituting any single or simple instinct for the complex and dominant *Wille zur Macht* as the explanation of man's motive force—he has nevertheless opened up a new path in psychology, devising a system whose doctrines more nearly approximate the real workings of the mind than any heretofore entertained. We may not like to accept Freud, but I fear we shall have to do so.

Things now become a little clearer. Although Lovecraft rejects Freud's central notion of the libido as the principal motivating factor in human psychology—something he would have found difficult to comprehend, since his own libido seems to have been so sluggish—he nevertheless accepts the view that many of our beliefs and mental processes are the result, not of disinterested rationalism, but aggression (Nietzsche's will to power), ego-assertion, and in some cases pure irrationalism. Under the placid-seeming façade of civilised bourgeois life teem powerful emotional

forces that social restraints are ill-equipped to control. The effect on art will necessarily be telling. Lovecraft expounds his view in "Lord Dunsany and His Work" (1922):

> Modern science has, in the end, proved an enemy to art and pleasure; for by revealing to us the whole sordid and prosaic basis of our thoughts, motives, and acts, it has stripped the world of glamour, wonder, and all those illusions of heroism, nobility, and sacrifice which used to sound so impressive when romantically treated. Indeed, it is not too much to say that psychological discovery, and chemical, physical, and physiological research, have largely destroyed the element of emotion among informed and sophisticated people by resolving it into its component parts—intellectual idea and animal impulse. The so-called "soul" with all its hectic and mawkish attributes of sentimentality, veneration, earnestness, devotion, and the like, has perished on analysis.

This is an intensely interesting utterance. In spite of Lovecraft's claim of intellectual independence from his time, it is clear that he had absorbed enough of the Victorian belief in "heroism, nobility, and sacrifice" to be shaken by the revelation, via Freud and Nietzsche, of their "sordid and prosaic basis." For the moment he adopted a sort of aesthetic Decadence that might allow these illusions to be preserved after a fashion precisely by recognising their artificiality. He continues in "Lord Dunsany and His Work":

> Art has been wrecked by a complete consciousness of the universe which shews that the world is to each man only a rubbish-heap limned by his individual perception. It will be saved, if at all, by the next and last step of disillusion; the realisation that complete consciousness and truth are themselves valueless, and that to acquire any genuine artistic titillation we must artificially invent limitations of consciousness and feign a pattern of life common to all mankind—most naturally the simple old pattern which ancient and groping tradition first gave us. When we see that the source of all joy and enthusiasm is wonder and ignorance, we shall be ready to play the old game of blindman's buff with the mocking atoms and electrons of a purposeless infinity.

We cannot regain that blissful ignorance of our triviality in the cosmic scheme of things and of the hollowness of our lofty ideals which allowed prior ages to create the illusion of significance in human affairs. What is the solution?

> It is then that we shall worship afresh the music and colour of divine language, and take an Epicurean delight in those combinations of ideas and fancies which we know to be artificial. Not that we can resume a serious attitude toward emotion—there is too much intellect abroad for that—but that we can revel in the Dresden-china Arcadia of an author who will play with the old ideas, atmospheres, types, situations, and lighting effects in a deft pictorial way; a way tinged with affectionate reminiscence as for fallen gods, yet never departing from a cosmic and gently satirical realisation of the true microscopic insignificance of the man-puppets and their petty relations to one another.

It is seriously to be doubted whether this is an accurate assessment of the foundations of Dunsany's art, but it was at this moment convenient to Lovecraft's purpose to maintain that it was; in any case, it is perfectly clear that he is speaking of himself and his own attempts to come to terms with the ethical and aesthetic implications (as he sees them) of modern science.

The interesting thing is that Lovecraft's new Decadent aesthetic fitted very well with a tendency he had long exhibited, and one that linked him significantly to the intelligentsia of his time: scorn of the nineteenth century. The little boy who had insensibly absorbed the prose and poetry of the Augustans and found only tedium in the great nineteenth-century authors (Dickens is despised for maudlin sentimentality, and Thackeray "induceth drowsiness"[63]) found himself entirely in sympathy with the repudiation of Victorianism that many of the poets and critics of the late nineteenth and early twentieth century were exhibiting. W. Jackson Bate, writing in 1970, speaks of

> the immense effort of the arts, including music, of the early and middle twentieth century to get the nineteenth century off their backs. So strenuous—at times single-minded—was the effort that, during the childhood and youth of those of us now middle-aged, many of us began to assume that the first requirement of

> the sophisticated poet, artist, or composer was to be as unlike his nineteenth-century predecessors as possible.[64]

Lovecraft, because of his early absorption in an anterior literary tradition, did not find this effort as difficult as many of his contemporaries; in fact, it might be said that his Decadent phase was really a means of retaining as much genuine classicism as he could in light of new scientific information.

Consider the issue of didacticism. Lovecraft had in fact never subscribed to classical notions of literature as a teacher or guide to behaviour; when he trumpeted classical ideals of "taste" and "elegance," he restricted their scope purely to matters of style and content (avoidance of slang and of "low" subject-matter), stripping them of their heavy moral overtones. In his early years, then, Lovecraft did not so much rebel against classical didacticism as simply ignore it. With his Decadent phase the rebellion became conscious; but, interestingly, Lovecraft chose to use Victorianism rather than Augustanism as his whipping-boy, probably because the actual morality preached by the latter was, as he came to realise, very much his own whereas the former was not. As he wrote in "In the Editor's Study" (*Conservative,* July 1923):

> It is time . . . definitely to challenge the sterile and exhausted Victorian ideal which blighted Anglo-Saxon culture for three quarters of a century and produced a milky "poetry" of shopworn sentimentalities and puffy platitudes; a dull-grey prose fiction of misplaced didacticism and insipid artificiality; an appallingly hideous system of formal manners, costume, and decoration; and worst of all, an artistically blasphemous architecture whose uninspired nondescriptness transcends tolerance, comprehension, and profanity alike.

Nothing is spared here—prose, poetry, architecture, social customs. Lovecraft was not always so harsh on the Victorians on this last point (in 1927 he would speak approvingly of the Victorians' "manners and conceptions of life as a fine art"[65]), but for his present purposes a uniform condemnation was much more rhetorically satisfying.

If there is any literary source for any of these views, it is Oscar Wilde. It is not likely that Wilde actually generated Lovecraft's views; rather, Lovecraft found Wilde a highly articulate spokesman for the sort of views he was nebulously coming to adopt. In "Final Words" (September 1921) he

quotes the following sentences from Wilde's preface to *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (1891):

> No artist desires to prove anything. . . . No artist has ethical sympathies. An ethical sympathy in an artist is an unpardonable mannerism of style. No artist is ever morbid. The artist can express everything. All art is at once surface and symbol. . . . Those who read the symbol do so at their peril. . . . It is the spectator, and not life, that art really mirrors. . . . All art is quite useless.

Lovecraft found this especially helpful in his defence of the weird tale, as we shall see presently. In "The Defence Reopens!" he denies John Ravenor Bullen's claim that "The White Ship" was an allegory (or, rather, while not denying it, maintains that it was an "exception" in his work) by stating: "like Dunsany I protest that except in a few cases I have no thought of teaching." Lovecraft had gained this view of Dunsany from the appendix to Edward Hale Bierstadt's *Dunsany the Dramatist* (1917; rev. 1919), which printed several letters by Dunsany to various of his American supporters. One letter, to Emma Garrett Boyd, states bluntly: "Don't let them hunt for allegories. I may have written an allegory at some time, but if I have, it was a quite obvious one, and as a general rule, I have nothing to do with allegories."[66] Dunsany may have been a little disingenuous in this claim, for many of his tales—especially the prose-poems in *Fifty-one Tales* (1915)—are clear parables emphasising moral and aesthetic issues fundamental to his thought; but if this was what he wished to believe of his work, his disciple Lovecraft would willingly follow him.

There are two general caveats that should be borne in mind when studying Lovecraft's Decadent stance: first, he clearly wished to believe that his position did not commit himself entirely, or at all, to the avant-garde; and second, he had no wish to follow the Decadents in the repudiation of Victorianism on the level of personal conduct. As to the first point, let me quote in full that statement from "In the Editor's Study" of July 1923 which I cited earlier:

> What is art but a matter of impressions, of pictures, emotions, and symmetrical sensations? It must have poignancy and beauty, but nothing else counts. It may or may not have coherence. If concerned with large externals or simple fancies, or produced in a simple age, it is likely to be of a clear and

> continuous pattern; but if concerned with individual reactions to life in a complex and analytical age, as most modern art is, it tends to break up into detached transcripts of hidden sensation and offer a loosely joined fabric which demands from the spectator a discriminating duplication of the artist's mood.

This statement—particularly the remark about "life in a complex and analytical age"—is remarkably similar to T. S. Eliot's celebrated definition and justification of Modernism, as expressed in "The Metaphysical Poets" (1921):

> We can only say that it appears likely that poets in our civilization, as it exists at present, must be *difficult.* Our civilization comprehends great variety and complexity, and this variety and complexity, playing upon a refined sensibility, must produce various and complex results. The poet must become more and more comprehensive, more allusive, more indirect, in order to force, to dislocate if necessary, language into his meaning.[67]

I do not think it is likely that Lovecraft was aware of this statement; if he had been, he would by no means have agreed with it. His own utterance seems to be as complete a repudiation of classicism—notably in the sense of clarity, unity, and "coherence"—as can be imagined. But Lovecraft pulls back at the last; perhaps aware that his amateur audience would be dumbfounded by the perception of the antiquated fossil Lovecraft becoming avant-garde, he hastily adds that he is "no convert to Dadaism," concluding:

> Nothing, on the contrary, seems more certain . . . than that the bulk of radical prose and verse represents merely the extravagant extreme of a tendency whose truly artistic application is vastly more limited. Traces of this tendency, whereby pictorial methods are used, and words and images employed without conventional connexions to excite sensations, may be found throughout literature; especially in Keats, William Blake, and the French symbolists. This broader conception of art does not outrage any eternal tradition, but honours all creations of the past or present which can shew genuine ecstatic fire and a glamour not tawdrily founded on utterly commonplace emotions.

Lovecraft is slowly carving out a place for himself between Victorian conventionality and Modernist radicalism: in this way he can continue to fulminate against such things as free verse, stream-of-consciousness, or the chaoticism of Eliot and Joyce as illegitimate extensions of his Decadent principles. Lovecraft seeks to unite his new views with what he saw as the best traditions of Western art in a provocative statement in "The Work of Frank Belknap Long, Jr.":

> Literary revolutions are not new. Elderly people who smirk complacently and predict the rapid subsidence of modernism forget utterly the Renaissance and even the romantic revival of the early nineteenth century. As in those times, the world has received a colossal influx of new ideas well calculated to remould all our impressions and recast all our utterances. We see the hollowness of things we believed before, and above all the disconnectedness of things we once thought indissolubly joined. It is the birth of a new aesthetic, grounded on the old but going beyond it, and demanding poignant, beautiful, and genuine sensation as the essence of artistic endeavour.

The fact that this utterance occurs in an essay on Long suggests that this young new colleague may have been instrumental in effecting this shift in Lovecraft's vision. Lovecraft himself describes Long as "a sincere and intelligent disciple of Poe, Baudelaire, and the French decadents."[68]

The second point in this entire issue—Decadence as a mode of conduct—is clarified in Lovecraft's discussion with Long in 1923–24 about the merits of Puritanism. This discussion occasionally becomes a little frivolous, and Lovecraft seems at times to be uttering hyperbole in a deliberate attempt to tease Long ("Verily, the Puritans were the only really effective diabolists and decadents the world has known"[69]). But he does manage to express quite sincere views on "Bohemians" and their wild lifestyle. The canonical utterance occurs in May 1923:

> Physical life and experience, with the narrowings of artistic vision they create in the majority, are the objects of my most profound contempt. It is for this reason that I despise Bohemians, who think it essential to art to lead wild lives. My loathing is not from the standpoint of Puritan morality, but from that of aesthetic independence—I revolt at the notion that physical life is of any value or significance.[70]

The extravagance of that last utterance—especially when it is followed by the sentence "To me the ideal artist is a gentleman who shows his contempt for life by continuing in the quiet ways of his ancestors, leaving his fancy free to explore refulgent and amazing spheres"—suggests that Lovecraft is not being entirely straightforward here, and that his objections to Bohemianism are not founded in aesthetics but in ethics and social conduct. This becomes evident in a later comment:

> An intellectual Puritan is a fool—almost as much of a fool as is an anti-Puritan—but a Puritan in the conduct of life is the only kind of man one may honestly respect. I have no respect or reverence whatever for any person who does not live abstemiously and purely—I can like him and tolerate him, and admit him to be a social equal as I do Clark Ashton Smith and Mortonius and Kleiner and others like that, but in my heart I feel him to be my inferior—nearer the abysmal amoeba and the Neanderthal man—and at times cannot veil a sort of condescension and sardonic contempt for him, no matter how much my aesthetick and intellectual superior he may be.[71]

Now we are getting to the root of the matter. Of course, the various code words in this utterance ("abstemiously," "purely") are a thin veil for restraint in sexual behaviour; the mentions of Smith and Kleiner—both of whom were openly fond of female companionship—are also telling. Lovecraft attempted to warn Long away from pornography or modern literature that explores sexual relations without Victorian inhibitions ("There is no more true sense and artistick discrimination in a modern coxcomb's praise of *Jurgen* or *Ulysses* . . . than there is in a small boy's praise of the dirty words which a bigger boy has dared to chalk up on the back wall of the stable"[72]), and copied over a poem he had written in 1921 to Kleiner, "The Pathetick History of Sir Wilful Wildrake," about a seventeenth-century rake who reforms late in life and becomes a loving husband and father. This poem is (along with a 1923 specimen, "Damon and Lycë," another squib on Alfred Galpin's love affairs) as close to sexual explicitness as Lovecraft ever got—

> 'Tis he that rails with righteous Zest
> At Modern Nymphs in Style undrest
> With shrinking Petticoats and naked Breast.

—but the message is quite the reverse of lasciviousness. Lovecraft had, therefore, sloughed off (or, in reality, never really adopted) the *aesthetics* of Victorianism but could not—or did not wish to—relinquish the sexual Puritanism he had no doubt gained at his mother's knee.

The middle ground that Lovecraft wished to occupy between a stale conventionalism and eccentric radicalism is evident in an amateur controversy of the early 1920s that linked him, Long, and Samuel Loveman with some of the old mossbacks of the amateur world. The source of the contretemps appears to have been a review of the first issue of Sonia Greene's *Rainbow* in the "Bureau of Critics" column in the *National Amateur* for March 1922. This review, although unsigned, is unquestionably by Lovecraft; and it goes on at great length praising Loveman's poem "A Triumph in Eternity" and Loveman's verse in general: "Samuel Loveman is the last of the Hellenes—a golden god of the elder world fallen among pygmies. Genius of the most poignant authenticity is his, opening in his mind a diamond-paned window which looks out clearly upon rarefied realms of dreams and scenes of immortal beauty seldom and dimly glimpsed by the modern age." And so on. (I would remind readers who might be put off by this extravagant praise that Loveman really is a fine poet in a delicate *fin de siècle* sort of way.)

To this review one Michael Oscar White of Dorchester, Massachusetts —one of the members of the Hub Club, whom Lovecraft met on more than one occasion during his Boston visits of 1923—took issue in an article published in the *Oracle* (edited by Clyde G. Townsend) for December 1922. Writing on Loveman as the third instalment of a series on "Poets of Amateur Journalism," White—not knowing that Lovecraft was the author of the puff of Loveman in the *National Amateur*—criticised the review for praising a poet who was deliberately obscure, whose "insincere misanthropic" views tainted his work, and whose use of pagan gods was not only antiquated but possibly sacrilegious; remarking in particular of "A Triumph of Eternity," he wrote: "In anyone but an amateur poet with an amateur perception of things held sacred in a Christian country the whole piece would be considered blasphemous." White's article really is a piece of ham-fisted asininity, as he expects delicate poetry to follow the rules of prose syntax and logic. He concluded by saying that Loveman might win a following if he came down from Olympus and "adds his protest against the evils of the age."[73]

White's article was in turn attacked by Long in "An Amateur Humorist," in the March 1923 *Conservative,* and by Alfred Galpin in the August 1923 issue of the *Oracle.*[74] Both articles are extraordinarily vicious. Galpin, dripping with sarcasm, finally concludes: "It would seem as if Mr. White did not know what he was talking about." Long's response compares White to a court jester: "One characteristic of a jester is his utter lack of all sense of beauty. The divinest strain from the most enchanted lyre drives him to a gnashing of teeth and an insane stamping of feet. His appreciation of the arts is limited. He is in a small measure interested in 'thought' . . . And yet it is certain that all of the nuances and subtleties of thought escape him." And so on for four full pages. This article itself inspired a rebuttal by Edward H. Cole (in the "Bureau of Critics" column of the *National Amateur* for March 1923)—not so much a defence of White as a rebuke to Long for his sarcasm. Lovecraft remarked to Loveman that "Cole has a touch of New-England narrowness, but is not in any way a barbarian like that ass White. He really appreciates your poetry, & fully understands the absurd limitations of his dense fellow-townsman. What Cole disliked was the first half of Belknap's article, & that alone."[75] Nevertheless, Lovecraft no doubt took rich satisfaction in printing Loveman's superb ode "To Satan" on the cover of the July 1923 *Conservative* as a further tweaking of White's nose, although the bulk of this issue like its predecessor had been planned long before the controversy erupted.

Lovecraft himself made an actual response to White on at least two occasions: first, in a section of the "Bureau of Critics" column following Cole's piece (if this section, labelled "Contributed," is by Lovecraft, as I believe it is) and in "In the Editor's Study" in the July 1923 *Conservative.* The former is studiously polite; the latter, which I have quoted on several occasions as typifying his condemnation of Victorian moral and aesthetic standards, is very much the opposite, and it is now evident that this new aesthetic stance was, at least superficially, being adopted as a stick with which to beat White over the head. There is no question of Lovecraft's sincerity in his views; but he found in them a convenient weapon against the naive moral criticism that White was putting forth. Lovecraft writes: "Certainly the position of Mr. White's circle is flawless if we are to accept art as an affair of the external intellect and commonplace, unanalysed emotions alone. *The Conservative* dissents only because he believes with

most of the contemporary world that the actual foundations of art differ widely from those which the prim nineteenth century took for granted." So Lovecraft now welcomes the thought of being "contemporary"!

And yet, Lovecraft was by no means in the modernist camp. Several intensely interesting documents of this period bear this out with much emphasis. It is certainly odd that the two great landmarks of modernism—Joyce's *Ulysses* and Eliot's *The Waste Land*—appeared in the same year, 1922; but their fortuitously joint appearance compelled Lovecraft to address them in some fashion or other. He read *The Waste Land* in its first American appearance, in the *Dial* for November 1922 (it had appeared in England in Eliot's magazine, the *Criterion,* for October), and in fact preserved the issue; in May 1923 he urged Frank Long, who was planning to visit Lovecraft in Providence, to bring the book version (published by Boni & Liveright in late 1922, although dated 1923), since that contained Eliot's notes to the poem. He was particularly exercised over the final "Shantih. Shantih. Shantih," claiming that the "notes must tell or at least modernistically hint what it is."[76]

But well before this date, Lovecraft had written one or both of his responses to *The Waste Land.* The first is an editorial in the March 1923 *Conservative* headed "Rudis Indigestaque Moles" (taken from Ovid's *Metamorphoses:* "A rough and unfinished mass"). Beginning by lambasting the amateurs in general for their "complacent indifference . . . toward the present state of literature and general aesthetics," Lovecraft then turns to his argument that science has radically changed our attitude to the world, hence our attitude toward art. "The old heroics, pieties, and sentimentalities are dead amongst the sophisticated; and even some of our appreciations of natural beauty are threatened." *The Waste Land* is one result of this state of confusion and turbulence:

> We here behold a practically meaningless collection of phrases, learned allusions, quotations, slang, and scraps in general; offered to the public (whether or not as a hoax) as something justified by our modern mind with its recent comprehension of its own chaotic triviality and disorganisation. And we behold th[e] public, or a considerable part of it, receiving this hilarious melange as something vital and typical; as "a poem of profound significance," to quote its sponsors.

This is one of the most notorious pieces of evidence of Lovecraft's supposed insensitivity to modernism and to his innate aesthetic conservatism; but it is difficult to see what other reaction he could have made at this stage of his development. It should also be pointed out that many other reviewers—not merely stodgy Victorians like J. C. Squire but level-headed modernists like Conrad Aiken—also found the poem incomprehensible or at least ambiguous and incoherent, although some did not think it a bad poem on that account.[77] As for Lovecraft, he may by this time have given up his literal adherence to eighteenth-century forms—or, at least, his requirement that all other poets do so—but the outward form of *The Waste Land* with its free verse and its seemingly random progression so offended him that he saw in the poem an actual instance of the aesthetic fragmentation of modern civilisation that other reviewers felt it to be expressing. As Louis Untermeyer wrote in a review that reflects some of Lovecraft's own concerns about the work:

> As an echo of contemporary despair, as a picture of dissolution, of the breaking down of the very structures on which life has modelled itself, "The Waste Land" has a definite authenticity. But even the process of disintegration must be held within a pattern. This pattern is distorted and broken by Mr. Eliot's jumble of narratives, nursery-rhymes, criticism, jazz-rhythms, Dictionary of Favorite Phrases and a few lyrical moments.[78]

Eliot rejected this interpretation of the poem, but there were clearly many who read it as such.

I think too much has been made of the supposed similarities in philosophy and temperament of Eliot and Lovecraft: to be sure, they may both have been classicists (of a sort) and believed in continuity of culture; but Lovecraft rightly scorned Eliot's later royalism as a mere ostrich-act and heaped even more abuse on Eliot's belief in religion as a necessary foundation or bulwark of civilisation.

Lovecraft's immediate response to Eliot, and the modernists in general, was interesting:

> . . . I have a high respect for these moderns as *philosophers and intellectuals,* however much I may dismiss and disregard them *as poets.* T. S. Eliot himself is an acute *thinker*—but I do not believe he is an *artist.* An artist must always be a child . . . and live in dreams and wonder and moonlight. He must think of the

> lives and colours of things—of life itself—and never stop to pick the glittering fabric to pieces. Alas! Who ever caught and dissected the sunset gold without losing it?[79]

What this comment—and an analogous one in his *Conservative* editorial ("It is, for example, hardly possible that moonlight on a marble temple, or twilight in an old garden in spring, can ever be other than beautiful in our eyes")—indicates is Lovecraft's continued adherence to Poe's beauty/truth distinction (beauty is the province of art, truth is the province of science) as filtered through *fin de siècle* Decadence, notably Wilde's immortal first line from the preface to *The Picture of Dorian Gray:* "The artist is the creator of beautiful things." Lovecraft, indeed, never quite gave up on this belief, but he later refined it in such a way as still to convict the modernists of writing applied science, not literature.

But Lovecraft's other response to *The Waste Land*—the exquisite parody "Waste Paper: A Poem of Profound Insignificance"—merits much greater attention; for this is his best satiric poem. One wishes, therefore, that there was even the least bit of evidence as to when this poem was written and when it appeared in "the newspaper," as Lovecraft casually noted a decade later.[80] This is the only occasion, so far as is known, that Lovecraft even mentions his poem; searches have been made in at least some of the Providence papers of the period—*Evening Bulletin, Evening Tribune, Evening News*—with no results. One would very much like to know what if any reaction the poem—signed "Humphry Littlewit, Jun." on the manuscript—engendered among readers. It is, of course, unlikely that the printed version ever came to the attention of Eliot himself.

What Lovecraft very simply seeks to do in this work is to carry to a *reductio ad absurdum* his own claim in the *Conservative* editorial as to *The Waste Land* being a "practically meaningless collection of phrases, learned allusions, quotations, slang, and scraps in general." In many parts of this quite lengthy poem (135 lines) he has faithfully parodied the insularity of modern poetry—its ability to be understood only by a small coterie of readers who are aware of intimate facts about the poet—

I used to sit on the stairs of the house where I was born
After we left it but before it was sold
And play on a zobo with two other boys.
We called ourselves the Blackstone Military Band

There follow references to the popular songs of the turn of the century ("And the whippoorwill sings, Marguerite"), citations of his own earlier poetry ("Thro' the ghoul-guarded gateways of slumber"), quotations of other poets ("Achilles' wrath, to Greece the direful spring"—the first line of Pope's translation of the *Iliad*), various experiments in stream-of-consciousness or free-association, slang ("No, lady, you gotta change at Washington St. to the Everett train"), and on and on and on. The ending can only be quoted:

Henry Fielding wrote *Tom Jones*.
And cursed be he that moves my bones.
Good night, good night, the stars are bright
I saw the Leonard-Tendler fight
Farewell, farewell, O go to hell.
Nobody home
In the shantih.

That delightful final pun "confirms the jerrybuilt quality of modern life and art," as Barton L. St Armand and John H. Stanley remark; and as for the poem as a whole, its "scraps of twentieth-century conversations, news bulletins, public announcements, newspaper headlines, and advertising jingles reflect the mundane tawdriness of the present as contrasted to the epic grandeur of the past."[81]

Lovecraft was, of course, by no means alone in being disturbed, even traumatised, by *The Waste Land* and its analogues; but he gradually came to terms with modernism, although by no means sympathising with it. He would simply pursue his own way—not lapsing back into stilted Victorianism but not throwing tradition entirely out the window as he believed the modernists were doing. His final answer to the issue can be found in a letter of 1927, when he cites Ben Hecht's *Erik Dorn* (a novel, published in 1921, whose mingling of Freudianism, Expressionism, and stream-of-consciousness with gritty realism and a fair amount of bawdiness was believed at the time to be a herald of the "new" literature) and *The Waste Land* as the high points of modernism and evaluates them and their congeners:

> The keynote of the modern doctrine is the dissociation of ideas and the resolving of our cerebral contents into its actual chaotic components, as distinguished from the conventional patterns visible on the outside. This is supposed to form a closer

> approach to reality, but I cannot see that it forms any sort of art at all. It may be good science—but art deals with beauty rather than fact, and must have the liberty to select and arrange according to traditional patterns which generations of belief and reverence have marked with the seal of empirical loveliness. Beyond or behind this seeming beauty lies only chaos and weariness . . .[82]

Here again the beauty/truth distinction is brought into play, along with the notion of art as a "selection" rather than as a literal transcript of phenomena. But the remark is full of paradoxes: if Lovecraft's much-vaunted science (especially the science of psychology) has so "greatly altered our view of the universe and the beliefs attendant upon that view" (as he says in his March 1923 *Conservative* editorial), how can the artist continue to "select and arrange according to traditional patterns"? Lovecraft is desperately attempting to maintain that certain forms of "empirical loveliness" (whatever that may be) continue to be valid no matter how much we know about the universe and about the workings of our own minds. He is really trying to have his cake and eat it too—he is trying to be modern scientifically, but conservative aesthetically. We shall see this as a problem in his later ethics as well. For the present, however, he could only regard Eliot and his colleagues with horror and contempt.

But what of Lovecraft's assertion, in "The Omnipresent Philistine" (*Oracle,* May 1924), that both *Ulysses* and James Branch Cabell's *Jurgen* are "significant contributions to contemporary art," especially given his earlier scorn of the sexual daring of these works in his letter to Long? In the first place, it should be noted that Lovecraft never actually read *Ulysses*—at least, not all of it. In a late letter he admitted: "I have not read *Ulysses,* because such extracts as I have seen convince me that it would hardly be worth the time & energy."[83] The reference to "extracts" may imply that Lovecraft saw some segments of the partial serialisation of Joyce's novel in the *Little Magazine* (March 1918–December 1920). But, more pertinently, the context of Lovecraft's remark in "The Omnipresent Philistine" must be examined with care. This article itself was part of yet another minor contretemps, this time between Lovecraft and Sonia Greene on one side and Paul Livingston Keil (the young man who had accompanied Lovecraft, Morton, and Long to the Poe cottage in 1922) on the other.

The source of this dispute was a brief unsigned piece in the May 1922 *Rainbow* entitled "Opinion." Although it is customary to regard unsigned articles in amateur journals as the work of the editor, my feeling is that Lovecraft at least contributed to this item, if not writing it entirely. It notes that several amateurs had remarked unfavourably on the philosophical views expressed in the first *Rainbow* (probably referring specifically to the Nietzschean sentiments of Lovecraft and Galpin), to which it responds that diversity of opinion is of value in expanding one's horizons and, moreover, that "philosophical opinion has nothing to do with aesthetic quality." Keil, in his journal *Pauke's Quill,* had attacked this view, declaring that a critic must always consider a writer's philosophical orientation when evaluating his or her work (a plausible view, although one that can lead to great mischief when used improperly) and going on to recommend a fairly broad censorship against "pornography" and other examples of literature that may present a "false" philosophical viewpoint. Sonia shot back with "Fact versus Opinion," in the *Oracle* for May 1924, maintaining that critics must consider only the manner, not the matter, of an artistic product (a debatable assertion, but one that might be effective against those who object to "unhealthy" philosophies of life embodied in literature) and saying that the distinction of what is true or false philosophically is not quite as easy as Keil seems to have believed. Lovecraft's response, in the same issue of the *Oracle,* went on in much the same way; and it is precisely because both *Ulysses* and *Jurgen* had been or were at that time the subject of such censorship (*Jurgen* had been seized by the New York Society for the Prevention of Vice in 1920, and the obscenity trial over it had ended in 1922 in an acquittal; *Ulysses* would remain banned in the United States until 1933) that Lovecraft felt the need to come to their defence. He took the standard, and sensible, liberal line against pornography:

> Not many of us, even in this age, have any marked leaning toward public pornography; so that we would generally welcome any agency calculated to banish offences against good taste. But when we come to reflect on the problem of enforcement, and perceive how absurdly any censorship places us in the hands of dogmatic and arbitrary officials with Puritan illusions and no true knowledge of life or literary values, we have to acknowledge that absolute liberty is the lesser evil. The literature of today, with its conscientious striving toward

> sincerity, must necessarily contain large amounts of matter repugnant to those who hold the hypocritical nineteenth-century view of the world. It need not be vulgarly presented, but it cannot be excluded if art is to express life.

Lovecraft's reserved approach to Modernism might perhaps be thought to have been vindicated by time. To what degree, really, does modernist prose continue to be the guiding light of contemporary writing? While Lovecraft would probably have had even less sympathy with certain aspects of postmodernism, conventional narrative made a quick recovery after World War II; very few writers use stream-of-consciousness much anymore. And as for poetry, it is not the chaoticism of Eliot that has dominated subsequent work but the slack, loose, colloquial, and utterly prosaic idiom of William Carlos Williams and his followers, to the point that one wonders whether there has been any genuine poetry written at all after the death of Frost, Auden, and Robert Lowell. The fact that contemporary poetry has dropped utterly out of the intellectual lives of even well-educated people may suggest that Lovecraft's warnings against too radical a departure from tradition may not have been entirely unsound.

Meanwhile Lovecraft had simultaneously been hammering out a theory of the weird tale that would, with some modifications, serve him his entire life. This theory is, like his aesthetics in general, an intimate outgrowth of his entire philosophical thought, especially his metaphysics and ethics. The central document here is the *In Defence of Dagon* essays. He begins by dividing fiction, in a somewhat unorthodox manner, into three divisions—romantic, realistic, and imaginative. The first "is for those who value action and emotion for their own sake; who are interested in striking events which conform to a preconceived artificial pattern." The second "is for those who are intellectual and analytical rather than poetical or emotional. . . . It has the virtue of being close to life, but has the disadvantage of sinking into the commonplace and the unpleasant at times." Lovecraft does not provide an explicit definition of imaginative fiction, but implies that it draws upon the best features of both the other two: like romanticism, imaginative fiction bases its appeal on emotions (the emotions of fear, wonder, and terror); from realism it derives the important principle of truth—not truth to fact, as in realism, but truth to human feeling. As a result, Lovecraft comes up with

the startling deduction that "The imaginative writer devotes himself to art in its most essential sense."

The attack on what Lovecraft called "romanticism" is one he never relinquished. The term must not be understood here in any historical sense—Lovecraft had great respect and fondness for such Romantic poets as Shelley, Keats, and Coleridge—but purely theoretically, as embodying an approach not only to literature but to life generally:

> The *one* form of literary appeal which I consider *absolutely unsound, charlatanic, and valueless*—frivolous, insincere, irrelevant, and meaningless—is that mode of handling human events and values and motivations known as *romanticism.* Dumas, Scott, Stevenson—my gawd! Here is sheer puerility—the concoction of false glamours and enthusiasms and events out of an addled and distorted background which has no relation to anything in the genuine thoughts, feelings, and experiences of evolved and adult mankind.[84]

This remark, although made in 1930, makes clear that his enemy here is his whipping-boy of 1923, Victorianism. It was this approach—the instilling of "glamour" or significance into certain phases of human activity (notably love)—that Lovecraft believed to be most invalidated by the findings of modern science. And yet, his vehemence on this issue may stem from another cause as well: the possibility that his very different brand of weird fiction might conceivably be confused with (or be considered an aspect of) romanticism. Lovecraft knew that the weird tale had emerged in the course of the Romantic movement of the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, so that, in the eyes of many, weird fiction itself was a phase of Romanticism and might be thought to have "no relation to anything in the genuine thoughts, feelings, and experiences of evolved and adult mankind."

Accordingly, Lovecraft always strove to associate weird fiction with realism, which he knew to be the dominant mode of contemporary expression. This realism extended not merely to technique—"a tale should be plausible—even a bizarre tale *except for the single element where supernaturalism is involved,*" he says in a letter of 1921[85]—but in terms of philosophical orientation. Of course, it cannot be realistic in terms of *events,* so it must be realistic in terms of *human emotions.* Lovecraft again contrasts romanticism (an "overcoloured representation of *what purports to be real life*") with fantasy: "But fantasy is something altogether different.

Here we have an art based on the imaginative life of the human mind, *frankly recognised as such;* and in its way as natural and scientific—as truly related to natural (even if uncommon and delicate) psychological processes as the starkest of photographic realism."[86]

In defending himself, and his writing, from charges of "unwholesomeness" and immorality (charges still made today against weird fiction), Lovecraft stated that the weird, the fantastic, and even the horrible were as deserving of artistic treatment as the wholesome and the ordinary. No realm of human existence can be denied to the artist; everything depends upon the treatment, not the subject-matter. Lovecraft cited Wilde's pretty paradox (from "The Soul of Man under Socialism") that

> a healthy work of art is one the choice of whose subject is conditioned by the temperament of the artist, and comes directly out of it. . . . An unhealthy work of art, on the other hand, is a work . . . whose subject is deliberately chosen, not because the artist has any pleasure in it, but because he thinks that the public will pay him for it. In fact, the popular novel that the public calls healthy is always a thoroughly unhealthy production; and what the public calls an unhealthy novel is always a beautiful and healthy work of art.

In this way Lovecraft neatly justified his unusual subject-matter while simultaneously condemning the popular best-seller as a product of insincere hackwork. (He would use the same argument later for pulp fiction.) And yet, because Lovecraft realised that weird fiction was necessarily a cultivated taste, he was compelled to note repeatedly that he wrote only for the "sensitive"—the select few whose imaginations are sufficiently liberated from the minutiae of daily life to appreciate images, moods, and incidents that do not exist in the world as we know and experience it. Lovecraft stated in *In Defence of Dagon* that "There are probably seven persons, in all, who really like my work; and they are enough. I should write even if I were the only patient reader, for my aim is merely self-expression." This comes dangerously close to the sort of coterie-literature Lovecraft condemned in the modernists; although he would no doubt reply that the limited appeal or understanding of his work is based upon its unusual subject-matter, not its deliberate obscurity.

When asked by A. H. Brown, a Canadian member of the Transatlantic Circulator, why he didn't write more about "ordinary people," since this

might increase the audience for his work, Lovecraft replied with towering scorn:

> I could not write about "ordinary people" because I am not in the least interested in them. Without interest there can be no art. Man's relations to man do not captivate my fancy. It is man's relation to the cosmos—to the unknown—which alone arouses in me the spark of creative imagination. The humanocentric pose is impossible to me, for I cannot acquire the primitive myopia which magnifies the earth and ignores the background.

This is Lovecraft's first *explicit* expression of the view he would later call "cosmicism." Cosmicism is at once a metaphysical position (an awareness of the vastness of the universe in both space and time), an ethical position (an awareness of the insignificance of human beings within the realm of the universe), and an aesthetic position (a literary expression of this insignificance, to be effected by the minimising of human character and the display of the titanic gulfs of space and time). The strange thing about it is that it was so late in being articulated, and also that it was so feebly exhibited in his weird fiction up to this time—indeed, really up to 1926. If Lovecraft is to be believed, cosmicism as a metaphysical and ethical position was initially inspired by his study of astronomy beginning in 1902 and was already established by his late teenage years. In terms of his fiction, "Dagon" (1917) and "Beyond the Wall of Sleep" (1919) only hint at cosmicism; and I have already noted that Lovecraft's fascination with Dunsany (of whom he extravagantly wrote in "Supernatural Horror in Literature": "His point of view is the most truly cosmic of any held in the literature of any period") did not seem to extend to the point of duplicating his cosmicism in his own "Dunsanian" tales.

One interesting development in Lovecraft's pure metaphysics occurred in May of 1923:

> I have no opinions—I believe in nothing . . . My cynicism and scepticism are increasing, and from an entirely new cause—the Einstein theory. The latest eclipse observations seem to place this system among the facts which cannot be dismissed, and assumedly it removes the last hold which reality or the universe can have on the independent mind. All is chance, accident, and ephemeral illusion—a fly may be greater than Arcturus, and

> Durfee Hill may surpass Mount Everest—assuming them to be removed from the present planet and differently environed in the continuum of space-time. There are no values in all infinity—the least idea that there are is the supreme mockery of all. All the cosmos is a jest, and fit to be treated only as a jest, and one thing is as true as another.[87]

The history of the acceptance of the theory of relativity would make an interesting study in itself. The theory was propounded by Einstein in 1905 but was the source of much scepticism on the part of philosophers and scientists; some merely ignored it, perhaps hoping it would go away. Lovecraft's mentor Hugh Elliot dismisses Einstein in a nervous footnote in *Modern Science and Materialism.* In early 1920 the matter was taken up by the Gallomo; Lovecraft's discussion (the only part that survives) begins:

> Next on the programme is the Einstein theory, which I must confess at the outset that I cannot discuss authoritatively. I have as yet seen no really coherent account, and many of the articles by professors in local papers admit freely imperfect comprehension on the part of the respective writers. Einstein himself says that only twelve living men can fully comprehend his theory.[88]

And so on for several more pages of windy and contentless verbiage. At least this indicates that Lovecraft was seeking to learn more about the matter, if only from the local paper.

The theory indeed remained largely deductive until the spring of 1923, when the results of observations of a total solar eclipse on September 21, 1922, were finally reported. The *New York Times* had a front-page article on April 12, 1923, entitled "Sun Eclipse Pictures Prove Einstein Theory" by W. W. Campbell, Director of the Lick Observatory, who declared: "The agreement [of the eclipse observations] with Einstein's prediction from the theory of relativity . . . is as close as the most ardent proponent of that theory could hope for."[89]

The curious thing about all this as far as Lovecraft is concerned is that Einstein is unquestionably alluded to in the story "Hypnos," written around March 1922. There the narrator states: "One man with Oriental eyes has said that all time and space are relative, and men have laughed. But even that man with Oriental eyes has done no more than suspect." I do not know if Lovecraft read any of the popular accounts of the Einstein theory that had

emerged since 1905; but clearly the idea was beginning to gain currency, or at least to be talked about extensively. The mention here that Einstein "has done no more than suspect" clearly refers to the failure of definitive proof of the relativity theory to have emerged at this time; a year later that proof was manifestly at hand.

It is hardly worth remarking that Lovecraft's wild conclusions from Einstein, both metaphysical and ethical, are entirely unfounded; but his reaction is perhaps not atypical of that of many intellectuals—especially those who could not understand the precise details and ramifications of relativity—at the time. We will see that Lovecraft fairly quickly snapped out of his naive views about Einstein and, by no later than 1929, actually welcomed him as another means to bolster a modified materialism that still outlawed teleology, monotheism, spirituality, and other tenets he rightly believed to be outmoded in light of nineteenth-century science. In so doing he evolved a metaphysical and ethical system not at all dissimilar to that of his two later philosophical mentors, Bertrand Russell and George Santayana.

Some words about Lovecraft's political views might be in order. American entry into the world war had relieved him of the burden of fulminating against the "craven pacifism" of Woodrow Wilson, to the point that he could even poke fun at his own position in "Herbert West—Reanimator" (West "secretly sneered at my occasional martial enthusiasms and censures of supine neutrality"). In "A Confession of Unfaith" (1922) he states that "a German defeat was all I asked or hoped for." Later he made the cryptic comment that "The Peace Conference" and other forces "have perfected my cynicism": he did not elaborate upon this remark, and I do not know its precise import. I find no mentions in letters or essays that the harsh penalties imposed upon Germany by the Allies were unjust: Lovecraft later did indeed come to this opinion, although he came to regard it more as a tactical error than a matter of abstract ethics.

I have no doubt that Lovecraft voted for the Republican Warren G. Harding in the fall of 1920, if indeed he voted at all. I find no mention of Harding or of the repeated scandals that disgraced his administration, but Lovecraft did take note of Harding's sudden death of pneumonia on August 2, 1923. In "The Rats in the Walls," written probably a few weeks after this event, he interrupts the narrative oddly by remarking that "I felt poised on

the brink of frightful revelations, a sensation symbolised by the air of mourning among the many Americans at the unexpected death of the President on the other side of the world." In a letter, remarking on a Harding stamp, he is a trifle more cynical: "Harding was a handsome bimbo —I'm sure sorry he had the good luck to get clear of this beastly planet."[90] Of his successor Calvin Coolidge I find almost no mentions at all for the next five years.

What Lovecraft did instead in the relative political tranquillity of a Republican-dominated decade was to reflect more abstractly on the issues of government. "Nietzscheism and Realism," which we have already seen to be a compilation of letter excerpts to Sonia, contains a lot of cocksure aphorisms on the subject, largely derived from Nietzsche but with a sort of Schopenhauerian foundation. It does not begin auspiciously: "There is no such thing—and there never will be such a thing—as good and permanent government among the crawling, miserable vermin called human beings." Nevertheless, "Aristocracy and monarchy are the most efficient in developing the best qualities of mankind as expressed in achievements of taste and intellect . . ."

This view would, with much refinement, become the pillar of Lovecraft's later political theory. It is expressed here very compactly: "I believe in an aristocracy, because I deem it the only agency for the creation of those refinements which make life endurable for the human animal of high organisation." Lovecraft naturally assumed (correctly) that he was one of those animals of high organisation, and it was entirely logical for him, when speaking abstractly of the ideal government, to look for one that would suit his own requirements. What he seems to imagine is a society like that of Periclean Athens, Augustan Rome, or Augustan England, where the aristocracy both symbolised refinement and culture (if they did not always practise it) and provided enough patronage of artists to produce those "ornaments of life" that result in a rich and thriving civilisation. It is, certainly—at least in the abstract—an appealing system, but Lovecraft surely did not fancy that it could have much relevance to present-day concerns.

When he does address such concerns, it is in tones of magisterial condemnation. Democracy earns his wholesale scorn:

> Aristocracy alone is capable of creating thoughts and objects of value. Everyone, I fancy, will admit that such a state must

> precede democracy or ochlocracy in order to build the original culture. Fewer are willing to admit the cognate truth that democracies and ochlocracies merely subsist parasitically on the aristocracies they overthrow, gradually using up the aesthetic and intellectual resources which autocracy bequeathed them and which they never could have created for themselves.

And in a letter of February 1923: "democracy . . . is a false idol—a mere catchword and illusion of inferior classes, visionaries, and dying civilisations."[91] This is manifestly Nietzschean: "I have . . . characterised modern democracy . . . as the *decaying form* of the state."[92] I do not know that Lovecraft ever espoused democracy, but certainly his reading of Nietzsche just after the war seems to have given him the intellectual backbone to support his view.

The letter in which the above comment is imbedded occurs in a discussion of Mussolini and fascism. There should be scarcely any surprise that Lovecraft supported Mussolini's takeover of Italy (completed in late October 1922) and that he was attracted by the fascist ideology—or, at any rate, what he took it to be. I doubt that Lovecraft had any real understanding of the internal political forces that led to Mussolini's rise. Fascism was, at its base, opposed both to conventional liberalism and to socialism; its popularity grew rapidly after the end of the war when the socialists, winning a majority in 1919, could accomplish little to restore Italian society. Mussolini's takeover of the government was indeed supported, as Lovecraft would later remark, by a majority of the Italian populace; but each of the various groups supporting the dictatorship wished different benefits from it, and when after several years these benefits were not forthcoming, there was so much discontent that repressive measures had to be adopted.

For the time being, however, Lovecraft could revel in the fact that here was a "strong" ruler who scorned liberalism and could "get the sort of authoritative social and political control which alone produces things which make life worth living."[93] It cannot, certainly, be said that fascism produced any sort of artistic renaissance; but that was not of much concern to Lovecraft at the moment.

Lovecraft's political views were still very ill-considered, but at least he was beginning to think about broader issues than merely the reunification of England and America, the "crime" of Anglo-Saxons fighting each other in

the Great War, and the evils of pacifism. It would be another five to seven years before he did any serious thinking about politics, economics, and society; but when he did so his thought showed a maturity born of actual experience in the world and deeper reflexion on the complex issues involved. In the short term, however, matters of a more personal nature were more pressing.

The end of 1923 saw still more small travels. On November 27 Lovecraft and his aunt Lillian went to the new private museum of George L. Shepley at 292 Benefit Street, where Annie Gamwell worked. (The museum is no longer in existence.) The next day he and C. M. Eddy visited various parts of Providence, especially south of the Great Bridge, that he had not seen before.[94] On December 27, Lovecraft gave Eddy and the visiting James F. Morton a tour of colonial Providence; it was on this occasion that the three of them went to the exquisite First Baptist Church (1775) on North Main Street and ascended to the organ loft, where Lovecraft attempted to play "Yes, We Have No Bananas" but was foiled, "since the machine is not a self-starter."[95]

In early February Lovecraft wrote a long letter to Edwin Baird of *Weird Tales,* expressing his irritation at the alteration of the titles of some of his stories, notably the retitling of "Arthur Jermyn" to "The White Ape" ("you may be sure that if I ever entitled a story 'The White Ape', *there would be no ape in it*"[96]). In response to J. C. Henneberger's request for information on his life and beliefs, Lovecraft unearthed "A Confession of Unfaith" and copied much of it verbatim, prefaced by a somewhat smart-alecky biographical sketch. (Toward the end of his life, when the teenage Willis Conover somehow acquired this letter and wished to publish it, Lovecraft found the document so embarrassing that he threatened physical harm to Conover if he disseminated it.) *Weird Tales* was throwing a lot of work in his direction, in particular a rush ghostwriting job for Harry Houdini. Lovecraft also claimed to be working on a novel called "The House of the Worm," an idea that had apparently been percolating in his mind for a year or more, but about which we know nothing; it was probably never begun. But in the midst of all this literary activity we find an anomalous change of personal circumstances. On March 9, 1924, Lovecraft wrote a letter to his aunt Lillian from 259 Parkside Avenue, Brooklyn, New York. Was this

another visit of longer or shorter duration, as the two New York trips of 1922 had been? Not exactly.

On March 3, at St Paul's Chapel at Broadway and Vesey Streets in lower Manhattan, H. P. Lovecraft had married Sonia Haft Greene.

15. Ball and Chain

(1924)

New York in 1924 was an extraordinary place. Far and away the largest city in the country, its five boroughs totalled (in 1926) 5,924,138 in population, of which Manhattan had 1,752,018 and Brooklyn (then and now the largest of the boroughs both in size and in population) had 2,308,631. A remarkable 1,700,000 were of Jewish origin, while the nearly 250,000 African Americans were already concentrating in Harlem (extending from 125th to 151st Streets on the west side and 96th Street northward on the east side of Manhattan) because of the severe prejudice that prevented their occupying many other areas of the city. The subway system, begun in 1904, was allowing easy access to many regions of the metropolis, and was supplemented by the extensive above-ground or elevated lines, now nearly all eliminated. Lovecraft, on some of his more remote jaunts around the area in search of antiquarian oases, nevertheless found it necessary to take the more expensive trolleys rather than the 5¢ subways or elevateds. The Hudson Tubes (now called the PATH trains) were constructed in 1908–10 to link Manhattan with the commuter terminals in Hoboken and Jersey City, New Jersey; ferry service was also common between the two states. The remoter areas of the region—say, Long Island or Westchester County to the north of the Bronx—were less easy of access, although the N.Y.N.H.&H. (New York, New Haven, and Hartford) railway lines brought in commuters from Connecticut to Grand Central Station. The mayor of the city was John F. Hylan, a Tammany politician; but he was ousted in 1925 and a "New Tammany" mayor, James J. Walker, was elected in 1926. The governor was the Democrat Alfred E. Smith (1923–28).

These facts and figures, of course, can convey only so much. Although neither the Empire State Building nor the Chrysler Building was as yet built, New York was already the city of skyscrapers, most of them at this time concentrated at the very southern tip of Manhattan, the Battery. (Skyscrapers cannot be built everywhere in Manhattan, since the schist foundation is not uniform; there are strict regulations governing the height and size of buildings in every portion of the island.) Lovecraft's first impression of the city in April 1922 is perhaps only a little more poeticised than that of most of those who come upon this almost unearthly sight:

> Out of the waters it rose at twilight; cold, proud, and beautiful; an Eastern city of wonder whose brothers the mountains are. It was not like any city of earth, for above purple mists rose towers, spires, and pyramids which one may only dream of in opiate lands beyond the Oxus; towers, spires and pyramids that no man could fashion, but that bloomed flower-like and delicate; the bridges up which fairies walk to the sky; the visions of giants that play with the clouds. Only Dunsany could fashion its equal, and he in dreams only.[1]

The reference to Dunsany is telling, for this passage, though no doubt sincere in its way, is a clear echo of Dunsany's "A City of Wonder" (in *Tales of Three Hemispheres,* 1919), a brief prose-poem in which he tells of his own first sight of New York ("One by one the windows shine from the precipices; some twinkle, some are dark; man's orderly schemes have gone, and we are amongst vast heights lit by inscrutable beacons"[2]).

Is it a surprise that Lovecraft the antiquarian found the skyline of New York stimulating? Hardly. He would later assert that the skyscraper was not a fundamentally modern form: "tall buildings hav[e] been common in mediaeval Italy, while Gothic towers approximate the same atmosphere. . . . A skyscraper (following Gothic lines or employing classical ornament) can be traditional, while a one-story building (abjuring traditional ornamentation & proportion) can be modernistic."[3] Lovecraft was well aware that historicist architecture—fostered in late nineteenth-century New York by such architects as Charles F. McKim, William Rutherford Mead, and Stanford White—had produced such landmarks as Pennsylvania Station (1903–10), modelled after the Baths of Caracalla, and other structures that satisfied his classical leanings.

It is difficult to convey in capsule form any impression of the vast metropolis, which then as now is as diverse as any place on the globe. The city's character can change in a single block, and the whole region defies neat generalisation. When we speak of Harlem or Hell's Kitchen or Greenwich Village, we are in danger of letting stereotypes take the place of realities. Lovecraft discovered the city gradually over two years of peregrinations, but his heart was in those surprisingly numerous pockets of antiquity (many now sadly obliterated) that still remained even in the heart of Manhattan. Some of the outer boroughs also preserved such pockets, and Lovecraft sought them out with the zeal of desperation. The Flatbush

section of Brooklyn where he and Sonia settled was then on the outskirts of the borough, and was then (as it is not now) the residence of choice for the well-to-do in the area. It was not Providence, but neither was it a wholly inferior substitute.

There is no question that, at least for the first few months, the euphoria both of his marriage and of his residence in the nation's centre of publishing, finance, art, and general culture helped to ward off any doubts about the precipitancy of his departure from Providence. With a new wife, many friends, and even reasonably good job prospects Lovecraft had reason to believe that a promising new phase of his life was beginning.

In his 1975 memoir, Frank Belknap Long writes of first meeting Lovecraft in Sonia's apartment in April 1922. After a time, as he sat talking with the two of them, something began to dawn upon him:

> It was at this point that something which at first had been a mere suspicion began to lodge itself more firmly in my mind. During the brief talk by the window Howard had dwelt at some length on Sonia's meeting with his aunts and on two other occasions when they had spent considerable time together on New England terrain, with the Boston convention several weeks in the past.
>
> Could it be possible—
>
> It *was* possible, of course . . . his relationship with Sonia had taken on what could only be thought of as a just-short-of-engagement character. It still was only at the friendship stage perhaps, but with the distinct possibility that it might soon become something more.[4]

Long may perhaps be guilty of reading, in hindsight, more into this episode than is warranted; but he was probably not alone in sensing—at this time and on other occasions—that some sort of rapport was developing between Sonia and Lovecraft. And yet, the fact of their marriage seems to have produced, among their friends and associates, reactions ranging from surprise to shock to alarm. Rheinhart Kleiner writes: ". . . I do remember very well that it was while riding in a taxi with Mr. and Mrs. Houtain . . . that the news of the Lovecraft-Greene marriage was imparted to me. At once, I had a feeling of faintness at the pit of my stomach and became very pale. Houtain laughed uproariously at the effect of his announcement, but

agreed that he felt as I did."[5] Even such recent friends as the Eddys were stunned: "The next news we had of Lovecraft was an engraved announcement of his marriage to Sonia Greene. It was a simple announcement, but it took us so completely by surprise that it was several hours before we thoroughly digested the news."[6] This engraved announcement, incidentally, was sent out shortly after the marriage; Lovecraft and Sonia spent $62 printing 200 copies of it.[7] It reads simply:

Howard Phillips Lovecraft

and

Sonia Haft Greene

announce their marriage

on

Monday the third of March

One thousand nine hundred and twenty-four.

Mr. and Mrs. Howard Phillips Lovecraft

At Home on and after March thirtieth, 1924

259 Parkside Avenue

Brooklyn, New York.

It is, indeed, telling that, on Lovecraft's last night in Providence, he visited the Eddys, saying he was leaving and offering them some furniture that he would not have use for, but never mentioning the marriage at this time.

This silence was duplicated by one of the most remarkable letters ever written by Lovecraft: the letter to his aunt Lillian announcing his marriage —*six days after the fact.* It is manifestly obvious that he simply boarded the 11.09 train on Sunday morning, March 2, married Sonia the next day, began

settling in at 259 Parkside, and finally decided to spill the news to his elder aunt. Indeed, Lovecraft sent Lillian several postcards on March 4 and 5 from both New York and Philadelphia (where the couple honeymooned), but without any indication whatever of the true state of affairs. One such card, however, must have caused Lillian some wonderment, as Lovecraft speaks of a *"permanent literary position"* in New York that may fall in his lap.[8]

Some parts of the laborious preamble to the actual announcement in this letter are astounding:

> [A] more active life, to one of my temperament, demands many things which I could dispense with when drifting sleepily and inertly along, shunning a world which exhausted and disgusted me, and having no goal but a phial of cyanide when my money should give out. I had formerly meant to follow the latter course, and was fully prepared to seek oblivion whenever cash should fail or sheer ennui grow too much for me; when suddenly, nearly three years ago, our benevolent angel S. H. G. stepped into my circle of consciousness and began to combat that idea with the opposite one of effort and the enjoyment of life through the rewards which effort will bring.

Well, perhaps marriage and a move to the big city is better than suicide from poverty or boredom. But what about the critical issue of the pair's affection for each other?

> . . . meanwhile—egotistical as it sounds to relate it—it began to be apparent that I was not alone in finding psychological solitude more or less of a handicap. A detailed intellectual and aesthetic acquaintance since 1921, and a three-months visit in 1922 wherein congeniality was tested and found perfect in an infinity of ways, furnished abundant proof not only that S. H. G. is the most inspiriting and encouraging influence which could possibly be brought to bear on me, but that she herself had begun to find me more congenial than anyone else, and had come to depend to a great extent on my correspondence and conversation for mental contentment and artistic and philosophical enjoyment.

This is, certainly, one of the most glaring examples of Lovecraft's inability to speak of "love" or anything remotely connected to it. He does not say: "I

love Sonia and Sonia loves me"; he says that he and she need each other for "mental contentment and artistic and philosophical enjoyment." Lovecraft's natural reserve in speaking of such matters to his aunt should certainly be taken into account; but we will also have to deal later with Sonia's own admission that Lovecraft never said the word "love" to *her*. In any event, he continues to explain why neither Lillian nor Annie were taken into the couple's confidence in the whole matter:

> At this point . . . you will no doubt ask why I did not mention this entire matter before. S. H. G. herself was anxious to do so, and if possible to have both you and A. E. P. G. present at the event about to be described. But here again appeared Old Theobald's hatred of sentimental spoofing, and of that agonisingly indecisive "talking over" which radical steps always prompt among mortals, yet which really exceeds the fullest necessary quota of sober and analytical appraisal and debate. . . . It hardly seemed to me that, in view of my well-known temperament, anyone could feel even slightly hurt by a decisive and dramatic gesture sweeping away the barnacles of timidity and of blindly reactionary holding-back.[9]

There can scarcely be any clearer indication of Lovecraft's fear—perhaps well founded—that his aunts would not approve of his marriage, although since he was thirty-three years old there was certainly nothing they could have done about it. The aunts' disapproval, as well as the possible reasons for it (was it because Sonia was not a New England Yankee? because she was a foreign-born businesswoman rather a member of the informal American aristocracy? because the marriage would mean Lovecraft's departure from home?), are all conjecture, for in the total absence of written documents by their hands, and even the lack of testimony by others on their attitude to Sonia, conjecture is all we have to go on. But that the aunts did in fact disapprove—or, at any rate, that Lovecraft thought they might—may become clearer as the course of the marriage unfolds.

What were Sonia's feelings on the whole matter? In speaking of the year or two prior to their marriage, she writes: "I well knew that he was not in a position to marry, yet his letters indicated his desire to leave his home town and settle in New York."[10] The first part of the statement presumably refers merely to financial capability; as for the second, although of course we do not have access to Lovecraft's letters to Sonia, I have to believe that

this is somewhat of an exaggeration. The only indication of Lovecraft's wish to come to New York that I find in letters to other individuals is a mention to Clark Ashton Smith just five weeks before the marriage: "Like you, I don't know anyone who is at all congenial here; & I believe I shall migrate to New York in the end—perhaps when Loveman does."[11] My feeling is that this indicates Lovecraft had already resolved upon marriage by this time, and that he was simply disguising the fact from Smith; there is nothing particularly surprising about this, as Smith was a colleague of only a year and half's standing and one cannot expect someone like Lovecraft to reveal his personal life to him. His letter to Edwin Baird of February 3, exactly one month before the marriage, hints at the same thing (although for different reasons), when he notes that "finances will decree a final disintegration [i.e., of his Providence household] landing me in all probability in New York."[12] Financial considerations certainly were a factor in the marriage. It would, of course, be crass and quite unjust to Lovecraft to say that he married Sonia even in part because of her income; indeed, we may shortly discover that, in spite of her seeming prosperity, Sonia herself was not in very healthy financial shape herself at this juncture.

Sonia continues:

> We each meditated and remeditated upon the possibilities of a life together. Some of our friends suspected that we cared for one another, and upon friendly inquiry I admitted that I cared very much, that I took everything into consideration and decided that if he would have me I'd gladly be his wife. But nothing definitely had been said to any one. . . .
>
> During our few years of correspondence and the many business trips I took to New England I did not fail to mention many of the adverse circumstances that were likely to ensue, but that we would have to work out these problems between us, and if we really cared more for one another than for the problems that might stand in our way, there was no reason why our marriage should not be a success. He thoroughly agreed. . . .
>
> Before leaving Providence for N.Y. I requested him to tell his aunts that he was going to marry me but he said he preferred to surprise them. In the matter of securing the marriage license, buying the ring and other details incumbent upon a marriage, he seemed to be so jovial. He said one would think that he was

> being married for the nth time, he went about it in such a methodical way.[13]

This is all Sonia has to say on the matter. What she does not say is that she had written to Lillian a full month *before* the marriage, and in a manner that should clearly have tipped off to Lillian that something was afoot. In a letter dated February 9, 1924, Sonia writes:

> I have nothing in life to attract me to Life and if I can help the good and beautiful soul of Howard Lovecraft find itself financially as it has found itself spiritually, morally and mentally, my efforts shall not have been in vain. . . .
>
> Therefore little Lady, fear nothing. I am just as desirous of his success for his own sake as you are, and I am just as anxious, perhaps more so, that you should live to enjoy the fruits of his labor and the honors that will be heaped upon his beautiful and blessed name, as you may be.[14]

That "fear nothing" must have been in response to some letter by Lillian, perhaps asking Sonia bluntly what her "intentions" toward her nephew actually were.

Lovecraft's joviality during the ceremony is borne out by several amusing letters to his closest friends. To James Morton he writes, after another long and teasing preamble about the seeming strangeness of his residence at 259 Parkside:

> Yes, my boy, you got it the first time. Eager to put Colonial architecture to all of its possible uses, I hit the ties hither last week; and on Monday, March the Third, seized by the hair of the head the President of the United—S. H. G.—and dragged her to Saint Paul's Chapel, . . . where after considerable assorted genuflection, and with the aid of the honest curate, Father George Benson Cox, and of two less betitled ecclesiastical hangers-on, I succeeded in affixing to her series of patronymics the not unpretentious one of Lovecraft. Damned quaint of me, is it not? You never can tell what a guy like me is gonna do next! [15]

The two ecclesiastical hangers-on were, according to the marriage licence, Joseph Gorman and Joseph G. Armstrong. To Frank Long he writes:

> The license stuff? Dead easy! We beat it to the Brooklyn borough hall, and got the papers with all the coolness and *savoir*

> *faire* of old campaigners . . . you ought to have seen your old Grandpa, Sonny! Brigham Young annexing his 27th, or King Solomon starting in on the second thousand, had nothing on the Old Gentleman for languid fluency and casual conversation![16]

It is as if Lovecraft is regarding the whole thing as a lark; and indeed, we will see increasing evidence that he was quite taken with the charm and novelty of being married but was simply not aware of the amount of effort it takes to make a marriage actually work. Lovecraft was, in all honesty, not emotionally mature enough for such an undertaking.

The testimony of two of Lovecraft's closest friends may be of some value here. Arthur S. Koki interviewed Samuel Loveman in 1959 and Frank Long in 1961, and he reports their views on the matter as follows: "Samuel Loveman thought Lovecraft had married Mrs. Greene out of a sense of obligation for the interest and encouragement she took in his work. Frank Belknap Long, Jr. said Lovecraft believed it befitted a proper gentleman to take a wife."[17] There is much to be said for both these opinions. The way in which Lovecraft soberly went through an Anglican ceremony at a colonial church indicates that his sense of aesthetics had overwhelmed his rationality; and his references in letters of the first few months of his marriage to "the wife" or "the missus" again suggest his being tickled at the state of being married without, perhaps, a realisation of what such a state actually meant either practically or emotionally.

It is worth pausing to ponder the sources for Lovecraft's attraction for Sonia. It seems facile to say that he was looking for a mother replacement; and yet, the emergence of Sonia into his life a mere six weeks after his mother's death is certainly a coincidence worth noting. Granted that the affection may initially have been more on Sonia's side than his—she came to Providence far more frequently than he came to New York—Lovecraft may nevertheless have felt the need to confide his thoughts and feelings to someone in a way that he does not seem to have done with his aunts. Those voluminous daily letters he wrote to Sonia would no doubt reveal much; one hopes that there is more intimacy and human feeling in them than the pompous declamations we find in "Nietzscheism and Realism." True, Lovecraft in his New York years wrote copiously to Aunt Lillian as well (less to Aunt Annie); but these letters are largely chronicles of his daily activities, with only intermittent expressions of his moods, beliefs, and sensations.

Sonia was, of course, nothing like Susie Lovecraft: she was dynamic, emotionally open, contemporary, cosmopolitan, and perhaps a little domineering (this is the exact term Frank Belknap Long once used in describing Sonia to me), whereas Susie, although perhaps domineering in her own way, was subdued, emotionally reserved, even stunted, and a typical product of American Victorianism. But let us recall that at this moment Lovecraft was still in the full flower of his Decadent phase: his scorn of Victorianism and his toying with the intellectual and aesthetic avant-garde may have found a welcome echo in a woman who was very much an inhabitant of the twentieth century.

Their marriage occurred after what can only be called a long-distance romance—something that is, then and now, difficult to pull off. That Lovecraft fancied, on the basis of a three-month stay with Sonia in the summer of 1922, and in circumstances where he was really no more than a cordial friend, that they were fit for cohabitation strikes me as pitiably naive; what is more surprising is that Sonia herself, having already suffered through an unsuccessful marriage, managed to convince herself likewise.

Sonia has made one further admission that is of some interest. In a manuscript (clearly written after the dissolution of the marriage, as it is signed Sonia H. Davis) entitled "The Psychic Phenominon [*sic*] of Love" she has incorporated a part of one of Lovecraft's letters to her. In a note on the manuscript she has written: "It was Lovecraft's part of this letter that I believe made me fall in love with him; but he did not carry out his own dictum; time and place, and reversion of some of his thoughts and expressions did not bode for happiness."[18] Sonia submitted this manuscript to August Derleth for publication; he rejected it, but published Lovecraft's letter alone in the *Arkham Collector* as "Lovecraft on Love." It is a very strange document. Going on for about 1200 words in the most abstract and pedantic manner, Lovecraft thoroughly downplays the erotic aspect of love as a product of the fire of extreme youth, saying instead that "By forty or perhaps fifty a wholesome replacement process begins to operate, and love attains calm, cool depths based on tender association beside which the erotic infatuation of youth takes on a certain shade of cheapness and degradation. Mature tranquillised love produces an idyllic fidelity which is a testimonial to its sincerity, purity, and intensity."[19] And so on. There is actually not much substance in this letter, and some parts of it should have made Sonia a little nervous, as when he says that "True love

thrives equally well in presence or in absence" or that each party "must not be too antipodal in their values, motive-forces, perspectives, and modes of expression and fulfilment" for compatibility. Nevertheless, Sonia did manage at least to get Lovecraft to talk about the subject; we shall have to examine at a later stage whether Lovecraft did or did not "carry out his own dictum" in actual practice.

But the months preceding and following the marriage were sufficiently hectic that neither had much time for reflexion. In the first place, Lovecraft had to finish the ghostwriting job for *Weird Tales.* The magazine was not doing well on the newsstands, and in an effort to bolster sales owner J. C. Henneberger enlisted the services of the escape artist Harry Houdini (born Erich Weiss, 1874–1926), then at the height of his popularity, to write a column and other items. "Ask Houdini" appeared in three issues beginning in March 1924, while two works of fiction—"The Spirit Fakers of Hermannstadt" (March, April, and May–June–July 1924) and "The Hoax of the Spirit Lover" (April 1924)—were also published. These latter two were ghostwritten by unknown hands, possibly Walter B. Gibson, the prolific pulp writer and editor (later to be known as the creator of The Shadow). (Some have conjectured C. M. Eddy, Jr, as the ghostwriter, but it does not appear as if Eddy was acquainted with Houdini at this time; Lovecraft himself notes in late September 1924 that he himself had given Eddy a letter of introduction to Houdini only a short time earlier.[20] Lovecraft believed that Farnsworth Wright ghostwrote the Houdini tales.[21]) Now Henneberger enlisted Lovecraft—who had to be regarded as one of the leading lights of the magazine in its first year—to write up a strange tale that Houdini was attempting to pass off as an actual occurrence. Lovecraft relates the account—involving Houdini's being kidnapped on a pleasure trip to Egypt, thrown bound and gagged down a deep aperture in Campbell's Tomb, and left to find his way out of the labyrinthine pyramid—in a letter to Long in mid-February, saying that the work would appear as "By Houdini and H. P. Lovecraft."[22] Shortly thereafter Lovecraft discovered that this account was entirely fictitious, so he persuaded Henneberger to let him have as much imaginative leeway as he could in writing up the story. By February 25 he had not yet begun to write the tale, even though it was due on March 1. Somehow he managed to finish it just shortly before he boarded the train to New York on March 2; but in his rush he left the typescript behind somewhere in Union Station in Providence. Harriedly he

took out an advertisement that appeared the next day in the lost and found column of the *Providence Journal:*

> MANUSCRIPT—Lost, title of story, "Under the Pyramids," Sunday afternoon, in or about Union station. Finder please send to H. P. Lovecraft, 259 Parkside Ave., Brooklyn, N.Y.

Although the tale was published as "Imprisoned with the Pharaohs" in the first anniversary issue (May–June–July 1924) of *Weird Tales,* the ad verifies that "Under the Pyramids" was Lovecraft's original title for the work. It appeared, however, only as by Houdini; Lovecraft had written the story unexpectedly in the first person, causing Henneberger to feel awkward about affixing a collaborative byline on it.

Lovecraft's concern at the moment, however, was to get a newly typed version to Henneberger as quickly as possible. Fortunately, he had brought along the autograph manuscript, so the morning of the 3rd found him at the office of "The Reading Lamp" (on which more later) frantically retyping the long story; but he was only half done when it was time to go to St Paul's Chapel for the service.

Sonia had, incidentally, declared that a civil service would have been quite sufficient, but Lovecraft insisted on a church wedding. As she herself reports, it was his decision to have the service at this exquisite eighteenth-century relic—"where Washington and Lord Howe and many other great men had worshipped!"[23] St Paul's is an Episcopal church; and Lovecraft was quite aware that he was following in the tradition of his parents, who had married at St Paul's in Boston, also an Episcopal church.[24]

In any event, the couple was planning to go that evening to Philadelphia —whose colonial antiquities Lovecraft in November 1923 had expressed a wish to see[25]—for their honeymoon, but were too tired, so they presumably returned to 259 Parkside for the evening. There was also the matter of the Houdini manuscript remained to be dealt with. Sonia tells the tale this way:

> It was *not* "a public stenographer" who copied H. P.'s handwritten notes for the Houdini manuscript. It was I alone who was able to read these erased and crossed-out notes. I read them slowly to him while H. P. pounded them out on a borrowed typewriter, borrowed from the hotel in Philadelphia where we spent the first day and night copying that precious manuscript which had to meet the printer's dead-line. When that manuscript

> was finished we were too tired and exhausted for honey-mooning or anything else.[26]

She is attempting to refute W. Paul Cook's claim that the story was typed by a public stenographer; but it was indeed typed *at* a public stenographer's office. Although the couple was staying at the Robert Morris Hotel, the only stenographer's office that was open in the evening was in the Hotel Vendig, and the two of them spent both their evenings in Philadelphia (March 4 and 5) there finishing the typing job.[27] The story was sent to *Weird Tales* immediately, and Lovecraft received payment of $100—the largest sum he had hitherto earned as a fiction writer—on March 21.[28] It was the only occasion on which he was paid by *Weird Tales* in advance of publication.

"Under the Pyramids" is quite an able piece of work, and it remains a much undervalued tale. It is true that some of the earlier parts read rather like a travelogue, or even an encyclopaedia:

> The pyramids stand on a high rock plateau, this group forming next to the northernmost of the series of regal and aristocratic cemeteries built in the neighbourhood of the extinct capital Memphis, which lay on the same side of the Nile, somewhat south of Gizeh, and which flourished between 3400 and 2000 B.C. The greatest pyramid, which lies nearest the modern road, was built by King Cheops or Khufu about 2800 B.C., and stands more than 450 feet in perpendicular height.

Lovecraft had done considerable library work on Egyptian antiquities in preparation for writing the tale, and also had with him *The Tomb of Perneb* (1916), a volume issued by the Metropolitan Museum of Art; he had probably purchased it on one of his New York trips of 1922. Some of the imagery of the story probably also derives from Théophile Gautier's superb non-supernatural tale of Egyptian horror, "One of Cleopatra's Nights." Lovecraft owned Lafcadio Hearn's translation of *One of Cleopatra's Nights and Other Fantastic Romances* (1882).

In any case, the narrative nevertheless gains cumulative power as we see Houdini cast down some spectacularly deep chasm in the Temple of the Sphinx (Lovecraft had abandoned the idea of using Campbell's Tomb as the site of the central action of the story) and his laborious struggles not merely to escape from his bonds but to answer an "idle question" that had haunted him throughout his stay in Egypt: *"what huge and loathsome abnormality was the Sphinx originally carven to represent?"* This last bit is Lovecraft's

addition, and it in fact becomes the focus of the entire tale. Houdini himself is, accordingly, removed from centre stage as an active participant in the narrative, becoming largely an observer of bizarre phenomena; and, in what can only be a tart spoof of one of the most physically robust individuals of his day, he faints on three different occasions during the entire escapade.

What Houdini encounters is an immense underground cavern—"Bases of columns whose middles were higher than human sight . . . mere bases of things that must each dwarf the Eiffel Tower to insignificance"—peopled with the most hideous entities imaginable. Houdini ponders the curiously morbid temperament of the ancient Egyptians ("All these people thought of was death and the dead"), in particular their notions of the spirit or *ka,* which can return to its body or other bodies after it had "wandered about the upper and lower worlds in a horrible way". There are "blood-congealing legends" of what "decadent priestcraft" fashioned on occasion—"*composite mummies* made by the artificial union of human trunks and limbs with the heads of animals in imitation of the elder gods." Considering all this, Houdini is dumbfounded to come upon *living embodiments* of such entities:

> I *would not* look at the marching things. That I desperately resolved as I heard their creaking joints and nitrous wheezing above the dead music and the dead tramping. It was merciful that they did not speak . . . but God! *their crazy torches began to cast shadows on the surface of those stupendous columns.* Heaven take it away! *Hippopotami should not have human hands and carry torches . . . men should not have the heads of crocodiles. . . .*

This is one of the most striking examples of a tendency we will see in much of Lovecraft's later fiction—the implication that myths and legends are imperfectly preserved memories of real, but loathsome, events or entities. But the crux of the tale is Houdini's discovery of the answer to that "idle question" he had asked himself earlier. The composite creatures appear to be laying down huge amounts of food as offerings to some strange entity that appears fleetingly out of an aperture in the underground cavern: "It was as large, perhaps, as a good-sized hippopotamus, but very curiously shaped. It seemed to have no neck, but five separate shaggy heads springing in a row from a roughly cylindrical trunk . . . Out of these heads darted curious rigid tentacles which seized ravenously on the *excessively great* quantities of unmentionable food placed before the aperture." What could this

possibly be? "The five-headed monster that emerged . . . that five-headed monster as large as a hippopotamus . . . the five-headed monster—*and that of which it is the merest fore paw . . .*"

This is, perhaps, one of the relatively few instances where there is a genuine "surprise" ending in Lovecraft. On the whole, the tale is a rousing success, and it appropriately led off the huge May–June–July 1924 issue of *Weird Tales*. Lovecraft was, indeed, represented in three different contributions in this issue, the others being "Hypnos" and C. M. Eddy's "The Loved Dead."

One bizarre postscript to this entire affair concerns that last tale. A decade later Lovecraft, in discussing his relatively limited share of "real-life" experiences, noted in passing: "I have several times been in a police station . . . once to see the Chief of Police about the banning of a client's magazine from the stands . . ."[29] This can be nothing more than a reference to the fact that this issue of *Weird Tales* was banned on the grounds that "The Loved Dead" was about necrophilia (true enough, indeed) and apparently considered obscene. Lovecraft, oddly enough, does not discuss this matter in contemporary letters, and it is now hard to discover what actually happened. There are some indications, in Lovecraft's correspondence, that the magazine was banned only in the state of Indiana ("About poor Eddy's tale—it certainly did achieve fame of a sort! His name must have rung in tones of fiery denunciation all through the corridors & beneath the classic rotunda (if it has a rotunda) of the Indiana State Capitol!"[30]); but if so, I cannot see why Lovecraft would have gone to the Chief of Police in New York (it could hardly have been anywhere else) on the matter. To what degree the notoriety of the banning affected sales of *Weird Tales* is also in doubt: it can certainly not be said (as I myself have on occasion been careless enough to say) that this banning somehow "saved" the magazine by causing a run on the issue, especially since it would be four months before the next issue appeared. We may discover, however, that less fortunate consequences occurred—at least, as far as Lovecraft was concerned—in later years.

Meanwhile, Lovecraft was becoming very much involved with *Weird Tales* —perhaps more than he would have liked. In mid-March he reports that Henneberger "is making a radical change in the policy of *Weird Tales,* and that he has in mind a brand new magazine to cover the field of Poe-Machen

shudders. This magazine, he says, will be 'right in my line', and he wants to know if I would consider moving to CHICAGO to edit it!"[31] There is a certain ambiguity in this utterance, but I believe the sense is not that Henneberger would start a "brand new magazine" but that *Weird Tales* itself would be made over into a "new" magazine featuring Poe-Machen shudders. Lovecraft had earlier noted that Baird had been ousted as editor and that Farnsworth Wright had been placed in his stead;[32] this was only a stop-gap measure (the May–June–July issue of *Weird Tales* appears to have been edited by Wright and Otis Adelbert Kline, although surely a large proportion of the contents consisted of material that had been previously accepted by Baird), and Lovecraft was indeed Henneberger's first choice for editor of *Weird Tales*.

Lovecraft has frequently been criticised for failing to take up this opportunity just at the time when, as a new husband, he needed a steady income; the thinking is that he should have overcome his purely aesthetic distaste of the modern architecture of Chicago and accepted the offer. But the matter is considerably more complicated than this scenario suggests. First, although Sonia was in favour of a move to Chicago "if [the offer] definitely materialises and is accompanied by the requisite guarantees,"[33] it would either have meant Sonia's search for uncertain job prospects in Chicago or the couple's having to live a thousand miles away from each other merely for the sake of employment. Second, Lovecraft knew that Henneberger was deeply in debt: he reports that Henneberger has "lost $51,000.00 on his two magazines"[34] (i.e., *Weird Tales* and *Detective Tales*), and there was no guarantee at all that either enterprise would continue in operation much longer; if Lovecraft had therefore left for Chicago, he might after a few months have been stranded there with no job and with little prospect of getting one. Lovecraft was, in my view, wise to decline the offer. In any case, even in the most ideal financial circumstances, he might not have made the best editor of a magazine like *Weird Tales*. His fastidious taste would have rejected much that was actually published in its pages: there was simply not enough artistically polished weird fiction—of the Machen-Dunsany-Blackwood grade—to fill what was really nothing more than a cheap pulp magazine paying a penny a word. It is a brutal fact that the overwhelming amount of material published in *Weird Tales* is, on the literary scale, complete rubbish, although this seems to

matter little to those misguided souls who continue up to the present day to wax nostalgic about the magazine.

What actually happened to *Weird Tales* in this crisis was that Henneberger sold off his share of *Detective Tales* to the co-founder of Rural Publications, J. M. Lansinger (who retained Baird as editor of that magazine), appointed Farnsworth Wright as permanent editor of *Weird Tales* (he would retain that position until 1940), and then—as the only way to make up the $40,000 debt he had accrued—come to an agreement with B. Cornelius, the printer of the magazine, as follows: "Cornelius became chief stockholder with an agreement that if the $40,000 owed him was ever repaid by profits from the magazine, Henneberger would be returned the stock."[35] A new company, the Popular Fiction Publishing Co., was formed to issue the magazine, with the stockholders being Cornelius, Farnsworth Wright, and William Sprenger (*Weird Tales'* business manager); after a several-month hiatus *Weird Tales* resumed publication with the November 1924 issue. Although Henneberger retained a minor interest in the new company, *Weird Tales* never made sufficient profits for him to buy it back; in any case, he seems to have lost interest in the venture after a few years and finally drifted entirely out of the picture.

Farnsworth Wright (1888–1940) deserves some mention, as Lovecraft would eventually develop a very curious relationship with him. He had been the magazine's first reader from the very beginning and had several undistinguished stories in early issues; Lovecraft dismissed him in February 1924 as a "mediocre Chicago author,"[36] and writing was indeed not where his strengths lay. He had served in World War I and afterward was music critic for the *Chicago Herald and Examiner,* continuing in this latter activity for a time even after he took over the editorship of *Weird Tales.* By early 1921 he had contracted Parkinson's disease, and the illness worsened throughout the rest of his life, so that by the end of the decade he could not sign his name. (One unexpected and rather despicable consequence of this is that letters with Wright's signature are highly prized collectors' items.)

It is difficult to gauge Wright's success as editor of *Weird Tales,* especially since very different yardsticks can be used to measure "success" in something of this kind. It is, certainly, something in his favour that he managed to keep the magazine going even during the worst years of the depression; but there can similarly be no denying that he published an appalling amount of trite, hackneyed, and simply bad fiction that would

never have appeared elsewhere and, in an ideal world, should never have been published in the first place. Lovecraft felt that Wright was erratic, capricious, and even a little hypocritical, at least as regards his handling of Lovecraft's own work; and, in spite of those who have come to Wright's defence on this score, this view seems fairly plausible. Lovecraft may have had excessively high expectations of his success with Wright, so that rejections came with added bitterness. As early as March 1924 he wrote to Lillian about a letter Wright sent to Frank Long: "he mentioned my stories with extravagant praise—saying that I am the greatest short story writer since Poe, or something like that . . ."[37] In some senses Lovecraft's irritation with Wright stemmed from what he eventually realised was a somewhat naive view that aesthetically meritorious work should be rewarded commensurately. It would be years before he learned that writing for the pulps was simply a business, and that Wright looked upon the matter in that light. If most of *Weird Tales'* readership wanted cheap, formula-ridden hackwork, Wright would make sure to give it to them.

In the short term, however, Lovecraft and Sonia had a household to set in order. The first thing to do was to persuade aunt Lillian (and perhaps Annie as well) to come to New York to live with them. This seems to have been an entirely sincere desire on the part of both Lovecraft and Sonia: the latter writes, on a joint postcard to Lillian, "Hope to see you in New York soon,"[38] while Lovecraft in his marriage-announcement letter states jovially, "Dost fancy the Old Gentleman would transfer the family seat without sending for his first-born daughter?" Lillian was at this time almost sixty-six years old and probably in declining health; Lovecraft says with a cheerfulness bordering on wish-fulfilment, "You will feel better and more active here," but it is clear that she herself had no desire to move—especially after her nephew failed to take her into his confidence regarding the most dramatic change in his personal circumstances—and she was even reluctant to visit the couple in New York, although she finally did come for more than a month late in the year.

In the meantime Lovecraft would need his papers and effects. He asked Lillian to send such things as his tin box full of unpublished manuscripts, his complete file of *Weird Tales* and *Home Brew,* his calendars (he had several), his Webster's Unabridged (also an older dictionary compiled by James Stormonth, which he preferred because it was British), his Gillette

blades, and other items—including "my blue *jumbo cup,* whose capacious depths have dealt me out so much nourishment, and which has become so much a part of my essential background!"[39] Later much of his personal furniture was sent and somehow inserted into Sonia's four-room first-floor apartment at 259 Parkside.[40] This furniture did not arrive in its entirety until June 30,[41] but Kleiner reports seeing some of it as it arrived—"heaps of fine linen, quite a few pieces of heavy, old-fashioned silverware, and other items which had probably been stored away for years"—and also on how homelike the apartment looked. "Why, this looks as if you had lived here always." Lovecraft, beaming with pride, replied that a gentleman always made himself at home no matter where he happened to be.[42]

One occupant the couple would not have to worry about was Sonia's daughter. Florence Carol Greene appears to have had a falling out with her mother a few years previously: she had fallen in love with her half-uncle Sydney (only five years her elder), and Sonia, enraged, had adamantly refused to allow her to marry him. (Such a marriage would, in any event, have been prohibited by the tenets of the Orthodox Judaism.) This dispute led to a schism that, unfortunately, lasted for the duration of both women's lives. Florence left Sonia's apartment sometime after she came of age (March 19, 1923), although continuing to remain in New York.[43] There are reports that she herself did not care for Lovecraft and did not approve of her mother's marrying him.[44] Florence's later life is both distinguished and tragic: she married a newspaperman named John Weld in 1927 but divorced him in 1932; she herself went to Europe and became a reporter, attaining celebrity as the first reporter to cover the romance of the Prince of Wales (the future Edward VIII) and Mrs Wallis Simpson. Returning to America, she worked for newspapers in New York, later moving to Florida and becoming a film publicist. She died on March 31, 1979. But in all that time she refused to speak to her mother. And aside from a passing reference in her memoir, Sonia never speaks of her. Lovecraft too alludes to her only twice in all the correspondence I have seen.

In the meantime, however, Lovecraft had to think of work. This was, in fact, a somewhat pressing concern. Sonia had been making $10,000 per year at Ferle Heller's—a princely sum considering that the "minimum health and decency" wages for a family of four in the 1920s was $2000[45]

—but had already lost this position, evidently, by February 1924. She wrote to Lillian: "Just at the moment I am down on my luck as it were but I know it can't last much longer. I simply must find a position, for I feel sure there is one waiting for me somewhere."[46] Nevertheless, she had savings in five figures,[47] so perhaps there was no immediate need to replenish the coffers.

It is true that Lovecraft had never held any regular salaried position, and it is also true that he seemed to have no especially regular revision client except David Van Bush; nevertheless, a likely prospect seemed in the offing in something called "The Reading Lamp." This was a magazine as well as a literary agency that would generate commissioned articles or books on behalf of its clients; it was run by one Gertrude E. Tucker. The one issue of the magazine that has come up for sale recently (no copy appears to exist in any library in the world) declares it to be "A Convenient Guide to the New Books including new editions of old favorites as issued by the Publishing Houses of Canada." The last part of that sentence relates to the fact that this issue—Volume 1, Number 1 (December 1923)—was published by the Ryerson Press, Toronto. Possibly there was also a corresponding edition of the magazine published in the United States, presumably from New York. In any case, it was Edwin Baird who had "recommended"[48] Lovecraft to Tucker in January 1924; Sonia, learning of this, took it upon herself to see Tucker and bring a sheaf of Lovecraft's manuscripts to her. On March 10 Lovecraft interviewed at the Reading Lamp office, with the following result:

> Miss T. thinks a book of my antiquarian & other essays would be quite practicable, & urges me to prepare at least three as samples at once. Also, she thinks she can get me a contract with a chain of magazines to write minor matter to order. And more —as soon as my MSS. arrive, she wants to see all of them, with a view to a weird book. . . . What Miss T. wants in the way of essays is quaint stuff with a flavour of the supernatural.[49]

All this sounds promising, and at one point Lovecraft even reports the possibility that The Reading Lamp might be able to secure him a regular position at a publishing house,[50] although this clearly did not happen. Later in the month he reported working on several chapters of a book on American superstitions; the idea evidently was that he would do three chapters and Tucker would then try to get a contract from a book publisher for the project. My feeling is that Lovecraft actually did write these

chapters, although they have not come to light; but since on August 1 he made note of the "non-materialisation of sundry literary prospects,"[51] the obvious inference is that the Reading Lamp business came to nothing. He did, however, apparently write a review for the magazine—of J. Arthur Thomson's *What Is Man?* (London: Methuen, 1923; New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1924), an anthropological work.[52] This item has not been located.

But, again, this was not in itself a disaster. Lovecraft always had Bush to rely on. He met him on May 25[53] and reported doing "Bush work" in July. Bush published at least eight books in 1924 and 1925 (all of them psychology manuals—he had evidently given up poetry), and no doubt Lovecraft derived at least a modest income from revising them. Checks from *Weird Tales* were no doubt trickling in also—for "The Hound" (February), "The Rats in the Walls" (March), "Arthur Jermyn" (April), and "Hypnos" (May–June–July) along with "Under the Pyramids," although I have no information on how much any of these stories aside from the Houdini job actually brought in.

The couple, indeed, felt so relatively prosperous that in May they purchased two home lots in Bryn Mawr Park, a development in Yonkers. The real estate company that negotiated the purchase, the Homeland Company of 28 North Broadway in Yonkers, has of course long ago ceased to exist. I cannot find much information on this matter and certainly do not know where in Yonkers this property actually was. A home lot would, of course, be much cheaper than a house, and in her autobiography Sonia declares that a home for Lovecraft, herself, and his two aunts was planned for the larger lot and that the other would be used for speculation.[54] Yonkers is the city immediately north of the Bronx in lower Westchester County, and within easy commuting distance of Manhattan by trolley or train. Since the turn of the century it had become a fashionable bedroom community for New Yorkers; but it was still an idyllic small town with plenty of greenery and a sort of New England feel to it, and might have been the ideal place for Lovecraft to have settled so long as he needed to remain in the New York area for purposes of employment.[55]

What is, of course, remarkable about this whole episode is that it exactly duplicates Lovecraft's parents' purchase of a home lot in Auburndale, Massachusetts, a few years after their marriage in 1889. Lovecraft knew of this matter, as he mentions it in an early letter to Kleiner;

[56] was he consciously wishing to follow his parents' footsteps here, as he apparently did in going through an Anglican wedding service?

Although Lovecraft met with a Mr Bailey of the Homeland Company about "the type of house we would wish,"[57] on July 29 he wrote to the real estate firm that "Owing to financial difficulties of the most acute and unforeseen sort, I find myself unable at present to make the remittances now due on the property which I purchased last May at Bryn Mawr Park."[58] (Actually, Sonia states that she managed to retain control of the lots for some years by paying a rate of $100 per week.[59]) What was the nature of these difficulties?

We have already seen that Sonia either lost or gave up her very remunerative job at Ferle Heller's. Why? It appears that she attempted to start her own millinery business. This strikes me as an extremely risky undertaking. Even if she had simply lost her position at Ferle Heller's (as her letter to Lillian stating that she was "down on [her] luck" would seem to indicate), she might have been better off attempting to secure a position with an existing firm rather than striking out on her own—an undertaking that no doubt involved a considerable initial outlay of capital. In days when all men and women wore hats in public, the millinery business was an extraordinarily competitive one: the 1924–25 city directory for Manhattan and the Bronx lists a minimum of 1200 milliners. It is not surprising that Sonia would have gone into this profession: in both New York and Chicago, Russian Jewish immigrants specialised in the clothing trade.[60] My only thought as to Sonia's attempt to make it on her own is that, as a married woman, she did not wish to do the extensive amount of travelling that her position at Ferle Heller's evidently required her to do, and wished to open a shop of her own so as to remain in the city as much as possible. (I am not certain whether Sonia's shop was in Manhattan or Brooklyn; there is no city directory for Brooklyn at this time. The shop she attempted to establish in 1928 was certainly in Brooklyn.) But if this were the case, the ironic circumstance is that Sonia remained out of work for much of the rest of the year and was then forced to take a series of jobs in the Midwest, separating her from her husband far more than her Ferle Heller's position is likely to have done. She says nothing about this whole matter at all in her memoir; but Lovecraft, writing to Lillian on August 1, makes clear reference to "the somewhat disastrous collapse of S. H.'s *independent* [my emphasis]

millinery venture," with the result that there is now "something of a shortage in the exchequer."[61]

The upshot of all this was that Lovecraft was forced to look much more vigorously for a job—any job—than before. Now, and only now, begins the futile and rather pathetic hunting through the classified ads every Sunday in the *New York Times* for any position that might conceivably be available; but Lovecraft came face to face with a realisation as true then as now: "Positions of every kind seem virtually unattainable to persons without experience . . ."[62] What he says is the job that "came nearest to materialisation" was a salesman's position with the Creditors' National Clearing House, located at 810 Broad Street in Newark, New Jersey. This was a bill collecting agency, and Lovecraft would be responsible, not for actually collecting bills, but for selling the agency's services among wholesalers and retailers in New York City. He appears to have been hired on a trial basis, and on Saturday, July 26, he attended a salesmen's meeting in Newark to learn the ropes after spending the better part of the previous week studying the literature given to him by the firm. On Monday the 28th he began the actual sales campaign with wholesalers, but did not generate a single sale; he tried again on Wednesday, canvassing retailers in Brooklyn, but with the same results. On Thursday Lovecraft was taken around by the head of the Newark branch, William J. Bristol, who quickly took him aside:

> my guide became very candid about the tone of the business, and admitted that a gentleman born and bred has very little chance for success in such lines of canvassing salesmanship . . . where one must either be miraculously magnetic and captivating, or else so boorish and callous that he can transcend every rule of tasteful conduct and push conversation on bored, hostile, and unwilling victims.

Bristol accepted Lovecraft's immediate resignation, without the usual one week's notice. And although Bristol, admiring Lovecraft's command of English, made vague proposals to go into business with him privately in the insurance business, this obviously came to nothing.

This whole episode—as well as a later one in which Lovecraft tried to secure a job in the lamp testing department of an electrical laboratory[63]—shows how difficult it was for Lovecraft to secure the job that most suited him, namely something in the writing or publishing business. There is no reason why, with his experience, he should not have been able to secure

some such position; but he was unable to do so. Several of his friends have commented on a notorious letter of application that he sent out around this time (a draft of it is written on the back of his letter to the Homeland Company of July 29), the first paragraph of which reads as follows:

> If an unprovoked application for employment seems somewhat unusual in these days of system, agencies, & advertising, I trust that the circumstances surrounding this one may help to mitigate what would otherwise be obtrusive forwardness. The case is one wherein certain definitely marketable aptitudes must be put forward in an unconventional manner if they are to override the current fetish which demands commercial experience & causes prospective employers to dismiss unheard the application of any situation-seeker unable to boast of specific professional service in a given line.[64]

And so on for six more paragraphs, commenting pointedly that Lovecraft has, in the last two months, answered over a hundred advertisements without a single response (reminiscent of his noting to *Weird Tales* that "Dagon" and "The Tomb" had been previously rejected), and concluding with a feeble joke (Lovecraft is neither a round peg trying to fit a square hole nor a square peg trying to fit a round hole, but a trapezohedral peg).

To be sure, this may not have been the ideal letter, but standards of business writing were different seventy years ago. Nevertheless, Kleiner remarks of this letter, and others like it: "I think I am justified in saying that they were the sort of letters a temporarily straitened English gentleman might have written in an effort to make a profitable connection in the business world of the day before yesterday."[65] Frank Long is more blunt: "As specimens of employment-seeking correspondence, few letters could have been more incredibly off-target. But surprisingly enough, he received at least four sympathetic replies."[66] Long seems entirely unaware how the second half of his comment completely undercuts the first.

A paper among Lovecraft's effects appears to indicate the newspapers, magazines, and publishing houses to whom he sent this letter. Among the newspapers in New York are the *Herald Tribune,* the *Times,* the *Evening Post,* the *Sun,* the *World,* and the *Brooklyn Eagle.* (In another column, interestingly, are listed four papers in the Boston area—the *Transcript,* the *Herald,* the *Post,* and the *Christian Science Monitor.*) Magazines listed are the *Century, Harper's* (crossed out), *Munsey's,* and the *Atlantic* (in Boston).

Publishers are Harper & Brothers, Charles Scribner's Sons, E. P. Dutton, G. P. Putnam's Sons, Doubleday, Page, George H. Doran, Albert & Charles Boni, Boni & Liveright, and Knopf. Lovecraft was certainly aiming high, and there is no reason why he shouldn't have. It is not clear that the letter of application was actually sent to all these places; some have check marks beside them, others do not. I do not know what the four responses alluded to by Long are.

Then, in the classified section of the *New York Times* for Sunday, August 10, appeared the following advertisement in the "Situations Wanted —Male" category:

> WRITER AND REVISER, free-lance, desires regular and permanent salared connection with any responsible enterprise requiring literary services; exceptionally thorough experience in preparing correct and fluent text on subjects assigned, and in meeting the most difficult, intricate and extensive problems of rewriting and constructive revision, prose or verse; would also consider situation dealing with such proofreading as demands rapid and discriminating perception, orthographical accuracy, stylistic fastidiousness and a keenly developed sense of the niceties of English usage; good typist; age 34, married; has for seven years handled all the prose and verse of a leading American public speaker and editor. Y 2292 Times Annex.[67]

This advertisement—taking many phrases from his application letter—is rather more open to criticism than the letter itself, for it is far longer than any other one in this section and really does go on at needless length when a more compact notice would have conveyed many of the same points far more cheaply. The expense was, indeed, quite considerable: the rate for ads in the "Situations Wanted" section was 40¢ per word, and this ad—99 words—cost a full $39.60. This would be the equivalent of a month's rent in the one-room apartment Lovecraft would occupy in 1925–26. I am amazed that Sonia let Lovecraft take out an ad of this length, for surely she paid for it with whatever savings she had at this time.

The ad generated at least one response, but not a very promising one. M. A. Katherman, Merchandising Counsellor, wrote to Lovecraft on August 11, saying: "If you will call at this office the writer will assist you to locate the position you are seeking."[68] In other words, Katherman himself was an agent of some sort (a headhunter, in today's jargon) rather than someone

who actually had a job to offer. Lovecraft makes no mention of this individual, nor of any other responses to his ad, in any correspondence I have seen.

Then, in September, an old friend reappeared on the scene—J. C. Henneberger. He may have visited Lovecraft in late March: Lovecraft states that he was planning to come then[69] (clearly to discuss the editorship of *Weird Tales*), but I cannot ascertain whether he actually did so. Nothing is heard of him until on September 18 we suddenly hear of the following:

> Am ceasing answering advts for a while, to give Henneberger a chance to prove his business sincerity. ¶ He has—or says he has—hired me for his new magazine at a salary beginning at $40.00 per wk & later going up (HE SAYS) to $100. I'll have to give him my undivided time, of course, but I'll lose nothing thereby, since the moment he stops paying I can stop working. First payment—a week from tomorrow. His plans sound more businesslike than ever before.[70]

Although Lovecraft met Henneberger in New York on September 7 and reported to his aunts that "he told me of the new lease of life achieved by Weird Tales, and of the fine job he had in store for me,"[71] it cannot have been the editorship of *Weird Tales* that Henneberger had in mind: Wright had surely been appointed by now (the first issue wholly under his editorship, dated November 1924, would appear in October). I think the two parts of Lovecraft's comment are meant to be taken separately; that is, that *Weird Tales* had achieved a new lease on life, thereby allowing Henneberger to create a new magazine for which Lovecraft would be editor. What was this magazine? *College Humor,* founded in 1922, was going strong and was not likely to need a new editor; but there was another magazine called the *Magazine of Fun* that Henneberger started about this time,[72] and, incredible as it seems, the editorship of this magazine or something like it is what Henneberger appears to have been offering. Lovecraft speaks of Henneberger telephoning him and "want[ing] me to turn out some samples of my adapting of jokes for his proposed magazine."[73] It was on the basis of these samples that Henneberger "hired" Lovecraft in mid-September.

But, of course, nothing came of the plans: either Henneberger did not have the resources for starting the magazine at this time (I can find no information on the *Magazine of Fun,* if this was indeed the magazine in question), or he decided that Lovecraft was not the appropriate editor. The

former seems more likely, given that Henneberger did not have much cash at his disposal. The promised pay for Lovecraft's editorial work metamorphosed into a $60 credit at the Scribner Book Shop; and although Lovecraft tried to get this credit converted to cash, he was unable to do so and finally, on October 9, he took Long to the bookstore to purchase a sheaf of books—four by Lord Dunsany, seven by Arthur Machen, five on colonial architecture, two miscellaneous volumes, and one book for Long (*The Thing in the Woods* by Harper Williams, a recent horror novel) for his help in making the selection. Long treats the whole episode engagingly in his memoir,[74] but seems under the impression that the credit was a payment for stories in *Weird Tales,* when in fact it was for this editorial job that never materialised.

Lovecraft accordingly returned to answering the want ads, although by this time the strain was becoming pretty severe for someone who had no particular business sense and may perhaps have felt the whole activity somewhat beneath his dignity. He wrote to Lillian in late September: "That day [Sunday] was one of gloom and nerves—more advertisement answering, which has become such a psychological strain that I almost fall unconscious over it!"[75] Anyone who has been out of work for any length of time has perhaps felt this way.

Meanwhile Lovecraft's friends were trying to lend a hand. When Lovecraft completed "Under the Pyramids," Henneberger personally visited Houdini, who was then in Murfreesboro, Tennessee, to show it to him; Houdini was enthusiastic and in March wrote Lovecraft "a most cordial note."[76] Houdini maintained an apartment at 278 West 113th Street in Manhattan and urged Lovecraft to call. He may or may not have done so at the time, but he certainly got in touch with Houdini in September, when the latter offered to assist him in securing work. In a letter of September 28 he asked Lovecraft to telephone him at his private number in early October, "as I want to put you in touch with someone worth-while."[77] This person was one Brett Page, the head of a newspaper syndicate, whom Lovecraft met for an hour and a half at his office on Broadway and 58th Street on October 14; but he had no actual position to offer. In mid-November Samuel Loveman attempted to set up Lovecraft with the head of the cataloguing department of a bookshop on 59th Street, but this too proved fruitless.

Sonia was not, to be sure, unemployed during this entire period; no doubt she was also answering want ads, and in late September Lovecraft spoke of the "place where she has been the last few weeks"[78]—presumably a milliner's or a department store. But she felt that this position was insecure and was looking around for something better. But then things took a turn very much for the worse. On the evening of October 20 Sonia was stricken with "sudden gastric spasms . . . whilst resting in bed after a day of general ill-feeling."[79] Lovecraft took her in a taxicab to Brooklyn Hospital,[80] only a few blocks away. She would spend the next eleven days there, finally being released on the 31st.

There can hardly be any question but that Sonia's illness was in large part nervous or psychological in origin; Lovecraft himself acknowledged this later when referring to it as "a double breakdown, nervous and gastric."[81] Sonia herself must have been acutely worried over the many disasters, financial and otherwise, that had overtaken the couple, and had no doubt sensed Lovecraft's increasing discouragement at his failed job-hunting efforts and perhaps his belief that his entire life had taken a wrong turn. Lovecraft never makes any such statement in his letters of the period, but I have trouble believing that something of the sort was not going through his mind. Could there have been any actual quarrels? Neither party says so, and it is useless to conjecture.

Lovecraft was unusually solicitous to Sonia in the hospital: he visited her every day (this representing his first time he had actually set foot in a hospital, since he had never entered Butler when his mother was there), bringing her books, stationery, and an "Eversharp pencil," and—what must have been a great sacrifice in the name of married bliss—relearned the game of chess so that he could play it with Sonia. She beat him every time. (Lovecraft had a violent antipathy to games and sports of any kind, feeling them an utter waste of time. In speaking years later of puzzles, he remarked to Morton: "After I solve the problems—if I do—I don't know a cursed thing more about nature, history, and the universe than I did before."[82]) In turn he began learning to be more independent in the running of a household: he made coffee, a twenty-minute egg, and even spaghetti from Sonia's written instructions, and showed obvious pride in keeping the place well cleaned and dusted for her return. These remarks on cooking suggest that he had never made a meal for himself up to this time: he had either had

his mother, his aunts, or Sonia to do it for him if he did not go to a restaurant.

Lovecraft states that one of Sonia's doctors, Dr Westbrook, actually recommended an operation for the removal of her gall bladder; but Lovecraft—consciously remembering that his mother had died of just such an operation—strongly urged Sonia to get a second opinion, and another doctor (an unnamed "woman graduate of the Sorbonne with a high Paris reputation"[83]) advised against surgery; it was either she or Dr Kingman, a nerve specialist, who then recommended six weeks' rest in the country before Sonia resumed work. Accordingly, she checked into a sort of private rest home in New Jersey on November 9. This was actually a farm run by a Mrs R. A. Craig and her two sons (her husband was a surveyor who did not spend much time at home) near Somerville, New Jersey, in the central part of the state. She would be given her own room and three meals a day for $12.50 a week.[84] Lovecraft was particularly taken with the place because it had at least seven cats. He stayed overnight at the farm on the 9th, then left the next morning to spend the rest of the week in Philadelphia examining colonial antiquities. Returning on the 15th, he was surprised to find that Sonia had come home the day before, one day early; evidently she had not found the place entirely to her liking: "the standard of immaculateness in housekeeping left something to be desired, whilst the company of the one other boarder—a nervous woman with alternating moroseness & loquacity—was not exactly inspiring."[85] She felt, however, good enough after only six days to resume job-hunting efforts.

Almost immediately after Sonia's return, a dramatic decision was made: Sonia would leave for a job in the Midwest while Lovecraft would relocate to a smaller apartment in the city. The couple planned to move out of 259 Parkside as early as the end of November, but as it happened the dispersal did not occur until the end of December. Lovecraft sent a telegram to Lillian (and perhaps to Annie also) to ask their assistance in the move, but later wrote that he and Sonia could manage everything by themselves. How all this came about is not entirely clear. All that Sonia says is the following:

> After we were married and I found it necessary to accept an exceedingly remunerative position out of town I suggested he have one of his friends live with him at our apartment, but his aunts thought it best that since I would be in town only a few days a time every three or four weeks when I'd come to town on

> a purchasing tour for my firm, it would be wiser to store most of *my* things and find a studio room large enough for Howard's book-cases and furniture that he brought with him from Providence.[86]

Sonia goes on to reveal considerable irritation and even anger that it was her furniture that was sold off and not Lovecraft's, since he clung to his "old (many of them dilapidated) pieces . . . with a morbid tenacity." Sonia's piano had already been sold for $350 in September,[87] although this was probably purely for the sake of money, since Lovecraft promptly cashed the cheque he had received for it and paid a $48 grocer's bill. Now more material was sold, including some of Sonia's books (for $20) and several items of furniture (whether Sonia's or Lovecraft's is not made clear; perhaps some from both). Unfortunately, an appraiser who looked at the latter said that his company would pay nothing for it, but Lovecraft thought that selling it to private individuals might net $25 or $30. Whether it did or not is unclear. He does reveal a certain "tenacity" in holding on to his Providence furnishings, whether it be morbid or not: "I *must* have the Dr. Clark table & chair, the cabinet, the typewriter table, the 454 library table, & several bookcases—to say nothing of some sort of bed or couch, & a bureau or chiffonier."[88]

Lovecraft's first choice for a place to settle was Elizabeth, New Jersey, which he had visited earlier in the year and found a delightful haven of colonial antiquity. It was not far from New York so far as a commute was concerned; presumably, as now, there was both rail and bus service, as well as a ferry. If this could not be managed, then Lovecraft would opt for Brooklyn Heights, where Loveman and Hart Crane lived. He continued to make a rather pitiable plea for Lillian to come down and set up housekeeping with him: "Best of all would be if . . . you & I could find some means of co-operative housekeeping here which might once more light the Phillips home-fires, albeit on distant sod."[89]

Lillian naturally did not accept this offer, but she did come down around December 1 to help in the transition. The month of December is a blank, since Lillian stayed the entire month and into early January, so naturally Lovecraft wrote no letters to her; no letters to others have come to light either. The one thing I am unclear on is exactly when or how Sonia secured her job in the Midwest. Lovecraft spoke in mid-November of her answering a want ad for a companion for an elderly lady[90]—which would be nothing

more than a stopgap while she looked for a more permanent position in her field—and the next year, when recounting the year's events to Maurice Moe, he wrote: ". . . when, in December, she received a sudden offer of an important and highly salaried post in the largest department-store of Cincinnati she determined to try it for a while . . ."[91] Whether Lovecraft was wrong about the date of this offer, I cannot say: clearly the decision to leave 259 Parkside was made in mid-November, and I find it hard to imagine why such a move would be contemplated unless Sonia had already accepted the position in Cincinnati at this time.

It should be pointed out that this separation was not—at least outwardly—anything other than an economic move; there is no real indication that any dispute or emotional crisis had occurred. It is, to be sure, somewhat puzzling that Sonia, with her manifest qualifications in the millinery field, could not find suitable employment locally. When her own hat shop collapsed, her former employers, Ferle Heller, must have refused to take her back; and her gastric attack and subsequent stay in the rest home surely put an end to whatever job she had had in September. Still, these are the facts. Are we permitted to wonder whether Lovecraft was secretly pleased at this turn of events? Did he prefer a marriage by correspondence rather than one in person? It is time to backtrack and see what we can learn about the actual personal relations between Sonia and Lovecraft.

Sonia's dry remark that, after typing the Houdini manuscript, they were "too tired and exhausted for honey-mooning or anything else" is surely a tactful way of referring to the fact that she and Lovecraft did not have sex on their first night together. The matter of Lovecraft's sexual conduct must inevitably be addressed, although the information we have on the subject is very sparse. We learn from R. Alain Everts, who interviewed Sonia on the matter, that:

1) he was a virgin at the time he married;

2) prior to his marriage he had read several books on sex;

3) he *never* initiated sexual relations, but would respond when Sonia did so.[92]

None of this, except 2), is a surprise. One wonders what books Lovecraft might have read (one hopes it was not David Van Bush's *Practical Psychology and Sex Life* [1922]!—quite possibly he may have read some of James F. Morton's writings on the subject). His Victorian

upbringing—especially from a mother whose husband died under distasteful circumstances—clearly made him very inhibited as far as sex is concerned; but there is also every reason to believe that Lovecraft was simply one of those individuals who have a low sex drive, and for whom the subject is of relatively little interest. It is mere armchair psychoanalysis to say that he somehow sublimated his sex urges into writing or other activities.

Sonia herself has only two comments on the matter. "As a married man he was an adequately excellent lover, but refused to show his feelings in the presence of others. He shunned promiscuous association with women before his marriage."[93] I do not know what an "adequately excellent" lover is. The other remark is a trifle more embarrassing: "H. P. was inarticulate in expressions of love except to his mother and to his aunts, to whom he expressed himself quite vigorously; to all other[s] it was expressed by deep appreciation only. One way of expression of H. P.'s sentiment was to wrap his 'pinkey' finger around mine and say 'Umph!'"[94] Move over, Casanova! Sonia later admitted that Lovecraft did not like to discuss sex and became visibly upset even at the mention of the word "sex,"[95] although it is mentioned frequently—if disparagingly—in the "Lovecraft on Love" letter. The note about "appreciation" leads to one of the most celebrated passages in her memoir: "I believe he loved me as much as it was possible for a temperament like his to love. He'd never mention the word *love.* He would say instead 'My dear, you don't know how much I appreciate you.' I tried to understand him and was grateful for any crumbs from his lips that fell my way."[96] One of the very few times the word "love" is mentioned in the entire range of his correspondence occurs in a letter to Long written a month before his marriage: "One who so values love, shou'd realise that there are only two genuine kinds of it: matrimonial and parental."[97] This may well be another indication that Lovecraft and Sonia had decided to marry by this time; nevertheless, the word "love" does not seem otherwise to have crossed his lips, at least as far as Sonia was concerned. Again, none of this is entirely surprising given what we know about Lovecraft's upbringing. It is possible that that upbringing rendered him emotionally stunted, at least so far as sex and even personal relationships in general (especially with women) are concerned. In later years he would have a small number of women correspondents, but they would only be friends or associates whom he would address in an

excessively formal and avuncular way. His letters to Helen Sully, Elizabeth Toldridge, C. L. Moore, and others are full of philosophical interest, but he never let his hair down to them the way he did to Long or Morton or Galpin.

If Sonia could not make Lovecraft perform sexually quite as much as she would like, she could change him in other ways. First there was his diet. Although he had put on considerable weight in the 1922–23 period, Sonia nevertheless remarks:

> When we were married he was tall and gaunt and "hungry-looking". I happen to like the apparently ascetic type but H. P. was too much even for my taste, so I used to cook a well-balanced meal every evening, make a substantial breakfast (he loved cheese soufflé!—rather an untimely dish for breakfast) and I'd leave a few (almost Dagwoodian) sandwiches for him, a piece of cake and some fruit for his lunch (he loved sweets), and I'd tell him to be sure to make some tea or coffee for himself.[98]

Elsewhere she says: "Living a normal life and eating the food I provided made him take on much extra weight, which was quite becoming to him."[99] She may have thought so, but Lovecraft didn't: he would later refer to himself as a "porpoise,"[100] and indeed he ballooned to nearly 200 pounds, which is certainly overweight for someone of his general build. It may be true that what he considered his ideal weight—140 pounds—is a trifle lean for a man of 5'11", but he came to hate the extra baggage he carried during this period. The amusing thing is that Sonia herself, according to George Kirk, was "continually bewail[ing] her avoirdupois"[101] at this time.

Both Sonia in her memoir and Lovecraft in his letters remark on the frequency with which, at least in the early months of their marriage, they would go out to restaurants. At a time when Sonia was making an enviable income (and when a reasonably good meal at a good restaurant could be had for a dollar or less), there is nothing to wonder at in this. Sonia gradually expanded Lovecraft's taste beyond the simple Anglo-Saxon fare to which he had no doubt been accustomed at 598 Angell Street. He became especially fond of Italian cuisine (which was at the time still regarded as "ethnic" food not meant for regular consumption by non-Italians), both in restaurants (especially the Milan at Eighth Avenue and 42nd Street) and as cooked by Sonia, with her special sauce; during his fifteen months alone in

New York it would become his staple cuisine. Even with the impending breakup of their household, Sonia managed to cook a splendid Thanksgiving dinner for Lovecraft and his friends:

> And what a classick repast! Enchanted soup—apotheosised roast turkey with dressing of chestnuts & all the rare spices & savoury herbs that camel-caravans with tinkling bells bring secretly from forgotten orients of eternal spring across the deserts beyond the Oxus—cauliflower with cryptical creaming —cranberry sauce with the soul of Rhode Island bogs in it— salads that emperors have dreamed into reality—sweet potatoes with visions of pillar'd Virginia plantation-houses—gravy for which Apicius strove & Lucullus sigh'd in vain—plum pudding such as Irving never tasted at Bracebridge Hall—& to crown the feast, a gorgeous mince pie fairly articulate with memories of New-England fireplaces & cold-cellars. All the glory of earth sublimated in one transcendent repast—one divides one's life into periods of before & after having consumed—or even smelled or dream'd of—such a meal![102]

So Lovecraft was not always an ascetic—although no doubt some of this was meant as praise for Sonia's heroic efforts in preparing the meal, especially at such a trying time.

Another thing Sonia didn't like about Lovecraft, aside from his lean and hungry look, was his attire.

> I remember so well when I took him to a smart haberdashery how he protested at the newness of the coat and hat I persuaded him to accept and wear. He looked at himself in the mirror and protested, "But my dear, this is entirely too stylish for 'Grandpa Theobald'; it doesn't look like me. I look like some fashionable fop!" To which I replied, "Not all men who dress fashionably are necessarily fops."[103]

To someone in the fashion business, the conservative clothing customarily worn by Lovecraft must have been irritating indeed. Sonia adds with some tartness, "I really think he was glad that this coat and the new suit purchased that day were later stolen." Sure enough, when we read Lovecraft's catalogue of items stolen from him in the burglary of May 1925, we find "new Flatbush overcoat 1924." What still remained to him

were overcoats dating to 1909, 1917 (both light), and 1918 (a winter coat); evidently the burglars felt these were not worth taking.

This simple incident may go far in suggesting what went wrong with the marriage. Although in later years Lovecraft charitably claimed that the marriage's failure was "98% financial,"[104] in reality both Sonia and Lovecraft had deceived themselves into thinking that they shared a "congeniality" (as Lovecraft stated in his marriage-announcement letter to Lillian) that went beyond intellectual and aesthetic matters and covered actual modes of behaviour and basic values. Granting that financial considerations were indeed of considerable—even paramount—importance, these differences in values would in any case have emerged in time and doomed the marriage sooner or later. In some senses it was better—at least for Lovecraft—that it occurred sooner than later.

But in those first few months the euphoria of being married, the excitement of the big city (and of fairly promising job prospects), the fortuitous arrival of Annie Gamwell at the end of March (she had been visiting a friend in Hohokus, New Jersey[105]), and of course his many friends in the area kept Lovecraft in a buoyant mood. Amateur work was still taking up some time: Sonia, as President, and Lovecraft, as Official Editor of the UAPA, managed to issue a *United Amateur* for May 1924, although it must have been a month or so late, as Sonia's "President's Message" is dated May 1. Here she announced that there would be no annual convention in late July —a consequence both of the obstructionism of the previous administration (the "anti-literati" group hostile to Lovecraft's faction) and of the general apathy overtaking the UAPA. The couple's financial and health problems later in the year forced them to place amateur affairs well to the rear of their priorities.

But social activity with amateurs still remained on the agenda. Sonia took Lovecraft frequently to the monthly meetings of the Blue Pencil Club (a NAPA group) in Brooklyn; Lovecraft did not much care for this group but would go to please his wife, and in 1925–26, when he was alone, he would skip meetings except when Sonia happened to be in town and made him go. There was some group called The Writers' Club whose meetings Lovecraft attended in March, although this does not seem to be an amateur organisation. When asked by Morton if he would attend a meeting in May, he writes: "It all depends on the ball-and-chain. If she feels equal to a wild

night, we'll show up at The Writers. But if she doesn't, I'm afeard I'll have to be listed among those absent." However we are to take the "ball-and-chain" remark (one hopes it is meant in genial flippancy), Lovecraft adds rather touchingly: "She generally has to hit the hay early, and I have to get home in proportionate time, since she can't get to sleep till I do."[106] The couple did share a double bed, and no doubt Sonia had already become accustomed to having her husband beside her and felt uncomfortable when he was not there.

Lovecraft certainly found the support of his friends indispensable for maintaining emotional equilibrium during this entire period, when first the many changes in his social and professional life and, later, the successive disappointments and hardships threatened to disrupt his own mental stability. The most heart-warming portions of his letters to his aunts of 1924 are not those involving Sonia (she is mentioned with remarkable infrequency, either because Lovecraft was not spending much time with her or, more likely, because the aunts did not wish to hear about her) but those dealing with his surprisingly numerous outings with friends old and new. This was, of course, the heyday of the Kalem Club, although that term was not coined until early the next year.

Some of these men (and they were all men) we have met already—Kleiner (then a bookkeeper at the Fairbanks Scales Co. and living somewhere in Brooklyn), Morton (living in Harlem; I am not sure of his occupation at this time), and Long (living at 823 West End Avenue in the upper West Side of Manhattan with his parents and studying journalism at New York University). Now others joined "the gang."

There was Arthur Leeds (1882–1952?), a sort of rolling stone who had been with a travelling circus as a boy and now, at the age of roughly forty, eked out a bare living as a columnist for *Writer's Digest* and occasional pulp writer for *Adventure* and other magazines; he had two stories in *Weird Tales.* He was perhaps the most indigent of this entire group of largely indigent aesthetes. At this time he was living at a hotel in West 49th Street in Hell's Kitchen. I do not know how he was introduced to Lovecraft, but he must have been a friend of one of the other members; in any case, he was rapidly incorporated into the circle. Lovecraft speaks warmly of Leeds, but after leaving New York he had little contact with him.

There was Everett McNeil (1862–1929), who like Morton earned an entry in *Who's Who in America,* on the strength of sixteen novels for boys

published between 1903 and 1929, mostly for E. P. Dutton.[107] The majority of these were historical novels in which McNeil would sugarcoat the history with stirring tales of action on the part of explorers or adventurers battling Indians or colonising the American frontier. The most popular was perhaps *In Texas with Davy Crockett* (1908), which was reprinted as late as 1937. George Kirk describes him in a letter to his fiancée as "an oldster—lovely purely white hair, writes books for boys and does not need to write down to them, he is quite equal mentally."[108] Kirk did not mean that last remark at all derogatorily. Lovecraft—who had already met McNeil on one of his New York trips of 1922—felt the same way and cherished McNeil's naive simplicity, even though gradually McNeil fell out of favour with the rest of the gang for being tiresome and intellectually unstimulating. He was living, as in 1922, in Hell's Kitchen, not far from Leeds.

There was George Kirk himself (1898–1962), who had of course met Lovecraft in Cleveland in 1922 and arrived in New York in August (just before Samuel Loveman, who came in early September[109]) to pursue his bookseller's trade, settling at 50 West 106th Street in Manhattan. Although having lived in Akron and Cleveland for most of his life up to this time, he had spent the years 1920–22 in California, where he had become acquainted with Clark Ashton Smith. His one venture into publishing was *Twenty-one Letters of Ambrose Bierce* (1922), Loveman's edition of Bierce's letters to him. He had become engaged to Lucile Dvorak in late 1923 but did not wish to marry until he had established himself as a bookseller in New York; this took nearly three years, and in the interim he wrote letters to Lucile that rival Lovecraft's letters to his aunts in their detailed vignettes of "the gang." They are the only other contemporaneous documents of the sort that we have, and they are of enormous help in filling in gaps in Lovecraft's own letters and in rounding out the general picture of the group.

The Kalem Club existed in a very rudimentary—and nameless—form prior to Lovecraft's arrival in the city; Kleiner, McNeil, and perhaps Morton appear to have met occasionally at each other's homes. Long declares that "there were several small gatherings at which three or four of them were present,"[110] although he says he himself was not one of them. But clearly the group—whose chief bond was their correspondence and association with Lovecraft—fully solidified as a club only with Lovecraft's arrival.

Frank Long provides a piquant glimpse at Lovecraft's conduct at these meetings:

> Almost invariably . . . Howard did most of the talking, at least for the first ten or fifteen minutes. He would sink into an easy chair—he never seemed to feel at ease in a straight-backed chair on such occasions and I took care to keep an extremely comfortable one unoccupied until his arrival—and words would flow from him in a continuous stream.
>
> He never seemed to experience the slightest necessity to pause between words. There was no groping about for just the right term, no matter how recondite his conversation became. When the need for some metaphysical hair-splitting arose, it was easy to visualize scissors honed to a surgical sharpness snipping away in the recesses of his mind. . . .
>
> In general the conversation was lively and quite variegated. It was a brilliant enough assemblage, and the discussions ranged from current happenings of a political or sociological nature, to some recent book or play, or to five or six centuries of English and French literature, art, philosophy, and natural science.[111]

This may be as good a place as any to explore the question of Lovecraft's voice, since several of Lovecraft's New York colleagues have given us their impressions of it. I will later quote Hart Crane's reference to Sonia's "piping-voiced husband," and there seems general consensus that his voice was indeed somewhat high-pitched. Sonia has the most detailed discussion:

> His voice was clear and resonant when he read or lectured but became thin and high-pitched in general conversation, and somewhat falsetto in its ring, but when reciting favorite poems he managed to keep his voice on an even keel of deep resonance. Also his singing voice, while not strong, was very sweet. He would sing none of the modern songs, only the more favored ones of about a half century ago or more.[112]

Wilfred Blanch Talman offers a somewhat less flattering account:

> His voice had that flat and slightly nasal quality that is sometimes stereotyped as a New England characteristic. When he laughed aloud, a harsh cackle emerged that reversed the impression of his smile and to the uninitiated might be

> considered a ham actor's version of a hermit's laughter. Companions avoided any attempt to achieve more than a smile in conversation with him, so unbecoming was the result.[113]

One wonders on what occasion Talman heard Lovecraft laugh, since in 1934 Lovecraft himself declared that he had laughed out loud only once in the previous twenty years.[114]

The Kalem Club began meeting weekly on Thursday nights, although they later shifted to Wednesdays because Long had a night class at NYU. It was after one such meeting that Lovecraft began the diligent if unsystematic discovery of the antiquities of the metropolitan area. On Thursday, August 21, there was a gang meeting at Kirk's place at 106th Street. The meeting broke up at 1.30 A.M. and the group started walking down Broadway, leaving successively at various subway or elevated stations on their respective ways home. Finally only Kirk and Lovecraft remained, and they continued walking all the way down Eighth Avenue through Chelsea into Greenwich Village, exploring all the colonial remnants (still existing) along Grove Court, Patchin and Milligan Places, Minetta Lane, and elsewhere. By this time it was "the sinister hours before dawn, when only cats, criminals, astronomers, and poetic antiquarians roam the waking world!"[115] But they continued walking, down the (now largely destroyed) "colonial expanse" of Varick and Charlton Streets to City Hall. They must have covered at least seven or eight miles on this entire trip. Finally they broke up around 8 A.M., Lovecraft returning home by 9. (So much for his coming home early so that he and Sonia could retire together. On a slightly earlier all-night excursion with Kleiner and Leeds, he returned home at 5 A.M., and, "having successfully dodged the traditional fusilade of conjugal flatirons and rolling-pins, I was with Hypnos, Lord of Slumbers."[116] One assumes Lovecraft is being whimsical and not literal here.)

Although the next night Lovecraft and Sonia went to see Eugene O'Neill's *All God's Chillun,* the subsequent weeks were largely taken up with activities with the gang, especially as Sonia severely sprained her ankle on August 26 and remained home for several days. On the 29th Lovecraft made a solitary exploration of the colonial antiquities of lower Manhattan, some of which—especially around Grove, Commerce, and Barrow Streets—still remain. On Sunday, September 1, he took the Staten Island ferry to that most remote and least populous of the city's boroughs, whose sleepy villages made him think of home: "St. George is a sort of

Attleboro. Stapleton suggests East Greenwich."[117] One wonders whether these analogies were made solely for Lillian's sake. Later in the day he took another ferry to Perth Amboy, New Jersey, which he discovered quite surprisingly to contain an abundance of colonial houses and a general New England atmosphere. (It does not anymore.) A few days later he met Edward Lazare, one of Loveman's Cleveland friends whom he had met in 1922. Lovecraft felt that Lazare would become a "fitting accession to our select circle of The Boys,"[118] but he drops out of the picture shortly after this date. Loveman himself arrived on September 10; he had initially wished to reside at a rooming house at 110 Columbia Heights in Brooklyn, where Hart Crane (who had come to the city in March 1923) lived, but finally settled nearby at 78 Columbia Heights.

On September 12 Lovecraft made an interesting exploration of the lower East Side—interesting because of his reaction to the extensive colony of orthodox Jews there:

> Here exist assorted Jews in the absolutely unassimilated state, with their ancestral beards, skull-caps, and general costumes—which makes them very picturesque, and not nearly so offensive as the strident, pushing Jews who affect clean shaves and American dress. In this particular section, where Hebrew books are vended from pushcarts, and patriarchal rabbins totter in high hats and frock coats, there are far less offensive faces than in the general subways of the town—probably because most of the pushing commercial Jews are from another colony where the blood is less pure.[119]

Whatever the validity of that concluding observation, Lovecraft's general attitude is worth considering: his response is more charitable than one might have expected, and it seems to stem from his implicit approval of a group of people practising their "ancestral" modes of behaviour. The Orthodox Jews' scorn of the modern found an echo in Lovecraft's heart, overcoming his customary anger at the sight of "foreigners" not adopting "American" ways on American soil.

On Saturday the 13th was another long exploration of colonial sites in lower Manhattan with Loveman, Kirk, Kleiner, and Lazare, which did not break up until 4 A.M. Yet another lone excursion took place on the 15th, "to get the taste out of my mouth" after a bootless job-hunting session at a publishing house; Lovecraft again went to lower Manhattan, where at the

confluence of Hudson, Watts, and Canal Streets he saw the early construction work on what would become the Holland Tunnel. On the 18th, after meeting with Henneberger, he went to three separate museums—Natural History, Metropolitan, and Brooklyn—dropping Lillian a postcard from each of them. That evening was a gang meeting at Long's, and Lovecraft wandered the streets with all the members, seeing each of them off at various subway stops; he and Leeds did not part until near dawn. It is as if Lovecraft were reluctant to go home. The next day he went to Loveman's apartment and met Crane,

> . . . a little ruddier, a little puffier, and slightly more moustached than when I saw him in Cleveland two years ago. Crane, whatever his limitations, is a thorough aesthete; and I had some enjoyable conversation with him. His room is in excellent taste, with a few paintings by William Sommer . . ., a choice collection of modern books, and some splendid small objets d'art of which a carven Buddha and an exquisitely carved Chinese ivory box are the high spots.[120]

He and Loveman went up to the roof, where they saw a spectacular vista of the Brooklyn Bridge:

> It was something mightier than the dreams of old-world legend—a constellation of infernal majesty—a poem in Babylonian fire! . . . Added to the weird lights are the weird sounds of the port, where the traffick of all the world comes to a focus. Fog-horns, ships' bells, the creak of distant windlasses . . . visions of far shores of Ind, where bright-plumed birds are roused to song by the incense of strange garden-girt pagodas, and gaudy-robed camel-drivers barter before sandalwood taverns with deep-voiced sailors having the sea's mystery in their eyes.

The poetry of New York had not quite worn off after seven months. Lovecraft interestingly reports that "Crane is writing a long poem on Brooklyn Bridge in a modern medium": this would, of course, be Crane's masterpiece, *The Bridge* (1930), on which he had begun work as early as February 1923.[121] It should be pointed out that Crane was rather less charitable to Lovecraft in his various letters than Lovecraft was to Crane. Writing on September 14 to his mother and grandmother, Crane notes Loveman's arrival in the city but says that he has not spent much time with him because he has been occupied with his many friends—"Miss Sonia

Green [*sic*] and her piping-voiced husband, Howard Lovecraft, (the man who visited Sam in Cleveland one summer when Galpin was also there) kept Sam traipsing around the slums and wharf streets until four this morning looking for Colonial specimens of architecture, and until Sam tells me he groaned with fatigue and begged for the subway!"[122] The former "invalid" Lovecraft had already become famous for outwalking all his friends!

Kleiner, in a memoir, supplies a partial answer to a question that has perhaps occurred to nearly everyone reading of Lovecraft's long walks all around Manhattan at night, whether alone or with others: how is it that he escaped being the victim of a crime? Kleiner writes:

> In Greenwich Village, for whose eccentric habitants he had little use, he was fond of poking about in back alleys where his companions preferred not to go. In prohibition years, with murderous affrays among bootleggers and rum-runners likely to break out anywhere, this was a particularly dangerous business. Every other house in this neighborhood was open to suspicion as a speakeasy. I recall that at least once, while stumbling around old barrels and crates in some dark corner of this area, Lovecraft found a doorway suddenly illuminated and an excited foreigner, wearing the apron that was an almost infallible sign of a speakeasy bartender, enquiring hotly what he wanted. Loveman and Kirk went in after Lovecraft and got him safely out. None of us, surely, was under any illusion as to what might very well happen in such an obscure corner of the city.[123]

Lovecraft was certainly fearless—perhaps a little foolhardy—on these jaunts. He was, of course, at this time a fairly imposing physical specimen at nearly six feet and 200 pounds; but physical size means nothing when one is faced with a knife or gun, and many criminals are also not put off by a prospective victim's apparent lack of prosperity. Lovecraft was, in effect, simply lucky in not coming to harm on these peregrinations.

Annie Gamwell paid a visit beginning on September 21; over the next several days he showed her the same antiquarian treasures in Greenwich Village and elsewhere that he had just seen—it is obvious that he could not get enough of them. On the 24th he and Loveman went to the Poe Cottage in Fordham and then to the Van Cortlandt mansion (1748) in the Bronx. The next day Lovecraft took Annie to the Poe Cottage. On the 26th the two of

them wrote Lillian a joint postcard from the Dyckman House (c. 1783), a small Dutch colonial farmhouse in the far northern reaches of Manhattan; Annie writes charmingly, if a little wistfully, "Would like to buy this house —it's so homey & nice."[124] (In a long letter he wrote to Lillian on the 29th and 30th Lovecraft speaks even more wistfully of buying back "the old place in Foster," i.e., the Stephen Place home where his mother was born.) Later that day the two of them visited the spectacular but unfinished Cathedral of St John the Divine on the upper West Side near Columbia University. Annie went home the next day. That evening was a Blue Pencil Club meeting, and the prescribed topic for literary contributions was "The Old Home Town." It was a theme close to Lovecraft's heart, and he produced the thirteen-stanza poem "Providence" for the occasion—virtually the first creative writing he had done since writing "Under the Pyramids" in February. It was published in the *Brooklynite* for November 1924 and, sometime in November, in the *Providence Evening Bulletin,* for which he received $5.00.[125]

Early October saw his first visit to Elizabeth, New Jersey (which Lovecraft persistently calls by its eighteenth-century name of Elizabethtown). An editorial in the *New York Times* had alerted him to the existence of colonial antiquities there, and on the 10th he went there by way of the Staten Island ferry and then another ferry to Elizabeth. He was entirely captivated. After arming himself with an array of guidebooks and historical matter from a stationery store, the public library, and the newspaper office (presumably the *Elizabeth Daily Journal*), he had only a chance to do a small amount of investigation on the edge of town before night fell and he had to return to Brooklyn. But he came back the next day, taking in the old Presbyterian Church, the First Church and its ancient churchyard, and along the Elizabeth River where the oldest houses stand. "But lud, ma'am—I cou'd rave all night about Elizabethtown!" he wrote to Lillian.[126] But, as with Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and other sites, it was not only the prevalence of antique structures that delighted him:

> There is no taint of New York & its nasty cosmopolitanism. All the people of substance are native Yankees, & though the factory sections teem with low Poles, they are not frequently met on the main streets. Niggers are quite thick in the byways of the town . . . The whole atmosphere of the place is marvellously

> colonial. . . . Elizabethtown is a balm, a sedative, & a tonic to the old-fashion'd soul rackt with modernity.

Is it any wonder that, when little more than a month later he and Sonia had to think of breaking up their household, Lovecraft wished to settle at least temporarily here?

On October 12 Lovecraft had Loveman over for dinner (prepared by Sonia, of course), after which the two men returned to Columbia Heights, met Crane, and went for a walk with him in the evening along the shore. Crane seemed to take note of this meeting when he said in a letter that Sam "brought along that queer Lovecraft person with him, so we had no particularly intimate conversation."[127] Later Lovecraft and Loveman crossed over to lower Manhattan for more colonial exploration, staying there till midnight.

Lovecraft's Elizabeth visit proved to be the catalyst for his first story in eight months, "The Shunned House." Part of his description of the place reads as follows:

> . . . on the northeast corner of Bridge St. & Elizabeth Ave. is a terrible old house—a hellish place where night-black deeds must have been done in the early seventeen-hundreds—with a blackish unpainted surface, unnaturally steep roof, & an outside flight of steps leading to the second story, suffocatingly embowered in a tangle of ivy so dense that one cannot but imagine it accursed or corpse-fed. It reminded me of the Babbitt house in Benefit St., which as you recall made me write those lines entitled "The House" in 1920.[128]

This house in Elizabeth, unfortunately, is no longer standing. The poem "The House" is a finely atmospheric piece published in Galpin's *Philosopher* for December 1920; its source—what Lovecraft here calls the Babbitt house—was the house at 135 Benefit Street in Providence, where Lillian had resided in 1919–20 as a companion for Mrs C. H. Babbit (so spelled in the 1920 U.S. census). That house had been built around 1763 and is a magnificent structure—with basement, two stories, and attic—built on the rising hill, with shuttered doors in the basement leading directly out into the sidewalk. It has been considerably restored since Lovecraft's day, but at that time it must have been a spectral place. Lovecraft spent the whole of the 16th through the 19th of October writing a draft of the story, making considerable "eliminations & rearrangements"[129] and doing more

revision the next day after having read it to Frank Long. (It was in the evening of this day that Sonia was stricken with her gastric attack and had to be taken to the hospital.)

"The Shunned House" opens sententiously: "From even the greatest of horrors irony is seldom absent." The irony in question is the fact that Edgar Allan Poe, "the world's greatest master of the terrible and the bizarre," in his late (1848–49) courtship of the minor poet Sarah Helen Whitman, walked frequently along Benefit Street in Providence past a house whose bizarrerie, had he known of it, far surpassed any of his own fictional horrors. This house, occupied by several generations of the Harris family, is never considered "haunted" by the local citizens but merely "unlucky": people simply seem to have an uncanny habit of dying there, or at least of being afflicted with anaemia or consumption. Neighbouring houses are free of any such taint. It had lain deserted—because of the impossibility of renting it—since the Civil War.

The first-person unnamed narrator had known of this house since boyhood, when some of his childhood friends would fearfully explore it, sometimes even boldly entering through the unlocked front door "in quest of shudders." As he grows older, he discovers that his uncle, Elihu Whipple, had done considerable research on the house and its tenants, and he finds his seemingly dry genealogical record full of sinister suggestion. He comes to suspect that some nameless object or entity is causing the deaths by somehow sucking the vitality out of the house's occupants; perhaps it has some connexion with a strange thing in the cellar, "a vague, shifting deposit of mould or nitre . . . [that] bore an uncanny resemblance to a doubled-up human figure."

After telling, at some length, the history of the house since 1763, the narrator finds himself puzzled on several fronts; in particular, he cannot account for why some of the occupants, just prior to their deaths, would cry out in a coarse and idiomatic form of French, a language they did not know. As he explores town records, he seems at last to have come upon the "French element." A sinister figure named Etienne Roulet had come from France to East Greenwich, Rhode Island, in 1686; he was a Huguenot and fled France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, moving to Providence ten years later in spite of much opposition from the town fathers. What particularly intrigues the narrator is his possible connexion

with an even more dubious figure, Jacques Roulet of Caude, who in 1598 was accused of lycanthropy.

Finally the narrator and his uncle decide to "test—and if possible destroy—the horror of the house." They come one evening in 1919, armed with both a Crookes tube (a device invented by Sir William Crookes involving the emission of electrons between two electrodes) and a flame-thrower. The two men take turns resting; both experience hideous and disturbing dreams. When the narrator wakes up from his dream, he finds that some nameless entity has utterly engulfed his uncle:

> Out of the fungus-ridden earth steamed up a vaporous corpse-light, yellowed and diseased, which bubbled and lapped to a gigantic height in vague outlines half-human and half-monstrous, through which I could see the chimney and fireplace beyond. It was all eyes—wolfish and mocking—and the rugose insect-like head dissolved at the top to a thin stream of mist which curled putridly about and finally vanished up the chimney. . . . That object was my uncle—the venerable Elihu Whipple—who with blackening and decaying features leered and gibbered at me, and reached out dripping claws to rend me in the fury which this horror had brought.

Realising that his uncle is past help, he aims the Crookes tube at him. A further daemoniac sight appears to him: the object seems to liquefy and adopt various temporary forms ("He was at once a devil and a multitude, a charnel-house and a pageant"); then the features of the Harris line seem to mingle with his uncle's. The narrator flees, heading down College Hill to the modern downtown business district; when he returns, hours later, the nebulous entity is gone. Later that day he brings six carboys of sulphuric acid to the house, digs up the earth where the doubled-up anthropomorphic shape lies, and pours the acid down the hole—realising only then that the shape was merely the "titan *elbow*" of some huge and hideous monster.

What is, of course, remarkable about "The Shunned House" is the exquisite linkage of real and imagined history throughout the tale. Much of the history of the house is real, although it has at no time been unoccupied; indeed, the 1919 date was surely chosen because this was when Lillian was residing there. Other details are also authentic—the straightening out of Benefit Street after the removal of the graves of the oldest settlers to the North Burial Ground; the mentions of the great floods of 1815 (which in

fact caused much destruction of houses along Benefit, South Main, and Water Streets, as the many surviving structures from the 1816–20 period attest); even the random mention of the fact that "As lately as 1892 an Exeter community exhumed a dead body and ceremoniously burnt its heart in order to prevent certain alleged visitations injurious to the public health and peace." This last point has been studied by Faye Ringel Hazel, who points out that several articles on this subject appeared in the *Providence Journal* in March 1892,[130] and goes on to examine the vampire legendry of Exeter (in Washington County, south of Providence) and the neighbouring area.

But on the other hand, there are sly insertions of fictitious events and connexions into the historical record. Elihu Whipple is said to be a descendant of Capt. Abraham Whipple, who led the burning of the *Gaspee* in 1772. The sequence of births and deaths of the Harris family is largely, but not wholly, fictitious.

The most interesting elaboration upon history in the story is the figure of Etienne Roulet. This figure is imaginary, but Jacques Roulet of Caude is quite real. Lovecraft's brief mention of him is taken almost verbatim from the account in John Fiske's *Myths and Myth-Makers* (1872), which we have already seen was a significant source of Lovecraft's early views on the anthropology of religion. Part of Fiske's account of Roulet is, however, a direct quotation from S. Baring-Gould's *A Book of Were-wolves* (1865); but Lovecraft had not read this book at this time (he would do so only a decade or so later[131]), so that his information on Jacques Roulet must have come from Fiske. It is, of course, a little peculiar that the presumed grandson of a reputed werewolf should become some sort of vampiric entity; aside from "Psychopompos" and perhaps "The Hound," this is the only occasion where Lovecraft treats either of these standard myths, and here he has altered it beyond recognition—or, rather, accounted for it with a novel way.

For the most interesting part of the story—in terms of Lovecraft's future development as a writer—is a strange passage in the middle as the narrator is attempting to come to grips with the exact nature of the malevolent entity:

> We were not . . . in any sense childishly superstitious, but scientific study and reflection had taught us that the known universe of three dimensions embraces the merest fraction of the whole cosmos of substance and energy. In this case an

> overwhelming preponderance of evidence from numerous authentic sources pointed to the tenacious existence of certain forces of great power and, so far as the human point of view is concerned, exceptional malignancy. To say that we actually believed in vampires or werewolves would be a carelessly inclusive statement. Rather must it be said that we were not prepared to deny the possibility of certain unfamiliar and unclassified modifications of vital force and attenuated matter; existing very infrequently in three-dimensional space because of its more intimate connexion with other spatial units, yet close enough to the boundary of our own to furnish us occasional manifestations which we, for lack of a proper vantage point, may never hope to understand. . . .
>
> Such a thing was surely not a physical or biochemical impossibility in the light of a newer science which includes the theories of relativity and intra-atomic action. . . .

This remarkable passage suddenly transforms "The Shunned House" into a sort of science-fiction story (or perhaps proto-science-fiction, since the genre cannot be said to have come into true existence at this time), in that it enunciates the crucial principle of a scientific rationale for a seemingly supernatural occurrence or event. A year and a half after Lovecraft had expressed bafflement and perturbation at the Einstein theory, he was making convenient use of it in fiction. The reference to "intra-atomic action" is some sort of bow to the quantum theory, although I have not found any discussions of it at this time in letters. Whether this scientific account is at all convincing or plausible is not quite to the point; it is the gesture that is important. That the entity is killed not by driving a stake through its heart but by sulphuric acid is telling. The "titan elbow" seems an adaptation of the ending of "Under the Pyramids," where what appeared to be a five-headed hippopotamus proves to be the paw of an immense monster.

The figure of Elihu Whipple is clearly modelled upon that of Lovecraft's own uncle, Franklin Chase Clark. Naturally there are some divergences: Whipple is a bachelor (in this way Lovecraft could dispense with any grieving widow when Whipple dies), and is considerably older than Dr Clark, as he had begun his medical practice in 1860, when Clark was only thirteen. In fact, Whipple is not described in any great detail, and

the two occasions on which the narrator expresses sadness at his passing —"I am lonely without that gentle soul whose long years were filled only with honour, virtue, good taste, benevolence, and learning"; ". . . I shed the first of the many tears with which I have paid unaffected tribute to my beloved uncle's memory"—are still very reserved, although even this level of personal emotion is unusual for a Lovecraft story. There is no question that Lovecraft did indeed feel the loss of Dr Clark poignantly; it is simply that he has not here characterised Dr Whipple sufficiently so that a reader will feel analogously.

"The Shunned House" is a dense, richly textured story with convincing historical background and a fine sense of cumulative horror. The account of the lives and deaths of the Harris family in the second chapter may perhaps go on a little too long: Lovecraft hoped that it will create an atmosphere of the eerily sinister (the narrator remarks: "In this continuous record there seemed to me to brood a persistent evil beyond anything in Nature as I had known it"), but it is perhaps a little too dry and clinical for that effect to occur. But the hideous climax (with another genuine surprise ending) and the thought-provoking scientific rationale for the horror make this a noteworthy landmark in Lovecraft's early corpus.

That he chose to write a story about Providence at this juncture is hardly surprising. "The Shunned House" is, indeed, the first significant tale to be set in Providence and to evoke its history and topography; earlier, minor stories such as "From Beyond" nominally take place there but have nothing of this tale's specificity of setting. The poem "The House" also lacks this specificity, and one would never know that it was based on 135 Benefit Street had Lovecraft not said so. For all his initial euphoria at coming to New York, he had never left Providence; the trip to Elizabeth had merely acted as a sort of mnemonic trigger for a tale that brings his hometown to life.

Lovecraft read the story to the gang on November 16 and was heartened at the response: they all "waxed incredibly enthusiastick in affirming that it is the best thing I ever writ."[132] Loveman was particularly keen, and wanted Lovecraft to type it by Wednesday the 19th so that he could show it to a reader at Alfred A. Knopf. This did not happen, as Lovecraft did not finish typing the story until the 22nd, but Loveman continued throughout the next year to try to promote the story. We shall discover, indeed, that its experiences in print were not entirely happy.

More gang activity followed, especially during Sonia's hospital stay in late October. A schism had developed in the gang when McNeil took offence at Leeds's inability to pay back $8.00 he had borrowed from him; McNeil therefore refused to attend any meetings at which Leeds was present. This proved to be more unfortunate for McNeil than for anyone else, since the other members (except Lovecraft) found him a trifle old-fashioned and not a good conversationalist. The result was that separate "McNeil" and "Leeds" meetings of the gang had to be held, and many members did not even bother attending the McNeil sessions; but Lovecraft always did.

Lovecraft and Kirk were becoming close friends. "In beliefs," said Lovecraft, "he & I are exactly as one—for despite a stern Methodist upbringing he is an absolute cynick & sceptick, who realises most poignantly the fundamental purposelessness of the universe."[133] Kirk, for his part, writes to his future wife: "I *do* enjoy HPL's company. Girl, if you ever give me a more enjoyable time I shall hand you the skid-proof banana peel."[134] The two had another all-night walking session on October 24–25, talking philosophy into the wee hours, exploring the cryptlike basement of the American Radiator Company in the morning, and stopping off at various coffee shops or automats along the way. Lovecraft described the latter to Lillian: "a restaurant where the food is arranged on plates in glass-doored pigeonholes along the walls. A nickel in the slot unlocks the door, & the plate of food is taken by the purchaser to one of the many tables in the great room."[135] A great place for people with meagre funds to stop for refreshment. Although it may seem that these establishments were the havens of derelicts and homeless people, they were in fact clean and well lit, and served a wide spectrum of the middle and lower classes of the city; and since none of the gang except Kleiner, Long (who would rarely go on these nightly jaunts), and perhaps Morton had much money, they were welcome resting-places. There are almost no automats in New York anymore; what few there are do not cost a nickel anymore.

On Monday, November 3, Lovecraft welcomed Edward Lloyd Sechrist (1873–1953), an amateur associate from Washington. Sechrist, a beekeeper by trade who had spent much time in the South Seas and central Africa, had apparently visited Lovecraft in Providence just prior to the latter's move to New York.[136] Naturally, Sechrist was shown the city's museums and colonial antiquities by the indefatigable Lovecraft. On the 4th the two of

them went to the Anderson Galleries on Park Avenue and 59th Street to meet a friend of Sechrist's, John M. Price; Lovecraft had some dim hope that Price might be able to help him get a job at the gallery, but obviously nothing came of this.

If Lovecraft gives the impression, in his various accounts of evenings or all nights out with the boys, that he was not spending much time with Sonia, it is perhaps because he actually wasn't—at least by August or September. Some months earlier the picture was a little different, and we get a charming vignette of a few days in early July:

> The next day—the so-called glorious fourth of the Yankee rebels—S.H. and I devoted to open-air reading in Prospect Park. We have discovered a delightfully unfrequented rock overhanging a lake not far from our own door; and there we while away many an hour in the pages of chosen friends from our well-stocked shelves. . . . Saturday, the fifth, this reading programme was repeated; and on Sunday we spent most of the day answering the help wanted advertisements in the Sunday papers. Monday the seventh, we dedicated to pleasure and travel—that is, after one business interview—meeting at Trinity about noon, paying our respects to [Alexander] Hamilton's grave, visiting the fine Colonial town house of President James Monroe . . ., threading some Colonial alleys in Greenwich-Village, and finally taking the omnibus at Washington Square and riding all the way up to Fort George, where we descended the steep hill to Dyckman Street, took lunch in a humble restaurant . . . and proceeded to the ferry. Here embarking, we crossed the spacious Hudson to the foot of the Palisades; changing to an omnibus which climbed the precipitous slope by a zigzag road arrangement affording some magnificent views, and which finally turned inland through a forest road lined with fine estates and terminating at the quaint and sleepy village of Englewood, N.J. . . . After that we rode down to Fort Lee (opposite 125th St.) by trolley, crossed to the ferry, and rode all the way home by various changes of open surface car. It was a great day . . .[137]

A great day indeed, and a perfectly wholesome way for a husband and wife to spend it, even if both are unemployed. But this sort of activity seems to

stop with the passage of time. Indeed, it is typical that, after depositing Sonia at her rest home in Somerville, New Jersey, on November 9, he proceeded the next day down to Philadelphia, whose colonial marvels he wished to examine in greater detail than he was able to on his honeymoon. He arrived on the evening of November 10 (having stayed overnight in Somerville) and checked into the YMCA. Not willing to wait till the next morning, he began a "nocturnal tour of the colonial past—in the older section toward the Delaware waterfront."[138] The "mile on mile of Georgian houses of every sort" made Greenwich Village's colonial section seem meagre by comparison.

On the 11th he raided the public library for guidebooks and historical matter, then set forth. St Peter's Church at Third and Pine particularly captivated him, especially since "there was the most friendly big yellow cat imaginable on a corner diagonally across the street."[139] Next he saw the Market House, the Maritime Exchange, Independence Hall, Congress Hall, the Betsey Ross house (where he met a garrulous old antiquarian who gave him further tips), then, after a trolley car ride south, the Old Swedes' Church and churchyard. By this time it was evening, so he returned, had a bean and spaghetti dinner with a chocolate sundae for dessert, took his first shower-bath in twenty-five years (as opposed to his usual tub bath), and wrote postcards in his room. In his letter to Lillian he spoke of having no previous meal during this entire peregrination; this may be an oversight, but more likely he did not in fact have any meals. When antiquarian exploration was on the agenda, enthusiasm and sheer nervous energy took over.

On Wednesday the 12th there was more. First he examined both the exterior and interior of the superb Christ Church, one of the most magnificent Georgian churches in the country, then along the river to the Pennsylvania Historical Society with its rich collection of colonial memorabilia, then to William Penn's house in Fairmount Park. Again dusk set in, so he returned and had a dinner of beef pie, macaroni, apple pie, and coffee at an automat for 40¢. He noted at this point that he stocked up on "my breakfast supply of cheese and peanut butter sandwiches" (10¢).[140]

On Thursday the 13th he decided to do some exploration in more remote suburban areas. First was the peculiar Bartram house in the Kingsessing district in the southwestern part of the city, beyond the Schuylkill. This stone structure was built by the botanist John Bartram in 1731 with his own hands and is very eccentric and heterogeneous in design.

Then Lovecraft proceeded to Chester, a separate community well to the southwest of the Philadelphia city limits on the Delaware River. Returning to Fairmount Park, he saw a number of fine colonial homes before stopping for dinner (beans, cinnamon bun, and coffee for 25¢). That evening he proceeded to the home of the amateur poet Washington Van Dusen in Germantown, a remote suburb to the northwest; he was evidently not asked to spend the night there, as he returned to the Y late in the evening.

On the 14th Lovecraft rose before dawn in order to "observe the gold & rose dawn from the hills beyond the Schuylkill."[141] He then went back to Germantown, exploring that colonial haven thoroughly before proceeding still farther west to the Wissahickon valley: "It is a deep, wooded gorge of prodigious scenic magnificence, at the bottom of which flows the narrow, limpid Wissahickon on its way to join the Schuylkill. Legend has woven many beautiful tales around this piny paradise with its precipitous walls . . ."[142] Regretfully he returned to Philadelphia where, at the Broad Street station, he caught the train back to New York.

Lovecraft was much taken with Philadelphia:

> None of the crude, foreign hostility & underbreeding of New York—none of the vulgar trade spirit & plebeian hustle. A city of real American background—an integral & continuous outgrowth of a definite & aristocratic past instead of an Asiatic hell's huddle of the world's cowed, broken, inartistic, & unfit. What a poise—what a mellowness—what a character in the preponderantly Nordic faces![143]

Now, perhaps, it could be said that the honeymoon with New York was over.

The rest of the month was tranquil. He and Sonia played more chess and went to see the museum of the New York Historical Society. James F. Morton took an examination for a job as curator of the Paterson (New Jersey) Museum, a job he would ultimately secure early the next year. On the 24th Lovecraft ate ravioli for the first time and read H. G. Wells's *The Time Machine* ("thoroughly entertaining in every detail"[144]). The next day he and Sonia went to the Bronx Zoo. The gang meeting on Wednesday the 26th was spoiled by Morton's urging the members to solve crossword puzzles, so that instead of scintillating conversation there were merely "grunts such as '23 vertical', '13 horizontal', 'word of 17 letters beginning with X & meaning cloudy in the attic', &c. &c. &c."[145] Crossword

puzzles had only been introduced about a year or two before and must have been the Rubik's cubes of 1924. Nevertheless, after the meeting Lovecraft and Kirk went on another all-night walking tour, this time along East River Park, past the Gracie Mansion (now the residence of the mayor) and the Queensboro Bridge, across to the west side, down to Greenwich Village and finally, at 7 A.M., to their respective homes. Thursday, of course, was the lavish Thanksgiving banquet. On the 29th Loveman and Kirk were evidently to introduce Lovecraft to Allen Tate, then a reviewer for the *Nation;* but I cannot ascertain whether this meeting actually took place. Tate was also a great friend and supporter of Hart Crane.

Lillian herself arrived, as I have mentioned, on December 1 and stayed until January 10. Kirk wrote to his fiancée that Lovecraft talked with him one Saturday at his place from 10 P.M. till 8 A.M. Sunday; on the 20th the gang meeting lasted until 4.30 A.M.[146] But the breakup of the household was the prime activity. Lovecraft was still hankering to move to Elizabeth, but must later have decided that this was impracticable and resolved instead on Brooklyn Heights, specifically a one-room apartment (with two alcoves) for $40.00 a month at 169 Clinton Street. Sonia left for Cincinnati at 4 P.M. on the 31st, after which Lovecraft proceeded to Kirk's to see the old year out.

Lovecraft and Sonia cohabited for only ten continuous months; the occasions on which she returned to New York from the Midwest over the next year and a quarter amounted to a net total of about thirteen weeks. It is too early to pass judgment on Lovecraft as a husband; we must first examine what the next fifteen months would bring. He may or may not have been secretly pleased at Sonia's departure; but if he thought that 1924 was a year he would rather forget, he had no idea what 1925 would be like.

16. The Assaults of Chaos

(1925–1926)

> On December 31, 1924, I established myself in a large room of pleasing & tasteful proportions at 169 Clinton St., cor. of State, in the Heights or Borough Hall section of Brooklyn, in an house of early Victorian date with white classick woodwork & tall windows with panell'd seats. Two alcoves with portieres enable one to preserve the pure library effect, & the whole forms a pleasing hermitage for an old-fashion'd man, with its generous view of ancient brick houses in State & Clinton Sts.[1]

So begins one of the most unusual documents in Lovecraft's entire corpus: his "Diary" for 1925. If it is asked why this document, so seemingly vital for the understanding of his life in this critical year, has only recently been published (in the fifth volume [2006] of the *Collected Essays*), given that just about every other scrap of Lovecraft's work exclusive of his letters has seen print regardless of its merit or importance, the answer may lie in its somewhat mundane function. It does not have—and was not designed to have—the literary value of the diaries of Pepys or Evelyn, but was intended merely as a mnemonic aid. It is written in an appointment book for the year 1925, measuring about 2½" × 5¼", with only about four lines given for each date; Lovecraft, although not observing the ruled lines very well (he loathed ruled paper), has nevertheless written entries in such a cryptic and abbreviated fashion that some words or terms are still not clear to me. Here is a sample entry, for January 16:

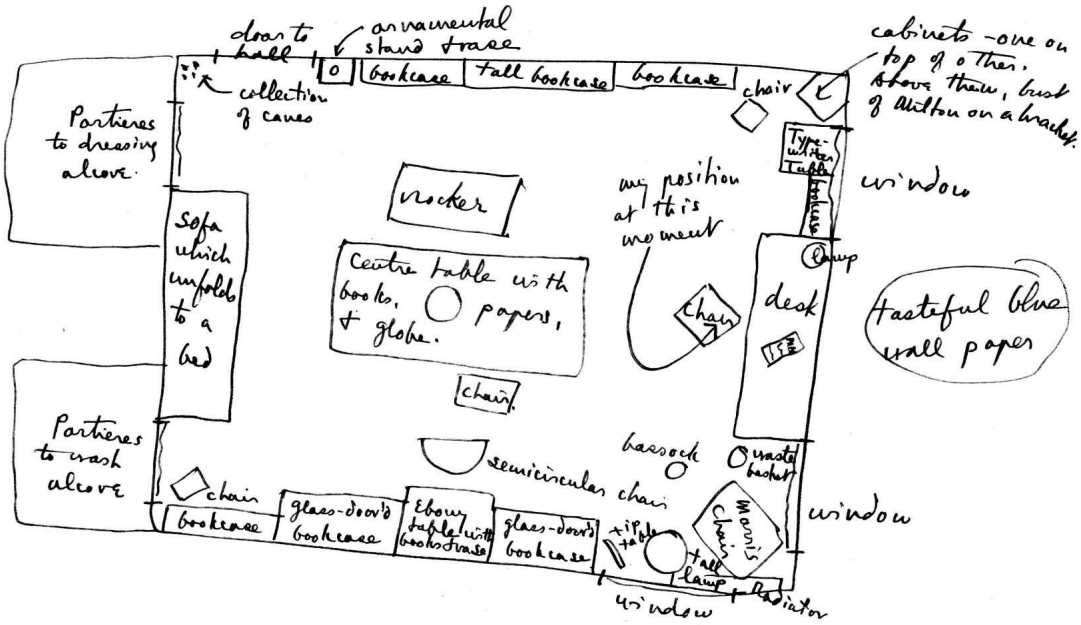
> Saw SH off—shopping for SL desk Fix SL room—trips to & fro —find SL & RK at 169—McN & GK arrive, converse cafeteria adjourn to SL's—surprise—break up 2 a m—GK McN & HPL subway—HP & GK to 106 St. Talk—sleep

Not exactly enthralling reading. But the fact is that this diary served a purely utilitarian purpose, namely as an aid to writing letters to Lillian. This

practice may have developed years before: during his stay in New York in late summer 1922 Lovecraft, in the midst of a long letter to Lillian, writes: "This is a letter & a diary combined!"[2] In later years it appears that he kept a diary of this sort on all his trips, although none aside from this one have come to light. There may well have been a diary for 1924, and it would clarify much that remains cloudy and uncertain about his life in that year.

The diary for 1925 quite literally allows for a day-by-day chronicle of Lovecraft's activities for the year, but such a thing would serve little purpose. While it is true that some of his letters to both Annie and Lillian—where he elaborated, in great detail, the sketchy notes recorded in the diary—are missing, leaving us with only the skeletal diary entries as a guide to his daily life, it is less his activities on any single day than the general pattern of his existence that is of importance. For the first time in his life, Lovecraft was living alone without any relative—by blood or by marriage—with him. Of course, there were his friends, and 1925 was certainly the heyday of the Kalem Club, when the various members would flit in and out of each other's humble apartments as if they were a sort of literary commune; nevertheless, Lovecraft was on his own as he had never been before, having to prepare his own meals, take care of his laundry, purchase new items of clothing, and perform all the other tedious mundanities of life that most of us accept as a matter of course.

Lovecraft later admitted that 169 Clinton Street was selected "with the assistance of my aunt."[3] The search was clearly undertaken during Lillian's long stay in December, and Lovecraft's later mention of a trip he and Lillian took to Elizabeth in that month[4] suggests that that New Jersey haven was also considered as a residence; but perhaps a site more convenient to Manhattan was preferred. Lovecraft found the first-floor apartment itself pleasing, since the two alcoves—one for dressing and the other for washing—allowed him to preserve a study-like effect in the room proper. He supplies a plan of it in a letter to Maurice Moe:[5]



It is no surprise that bookshelves line the entirety of two walls of the room; and at that, a good number of his books were kept in storage. There were no cooking facilities in the apartment. He did his best, however, to keep the place neat, and in fact noted to Lillian that he was not spending any unwarranted amount of time in household chores: "I dust only once in three days, sweep only once a week, & eat so simply that I seldom have to do any dishwashing beyond a simple plate, or cup & saucer, plus one or two metallic utensils."[6] The only thing Lovecraft found disappointing, at least initially, was the seediness of the general area; but he knew that beggars could not be choosers. At $40 a month the place was a pretty good deal, especially as Sonia—during her infrequent visits there—could be accommodated well enough, as the sofa could be folded out into a double bed. When Sonia was not there, Lovecraft would frequently lie on the couch without opening it, or sometimes doze in the morris chair.

The peculiar thing about the locale is that the gentrification movement of the last three or four decades has markedly improved nearly the whole of Brooklyn Heights, so that it is now one of the more sought-after (and expensive) areas of the borough; conversely, the once-posh Flatbush area, where 259 Parkside Avenue lies, has suffered a deterioration as Flatbush Avenue has become the haven of a dismal array of tawdry discount stores. In other words, the socioeconomic status of the two areas of Brooklyn in which

Lovecraft lived has been exactly reversed. Clinton Street, however, then as now provides easier access to Manhattan by subway, as it is far closer to Manhattan than Parkside Avenue, which is all the way on the other side of Prospect Park. Only a few blocks from 169 Clinton Street is Borough Hall, the governmental centre of Brooklyn and the hub for two of the three subway lines in the city, IRT (2, 3, 4, 5) and BMT (M, N, R); the F train (IND) stops at nearby Bergen Street. Most of these lines were already operating in Lovecraft's day, so that he could easily come home at any hour of day or night from almost any point in Manhattan—a fact worth noting in conjunction with his many late-night outings with the gang.

Let us first examine the precise degree to which, in the year 1925, Lovecraft was alone. Sonia's job at Mabley & Carew's, the Cincinnati department store, evidently allowed her to make monthly trips of a few days to New York. But as early as late February Sonia had either lost or had resigned from this position; Lovecraft wrote to Annie: ". . . despite a marked improvement in health since her last visit here, S H has at last found the hostile & exacting atmosphere of Mabley & Carew's intolerable; finally being virtually forced out of her position by quibbling executives & invidious inferiors."[7] Elsewhere Lovecraft noted that Sonia spent a short time on two separate occasions in a private hospital in Cincinnati.[8] Accordingly, Sonia returned to Brooklyn for an extended period in February and March, at that time deciding belatedly to take the six weeks' rest recommended to her by her doctors. She spent most of the period from late March to early June in the home of a woman physician in Saratoga Springs, in upstate New York; strangely enough, however, Lovecraft notes in April that there is a "child under her governance"[9] there, suggesting that her stay there involved some sort of work as a nanny. Perhaps this work was agreed upon in lieu of a fee or rent, since this was clearly a private household rather than a rest home or sanitarium. In May Lovecraft writes to Lillian: "She is holding out well at Saratoga; & though her last small hat venture did not succeed, is still looking about for better openings . . ."[10] I do not know what this hat venture was.

Sonia spent another extended period in June and July in Brooklyn. In mid-July she secured some sort of position with a hat shop or department store in Cleveland, leaving on the 24th and settling at a boarding house at 2030 East 81st Street for $45 a month.[11] In late August she moved to 1912 East 86th Street.[12] By mid-October, however, Sonia had again either lost or

given up this position; Lovecraft reported: “The trouble with the new position is that it is only on a commission basis, so that during slack seasons the remuneration is next to nothing.”[13] By mid-November at the latest, and probably somewhat earlier, Sonia had secured a new position, this time with Halle’s, then (and, up to 1982, when it went out of business) the leading department store in Cleveland.[14] This position appears to have lasted well into 1926.

The upshot of all this is that Sonia was at 169 Clinton Street for a total of only 89 days of 1925, on nine different occasions as follows:

January 11–16
February 3–6
February 23–March 19
April 8–11
May 2–5
June 9–July 24
August 15–20
September 16–17
October 16–18

She had wanted to come during the Christmas holidays, but evidently work at Halle’s was too heavy to permit it. In the three and a half months that Lovecraft spent in Brooklyn in 1926, Sonia was there for a period of about three weeks, from roughly January 15 to February 5. In other words, for the fifteen and a half months of Lovecraft’s stay at 169 Clinton Street in 1925–26, Sonia was present for a net total of just over three months at widely scattered intervals; the six weeks in June and July constituted the longest single visit.

If Sonia’s record of employment during this period was chequered, Lovecraft’s was completely hopeless. There is, in either the “Diary” of 1925 or the 160,000 words of correspondence to Lillian for 1925–26, only three references to looking through the Sunday *Times* want ads for work (in March, July, and September); none of these came to anything. It is evident that, with Sonia effectively out of the way, Lovecraft simply stopped looking very vigorously for work. I am not sure there is anything to criticise in this: many individuals who suffer prolonged unemployment become discouraged, and, in spite of the clumsiness and inexperience with which Lovecraft tried to find work in 1924, he did make the attempt with determination and zeal.

Lovecraft's job attempts in 1925 were largely a product of various tips he received from his friends. The one that seemed most promising was freelance work on a trade journal in which Arthur Leeds was involved with another man named Yesley. Lovecraft describes the nature of the project to Lillian in late May:

> The work in this Yesley establishment is simple, consisting wholly of writing up complimentary articles descriptive of striking business ventures or outstanding mercantile and professional personalities; each article to be about 1¼ to 1½ double-spaced typed pages in length. This writing is all from facts supplied— "leads", as they call them, culled from press notices or advertising matter. . . . [The] article, when done, is sent to the office; & unless too bad to be accepted is taken out by a trained salesman to the person or company whereof it treats. This salesman, after giving the interested party a chance to revise, urges the latter to order a quantity of the magazines mentioning him—for advertising purposes; & if he succeeds, (as he does in a surprising number of cases, since the sales force is a very expert one) the writer of the article receives 10% of the sum paid by the purchaser—amounts varying from $1.50 to over $30.00 according to the extent of the order.[15]

This does not exactly sound like work for which Lovecraft would be suited, but all it really takes is facility at writing, which he certainly had. Difficult as it may be to imagine Lovecraft writing advertising copy, we have the evidence in front of us in the form of five such pieces found among his effects (evidently unpublished). R. H. Barlow bestowed upon them the generic title of "Commercial Blurbs." The five items are titled as follows: "Beauty in Crystal" (about the "Steuben Glass" produced by the Corning Glass Works, Corning, New York); "The Charm of Fine Woodwork" (about the furniture made by the Curtis Companies, Clifton, Iowa); "Personality in Clocks" (about grandfather clocks from the Colonial Manufacturing Company, Zealand, Michigan); "A Real Colonial Heritage" (about the "Danersk" furniture made by the Erskine-Danforth Corporation in New York City); and "A True Home of Literature" (about the Alexander Hamilton Bookshop in Paterson, New Jersey). One extract will suffice:

> Curtis Woodwork embraces both the usual structural units and the cleverest contrivances of built-in or permanent furniture, such

> as bookcases, dressers, buffets, and cupboards. Every model is conceived and created with the purest art, ripest scholarship, and mellowest craftsmanship which energetic enterprise can command; and made to conform rigidly to the architecture of each particular type of home. The cost, considering the quality, is amazingly low; and a trademark on the individual pieces prevents any substitution by careless contractors.

And so on. Those who have read these pieces have predictably subjected them to the same withering scorn that they have directed toward Lovecraft's application letter of 1924; but styles of advertising were very different seventy years ago, especially when dealing with the type of material Lovecraft was treating here. Many of these firms were clearly making an appeal to the pseudo-aristocratic tastes of the middle class, and Lovecraft's lofty tone would have been in keeping with this approach.

But, sadly, the venture did not pan out, and through no fault of Lovecraft's. By late July he was already reporting that the project is in difficulties, and it must have definitively collapsed shortly thereafter, for we hear nothing more of it. Lovecraft stated that both he and Long (who, along with Loveman, had attempted the work on a freelance or commission basis) would be paid for their articles, but it is doubtful whether they were.

In February Morton secured his position with the Paterson Museum; it would last the rest of his life. By mid-July Lovecraft was talking about the possibility that Morton might hire him as an assistant, and this rather dim prospect continued to be bruited about sporadically all the way up to Lovecraft's departure from New York in April 1926. The problem rested not with Lovecraft's lack of expert knowledge of natural history—Morton himself had had to do a considerable amount of last-minute boning up to pass an examination for the position—but rather with the fact that the trustees were not then in a position to expand the museum's functions or staff. The museum was at the time housed in a stable near the public library, and the trustees were impatiently waiting for the death of the aged occupant of a house adjoining the stable so that they could tear down both structures and erect an entirely new museum building on the spot; before all this could happen, no thought of increasing staff would be possible, and the matter failed to be resolved during Lovecraft's entire stay. After visiting Paterson in late August Lovecraft felt much less regret about the delay.

There was, of course, money trickling in from *Weird Tales*. Lovecraft had five stories published in the magazine in 1925 (as well as his revision of C. M. Eddy's "Deaf, Dumb, and Blind" [April 1925], for which he presumably received nothing). We know the amounts received for three of these: $35 for "The Festival" (January), $25 for "The Unnamable" (July), and $50 for "The Temple" (September); we do not know the amounts for the other two ("The Statement of Randolph Carter" [February] and "The Music of Erich Zann" [May]), but they each probably averaged in the $30 range. All these stories, of course, had been written years before and most had presumably been submitted in late 1924 or early 1925. In any case, these five sales make a rough total of $170 for the year—barely equivalent to four months' rent.

Where was the other money—for food, laundry, modest travel, clothing, household items, and of course the other eight months' rent—coming from? Clearly Sonia was largely supporting him, and his aunts were contributing as best they could. Sonia, however, spoke very bitterly on this subject in a letter to Samuel Loveman:

> When we lived at 259 Parkside, his aunts sent him five dollars ($5) a week. They expected me to support him. When he moved to Clinton St., they sent him $15 a week. His rent was $40 a month. Food, carfare, and laundry and writing materials cost more than $5 a week. It was this "more" that I supplied. And when I came into town to do the firm's buying, every two weeks, I paid all his expenses during those trips and for his entertainment also. And when I'd leave, I always left a generous sum with him . . .[16]

There is a similar passage in her memoir, written not only (as Sonia explicitly declares) to correct W. Paul Cook's account (he had written: "His income was almost nil, he was reduced to about twenty cents a day for food —and he usually spent that for stamps"[17]), but, implicitly, to rebuke his aunts posthumously for their lack of monetary support. And yet, Sonia has herself exaggerated a little. Lovecraft did ask for (and presumably received) $75 from Annie Gamwell for expenses during the month of December 1924, including moving;[18] and the phrasing of this letter suggests that this was by no means the first time such a request was made. A casual reference in a late February letter to Annie to "the ever-punctual cheques"[19] suggests that Annie, if not actually supplying the money, at least was the money manager

for Lovecraft and perhaps for Lillian also. During Sonia's stay in Saratoga Springs in the spring, Lovecraft confessed to Lillian that "She cannot, of course, contribute her originally agreed quota to the rent," although he added that she was sending small amounts—varying from $2 to $5—whenever she could.[20] Lovecraft frequently acknowledged receipt of (mostly unspecified) sums from Lillian, and Annie was paying for his daily subscription to the *Providence Evening Bulletin.* In other words, there is every reason to believe that the aunts were contributing as best they could, although no doubt Sonia was still bearing the lion's share of Lovecraft's expenses.

How much could this amount have been? Rent was $40 per month; but in October Lovecraft's landlady, Mrs Burns, decided that tenants should now pay $10 per week, a net increase of about $3 per month. If we assume that this new rate went into effect by November 1, then Lovecraft's total rent for the year was $490. Around this time he stated that he was spending $5 per week for food (and perhaps other expenses),[21] making about $260 for the year. If we figure in at least $20 per month for additional expenses ($240 for the year), we find a total of $990 for the entire year, of which I cannot imagine that Lovecraft himself contributed much more than $250 ($170 from *Weird Tales* plus $74.16 from the mortgage payments of Mariano de Magistris), leaving about $750 to be supplied by Sonia and the aunts. I do not think the aunts could have contributed a full $15 a week, for Lovecraft would not have had to economise as he did; Sonia, not being around very much, could have had no first-hand knowledge of the matter. The aunts themselves, of course, were merely living off their own inheritance from Whipple Phillips, so I think Sonia is a little unfair in criticising them for their apparent lack of generosity.

The absence of remunerative work, of course, simply left Lovecraft that much more time to hang around with his friends. The year 1925 is the real pinnacle of the Kalem Club. Lovecraft and Kirk continued to be close; although Kirk was nominally employed as the owner of a bookstore, he could essentially set his own hours, and so made very congenial company for Lovecraft the night owl. An incident in January is typical. After putting Sonia on the train to Cincinnati on the afternoon of the 16th, Lovecraft went to Loveman's room (he had a key) and fixed it up with some presents Long had bought as a belated birthday gift; he returned home to receive the gang for their customary meeting, and then all hands went over to Loveman's to

unveil the surprise. Later that night Lovecraft went to Kirk's apartment at 106th Street, where the two slept in their clothes before venturing out the next morning to fix up Kirk's room in a similar manner. Only a few days later, on the 20th, Kirk decided to move into Lovecraft's own boarding house at 169 Clinton Street, in the apartment directly above his. That evening Lovecraft and Kirk went back to Kirk's old room, dismantled it, and retired around 5 A.M. The next morning they finished packing, and the next day Kirk moved in. For a while Loveman considered moving into the building, but ultimately decided against it.

There is scarcely a day in the entire year when Lovecraft did not meet with one or the other of his friends—either as they came over to his place or as they met at various cafeterias in Manhattan or Brooklyn or at the formal Wednesday meetings, which still alternated between McNeil and Leeds gatherings because of the ongoing unresolved dispute between these two individuals. So much for Lovecraft the "eccentric recluse"! Indeed, so busy was he with these social obligations—as well as apparently voluminous correspondence relating to the UAPA—that he wrote almost nothing during the first seven months of the year save a handful of poems, and many of these were written to order for meetings of the Blue Pencil Club.

Kirk wrote to his fiancée on February 6 about the actual naming of the club: "Because all of the last names of the permanent members of our club begin with K, L or M, we plan to call it the KALEM KLYBB. Half a dozen friends are to be here tonight. Mostly they're bores. All but me and HPL . . ."[22] Kleiner, in an essay written a decade later, had a somewhat different account of the name: "'Kalem' was based upon the letters K, L, and M, which happened to be the initial letters in the names of the original group—McNeil, Long, and the writer—and of those who joined during the first six months of the club."[23] Whatever the case, I wonder whether the exact form of the name had anything to do with an old film company of 1905 called Kalem, formed on exactly the same principle by George Kleine, Samuel Long, and Frank Marion.[24] It is possible that one or more of the members subconsciously recollected this name in forming the name of their club. One wonders also when exactly this name was created. There was a large meeting on February 3 at the Milan restaurant (Eighth Avenue and 42nd Street), including Sonia, C. M. Eddy (who was in town for a few days), and Lillian (who, after leaving New York on January 10, had evidently spent some weeks with friends in Westchester County before returning to the city

for a week beginning January 28), as well as Kirk, Kleiner, and Loveman; but this does not appear to have been a gang meeting, since Lovecraft much later announced that the gang had a "stag rule"[25] so that women were not allowed. The strange thing is that Lovecraft never refers to the group as the Kalems in the correspondence of this period, citing it merely as "the gang" or "The Boys."

Lovecraft at first did make the attempt to spend time with Sonia on her infrequent visits into town: he noted that he skipped a meeting of the Boys on February 4 because she was not feeling well.[26] But as time went on—and especially during Sonia's long stay in June and July—he became a little less conscientious. Even during her stay in February–March Lovecraft would stay out so late that he would come home well after Sonia was asleep and wake up late in the morning (or even early in the afternoon) to find that she had already gone out. Letters to the aunts for this period are scarce, so it is sometimes difficult to tell from the "Diary" what exactly is the state of affairs; but on March 1 there is the indication that after a gang meeting at Kirk's room some of the members went to the Scotch Bakery (only a block or two away), after which Kirk and Lovecraft came back to Kirk's room and talked till dawn. On the 10th Lovecraft and Kirk (without Sonia) visited Elizabeth, returning via Perth Amboy and Tottenville, Staten Island. The next day, after the regular Kalem meeting at Long's, Lovecraft and Kirk talked in the latter's room till 5.30 A.M.

The one thing Lovecraft could do during Sonia's absence is control his eating habits. He told Moe that after passing 193 pounds he refused to mount a pair of scales again; but in January his reducing plan began in earnest. The upshot is that in a few months Lovecraft went from close to 200 pounds to 146; from a 16 collar to 14½. All his suits had to be retailored, and each week he bought smaller and smaller collars. As Lovecraft put it:

> How the pounds flew! I helped the course along by exercise and outdoor walks, and everytime my friends saw me they were either pleased or frightened at the startling shrinkage. Fortunately I had not been fat for so many years that the skin must needs suffer radical distension. Instead, it shrunk neatly along with the tissue beneath, leaving a firm surface and simply restoring the lost outlines of 1915 and before. . . . It was dramatic—breathless

—sensational—this reclamation of a decade-lost statue from the vile mud which had so long encrusted it.

What was the reaction by his friends, family, and wife?

> As you may imagine, my wife protested fearfully at what seemed an alarming decline. I received long scolding letters from my aunts, and was lectured severely by Mrs. Long every time I went up to see Little Belknap. But I knew what I was doing, and kept on like grim death. . . . I now publickly avow my personal mastery of my diet, and do not permit my wife to feed me in excess of it.[27]

Lovecraft's letters to his aunts elaborate considerably upon this account. It is, as I have stated before, very unfortunate that we do not possess a single scrap of correspondence from Lillian and only a few insignificant bits from Annie, even though it is abundantly evident from Lovecraft's responses that Lillian at least was writing fairly frequently. The topic of food does come up in late spring and early summer. Lovecraft writes:

> Diet & walking are the stuff—which reminds me that tonight I've begun my home dining programme, having spent *30¢* for a lot of food which ought to last about *3* meals:
>
> 1 loaf bread 0.06
> 1 medium can beans 0.14
> ¼ lb cheese 0.10
> ———————————————
> Total 0.30[28]

Lovecraft seems to have written the above in an effort to prove his skill at economising during lean times, and he no doubt expected to be praised for his frugality; but his next letter suggests that the response was very different:

> As to my dietary programme—bosh! I *am* eating enough! Just you take a medium-sized loaf of bread, cut it in four equal parts, & add to each of these ¼ can (medium) Heinz beans & a goodly chunk of cheese. If the result isn't a full-sized, healthy day's quota of fodder for an Old Gentleman, I'll resign from the League of Nations' dietary committee!! It only costs 8¢—but don't let that prejudice you! It's good sound food, & many vigorous Chinamen live on vastly less. Of course, from time to

> time I'll vary the "meat course" by getting something instead of beans—canned spaghetti, beef stew, corned beef, &c. &c. &c.—& once in a while I'll add a dessert of cookies or some such thing. Fruit, also, is conceivable.[29]

This is surely one of the most remarkable passages in all Lovecraft's correspondence. It suggests many things at once—the crippling poverty under which he was at this time living (and, although under somewhat less straitened circumstances, he would continue to live for the rest of his life, even back in Providence); the fact that he had largely abandoned restaurant meals, even at places like the automats, in the interest of economy; and the rather schoolboyish tone of the entire passage, as if he were a teenager attempting to justify his behaviour to his parents. The matter comes up for discussion again later on in the same letter, after Lovecraft had received another letter from Lillian:

> Great God! if you could see the engulfing plethora of needless nutriment which S H has been stuffing down me during her sojourn here!! Twice a day to—& beyond—my capacity; pressed beef, sliced ham, bread, American & swiss cheese, cake, lemonade, buns, cup puddings, (of her own manufacture . . .), &c. &c. &c.—indeed, I'll be shot if I don't wonder how in Pegana's name I can get on my new 15 collars any more!

And so on.

And yet, in one sense Lovecraft's diet was being varied by experimentation with novel cuisines, either at restaurants with Sonia or on solitary excursions. Sonia took him to a Chinese restaurant in early July (probably not for the first time), although they had the disappointingly conventional chow mein.[30] In late August he sampled minestrone soup for the first time, liking it so much that on many subsequent occasions he would go to the Milan in Manhattan and make a meal of a huge tureen of minestrone for 15¢.[31] Around this time Lovecraft announced that his diet has become "prodigiously Italianised," but was quick to reassure Lillian that this is all to the good from the standpoint of health: ". . . I never order anything but spaghetti & minestrone except when those are not to be had—& they really contain an almost ideal balance of active nutritive elements, considering the wheaten base of spaghetti, the abundant vitamines in tomato sauce, the assorted vegetables in minestrone, & the profusion of powdered cheese common to both."[32]

There is, however, one depressing note in all this. In October Lovecraft was forced to buy an oil heater for the winter, since the heat provided by Mrs Burns—especially in the wake of a nationwide coal strike organised by the United Mine Workers and lasting from September 1925 to February 1926—was quite insufficient. The heater came with a stove-top attachment, so that Lovecraft could now indulge in the high luxury of "the preparation of *hot dinners*. No more cold beans & spaghetti for me . . ."[33] Does this mean that, for the first nine and a half months of the year, Lovecraft was eating cold meals, mostly out of cans? In spite of an earlier remark about heating beans on a "sterno"[34] (a tin of a waxlike flammable substance), this seems to be a dismal probability—else why would he boast about the prospect of hot dinners?

The room at 169 Clinton Street really was rather dismal—in a run-down neighbourhood, with a dubious clientele, and infested with mice. For this last problem Lovecraft purchased 5¢ mousetraps, as recommended by Kirk, "since I can throw them away without removing the corpus delicti, a thing I should hate to do with a costlier bit of mechanism."[35] (Later he found even cheaper traps at two for 5¢.) Lovecraft has been ridiculed for this squeamishness, but I think unjustly. Not many of us are fond of handling the corpses of mice or any other pests. In his diary the mice are described as "invaders" or abbreviated as "inv." In September the light fixture in his washing alcove needed repairing, but Mrs Burns refused to fix it. Lovecraft expressed great irritation at this, noting that "I can't bathe myself, wash dishes, or black my boots in any comfort with only the feeble rays of outside illumination filtering in."[36] This situation dragged on into 1926, when—during Sonia's visit in mid-January—an electrician from a nearby appliance shop finally made the repairs. Perhaps this is another indication of Lovecraft's inability to deal with practical matters; but Mrs Burns had told him that a man from the Edison Co. would charge fabulous rates merely for inspecting the fixture, so perhaps this caused Lovecraft to delay until Sonia could deal definitively with the situation.

The final insult came on the morning of Sunday, May 24, when, while Lovecraft was sleeping on the couch after an all-night writing session, his dressing alcove was broken into from the connecting apartment and he was robbed of nearly all his suits, along with sundry other abstractions. The thieves had rented the adjoining apartment and, finding that the lock on the door leading into Lovecraft's alcove had no bolt, broke in and removed three

of his suits (dating from 1914, 1921, and 1923), one overcoat (the fashionable 1924 coat that Sonia had purchased for him), a wicker suitcase of Sonia's (although the contents were later found in the thieves' apartment, which they had vacated without paying rent), and an expensive $100 radio set that Loveman had been storing in the alcove. All that Lovecraft was left with, in terms of suits, was a thin 1918 blue suit hanging on a chair in the main room, which the thieves did not enter. Lovecraft did not discover the robbery until 1.30 A.M. on Tuesday the 26th, since he had had no previous occasion to enter the alcove. His reaction was what one might have expected:

> I can't yet accustom myself to the shock—to the grim truth that I haven't a suit of clothes to my back save the thin, blue summer one. What I shall ever do if the property isn't recovered, Heaven alone knows!
>
> . . . I could curse the atmosphere blue! Just as I had decided to try to look more respectable by keeping my clothes in good order, here comes this blasted, infernal thunderbolt to deprive me of the battery of four suits and one really decent overcoat needed as a minimum of neat appearance! To Hades with everything![37]

Of course, the property never was recovered, although a police detective came over and promised to do his best. And yet, Lovecraft managed to respond to the whole situation with surprising good humour, for only two days later he wrote a long letter to Lillian on the matter and in the process made light of the situation:

> Alas for the robes of my infancy, perennial in their bloom, & now cut off—or snatched off—in the finest flowering of their first few decades! They knew the slender youth of old, & expanded to accomodate [*sic*] the portly citizen of middle life—aye, & condensed again to shroud the wizened shanks of old age! And now they are gone—gone—& the grey, bent wearer still lives to bemoan his nudity; gathering around his lean sides as best he may the strands of his long white beard to serve him in the office of a garment![38]

Accompanying this mock-lament is a hilarious drawing of Lovecraft, wearing nothing but a belt around his own knee-length hair and beard, standing in front of a clothing store with suits priced at $35 and $45 and a placard in the window with the plea, "I want my clothes!" The mention of

"the robes of my infancy" refers to Lovecraft's habit of keeping his suits and coats for years or even decades—he notes that among the pieces not taken was a 1909 light overcoat, a 1915 winter overcoat, and a 1917 light overcoat, along with sundry hats, gloves, shoes, etc. (not dated).

What now transpired was a five-month hunt for the cheapest but most tasteful suits Lovecraft could endure to wear, in the process of which he gained a considerable knowledge of discount clothing stores and even the rudiments of haggling. Lovecraft could not feel comfortable without four suits—two light and two dark, one each for summer and winter. He really did not think it possible—based on conversations with Long, Leeds, and others—to get a good suit for under $35, but he was going to make the effort. In early July, when Sonia was in town, he saw a sign in the shop of Monroe Clothes, a chain store, that intrigued him, and he managed to find a grey suit of sufficiently conservative cast for $25. "The suit in general," he remarked, "has a certain pleasing resemblance to my very first long-trouser outfit, purchased at Browning & King's in April 1904."[39]

This was a summer suit, and Lovecraft began wearing it immediately. In October he decided to buy a heavy suit for winter, since the weather was turning colder. This, he knew, would be a considerably more difficult proposition, for really good winter suits can rarely be secured at bargain prices. Moveover, Lovecraft had two absolute requirements for suits: they had to be entirely without pattern, and they had to have three buttons, in spite of the fact that the top button (usually under the lapel) is never used. To his dismay he found, on his weary peregrinations, that "In this age of well-heated houses men have stopped wearing the heavy clothing they used to wear . . . so that the unhappy victim of a menage in which the name *Burns* applies to the family instead of the fuel is very literally left out in the cold!"[40] The fabrics Lovecraft examined, both at Monroe's and at other stores, were scarcely heavier than those of his summer suit; and patternless three-button coats were simply not to be found. Lovecraft had learned to be scrupulous in his assessment of cloth and cut: "Anything under about $35.00 was either thin & slimpsy, [*sic*] or sportily cut, or of undesirable pattern, or of abominable texture & workmanship. . . . Fabricks seemed hewn with a blunt axe or hacked by a blind man with dull shears!"[41]

Finally he seemed to come across just what he wanted—except that the coat only had two buttons. This was at the Borough Clothiers in Fulton Street in Brooklyn. Lovecraft was shrewd in dealing with the salesman: he

said that he really wanted only a provisional suit until he could get a better one, therefore implying that he might buy another suit from the place later (not mentioning that it might be more than a year before he did so); the salesman, accordingly, consulted with a superior and showed him a more expensive suit but priced it at only $25. Lovecraft, putting the thing on, found that it "vastly delighted me," but the absence of the third button gave him pause. He told the salesman to hold the suit while he checked more shops. The salesman told Lovecraft that it was unlikely he could get a better deal anywhere else, and after examinations of several more stores Lovecraft found that this was the case; he went back to Borough Clothiers and bought the suit for $25.

The long letter in which Lovecraft narrates this entire episode to Lillian certainly betrays more than a few indications of what would now be called obsessive-compulsive behaviour. The repeated emphasis on a three-button suit begins to sound almost manic; and when Lovecraft later found that the tailor who completed the alterations to the suit did not preserve the remnants (which Lovecraft wished to send to Lillian so that she could gauge the fineness of the material), he vowed to send the entire coat of the suit by express. Lillian clearly said no to this, eliciting the following complaint on Lovecraft's part:

> . . . hang it all, but *how* am I to let you know *just* what I've got? It is the precise *texture* I wish you to see—the smooth yet not hard surface, the well-bred darkness of a patternless mixture wherein light & dark grey threads are made to fuse aristocratically to an homogeneous whole in which the diversity of 'pepper-&-saltness' is only faintly suggested as the eye strives to judge whether the fabrick is black, navy-blue, or very dark grey.[42]

Lovecraft took to calling this suit "the triumph." But he quickly came to the conclusion that he would need to buy a cheap winter suit in order not to wear out the good one, so in late October he undertook yet another long quest for a suit under $15 for everyday wear. The first place Lovecraft went was the row of stores on 14th Street between Sixth and Seventh Avenues in Manhattan, then (as now) the haven of discount clothing in the city. What he found, after trying "a dozen coats of varying degrees of impossibility," was a coat that was "a limp rag; crushed, dusty, twisted, & out-of-press, but I saw that cut, fabric, & fit were just right." It was part of a $9.95 sale; but the

problem was that there was no exactly matching set of trousers. All that was left was one trouser that was too long and two that were too short. The salesman was trying to get Lovecraft to accept the short trousers, but Lovecraft wanted the long one; after considerable haggling he persuaded the salesman to sell him the coat, the long trousers, and one of the short trousers, all for $11.95. This was all pretty clever on Lovecraft's part, and a tailor repaired the coat and trousers the next day. This entire adventure, too, is narrated in a long and quite poignant letter to Lillian; in the course of which he indulges in a long tirade on the subject:

> . . . in general I think I have developed an eye for the difference between the clothing a gentleman wears & that which a gentleman doesn't. What has sharpened this sense is the constant sight of these accursed filthy rabbles that infest the N.Y. streets, & whose clothing presents such systematic differences from the normal clothing of real people along Angell St. & in Butler Ave. or Elmgrove Ave. cars that he comes to feel a tremendous homesickness & to pounce avidly on any gentleman whose clothes are proper & tasteful & suggestive of Blackstone Boulevard rather than Borough Hall or Hell's Kitchen. . . . Confound it, I'll be either in good Providence taste or in a bally bathrobe!! Certain lapel cuts, textures, & fits tell the story. It amuses me to see how some of these flashy young 'boobs' & foreigners spend fortunes on various kinds of expensive clothes which they regard as evidences of meritorious taste, but which in reality are their absolute social & aesthetic damnation—being little short of placards shrieking in bold letters: *"I am an ignorant peasant", "I am a mongrel gutter-rat",* or *"I am a tasteless & unsophisticated yokel."*

To which he added, with complete ingenuousness, "And yet perhaps these creatures are not, after all, seeking to conform to the absolute artistic standard of gentlefolk."[43] This remarkable passage—testifying to Lovecraft's inability to dissociate himself from the codes of attire and general social behaviour inculcated in him in youth—goes on to say, rather touchingly:

> In my prime I could never have gotten so excited over clothes, but exile & old age make trifles dear to me. With my nervous hatred of slovenly & plebeian dressing, & after the maddening

> robbery which threatened to reduce *me* to exactly the thing I hate, you'll admit that apparel became very legitimately a "touchy" subject with me till such a time as I might again possess the four suits necessary for balanced dressing both in summer & in winter.

But now Lovecraft had his four suits, and he need think no more about the matter. All his letters are not quite as maniacal as this; he could still keep his good humour even in the face of poverty and deprivation. He spoke in late August about his shoes—"the good old Regals are about on the brink of spectacular disintegration"[44]—and then noted with satisfaction that the new Regal 2021 shoes he secured in late October were a "veritable knockout"[45] at the next Kalem meeting.

Not having a job at least meant that Lovecraft could go out with the boys at almost any time and also indulge in modest travels. His diary and letters are full of accounts of trips to Van Cortlandt Park, Fort Greene Park, Yonkers, and elsewhere; there were the usual walks through the colonial parts of Greenwich Village, and any number of walks across the Brooklyn Bridge. Here is how Lovecraft spent a few days in early April:

> I duly went [to Long's], had an excellent lunch, heard a fine new story & prose-poem of his, & later accompanied him & his mamma to the cinema at 95th St., where we saw that much discussed German film, "The Last Laugh". . . . After the show I returned home, read, & retired; rising later the next day & cleaning my room in preparation for the Boys' meeting. Mortonius was the first to arrive, then Kleiner & Loveman together, & finally Leeds. Sonny couldn't come—but Kirk sent a telegram of regret from New Haven. The meeting was brisk, but Morton had to leave early for the last Paterson train—Loveman departing with him. Next Kleiner went—after which Leeds & I went upstairs to look over Kirk's books & pictures. Leeds left at 3 a.m., & I joined him in coffee & apricot pie at Johnson's. Then home—read—rest—& another day.[46]

Kirk described a session with Lovecraft later in April:

> HPL visited me and read while I toiled over cards. He is now sleeping on the lounge with *The Ghost Girl* open before him—no compliment to Saltus. . . . HPL awoke—uttered "Avernus!" and

> went back to Nirvana. . . . About midnight we went to Tiffany's restaurant where I had a beautiful shrimp salad and coffee while H had a slice of cheesecake and two coffees. We sat around for 1½ hours over meal and the morning papers. . . .[47]

Each Kalem member's home was, apparently, always open to the others. Indeed, there is a strange entry in Lovecraft's diary for March 15–16, unexplained by any existing letter, in which Lovecraft and Long walked along the Gowanus Expressway near the waterfront and then went over to Loveman's apartment, at which point Lovecraft writes: "carry FBL upstairs." I don't imagine Long was overcome by alcohol or anything of the sort; probably he had become tired after the long walk.

On the night of April 11 Lovecraft and Kirk, wishing to take advantage of a special $5 excursion fare to Washington, D.C., boarded the night train at Pennsylvania Station at midnight and arrived at dawn in the capital. They would have only a single morning and afternoon in the city, so they intended to make the most of it. There were two colleagues who could act as tour guides, Anne Tillery Renshaw and Edward L. Sechrist; and Renshaw had very obligingly offered to drive the visitors around in her car where possible. Lovecraft, Kirk, and Sechrist first made a walking tour of the important landmarks in the city centre, noting the Library of Congress (which failed to impress Lovecraft), the Capitol (which he thought inferior to Rhode Island's great marble-domed State Capitol), the White House, the Washington Monument, the Lincoln Memorial, and all the rest. Renshaw then drove them to Georgetown, the colonial town founded in 1751, years before Washington was ever planned or built. Lovecraft found it very rich in colonial houses of all sorts. They then crossed the Key Memorial Bridge into Virginia, going through Arlington to Alexandria, entering the Christ Church, an exquisite late Georgian (1772–73) structure where Washington worshipped, and other old buildings in the city. After this, they proceeded south to Washington's home, Mount Vernon, although they could not enter because it was Sunday. They drove back to Arlington, where, near the national cemetery, was the residence called Arlington, the manor of the Custis family. They also explored the cemetery, in particular the enormous Memorial Amphitheatre completed in 1920, which Lovecraft considered "one of the most prodigious and spectacular architectural triumphs of the Western World."[48] Naturally, Lovecraft was transported by this structure because it reminded him of classical antiquity—it was based upon the

Dionysiac Theatre in Athens—and because of its enormous size (it covers 34,000 square feet). They then came back to Washington, seeing as much as possible before catching the 4.35 train back to New York, including the Brick Capitol (1815) and the Supreme Court Building. They caught the train just in time.

But by mid-May this endless round of socialising was becoming a little wearying to Lovecraft. He had, indeed, done singularly little creative work during the first four months of the year: his output consisted merely of five poems, two of which—"My Favourite Character" (January 31) and "Primavera" (March 27)—were written for Blue Pencil Club meetings, for which members were to produce literary compositions on a given topic. "My Favourite Character" is a witty light poem that examines the gamut of fictional characters, from the classics ("Esmond, D. Copperfield, or Hiawatha, / Or anything from some nice high-school author") to the daring ("Jurgen, Clerk Nicholas, Boccaccio's misses, / And sundry things of Joyce's, from *Ulysses*") to childhood favourites ("Boyhood's own idols, whom the sages hear not— / Frank Merriwell, Nick Carter, and Fred Fearnot!"), and finally concludes:

> Now as for me, I am no man of learning
> To know just what I like and why I like it;
> Letters and hist'ry set my poor head turning
> Till not a choice can permanently strike it!
> My fav'rite? Fie on printed information—
> I'll frankly hand myself the nomination!

This is, to be sure, a weird anticipation of the future, for Lovecraft himself has indeed become a character in fiction. "Primavera," on the other hand, is a pensive nature poem that finds both wonder and horror in the non-human world:

> There are whispers from groves auroral
> To blood half-afraid to hear,
> While the evening star's faint choral
> Is an ecstasy touch'd with fear.
> And at night where the hill-wraiths rally
> Glows the far Walpurgis flame,
> Which the lonely swain in the valley
> Beholds, tho' he dare not name.

Of the other three poems, two are insignificant: there is the usual birthday poem to Jonathan E. Hoag, written this year only one day before Hoag's birthday on February 10, and an equally frivolous birthday poem to Sonia, "To Xanthippe" (March 16). This nickname is of some interest, and Sonia explains its origin: "The nomenclature of 'Socrates and Xantippe' [*sic*] was originated by me because as time marched on and our correspondence became more intimate, I either *saw* in Howard or endowed him with a Socratic wisdom and genius, so that in a jocular vein I subscribed myself as Xantippe."[49] Lovecraft may or may not have had Socratic wisdom; but Sonia evidently did not know that Xanthippe had a reputation in antiquity of being a shrew, hence is hardly a nickname someone ought to have chosen by design.

The final poem, "The Cats" (February 15), is an entirely different proposition. This daemoniac six-stanza poem in quatrains is one of his most effective weird verses—a wild, uncontrolled spasm bringing out all the shuddersome mystery of the feline species:

> Legions of cats from the alleys nocturnal,
> Howling and lean in the glare of the moon,
> Screaming the future with mouthings infernal,
> Yelling the burden of Pluto's red rune.

It is, incidentally, good to see Lovecraft avoiding the stereotyped heroic couplet in all these poems.

But that is the extent of Lovecraft's work as fiction writer, poet, and even essayist; and clearly he felt that the time had come to put a halt on what he called "the daily dropping-in and cafeteria loafing" to which he was so fatally tempted by the presence of so many of his friends in the city, but which he knew was "death to any personal intellectual life or creative accomplishment."[50] Accordingly, Lovecraft took to reading in the dressing alcove, leaving the light in the main room off so that he could pretend to be out if anyone came over. In many cases he knew that this skullduggery would not succeed: he and Kirk had set up a charming method of communication by banging on the radiator pipes, and there were times when Kirk knew Lovecraft was home, so that he would have to respond to the signal. But Lovecraft also adopted the stratagem of receiving visitors in his dressing-gown, with the bed unfolded, or with papers and manuscripts scattered all about, to discourage endless lounging around in his room. He

would not cut out the weekly gang meetings yet, for this would seem too unusual, and in any case he really enjoyed them.

Lovecraft reported this resolve in a letter to Lillian of May 20. The robbery of May 25 augmented his efforts to some degree, if only because he now had only one decent suit to his name and had to be careful not to wear it out. But after a month or so his resolve appears—if the diary is any guide—to have weakened, and he is out gallivanting with the boys as much as before.

Amateur affairs were not quite over. The lack of a convention and election in 1924 meant that the existing editorial board continued in office by default, so that Lovecraft remained Official Editor. One thing he did during Sonia's long stay in June and July was to put together the July 1925 *United Amateur*—the only issue for the 1924–25 term. This, he knew, would be his farewell to the UAPA—and, indeed, his farewell to organised amateurdom in general until he was lured back into the affairs of the NAPA in the early 1930s—and he wished to go out in style. On June 4–6 he wrote an insubstantial and flattering essay, "The Poetry of John Ravenor Bullen," on the Anglo-Canadian poet and novelist who may or may not have introduced him to the Transatlantic Circulator in 1920, although this piece appeared only in the next issue of the *United Amateur* (September 1925). The July 1925 issue is full of contributions by the gang: Clark Ashton Smith's poem "Apologia"; a brief essay by Frank Long on Samuel Loveman's poetry, "Pirates and Hamadryades"; a review of two of Smith's books of poetry by Alfred Galpin (under the Consul Hasting pseudonym); two poems by Long, one of which, "A Man from Genoa," would be the title poem of his collection published early the next year; Samuel Loveman's delicate brief tale, "The One Who Found Pity"; and the usual "News Notes" (by Lovecraft), "Editorial" (by Lovecraft), and "President's Message" (by Sonia).

In some senses the "President's Message" is the most interesting of these, at least biographically. The piece is dated June 16, but as this is the very day on which (according to Lovecraft's diary) the issue was sent to the printer, it may have been written a day or two earlier. Sonia openly speaks of her difficulties during the official year:

> Outside responsibilities of unexpected magnitude, together with a failing health which culminated in my autumn sojourn at the Brooklyn Hospital, cut me off hopelessly from amateur work

> during the summer of 1924; a disastrous interregnum whose effects proved too profound to be shaken off during the balance of the year, especially since my energy and leisure have even since then been but fractional.

Both Sonia and Lovecraft in his "Editorial" spoke of the apathy overtaking all amateurdom and the frequent talk of consolidating the UAPA and NAPA for the sake of preserving the amateur movement; and both felt that this should be done only as a last resort, and that the UAPA ought to maintain a separate existence if at all possible. To that end, Sonia declared that a mail election would be held on July 15, with the ballots to be sent out shortly. Sure enough, Lovecraft wrote to Lillian that on July 3 he folded, addressed, and mailed the entire lot of 200 ballots.[51]

The results of the election were as follows: Edgar J. Davis, President; Paul Livingston Keil, First Vice-President; Grace M. Bromley, Second Vice-President. Davis appointed Victor E. Bacon Official Editor and (no doubt with additional cajoling from Lovecraft) Frank Long as chairman of the Department of Public Criticism. Lovecraft, hoping against hope, wrote to Moe that the Davis-Bacon tandem might somehow save the UAPA at the last moment:

> Don't you think there's a half-chance for the United to come back with two such cherubs as its leaders? With Davis's brains, & Bacon's restless egotism & energy to prod those brains into action, we certainly have a team whose possibilities are not to be sneez'd at. . . . [Bacon] stands a chance of rousing & getting together enough surviving "live ones" to resist the decadent tendencies of the age . . .; so that we may be able to postpone hiring the mortician for a year or two more.[52]

Lovecraft accordingly spent the next several months attempting to get the board off the ground, but with indifferent success: a few slim issues of the *United Amateur* were indeed produced during 1925–26, but so far as I can tell no election was held in 1926, causing the association definitively to fold. I do not know how many other amateur journals were produced in this term; certainly Lovecraft had no intention of reviving his *Conservative,* even if he had had the finances to do so.

During Sonia's long stay Lovecraft did some travelling with her. The two of them went to Scott Park in Elizabeth on June 13. On the 28th they went to the Bryn Mawr Park section of Yonkers, where they had attempted to

purchase the home lot the previous year; no account or explanation of this visit occurs in Lovecraft's letters to his aunts. His diary notes laconically: "charm still present." With Long, Lovecraft again visited the Cloisters in Fort Tryon Park, in the far northwest tip of Manhattan.

On July 2 Sonia and Lovecraft took a trip to Coney Island, where he had cotton candy for the first time. On this occasion Sonia had a silhouette of herself made by an African American named Perry; Lovecraft had had his own silhouette done on March 26. This silhouette has become very well known in recent years, and its very faithful (perhaps even a little flattering) rendition has caused Lovecraft's profile to become an icon; the silhouette of Sonia, on the other hand, is so little known that few have had any idea of its very existence.

On July 16 the couple took a hiking trip to the New Jersey Palisades—the wooded, hilly region directly facing northern Manhattan across the Hudson River. This proved a very pleasant outing:

> . . . we began the zigzag ascent of the majestic precipice by means of a winding route partly identical with the wagon road, partly a footpath through the verdant twilight of forest steeps, & partly a stone stairway which at one point tunnels under the road. The crest, which we attained in about a half-hour, commands the noblest possible view of the Hudson & its eastern shore; & along this we rambled—coming now on a patch of woods, now on a grassy pasture, & now on a chasm bordered by the jutting bed rock of the plateau itself.[53]

Lovecraft alternately read 5¢ Haldeman-Julius booklets and Stevenson's *Jekyll and Hyde.* They had lunch (tongue and cheese sandwiches and peaches, followed by ice cream and lemonade secured from a nearby pavilion), then returned home by ferry and subway.

Another thing Lovecraft and Sonia liked to do was to attend movies. Probably she was more interested in this form of entertainment than he was, but on occasion Lovecraft could become genuinely enthusiastic about a film that suited his tastes, either antiquarian or horrific. They were, of course, all silents at this time. In September he reports seeing *The Phantom of the Opera:*

> . . . what a spectacle it was!! It was about a *presence* haunting the great Paris opera house . . . but developed so slowly that I actually fell asleep several times during the first part. Then the

> second part began—horror lifted its grisly visage—& I could not have been made drowsy by all the opiates under heaven! Ugh!!! The *face* that was revealed when the mask was pulled off . . . & the nameless legion of *things* that cloudily appeared beside & behind the owner of that face when the mob chased him into the river at the last![54]

His diary records a viewing of *The Lost World* (an adaptation of the Conan Doyle novel) on October 6, but there is no corresponding letter testifying to his reaction to this remarkable film, a landmark in the use of special effects in its depiction of dinosaurs in South America. On a solitary outing Lovecraft saw a stirring documentary of whaling days in New Bedford, *Down to the Sea in Ships*. "The whole film is of inestimable historical value as a minute & authentic record of a dying yet gorgeously glamorous phase of American life & adventure."[55]

On July 24 Sonia returned to Cleveland, but she made Lovecraft promise to attend the Blue Pencil Club meeting in Brooklyn that evening. In the morning Lovecraft had written his literary contribution—the light verse "A Year Off," another fairly successful venture in *vers de société*. Lovecraft considers the possible choices for spending a year's vacation—"I'd look up ferries on the Nile, / And 'bus fares for the trip to Mecca"; "Arranging passage thro' Thibet / To dally with the Dalai Lama"—but concludes (somewhat predictably) that after this imaginative survey there is no need to go on the actual trip!

Now that Sonia was out of the way and his amateur work apparently finished, Lovecraft felt that the time had come to buckle down to some real creative work. On August 1 and 2 he wrote "The Horror at Red Hook," which he describes in a letter to Long (who was away on vacation) as follows: ". . . it deals with hideous cult-practices behind the gangs of noisy young loafers whose essential mystery has impressed me so much. The tale is rather long and rambling, and I don't think it is very good; but it represents at least an attempt to extract horror from an atmosphere to which you deny any qualities save vulgar commonplaceness."[56] Lovecraft is sadly correct in his analysis of the merits of the story, for it is one of the poorest of his longer efforts.

Red Hook is a small peninsula of Brooklyn facing Governor's Island, about two miles southwest of Borough Hall. Lovecraft could easily walk to

the area from 169 Clinton Street, and indeed there is the laconic entry "Red Hook" in his diary for March 8, when he and Kleiner evidently strolled there. It was then and still remains one of the most dismal slums in the entire metropolitan area. In the story Lovecraft describes it not inaccurately, although with a certain jaundiced tartness:

> Red Hook is a maze of hybrid squalor near the ancient waterfront opposite Governor's Island, with dirty highways climbing the hill from the wharves to that higher ground where the decayed lengths of Clinton and Court Streets lead off toward the Borough Hall. Its houses are mostly of brick, dating from the first quarter of the middle of the nineteenth century, and some of the obscurer alleys and byways have that alluring antique flavour which conventional reading leads us to call "Dickensian".

Lovecraft is, indeed, being a little charitable (at least as far as present-day conditions are concerned), for I do not know of any quaint alleys there now. But of course it is not merely the physical decay that is of interest to him: "The population is a hopeless tangle and enigma; Syrian, Spanish, Italian, and negro elements impinging upon one another, and fragments of Scandinavian and American belts lying not far distant. It is a babel of sound and filth, and sends out strange cries to answer the lapping of oily waves at its grimy piers and the monstrous organ litanies of the harbour whistles." Here, in essence, is the heart of the story; for "The Horror at Red Hook" is nothing but a shriek of rage and loathing at the "foreigners" who have taken New York away from the white people to whom it presumably belongs. The mention of Syrians is interesting, and may perhaps relate to one of Lovecraft's neighbours at 169 Clinton, who played such strange music that it gave Lovecraft strange dreams; as he described it two years later, "once a *Syrian* had the room next to mine and played eldritch and whining monotones on a strange bagpipe which made me dream ghoulish and incredible things of crypts under Bagdad and limitless corridors of Eblis under the moon-cursed ruins of Istakhar."[57] One would think Lovecraft would be grateful for such imaginative stimulus, but he does not appear to have been.

Sonia in her memoir claims to supply the inspiration for the tale: "It was on an evening while he, and I think Morton, Sam Loveman and Rheinhart Kleiner were dining in a restaurant somewhere in Columbia Heights that a few rough, rowdyish men entered. He was so annoyed by their churlish

behavior that out of this circumstance he wove 'The Horror at Red Hook.'"[58] Lovecraft may have mentioned this event in a letter to her; but I am not entirely convinced that it was any one incident that gave birth to the story, but rather the cumulative depression of New York after a year and a half of poverty and futility.

The plot of "The Horror at Red Hook" is simple, and is presented as an elementary good-vs.-evil conflict between Thomas Malone, an Irish police detective working out of the Borough Hall station, and Robert Suydam, a wealthy man of ancient Dutch ancestry who becomes the focus of horror in the tale. Suydam first attracts notice by "loitering on the benches around Borough Hall in conversation with groups of swarthy, evil-looking strangers." Later he realises that his clandestine activities must be masked by a façade of propriety; so he cleans up his act, foils the attempts of relatives to deem him legally incompetent by ceasing to be seen with those evil foreigners, and as a final coup marries Cornelia Gerritsen, "a young woman of excellent position" whose wedding attracts "a solid page from the Social Register." In all this there is a rather tart satire (entirely unintended by Lovecraft) on the meaninglessness of class distinctions. The wedding party following the ceremony, held aboard a steamer at the Cunard Pier, ends in horror as the couple are found horribly murdered and completely bloodless. Incredibly, officials follow the instructions written on a sheet of paper, signed by Suydam, and insouciantly hand his body over to a suspicious group of men headed by "an Arab with a hatefully negroid mouth."

From here the story takes a still more pulpish turn, and we are taken into the basement of a dilapidated church that has been turned into a dance-hall, where horrible rites to Lilith are being practised by loathsome monstrosities. The corpse of Suydam, miraculously revivified, resists being sacrificed to Lilith but instead somehow manages to overturn the pedestal on which she rests (with the result that the corpse sends "its noisome bulk floundering to the floor in a state of jellyish dissolution"), thereby somehow ending the horror. All this time detective Malone merely watches from a convenient vantage-point, although the sight so traumatises him that he is forced to spend many months recuperating in a small village in Rhode Island.

What strikes us about this tale, aside from the hackneyed supernatural manifestations, is the sheer poorness of its writing. The perfervid rhetoric that in other tales provides such harmless enjoyment here comes off sounding forced and bombastic: "Here cosmic sin had entered, and festered

by unhallowed rites had commenced the grinning march of death that was to rot us all to fungous abnormalities too hideous for the grave's holding. Satan here held his Babylonish court, and in the blood of stainless childhood the leprous limbs of phosphorescent Lilith were laved." How the atheist Lovecraft could provide a satisfactory explanation for "cosmic sin" and the presence of Satan would be an interesting question; and the burden of this passage, as of the story as a whole, is the dread of being overwhelmed and "mongrelised" by those foreigners who by some miracle are increasingly ousting all the sturdy Anglo-Saxons who founded this great white nation of ours. Lovecraft cannot help ending the story on a note of dour ponderousness ("The soul of the beast is omnipresent and triumphant") and with a transparent indication that the horrors that were seemingly suppressed by the police raid will recur at some later date: the final scene shows Malone overhearing a "swarthy squinting hag" indoctrinating a small child in the same incantation he heard earlier in the tale. It is a fittingly stereotyped ending for a story that does nothing but deal in stereotypes—both of race and of weird fictional imagery.

The unoriginality and derivativeness of this story are encapsulated by the fact that much of the magical mumbo-jumbo was copied wholesale from the articles on "Magic" and "Demonology" (both by E. B. Tylor, celebrated author of the landmark anthropological work, *Primitive Culture* [1871]) from the 9th edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* which Lovecraft owned. He made no secret of this borrowing in a letter to Clark Ashton Smith, remarking: "I'd like to draw on less obvious sources if I knew of the right reservoirs to tap."[59] This comment is itself of interest, for it singlehandedly confounds the absurd claims of various occultists who have seen in Lovecraft a figure of great esoteric erudition. Many of his occultist allusions in later tales derive from Lewis Spence's handy *Encyclopaedia of Occultism* (1920), which he owned.

The borrowings from the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* in "The Horror at Red Hook" involve the Latin quotation from the mediaeval writer Antoine Delrio (or Del Rio), *An sint unquam daemones incubi et succubae, et an ex tali congressu proles nasci queat?* ("Have there ever been demons, incubi, and succubi, and from such a union can offspring be born?"), from the entry on "Demonology"; this citation evidently lent support to Lovecraft's otherwise peculiar usage of *succubus/i* as *succuba/ae* (even though, of course, a succubus is a female demon, parallel to an incubus). From the entry

on “Magic” Lovecraft derived both the invocation uttered at the beginning and end of the story (“O friend and companion of night . . .”) and the strange Graeco-Hebraic incantation which Malone finds on the wall of the dance-hall church. In a later letter he attempted to supply a translation of the formula, committing embarrassing errors in the process (the encyclopaedia entry provided no translation); for example, he rendered the celebrated Greek religious term *homousion* (“of the same substance”—referring usually to the belief that Christ is of the same substance as God) as “probably a decadent variant or compound involving the Greek *Homou—together.*”[60]

The figure of Malone is of some interest, at least autobiographically. This is not to say that Malone’s character is based upon Lovecraft’s; instead, it is possible that some (perhaps superficial) details of his character are drawn from Lovecraft’s reigning literary mentors, Machen and Dunsany. The mere fact that Malone is Irish may link him to Dunsany; but it is also stated that he was “born in a Georgian villa near Phoenix Park,” just as Dunsany was born, not in Ireland, but at 15 Park Square near Regent’s Park in London. Malone’s mysticism, conversely, seems a tip of the hat to Machen. Perhaps Lovecraft imagined that he was investing New York with the same sort of unholy witchery that Machen had done with London in *The Three Impostors* and other works.

Malone is interesting for another reason having to do with the possible genesis—or, at any rate, the particular form—of the story. Sometime before writing “The Horror at Red Hook” Lovecraft had submitted “The Shunned House” to *Detective Tales,* the magazine that had been founded together with *Weird Tales* and of which Edwin Baird was the editor. Perhaps Lovecraft felt that Elihu Whipple was enough of a detective figure that this tale might qualify for publication. And in spite of the fact that *Detective Tales* occasionally did print tales of horror and the supernatural, Baird rejected the story.[61] By late July Lovecraft was speaking of writing a “novel or novelette of Salem horrors which I may be able to cast in a sufficiently ‘detectivish’ mould to sell to Edwin Baird for *Detective Tales,*”[62] but he does not appear to have begun such a work. What this all suggests, however, is that Lovecraft was attempting to develop, however impractically, an alternative market to *Weird Tales*—and is calling upon the man who, as editor of *Weird Tales,* accepted all his stories to aid him in the attempt. Sure enough, in early August Lovecraft was speaking of sending “The Horror at Red Hook” to *Detective Tales;* [63] whether he actually did so is unclear, but

if he did, the tale was obviously rejected. Lovecraft would later remark that the story was consciously written with *Weird Tales* in mind,[64] and sure enough it appeared in the January 1927 issue. But the figure of Malone—a much more orthodox detective than any character in previous tales of Lovecraft's, or for that matter in any later ones—may perhaps have been fashioned at least in part with an eye toward *Detective Tales*.

Otherwise "The Horror at Red Hook" is of interest only for some piquant local colour derived from Lovecraft's growing familiarity with Brooklyn. The dance-hall church is very likely modelled on an actual church (now destroyed) near the waterfront in Red Hook. This church was, evidently, itself actually once used as a dance hall.[65] Suydam's residence is said to be in Martense Street (very close to 259 Parkside) and near the Dutch Reformed Church (on which "The Hound" was based) with its "iron-railed yard of Netherlandish gravestones"; probably no specific house is intended, and I cannot find one on Martense Street that might correspond to it. Another reference, not relating to topography, is to the fact that some of the evil denizens of Red Hook are of a Mongoloid stock originating in Kurdistan —"and Malone could not help recalling that Kurdistan is the land of the Yezidis, last survivors of the Persian devil-worshippers." This, I believe, is a borrowing from E. Hoffmann Price's fine tale "The Stranger from Kurdistan," published in *Weird Tales* for July 1925, where mention is made of the devil-worshipping Yezidis. Lovecraft would, however, not become personally acquainted with Price for another seven years.

"The Horror at Red Hook" presents as good an opportunity as any for discussing the development (if it can be called that) of Lovecraft's racial attitudes during this period. There is no question that his racism flared to greater heights at this time—at least on paper (as embodied in letters to his aunts)—than at any subsequent period in his life. I have already remarked that the seeming paradox of Lovecraft's marrying a Jewess when he exhibited marked anti-Semitic traits is no paradox at all, for Sonia in his mind fulfilled his requirement that aliens assimilate themselves into the American population, as did other Jews such as Samuel Loveman. Nevertheless, Sonia speaks at length about Lovecraft's attitudes on this subject. One of her most celebrated comments is as follows: "Although he once said he loved New York and that henceforth it would be his 'adopted state', I soon learned that he hated it and all its 'alien hordes'. When I protested that I too was one of them, he'd tell me I 'no longer belonged to

these mongrels'. *'You are now Mrs. H. P. Lovecraft of 598 Angell St., Providence, Rhode Island!'"* [66] Let it pass that Lovecraft and Sonia never resided at 598 Angell Street. A later remark is still more telling: "Soon after we were married he told me that whenever we have company he would appreciate it if there were 'Aryans' in the majority."[67] This must refer to the year 1924, as they would not have done much entertaining in 1925. Sonia's final remark on the matter is more damning yet. Sonia claims that part of her desire to have Lovecraft and Loveman meet in 1922 was to "cure" Lovecraft of his bias against Jews by actually meeting one face to face. She continues:

> Unfortunately, one often judges a whole people by the character of the first ones he meets. But H. P. assured me that he was quite "cured"; that since I was so well assimilated into the American way of life and the American scene he felt sure our marriage would be a success. But unfortunately (and here I must speak of something I never intended to have publicly known), whenever he would meet crowds of people—in the subway, or, at the noon hour, on the sidewalks in Broadway, or crowds, wherever he happened to find them, and these were usually the workers of minority races—he would become livid with anger and rage.[68]

In a letter to Winfield Townley Scott, Sonia elaborates upon this comment:

> I reiterate once more, again on my solemn oath, that he became *livid with rage* at the foreign elements he would see in large number, especially at noon-time, in the streets of New York City, and I would try to calm his outbursts by saying: "You don't have to love them; but hating them so outrageously can't do any good." It was then that he said: "It is more important to know what to hate than it is to know what to love."[69]

Again, there is nothing here that need surprise us; but Lovecraft's attitude is nonetheless dismaying to present-day sensibilities. And yet, in spite of what his previous biographer, L. Sprague de Camp, has suggested, comments on aliens are relatively rare in the correspondence to his aunts during this period. One notorious passage deals with a trip Sonia and Lovecraft took to Pelham Bay Park, an enormous park in the far northeast corner of the Bronx, on the fourth of July: ". . . we formed the highest expectations of the rural solitudes we were about to discover. Then came the end of the line—&

disillusion. My Pete in Pegana, but what crowds! And that is not the worst . . . for upon my most solemn oath, I'll be shot if three out of every four persons—nay, full nine out of every ten—weren't flabby, pungent, grinning, chattering **niggers!"**[70] It is interesting to note that both Sonia and Lovecraft decided to make a hasty retreat—perhaps Sonia herself was not, at this time at least, as free from all racial prejudice as she seems to suggest in her memoir. A long letter in early January goes on at length about the fundamental inassimilability of Jews in American life, maintaining that "vast harm is done by those idealists who encourage belief in a coalescence which never can be." When he went on to note that "On our side there is a shuddering physical repugnance to most Semitic types"[71] (the "our" is an interesting rhetorical ploy), he unwittingly reached the heart of the issue, at least as far as he himself was concerned: in spite of all Lovecraft's talk about cultural inassimilability, what he really found offensive about foreigners (or, more broadly, non-"Aryans," since many of the ethnics in New York were already first- or second-generation immigrants) is the fact that they looked funny to him.

But some words must be said in Lovecraft's defence at this juncture. Although I do not wish to treat his racism until a slightly later stage (for it is only in the early 1930s that he attempted a more broad-based philosophical and cultural justification of his brand of racism), it can be said here that this long letter about Jews is singular even in the correspondence to Lillian; nothing like it comes up again. In fact Lillian at some later date must have herself had some reservations on the subject, perhaps worrying that Lovecraft would take some sort of verbal or physical action against Jews or other non-Nordics; for in late March Lovecraft wrote: "Incidentally—don't fancy that my nervous reaction against alien N.Y. types takes the form of conversation likely to offend any individual. One knows when & where to discuss questions with a social or ethnic cast, & our group is not noted for *faux pas*'s or inconsiderate repetitions of opinion."[72]

It is on this latter point that Lovecraft's supporters base one of their own defences. Frank Long declares: "During all those talks on long walks through the streets of New York and Providence, I never once heard him utter a derogatory remark about any member of a minority group who passed him on the street or had occasion to engage him in conversation, whose cultural or racial antecedents differed from his own."[73] If this is a contradiction with what Sonia had said, it may simply be that Lovecraft did

not feel it politic to say such things even in the presence of Long, in spite of the fact that Lovecraft in his early January letter to Lillian remarked:

> The only company for a regular conservative American is that formed by regular conservative Americans—well-born, & comfortably nurtured in the old tradition. That's why Belknap is about the only one of the gang who doesn't irritate me at times. He is *regular*—he connects up with innate memories & Providence experiences to such an extent as to seem a real person instead of a two-dimensional shadow in a dream, as more Bohemian personalities do.[74]

I am not sure Long would have welcomed this presumed compliment. In any event, it seems clear to me that Lovecraft may have at least considered taking more forceful action against foreigners than merely fulminating against them in letters, as a startling remark made six years later attests: "The population [of New York City] is a mongrel herd with repulsive Mongoloid Jews in the visible majority, and the coarse faces and bad manners eventually come to wear on one so unbearably that one feels like punching every god damn bastard in sight."[75] Nevertheless, this supposed absence of demonstrative behaviour—verbal or physical—on Lovecraft's part in connexion with non-Aryans is at the heart of a defence that Dirk W. Mosig made in a letter to Long, quoted by Long in his memoir. Mosig adduces three mitigating circumstances: 1) ". . . the word 'racist' carries today connotations quite different from the meaning the term had in the first third of the century"; 2) "Lovecraft, like anyone else, deserves to be judged by his behavior, rather than by private statements made with no intention to injure another"; 3) "HPL presented different poses or 'personas' to his various correspondents . . . It is likely that he . . . appeared to his aunts as they wished him to be, that some of his 'racist' statements were made, not out of deep conviction, but out of a desire to be congenial with the views held by others."[76]

I fear that none of these defences amount to much. Of course racism took on different, and more sinister, connotations after World War II, but I shall argue later that Lovecraft was simply behind the times intellectually in adhering to such views as the biological inferiority of blacks, the radical cultural inassimilability of different ethnic groups, and the racial and cultural coherence of various races, nationalities, or cultural entities. The gauge for Lovecraft's beliefs is not the commonality of people of his time (who were,

as are a good many today, frankly and openly racist) but the advanced intelligentsia, for most of whom the issue of race was simply of no consequence. And as for behaviour counting more than private statements, this is a truism; but Lovecraft cannot be acquitted of racism merely because he happened not to insult a Jew to his face or beat a black man with a baseball bat. The "private statements" conception carries over into Mosig's third point, which is that perhaps he was saying in his letters to his aunts only what they wished to hear; but this too can be seen to be quite false by anyone who reads the existing correspondence systematically. The long tirade about Jews in January 1926 was clearly not a response to anything Lillian had said, but was triggered almost incidentally by some clipping she had sent regarding the racial origin of Jesus. It is quite likely that both Lillian and Annie, old-time Yankees that they were, were sympathetic to Lovecraft's remarks and generally in tune with his beliefs on the subject; but Lillian's own reservations, as reflected in Lovecraft's response of late March, suggests that she did not feel nearly as vehemently on the issue as he did.

And, of course, Lovecraft's hostility was exacerbated by his increasingly shaky psychological state as he found himself dragging out a life in an unfamiliar, unfriendly city where he did not seem to belong and where he had little prospects for work or permanent comfort. Foreigners made convenient scapegoats, and New York City, then and now the most cosmopolitan and culturally heterogeneous city in the country, stood in stark contrast to the homogeneity and conservatism he had known in the first thirty-four years of his life in New England. The city that had seemed such a fount of Dunsanian glamour and wonder had become a dirty, noisy, overcrowded place that dealt repeated blows to his self-esteem by denying him a job in spite of his abilities and by forcing him to hole up in a seedy, mice-infested, crime-ridden dump where all he could do was write racist stories like "The Horror at Red Hook" as a safety-valve for his anger and despair.

Lovecraft was, however, not finished with creative work. Eight days after writing the story, on August 10, he began a long, lone evening ramble that led through Greenwich Village to the Battery, then to the ferry to Elizabeth, which he reached at 7 A.M. He purchased a 10¢ composition book at a shop, went to Scott Park, and wrote a story:

> Ideas welled up unbidden, as never before for years, & the sunny actual scene soon blended into the purple & red of a hellish midnight tale—a tale of cryptical horrors among tangles of antediluvian alleys in Greenwich Village—wherein I wove not a little poetick description, & the abiding terror of him who comes to New-York as to a faery flower of stone & marble, yet finds only a verminous corpse—a dead city of squinting alienage with nothing in common either with its own past or with the background of America in general. I named it "He" . . .[77]

It is interesting that in this instance Lovecraft had to leave New York in order to write about it; he had, according to his diary, first gone to Scott Park on June 13, and it became a favourite haunt. And if the above description sounds autobiographical, it is by design; for "He," while much superior to "The Horror at Red Hook," is as heart-wrenching a cry of despair as its predecessor—quite avowedly so. Its opening is celebrated:

> I saw him on a sleepless night when I was walking desperately to save my soul and my vision. My coming to New York had been a mistake; for whereas I had looked for poignant wonder and inspiration in the teeming labyrinths of ancient streets that twist endlessly from forgotten courts and squares and waterfronts to courts and squares and waterfronts equally forgotten, and in the Cyclopean modern towers and pinnacles that rise blackly Babylonian under waning moons, I had found instead only a sense of horror and oppression which threatened to master, paralyse, and annihilate me.

The power of this passage, of course, does not depend upon knowledge of Lovecraft's biography; but that knowledge will lend it an added poignancy in its transparent reflexion of Lovecraft's own mental state. The narrator goes on to say how the gleaming towers of New York had first captivated him, but that

> Garish daylight shewed only squalor and alienage and the noxious elephantiasis of climbing, spreading stone where the moon had hinted of loveliness and elder magic; and the throngs of people that seethed through the flume-like streets were squat, swarthy strangers with hardened faces and narrow eyes, shrewd strangers without dreams and without kinship to the scenes about them, who could never mean aught to a blue-eyed man of the old

> folk, with the love of fair green lanes and white New England village steeples in his heart.

Here is Lovecraft's sociology of New York: the immigrants who have clustered there really have no "kinship" with it because the city was founded by the Dutch and the English, and these immigrants are of a different cultural heritage altogether. This sophism allows Lovecraft to conclude that "this city of stone and stridor is not a sentient perpetuation of Old New York as London is of Old London and Paris of Old Paris, but that it is in fact quite dead, its sprawling body imperfectly embalmed and infested with queer animate things which have nothing to do with it as it was in life." The immigrants are now considered to be on the level of maggots.

Why, then, does not the narrator flee from the place? He gains some comfort from wandering along the older portions of the town, but all he can say in accounting for his staying is that "I . . . refrained from going home to my people lest I seem to crawl back ignobly in defeat." How faithful a reflection of Lovecraft's sentiments this is, it is difficult to say; but I shall have occasion to refer to this passage at a later time, especially in connexion with Sonia's response to it.

The narrator, like Lovecraft, seeks out Greenwich Village in particular; and it is here, at two in the morning one August night, that he meets "the man." This person has an anomalously archaic manner of speaking and is wearing similarly archaic attire, and the narrator takes him for a harmless eccentric; but the latter immediately senses a fellow antiquarian. The man leads him on a circuitous tour of old alleys and courtyards, finally coming to "the ivy-clad wall of a private estate," where the man lives. Can this place be specified? At the end of the story the narrator finds himself "at the entrance of a little black court off Perry Street"; and this is all the indication we need to realise that this segment of the tale was clearly inspired by a very similar expedition Lovecraft took on August 29, 1924—a "lone tour of colonial exploration" that led to Perry Street, "in an effort to ferret out the nameless hidden court which the Evening Post had written up that day. . . . I found the place without difficulty, and enjoyed it all the more for having seen its picture. These lost lanes of an elder city have for me the utmost fascination . . ."[78] Lovecraft is referring to an article in the *New York Evening Post* for August 29, in a regular column entitled "Little Sketches About Town." This column contained both a line drawing of the "lost lane" in Perry Street and a brief writeup: "Everything about it is lost—name, country, identification of

any sort. Its most prominent feature, an old oil lamp by a pair of crooked cellar steps, looks as if it came, after many years of shipwrecked isolation, from the Isle of Lost Ships, and feels more helplessly out of place than it can express."[79] A tantalising description indeed—no wonder Lovecraft promptly went out in search of it. He claimed to have found the lane or alley with ease; indeed, both the drawing and the mention in the article that the lane is on Perry Street past Bleecker make it quite clear that the reference is to what is now labelled 93 Perry Street, an archway that leads to a lane between three buildings still very much like that pictured in the article. What is more, according to an historical monograph on Perry Street, this general area was heavily settled by Indians (they had named it Sapohanican), and moreover, a sumptuous mansion was built in the block bounded by Perry, Charles, Bleecker, and West Fourth Streets sometime between 1726 and 1744, being the residence of a succession of wealthy citizens until it was razed in 1865.[80] Lovecraft almost certainly knew the history of the area, and he has deftly incorporated it into his tale.

And yet, it is critical to the logic of the tale that the man's residence itself cannot be found with ease. The man takes the narrator on a deliberately convoluted circuit that destroys the latter's sense of direction—at one point the two of them "crawled on hands and knees through a low, arched passage of stone whose immense length and tortuous twistings effaced at last every hint of geographical location I had managed to preserve." This action is vital to the incursion of fantasy, for in a story so otherwise realistic in its topography some zone of mystery is required for the unreal to be situated.

There is one further tantalising autobiographical connexion—the fact that Lovecraft and Sonia, on an earlier voyage of exploration of the colonial parts of Greenwich Village earlier in August 1924, actually met an elderly gentleman who led them to certain hidden sites they would otherwise not have seen. Here is Lovecraft's description:

> Falling into a conversation with the chrysostomic gentleman of leisure above-mention'd, we learned much of local history, including the fact that the houses in Milligan Court were originally put up in the late 1700's by the Methodist Church, for the poorer but respectable families of the parish. Continuing his expositions, our amiable Mentor led us to a seemingly undistinguished door within the court, and through the dim hallway beyond to a back door. Whither he was taking us, we

> knew not; but upon emerging from the back door we paus'd in delighted amazement. There, excluded from the world on *every* side by sheer walls and house facades, was *a second hidden court or alley,* with vegetation growing here and there, and on the south side a row of simple Colonial doorways and small-pan'd windows!! . . . Beholding this ingulph'd and search-defying fragment of yesterday, the active imagination conjures up endless weird possibilities . . .[81]

The resemblance to the perambulation of the narrator of "He" into the hidden courtyard is uncanny—even if there was no crawling on hands and knees. And the "weird possibilities" of the site were certainly conveyed powerfully to Lovecraft, even if their expression was delayed a full year.

In the manor house the man begins to relate an account of his "ancestor," who practised some sort of sorcery, in part from knowledge gained from the Indians in the area; later he conveniently killed them with bad rum, so that he alone now had the secret information he had extracted from them. What is the nature of this knowledge? The man leads the narrator to a window and, parting the curtains, reveals an idyllic rural landscape—it can only be the Greenwich of the eighteenth century, magically brought in front of his eyes. The narrator, stunned, asks harriedly, "Can you—dare you—go *far?"* In scorn the man parts the curtains again and this time shows him a sight of the future:

> I saw the heavens verminous with strange flying things, and beneath them a hellish black city of giant stone terraces with impious pyramids flung savagely to the moon, and devil-lights burning from unnumbered windows. And swarming loathsomely on aërial galleries I saw the yellow, squint-eyed people of that city, robed horribly in orange and red, and dancing insanely to the pounding of fevered kettle-drums, the clatter of obscene crotala, and the maniacal moaning of muted horns whose ceaseless dirges rose and fell undulantly like the waves of an unhallowed ocean of bitumen.

It is not to be denied that there is a racialist element here also—the "yellow squint-eyed people" can be nothing more or less than Orientals, who have now apparently overrun the city either by conquest or (worse, in Lovecraft's view) interbreeding with whites—but the image is compelling for all that. My feeling is that this scenario was derived from Lord Dunsany's picaresque

novel *The Chronicles of Rodriguez* (1922), in which Rodriguez and a companion make an arduous climb of a mountain to the house of a wizard, who in alternate windows unveils vistas of wars past and to come (the latter showing, of course, the titanic horrors of World War I, which lie far in the future from the mediaeval period in which the novel takes place).[82]

If Lovecraft had ended the tale here, it would have been a notable success; but he had the bad judgment to add a pulpish ending whereby the spirits of the murdered Indians, manifesting themselves in the form of a black slime, burst in on the pair and make off with the archaic man (who, of course, is himself the "ancestor"), while the narrator falls absurdly through successive floors of the building and then crawls out to Perry Street. It would still be a few years before Lovecraft would learn sufficient restraint to avoid bathos of this sort.

The final lines of the story are again poignant from an autobiographical perspective: "Whither *he* has gone, I do not know; but I have gone home to the pure New England lanes up which fragrant sea-winds sweep at evening." Thomas Malone of "The Horror at Red Hook" is sent to Chepachet, Rhode Island, on a vacation to recover from the shock of his ordeal; but here the narrator returns permanently to his home, and a more pitiable instance of wish-fulfilment would be hard to find. Nonetheless, "He" remains a quietly powerful tale for its brooding prose and its apocalyptic visions of a crazed future; and it is as tormented a cry from the heart as Lovecraft ever wrote.

Farnsworth Wright accepted "He," along with "The Cats of Ulthar," in early October, and it appeared in *Weird Tales* for September 1926. Strangely enough, Lovecraft had not yet submitted "The Shunned House" to Wright, but when he did so (probably in early September), Wright eventually turned it down on the grounds that it began too gradually.[83] Lovecraft did not make any notable comment on this rejection, even though it was the first rejection he had ever had from *Weird Tales* and the first (but by no means the last) that Farnsworth Wright had given. He spoke of retyping several earlier stories for Wright, and did send a batch of them in late September, and another batch in early October. Wright was also talking of compiling a volume of stories from *Weird Tales,* which would include "The Rats in the Walls";[84] but nothing came of this. The Popular Fiction Publishing Company did publish one book in 1927—*The Moon Terror,* with stories by A. G. Birch, Anthony M. Rud, Vincent Starrett, and Wright himself, all from

early issues of *Weird Tales*—but it was such a commercial disaster that no more books of the sort were issued.

The writing of "He," however, did not put an entire end to Lovecraft's fictional efforts. The Kalem meeting on Wednesday, August 12, broke up at 4 A.M.; Lovecraft immediately went home and mapped out "a new story plot—perhaps a short novel" which he titled "The Call of Cthulhu."[85] Although he confidently reported that "the writing itself will now be a relatively simple matter," it would be more than a year before he would write this seminal story. It is a little sad to note how Lovecraft attempted to justify his state of chronic unemployment by suggesting to Lillian that a lengthy story of this sort "ought to bring in a very decent sized cheque"; he had earlier noted that the projected Salem novelette or novel, "if accepted, would bring in a goodly sum of cash."[86] It is as if he was desperately seeking to convince Lillian that he was not a drain on her (and Sonia's) finances in spite of his lack of a regular position and his continual cafeteria-lounging with the boys.

Sometime in August Lovecraft received a plot idea from C. W. Smith, editor of the *Tryout.* The idea is spelled out in a letter to Clark Ashton Smith: ". . . an undertaker imprisoned in a village vault where he was removing winter coffins for spring burial, & his escape by enlarging a transom reached by the piling-up of the coffins."[87] This does not sound very promising; and the mere fact that Lovecraft chose to write it up at this time, even with the addition of a supernatural element, may suggest the relative impoverishment of his creative imagination in the atmosphere of New York. The resulting tale, "In the Vault," written on September 18, is poorer than "He" but not quite as horrendously bad as "The Horror at Red Hook"; it is merely mediocre.

George Birch is the careless and thick-skinned undertaker of Peck Valley, an imaginary town somewhere in New England. On one occasion he finds himself trapped in the receiving-tomb—where coffins ready for burial are being stored for the winter, until the ground is soft enough to dig—by the slamming of the door in the wind and the breaking of the neglected latch. Birch realises that the only way to get out of the tomb is to pile the eight coffins up like a pyramid and get out through the transom. Although working in the dark, he is confident that he has piled up the coffins in the sturdiest possible manner; in particular, he is certain that he has placed the well-made coffin of the diminutive Matthew Fenner on the very top, rather

than the flimsy coffin he had initially built for Fenner but which he later decided to use for the tall Asaph Sawyer, a vindictive man whom he had not liked in life. Ascending his "miniature Tower of Babel," Birch finds that he has to knock out some of the bricks around the transom in order for his large body to escape. As he is doing this, his feet fall through the top coffin and into the decaying contents within. He feels horrible pains in his ankles—they must be splinters or loose nails—but he manages to heave his body out the window and upon the ground. He cannot walk—his Achilles tendons have been cut—but he drags himself to the cemetery lodge, where he is rescued.

Later Dr Davis examines his wounds and finds them very unnerving. Going back to the receiving-tomb, he learns the truth: Asaph Sawyer was too big to fit into Matthew Fenner's coffin, so Birch had phlegmatically cut off Asaph's feet at the ankles to make the body fit; but he had not reckoned on Asaph's inhuman vengeance. The wounds in Birch's ankles are teeth marks.

This is nothing more than a commonplace tit-for-tat supernatural vengeance story. Clark Ashton Smith charitably wrote that "'In the Vault' . . . has the realistic grimness of Bierce";[88] there may well be a Bierce influence on this tale, but Bierce wrote nothing quite so simple-minded as this. Lovecraft attempts to write in a more homespun, colloquial vein—even going so far as to say, disingenuously, "Just where to begin Birch's story I can hardly decide, since I am no practiced teller of tales"—but the result is not successful. August Derleth developed an unfortunate fondness for this tale, so that it still stands embalmed among volumes of Lovecraft's "best" stories.

The tale's immediate fortunes were not very happy, either. Lovecraft dedicated the story to C. W. Smith, "from whose suggestion the central situation is taken," and it appeared in Smith's *Tryout* for November 1925. It was the last time that he would allow a new story (as opposed to an older, professionally rejected story) to appear first in an amateur journal. Of course Lovecraft also sought professional publication; and although it would seem that "In the Vault," in its limited scope and conventionally macabre orientation, would be ready-made for *Weird Tales,* Wright rejected it in November. The reason for the rejection, according to Lovecraft, is interesting: "its extreme gruesomeness would not pass the Indiana censorship."[89] The reference, of course, is to the banning of Eddy's "The Loved Dead," as Lovecraft makes clear in a later letter: "Wright's rejection of ["In the Vault"] was sheer nonsense—I don't believe any censor would

have objected to it, but ever since the Indiana senate took action about poor Eddy's 'Loved Dead', he has been in a continual panic about censorship."[90] Here then is the first—but not the last—instance where the apparent uproar over "The Loved Dead," however much or little it may have helped "rescue" *Weird Tales* in 1924, had a negative impact upon Lovecraft.

There was, however, better news from Wright. Lovecraft had evidently sent him "The Outsider" merely for his examination, as it was already promised to W. Paul Cook—apparently for the *Recluse,* which Cook had conceived around September.[91] Wright liked the story so much that he pleaded with Lovecraft to let him print it. Lovecraft managed to persuade Cook to release the story, and Wright accepted it sometime around the end of the year; its appearance in *Weird Tales* for April 1926 would be a landmark.

The rest of the year was spent variously in activity with the Kalems, in receiving out-of-town guests, and in solitary travels of an increasingly wider scope in search of antiquarian oases. Some guests had come earlier in the year: John Russell, Lovecraft's erstwhile *Argosy* nemesis and now a cordial friend, came for several days in April; Albert A. Sandusky showed up for a few days in early June. Now, on August 18, Alfred Galpin's wife, a Frenchwoman whom Galpin had married the year before while studying music in Paris, arrived; she would stay until the 20th, when she would move on to Cleveland. Sonia was in town, so the two of them took her out to dinner and a play before returning to 169 Clinton, where Mrs Galpin had agreed to take a room during her stay. The next morning, however, she complained bitterly of bedbugs, and in the evening moved to the Hotel Brossert in Montague Street. But she took in the Kalem meeting that day, as did Sonia: evidently the presence of an overseas guest caused a suspension of the "stag rule."

Lovecraft continued to act conscientiously as host to the Kalems on occasion, and his letters display how much he enjoyed treating his friends to coffee, cake, and other humble delectables on his best blue china. Indeed, McNeil had complained that some of the other hosts did not serve refreshments even though he always did, and Lovecraft was determined not to be lax in this regard. On July 29 he bought an aluminum pail for 49¢ with which to fetch hot coffee from the deli at the corner of State and Court Streets. He was forced to do this because he could not make coffee at home —either because he did not know how or because he had no heating

apparatus. He also invested in apple tarts, crumb cake (which Kleiner liked), and other comestibles. On one occasion Kleiner did not show up, and Lovecraft lugubriously noted: "The amount of crumb-cake remaining is prodigious, & there are four apple tarts—in fact, I can see my meals mapped out for me for two days!! Ironic circumstance—I got the crumb-cake especially for Kleiner, who adores it, & in the end he was absent; so that I, who don't particularly care for it at all, must swallow unending quantities of it in the interest of oeconomy!"[92] If any further indication of Lovecraft's poverty is needed, this must surely be it.

Some new colleagues emerged on Lovecraft's horizon about this time. One, Wilfred Blanch Talman (1904–1986), was an amateur who, while attending Brown University, had subsidised the publication of a slim volume of poetry entitled *Cloisonné and Other Verses* (1923)[93] and sent it to Lovecraft in July. (No copy of this book has, to my knowledge, surfaced.) The two met in late August, and Lovecraft took to him immediately: "He is a splendid young chap—tall, lean, light, & aristocratically clean-cut, with light brown hair & excellent taste in dress. . . . He is descended from the most ancient Dutch families of lower New York state, & has recently become a genealogical enthusiast."[94] Talman went on to become a reporter for the *New York Times* and later an editor of the *Texaco Star,* a paper issued by the oil company. He made random ventures into professional fiction, and would later have one of his stories subjected to (possibly unwanted) revision by Lovecraft. Talman was perhaps the first addition to the core membership of the Kalem Club, although he did not begin regular attendance until after Lovecraft had left New York.

A still more congenial colleague was Vrest Teachout Orton (1897–1986). Orton was a friend of W. Paul Cook and at this time worked in the advertising department of the *American Mercury.* Later he would achieve distinction as an editor at the *Saturday Review of Literature* and, still later, as the founder of the Vermont Country Store. For the time being he lived in Yonkers, but moved back to his native Vermont not long after Lovecraft's return to Providence. He visited Lovecraft at 169 Clinton on December 22, and they spent the rest of the afternoon and evening together—dining at Lovecraft's usual Brooklyn restaurant, John's, walking across the Brooklyn Bridge, and making their way to Grand Central Station, where Orton caught an 11.40 train back to Yonkers. Lovecraft was tremendously taken with him:

> No more likeable, breezy, & magnetic person ever existed than he. In person of smallish size; dark, slender, handsome, & dashing, he is clean-shaven of face & jauntily fastidious of dress . . . He confessed to 30 years, but does not look more than 22 or 23. His voice is mellow & pleasant . . . & his manner of delivery sprightly & masculine—the careless heartiness of a well-bred young man of the world. . . . A thorough Yankee to the bone, he hails from central Vermont, adores his native state and means to return thither in a year, & detests N.Y. as heartily as I do. His ancestry is uniformly aristocratic—old New England on his father's side, & on his mother's side New England, Knickerbocker Dutch, & French Huguenot.[95]

One almost gets the impression that Orton was the sort of person Lovecraft wished he were. Orton became perhaps the second honorary member of the Kalems, although his attendance at meetings was also irregular until after Lovecraft's departure from New York. Orton did a little literary work of his own—he compiled a bibliography of Theodore Dreiser, *Dreiserana* (1929), founded the *Colophon,* a bibliophiles' magazine, and later founded the Stephen Daye Press in Vermont, for which Lovecraft would do some freelance work—but he had little interest in the weird. Nevertheless, their mutual New England background and their loathing of New York gave the two men much to talk about.

Aside from activities with friends, Lovecraft engaged in much solitary travel in the latter half of 1925. Only three days after his all-night ramble that ended in Elizabeth on August 10–11, when he wrote "He," Lovecraft went there again on the night of August 14–15, this time proceeding on foot to the small towns of Union Center (now Union) and Springfield, several miles northwest of Elizabeth, and coming back through the communities of Galloping Hill Park, Roselle Park, and Rahway. (Lovecraft noted that, in returning to Scott Park in Elizabeth, he began another horror story;[96] but, if it was finished, as is unlikely, it does not survive.) This was an enormous distance to cover on foot, but Lovecraft was tireless in the hunt for antiquities.

On August 30 Lovecraft made his first visit to Paterson, to join Morton, Kleiner, and Ernest A. Dench in a nature hike with the Paterson Rambling Club. His response to the town itself was not favourable:

> Of the "beauty" of the town, nothing could be said without liberal draughts on the imagination—for it is certainly one of the dreariest, shabbiest, & most nondescript places it has ever been my misfortune to see. . . . Life seems mostly in the hands of Yankees & Germans, though a mongrel Italian & Slav element is indicated by the physiognomies of the repulsive rabble—the mill folk. . . . The town is said to have good parks, though I beheld none of them. Its hideous factory section is fortunately out of sight, across the river from the ordinary parts.[97]

I am not sure that things have gotten much better since. But the goal of the present journey was Buttermilk Falls, which proved to be no disappointment:

> There is a glorious picturesqueness & an ineffable majesty in such a spectacle—the precipitous cliff, the rifted rock, the limpid stream, & the titanic tiers of terraces flanked by massed slender columns of immemorial stone; all bathed in the abysmal hush & magical green twilight of the deep woods, where filtered sunlight dapples the leafy earth & transfigures the great wild boles into a thousand forms of subtle & evanescent wonder.

Once again Lovecraft demonstrates the keenest sensitivity to every sort of topographical stimulus—city or country, suburb or woodland, island or ocean. Only six days later, on September 5, Lovecraft, Loveman, and Kleiner undertook a late-night exploration into a region of Brooklyn not far from 169 Clinton—Union Place, a small cobblestoned street (now sadly demolished) that Lovecraft describes as follows:

> Litten only by the gibbous moon, & by a solitary lamp-post that flickered fantastically, there lay beyond that wooden tunnel a little realm apart—a brooding backwater of the 1850's, where in a quadrangle facing a central iron-railed bit of park stood side by side the high-stopped houses of elder days, each in its iron-fenced yard with garden or grass-plot, & totally innocent of the injudicious restorer's vandal touch. Silence rested soothingly on every hand, & the outer universe faded from consciousness as it retreated from sight. Here dreamed the past inviolate—leisurely, graceful & unperturbed; defying all that might occur in the seething hell of life beyond that protecting archway.[98]

Respites from New York could be found in the least expected places, and surprisingly close to home.

On September 9 Lovecraft and Loveman joined the Long family on a boat ride up the Hudson River to Newburgh, some twenty miles north of the city. Along the way they sailed by such towns as Yonkers, Tarrytown, and Haverstraw—the area Washington Irving had vivified in "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow" and other works. They had only forty minutes to explore Newburgh ("where colonial gables & twisting byways supply an atmosphere hardly to be duplicated this side of Marblehead"[99]), but they made the most of it. The return trip, on a different boat, was uneventful. On the 20th Lovecraft took Loveman on a tour of Elizabeth.

One of his most extensive trips of the season was a three-day trip to Jamaica, Mineola, Hempstead, Garden City, and Freeport on Long Island. Jamaica was then a separate community but is now a part of Queens; the other towns are in Nassau County, east of Queens. On September 27 Lovecraft went to Jamaica, which "utterly astonisht" him: "There, all about me, lay a veritable New-England village; with wooden colonial houses, Georgian churches, & deliciously sleepy & shady streets where giant elms & maples stood in dense & luxurious rows."[100] Things are, I fear, very different now. Thereafter he went north to Flushing, also once separate and also now part of Queens. This was a Dutch settlement (the name is an Anglicisation of Vlissingen), and it too retained gratifying touches of colonialism. (Today, I fear, it is one unending succession of cheap brick apartment buildings.) One structure in particular—the Bowne house (1661) at Bowne Street and 37th Avenue—he was particularly anxious to find, and had to ask many policemen (who "were not very good antiquarians, for none of them had either seen or heard of the place") to locate it at last; it delighted him, but I cannot ascertain whether he actually entered the building. He may not have done so, for it may not have been open as a museum as it is now. He stayed in Flushing till twilight, then returned home.

The next day he returned to Flushing and Jamaica, examining both sites in greater detail. The 29th, however, was his great Long Island journey. He first came to Jamaica, whereupon he caught a trolley for Mineola; his ultimate goal was Huntington, but having no map and not knowing the trolley system, he was unsure how to get there. The route to Mineola he found quite dull (it was "lined almost continuously with modern real-estate developments testifying mournfully alike to the spread of the city & to the

want of taste & ingenuity in the architects of small dwellings"[101]), and Mineola itself was scarcely less so. He proceeded to walk southward to Garden City, where he saw the extensive college-like brick buildings of Doubleday, Page & Co., now (after many years as Doubleday, Doran) simply Doubleday; the publisher has moved its editorial offices to Manhattan but still retains a considerable presence in its city of origin. Continuing southward on foot, he came to Hempstead, which captivated him utterly: "Enchantment reign'd supreme, for here dwelt the soul of antique New-England in all its fulness, unimpair'd by the tainting presence of a foreign Babylon some twenty or twenty-five miles to the east."[102] Once again it was the churches that delighted him—St George's Episcopal, Methodist, Christ's First Presbyterian, and others. He spent considerable time in Hempstead (which, alas, has changed quite considerably from the time Lovecraft saw it, and not for the better), then continued south on foot to Freeport, which he found pleasant but undistinguished from an antiquarian point of view. All this walking must have covered close to ten miles. Only at this point did he take a trolley for Jamaica and then an elevated back to Brooklyn. Five days later, on October 4, he took Loveman to Flushing and Hempstead (by trolley, this time).

With winter coming on, Lovecraft's trips perforce became fewer, although he visited Canarsie, Jamaica (where he saw the Rufus King Mansion, a magnificent 1750 gambrel-roofer with two ells that still stands), and Kew Gardens (a modern development in Queens with pleasing neo-Elizabethan architecture that still retains its charm today) on November 13, returning to Jamaica on the 14th and taking Loveman again to Flushing on the 15th.

The importance of these expeditions to Lovecraft's psyche can scarcely be overestimated. The shimmering skyscrapers of Manhattan had proven, upon closer examination, to be an oppressive horror; as he had noted when refusing the offer to edit *Weird Tales* in Chicago, "it is colonial atmosphere which supplies my very breath of life."[103] Lovecraft had, indeed, developed an uncanny nose for antiquity, whether it be in Manhattan, Brooklyn, or in the further reaches of the metropolitan area. The frequency with which he compares what he sees to New England may perhaps be understandable—New England always remained his frame of reference in these and most other matters—but can we detect an indirect plea to Lillian in them? Lovecraft had dutifully sent Lillian the three stories he had written in late

summer, one of which ("In the Vault") is actually set in New England, and the other two—"The Horror at Red Hook" and "He"—feature characters who either temporarily or permanently end up there.

Sonia was not doing especially well herself. In October she had lost the position in Cleveland—whether she quit or was fired is unclear—but seems to have found another job fairly quickly. This too, however, was unsatisfactory, since like its predecessor it was on a commission basis and therefore engendered fierce rivalry among the various salespeople.[104] In November Lovecraft spent the better part of four days writing or revising an article on salesmanship for Sonia. He now reported that her new job was going better, Sonia having made "a decided 'hit' in the educational department of the store" with an earlier article.[105] What store is this? Lovecraft specified in a later letter that it was Halle's, the leading department store in Cleveland. Halle Brothers Company had been founded in 1891 by Salmon P. and Samuel H. Halle. It originally manufactured hats, caps, and furs, but later became a department store that merely sold these items. In 1910 a large building at the corner of Euclid and East 12th Street was built; Sonia presumably worked here. She was hoping to come home for Christmas, but the work was so heavy that she made no trip to New York between October 18 and the middle of January 1926.

Lovecraft accordingly spent a very pleasant Thanksgiving with the amateur Ernest A. Dench and his family in Sheepshead Bay, Brooklyn. In late August he had gone there for a Blue Pencil Club meeting; the purported literary topic was Dench's newborn son, and Lovecraft—by now becoming rather wearied of these artificial calls for literary production—wrote the unwontedly pensive, brooding poem "To an Infant," which in long Swinburnian Alexandrines tells of the grimness of waking life and the power of dreams to overcome it. At Thanksgiving there was no call for prose or poetic contributions, and Lovecraft had an entertaining time with McNeil, Kleiner, Morton, and Pearl K. Merritt, the amateur whom Morton would soon marry.

Christmas was spent with the Longs. He arrived at 1.30 in the afternoon, wearing his best grey suit (the "triumph"), finding McNeil and Loveman already there. The Long parents had purchased silk handkerchiefs for all, each in accordance with the guest's individual taste: Lovecraft's was a subdued grey, while Long's was a fiery purple. After a lavish turkey dinner,

the party passed around a grab-bag consisting of useful items purchased from Woolworth's—things like shaving soap, a toothbrush (which Lovecraft later found too hard for his gums), talcum powder, and the like. After this there was a contest to see which guest could identify the greatest number of advertising illustrations taken from magazines. In spite of Lovecraft's avowed unfamiliarity with the popular magazines, he won the contest by identifying six out of twenty-five (Loveman and McNeil identified five, Long only three); as victor Lovecraft received a box of chocolate creams. All this sounds amusingly like a young boy's birthday party, but no doubt the guests took it in good spirit. A boring double-feature at the local cinema was followed by a light supper (with a lollypop on each plate!). Lovecraft came home at midnight.

After September Lovecraft lapsed again into literary quiescence. During the last three months of the year he wrote only an effective weird poem, "October" (October 18) and a pleasing birthday poem, "To George Willard Kirk" (November 24). Then, in mid-November, Lovecraft announced: "W. Paul Cook wants an article from me on the element of terror & weirdness in literature"[106] for his new magazine, the *Recluse.* He went on to say that "I shall take my time about preparing it," which was true enough: it would be close to a year and a half before he put the finishing touches on what would become "Supernatural Horror in Literature."

Lovecraft began the actual writing of the article in late December; by early January he had already written the first four chapters (on the Gothic school up to and including Maturin's *Melmoth and Wanderer*) and was reading Emily Brontë's *Wuthering Heights* preparatory to writing about it at the end of Chapter V;[107] by March he had written Chapter VII, on Poe;[108] and by the middle of April he had gotten "half through Arthur Machen" (Chapter X).[109] Lovecraft worked on the project in a somewhat peculiar way, alternately reading and writing on a given author or period. It is not entirely clear from his initial mention that Cook actually wished an historical monograph—an essay "on the element of terror & weirdness" could just as well have been theoretical or thematic—but Lovecraft clearly interpreted it this way. He justifies his compositional method—or, rather, declares it to be a matter of necessity—to Morton:

> With my rotten memory I lose the details of half the stuff I read in six months' or a year's time, so that in order to give any

> kind of intelligent comment on the high spots I selected, I had to give said spots a thorough re-reading. Thus I'd get as far as *Otranto* [Horace Walpole's *The Castle of Otranto*], and then have to rake the damn thing out and see what the plot really was. Ditto the *Old English Baron.* And when I came to *Melmoth* I carefully went over the two anthology fragments which constitute all I can get of it—it's a joke to consider the rhapsodies I've indulged in without having ever perused the opus as a whole! *Vathek* and the *Episodes of Vathek* came in for another once-over, and night before last I did *Wuthering Heights* again from kiver to kiver.[110]

Lovecraft was, indeed, at times scrupulous to a fault. He spent three days reading E. T. A. Hoffmann at the New York Public Library, even though he found him dull and, in his essay, dismissed him in half a paragraph as being more grotesque than genuinely weird. Of course, he took his short cuts, too: his remark above about the two "anthology excerpts" that were all he could get of Maturin's *Melmoth the Wanderer* refers to George Saintsbury's *Tales of Mystery* (1891), containing excerpts from Ann Radcliffe, M. G. Lewis, and Maturin, and Julian Hawthorne's magnificent ten-volume anthology, *The Lock and Key Library* (1909), which Lovecraft had obtained in one of his New York trips of 1922. He drew very heavily upon this latter compilation: the few scraps of Graeco-Roman weird literature he cites (insignificant things like the ghost story in Apuleius and Pliny's letter to Sura) come from this set, as do the four stories he cites by the French collaborators Erckmann-Chatrian.

Lovecraft had, of course, read much of the significant weird literature up to his time, but he was still making discoveries. Indeed, two of the writers whom he would rank very highly were encountered only at about this time. He first read Algernon Blackwood (1869–1951) as early as 1920, at the recommendation of James F. Morton; curiously, however, he did not care for Blackwood at all at this time: "I can't say that I am very much enraptured, for somehow Blackwood lacks the power to create a really haunting atmosphere. He is too diffuse, for one thing; and for another thing, his horrors and weirdness are too obviously symbolical—symbolical rather than convincingly outré. And his symbolism is not of that luxuriant kind which makes Dunsany so phenomenal a fabulist."[111] Lovecraft next mentioned him in late September 1924, when he reported reading *The Listener and Other Stories* (1907), containing "The Willows," "perhaps the most

devastating piece of supernaturally hideous suggestion which I have beheld in a decade."[112] In later years Lovecraft would unhesitatingly (and, I think, correctly) deem "The Willows" the single greatest weird story ever written, followed by Machen's "The White People." Blackwood does not come up for much mention again until early January 1926, but by then Lovecraft had read several of his other early collections—*The Lost Valley and Other Stories* (1910), *Incredible Adventures* (1914), and others. He had not yet read *John Silence—Physician Extraordinary* (1908), but would do so soon; finding some of the tales extremely powerful but in some cases marred by the stock use of the "psychic detective."

As with Machen and Dunsany, Blackwood is an author Lovecraft should have discovered earlier than he did. His first book, *The Empty House and Other Stories* (1906), is admittedly slight, although with a few notable items. *John Silence* became a bestseller, allowing Blackwood to spend the years 1908–14 in Switzerland, where he did most of his best work. *Incredible Adventures* (the very volume toward which Lovecraft was so lukewarm in 1920) is one of the great weird collections of all time; Lovecraft later said that it featured "a serious & sympathetic understanding of the human illusion-weaving process which makes Blackwood rate far higher as a creative artist than many another craftsman of mountainously superior word-mastery & general technical ability . . ."[113]

Blackwood was frankly a mystic. In his exquisite autobiography, *Episodes Before Thirty* (1923)—which completes that curious trilogy of great autobiographies by weird writers, with Machen's *Far Off Things* (1922) and Dunsany's *Patches of Sunlight* (1938)—he admitted to relieving the heavy and conventional religiosity of his household by an absorption of Buddhist philosophy, and he ultimately developed a remarkably vital and intensely felt pantheism that emerges most clearly in his novel *The Centaur* (1911), the central work in his corpus and the equivalent of a spiritual autobiography. In a sense Blackwood sought the same sort of return to the natural world as Dunsany. But because he was, unlike Dunsany, a mystic (and one who would, perhaps inevitably, later find himself attracted to occultism), he would see in the return to Nature a shedding of the moral and spiritual blinders which in his view modern urban civilisation places upon us; hence his ultimate goal was an expansion of consciousness that opened up to our perception the boundless universe with its throbbing presences. Several of his novels—notably *Julius LeVallon* (1916), *The Wave* (1916),

and *The Bright Messenger* (1921)—deal explicitly with reincarnation, in such a way as to suggest that Blackwood himself clearly believed in it.

Philosophically, therefore, Blackwood and Lovecraft were poles apart; but the latter never let that bother him (he was just as hostile to Machen's general philosophy), and there is much in Blackwood to relish even if one does not subscribe to his world view. But this philosophical divergence may account for Lovecraft's lack of appreciation of some of Blackwood's less popular works. In particular, the emotion of love figures heavily in such works as *The Wave, The Garden of Survival* (1918), and others; and it is not surprising that Lovecraft remained cold to them. More seriously, Blackwood's interest in children—in spite, or perhaps because, of his lifelong bachelorhood—is exemplified in such delicate works of pure fantasy as *Jimbo* (1909), *The Education of Uncle Paul* (1909), and several others; Lovecraft, although appreciating *Jimbo* keenly, tended to dismiss the others as intolerably whimsical and namby-pamby. The accusation may stand when dealing with such weak novels as *A Prisoner in Fairyland* (1913) or *The Extra Day* (1915), but it is unjust to Blackwood's finest works in this vein. Horror, in fact, is frequently not an explicit goal in Blackwood, who much more often sought to evoke the sensation of awe; this is what makes *Incredible Adventures* the masterwork that it is. Lovecraft would, in the end, attempt—and perhaps succeed—in doing the same thing in his later work. It was not long before Lovecraft was ranking Blackwood—correctly—as the leading weird writer of his time, superior even to Machen.

Montague Rhodes James (1862–1936) is a much different proposition. Weird writing represents a quite small proportion of his writing, and was indeed merely a diversion from his work as educator, authority on mediaeval manuscripts, and biblical scholar. His edition of the *Apocryphal New Testament* (1924) long remained standard. James took to telling ghost stories while at Cambridge, and his first tales were recited at a meeting of the Chitchat Society in 1893. He later became Provost of Eton and began telling his tales to his young charges at Christmas. They were eventually collected in four volumes: *Ghost-Stories of an Antiquary* (1904); *More Ghost Stories of an Antiquary* (1911); *A Thin Ghost and Others* (1919); and *A Warning to the Curious* (1925). This relatively slim body of work—which comprises less than 650 pages in the later omnibus, *The Collected Ghost Stories of M. R. James* (1931)—is nonetheless a landmark in weird literature. If nothing else, it represents the extreme refinement of the conventional ghost story,

and James's perfection of this form seems to have led directly to the evolution of the psychological ghost story in the hands of Walter de la Mare, Oliver Onions, and L. P. Hartley. James was a master at short story construction; the structure of some of his lengthier tales is at times so complex that there is an extreme disjunction between the actual chronological sequence of the story and its sequence of narration. James also was one of the few who could write in a fairly chatty, whimsical, and bantering style without destroying the potency of his horrors; Lovecraft, while admiring this feature in James, took care to warn younger associates not to try to duplicate it. Like Lovecraft and Machen, James has attracted a somewhat fanatical cadre of devotees. But in all honesty, much of James's work is thin and insubstantial: he had no vision of the world to put across, as Machen, Dunsany, Blackwood, and Lovecraft did, and many of his tales seem like academic exercises in shudder-mongering. Lovecraft seems first to have read James at the New York Public Library in mid-December 1925.[114] By late January 1926 he had read the first three collections and was looking forward to reading *A Warning to the Curious,* then just out. Although his enthusiasm for him was high at the time—"James' mastery of horror is almost unsurpassable"[115]—it would later cool off. Although in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" he would rank James as a "modern master," by 1932 he declared that "he isn't really in the Machen, Blackwood, & Dunsany class. He is the earthiest member of the 'big four.'"[116]

The structure of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" is exceptionally elegant. The ten chapters break down as follows:

I. Introduction
II. The Dawn of the Horror-Tale
III. The Early Gothic Novel
IV. The Apex of Gothic Romance
V. The Aftermath of Gothic Fiction
VI. Spectral Literature on the Continent
VII. Edgar Allan Poe
VIII. The Weird Tradition in America
IX. The Weird Tradition in the British Isles
X. The Modern Masters

The introduction lays down the theory of the weird tale as Lovecraft saw it. The next four chapters discuss the weird tale from antiquity to the end of the Gothic school in the early nineteenth century, after which a chapter focuses

on foreign weird fiction. Poe occupies a central place in the historical sequence, and his influence becomes evident in the final three chapters.

I have previously mentioned the relative paucity of criticism on weird fiction up to this time. Lovecraft read Edith Birkhead's *The Tale of Terror* (1921), a landmark study of Gothic fiction, in late November; and, in spite of August Derleth's statements to the contrary,[117] it is quite clear that Lovecraft borrowed heavily from this treatise in his chapters (II–V) on the Gothics, both in the structure of his analysis and in some points of evaluation. Lovecraft cites Birkhead by name, along with Saintsbury, at the end of chapter IV. Eino Railo's *The Haunted Castle* (1927) came out just about the time of Lovecraft's own essay; it is a very penetrating historical and thematic study that Lovecraft read with appreciation.

Conversely, the only exhaustive study of *modern* weird fiction was Dorothy Scarborough's *The Supernatural in Modern English Fiction* (1917), which Lovecraft would not read until 1932; but when he did so, he rightly criticised it as being overly schematic in its thematic analyses and hampered by an amusing squeamishness in the face of the explicit horrors of Stoker, Machen, and others. Lovecraft's essay, accordingly, gains its greatest originality as an historical study in its final six chapters. Even today very little work in English has been done on foreign weird writing, and Lovecraft's championing of such writers as Maupassant, Balzac, Erckmann-Chatrian, Gautier, Ewers, and others is pioneering. His lengthy chapter on Poe is, I think, one of the most perceptive short analyses ever written, in spite of a certain flamboyancy in its diction. Lovecraft could not summon up much enthusiasm for the later Victorians in England, but his lengthy discussions of Hawthorne and Bierce in chapter VIII are highly illuminating. And his greatest achievement, perhaps, was to designate Machen, Dunsany, Blackwood, and M. R. James as the four "modern masters" of the weird tale; a judgment that, in spite of the carpings of Edmund Wilson and others, has been justified by subsequent scholarship. Indeed, the only "master" lacking from this list is Lovecraft himself.

At this point it might be well to discuss in general how complete Lovecraft's treatise is. Critics have not been inclined to agree with Fred Lewis Pattee's dictum that it "has omitted nothing important":[118] Peter Penzoldt chided Lovecraft for not even mentioning Oliver Onions and Robert Hichens,[119] while Jack Sullivan has taken Lovecraft to task for his scanty mention of Le Fanu.[120] After my own recent rereading of Le Fanu's

largely verbose and unimaginative work, I am by no means ready to admit that Lovecraft is seriously in error here. It is true that he had not even read Le Fanu when he wrote the first version of his essay; at this time he knew him only by reputation. He later read Le Fanu's mediocre novel, *The House by the Churchyard* (1863) and had a justifiably low opinion of it. What work by Le Fanu deserves any attention at all is his short stories and novelettes, and these had evidently become quite scarce by the early twentieth century. When, in 1932, Lovecraft read "Green Tea" (Le Fanu's one unqualified masterwork) in Dorothy L. Sayers's *Omnibus of Crime* (1928), he still did not feel the need to revise his estimate significantly: "I at last have the 'Omnibus', & have read 'Green Tea'. It is certainly better than anything else of Le Fanu's that I have ever seen, though I'd hardly put it in the Poe-Blackwood-Machen class."[121]

But beyond even its perceptive discussions of individual writers, beyond the sure grasp it displays of the historical progression of the field—and recall that this was the *first* time when such an historical survey was attempted (Scarborough's was a thematic study)—"Supernatural Horror in Literature" gains its greatest distinction in its introduction, which simultaneously presents a defence of the weird tale as a serious literary mode and elaborates upon such earlier writings as the *In Defence of Dagon* essays in its clarification of what actually constitutes a weird tale. In the former task, Lovecraft declares resoundingly in the opening sentence that "The oldest and strongest emotion of mankind is fear, and the oldest and strongest kind of fear is fear of the unknown," a "fact" that "must establish for all time the genuineness and dignity of the weirdly horrible tale as a literary form"; he goes on to refer, with tart sarcasm, to the weird tale's struggle against "a naively insipid idealism which deprecates the aesthetic motive and calls for a didactic literature to 'uplift' the reader toward a suitable degree of smirking optimism." All this leads, as it did in *In Defence of Dagon,* to a champion of the weird as appealing largely "to minds of the requisite sensitiveness"; or, as he states at the end, "It is a narrow though essential branch of human expression, and will chiefly appeal as always to a limited audience with keen special sensibilities."

In defining the weird tale, Lovecraft has made contributions of lasting importance. A critical passage in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" attempts to distinguish between the weird and the merely grisly: "This type of fear-literature must not be confounded with a type externally similar but

psychologically widely different; the literature of mere physical fear and the mundanely gruesome." The mention of psychology is critical here, for it leads directly to Lovecraft's canonical definition of the weird tale:

> The true weird tale has something more than secret murder, bloody bones, or a sheeted form clanking chains according to rule. A certain atmosphere of breathless and unexplainable dread of outer, unknown forces must be present; and there must be a hint, expressed with a seriousness and portentousness becoming its subject, of that most terrible conception of the human brain—a malign and particular suspension or defeat of those fixed laws of Nature which are our only safeguard against the assaults of chaos and the daemons of unplumbed space.

It could well be said that this is nothing more than an after-the-fact justification of Lovecraft's own brand of cosmic horror; but I think it has a wider application than that. Essentially, Lovecraft is arguing that *supernaturalism* is central to the weird tale, because it is this that distinguishes weird fiction from all other types of literature, which deal strictly with what is possible and therefore have substantially different metaphysical, epistemological, and psychological overtones. Lovecraft does, in "Supernatural Horror in Literature," discuss a few instances of non-supernatural horror—Poe's "The Man of the Crowd," some of Bierce's grim tales of psychological suspense—but they are very few; and he explicitly segregates the *conte cruel*—defined as a story "in which the wrenching of the emotions is accomplished through dramatic tantalisations, frustrations, and gruesome physical horrors"—even though he himself admired many examples of it, such as the tales of Maurice Level, "whose very brief episodes have lent themselves so readily to theatrical adaptation in the 'thrillers' of the Grand Guignol."

In recent years a great deal of material published under the guise of weird fiction falls into the category of psychological suspense (or "dark suspense" or "dark mystery," to use once-fashionable if ill-defined terms). The springboard for much of this writing is Robert Bloch's *Psycho* (1959), certainly a very able piece of work; but more recent works—especially those that involve the already clichéd topos of the serial killer—do not seem to come to terms with either their generic or their ontological status. Are the writers of such works attempting to maintain that "gruesome physical horror" at times can become so extreme as to be emotionally or

metaphysically equivalent to supernatural horror? How are their works different from mere suspense stories? These questions remain unanswered, and until they are answered, Lovecraft's definition of the weird tale must stand.

Lovecraft admitted that the writing of this essay produced two good effects; first: "It's good preparation for composing a new series of weird tales of my own";[122] and second: "This course of reading & writing I am going through for the Cook article is excellent mental discipline, & a fine gesture of demarcation betwixt my aimless, lost existence of the past year or two & the resumed Providence-like hermitage amidst which I hope to grind out some tales worth writing."[123] The second effect is one more in a succession of resolutions to cease his all-day and all-night gallivanting with the gang and get down to real work; how successful this was, it is difficult to say, in the absence of a diary for 1926. As for the first effect, it came to fruition in late February, when "Cool Air" was apparently written.

"Cool Air" is the last and perhaps the best of Lovecraft's New York stories. It is a compact exposition of pure physical loathsomeness. The unnamed narrator, having "secured some dreary and unprofitable magazine work" in the spring of 1923, finds himself in a run-down boarding-house whose landlady is a "slatternly, almost bearded Spanish woman named Herrero" and occupied generally by low-life except for one Dr Muñoz, a cultivated and intelligent retired medical man who is continually experimenting with chemicals and indulges in the eccentricity of keeping his room at a temperature of about 55? by means of an ammonia cooling system. The narrator is impressed by Muñoz:

> The figure before me was short but exquisitely proportioned, and clad in somewhat formal dress of perfect cut and fit. A high-bred face of masterful though not arrogant expression was adorned by a short iron-grey full beard, and an old-fashioned pince-nez shielded the full, dark eyes and surmounted an aquiline nose which gave a Moorish touch to a physiognomy otherwise dominantly Celtiberian. Thick, well-trimmed hair that argued the punctual calls of a barber was parted gracefully above a high forehead; and the whole picture was one of striking intelligence and superior blood and breeding.

Muñoz, clearly, embodies Lovecraft's ideal type: a man who belongs both to the aristocracy of blood and the aristocracy of intellect; who is highly learned in his field but also dresses well. How can we not fail to recall Lovecraft's own lengthy tirades on the subject when he was deprived of his suits? We are, therefore, meant to sympathise wholly with Muñoz's plight, especially as he is clearly suffering from the effects of some horrible malady that struck him eighteen years ago. When, weeks later, his ammonia cooling system fails, the narrator undertakes a frantic effort to fix it, at the same time enlisting "a seedy-looking loafer" to keep the doctor supplied with the ice that he repeatedly demands in ever larger amounts. But it is to no avail: when the narrator finally returns from his quest to find air-conditioner repairmen, the boarding-house is in turmoil; and when he enters the room, he sees a "kind of dark, slimy trail [that] led from the open bathroom to the hall door" and that "ended unutterably." In fact, Muñoz died eighteen years before and had been attempting to keep himself functioning by artificial preservation.

There are no transcendent philosophical issues raised by "Cool Air," but some of the gruesome touches are uncommonly fine. When at one point Muñoz experiences a "spasm [that] caused him to clap his hands to his eyes and rush into the bathroom," we are clearly to understand that his excitement has caused his eyes nearly to pop out of his head. There is, to be sure, a perhaps deliberate undercurrent of the comic in the whole story, especially when Muñoz, now holed up in a bathtub full of ice, cries through his bathroom door, "More—more!"

Interestingly, Lovecraft later admitted that the chief inspiration for the tale was not Poe's "Facts in the Case of M. Valdemar" but Machen's "Novel of the White Powder,"[124] where a hapless student unwittingly takes a drug that reduces him to "a dark and putrid mass, seething with corruption and hideous rottenness, neither liquid nor solid, but melting and changing before our eyes, and bubbling with unctuous oily bubbles like boiling pitch."[125] And yet, one can hardly deny that M. Valdemar, the man who, after his presumed death, is kept alive after a fashion for months by hypnosis and who at the end collapses "in a nearly liquid mass of loathsome—of detestable putridity,"[126] was somewhere in the back of Lovecraft's mind in the writing of "Cool Air." This story, much more than "The Horror at Red Hook," is Lovecraft's most successful evocation of the horror to be found in the teeming clangour of America's only true megalopolis.

The setting of the tale is the brownstone occupied by George Kirk both as a residence and as the site of his Chelsea Book Shop at 317 West 14th Street (between Eighth and Ninth Avenues) in Manhattan. Kirk had left 169 Clinton Street as early as June 1925, after less than five months there. He first moved in with Martin and Sara Kamin, his partner, at 617 West 115th Street in Manhattan, and then, after a brief return to Cleveland, settled at the 14th Street boarding-house in August. Even this did not last long, for by October Kirk moved both his residence and his shop to 365 West 15th Street. Here he remained until he married Lucile Dvorak on March 5, 1927, then opening the Chelsea Book Shop at 58 West 8th Street and remaining there for more than a decade.[127]

Lovecraft therefore had access to the 14th Street residence only for about two months, but it was ample time for him to become familiar with it. Very shortly after Kirk moved in, Lovecraft described the place:

> . . . Kirk has hired a pair of immense Victorian rooms as combined office & residence. . . . It is a typical Victorian home of New York's "Age of Innocence", with tiled hall, carved marble mantels, vast pier glasses & mantel mirrors with massive gilt frames, incredibly high ceilings covered with stucco ornamentation, round arched doorways with elaborate rococo pediments, & all the other earmarks of New York's age of vast wealth & impossible taste. Kirk's rooms are the great ground-floor parlours, connected by an open arch, & having windows only in the front room. These two windows open to the south on 14th St., & have the disadvantage of admitting all the babel & clangour of that great crosstown thoroughfare with its teeming traffick & ceaseless street-cars.[128]

That last sentence clearly led to the resounding utterance near the beginning of "Cool Air": "It is a mistake to fancy that horror is associated inextricably with darkness, silence, and solitude. I found it in the glare of mid-afternoon, in the clangour of a metropolis, and in the teeming midst of a shabby and commonplace rooming-house . . ."

Even the ammonia cooling system used in the story has an autobiographical source. In August 1925 Lillian had told Lovecraft of a visit to a theatre in Providence, to which he replied: "Glad you have kept up with the Albee Co., though surprised to hear that the theatre is *hot.* They have a

fine ammonia cooling system installed, & if they do not use it it can only be through a niggardly sense of economy."[129]

> Farnsworth Wright incredibly and inexplicably rejected "Cool Air," even though it is just the sort of safe, macabre tale he would have liked. Perhaps, as with "In the Vault," he was afraid of its grisly conclusion. In any event, Lovecraft was forced to sell the story for a very low price to the short-lived *Tales of Magic and Mystery,* where it appeared in the March 1928 issue.

Sonia's one stay in New York during the first three months of 1926 occurred between roughly February 15 and March 5. This was, evidently, the first extended period she could get off from Halle's; and Lovecraft reported upon her departure that, if things went well at the department store, she was not expected to return until June.[130] Meanwhile Lovecraft himself finally secured some employment, even if it was of a temporary and, frankly, ignominious sort. In September Loveman had secured work at the prestigious Dauber & Pine bookshop at Fifth Avenue and 12th Street, and he convinced his superiors to hire Lovecraft as an envelope-addresser for three weeks, probably beginning on March 7. Lovecraft had helped Kirk out at this task on several occasions in 1925, doing the work for nothing because of Kirk's many kindnesses to him; indeed, on occasion several of the Kalems would address envelopes en masse, talking, singing old songs, and generally making an amusing evening of it. The pay at the Dauber & Pine job would be $17.50 per week. Lovecraft spoke of the enterprise as a lark ("Moriturus te saluto! Before the final plunge into the abyss I am squaring all my indebtedness to mankind, & will reply briefly to your appreciated note . . ."[131]); but in a later letter to Loveman, Sonia wrote: "I knew that when I was in Cleveland you managed to get a couple of weeks' work for H.P.L. addressing envelopes for Dauber & Pine catalogues. He worked just 2 weeks at $17 a week, and *hated* it."[132] I think Sonia is wrong about the duration of the job, since there are no letters to Lillian between March 6 and March 27; but she is probably right about Lovecraft's reaction to the work, as he never relished repetitive, mechanical tasks of this sort.

Lovecraft himself did not say anything to Lillian about liking or disliking the job. Perhaps he did not wish to seem unwilling to earn a living; but perhaps, by March 27, he had other things on his mind. His letter to Lillian of that date began:

> Well!!! All your epistles arrived & received a grateful welcome, but the third one was the climax that relegates everything else to the distance!! Whoop! Bang! I had to go on a celebration forthwith, . . . & have now returned to gloat & reply. A E P G's letter came, too—riotous symposium!! . . .
>
> And now about your invitation. Hooray!! Long live the State of Rhode-Island & Providence-Plantations!!![133]

In other words, Lovecraft had at last been invited to return to Providence.

17. Paradise Regain’d

(1926)

Writing to Arthur Harris in late July 1924, Lovecraft stated: "Though now in New York, I hope to return to Providence some day; for it has a quiet dignity I have never elsewhere observed save in some of the Massachusetts coast towns."[1] This is an anomalously early indication of his wish to come home, possibly belying the conventional wisdom that Lovecraft's "honeymoon" with New York lasted for at least half a year; and, in charity, we can assume that such a repatriation would also have included Sonia in some fashion or other. But the real saga of Lovecraft's efforts to return to Providence can be said to commence around April 1925, when he wrote to Lillian:

> As to trips— . . . I couldn't bear to see Providence again till I can be there for ever. When I do get home, I shall hesitate about going even to Pawtucket or East Providence, whilst the thought of crossing the line into Massachusetts at Hunt's Mills will fill me with positive horror! But a temporary glimpse would be like that of a distrest mariner swept by a storm within sight of his own harbour, then washed away again into the illimitable blackness of an alien sea.[2]

Lillian had clearly suggested that Lovecraft pay a visit, perhaps to relieve the tedium and even depression that his lack of work, his dismal Clinton Street apartment, and the rocky state of his marriage had engendered. Lovecraft's response is noteworthy: he does not say "if I get home," but "when I do get home," even though he surely knew that any immediate return was economically out of the question. The "alien sea" remark is also highly revealing: it can be nothing other than a reference to New York; and yet, for all his whining about the "aliens" in the city, it was Lovecraft who did not belong. In 1927 he wrote that "I was an unassimilated alien there,"[3] unaware that he has stumbled upon the heart of the matter.

When Lovecraft wrote in November 1925 that "My mental life is really at home"[4] in Providence, he was not exaggerating. For the entirety of his New York stay, he subscribed to the *Providence Evening Bulletin,* reading the *Providence Sunday Journal* (the *Bulletin* published no Sunday edition) along with the *New York Times* on Sunday. He went so far as to remark to Lillian that the *Bulletin* "is the only paper worth reading that I have ever seen."[5] He mentally attempted to stay in touch with Providence in other

ways, specifically by reading as many books on Providence history as he could. In February 1925 he acquired *Providence: A Modern City* (1909), edited by William Kirk, as well as a replacement copy of Henry Mann's *Our Police: A History of the Providence Police Force from the First Watchman to the Latest Appointee* (1889), an earlier copy of which he had let slip from his collection a little while before. Then, beginning in late July, he spent the better part of a month and a half making frequent trips to the genealogical reading room of the New York Public Library to read Gertrude Selwyn Kimball's *Providence in Colonial Times* (1912), an exhaustive history of the city in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries written by an acquaintance of Annie Gamwell's who had died in 1910.

But reading books was clearly not enough. I have already quoted Sonia's testy remark that Lovecraft held on to his Providence furniture "with a morbid tenacity." This is the subject of one of the most remarkable passages in Lovecraft's letters to his aunts, and an accurate gauge of his temper during the worst of his New York period. Lillian had made the comment (perhaps as a consequence of Lovecraft's long-winded account of purchasing his best suit) that "possessions are a burden"; Lovecraft, in August 1925, flung this remark back in her face:

> Each individual's reason for living is different . . . i.e., to each individual there is some one thing or group of things which form the focus of all his interests & nucleus of all his emotions; & without which the mere process of survival not only means nothing whatsoever, but is often an intolerable load & anguish. Those to whom old associations & possessions do not form this single interest & life-necessity, may well sermonise on the folly of "slavery to worldly goods"—so long as they do not try to enforce their doctrines on others.

And where does Lovecraft stand on the issue?

> It so happens that I am unable to take pleasure or interest in anything but a mental re-creation of other & better days—for in sooth, I see no possibility of ever encountering a really congenial milieu or living among civilised people with old Yankee historic memories again—so in order to avoid the madness which leads to violence & suicide I must cling to the few shreds of old days & old ways which are left to me. Therefore no one need expect me to discard the ponderous furniture & paintings & clocks &

> books which help to keep 454 always in my dreams. When they go, I shall go, for they are all that make it possible for me to open my eyes in the morning or look forward to another day of consciousness without screaming in sheer desperation & pounding the walls & floor in a frenzied clamour to be waked up out of the nightmare of "reality" & my own room in Providence. Yes—such sensitivenesses of temperament are very inconvenient when one has no money—but it's easier to criticise than to cure them. When a poor fool possessing them allows himself to get exiled & sidetracked through temporarily false perspective & ignorance of the world, the only thing to do is to let him cling to his pathetic scraps as long as he can hold them. They are life for him.[6]

A treatise could be written on this inexpressibly poignant passage. No more do we find the confident "when I do get home"; now Lovecraft sees "no possibility" of ever returning. How Lillian reacted to her only nephew speaking with apparent seriousness—or, at least, with extreme bitterness—about suicide and screaming and pounding the walls, it is not possible to say; indeed, it is a little strange that there seems to be no follow-up to this discussion in subsequent letters.

One may as well at this point address a very curious sidelight on this entire matter. Winfield Townley Scott claimed that, according to Samuel Loveman, Lovecraft during the latter part of his New York period "carried a phial of poison with him" (Loveman's words) so as to be able to put an end to his existence if things became too unbearable.[7] In all honesty, I find this notion entirely preposterous. I flatly believe that Loveman has made up this story—whether to blacken Lovecraft's reputation or for some other reason, I cannot say. Loveman turned against Lovecraft's memory later in life, largely on the belief that Lovecraft's anti-Semitism (about which he learned from Sonia as early as 1948, and perhaps from other sources earlier) made him a hypocrite. It is also possible that Loveman simply misunderstood something that Lovecraft had said—perhaps something meant as a sardonic joke. There is certainly no independent confirmation of this anecdote, and no mention of it by any other friend or correspondent; and one suspects that Lovecraft would have confided in Long more than in Loveman on a matter of such delicacy. I think it is quite out of character for Lovecraft to have come so close to suicide even during this difficult period; indeed, the general tenor of

his letters to his aunts, even taking into consideration such passages as I have quoted above, is by no means uniformly depressed or lugubrious. Lovecraft was making every effort within his power to adjust to his circumstances, and he was finding substantial relief from his miseries in antiquarian travels and in association with close friends.

But what about Sonia? The mention in the above letter of a "temporarily false perspective & ignorance of the world" can scarcely refer to anything other than Lovecraft's marriage, which he is now all but declaring a failure. It was at just about this time, or perhaps a little later, that George Kirk casually dropped this bombshell in a letter to his fiancée: "Don't dislike Mrs. L. She is, as I have said, at hospital. H more than intimated that they would separate."[8] This letter is undated, but it was probably written in the autumn of 1925. I do not know what the reference to Sonia's stay in the hospital could be. There is, of course, no allusion at all to such a thing in any of Lovecraft's letters to his aunts, not even toward the end of his New York stay. Indeed, when Lovecraft spoke either to his aunts or to others about a possible return to New England, he almost always spoke of a joint return. In June he writes to Moe: "The turmoil and throngs of N.Y. depress her, as they have begun to do me, and eventually we hope to clear out of this Babylonish burg for good. I . . . hope to get back to New England for the rest of my life . . ."[9]

The subject is not broached again in the surviving letters to Lillian until December:

> As for the matter of permanent locations—bless my soul! but S H would only too gladly coöperate in establishing me wherever my mind would be most tranquil & effective! What I meant by 'a threat of having to return to N.Y.' was the matter of industrial opportunity, as exemplified in the Paterson possibility; for in my lean financial state almost any remunerative opening would constitute something which I could not with any degree of good sense or propriety refuse. Now if I were still in N.Y., I could perhaps bear such a thing with philosophical resignation; but if I were back home, I could not possibly contemplate the prospect of leaving again. Once in New England, I must be able to stick there—thenceforward scanning Boston or Providence or Salem or Portsmouth for openings, rather than having my eyes on

> Manhattan or Brooklyn or Paterson or such distant & unfamiliar realms.[10]

This passage makes it clear that the matter had been discussed previously, but the quoted phrase "a threat of having to return to N.Y." appears in no surviving letter. In any event, it appears that Lillian had made a suggestion to relocate to New England, but only temporarily; and this is something Lovecraft could not have endured. He goes on to say that "S H fully endorses my design of an ultimate return to New England, & herself intends to seek industrial openings in the Boston district after a time," then proceeds to sing Sonia's praises in a touching manner in spite of its almost bathetic tone:

> S H's attitude on all such matters is so kindly & magnanimous that any design of permanent isolation on my part would seem little short of barbaric, & wholly contrary to the principles of taste which impel one to recognise & revere a devotion of the most unselfish quality & uncommon intensity. I have never beheld a more admirable attitude of disinterested & solicitous regard; in which each financial shortcoming of mine is accepted & condoned as soon as it is proved inevitable, & in which acquiescence is extended even to my statements . . . that the one *essential* ingredient of my life is a certain amount of quiet & freedom for creative literary composition . . . A devotion which can accept this combination of incompetence & aesthetic selfishness without a murmur, contrary tho' it must be to all expectations originally entertained; is assuredly a phenomenon so rare, & so akin to the historic quality of saintliness, that no one with the least sense of artistic proportion could possibly meet it with other than the keenest reciprocal esteem, respect, admiration, & affection . . .

What I believe has inspired this long-winded passage is a suggestion by Lillian that Lovecraft simply come home and forget about Sonia, leading Lovecraft to counter that he cannot countenance "any design of permanent isolation" from her given her boundlessly patient and understanding attitude. If this conjecture is correct, it lends further support to the belief that Lillian had opposed the marriage all along.

But after December, the issue of Lovecraft's return was evidently dropped, perhaps because all parties concerned were waiting to see whether

his possible securing of employment at Morton's museum in Paterson might eventuate. Three more months passed with no prospect of work for Lovecraft except a temporary job as envelope-addresser; and so, on March 27, he finally received the invitation to come home.

What, or who, was behind the invitation? Was it merely Lillian's decision? Did Annie add her vote? Were there others involved? Winfield Townley Scott spoke to Frank Long on this matter, and he writes as follows:

> Mr. Long says "Howard became increasingly miserable and I feared that he might go off the deep end. . . . So I wrote," Long continues, "a long letter to Mrs. Gamwell, urging that arrangements be set in motion to restore him to Providence . . . he was so completely wretched in New York that I was tremendously relieved when he boarded a Providence-bound train a fortnight later."[11]

Long told Arthur Koki the same thing about fifteen years later.[12] But in his 1975 memoir Long tells a different story:

> My mother quickly realized that his sanity might indeed be imperiled if another month passed without a prospect of rescue and wrote a long letter to his aunts, describing the situation in detail. I doubt whether Sonia even knew about that letter. At least she never mentioned it in recalling that particular period. Two days later a letter from Mrs. Clark arrived at the Brooklyn rooming house in the morning mail, accompanied by a railway ticket and a small check.[13]

So who wrote the letter, Long or his mother? The latter theory is not at all improbable: during Lillian's month or so in New York during December 1924 and January 1925, she and Lovecraft visited the Longs frequently; and it seems that a bond was established between these two elderly women whose son and nephew, respectively, were such close friends. Still, Long's earlier mentions that he wrote the letter may perhaps be more reliable; or perhaps both Long and his mother did so.

Long is, however, clearly wrong in one detail in his later memoir: a railway ticket could not have been included with Lillian's March letter to Lovecraft, for it was another week or so before Providence was actually decided upon as his ultimate haven. After making the preliminary invitation, Lillian had evidently suggested Boston or Cambridge as a more likely place for Lovecraft to find literary work. Lovecraft grudgingly admitted the

apparent good sense of this idea ("Naturally, since Providence is a commercial port whilst Cambridge is a cultural centre, the latter would be expected to fit a literarily inclined person much better"), but went on to maintain that "I am essentially a recluse who will have very little to do with people wherever he may be," and then, in words both poignant and a little sad, made a plea for residing in Providence:

> To all intents & purposes I am more naturally isolated from mankind than Nathaniel Hawthorne himself, who dwelt alone in the midst of crowds, & whom Salem knew only after he died. Therefore, it may be taken as axiomatic that the people of a place matter absolutely nothing to me except as components of the general landscape & scenery. . . . My life lies not among *people* but among *scenes*—my local affections are not personal, but topographical & architectural. . . . I am always an outsider—to all scenes & all people—but outsiders have their sentimental preferences in visual environment. I will be dogmatic only to the extent of saying that it is *New England* I *must* have—in some form or other. Providence is part of me—I *am* Providence . . . Providence is my home, & there I shall end my days if I can do so with any semblance of peace, dignity, or appropriateness. . . . Providence would always be at the back of my head as a goal to be worked toward—an ultimate Paradise to be regain'd at last.[14]

Whether this letter turned the trick or not, Lillian shortly afterward decided that her nephew should come back to Providence and not Boston or Cambridge. When the offer had first been made in late March, Lovecraft assumed that he might move into a room at Lillian's boarding-house at 115 Waterman Street; but now Lillian reported that she had found a place for both herself and Lovecraft at 10 Barnes Street, north of the Brown University campus, and asked Lovecraft whether she should take it. He responded with another near-hysterical letter:

> Whoopee!! Bang!! 'Rah!! For God's sake jump at that room without a second's delay!! I can't believe it—too good to be true! . . . Somebody wake me up before the dream becomes so poignant I can't bear to be waked up!!!
>
> Take it? Well, I should say so!! I can't write coherently, but I shall proceed at once to do what I can about packing. Barnes near

> Brown! What deep breaths I can take after this infernal squalor here!![15]

I have quoted these letters at such length—and several of them go on for pages in this vein—to display just how close to the end of his tether Lovecraft must have been. He had tried for two years to put the best face on things—had tried to convince Lillian, and perhaps himself, that his coming to New York was *not* a mistake—but when the prospect of going home was held out, he leaped at it with an alacrity that betrays his desperation.

The big question, of course, was where Sonia fit in—or, perhaps, whether she fit in. In his letter of April 1 he casually noted, "S H endorses the move most thoroughly—had a marvellously magnanimous letter from her yesterday"; and five days later he added briefly, "I hope she won't consider the move in too melancholy a light, or as anything to be criticised from the standpoint of loyalty & good taste."[16] I am not sure of the exact context or connotation of this remark. About a week later Lovecraft reported to Lillian that "S H has abandoned the immediate Boston plan, but will in all probability accompany me to Providence"[17]—although this means she will merely come back to Brooklyn to help him pack and accompany him home to get him ensconced in his new quarters; there was certainly no thought at this juncture of her actually living in Providence or working there.

And yet, such a course was clearly considered at some point—at least by Sonia, and perhaps by Lovecraft as well. She quotes the line from "He"—"I . . . still refrained from going home to my people lest I seem to crawl back ignobly in defeat"—which Cook had cited in his memoir, and adds tartly: "This is only part of the truth. He wanted more than anything else to go back to Providence but he also wanted *me* to come along, and this I could not do because there was no situation open there for me; that is, one fitting my ability and my need."[18] Perhaps the most dramatic passage in her entire memoir relates to this critical period:

> When he no longer could tolerate Brooklyn, I, myself, suggested that he return to Providence. Said he, "If we could but both return to live in Providence, the blessed city where I was born and reared, I am sure, there I could be happy." I agreed, "I'd love nothing better than to live in Providence if I could do my work there but Providence has no particular niche that I could fill." He returned to Providence himself. I came much later.

> H. P. lived in a large studio room at that time, where the kitchen was shared with two other occupants. His aunt, Mrs. Clark, had a room in the same house while Mrs. Gamwell, the younger aunt, lived elsewhere. Then we had a conference with the aunts. I suggested that I would take a large house, secure a good maid, pay all the expenses and have the two aunts live with us at no expense to them, or at least they would live better at no greater expense. H. P. and I actually negotiated the rental of such a house with the option to buy it if we found we liked it. H. P. was to use one side of it as his study and library, and I would use the other side as a business venture of my own. At this time the aunts gently but firmly informed me that neither they nor Howard could afford to have Howard's wife work for a living in Providence. That was that. I now knew where we all stood. Pride preferred to suffer in silence; both theirs and mine.[19]

This account is full of difficulties. First, it is clear that Sonia was not the one who "suggested that he return to Providence," otherwise Lovecraft would not have told Lillian repeatedly that she was merely "endorsing" the move. Second, it is not possible to ascertain exactly when this "conference" in Providence took place. Sonia goes on to say that she initially accepted a job in New York (having presumably given up the position at Halle's in Cleveland) so that she could be near Lovecraft and perhaps spend weekends in Providence, but that she received an offer of a job in Chicago that was too good to refuse. She therefore asked Lovecraft to come back to New York for a few days to see her off; and Lovecraft did indeed return to New York for a brief period in September, although Sonia claims she left for Chicago in July. It is possible, then, that the conference in Providence took place in early summer. Then again, Sonia's mention that she came to Providence "much later" may mean that she came only years later—perhaps as late as 1929, for it was only at this time that actual divorce proceedings, undertaken at Sonia's insistence, occurred.

The critical issue is the "pride" cited by Sonia. We here see the clash of cultures and generations at its clearest: on the one side the dynamic, perhaps domineering businesswoman striving to salvage her marriage by taking things into her own hands, and on the other side the Victorian shabby-genteel matrons who could not "afford" the social catastrophe of seeing their only nephew's wife set up a shop and support them in the very town where

the name of Phillips still represented something akin to an aristocracy. The exact wording of Sonia's comment is of note: it carries the implication that the aunts might have countenanced her opening a shop somewhere other than Providence.

Are the aunts to be criticised for their attitude? Certainly, many of those today who believe that the acquisition of money is the highest moral good that human beings can attain will find it absurd, incomprehensible, and offensively class-conscious; but the 1920s in New England was a time when standards of propriety meant more than an income, and the aunts were simply adhering to the codes of behaviour by which they had led their entire lives. If anyone is to be criticised, it is Lovecraft; whether he agreed with his aunts on the issue or not (and, in spite of his Victorian upbringing, my feeling is that at this time he did not), he should have worked a little harder to express his own views and to act as an intermediary so that some compromise could have been worked out. Instead, he seems to have stood idly by and let his aunts make all the decisions for him. In all honesty, it is highly likely that he really wished the marriage to end at this point—or, at the very least, that he was perfectly content to see it continue only by correspondence, as indeed it did for the next several years. All he wanted was to come home; Sonia could shift for herself.

How are we to judge Lovecraft's two-year venture into matrimony? There is, certainly, enough blame to spread to all parties: to the aunts for being cool to the entire matter and for failing to provide either financial or emotional support to the struggling couple; to Sonia for feeling that she could mould Lovecraft to suit her wishes; and, of course, to Lovecraft himself for being generally thoughtless, spineless, emotionally remote, and financially incompetent. There is nothing but circumstantial evidence for this first point; but let us consider the last two more carefully.

Sonia's memoir makes it clear that she found in Lovecraft a sort of raw material which she wished to shape to her own desires. The fact that a great many women enter into marriage with such conceptions is no great mitigating factor. I have already noted the seriocomic episode of Sonia forcing Lovecraft to get a new suit because she disliked the old-fashioned cut of his old ones. Recall also how she wished to get rid of his lean and hungry look by beefing him up. In a broader way she also wanted to remake his entire personality—ostensibly to benefit him, but really to make him

more satisfactory to herself. She bluntly declared that she initially wished Lovecraft and Loveman to meet in order to "cure" Lovecraft of his race prejudice; it would certainly have been a good thing if she had succeeded, but clearly that was beyond her powers. When discussing the nicknames Socrates and Xanthippe, she notes her belief in Lovecraft's "Socratic wisdom and genius" and goes on to say:

> It was *this* that I sensed in him and had hoped in time to humanize him further by encouraging him toward the wedded path of true love. I am afraid that my optimism and my excessive self-assurance misled me, and perhaps him, too. I had always admired great intellectuality perhaps more than anything else in the world (perhaps, too, because I lacked so much of it myself) and had hoped to lift H. P. out of his abysmal depths of loneliness and psychic complexes.[20]

This is the closest Sonia comes to admitting that she was partly to blame for the marriage's collapse. Whether her offhand psychoanalysis of Lovecraft has any merit, I shall not venture to say; probably she is right at least in noting his fundamental need for solitude and, perhaps, his inability (or unwillingness, if that does not amount to the same thing) to establish an intimate union with someone other than a close relative.

And yet, Sonia should have known what she was getting into. She states that, "early in the life of our romance,"[21] Lovecraft sent her a copy of George Gissing's *The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft* (1903); she does not give Lovecraft's reason for doing so, but he must have been attempting to supply at least some hints about his own character and temperament. Lovecraft, strangely enough, does not mention this book to any other correspondents, as far as I know; but that it contains many suggestive passages is unquestionable.

Gissing's novel is the purported first-person account of a struggling writer who, late in life, receives an unexpected inheritance that allows him to retire to the country. He spends his time writing offhandedly in a diary, and Gissing as "editor" presents a carefully selected and organised series of excerpts from it, arranged generally by the course of the four seasons. It is, indeed, a very poignant work—but, I think, only if one agrees with the views being expressed by Ryecroft. I suspect that many modern readers would find these views in various ways repulsive or at least antiquated. Sonia herself claims that there is in the novel the same attitude toward minorities that she

found in Lovecraft, but this is not one of its prominent features. What is more significant is Ryecroft's attitudes toward art and, by extension, society.

Ryecroft, although having spent much of his life writing articles for money, always hated such a life and now is in the position of scorning it. Writing is not, or ought not to be, a "profession": "Oh, you heavy-laden, who at this hour sit down to the cursed travail of the pen; writing, not because there is something in your mind, in your heart, which must needs be uttered, but because the pen is the only tool you can handle, your only means of earning bread!"[22] This leads more broadly to a scorn of the masses of humanity who read this lifeless work. "I am no friend of the people," he declares bluntly—a line that Sonia herself quotes in her memoir.[23] "Democracy," Ryecroft goes on in a passage that Lovecraft surely relished, "is full of menace to all the finer hopes of civilization . . ."[24]

In a more personal way, Ryecroft ruminates on himself and his capacity for emotion. Although he is himself a widower with a grown daughter, he declares: "Do I really believe that at any time of my life I have been the kind of man who merits affection? I think not. I have always been much too self-absorbed; too critical of all about me; too unreasonably proud."[25] Later on, in another passage that must have warmed Lovecraft's heart, Ryecroft defends prudishness:

> If by prude be meant a secretly vicious person who affects an excessive decorum, by all means let the prude disappear, even at the cost of some shamelessness. If, on the other hand, a prude is one who, living a decent life, cultivates, either by bent or by principle, a somewhat extreme delicacy of thought and speech with regard to elementary facts of human nature, then I say that this is most emphatically a fault in the right direction, and I have no desire to see its prevalence diminish.[26]

How can we not think of Lovecraft's letter to Sonia on the subject, in which sex is regarded as a momentary and irrational passion of youth which "mature middle age" should relinquish? How can we not recall Lovecraft's squeamishness at the mere mention of the word "sex"? Sonia rightly declared that the whole of *The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft* should be read to understand Lovecraft; in his attachment to his home, his disdain for society, his devotion to books, and in so many other ways Ryecroft seems an uncanny echo of Lovecraft, and one can imagine the latter's sense of wonder at reading a book that seemed to be laying bare his own inmost thoughts.

The point is, of course, that Sonia read *Ryecroft* and knew of Lovecraft's general unsuitability as a husband; but, as she declares, she overestimated her "self-assurance" and believed she could relieve his "complexes" and make him, if not a conventional bourgeois breadwinner—she surely knew he could never be that—at least a somewhat more outgoing, loving husband and an even more gifted writer than he was. I do not doubt that Sonia genuinely loved Lovecraft and that she went into the marriage with the best of intentions, and with the idea of bringing out what she felt was the best in her husband; but she really ought to have known that Lovecraft was not so easily malleable.

It seems hardly profitable at this juncture to blame Lovecraft for his many failings as a husband—nothing can be accomplished now by such a schoolmasterly attitude—but much in his behaviour is inexcusable. The most inexcusable, of course, is the decision to marry at all, a decision he made with very little awareness of the difficulties involved (beyond any of the financial concerns that emerged unexpectedly at a later date) and without any sense of how unsuited he was to be a husband. Here was a man with an unusually low sex drive, with a deep-seated love of his native region, with severe prejudice against racial minorities, suddenly deciding to marry a woman who, although several years older than he, clearly wished both a physical as well as intellectual union, and deciding also to uproot himself from his place of birth to move into a bustling, cosmopolitan, racially heterogeneous megalopolis without a job and, it appears, entirely content to be supported by his wife until such time as he got one.

Once actually married, Lovecraft displayed singularly little consideration for his wife. He found it much more entertaining to spend most of his evenings, and even nights, with the boys, and quickly ceased bothering to get home early so that he could go to sleep together with Sonia. He did make a concerted effort to find work in 1924, however bunglingly he set about it, but virtually gave up the attempt in 1925–26. Once he came to the realisation that married life did not suit him, he seems to have become entirely content —when Sonia was forced to move to the Midwest in 1925—to conduct a marriage at long distance by correspondence.

And yet, mitigating factors must be brought to bear. Once the glamour of New York wore off, Lovecraft's state of mind rapidly deteriorated. At what point did he sense that he had made a mistake? Did he come to believe that Sonia was in some way responsible for his plight? Perhaps it is not

surprising that he found more comfort in the presence of his friends than of his wife.

Three years after the débâcle Lovecraft pondered the whole matter, and to his words not much need be added. Although he later maintained the charade that the collapse of the marriage was "98% financial,"[27] he plainly admitted that a fundamental difference in character caused the breakup:

> I haven't a doubt but that matrimony can become a very helpful and pleasing permanent arrangement when both parties happen to harbour the potentialities of parallel mental and imaginative lives—similar or at least mutually comprehensible reactions to the same salient points in environment, reading, historic and philosophic reflection, and so on; and corresponding needs and aspirations in geographic, social, and intellectual milieu . . . With a wife of the same temperament as my mother and aunts, I would probably have been able to reconstruct a type of domestic life not unlike that of Angell St. days, even though I would have had a different status in the household hierarchy. But years brought out basic and essential diversities in reactions to the various landmarks of the time-stream, and antipodal ambitions and conceptions of value in planning a fixed joint milieu. It was the clash of the abstract-traditional-individual-retrospective-Apollonian aesthetic with the concrete-emotional-present-dwelling-social-ethical-Dionysian aesthetic; and amidst this, the originally fancied congeniality, based on a shared disillusion, philosophic bent, and sensitiveness to beauty, waged a losing struggle.[28]

Abstract as this sounds, it reveals a clear grasp of the fundamentals of the matter: he and Sonia were simply not temperamentally suited to each other. In theory Lovecraft conceded that some woman more similar to him, or to his mother and aunts, might make a suitable wife; but elsewhere in this same letter, while defending marriage as an institution, he virtually ruled it out for himself:

> . . . I've no fault to find with the institution, but think the chances of success for a strongly individualised, opinionated, and imaginative person are damn slender. It's a hundred to one shot that any four or five consecutive plunges he might make would turn out to be flivvers equally oppressive to himself and to his

> fellow-victim, so if he's a wise guy he "lays off" after the collapse of venture #1 . . . or if he's very wise he avoids even that! Matrimony may be more or less normal, and socially essential in the abstract, and all that—but nothing in heaven or earth is so important to the man of spirit and imagination as the inviolate integrity of his cerebral life—his sense of utter integration and defiant independence as a proud, lone entity face to face with the illimitable cosmos.

And that is about all that Lovecraft has to say on the matter.

As for Sonia herself, she is remarkably reticent—publicly, at least—on what she believed to be the causes of the marriage's failure. In her published memoir, she appears in some sense to lay the blame on Lillian and Annie for their unwillingness to allow her to set up a shop in Providence; but in an appendix to her memoir, titled "Re Samuel Loveman," she writes at length about the burgeoning of Lovecraft's racial prejudice while in New York and concludes, "If the truth be known, it was *this* attitude toward minorities and his desire to escape them that prompted him back to Providence."[29] This point is elaborated upon in a letter to Samuel Loveman, in which she disputes the belief (whether held by Loveman or not is unclear) that the marriage dissolved because of Lovecraft's inability to earn an income. "I did *not* leave him on account of non-providence, but chiefly on account of his harping hatred of J—s. This and this alone was the real reason."[30] This certainly seems unambiguous enough, and I think we are obliged to accept it as at least one reason—and perhaps the major one—for the collapse of the marriage. There were financial problems, there were temperamental differences; but overriding these, or exacerbating them, was, on the one side, Lovecraft's increasing hatred of New York and its denizens and, on the other side, Sonia's inability to relieve Lovecraft of his rooted prejudices.

What is more remarkable is that in later years Lovecraft would in many instances actually conceal the fact that he ever was married. When giving the essentials of his life to new correspondents, he would mention the New York episode but not Sonia or his marriage; and only if some correspondent bluntly and nosily asked him point-blank whether or not he was ever married would he admit that he was. A letter written to Donald Wandrei in February 1927 is typical: "A good nine-tenths of my best friends reside in New York from accident or necessity, & I thought three years ago that it was the logical place for me to settle—at least for several years. Accordingly I transferred

my belongings thither in March 1924, & remained till April 1926, at the end of which time I found I absolutely could stand the beastly place no longer."[31] Now Lovecraft is claiming that he came to New York only to be in close contact with "friends"! If this reticence to new colleagues in private correspondence is perhaps excusable (Lovecraft was under no obligation to tell of his personal affairs to anyone if he chose not to do so), it is perhaps less so when it is manifested in the formal autobiographical essays of the last ten years of his life. It is as if his marriage, and his entire New York stay, had never happened.

One subject on which Lovecraft never tired of expatiating was both the wretched state of his existence in New York, especially at Clinton Street, and more generally his loathing of the metropolis and everything it stood for. As for the first:

> The keynote of the whole setting—house, neighbourhood, and shop, was that of loathsome and insidious decay; masked just enough by the reliques of former splendour and beauty to add terror and mystery and the fascination of crawling motion to a deadness and dinginess otherwise static and prosaic. I conceived the idea that the great brownstone house was a malignly sentient thing—a dead, vampire creature which sucked something out of those within it and implanted in them the seeds of some horrible and immaterial psychic growth. Every closed door seemed to hide some brooding crime—or blasphemy too deep to form a crime in the crude and superficial calendar of earth. I never quite learned the exact topography of that rambling and enormous house. How to get to my room, and to Kirk's room when he was there, and to the landlady's quarters to pay my rent or ask in vain for heat until I bought an oil stove of my own—these things I knew, but there were wings and stairways that I never saw opened. I know there were rooms above ground without windows, and was at liberty to guess what might lie below ground.[32]

If there is a certain amount of playful hyperbole here, his other remarks are anything but playful:

> . . . in New York I could not live. Everything I saw became unreal & two-dimensional, & everything I thought & did became trivial & devoid of meaning through lack of any points of

> reference belonging to any fabric of which I could conceivably form a part. I was stifled—poisoned—imprisoned in a nightmare —& now not even the threat of damnation could induce me to dwell in the accursed place again.[33]

There is little here that is not found, for example, in the opening pages of "He"; but to read it in unvarnished form in letters, without even a thin veil of fictionalisation, is poignant. It is telling that Lovecraft never said anything like the above to Lillian until right at the end of his New York stay: would such an admission make it too clear that he was "crawling back ignobly in defeat"?

Lovecraft was, of course, at liberty to hate New York; where he seemed to commit a lapse of logic was in maintaining that all "normal" or healthy individuals ought to find the place unendurable. The underlying theme of these rants is, of course, the "foreigners" who have presumably overrun the city, although I do not believe that Lovecraft's sentiments can be reduced to simple racism; instead, the foreigners are the most noticeable symbol of New York's departure from the norms he had known all his life:

> In a colourless or monotonous environment I should be hopelessly soul-starved—New York almost finished me, as it was! I find that I draw my prime contentment from beauty & mellowness as expressed in quaint town vistas & in the scenery of ancient farming & woodland regions. Continuous growth from the past is a sine qua non—in fact, I have long acknowledged *archaism* as the chief motivating force of my being.[34]

Even here—or, rather, in his application of this credo to his discussions of New York—Lovecraft falls into a fallacy; for he imagines that New York's immigrants have somehow caused the city to deviate from its "natural" development, evidently by their mere presence (his continual contrasts of New York with Boston or Philadelphia, then still dominantly Anglo-Saxon, are noteworthy). At times this view becomes comically absurd: "New York represents such a stupendous ruin & decay—such a hideous replacement of virile & sound-heritaged stock by whipped, cringing, furtive dregs & offscourings—that I don't see how anyone can live long in it without sickening."[35] How remarkable that these whipped dregs have managed to overwhelm the virile Aryans!

But these rants really served a largely psychological purpose: New York is now the "other," a symbol of everything that is wrong with modern

American civilisation. It is not surprising that, although now once again ensconced in the comfortable and familiar haven of Providence, Lovecraft began in the late 1920s to develop his notions of the decline of the West—notions that his reading of Oswald Spengler's great work on the subject only helped to clarify and develop.

Meanwhile there was the actual move from Brooklyn to Providence to undertake. Lovecraft's letters to his aunts for the first half of April are full of mundane details on the matter—what moving company to hire, how to pack up his books and other belongings, when he will arrive, and the like. I have previously mentioned that Sonia was planning to come back to assist in the move; indeed, this whole issue led to another testy passage in her memoir. She quotes Cook's statement that the aunts "despatch[ed] a truck which brought Howard back to Providence lock, stock and barrel" and then says that she "came on a special trip from out of town to help him pack his things and saw to it that all was well before I left. And it was out of my funds that it was paid for, including his fare."[36] Sonia arrived on the morning of Sunday, April 11; that evening they went back to their old stamping-grounds in Flatbush, had ice cream, saw a movie, and came home late. The next day was similarly spent in frivolity, as the couple saw the film of *Cyrano de Bergerac* and dined at the Elysée on East 56th Street. Lovecraft admits that Sonia quite consciously wished "to remove to some extent my extreme disgust with N Y, & to substitute in my mind some more favourable parting impressions";[37] too little too late, but at least Lovecraft got a nice meal out of it (fruit cocktail, soup, lamb chop, french fries, peas, coffee, and a cherry tart).

The packing was all done by Tuesday the 13th, which left Lovecraft time to take in one final Kalem meeting at Long's on Wednesday. Morton, Loveman, Kirk, Kleiner, Orton, and Leeds came; Long's mother served dinner; and, as always, spirited conversation ensued. The meeting broke up at 11.30, and Lovecraft and Kirk decided to undertake one final all-night walking tour. They walked from Long's home (West End Avenue and 100th Street) to all the way down to the Battery. Lovecraft did not come home until 6 A.M., but got up at 10 A.M. to receive the movers.

Lovecraft's letter to Lillian of April 15 is the last letter we have prior to the move, so that the last two days are not entirely clear. He boarded a train (probably at Grand Central Station) in the morning of Saturday, April 17,

and arrived early in the afternoon. He tells the story inimitably in a letter to Long:

> Well—the train sped on, & I experienced silent convulsions of joy in returning step by step to a waking & tri-dimensional life. New Haven—New London—& then quaint *Mystic,* with its colonial hillside & landlocked cove. Then at last a still subtler magick fill'd the air—nobler roofs & steeples, with the train rushing airily above them on its lofty viaduct—*Westerly*—in His Majesty's Province of RHODE-ISLAND & PROVIDENCE-PLANTATIONS! GOD SAVE THE KING!! Intoxication follow'd—Kingston—East Greenwich with its steep Georgian alleys climbing up from the railway—Apponaug & its ancient roofs—Auburn—just outside the city limits—I fumble with bags & wraps in a desperate effort to appear calm—THEN—a delirious marble dome outside the window—a hissing of air brakes—a slackening of speed—surges of ecstasy & dropping of clouds from my eyes & mind—HOME—UNION STATION—***PROVIDENCE!!!!*** [38]

The printed text cannot tell the whole story, for as Lovecraft approaches the triumphant conclusion his handwriting begins to grow larger and larger, until that final word is nearly an inch high. It is symmetrically balanced by four exclamation marks and four underscores. Maurice Lévy is right to say of this passage: "There is something moving in the account he gives of this mythical return to his home, something that betrays a vital, primordial experience."[39]

This entire letter to Long, written two weeks after his return, is full of astonishing insights. In effect, Lovecraft was attempting to maintain that the two years spent in New York simply did not happen—that they were a "dream" and he had now simply waken up. To be sure, this was said with tongue in cheek, but there was clearly an undercurrent of sincerity to it: ". . . 1923—1924—1925—1926—1925—1924—1923—crash! Two years to the bad, but who the hell gives a damn? 1923 ends—1926 begins! . . . What does a blind spot or two in one's existence matter?" Perhaps Lovecraft should be allowed his moment of wish-fulfilment; in no long time he came to understand that he would have to come to terms with those two New York years and reshape his life accordingly. Much as he might yearn to return to the carefree state he enjoyed prior to his marriage, he knew it was only a

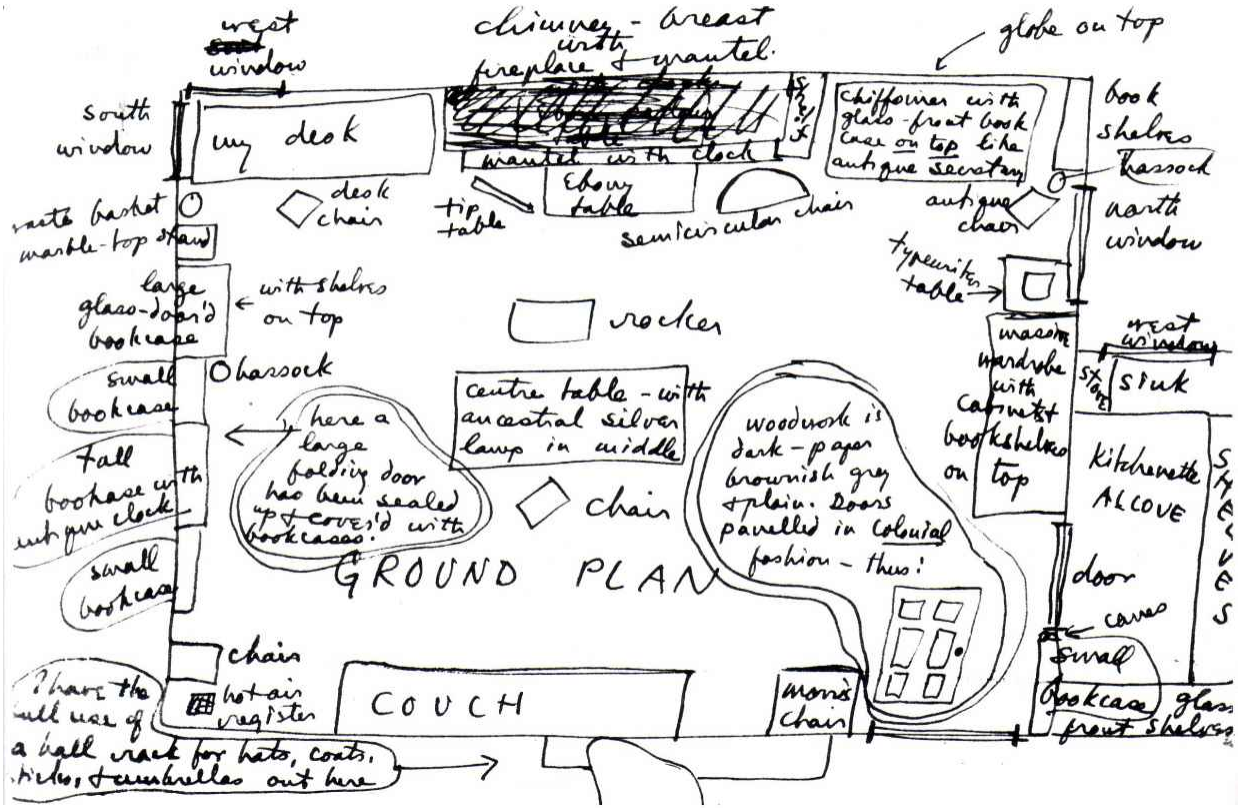
fantasy. The subsequent eleven years of his life will, I think, sustain the truth of W. Paul Cook's celebrated remark: "He came back to Providence a human being—and what a human being! He had been tried in the fire and came out pure gold."[40]

Did Sonia accompany Lovecraft back to Providence? His letter to Long is singularly ambiguous on the point: he never mentions her by name in the entire ten-page document, and the early pages of the account are entirely in the first-person singular; but perhaps Long knew the situation so well that Lovecraft did not feel the need to specify. From what I can ascertain, Sonia did not in fact come with him, but joined him a few days later to help him settle in; Lovecraft indirectly confirms this speculation by using the first-person plural in the latter stages of his letter to Long.[41] After spending a few days unpacking, Lovecraft and Sonia went to Boston on Thursday, April 22, and on the next day they explored Neutaconkanut Hill on the west side of Providence, where Lovecraft had gone in October 1923. It is not clear when Sonia returned to New York, but she probably did not stay for much more than a week.

Cook has another imperishable account of Lovecraft's settling in:

> I saw him in Providence on his return from New York and before he had his things all unpacked and his room settled, and he was without question the happiest man I ever saw—he could have posed for an "After Taking" picture for the medical ads. He *had* taken it and shown that he *could* take it. His touch was caressing as he put his things in place, a real love-light shone in his eyes as he glanced out of the window. He was so happy he hummed—if he had possessed the necessary apparatus he would have purred. [42]

In his letter to Long he supplies a detailed plan of the large one-bedroom apartment with kitchen alcove:



Further maps indicate what is on the walls, including a painting of a rose by his mother and other paintings (of a stag and a farmhouse), perhaps by Lillian, on the east wall (which also contains the door leading out of the apartment), the south wall entirely covered by bookshelves, and the west wall with its fireplace and mantelpiece. The house itself was built only around 1880, so it is by no means colonial; but it is a pleasing and spacious edifice. Like 598 Angell Street, it is a double house, the western half being 10 Barnes and the eastern half 12 Barnes. Lovecraft added further:

> The house is immaculately clean, & inhabited only by select persons of the good old families . . . The neighbourhood is perfect—all old Yankee Providence homes, with a good percentage of the houses colonial. . . . The vista from my pseudo-oriel desk corner is delectable—bits of antique houses, stately trees, urn-topp'd white Georgian fence, & an ecstatic old-fashion'd garden which will be breathlessly transporting in a couple of months.[43]

The view has not changed much since Lovecraft's day. The house, then as now, is a series of apartments.

We do not know much of what Lovecraft was doing during the first few months of his return to Providence. In April, May, and June he reported seeing several parts of the city he had never seen before, at least once in the company of Annie Gamwell, who at this time was residing at the Truman Beckwith house at College and Benefit Streets. He expressed the wish to do more reading and collecting of Rhode Island matter, and claimed that a special corner of the reference room of the Providence Public Library would now be among his principal haunts.

Providence enters into several of the tales he wrote in the year after his return; indeed, this period—from the summer of 1926 to the spring of 1927—represents the most remarkable outburst of fiction-writing in Lovecraft's entire career. Only a month after leaving New York he wrote to Morton: "It is astonishing how much better the old head works since its restoration to those native scenes amidst which it belongs. As my exile progressed, even reading and writing became relatively slow and formidable processes . . ."[44] Now things were very different: two short novels, two novelettes, and three short stories, totalling some 150,000 words, were written at this time, along with a handful of poems and essays. All the tales are set, at least in part, in New England.

First on the agenda is "The Call of Cthulhu," written probably in August or September. This story had, of course, been plotted a full year earlier, as recorded in his diary entry for August 12–13, 1925: "Write out story plot —'The Call of Cthulhu.'" The plot of this well-known tale does not need elaborate description. The subtitle, "(Found Among the Papers of the Late Francis Wayland Thurston, of Boston)," announces that the text is an account written by Thurston (who is otherwise not named in the text) of the strange facts he has assembled, both from the papers of his recently deceased grand-uncle, George Gammell Angell, and from personal investigation. Angell, a professor of Semitic languages at Brown University, had collected several peculiar pieces of data. First, he had taken extensive notes of the dreams and artwork of a young sculptor, Henry Anthony Wilcox, who had come to him with a bas-relief he had fashioned in his sleep on the night of March 1, 1925. The sculpture is of a hideous-looking alien entity, and Wilcox had reported that in the dream that had inspired it he had repeatedly heard the words *"Cthulhu fhtagn."* It was this that had piqued Angell's interest, for he had encountered these words or sounds years before, at a meeting of the American Archaeological Society, in which a New Orleans

police inspector named John Raymond Legrasse had brought in a sculpture very much like Wilcox's and claimed that it had been worshipped by a degraded cult in the Louisiana bayou which had chanted the phrase *"Ph'nglui mglw'nafh Cthulhu R'lyeh wgah'nagl fhtagn."* One of the cult members had proffered a translation of this outlandish utterance: "In his house at R'lyeh dead Cthulhu waits dreaming." Legrasse had also interviewed one cultist, a mestizo named Castro, who had told them that Cthulhu was a vast being that had come from the stars when the earth was young, along with another set of entities named the Great Old Ones; he was buried in the sunken city of R'lyeh and would emerge when the "stars were ready" to reclaim control of the earth. The cult "would always be waiting to liberate him." Castro points out that these matters are spoken of in the *Necronomicon* of the mad Arab Abdul Alhazred.

Thurston scarcely knows what to make of this bizarre material, but then by accident he finds a newspaper clipping telling of strange events aboard a ship in the Pacific Ocean; accompanying the article is a picture of another bas-relief very similar to that fashioned by Wilcox and found by Legrasse. Thurston goes to Oslo to talk with the Norwegian sailor, Gustaf Johansen, who had been on board the ship, but finds that he is dead. Johansen has, however, left behind an account of his experience, and this shows that he had actually encountered the dreaded Cthulhu when the city of R'lyeh rose from the sea-bottom as the result of an earthquake; but, presumably because the stars are not "ready," the city sinks again, returning Cthulhu to the bottom of the ocean. But the mere existence of this titanic entity is an unending source of profound unease to Thurston because it shows how tenuous is mankind's vaunted supremacy upon this planet.

It is difficult to convey by this bald summary the rich texture of this substantial work: its implications of cosmic menace, its insidiously gradual climax, its complexity of structure and multitude of narrative voices, and the absolute perfection of its style—sober and clinical at the outset, but reaching at the end heights of prose-poetic horror that attain an almost epic grandeur. It is his best tale since "The Rats in the Walls"; and, like that tale, it has an *assurance* and *maturity* lacking in much of his early work, but which would be the hallmarks of much of the writing of his last decade.

And yet, the origin of the tale goes back even beyond the evidently detailed plot-synopsis of 1925. Its kernel is recorded in an entry in his commonplace book (#25) that must date to 1920:

> Man visits museum of antiquities—asks that it accept a bas-relief *he has* just made—*old* & learned curator laughs & says he cannot accept anything so modern. Man says that
> 'dreams are older than brooding Egypt or the contemplative Sphinx or garden-girdled Babylonia'
> & that he had fashioned the sculpture in his dreams. Curator bids him shew his product, & when he does so curator shews horror, asks who the man may be. He tells modern name. "No—*before that"* says curator. Man does not remember except in dreams. Then curator offers high price, but man fears he means to destroy sculpture. Asks fabulous price—curator will consult directors. ¶ Add good development & describe nature of bas-relief.

This is, of course, the fairly literal encapsulation of a dream Lovecraft had in early 1920, which he describes at length in two letters of the period.[45] The entry has been quoted at length to give some idea of how tangential are the inspirational foci of some of Lovecraft's tales. Only a small portion of this plot-kernel has made its way into the finished story—indeed, nothing is left except the mere fashioning of a strange bas-relief by a modern sculptor under the influence of dreams. And although Wilcox actually says to Angell the words in the entry, this utterance is now (rightly) dismissed by the narrator as "of a fantastically poetic cast which must have typified his whole conversation."

The fact that Wilcox fashioned the bas-relief in his dreams is a tip of the hat to the dominant literary influence on the tale, Guy de Maupassant's "The Horla." It is not likely that Lovecraft had read this tale when he had the dream in 1920 inspiring the commonplace book entry, but he no doubt read it well before writing "The Call of Cthulhu": it is contained in both Joseph Lewis French's *Masterpieces of Mystery* (1920) and in Julian Hawthorne's *Lock and Key Library* (1909), the latter of which Lovecraft obtained on one of his New York trips of 1922. In "Supernatural Horror in Literature" he recognised that "The Horla" was Maupassant's masterpiece of horror and wrote of it: "Relating the advent to France of an invisible being who lives on water and milk, sways the minds of others, and seems to be the vanguard of a horde of extra-terrestrial organisms arrived on earth to subjugate and overwhelm mankind, this tense narrative is perhaps without a peer in its particular department . . ." Cthulhu is not, of course, invisible, but the rest of the description tallies uncannily with the events of the story. Some of the

reflections by Maupassant's narrator, especially after he reads a book that relates "the history and the manifestations of all the invisible beings which haunt mankind or appear in dreams," are potently cosmic:

> From reading this book I have the impression that man, ever since he has had the ability to think, has had the foreboding that a new creature would appear, someone stronger than himself, who would be his successor on earth. . . .
>
> . . . Who inhabits those far-away worlds? What forms of life, what kind of beings, what animals and plants live out there? And if there are thinking beings in those distant universes how much more do they know than we do? How much more can they do than we can? What things can they see which we do not even suspect? Just suppose that one of them were to travel through space one of these days and come to this earth to conquer it, rather like the Normans in the olden days crossing the sea to enslave weaker races!
>
> We are so feeble, so helpless, so ignorant, so tiny, we creatures on this whirling speck of mud and water . . .
>
> . . .
>
> Now I know. Now I can see the point. The rule of man has come to an end.[46]

No wonder Lovecraft was so taken with this tale. And yet, it must frankly be admitted that Lovecraft himself handles the theme with vastly greater subtlety and richness than Maupassant.

Robert M. Price points to another significant influence on the tale—theosophy.[47] The theosophical movement originated with Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, whose *Isis Unveiled* (1877) and *The Secret Doctrine* (1888–97) introduced this peculiar mélange of science, mysticism, and religion into the West. It would be cumbersome and profitless to give an elaborate account of theosophy; suffice it to say that its stories of such lost realms as Atlantis and Lemuria—derived from the supposedly ancient *Book of Dzyan,* of which *The Secret Doctrine* purports to be an immense commentary—fired Lovecraft's imagination. He read W. Scott-Elliot's *The Story of Atlantis and the Lost Lemuria* (1925; actually a compendium of two of Scott-Elliot's books, *The Story of Atlantis* [1896] and *The Lost Lemuria* [1904]) in the summer of 1926,[48] and actually mentions the book in his tale; the theosophists are themselves mentioned in the second paragraph. Castro's wild tale of the

Great Old Ones makes allusions to cryptic secrets that "deathless Chinamen" told him—a nod to the theosophists' accounts of Shamballah, the Tibetan holy city (the prototype of Shangri-La) whence the doctrines of theosophy are supposed to have originated. Lovecraft, of course, did not believe this nonsense; in fact, he has a little fun with it when he says: "Old Castro remembered bits of hideous legend that paled the speculations of theosophists and made man and the world seem recent and transient indeed."

Still another influence is "The Moon Pool," a novelette by A. Merritt (1884–1943). Lovecraft frequently rhapsodised about this tale, which was first published in the *All-Story* for June 22, 1918, and which takes place on or near the island of Ponape, in the Carolines. Merritt's mention of a "moon-door" that, when tilted, leads the characters into a lower region of wonder and horror seems similar to the huge door whose inadvertent opening by the sailors causes Cthulhu to emerge from R'lyeh.

It may be worth dwelling briefly on the autobiographical features in the story before discussing the larger issues it raises. Some of these are superficial, scarcely above the level of in-jokes: the name of the narrator, Francis Wayland Thurston, is clearly derived from Francis Wayland (1796–1865), president of Brown University from 1827 to 1855; Gammell is a legitimate variant of Gamwell, while Angell is at once the name of one of the principal thoroughfares and one of the most distinguished families in the city; Wilcox is a name from Lovecraft's ancestry;[49] and when Thurston finds the clipping about Johansen while "visiting a learned friend in Paterson, New Jersey; the curator of a local museum and a mineralogist of note," we scarcely need be told that James F. Morton is being alluded to. (One false autobiographical detail is the mestizo Castro, whose name was believed to derive from Adolphe Danziger de Castro, the friend of Bierce's who became Lovecraft's revision client; but Lovecraft did not come into contact with de Castro until late 1927.[50])

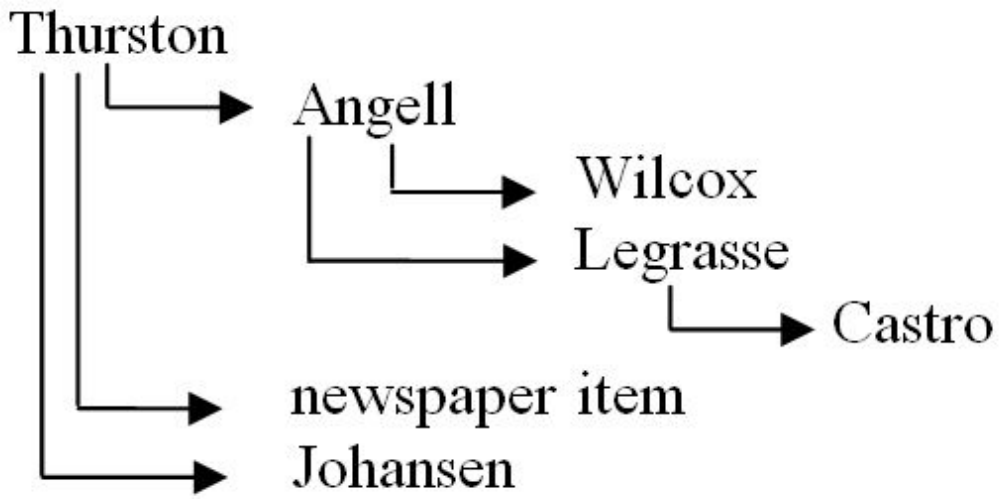
The residence of Wilcox at the Fleur-de-Lys building at 7 Thomas Street is a real structure, still standing; Lovecraft is correct in describing it scornfully as "a hideous Victorian imitation of seventeenth-century Breton architecture which flaunts its stuccoed front amidst the lovely colonial houses on the ancient hill, and under the very shadow of the finest Georgian steeple in America" (i.e., the First Baptist Church). The fact of Wilcox's occupation of this structure would have an interesting sequel a few years later.

The earthquake cited in the story is also a real event. There is no extant letter to Lillian for the precise period in question, but Lovecraft's diary entry for February 28, 1925 tells the story: "G[eorge] K[irk] & S[amuel] L[oveman] call— . . . —house shakes 9:30 p m . . ." Steven J. Mariconda, who has written exhaustively on the genesis of the tale, notes: "In New York, lamps fell from tables and mirrors from walls; walls themselves cracked, and windows shattered; people fled into the street."[51] It is of some note that the celebrated underwater city of R'lyeh, brought up by this earthquake, was first coined by Lovecraft as L'yeh.[52]

"The Call of Cthulhu" is manifestly an exhaustive reworking of one of Lovecraft's earliest stories, "Dagon" (1917). In that tale we have many nuclei of the later work—an earthquake that causes an undersea land mass to emerge to the surface; the notion of a titanic monster dwelling under the sea; and—although this is barely hinted in "Dagon"—the fact that an entire civilisation, hostile or at best indifferent to mankind, is lurking on the underside of our world. The last notion is also at the heart of Arthur Machen's tales of the "little people," and there is indeed a general Machen influence upon "The Call of Cthulhu"; especially relevant is "Novel of the Black Seal" (an episode in *The Three Impostors*), where Professor Gregg, like Thurston, pieces together disparate bits of information that by themselves reveal little but, when taken together, suggest an appalling horror awaiting the human race.

"The Call of Cthulhu" presents the greatest structural complexity of any of Lovecraft's tales written up to this point. It is one of the first tales to make extensive use of the narrative-within-a-narrative device—a device that ordinarily requires the novel for proper execution, but which Lovecraft utilises effectively here because of the extreme compression of the text. Lovecraft was, as a critic, aware of the aesthetic problems entailed by an improper or bungling use of the narrative within a narrative, in particular the danger of allowing the subnarrative to overwhelm the principal narrative and thereby destroy the unity of the tale as a whole. Of Maturin's *Melmoth the Wanderer* he remarked in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" that the subnarrative of John and Monçada "takes up the bulk of Maturin's four-volume book; this disproportion being considered one of the chief technical faults of the composition." (Lovecraft expresses himself here in this rather tentative way because, as we have seen, he himself never read the entirety of *Melmoth* but only two anthology excepts of it.) The means to avoid

structural awkwardness is to integrate the subsidiary narrative with the main narrative, specifically by allowing the protagonist of the main narrative to become intimately involved in the subsidiary one in some fashion or other. In "The Call of Cthulhu" we have a main narrator (Francis Wayland Thurston) paraphrasing the notes of a subsidiary narrator (George Gammell Angell) who himself paraphrases two accounts, that of the artist Wilcox and that of Inspector Legrasse, who paraphrases yet another subsidiary account, the tale of Old Castro; Thurston then comes upon a newspaper article and the Johansen narrative, items that confirm the truth of Angell's accounts. This entire sequence can be depicted by the following chart of narrative voices:



This structure never becomes clumsy because we are always aware of the presence of the principal narrator, who has both assembled the various other narratives and repeatedly comments upon them. It should be noted that the most "sensational" part of the story—Castro's wild tale of the Great Old Ones—is *three times* removed from the principal narrative: Thurston—Angell—Legrasse—Castro. This is narrative "distance" with a vengeance! When Lovecraft commented in later years that he felt the story was "cumbrous,"[53] he was perhaps referring to this structural complexity—a complexity, however, that is undeniably effective in conveying with power and verisimilitude what is to be conveyed.

But no analysis of "The Call of Cthulhu" can begin to convey the rich satisfaction one derives from reading it. From the celebratedly pensive

opening (itself a radical refinement of the opening of "Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family")—

> The most merciful thing in the world, I think, is the inability of the human mind to correlate all its contents. We live on a placid island of ignornace in the midst of black seas of infinity, and it was not meant that we should voyage far. The sciences, each straining in its own direction, have hitherto harmed us little; but some day the piecing together of dissociated knowledge will open up such terrifying vistas of reality, and of our frightful position therein, that we shall either go mad from the revelation or flee from the deadly light into the peace and safety of a new dark age.

—to Johansen's spectacular encounter with Cthulhu—

> There was a mighty eddying and foaming in the noisome brine, and as the steam mounted higher and higher the brave Norwegian drove his vessel head on against the pursuing jelly which rose above the unclean froth like the stern of a daemon galleon. The awful squid-head with writhing feelers came nearly up to the bowsprit of the sturdy yacht, but Johansen drove on relentlessly. There was a bursting as of an exploding bladder, a slushy nastiness as of a cloven sunfish, a stench as of a thousand opened graves, and a sound that the chronicler would not put on paper.

—the tale is a masterstroke of narrative pacing and cumulative horror. In 12,000 words it has all the density and complexity of a novel.

The true importance of "The Call of Cthulhu," however, lies not in its incorporation of autobiographical details nor even in its intrinsic excellence, but in its being the first significant contribution to what came to be called the "Cthulhu Mythos." This tale certainly contains many of the elements that would be utilised in subsequent "Cthulhu Mythos" fiction by Lovecraft and others. There is, to be sure, something going on in many of the tales of Lovecraft's last decade of writing: they are frequently interrelated by a complex series of cross-references to a constantly evolving body of imagined myth, and many of them build upon features—superficial or profound as the case may be—in previous tales. But certain basic points can now be made, although even some of these are not without controversy: 1) Lovecraft himself did not coin the term "Cthulhu Mythos"; 2) Lovecraft felt

that *all* his tales embodied his basic philosophical principles; 3) the mythos, if it can be said to be anything, is not the tales themselves nor even the philosophy behind the tales, but a series of *plot devices* utilised to convey that philosophy. Let us study each of these points further.

1) The term "Cthulhu Mythos" was invented by August Derleth after Lovecraft's death; of this there is no question. The closest Lovecraft ever came to giving his invented pantheon and related phenomena a name was when he made a casual reference to "Cthulhuism & Yog-Sothothery,"[54] and it is not at all clear what these terms really signify.

2) When Lovecraft claimed in a letter to Frank Belknap Long in 1931 that "'Yog-Sothoth' is a basically immature conception, & unfitted for really serious literature,"[55] he may perhaps have been unduly modest, whatever he may have meant by "Yog-Sothoth" here. But as the rest of this letter makes clear, Lovecraft was utilising his pseudomythology as one (among many) of the ways to convey his fundamental philosophical message, whose chief feature was cosmicism. This point is made clear in a letter written to Farnsworth Wright in July 1927 upon the resubmittal of "The Call of Cthulhu" to *Weird Tales* (it had been rejected upon initial submission):

> Now all my tales are based on the fundamental premise that common human laws and interests and emotions have no validity or significance in the vast cosmos-at-large. To me there is nothing but puerility in a tale in which the human form—and the local human passions and conditions and standards—are depicted as native to other worlds or other universes. To achieve the essence of real externality, whether of time or space or dimension, one must forget that such things as organic life, good and evil, love and hate, and all such local attributes of a negligible and temporary race called mankind, have any existence at all.[56]

This statement may perhaps not be capable of bearing quite the philosophical weight that some (including myself) have placed upon it: in spite of the very general nature of the first sentence, the bulk of the passage (and of the letter as a whole) deals with a fairly specific point of *technique* in regard to the weird or science fiction tale—the portrayal of extraterrestrials. What Lovecraft was combating was the already well-established convention (found in Edgar Rice Burroughs, Ray Cummings, and others) of depicting extraterrestrials as not merely humanoid in appearance but also in language,

habits, and emotional or psychological makeup. This is why Lovecraft created such an outré name as "Cthulhu" to designate a creature that had come from the depths of space.

And yet, the passage quoted above maintains that *all* Lovecraft's tales emphasise cosmicism in some form or another. Whether this is actually the case is another matter, but at least Lovecraft felt it to be so. If, then, we segregate certain of his tales as employing the framework of his "artificial pantheon and myth-background" (as he writes in "Some Notes on a Nonentity"), it is purely for convenience, with a full knowledge that Lovecraft's work is not to be grouped arbitrarily, rigidly, or exclusively into discrete categories ("New England tales," "Dunsanian tales," and "Cthulhu Mythos tales," as Derleth decreed), since it is transparently clear that these (or any other) categories are not well-defined nor mutually exclusive.

3) It is careless and inaccurate to say that the Lovecraft Mythos *is* Lovecraft's philosophy: his philosophy is mechanistic materialism and all its ramifications, and if the Lovecraft Mythos is anything, it is a series of plot devices meant to facilitate the expression of this philosophy. These various plot devices need not concern us here except in their broadest features. They can perhaps be placed in three general groups: a) invented "gods" and the cults or worshippers that have grown up around them; b) an ever-increasing library of mythical books of occult lore; and c) a fictitious New England topography (Arkham, Dunwich, Innsmouth, etc.). It will readily be noted that the latter two were already present in nebulous form in much earlier tales; but the three features only came together in Lovecraft's later work. Indeed, the third feature does not appreciably foster Lovecraft's cosmic message, and it can be found in tales that are anything but cosmic (e.g., "The Picture in the House"); but it is a phenomenon that has exercised much fascination and can still be said to be an important component of the Lovecraft Mythos. It is an unfortunate fact, of course, that these surface features have frequently taken precedence with readers, writers, and even critics, rather than the philosophy of which they are symbols or representations.

It is at this point scarcely profitable to examine some of the misinterpretations foisted upon the Lovecraft Mythos by August Derleth; the only value in so doing is to serve as a prelude to examining what the mythos actually meant to Lovecraft. The errors can be summed up under three heads: 1) that Lovecraft's "gods" are elementals; 2) that the "gods" can be

differentiated between "Elder Gods," who represent the forces of good, and the "Old Ones," who are the forces of evil; and 3) that the mythos as a whole is philosophically akin to Christianity.

It does not require much thought to deem all these points absurd and ridiculous. The notion that the "gods" are elementals seems largely derived from the fact that Cthulhu is imprisoned under water and that he resembles an octopus, and is therefore supposedly a water elemental; but the facts that he clearly came from *outer space,* and that he is *imprisoned* in sunken R'lyeh, must make it obvious both that his resemblance to an octopus is fortuitous and that water is not his natural element. Derleth's attempt to make elementals of the other "gods" is still more preposterous: Nyarlathotep is arbitrarily deemed an earth elemental and Hastur (a name that is only mentioned in passing once in "The Whisperer in Darkness") is claimed to be an air elemental. Not only does this leave out what are, by all accounts, the two chief deities in Lovecraft's pantheon—Azathoth and Yog-Sothoth—but Derleth is then forced to maintain that Lovecraft "failed" in some inexplicable fashion to provide a fire elemental, in spite of the fact that he was (in Derleth's view) working steadily on the "Cthulhu Mythos" for the last ten years of his life. (Derleth came to Lovecraft's rescue by supplying Cthugha, the purportedly missing fire elemental.)

Derleth, himself a practising Catholic, was unable to endure Lovecraft's bleak atheistic vision, and so he invented out of whole cloth the "Elder Gods" (led by the Britanno-Roman god Nodens) as a counterweight to the "evil" Old Ones, who had been "expelled" from the earth but are eternally preparing to reemerge and destroy humanity. Derleth seems to have taken a clue from *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* (which, paradoxically, he then refused to number among "tales of the Cthulhu Mythos") whereby Nodens seems to take Randolph Carter's side (although actually doing nothing for Carter) against the machinations of Nyarlathotep. In any case, this invention of "Elder Gods" allowed him to maintain that the "Cthulhu Mythos" is substantially akin to Christianity, therefore making it acceptable to people of his conventional temperament. An important piece of "evidence" that Derleth repeatedly cited to bolster his claims was the following "quotation," presumably from a letter by Lovecraft: "All my stories, unconnected as they may be, are based on the fundamental lore or legend that this world was inhabited at one time by another race who, in practising black magic, lost their foothold and were expelled, yet live on

outside ever ready to take possession of this earth again." In spite of its superficial similarity with the "All my stories . . ." quotation previously cited (with which Derleth was familiar), this quotation does not sound at all like Lovecraft—at any rate, it is entirely in conflict with the thrust of his philosophy. When Derleth in later years was asked to produce the actual letter from which this quotation was purportedly taken, he could not do so, and for a very good reason: it does not in fact occur in any letter by Lovecraft. It comes from a letter to Derleth written by Harold S. Farnese, the composer who had corresponded briefly with Lovecraft and who, evidently, severely misconstrued the direction of Lovecraft's work and thought very much as Derleth did.[57] But Derleth seized upon this "quotation" as a trump card for his erroneous views.

By now there is little need to rehash this entire matter: the work of such modern critics as Richard L. Tierney, Dirk W. Mosig, and others has been so conclusive that any attempt to overturn it can only seem reactionary. There is no cosmic "good vs. evil" struggle in Lovecraft's tales; there certainly are struggles between various extraterrestrial entities, but these have no moral overtones and are merely part of the history of the universe. There are no "Elder Gods" whose goal is to protect humanity from the "evil" Old Ones; the Old Ones were not "expelled" by anyone and are not (aside from Cthulhu) "trapped" in the earth or elsewhere. Lovecraft's vision is far less cheerful: humanity is *not* at centre stage in the cosmos, and there is no one to help us against the entities who have from time to time descended upon the earth and wreaked havoc; indeed, the "gods" of the Mythos are not really gods at all, but merely extraterrestrials who occasionally manipulate their human followers for their own advantage.

This last point is worth examining specifically in relation to "The Call of Cthulhu," to which we can now finally return. The outlandish story about the Great Old Ones told to Legrasse by Castro speaks of the intimate relation between the human cult of Cthulhu worshippers and the objects of their worship: "That cult would never die till the stars came right again, and the secret priests would take great Cthulhu from His tomb to revive His subjects and resume His rule of earth." The critical issue is this: Is Castro right or wrong? The tale when read as a whole seems emphatically to suggest that he is wrong; in other words, that the cult has nothing to do with the emergence of Cthulhu (it certainly did not do so in March 1925, since that was the product of an earthquake), and in fact is of no importance to Cthulhu and his

ultimate plans, whatever they may be. This is where Lovecraft's remark about the avoidance of human emotions as applied to extraterrestrials comes into play: we scarcely know anything about the real motivations of Cthulhu, but his pathetic and ignorant human worshippers wish to flatter their sense of self-importance by believing that they are somehow integral to his ultimate resurrection, and that they will share in his domination of the earth (if, indeed, that is what he wishes to do).

And it is here that we finally approach the heart of the Lovecraft Mythos. Lovecraft's remark in "Some Notes on a Nonentity" that it was Lord Dunsany "from whom I got the idea of the artificial pantheon and myth-background represented by 'Cthulhu', 'Yog-Sothoth', 'Yuggoth', etc." has either been misunderstood or ignored; but it is central to the understanding of what the pseudomythology meant to Lovecraft. Dunsany had created his artificial pantheon in his first two books (and only there), *The Gods of Pegana* (1905) and *Time and the Gods* (1906). The mere act of creating an imaginary religion calls for some comment: it clearly denotes some dissatisfaction with the religion (Christianity) with which the author was raised. Dunsany was, by all accounts, an atheist, although not quite so vociferous a one as Lovecraft; and his gods were, like Lovecraft's, *symbols* for some of his most deeply held philosophical beliefs. In Dunsany's case, these were such things as the need for human reunification with the natural world and distaste for many features of modern civilisation (business, advertising, and in general the absence of beauty and poetry in contemporary life). Lovecraft, having his own philosophical message to convey, used his imaginary pantheon for analogous purposes. But the critical revision Lovecraft made was to transfer this pantheon from an imaginary never-never-land into the objectively real world; in the process he effected a transition from pure fantasy to supernatural horror, making his entities much more baleful than they would have been had they populated a realm like Pegana.

What Lovecraft was really doing, in other words, was creating (as David E. Schultz has felicitously expressed it[58]) an *anti-mythology.* What is the purpose behind most religions and mythologies? It is to "justify the ways of God to men."[59] Human beings have always considered themselves at the centre of the universe; they have peopled the universe with gods of varying natures and capacities as a means of explaining natural phenomena, of accounting for their own existence, and of shielding themselves from the

grim prospect of oblivion after death. Every religion and mythology has established some vital connexion between gods and human beings, and it is exactly this connexion that Lovecraft is seeking to subvert with his pseudomythology. And yet, he knew enough anthropology and psychology to realise that most human beings—either primitive or civilised—are incapable of accepting an atheistic view of existence, and so he peopled his tales with cults that in their own perverted way attempted to reestablish that bond between the gods and themselves; but these cults are incapable of understanding that what they deem "gods" are merely extraterrestrial entities who have no intimate relation with human beings or with anything on this planet, and who are doing no more than pursuing their own ends, whatever they may happen to be.

"The Call of Cthulhu" is a quantum leap for Lovecraft in more ways than one. It is, most emphatically, the first of his tales that can genuinely be termed cosmic. "Dagon," "Beyond the Wall of Sleep," and a few others had dimly hinted at cosmicism; but "The Call of Cthulhu" realises the notion fully and satisfyingly. The suggestion that various phenomena all around the world—bas-reliefs found in New Orleans, Greenland, and the South Pacific, and carved by a Providence artist; anomalously similar dreams had by a wide variety of individuals—may all be insidiously linked to Cthulhu makes Thurston realise that it is not he alone who is in danger, but all the inhabitants of the globe. And the mere fact that Cthulhu still lives at the bottom of the ocean, even though he may be quiescent for years, decades, centuries, or millennia, causes Thurston to reflect poignantly: "I have looked upon all that the universe has to hold of horror, and even the skies of spring and the flowers of summer must ever afterward be poison to me." It is a sentiment that many of Lovecraft's later narrators will echo.

A rather trivial point, but one that has consumed the interest of readers and scholars alike, is the actual pronunciation of the word *Cthulhu.* In various letters Lovecraft appears to give somewhat different pronunciations; his canonical utterance, however, occurs in 1934:

> . . . the word is supposed to represent a fumbling human attempt to catch the phonetics of an *absolutely non-human* word. The name of the hellish entity was invented by beings whose vocal organs were not like man's, hence it has no relation to the human speech equipment. The syllables were determined by a physiological equipment wholly unlike ours, *hence could never*

> *be uttered perfectly by human throats*. . . . The actual sound—as nearly as human organs could imitate it or human letters record it—may be taken as something like *Khlûl'-hloo,* with the first syllable pronounced gutturally and very thickly. The *u* is about like that in *full;* and the first syllable is not unlike *klul* in sound, hence the *h* represents the guttural thickness.[60]

In contrast to this, we have the (clearly inaccurate) reports of certain colleagues who claim to have heard Lovecraft pronounce the word. Donald Wandrei renders it as *K Lütl-Lütl;*[61] R. H. Barlow supplies *Koot-u-lew.*[62] The one pronunciation we can definitively rule out—even though many continue unashamedly to use it—is *Ka-thul-hoo.* Wandrei states that he had initially pronounced it this way in Lovecraft's presence and received nothing but a blank stare in return.

From the cosmicism of "The Call of Cthulhu" to the apparent mundaneness of "Pickman's Model"—written, apparently, in early September—seems a long step backward; and while this tale cannot by any means be deemed one of Lovecraft's best, it contains some features of interest. The narrator, Thurber, writing in a colloquial style very unusual for Lovecraft, tells why he no longer associates with the painter Richard Upton Pickman of Boston, who has in fact recently disappeared. He had maintained relations with Pickman long after his other acquaintances dropped him because of the grotesqueness of his paintings, and so on one occasion he was taken to Pickman's secret cellar studio in the decaying North End of Boston, near the ancient Copp's Hill Burying Ground. Here were some of Pickman's most spectacularly daemonic paintings; one in particular depicts a "colossal and nameless blasphemy with glaring red eyes" nibbling at a man's head the way a child chews a stick of candy. A strange noise is heard, and Pickman harriedly maintains that it must be rats clambering through the underground tunnels honeycombing the area. Pickman, in another room, fires all six chambers of his revolver—a rather odd way to kill rats. After leaving, Thurston finds that he had inadvertently taken away a photograph affixed to the canvas; thinking it a mere shot of scenic background, he is horrified to find that it is a picture of the monster itself—*"it was a photograph from life."*

No reader is likely to have failed to predict this conclusion, but the tale is more interesting not for its actual plot but for its setting and its aesthetics. The North End setting is—or, rather, was—portrayed quite faithfully, right

down to many of the street names; but, less than a year after writing the story, Lovecraft was disappointed to find that much of the area had been razed to make way for new development. But the tunnels he describes are real: they probably date from the colonial period and may have been used for smuggling.[63] Lovecraft captures the atmosphere of hoary decay vividly, and in so doing he enunciates (through Pickman) his own views on the need for a long-established cultural heritage:

> "God, man! Don't you realise that places like that [the North End] weren't merely *made,* but actually *grew?* Generation after generation lived and felt and died there, and in days when people weren't afraid to live and feel and die. . . . No, Thurber, these ancient places are dreaming gorgeously and overflowing with wonder and terror and escapes from the commonplace, and yet there's not a living soul to understand or profit by them."

But "Pickman's Model" states other views close to Lovecraft's heart. In effect, it expresses, in fictionalised form, many of the aesthetic principles on weird fiction that Lovecraft had just outlined in "Supernatural Horror in Literature." When Thurber declares that "any magazine-cover hack can splash paint around wildly and call it a nightmare or a Witches' Sabbath or a portrait of the devil," he is repeating the many censures found in letters about the need for artistic *sincerity* and a knowledge of the true foundations of fear in the production of weird art. Thurber continues: ". . . only the real artist knows the actual anatomy of the terrible or the physiology of fear—the exact sort of lines and proportions that connect up with latent instincts or hereditary memories of fright, and the proper colour contrasts and lighting effects to stir the dormant sense of strangeness." This statement, *mutatis mutandis,* is Lovecraft's ideal of weird literature as well. And when Thurber confesses that "Pickman was in every sense—in conception and in execution—a thorough, painstaking, and almost scientific *realist,*" it is as if Lovecraft is reiterating his own recent abandonment of the Dunsanian prose-poetic technique for the "prose realism" that would be the hallmark of his later work.

"Pickman's Model," however, suffers from several flaws aside from its rather obvious plot. Thurber, although supposedly a "tough" guy who had been through the world war, expresses implausible horror and shock at Pickman's paintings: his reactions seem strained and hysterical, and make the reader think that he is not at all as hardened as he repeatedly claims he is.

And the colloquial style is—as is the case with "In the Vault"—simply not suited to Lovecraft, and it is well that he subsequently abandoned it except for his ventures into New England dialect.

I have remarked that "The Call of Cthulhu" was rejected by Farnsworth Wright of *Weird Tales;* Lovecraft gives little indication of Wright's reasons aside from reporting casually that Wright thought the tale "slow";[64] there is no suggestion that Wright felt it too bold or *outré* for his readership. It is, nevertheless, predictable that Wright would snap up the more conventional "Pickman's Model," publishing it in the October 1927 issue.

Interestingly enough, in late August 1926 Lovecraft submitted three tales to *Ghost Stories*—"In the Vault" and two others that he does not specify (they were probably "Cool Air" and "The Nameless City").[65] As with his submissions to *Detective Tales,* Lovecraft was attempting to secure another professional market aside from *Weird Tales;* perhaps the rejections of "The Shunned House" and "Cool Air" ("The Call of Cthulhu" was not rejected until October) were already beginning to rankle. *Ghost Stories* (1926–32) was, however, a very peculiar market for Lovecraft to approach: although it paid 2¢ a word,[66] it consisted largely of obviously fabricated "true-confession" accounts of encounters with ghostly phenomena, illustrated by equally contrived and doctored photographs. It did eventually publish random tales by Agatha Christie, Carl Jacobi, and a few other notables; Frank Long actually managed to sell a story to it ("The Man Who Died Twice" in the January 1927 issue), as did Lovecraft's later colleague Robert E. Howard. At this time it was not a pulp magazine, being issued in a large bedsheet format on slick paper. Lovecraft did in fact read a few issues; but he noted accurately: "It hasn't improved—& is about as poor as a magazine can be."[67] But it paid 2¢ a word! Alas, all three of Lovecraft's submissions not surprisingly came back.

Lovecraft was doing more than writing original fiction; he was no doubt continuing to make a meagre living by revision, and in the process was slowly attracting would-be weird writers who offered him stories for correction. He had done no work of this kind since revising four tales for C. M. Eddy, Jr, in 1923–24, but now in the summer of 1926 his new friend Wilfred B. Talman came to him with a story entitled "Two Black Bottles." Lovecraft found promise in the tale—Talman, let us recall, was only twenty-two at this time, and writing was by no means his principal creative outlet—

but felt that changes were in order. By October the tale was finished, more or less to both writers' satisfaction. The end result is nothing to write home about, but it managed to land with *Weird Tales* and appeared in the August 1927 issue.

"Two Black Bottles" is the first-person account of a man named Hoffman who comes to examine the estate of his uncle, Dominie Johannes Vanderhoof, who has just died. Vanderhoof was the pastor of the small town of Daalbergen in the Ramapo Mountains (located in northern New Jersey and extending into New York State), and strange tales were told of him. He had fallen under the influence of an aged sexton, Abel Foster, and had taken to delivering fiery and daemoniac sermons to an ever-dwindling congregation. Hoffman, investigating the matter, finds Foster in the church, drunk but also frightened. Foster tells a strange tale of the first pastor of the church, Dominie Guilliam Slott, who in the early eighteenth century had amassed a collection of esoteric volumes and appeared to practise some form of daemonology. Foster reads these books himself and follows in Slott's footsteps—to the point that, when Vanderhoof dies, he takes his soul from his body and puts it in a little black bottle. But Vanderhoof, now caught between heaven and hell, rests uneasily in his grave, and there are indications that he is trying to emerge from it. Hoffman, scarcely knowing what to make of this wild story, now sees the cross on Vanderhoof's grave tilting perceptibly. Then seeing two black bottles on the table near Foster, he reaches for one of them, and in a scuffle with Foster one of them breaks. Foster shrieks: "I'm done fer! That one in there was mine! *Dominie Slott took it out two hundred years ago!"* Foster's body crumbles rapidly into dust.

This tale is not entirely ineffective, and it actually works up a convincing atmosphere of clutching horror toward the end, largely via the colloquial patois of Foster's account. What is in question is the exact degree of Lovecraft's role in the shaping and writing of the story. Judging from his letters to Talman, it seems clear that Lovecraft has not only written some of the tale—especially the portions in dialect—but also made significant suggestions regarding its structure. Talman had evidently sent Lovecraft both a draft and a synopsis—or, perhaps, a draft of only the beginning and a synopsis of the rest. Lovecraft recommended a simplification of the structure so that all the events are seen through the eyes of Hoffman. In terms of the diction, Lovecraft writes: "As for what I've done to the MS.—I am sure

you'll find nothing to interfere with your sense of creation. My changes are in virtually every case merely verbal, and all in the interest of finish and fluency of style."[68]

In his 1973 memoir Talman reveals some irritation at Lovecraft's revisions: "He did some minor gratuitous editing, particularly of dialog . . . After re-reading it in print, I wish Lovecraft hadn't changed the dialog, for his use of dialect was stilted."[69] I think Talman's irritation has led him to downplay Lovecraft's role in the work, for there are many passages beyond the dialect portions that clearly reveal his hand. "Two Black Bottles"—like many of Lovecraft's later revisions—is just the sort of conventional horror tale that Farnsworth Wright liked, and it is not surprising that he readily accepted it while rejecting Lovecraft's own more challenging work.

A revision job of a very different sort on which Lovecraft worked in October was *The Cancer of Superstition.* Not much is known about this project, but it appears to have been a collaborative revision on which Lovecraft and C. M. Eddy worked at the instigation of Harry Houdini. Houdini performed in Providence in early October, at which time he asked Lovecraft to do a rush job—an article attacking astrology—for which he paid $75.00.[70] This article has not come to light; but perhaps it supplied the nucleus for what was apparently to be a full-length polemic against superstitions of all sorts. Houdini had, of course, himself written several works of this kind—including *A Magician among the Spirits* (1924), a copy of which he gave to Lovecraft with an inscription—but he now wished something with more scholarly rigour.

What survives of *The Cancer of Superstition* is an outline by Lovecraft and the opening pages of the book as written from the outline by Eddy. The outline predictably speaks of the origin of superstition in primitive times ("All superstitions & religious ideas due to primitive man's effort to assign causes for the natural phenomena around him"), drawing specifically upon Fiske's *Myths and Myth-Makers* and Frazer's *Golden Bough* as support. The surviving chapter is clearly by Eddy; I see little of Lovecraft's actual prose in it, although no doubt many of the facts cited in it were supplied by him.

But Houdini's sudden death on October 31 put an end to the endeavour, as Houdini's wife did not wish to pursue it. This may have been just as well, for the existing material is undistinguished and largely lacks the academic support a work of this kind needs. Lovecraft may have been well versed in

anthropology for a layman, but neither he nor Eddy had the scholarly authority to bring this venture to a suitable conclusion.

Shortly after the writing of "Pickman's Model," something strange occurred—Lovecraft was back in New York. He arrived no later than Monday, September 13, for he spoke of seeing a cinema with Sonia that evening. I am not certain of the purpose of this visit—it was clearly only a visit, and I suspect the impetus came from Sonia. As I have mentioned earlier, she reports that she had given up the Cleveland position and returned to New York so as to be closer to Providence (she was hoping to spend weekends there, but this does not seem to have happened); but then she was offered a position in Chicago that was too good to refuse, so she went there. She states that she was in Chicago from July to Christmas of 1926 except for fortnightly shopping trips to New York.[71] Either she is mistaken about the exact time of her departure for Chicago (it may have been September rather than July), or this was one of her shopping trips, and she may have called Lovecraft back to be with her. I suspect it is the latter, for Lovecraft spoke not of residing with her at any apartment but of taking a room with her at the Astor Hotel at Broadway and 44th Street in Manhattan, and he also said that on Tuesday morning "S H had to attend early to business, & was to be rushed so crowdedly that she could not have a moment of the leisure she planned."[72] Lovecraft, although of course still married to Sonia, seems to have reverted to the guest status he occupied during his 1922 visits: he spent most of his time with the gang, particularly Long, Kirk, and Orton.

On Sunday the 19th Lovecraft left for Philadelphia—Sonia had insisted on treating him to this excursion,[73] presumably as recompense for returning to the "pest-zone"—and he stayed there till Monday evening, doing a more thorough exploration of the Wissahickon valley than he had been able to do in 1924 and also seeing Germantown and Fairmount Park. Returning to New York, he attended a gang meeting on the 23rd at Long's, during which two odd things occurred: he, along with the other Kalems, listened to the Dempsey-Tunney fight on the radio, and he met Howard Wolf, a friend of Kirk's who was a reporter for the *Akron Beacon Journal.* Lovecraft seems to have felt that this was nothing more than a social call, but later he was astounded to find that Wolf had written an article on the meeting, and specifically on him, for the column Wolf conducted, "Variety." This article is one of the first—indeed, perhaps the very first—article on Lovecraft outside

of the amateur press or the weird fiction field; it is, accordingly, unfortunate that we do not know its exact date of appearance. I have had access only to a clipping of it; it seems to have appeared in the spring of 1927, as Lovecraft himself said that he did not secure the article until the spring of 1928, when Kirk, who had been carrying it around for a full year, gave it to him.

Wolf, referring to Lovecraft as a "still 'undiscovered' writer of horror stories whose work will stand comparison with any now being done in that field," noted that he and Lovecraft talked of weird fiction all evening long. He went on to say that over the next few months he read many back issues of *Weird Tales* and became more and more impressed with Lovecraft. "The Outsider" is "a genuine masterpiece"; "The Tomb" is "almost equally as good"; Wolf even had kind things to say about "The Unnamable" and "The Moon-Bog," although "The Temple" is "not so good." He concluded with a prophecy: "The man has never submitted his stories to a book publisher, I am told. Publisher's readers chancing on this are advised to induce him to collect his tales and offer them for publication. Any volume he might gather together would be a critical and probably a popular success." Neither Wolf nor Lovecraft could have known how long it would take for such an eventuality to occur.

Lovecraft stayed in New York until Saturday the 25th, when he came home by bus. Judging by his letters to his aunts, it was a pleasant enough fortnight, filled with the sightseeing and congregating with friends that had represented the one saving grace of his years in the metropolis. Both Lovecraft and Sonia must have been entirely aware that this was only to be a visit on his part.

With Annie Gamwell, Lovecraft made another excursion in late October, although this one was much closer to home. It was, in fact, nothing less than his first visit to his ancestral region of Foster since 1908. It is heartwarming to read Lovecraft's account of this journey, in which he not only absorbed the intrinsic loveliness of a rural New England he had always cherished but also reestablished bonds with family members who still revered the memory of Whipple Phillips: "Certainly, I was drawn back to the ancestral sources more vividly than at any other time I can recall; and have since thought about little else! I am infus'd and saturated with the vital forces of my inherited being, and rebaptis'd in the mood, atmosphere, and personality of sturdy New-England forbears."[74]

That Lovecraft had indeed "thought about little else" is evident in his next work of fiction, "The Silver Key," presumably written in early November. In this tale Randolph Carter—resurrected from "The Unnamable" (1923)—is now thirty; he has "lost the key of the gate of dreams" and therefore seeks to reconcile himself to the real world, which he now finds prosy and aesthetically unrewarding. He tries all manner of literary and physical novelties until one day he does find the key—or, at any rate, a key of silver in his attic. Driving out in his car along "the old remembered way," he goes back to the rural New England region of his childhood and, in some magical and wisely unexplained manner, finds himself transformed into a nine-year-old boy. Sitting down to dinner with his aunt Martha, Uncle Chris, and the hired man Benijah Corey, Carter finds perfect content as a boy who has sloughed off the tedious complications of adult life for the eternal wonder of childhood.

"The Silver Key" is generally considered a "Dunsanian" tale—on the sole ground that it is a work of dreamlike fantasy rather than a horror tale; but it has very little to do with Dunsany except perhaps in its use of fantasy for philosophical purposes, and even this may not derive directly from Dunsany. And yet, one further fascinating and subtle connexion may exist. Carter, having lost the dreamworld, resumes the writing of books (recall that he was a writer of horror tales in "The Unnamable"); but it brings him no satisfaction:

> . . . for the touch of earth was upon his mind, and he could not think of lovely things as he had done of yore. Ironic humour dragged down all the twilight minarets he reared, and the earthy fear of improbability blasted all the delicate and amazing flowers in his faery gardens. The convention of assumed pity spilt mawkishness on his characters, while the myth of an important reality and significant human events and emotions debased all his high fantasy into thin-veiled allegory and cheap social satire. . . . They were very graceful novels, in which he urbanely laughed at the dreams he lightly sketched; but he saw that their sophistication had sapped all their life away.

This, I believe, is an encapsulation of Lovecraft's own attitude toward Dunsany's later work, which he believed to be lacking in the childlike wonder and high fantasy that characterised his early period. I have already

cited an astute remark Lovecraft made in a 1936 letter, but it is worth quoting again:

> As he [Dunsany] gained in age and sophistication, he lost in freshness and simplicity. He was ashamed to be uncritically naive, and began to step aside from his tales and visibly smile at them even as they unfolded. Instead of remaining what the true fantaisiste must be—a child in a child's world of dream—he became anxious to show that he was really an adult good-naturedly pretending to be a child in a child's world.[75]

What "The Silver Key" really is, of course, is a very lightly fictionalised exposition of Lovecraft's own social, ethical, and aesthetic philosophy. It is not even so much a story as a parable or philosophical diatribe. He attacks literary realism ("He did not dissent when they told him that the animal pain of a stuck pig or dyspeptic ploughman in real life is a greater thing than the peerless beauty of Narath with its hundred carven gates and domes of chalcedony . . ."), conventional religion (". . . he had turned to the gentle churchly faith endeared to him by the naive trust of his fathers . . . Only on closer view did he mark the starved fancy and beauty, the stale and prosy triteness, and the owlish gravity and grotesque claims of solid truth which reigned boresomely and overwhelmingly among most of its professors . . . It wearied Carter to see how solemnly people tried to make earthly reality out of old myths which every step of their boasted science confuted . . ."), and bohemianism (". . . their lives were dragged malodorously out in pain, ugliness, and disproportion, yet filled with a ludicrous pride at having escaped from something no more unsound than that which still held them. They had traded the false gods of fear and blind piety for those of licence and anarchy"). Each one of these passages, and others throughout the story, has its exact corollary in his letters. It is rare that Lovecraft so bluntly expressed his philosophy in a work of fiction; but "The Silver Key" can be seen as his definitive repudiation both of Decadence as a literary theory and of cosmopolitanism as a way of life. Ironically enough, the structural framework of the story at this point—Carter samples in succession a variety of aesthetic, religious, and personal experiences in an attempt to lend meaning or interest to his life—may well have been derived from that textbook of Decadence, Huysmans's *A Rebours,* in the prologue to which Des Esseintes undertakes exactly such an intellectual journey. Perhaps Lovecraft knowingly borrowed this aspect of Huysmans's work as another

means of repudiating the philosophy that supported it. Carter's return to childhood may perhaps exemplify a much earlier statement of Lovecraft's —"Adulthood is hell"[76]—but in reality his return is not so much to childhood as to ancestral ways, the one means Lovecraft saw of warding off the sense of futility engendered by the manifest truth of man's insignificance in the cosmos.

For it should by now be obvious that, as Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, has exhaustively pointed out, "The Silver Key" is in large part a fictionalised account of Lovecraft's recent Foster visit.[77] Details of topography, character names (Benijah Corey is probably an adaptation of two names: Benejah Place, the owner of the farm across the road from the house where Lovecraft stayed, and Emma (Corey) Phillips, the widow of Walter Herbert Phillips, whose grave Lovecraft must have seen in his 1926 visit), and other similarities make this conclusion unshakable. Just as Lovecraft felt the need, after two rootless years in New York, to restore connexions with the places that had given him and his family birth, so in his fiction did he need to announce that, henceforth, however far his imagination might stray, it would always return to New England and look upon it as a source of bedrock values and emotional sustenance.

The exact relation of "The Silver Key" to the other Randolph Carter tales has not been much studied. This story depicts Carter's entire lifetime from his childhood up to the age of fifty-four, at which point he doubles back on his own timeline and reverts to boyhood. In terms of this chronology, *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* is the "first" Randolph Carter tale, for Carter is presumably in his twenties at the time of its events. After he has lost the key of the gate of dreams at thirty, Carter undertakes his experiments in sampling literary realism, religion, bohemianism, and so on; finding all these things unsatisfying, he turns to darker mysteries, involving himself in occultism and more. It is at this time (his age is unspecified) that he encounters Harley Warren and has the experience described in "The Statement of Randolph Carter"; shortly thereafter, returning to Arkham, he appears to experience the events of "The Unnamable," although they are alluded to very obliquely. Even these dallyings into the weird Carter fails to find rewarding, until at age fifty-four he finds the silver key.

Not long after writing the story Lovecraft noted that it is "not in its final form; but will shortly undergo an extensive amputation of philosophical matter in the early part, which delays the development & kills the interest

before the narrative is fairly begun."[78] Lovecraft never undertook such a revision, for he must have realised that an "amputation" of the philosophical matter would actually render the story meaningless: Carter's return to his childhood would carry no weight unless it were prefaced by his thorough awareness that modern adult life had little to offer him. Naturally, this results in a tale that is by no means oriented toward a popular audience, and it is no surprise that Farnsworth Wright rejected it for *Weird Tales*.[79] In the summer of 1928, however, Wright asked to see the tale again and this time accepted it for $70.00.[80] Predictably, however, when the tale appeared in the January 1929 issue, Wright reported to Lovecraft that readers "violently disliked" the story![81] Out of charity, however, Wright did not print any of these hostile letters in the magazine's letter column.

"The Strange High House in the Mist," written on November 9, is more concretely Dunsanian than "The Silver Key," and shows that the Dunsany influence had now been thoroughly internalised so as to allow for the expression of Lovecraft's own sentiments through Dunsany's idiom and general atmosphere. Indeed, the only genuine connexions to Dunsany's work may perhaps be in some details of the setting and in the manifestly philosophical, even satiric purpose which the fantasy is made to serve.

We are now again in Kingsport, a city to which Lovecraft had not returned since "The Festival" (1923), the tale that first embodied his impressions of Marblehead and its magical preservation of the tokens of the past. North of Kingsport "the crags climb lofty and curious, terrace on terrace, till the northernmost hangs in the sky like a grey frozen wind-cloud." On that cliff is an ancient house inhabited by some individual whom none of the townsfolk—not even the Terrible Old Man—have ever seen. One day a tourist, the "philosopher" Thomas Olney, decides to visit that house and its secret inhabitant; for he has always longed for the strange and the wondrous. He arduously scales the cliff, but upon reaching the house finds that there is no door on this side, only "a couple of small lattice windows with dingy bull's-eye panes leaded in seventeenth-century fashion"; the house's only door is on the *other* side, flush with the sheer cliff. Then Olney hears a soft voice, and a "great black-bearded face" protrudes from a window and invites him in. Olney climbs through the window and has a colloquy with the occupant:

> And the day wore on, and still Olney listened to rumours of old times and far places, and heard how the Kings of Atlantis fought

> with the slippery blasphemies that wriggled out of rifts in ocean's floor, and how the pillared and weedy temple of Poseidonis is still glimpsed at midnight by lost ships, who know by its sight that they are lost. Years of the Titans were recalled, but the host grew timid when he spoke of the dim first age of chaos before the gods or even the Elder Ones were born, and when only *the other gods* came to dance on the peak of Hatheg-Kla in the stony desert near Ulthar, beyond the river Skai.

Then a knock is heard at the door—the door that faces the cliff. Eventually the host opens the door, and he and Olney find the room occupied by all manner of wondrous presences—"Trident-bearing Neptune," "hoary Nodens," and others—and when Olney returns to Kingsport the next day, the Terrible Old Man vows that the man who went up that cliff is not the same one who came down. No longer does Olney's soul long for wonder and mystery; instead, he is content to lead his prosy bourgeois life with his wife and children. But people in Kingsport, looking up at the house on the cliff, say that "at evening the little low windows are brighter than formerly."

On various occasions Lovecraft admitted that he had no specific locale in mind when writing this tale: he stated that memories of the "titan cliffs of Magnolia"[82] in part prompted the setting, but that there is no house on the cliff as in the story; a headland near Gloucester which Lovecraft calls "Mother Ann,"[83] and which has not been precisely identified, also inspired the setting. There is a passage in Dunsany's *Chronicles of Rodriguez* about the home of a wizard on the top of a crag which Lovecraft may have had in mind.[84] What this means is that Lovecraft metamorphosed the New England landscape in this story more than he did in his "realistic" tales, and did so for the purpose of augmenting the fantastic element: "The Strange High House in the Mist" contains little in the way of specific topographical description, and we are clearly in a never-never land where—anomalously for Lovecraft—the focus is on human character.

For the strange transformation of Thomas Olney is at the heart of the tale. What is its meaning? How has he lost that sense of wonder which had guided his life up to his visit to Kingsport? The Terrible Old Man hints at the answer: "somewhere under that grey peaked roof, or amidst inconceivable reaches of that sinister white mist, there lingered still the lost spirit of him who was Thomas Olney." The body has returned to the normal round of things, but the spirit has remained with the occupant of the strange high

house in the mist; the encounter with Neptune and Nodens has been an apotheosis, and Olney realises that it is in this realm of nebulous wonder that he truly belongs. His body is now an empty shell, without soul and without imagination: "His good wife waxes stouter and his children older and prosier and more useful, and he never fails to smile correctly with pride when the occasion calls for it." This tale could be read as a sort of mirror-image of "Celephaïs": whereas Kuranes had to die in the real world in order for his spirit to attain his fantasy realm, Olney's body survives intact but his spirit stays behind.

One other small item that can be noted here is the poem published in *Weird Tales* for December 1926 as "Yule Horror." This effective four-stanza poem, written in the same Swinburnian metre as "Nemesis," "The House," and "The City," is actually a Christmas poem sent to Farnsworth Wright under the title "Festival"; Wright was so taken with it that he omitted the last stanza, a reference to himself—

> And mayst thou to such deeds
> Be an abbot and priest,
> Singing cannibal greeds
> At each devil-wrought feast,
> And to all the incredulous world shewing dimly the sign of the beast.

—and, to Lovecraft's surprise and pleasure, published it. Lovecraft's only other poetic contributions during his first eight months in Providence are a plangent elegy (written in late June) on Oscar, a cat owned by a neighbour of George Kirk's who was killed by a car, and "The Return," a poem on C. W. Smith published in the *Tryout* for December 1926.

A significant prose item written on November 23 was the essay "Cats and Dogs" (later retitled by Derleth as "Something about Cats"). The Blue Pencil Club of Brooklyn was planning to have a discussion concerning the relative merits of cats and dogs. Lovecraft naturally would have liked to participate in person, especially since a majority of the members were dog-lovers; but since he could not go (or was unwilling to do so), he wrote a lengthy brief simultaneously outlining his affection for cats and—with tongue only partially in his cheek—supplying an elaborate philosophical defence of this affection. The result is one of the most delightful pieces Lovecraft ever wrote, even if some of the sentiments expressed in it are a little tart.

In essence, Lovecraft's argument is that the cat is the pet of the artist and thinker, while the dog is the pet of the stolid bourgeoisie. "The dog appeals to cheap and facile emotions; the cat to the deepest founts of imagination and cosmic perception in the human mind." This leads inevitably to a class distinction that is neatly summed up in the compact utterance: "The dog is a peasant and the cat is a gentleman."

It is merely the "cheap" emotions of sentimentality and the need for subservience that impel praise for the "faithfulness" and devotion of the dog while scorning the aloof independence of the cat. It is a fallacy that the dog's "pointless sociability and friendliness, or slavering devotion and obedience, constitute anything intrinsically admirable or exalted." Consider the respective behaviour of the two animals: "Throw a stick, and the servile dog wheezes and pants and shambles to bring it to you. Do the same before a cat, and he will eye you with coolly polite and somewhat bored amusement." And yet, do we not rate a human being as superior for having independence of thought and action? Why then do we withhold praise for the cat when it exhibits these qualities? One does not, in fact, *own* a cat (as one does a dog); one *entertains* a cat. It is a guest, not a servant.

There is much more, but this is sufficient to indicate the extraordinary elegance and dry humour of "Cats and Dogs"—a piece that delightfully unites philosophy, aesthetics, and personal sentiment in a triumphant evocation of that species that Lovecraft admired more than any others (including his own) on this planet. It is perhaps not surprising that, when R. H. Barlow came to publish this essay in the second issue of *Leaves* (1938), he felt obligated to tone down some of Lovecraft's more provocative (and only half-joking) political allusions. Toward the end of the essay Lovecraft remarks: "The star of the cat, I think, is just now in the ascendant, as we emerge little by little from the dreams of ethics and democracy which clouded the nineteenth century"; Barlow changed "democracy" to "conformity." A little later, Lovecraft says: "Whether a renaissance of monarchy and beauty will restore our western civilisation, or whether the forces of disintegration are already too powerful for even the fascist sentiment to check, none may yet say . . ." Barlow changed "monarchy" to "power" and "even the fascist sentiment" to "any hand." But in spite—or perhaps because—of these very politically incorrect utterances, "Cats and Dogs" is a virtuoso performance that Lovecraft rarely excelled.

But Lovecraft was by no means done with writing. In a departure from his normal habits, he wrote “The Silver Key” and “The Strange High House in the Mist” while simultaneously at work on a much longer work. Writing to August Derleth in early December, he notes: “I am now on page 72 of my dreamland fantasy . . .”[85] The result, finished in late January, would be the longest work of fiction he had written up to that time—*The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath.*

18. Cosmic Outsideness

(1927–1928)

The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath was finished at 43,000 words on January 22, 1927.[1] Even while writing it, Lovecraft expressed doubts about its merits—

> I . . . am very fearful that Randolph Carter's adventures may have reached the point of palling on the reader; or that the very plethora of weird imagery may have destroyed the power of any one image to produce the desired impression of strangeness.[2] As for my novel . . . it is a picaresque chronicle of impossible adventures in dreamland, and is composed under no illusion of professional acceptance. There is certainly nothing of popular or best-seller psychology in it—although, in consonance with the mood in which it was conceived, it contains more of the naive fairy-tale wonder-spirit than of actual Baudelairian decadence. Actually, it isn't much good; but forms useful practice for later and more authentic attempts in the novel form.[3]

This final remark is about as accurate a judgment as can be delivered on the work. More than any other of Lovecraft's major stories, it has elicited antipodally opposite reactions even from devotees: L. Sprague de Camp compared it to George MacDonald's *Lilith* and *Phantastes* and the *Alice* books,[4] while other Lovecraft scholars find it almost unreadable. For my part, I think it is an entirely charming but relatively insubstantial work: Carter's adventures through dreamland do indeed pall after a time, but the novel is saved by its extraordinarily poignant conclusion. Its chief feature may be its autobiographical significance: it is, in fact, Lovecraft's spiritual autobiography for this precise moment in his life.

It is scarcely worth while to pursue the rambling plot of this short novel, which in its continuous, chapterless meandering consciously resembles not only Dunsany (although Dunsany never wrote a long work exactly of this kind) but William Beckford's *Vathek* (1786); several points of plot and imagery also bring Beckford's Arabian fantasy to mind.[5] Lovecraft resurrects Randolph Carter, previously used in "The Statement of Randolph Carter" (1919) and "The Unnamable" (1923), in a quest through dreamland for his "sunset city," which is described as follows:

> All golden and lovely it blazed in the sunset, with walls, temples, colonnades, and arched bridges of veined marble, silver-basined fountains of prismatic spray in broad squares and perfumed gardens, and wide streets marching between delicate trees and blossom-laden urns and ivory statues in gleaming rows; while on steep northward slopes climbed tiers of red roofs and old peaked gables harbouring little lanes of grassy cobbles.

This certainly sounds—except for some odd details at the end—like some Dunsanian realm of the imagination; but what does Carter discover as he leaves his hometown of Boston to make a laborious excursion through dreamland to the throne of the Great Ones who dwell in an onyx castle on unknown Kadath? Nyarlathotep, the messenger of the gods, tells him in a passage as moving as any in Lovecraft:

> "For know you, that your gold and marble city of wonder is only the sum of what you have seen and loved in youth. It is the glory of Boston's hillside roofs and western windows aflame with sunset; of the flower-fragrant Common and the great dome on the hill and the tangle of gables and chimneys in the violet valley where the many-bridged Charles flows drowsily. These things you saw, Randolph Carter, when your nurse first wheeled you out in the springtime, and they will be the last things you will ever see with eyes of memory and of love. . . .
>
> "These, Randolph Carter, are your city; for they are yourself. New-England bore you, and into your soul she poured a liquid loveliness which cannot die. This loveliness, moulded, crystallised, and polished by years of memory and dreaming, is your terraced wonder of elusive sunsets; and to find that marble parapet with curious urns and carven rail, and descend at last those endless balustraded steps to the city of broad squares and prismatic fountains, you need only to turn back to the thoughts and visions of your wistful boyhood."

We suddenly realise why that "sunset city" contained such otherwise curious features as gables and cobblestoned lanes. And we also realise why it is that the various fantastic creatures Carter meets along his journey—zoogs, gugs, ghasts, ghouls, moonbeasts—touch no chord in us: they are not meant to. They are all very charming, in that "Dresden-china" way Lovecraft mistook Dunsany to be; but they amount to nothing because they

do not correspond to anything in our memories and dreams. So all that Carter has to do—and what he does in fact do at the end—is merely to wake up in his Boston room, leave dreamland behind, and realise the beauty to be found on his doorstep: "Birds sang in hidden gardens and the perfume of trellised vines came wistful from arbours his grandfather had reared. Beauty and light glowed from classic mantel and carven cornice and walls grotesquely figured, while a sleek black cat rose yawning from hearthside sleep that his master's start and shriek had disturbed."

Carter's revelation is brilliantly prefigured in an earlier episode in which he meets King Kuranes, the protagonist of "Celephaïs" (1920). In that story Kuranes, a London writer, had dreamt as a child of the realm of Celephaïs, which is indeed a land of otherworldly beauty; at the end of the tale his body dies but his spirit is somehow transported to the land of his dreams. Carter meets him in Celephaïs, but he finds that Kuranes is not quite as happy as he thought he would be:

> It seems that he could no more find content in those places, but had formed a mighty longing for the English cliffs and downlands of his boyhood, where in little dreaming villages England's old songs hover at evening behind lattice windows, and where grey church towers peep lovely through the verdure of distant valleys. . . . For though Kuranes was a monarch in the land of dream, with all imagined pomps and marvels, splendours and beauties, ecstasies and delights, novelties and excitements at his command, he would gladly have resigned forever the whole of his power and luxury and freedom for one blessed day as a simple boy in that pure and quiet England, that ancient, beloved England which had moulded his being and of which he must always be immutably a part.

It has frequently been conjectured that *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* is the carrying out of Lovecraft's old novel idea "Azathoth" (1922); but while this may be true superficially in the sense that both works seem to centre around protagonists venturing on a quest for some wondrous land, in reality the novel of 1926 presents a thematic reversal of the novel idea of 1922. In the earlier work—written at the height of Lovecraft's Decadent phase—the unnamed narrator "travelled out of life on a quest into the spaces whither the world's dreams had fled"; but he does this because "age fell upon the world, and wonder went out of the minds of men." In other

words, the narrator's only refuge from prosy reality is the world of dream. Carter thinks that that is the case for him, but at the end he finds more value and beauty in that reality—transmuted, of course, by his dreams and memories—than he believed.

Of course, *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* is full of delightful tableaux of wonder, fantasy, and even horror that make it a very engaging work; such scenes as Carter being wafted from the moon back to the earth on the bodies of legions of cats, his encounter with the dreaded high-priest not to be named on the plateau of Leng, and of course his climactic appearance in Kadath before Nyarlathotep are triumphs of fantastic imagination. A certain whimsy and even flippancy lend a distinctive tone to the novel, as in Carter's grotesque encounter with his old friend Richard Upton Pickman (whose first appearance, of course, was in "Pickman's Model," written a few months before the novel was finished), who has now become a full-fledged ghoul:

> There, on a tombstone of 1768 stolen from the Granary Burying Ground in Boston, sat the ghoul which was once the artist Richard Upton Pickman. It was naked and rubbery, and had acquired so much of the ghoulish physiognomy that its human origin was already obscured. But it still remembered a little English, and was able to converse with Carter in grunts and monosyllables, helped out now and then by the glibbering of ghouls.

The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath also seeks to unite most of Lovecraft's previous "Dunsanian" tales, making explicit references to features and characters in such tales as "Celephaïs," "The Cats of Ulthar," "The Other Gods," "The White Ship," and others; but in doing so it creates considerable confusion. In particular, it suddenly transfers the settings of these tales into the dreamworld, whereas those tales themselves had manifestly been set in the dim prehistory of the real world. Lovecraft, of course, is under no obligation to adhere to earlier conceptions in such matters, but it does not seem as if he has thought through the precise metaphysical status of the dreamworld, which is full of ambiguities and paradoxes.[6] It is not likely that Lovecraft would have done much to iron out these difficulties in a subsequent revision, given that he regarded the work merely as "useful practice" for novel-length fiction, writing it not only without thought of publication but without any real desire to tie up all the

loose ends. In later years he repudiated it, refusing several colleagues' desires to prepare a typed copy of the manuscript until finally R. H. Barlow badgered him to pass along the text. Barlow typed less than half of the novel, but Lovecraft did nothing with this portion; the full text was not published until it was included in *Beyond the Wall of Sleep* (1943).

It is worth giving some thought to why Lovecraft revived Randolph Carter just at this time—for this novel must have been begun some time before "The Silver Key" was written, and indeed must have been fully conceived at the outset, since the events of "The Silver Key" manifestly take place after those of the *Dream-Quest.* Clearly Lovecraft was wishing a character that might serve as an alter ego, and it has been carelessly assumed that Carter is indeed such a character; but what has frequently not been observed is how *different* Carter is in each of the five tales in which he appears. In "The Statement of Randolph Carter" he is merely a passive and colourless witness to events; in "The Unnamable" he is a somewhat jaundiced author of weird fiction; in the *Dream-Quest* he is a wide-eyed explorer of dreams; in "The Silver Key" he is a jaded writer who has tried every intellectual and aesthetic stimulus to ward off a sense of cosmic futility; and in the later collaboration "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" he is a dynamic action-hero in the best (or worst) pulp tradition. It must frankly be admitted that Carter has no concrete or coherent personality, and that Lovecraft resurrected him—at least, in the three tales ("The Unnamable," "The Silver Key," and the *Dream-Quest*) where he has a personality at all—as a convenient mouthpiece for views that were indeed his at that moment.

In the *Dream-Quest,* then, Carter serves as a means for emphatically underscoring Lovecraft's New England heritage. In "The Unnamable" a New England origin was merely implied for Carter; in the novel he definitively becomes a resident of Boston—as Lovecraft would very likely have been had his father not taken ill in 1893. Carter's peregrinations in the dreamworld, whatever mythic significance they may have, function chiefly as mirrors of Lovecraft's own wanderings, particularly to that glittering Dunsanian realm that New York was for him during his visits of 1922 and the first few months of his residence there in 1924.

In an analogous way, the resurrection of the Dunsanian idiom—not used since "The Other Gods" (1921)—is meant not so much as an homage as a repudiation of Dunsany, at least of what Lovecraft at this moment took

Dunsany to be. Just as, when he wrote "Lord Dunsany and His Work" in 1922, he felt that the only escape from modern disillusion would be to "worship afresh the music and colour of divine language, and take an Epicurean delight in those combinations of ideas and fancies which we know to be artificial," so in 1926—after two years spent away from the New England soil that he now realised was his one true anchor against chaos and meaninglessness—he felt the need to reject these decorative artificialities. By 1930—only seven years after claiming, in pitiable wish-fulfilment, that "Dunsany *is myself*"—he made a definitive break with his once-revered mentor:

> What I do *not* think I shall use much in future is the Dunsanian pseudo-poetic vein—not because I don't admire it, but because I don't think it is natural to me. The fact that I used it only sparingly before reading Dunsany, but immediately began to overwork it upon doing so, gives me a strong suspicion of its artificiality so far as I am concerned. That kind of thing takes a better poet than I.[7]

The curious thing is that Dunsany's own work was moving in exactly this direction, and Lovecraft was not merely unaware of it but actually resented Dunsany's departure from what he took to be the "Dresden-china" prettiness of *The Gods of Pegana* and other early works. Dunsany himself had definitively abandoned his bejewelled style and the prodigal invention of imaginary worlds by 1919 and in his novels of the 1920s and 1930s—especially *The Blessing of Pan* (1927) and, preeminently, *The Curse of the Wise Woman* (1933)—drawn more and more deeply upon his own memories of life in England and Ireland; but Lovecraft, although dutifully reading each new work by Dunsany, continued to lament at the passing of his "old" manner.

One other possible influence on the *Dream-Quest* is John Uri Lloyd's curious novel of underworld adventure, *Etidorhpa* (1895), which Lovecraft read in 1918.[8] It must have left a powerful impression upon him, for he was recalling it as late as 1928, when, recounting his exploration of the Endless Caverns in Virginia, he writes: "I thought, above all else, of that strange old novel *Etidorhpa* once pass'd around our Kleicomolo circle and perus'd with such varying reactions" ("Observations on Several Parts of America"). This strange work, full of windy philosophy and science defending the idea of a hollow earth, nevertheless contains some

spectacularly bizarre and cosmic imagery of the narrator's seemingly endless underworld adventures, although I cannot find any specific passage echoed in the *Dream-Quest.* Nevertheless, Lovecraft's dreamworld creates the impression of being somehow underground (as in Carter's descent of the 700 steps to the gate of deeper slumber), so perhaps he was thinking of how Lloyd's narrator purportedly plunges beneath the actual surface of the earth on his peregrinations.

***

It is remarkable that, almost immediately after completing *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* in late January 1927, Lovecraft plunged into another "young novel,"[9] *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward.* Actually, at the outset he did not regard it as anything more than a novelette: on January 29 he announced that "I am already at work on a new shorter tale";[10] by February 9 he was on page 56, with an estimated 25 pages more to go;[11] by February 20 he finally realised what he had got himself into, for he was on page 96 "with much still to be said";[12] the last page of the autograph manuscript (page 147) notes that the work was finished on March 1. At approximately 51,000 words, it is the longest piece of fiction Lovecraft would ever write. While it does betray a few signs of haste, and while he would no doubt have polished it had he made the effort to prepare it for publication, the fact is that he felt so discouraged as to its quality—as well as its marketability—that he never made such an effort, and the work remained unpublished until four years after his death.

Perhaps, however, it is not so odd that Lovecraft wrote *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* in a blinding rush nine months after his return to Providence; for this novel—the second of his major tales (after "The Shunned House") to be set entirely in the city of his birth—had been gestating for at least a year or more. I have mentioned that in August 1925 he was contemplating a novel about Salem; but then, in September, he read Gertrude Selwyn Kimball's *Providence in Colonial Times* (1912) at the New York Public Library, and this rather dry historical work clearly fired his imagination. He was, however, still talking of the Salem idea just as he was finishing the *Dream-Quest:* ". . . sometime I wish to write a novel of more naturalistic setting, in which some hideous threads of witchcraft trail down the centuries against the sombre & memory-haunted background of

ancient Salem."[13] But perhaps the Kimball book—as well, of course, as his return to Providence—led to a uniting of the Salem idea with a work about his hometown.

The plot of the novel is relatively simple, although full of subtle touches. Joseph Curwen, a learned scholar and man of affairs, leaves Salem for Providence in 1692, eventually building a succession of elegant homes in the oldest residential section of the city. Curwen attracts attention because he does not seem to age much, even after the passing of fifty or more years. He also acquires very peculiar substances from all around the world for apparent chemical—or, more specifically, alchemical—experiments; and his haunting of graveyards does nothing to salvage his reputation. When Dr John Merritt visits Curwen, he is both impressed and disturbed by the number of alchemical and cabbalistic books on his shelves; in particular, he sees a copy of Borellus with one key passage—concerning the use of the "essential Saltes" of humans or animals for purposes of resurrection—heavily underscored.

Things come to a head when Curwen, in an effort to restore his reputation, arranges a marriage for himself with the well-born Eliza Tillinghast, the daughter of a ship-captain under Curwen's control. This so enrages Ezra Weeden, who had hoped to marry Eliza himself, that he begins an exhaustive investigation of Curwen's affairs. After several more anomalous incidents, it is decided by the elders of the city—among them the four Brown brothers; Rev. James Manning, president of the recently established college (later to be known as Brown University); Stephen Hopkins, former governor of the colony; and others—that something must be done. A raid on Curwen's property in 1771, however, produces death, destruction, and psychological trauma amongst the participants well beyond what might have been expected of a venture of this sort. Curwen is evidently killed, and his body is returned to his wife for burial. He is never spoken of again, and as many records concerning him as can be found are destroyed.

A century and a half pass, and in 1918 Charles Dexter Ward—Curwen's direct descendant by way of his daughter Ann—accidentally discovers his relation to the old wizard and seeks to learn all he can about him. Although always fascinated by the past, Ward had previously exhibited no especial interest in the outré; but as he unearths more and more information about Curwen—whose exact physical double he proves to be—he strives more

and more to duplicate his ancestor's cabbalistic and alchemical feats. He undertakes a long voyage overseas to visit the presumable descendants of individuals with whom Curwen had been in touch in the eighteenth century. He finds Curwen's remains and, by the proper manipulation of his "essential Saltes," resurrects him. But something begins to go astray. He writes a harried letter to Dr Marinus Bicknell Willett, the family doctor, with the following disturbing message:

> Instead of triumph I have found terror, and my talk with you will not be a boast of victory but a plea for help and advice in saving both myself and the world from a horror beyond all human conception or calculation. . . . Upon us depends more than can be put into words—all civilisation, all natural law, perhaps even the fate of the solar system and the universe. I have brought to light a monstrous abnormality, but I did it for the sake of knowledge. Now for the sake of all life and Nature you must help me thrust it back into the dark again.

But, perversely, Ward does not stay for the appointed meeting with Willett. Willett finally does track him down, but something astounding has occurred: although still of youthful appearance, his talk is very eccentric and old-fashioned, and his stock of memories of his own life seems to have been bizarrely depleted. Willett later undertakes a harrowing exploration of Curwen's old Pawtuxet bungalow, which Ward had restored for the conducting of experiments; he finds, among other anomalies, all manner of half-formed creatures at the bottom of deep pits. He confronts Ward—whom he now realises is no other than Curwen—in the madhouse in which he has been placed; Curwen attempts to summon up an incantation against him, but Willett counters with one of his own, reducing Curwen to a "thin coating of fine bluish-grey dust."

This skeletonic summary cannot begin to convey the textural and tonal richness of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* which in spite of the speed of its composition remains among the most carefully wrought fictions in Lovecraft's entire corpus. The historical flashback—occupying the second of the five chapters—is as evocative a passage as any in his work.

The evolution of the work goes back even beyond August 1925. The quotation from Borellus—Pierre Borel (c. 1620–1689), the French physician and chemist—is a translation or paraphrase by Cotton Mather in the *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1702), which Lovecraft owned. Since the

epigraph from Lactantius that heads "The Festival" (1923) also comes from the *Magnalia,* perhaps Lovecraft found the Borellus passage at that time also. It is copied down in his commonplace book as entry 87, which David E. Schultz dates conjecturally to April 1923.

In late August 1925 Lovecraft heard an interesting story from Lillian: "So the Halsey house is haunted! Ugh! That's where Wild Tom Halsey kept live terrapins in the cellar—maybe it's their ghosts. Anyway, it's a magnificent old mansion, & a credit to a magnificent old town!"[14] The Thomas Lloyd Halsey house at 140 Prospect Street is the model for Charles Dexter Ward's residence; in the story Lovecraft numbers it 100 Prospect Street, perhaps to disguise its identity (and the privacy of the occupants, in the event that curious readers might wish to look it up). Although now broken up into apartments, it is a superb late Georgian structure (c. 1800) fully deserving of Lovecraft's encomium: "His [Ward's] home was a great Georgian mansion atop the well-nigh precipitous hill that rises just east of the river; and from the rear windows of its rambling wings he could look dizzily out over all the clustered spires, domes, roofs, and skyscraper summits of the lower town to the purple hills of the countryside beyond." Lovecraft was presumably never in the Halsey mansion, but had a clear view of it from 10 Barnes Street; looking northwestward from his aunt's upstairs back window, he could see it distinctly.

As for the house's ghostly legendry, we read the following in the WPA guide to Rhode Island (1937):

> [Halsey] was a famous *bon vivant* in Colonial days, and there is a legend that he kept live terrapins in his cellar. For many years during which the mansion was empty, Negroes in the vicinity were convinced a piano-playing ghost haunted the property. They would not enter the house under any circumstances, and at night always gave it a wide berth. It is also said that a blood-stain on the floor has defied many years of scrubbing.[15]

No doubt these were the sorts of stories Lillian heard in 1925.

Lovecraft began reading *Providence in Colonial Times* at the very end of July 1925. Since he could not check the book out of the New York Public Library but had to read it in the genealogical reading room during library hours, his consumption of it was sporadic, and he only began making headway in it in mid-September. It was at this time that he read of John Merritt as well as of the Rev. John Checkley, "famous as a wit & man of the

world,"[16] both of whom would later pay visits to Joseph Curwen. Lovecraft's letters for the rest of the month contain much other matter derived from reading the Kimball book, and there is no question but that it helped to solidify his knowledge of colonial Providence so that he could rework it in fiction a year and a half later. Lovecraft, of course, does much more than merely recycle odd bits of history—he mingles history and fiction in an inextricable union, breathing vivid life into the dry facts he had gathered over a lifetime of study of his native region and insidiously inserting the imaginary, the fantastic, and the weird into the known historical record.

One significant literary influence may be noted here: Walter de la Mare's novel *The Return* (1910). Lovecraft had first read de la Mare in the summer of 1926, and stated that the British author "can be exceedingly powerful when he chooses";[17] of *The Return* he remarked in "Supernatural Horror in Literature": "we see the soul of a dead man reach out of its grave of two centuries and fasten itself upon the flesh of the living, so that even the face of the victim becomes that which had long ago returned to dust." In de la Mare's novel, of course, there is actual psychic possession involved, as there is not in *Charles Dexter Ward;* and, although the focus in *The Return* is on the afflicted man's personal trauma—in particular his relations with his wife and daughter—rather than the unnaturalness of his condition, Lovecraft has manifestly adapted the general scenario in his own work. Another literary influence is that of M. R. James's "Count Magnus." Numerous parallels exist in the characters of the baleful sorcerer Count Magnus and Joseph Curwen—and, correspondingly, with the characters of their chosen victims, Mr. Wraxall and Charles Dexter Ward.[18]

Other, more minor sources can also be noted. Marinus Bicknell Willett's name surely derives from a book that Lillian sent him in November of that year:[19]

> Francis Read. *Westminster Street, Providence, as It Was about 1824.* From Drawings Made by Francis Read and Lately Presented by His Daughter, Mrs. Marinus Willett Gardner, to the Rhode Island Historical Society. Providence: Printed for the Society, 1917.

Bicknell is an old Providence name. Thomas William Bicknell, for example, was a well-known historian who wrote a five-volume *History of the State of Rhode Island* (1920). I am not entirely sure, however, where

Lovecraft derived the name Charles Dexter Ward. Ward is a name from Providence colonial history, and in the novel Lovecraft refers to a political dispute between the party backing Samuel Ward and the one backing Stephen Hopkins around 1760. Lovecraft also owned two anthologies of English literature compiled by Charles Dexter Cleveland. Dexter, of course, is a prominent family in Providence.

If the source for Ward's name is unclear, the source for the character himself is not. Of course, there are many autobiographical touches in the portraiture of Ward, which I shall examine presently; but many surface details appear to be taken from a person actually living in the Halsey mansion at this time, William Lippitt Mauran (b. 1910). Lovecraft was probably not acquainted with Mauran, but it is highly likely that he observed Mauran on the street and knew of him. Mauran was a sickly child who spent much of his youth as an invalid, being wheeled through the streets in a carriage by a nurse. Indeed, a mention early in the novel that Ward as a young boy was "wheeled . . . in a carriage" in front of the "lovely classic porch of the double-bayed brick building" that was his home may reflect an actual glimpse Lovecraft had of Mauran in the early 1920s, before he ever went to New York. Moreover, the Mauran family also owned a farmhouse in Pawtuxet, exactly as Curwen is said to have done. Other details of Ward's character also fit Mauran more closely than Lovecraft. One other amusing in-joke is a mention of Manuel Arruda, captain of a Spanish vessel, the *Fortaleza,* which delivers a nameless cargo to Curwen in 1770. Manuel Arruda was actually a Portuguese door-to-door fruit merchant operating on College Hill in the later 1920s![20]

But what, beyond these obscure tips of the hat and in-jokes, is the fundamental message of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward?* To answer this question, we must first ascertain exactly what Curwen and his cohorts around the world were attempting to do by gathering up these "essential Saltes." Lovecraft makes the matter a trifle too clear in a passage toward the end—a passage which, one hopes, he might have had the good sense to omit in a revised version: "What these horrible creatures—and Charles Ward as well—were doing or trying to do seemed fairly clear . . . They were robbing the tombs of all the ages, including those of the world's wisest and greatest men, in the hope of recovering from the bygone ashes some vestige of the consciousness and lore which had once animated and informed them." It is not, indeed, entirely clear how the tapping of human brains—

even the "world's wisest and greatest"—would result in some scenario that might threaten "all civilisation, all natural law, perhaps even the fate of the solar system and the universe." Curwen occasionally speaks in notes and letters about calling up entities from "Outside y^{e} Spheres"—including perhaps Yog-Sothoth, who is first mentioned in this novel—but these hints are so nebulous that not much can be made of them. There are further hints that Curwen in 1771 died not because of the raid by the citizenry but because he had raised some nameless entity and could not control it. Nevertheless, the basic conception of a Faustian quest for knowledge has led Barton L. St Armand, one of the acutest commentators on the work, to declare: "The simple moral of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* is that it is dangerous to know too much, especially about one's own ancestors."[21]

Well, perhaps it is not so simple as that. By this interpretation, Ward himself becomes the villain of the piece; but surely it is Curwen who is the real villain, for it is he who conceived the idea of ransacking the world's brains for his own (rather unclear) purposes. Ward certainly does pursue knowledge ardently, and he certainly does resurrect Curwen's body; but it is false to say (as St Armand does) that Curwen "possesses" Ward. There is, as I have already remarked, no psychic possession—not, at least, of the obvious sort—here, as there is in "The Tomb" and as there will be again in "The Thing on the Doorstep" (1933). Curwen is physically resurrected, and when Ward proves unwilling to assist him in carrying out his plans, Curwen ruthlessly kills him and tries to pass himself off as Ward. And note Ward's defence of his actions in the letter to Willett, specifically the sentence: "I have brought to light a monstrous abnormality, but I did it for the sake of knowledge." This single utterance comprises Ward's (and Lovecraft's) justification: in the first part of the sentence Ward confesses to moral culpability; but the second part of the sentence is preceded by "but" because Ward (with Lovecraft) sees the pursuit of knowledge as intrinsically good. Sometimes, however, that pursuit simply leads to unfortunate and unforeseen consequences. Ward was perhaps naive in thinking that his resurrection of Curwen would lead to no harm; but, as Willett himself says at the end: ". . . he was never a fiend or even truly a madman, but only an eager, studious, and curious boy whose love of mystery and of the past was his undoing."

Psychic possession of a subtler sort may, nevertheless, be involved in the tale. Curwen marries not only because he wishes to repair his

reputation, but because he needs a descendant. He seems to know that he will one day die and himself require resurrection by the recovery of his "essential Saltes," so he makes careful arrangements to this effect: he prepares a notebook for "One Who Shal Come After" and leaves sufficient clues toward the location of his remains. It may well be, then, that Curwen exercises psychic possession on Ward so that the latter finds first his effects, then his body, and bring him back to life. Perhaps it would be more accurate to say that the whole scenario embodies Lovecraft's notions of fate and determinism: Ward seems inevitably compelled to pursue the course he does, and this inevitability adds a measure of poignancy to the horror of the situation.

The Case of Charles Dexter Ward represents one of Lovecraft's few relative triumphs of characterisation. Both Curwen and Ward are vividly realised—the latter largely because Lovecraft drew unaffectedly upon his own deepest emotions in the portrayal. Willett is not so successful, and on occasion he reveals himself to be somewhat pompous and self-important. After solving the case he makes the following ludicrous speech: "I can answer no questions, but I will say that there are different kinds of magic. I have made a great purgation, and those in this house will sleep the better for it."

But St Armand is nonetheless right in seeing Providence itself as the principal "character" of the novel. It would require a lengthy commentary to specify not only all the historical data Lovecraft has unearthed, but the countless autobiographical details he has enmeshed into his narrative. The opening descriptions of Ward as a youth are filled with echoes of Lovecraft's own upbringing, although with provocative changes. For example, a description of "one of the child's first memories"—"the great westward sea of hazy roofs and domes and steeples and far hills which he saw one winter afternoon from that great railed embankment, all violet and mystic against a fevered, apocalyptic sunset of reds and golds and purples and curious greens"—is situated in Prospect Terrace, whereas in letters Lovecraft identifies this mystic vision as occurring on the railway embankment in Auburndale, Massachusetts, around 1892. Ward's ecstatic return to Providence after several years abroad can scarcely be anything but a transparent echo of Lovecraft's own return to Providence after two years in New York. The simple utterance that concludes this passage—"It was

twilight, and Charles Dexter Ward had come home"—is one of the most quietly moving statements in all Lovecraft's work.

It is of interest to note how Willett's complete eradication of Curwen stands in such stark contrast to Malone's obvious failure to eliminate the age-old horror in Red Hook: New York may be the haven of all horror, but Providence must at the end emerge cleansed of any evil taint. We will observe this occurring in all Lovecraft's tales of Providence. In many ways, indeed, *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* is a refinement of "The Horror at Red Hook." Several features of the plot are borrowed from that earlier story: Curwen's alchemy parallels Suydam's cabbalistic activities; Curwen's attempt to repair his standing in the community with an advantageous marriage echoes Suydam's marriage with Cornelia Gerritsen; Willett as the valiant counterweight to Curwen matches Malone as the adversary of Suydam. Lovecraft has once again reverted to his relatively small store of basic plot elements, and once again he has transformed a mediocre tale into a masterful one.

It is certainly a pity that Lovecraft made no efforts to prepare *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* for publication, even when book publishers in the 1930s were specifically asking for a novel from his pen; but we are in no position to question Lovecraft's own judgment that the novel was an inferior piece of work, a "cumbrous, creaking bit of self-conscious antiquarianism."[22] It has certainly now been acknowledged as one of his finest works, and it emphasises the message of *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* all over again: Lovecraft is who he is because of his birth and upbringing as a New England Yankee. The need to root his work in his native soil became more and more clear to him as time went on, and it led to his gradual transformation of all New England as the locus of both wonder and terror.

***

The last tale of Lovecraft's great spate of fiction-writing of 1926–27 is "The Colour out of Space," written in March 1927. It is unquestionably one of his great tales, and it always remained Lovecraft's own favourite. Here again the plot is too well known to require lengthy description. A surveyor for the new reservoir to be built "west of Arkham" encounters a bleak terrain where nothing will grow; the locals call it the "blasted heath." The

surveyor, seeking an explanation for the term and for the cause of the devastation, finally finds an old man, Ammi Pierce, living near the area, who tells him an unbelievable tale of events that occurred in 1882. A meteorite had landed on the property of Nahum Gardner and his family. Scientists from Miskatonic University who come to examine the object find that its properties are of the most bizarre sort: the substance refuses to grow cool, displays shining bands on a spectroscope that had never been seen before, and fails to react to conventional solvents applied to it. Within the meteorite is a "large coloured globule": "The colour . . . was almost impossible to describe; and it was only by analogy that they called it colour at all." When tapped with a hammer, it bursts. The meteorite itself, continuing to shrink anomalously, finally disappears altogether.

Henceforth increasingly odd things occur. Nahum's harvest of apples and pears, though unprecedentedly huge in size, proves unfit to eat; plants and animals with peculiar mutations are seen; Nahum's cows start giving bad milk. Then Nahum's wife Nabby goes mad, "screaming about things in the air which she could not describe"; she is locked in an upstairs room. Soon all the vegetation starts to crumble to a greyish powder. Nahum's son Thaddeus goes mad after a visit to the well, and his other sons Merwin and Zenas also break down. Then there is a period of days when Nahum is not seen or heard from. Ammi finally summons up the courage to visit his farm, and finds that the worst has happened: Nahum himself has snapped, and he can only utter confused fragments:

> "Nothin' . . . nothin' . . . the colour . . . it burns . . . cold an' wet, but it burns . . . it lived in the well . . . suckin' the life out of everything . . . in that stone . . . it must a' come in that stone . . . pizened the whole place . . . dun't know what it wants . . . it beats down your mind an' then gits ye . . . can't git away . . . draws ye . . . ye know summ'at's comin', but 'tain't no use . . ."

But that is all: "That which spoke could speak no more because it had completely caved in." Ammi brings policemen, a coroner, and other officials to the place, and after a series of bizarre events they see a column of the unknown colour shoot vertically into the sky from the well; but Ammi sees one small fragment of it return to earth. Now they say that the grey expanse of the "blasted heath" grows by an inch per year, and no one can say when it will end.

Lovecraft was correct in calling this tale an "atmospheric study,"[23] for he has rarely captured the atmosphere of inexplicable horror better than he has here. First let us consider the setting. The reservoir mentioned in the tale is a very real one: the Quabbin Reservoir, plans for which were announced in 1926, although it was not completed until 1939. And yet, Lovecraft declared in a late letter that it was not this reservoir but the Scituate Reservoir in Rhode Island (built in 1926) that caused him to use the reservoir element in the story.[24] He saw this reservoir when he passed through this area in the west-central part of the state on the way to Foster in late October.[25] I cannot, however, believe that Lovecraft was not also thinking of the Quabbin, which is located exactly in the area of central Massachusetts where the tale takes place, and which involved the abandonment and submersion of entire towns in the region. Whatever the case, the bleak rural terrain is portrayed with mastery, as its opening paragraph is sufficient to demonstrate:

> West of Arkham the hills rise wild, and there are valleys with deep woods that no axe has ever cut. There are dark narrow glens where the trees slope fantastically, and where thin brooklets trickle without ever having caught the glint of sunlight. On the gentler slopes there are farms, ancient and rocky, with squat, moss-covered cottages brooding eternally over old New England secrets in the lee of great ledges; but these are all vacant now, the wide chimneys crumbling and the shingled sides bulging perilously beneath low gambrel roofs.

Donald R. Burleson has plausibly suggested a literary influence on this passage from Milton's "Il Penseroso" ("arched walks of twilight groves, / And shadows brown, that Sylvan loves, / Of pine, or monumental oak, / Where the rude axe with heaved stroke / Was never heard the nymphs to daunt"); but there may be an autobiographical connexion also. Lovecraft seems to have seen a region very much like this one, although curiously enough it was not in New England. Consider his description of the primal forest he traversed in the New Jersey Palisades along the way to Buttermilk Falls in August 1925:

> To reach this scenick Mecca we traversed some of the finest woodland country I have ever seen—unlimited acres of stately forest untouched by the woodman's axe; hill & dale, brooklet & glen, ravine & precipice, rock ledge & pinnacle, marsh & brake,

> glade & hidden meadow, landscape & prospect, spring & cleft, bower & berry-patch, bird-paradise & mineral treasury.[26]

This opening is also a refinement of the opening of "The Picture in the House" (1920), which might be thought to have piled on the horror—and the adjectives—a little too strongly; here greater restraint is shown, and the entire story could be regarded as one long but subdued prose-poem.

The key to the story, of course, is the anomalous meteorite. Is it—or the coloured globules inside it—animate in any sense we can recognise? Does it house a single entity or many entities? What are their physical properties? More significantly, what are their aims, goals, and motives? The fact that we can answer none of these questions very clearly is by no means a failing; indeed, this is exactly the source of terror in the tale. As Lovecraft said of Machen's "The White People," "the *lack of anything concrete* is the *great asset* of the story."[27] In other words, it is precisely because we cannot define the nature—either physical or psychological—of the entities in "The Colour out of Space" (or even know whether they are entities or living creatures as we understand them) that produces the sense of nameless horror. Lovecraft later maintained (probably correctly) that his habit of writing—even if unconsciously—with a pulp audience in mind had corrupted his technique by making his work too obvious and explicit. We will indeed find this problem in some later tales, but here Lovecraft has exercised the most exquisite artistic restraint in not fully defining the nature of the phenomena at hand.

It is, therefore, in "The Colour out of Space" that Lovecraft has most closely achieved his goal of avoiding the depiction of "the human form—and the local human passions and conditions and standards— . . . as native to other worlds or other universes." For it is manifest that the meteorite in "The Colour out of Space" must have come from some dim corner of the universe where natural laws work very differently from the way they do here: "It was just a colour out of space—a frightful messenger from unformed realms of infinity beyond all nature as we know it; from realms whose mere existence stuns the brain and numbs us with the black extra-cosmic gulfs it throws open before our frenzied eyes." The chemical experiments performed on the object establish that it is *physically* unlike anything we know; and the utter absence of any sense of wilful viciousness, or conventionalised "evil" in the object or the entities it contains similarly results in a *psychological* distancing from human or earthly standards. To be

sure, the meteorite causes great destruction, and because some remnants of it are still on the planet, it will continue to do so; but perhaps this is an inevitable product of the mingling of our world and its own. In order for an animate being to be morally culpable of "evil," it must be conscious that it is doing what is regarded as evil; but who can say whether the entities in "The Colour out of Space" are conscious at all? Nahum Gardner's poignant dying speech makes the matter clear: his simple utterance, "dun't know what it wants," puts the matter in a nutshell. We have no way of ascertaining the mental or emotional orientation of the anomalous entities, and as a result we cannot possibly apportion praise or blame to them by any conventional moral standard.

But Lovecraft has rendered the plight of the Gardner family inexpressibly poignant and tragic, so that although we cannot "blame" the meteorite for causing their deaths, we still experience a tremendous sense of sorrow mingled with horror at their fate. It is not merely that they have been physically destroyed; the meteorite has also beaten down their minds and wills, so that they are unable to escape its effects. When Ammi tells Nahum that the well water is bad, Nahum ignores him: "He and the boys continued to use the tainted supply, drinking it as listlessly and mechanically as they ate their meager and ill-cooked meals and did their thankless and monotonous chores through the aimless days." This single sentence is one of the most heart-rending and depressing moments in all Lovecraft.

"The Colour out of Space" is of course the first of Lovecraft's major tales to effect that union of horror and science fiction which would become the hallmark of his later work. It continues the pattern already established in "The Call of Cthulhu" of transferring "the focus of supernatural dread from man and his little world and his gods, to the stars and the black and unplumbed gulfs of intergalactic space," as Fritz Leiber ably termed it.[28] In a sense, of course, Lovecraft was taking the easy way out: by simply having his entities come from some remote corner of the universe, he could attribute nearly any physical properties to them and not be required to give a plausible explanation for them. But the abundance of chemical and biological verisimilitude Lovecraft provides makes these unknown properties highly convincing, as does the gradually enveloping atmosphere of the tale. If there is any flaw in "The Colour out of Space," it is that it is just a little too long: the scene with Ammi and the others in the Gardner farmhouse is dragged out well beyond the requirements for the tale and

actually dilutes some of the tensity of atmosphere Lovecraft has so carefully fashioned. But beyond this slight and debatable flaw, "The Colour out of Space" is an achievement Lovecraft rarely, perhaps never, equalled.

In a sense the most controversial aspect of the tale is the mundane matter of its publication history. "The Colour out of Space" appeared in *Amazing Stories* for September 1927; but the critical question is whether the tale was ever submitted to *Weird Tales.* Apparently the only evidence for this occurs in Sam Moskowitz's article, "A Study in Horror: The Eerie Life of H. P. Lovecraft," first published in *Fantastic* for May 1960 and reprinted (as "The Lore of H. P. Lovecraft") in Moskowitz's *Explorers of the Infinite* (1963). There Moskowitz writes:

> So full of high hope for this story, Lovecraft was stunned when it was rejected by *Weird Tales.* In a letter to Frank Belknap Long, Lovecraft stormed at the shortsightedness of Farnsworth Wright. Though *Weird Tales* printed numerous science fiction stories, Wright preferred the romantic adventure so popular in *Argosy,* or even straight action stories. Lovecraft submitted the story to *Argosy,* which also rejected it as being a bit too "strong" for their readership.[29]

Here now are two remarkable assertions: that the tale was submitted both to *Argosy* and to *Weird Tales.* Moskowitz, however, told me[30] that his article was originally written at the request of Frank Belknap Long for *Satellite Science Fiction* (of which Long was an associate editor), and that Long had provided him with the information about the rejections of "The Colour out of Space." At this time (1959), however, Long no longer had his letters from Lovecraft: he had sold them to Samuel Loveman in the early 1940s. My feeling, therefore, is that Long has misremembered the entire episode, confusing it with the rejection of "The Call of Cthulhu." There is no mention of any rejection by *Weird Tales* in any of the letters to Long that I have read for this period, although there may be other letters to which I have not had access; but Lovecraft's total silence on this matter in letters to other colleagues—particularly August Derleth (to whom he mentions, in late April, merely the *intention* of submitting the tale to Wright[31]) and Donald Wandrei, with whom he was corresponding very frequently in 1927 and to whom he was making frequent mention of acceptances and rejections—is significant. Consider also Lovecraft's comment to Farnsworth Wright in his letter of July 5, 1927: ". . . this spring and summer I've been too busy

with revisory and kindred activities to write more than one tale—which, oddly enough, was accepted at once by *Amazing Stories* . . .”[32] The wording of this letter suggests that this is Lovecraft’s first mention of the story to Wright. There is equal silence concerning a possible *Argosy* rejection; Long may have confused this with the rejection of “The Rats in the Walls” in 1923. In 1930 Lovecraft wrote to Smith: “I must try the *Argosy* some day, though I gave up the Munsey group in disgust when the celebrated Robert H. Davis turned down my ‘Rats in the Walls’ as ‘too horrible and improbable’—or something like that—some seven years ago.”[33] Unless one assumes that Lovecraft is uncharacteristically lying, this certainly suggests that he had made no submission to *Argosy* since 1923.

It would not at all be unusual for Lovecraft at this time to be trying new markets. As early as April 1927 he was complaining of “Wright’s increasing disinclination to accept my stuff,”[34] and we have already seen his attempt to land his work in *Ghost Stories* in 1926. In May 1927 the redoubtable Edwin Baird resurfaced with plans for a new magazine; in spite of his past troubles with Baird, Lovecraft submitted six stories to him.[35] The magazine of course never materialised. Also at this time Lovecraft submitted “The Call of Cthulhu” to *Mystery Stories,* edited by Robert Sampson, where it was rejected on the ground (as Lovecraft tartly termed it) “that it was ‘too heavy’ for his airy & popular publication.”[36]

Amazing Stories was the first authentic science fiction magazine in English, and it continues to be published today. Lovecraft remarked wryly, “The magazine certainly lived up to its name so far as I am concerned, for I really hadn’t the remotest idea the thing would ‘land’. I guess the pseudo-scientific camouflage near the beginning was what turned the trick.”[37] Scientific romance of a sort had been featured in the early decades of the century in *Argosy, All-Story,* the *Thrill Book,* and others, but *Amazing* was the first to make a coordinated effort to print material of this kind—material, too, that was fairly sound in its scientific premises. During its first year, when Lovecraft subscribed to it, it also attempted to draw upon what editor Hugo Gernsback perceived to be the literary origins of the field by reprinting Jules Verne, H. G. Wells, and other “classics.” When these reprints ceased, Lovecraft found the new work not sufficiently interesting to warrant purchasing the magazine.

But if he was hoping that he had somehow found an alternative to *Weird Tales,* he was in for a rude awakening. Although his later work, as it turns out, contained a fairly significant scientific element, *Amazing* became a closed market to him when Gernsback paid him only $25.00 for the story—a mere 1/5¢ per word—and this only after three dunning letters. Gernsback paid incredibly poorly and also delayed payment for months or even years. The inevitable occurred: many potential writers abandoned the magazine, and others who—like Clark Ashton Smith—published in it or in Gernsback's later magazine, *Wonder Stories* (where the same financial practices prevailed), were compelled to file suit against him to receive payment. In the 1930s there was a lawyer who made a specialty of exacting payment from Gernsback. Although in later years Lovecraft briefly considered requests from Gernsback or from his associate editor, C. A. Brandt, for further submissions, he never again sent a tale to *Amazing*. He also took to calling Gernsback "Hugo the Rat."

One further work of fiction that may be considered here is the fragment titled (by R. H. Barlow) "The Descendant." This has customarily been dated, on no evidence that I can ascertain, to 1926; but it is conceivable that an early 1927 date is more probable. The clue may reside in a letter of April 1927:

> Just now I'm making a very careful study of *London* by means of maps, books, & pictures, in order to get background for tales involving richer antiquities than America can furnish. . . . If there's anything I hate, it's writing about a locality without an adequate knowledge of its history, topography, & general atmosphere; & I don't wish to make this blunder in anything I may concoct with an Old London setting.[38]

Lovecraft does not, of course, say in this letter or in any other I have read that he had actually written anything with a London setting; but "The Descendant" certainly has a London setting, as no other work of this period does. The only other clue to dating the fragment is the mention in it of Charles Fort; Lovecraft, although having previously heard of Fort, did not read any of his work until Donald Wandrei lent him *The Book of the Damned* in March 1927.[39]

I do not know that much more can be made of this piece; it is clearly a false start, and it is just as well that Lovecraft abandoned it after a few pages. It is written in that frenetic, overheated style of some of his earlier

tales—a style that Lovecraft, with "The Call of Cthulhu" and "The Colour out of Space," was wisely starting to abandon. This tale, like "The Rats in the Walls," brings Roman Britain into play; and, as in that story, Lovecraft continues to make errors regarding which legion was in England (the second, not the third Augustan) and the location of its legionary fortress (Isca Silurum [Caerleon-on-Usk], not Lindum [Lincoln]). Again, these changes could perhaps be deliberate, but I fail to see their point if they are. There is also a focus on the *Necronomicon,* and the scene in which one character purchases the tome from a "Jew's shop in the squalid precincts of Clare Market" is surprisingly similar to the opening sonnet of the later *Fungi from Yuggoth* (1929–30) sequence. Some external features of another character, Lord Northam, bring Arthur Machen and Lord Dunsany to mind, although in a superficial way. Northam lives at Gray's Inn, where Machen lived for many years; and Northam is the "nineteenth Baron of a line whose beginnings went uncomfortably far back into the past," just as Dunsany was the eighteenth Baron in a line founded in the twelfth century. Northam, like Randolph Carter in "The Silver Key," undertakes a wide-ranging sampling of various religious and aesthetic ideals ("Northam in youth and young manhood drained in turn the founts of formal religion and occult mystery"), allowing us perhaps to believe that the fragment was written after "The Silver Key." Beyond these things, there does not seem to be much to say about "The Descendant."

Just before writing "The Colour out of Space," Lovecraft had to hurry up and type "Supernatural Horror in Literature," since Cook wished it immediately for the *Recluse.* When he had returned from New York, Lovecraft noted that "somebody [C. M. Eddy?] has put me on the track of a list of weird fiction at the public library which (if I can get access to it) may cause me to expand the text considerably."[40] He did read, in the summer and fall of 1926, some material new to him and made a few additions. Among them was the substantial work of Walter de la Mare, whose two collections, *The Riddle and Other Stories* (1926) and *The Connoisseur and Other Stories* (1926), as well as the novel *The Return,* are among the most subtle examples of atmospheric and psychologically acute weird fiction of its time; Lovecraft came to rank de la Mare only just below his four "modern masters," and in later years yearned to achieve the sort of indirection and allusiveness found in de la Mare's best work—"Seaton's

Aunt," "All Hallows," "Mr. Kempe," and others. Other works he read at this time were Sax Rohmer's *Brood of the Witch Queen* (1924) and H. Rider Haggard's *She* (1887).[41] Cook's rush order, however, compelled Lovecraft to type up the essay without the more significant enlargements, whatever they may have been.[42] The typescript came to 72 pages. Cook must have done the typesetting incredibly rapidly, for he had already delivered the first set of page proofs to Lovecraft by the end of March, scarcely two weeks after he received the text.

Even this, however, was not quite the end. Late in the month Donald Wandrei lent F. Marion Crawford's superb posthumous collection of horror tales, *Wandering Ghosts* (1911), to Lovecraft,[43] while in April Lovecraft borrowed Robert W. Chambers's early collection *The King in Yellow* (1895) from Cook;[44] he was so taken with these works that he added paragraphs on both writers in the page proofs.

Neither Lovecraft's fondness for the weird work of Chambers (1865–1933) nor the amazement he expressed when he came upon it—". . . the forgotten early work of *Robert W. Chambers* (can you believe it?) who turned out some powerful bizarre stuff between 1895 & 1904"[45]—need be a surprise. *The King in Yellow,* he writes in "Supernatural Horror in Literature," "is a series of vaguely connected short stories having as a background a monstrous and suppressed book whose perusal brings fright, madness, and spectral tragedy"—in other words, rather uncannily like the *Necronomicon!* It is natural that some critics (such as Lin Carter), not knowing when Lovecraft first read Chambers, would think that *The King in Yellow* was the actual inspiration for the *Necronomicon.* Chambers's volume is a powerful collection and is now recognised as a landmark; indeed, Lovecraft himself is chiefly responsible for this recognition. Lovecraft went on to read some of Chambers's other weird work—*The Maker of Moons* (1896), *In Search of the Unknown* (1904), and the mediocre later novel, *The Slayer of Souls* (1920)—but never seems to have read *The Mystery of Choice* (1897), another early collection in some ways nearly equal to *The King in Yellow.* The "can you believe it?" remark relates to the fact that Chambers abandoned the weird around the turn of the century to write an endless series of shopgirl romances that were perennial best-sellers, making Chambers very wealthy but spelling his complete aesthetic ruination. Lovecraft correctly remarks, "Chambers is like Rupert Hughes & a few

other fallen Titans—equipped with the right brains & education, but wholly out of the habit of using them."[46]

The *Recluse* appeared in August 1927; although initially planned as a quarterly, this was the only issue ever published. It is a landmark in more ways than one; but I think it an error to regard it as being strictly a publication devoted to the weird. It certainly was not conceived as such, and the issue—although containing a large proportion of weird material by Lovecraft and his friends—was simply another of Cook's long line of amateur ventures. The lead item, taking up the first fourteen (out of seventy-seven) pages, is a detailed study of Vermont poets and poetry by Walter J. Coates. Lovecraft's essay does indeed take up the bulk of the issue (pages 23–59); he was, in fact, not certain whether Cook would run it all in the first issue, and as it turns out it was fortunate that Cook did so. There is some fine weird writing by Clark Ashton Smith (the poem "After Armageddon"; "Brumes et Pluies," translated from Baudelaire), Donald Wandrei (the story "A Fragment of a Dream" and the poem "In the Grave" [later titled "The Corpse Speaks"]), and H. Warner Munn (the story "The Green Porcelain Dog"); Frank Long's poem "Ballad of St. Anthony" is an admirable romantic specimen, and Samuel Loveman's essay on Hubert Crackanthorpe is a sensitive analysis. One of the most striking pieces is Vrest Orton's superb line drawing for the cover—a picture of a bearded old man poring over ancient tomes in a mediaeval study, with iron-hasped books and beakers containing strange substances heaped about, and three flickering candles providing scanty illumination. All in all, it is a remarkable cover to a remarkable issue.

Cook expressed the wish to send the *Recluse* to certain "celebrities," in particular to all four of Lovecraft's "modern masters," Machen, Dunsany, Blackwood, and M. R. James. As it happened, the issue did find its way to some of these figures, and their responses to Lovecraft's essay are of interest. James somewhat unkindly declared in a letter that Lovecraft's style "is of the most offensive"; his criticism evidently focusing on the fact that "He uses the word cosmic about 24 times." A little more charitably he remarks: "But he has taken pains to search about & treat the subject from its beginning to MRJ, to whom he devotes several columns."[47] Machen's response can only be gauged from Donald Wandrei's comment to Lovecraft: "I received a letter to-day from Machen, in which he mentioned your article and its hold on him."[48] I do not know of any comment by

Machen himself on Lovecraft's essay. Copies were also apparently sent to Blackwood, Dunsany, Rudyard Kipling, Charlotte Perkins Gilman, Mary E. Wilkins Freeman, and several others.

As early as April 1927 Lovecraft already had a "vague and nebulous idea"[49] of expanding "Supernatural Horror in Literature" for a putative second edition, and Cook occasionally mentioned the possibility of issuing such an edition separately as a monograph. Lovecraft set up a section in his commonplace book entitled "Books to mention in new edition of weird article," listing such things as Leonard Cline's superb novel of hereditary memory, *The Dark Chamber* (1927), Herbert Gorman's sinister novel of witchcraft in backwoods New England, *The Place Called Dagon* (1927), and other works he read in the subsequent months and years; but Cook's subsequent physical and financial collapse confounded, or at least delayed, the plans, and the second edition did not materialise until 1933, and in a form very different from what Lovecraft imagined.

Having by 1927 already published nearly a score of tales in *Weird Tales,* and finding that amateur work was at a virtual end with the demise of the UAPA, Lovecraft now began gathering colleagues specifically devoted to weird fiction. The last decade of his life would see him become a friend, correspondent, and mentor of more than a dozen writers who would follow in his footsteps and become well known in the fields of weird, mystery, and science fiction.

August Derleth (1909–1971) wrote to Lovecraft through *Weird Tales.* He must have written to Farnsworth Wright before Lovecraft's departure from New York in mid-April 1926, for Wright supplied Lovecraft's 169 Clinton Street address; Derleth wrote a direct letter to Lovecraft only in late July, and the latter responded at once in early August. From that time on, the two men kept up a steady correspondence—usually once a week—for the next ten and a half years.

Derleth had just finished high school in Sauk City, Wisconsin, and in the fall of 1926 would begin attendance at the University of Wisconsin at Madison, where in 1930 he would write as an honours thesis "The Weird Tale in English Since 1890"—a work embarrassingly dependent upon Lovecraft's "Supernatural Horror in Literature" and in part a plagiarism of some of its actual language. But Derleth was not a critic by nature; rather, his forte was fiction and, in lesser degree, poetry. As a fiction writer he

would reveal astounding range and precocity. Although his first story in *Weird Tales* dates to his eighteenth year ("Bat's Belfry" in the May 1926 issue), his weird tales—whether written by himself or in collaboration with the young Mark Schorer—would be in many ways the least interesting aspect of his work; they are conventional, relatively unoriginal, and largely undistinguished, and he readily admitted to Lovecraft that they were written merely to supply cash. Derleth's more serious work—for which he would eventually gain considerable renown, and which today remains the most significant branch of his output—is a series of regional sagas drawing upon his native Wisconsin and written in a poignant, Proustian, reminiscent vein whose simple elegance allows for evocative character portrayal. The first of these works to be published was *Place of Hawks* (1935), a series of novellas, although Derleth was working as early as 1929 on a novel he initially titled *The Early Years,* eventually published in 1941 as *Evening in Spring.* Those who fail to read these two works, along with their many successors in Derleth's long and fertile career, will have no conception why Lovecraft, as early as 1930, wrote with such enthusiasm about his younger colleague and disciple:

> Derleth impressed me tremendously favourably from the moment I began to hear from him personally. I saw that he had a prodigious fund of activity & reserve mental energy, & that it would only be a question of time before he began to correlate it to real aesthetic advantage. There was a bit of callow egotism also—but that was only to be expected . . . And surely enough, as the years passed, I saw that the kid was truly growing. The delicate reminiscent sketches begun a couple of years ago were the final proof—for there, indeed, he had reached what was unmistakably sincere & serious self-expression of a high order. . . . There was no disputing that he *really had something to say* . . . & that he was trying to say it honestly & effectively, with a minimum of the jaunty hack devices & stylistic tricks which went into his printed pot-boiling material.[50]

In later years Lovecraft marvelled both at Derleth's tremendous fecundity in reading and writing and at his Janus-like ability to write cheap hackwork for the pulp magazines while writing poignant sketches of human life for the little magazines.

Derleth was also attracted to the mystery field. In the early 1930s he began writing novels involving Judge Peck. Lovecraft read the first three of them (there would eventually be ten, the last in 1953) and spoke charitably of them, but in all frankness they are dreadful potboilers. In 1929 Derleth began a series of short stories—pastiches of Conan Doyle's Sherlock Holmes—involving Solar Pons; these are much more successful and may be considered among the best imitations of the Holmes canon in existence. They would eventually fill six volumes of short stories and one short novel.

In the early years of their association, Lovecraft and Derleth would spend much time talking of weird fiction; Derleth, in his zeal to sell his work, would alert Lovecraft to many new markets as they opened up, and he would later even take the initiative of submitting Lovecraft's stories to *Weird Tales* when Lovecraft himself felt reluctant to do so. Their discussions would also span modern literature, Derleth's own writing (Lovecraft would frequently offer advice for the revision of Derleth's tales, most of which Derleth ignored or rejected), spiritualism and paranormal phenomena (in which Derleth was a firm believer), and other matters. And yet, the correspondence never really develops an intimacy as those with Morton, Long, Smith, and others do. This may be because the two never met—Derleth once contemplated an eastern trip, but he never made it until after Lovecraft's death; Lovecraft, for his part, wistfully thought of going to Wisconsin, but never had the funds or, I suspect, the true inclination to do so—but it may also have something to do with Derleth's own personality. Lovecraft was right in thinking Derleth self-centred, and it is a trait that seemed only to increase as he became a "successful" writer with published books to his credit. Derleth had difficulty talking of anything aside from himself, and Lovecraft's replies, though always cordial, are limited by their subject-matter and seem reserved and formulaic. No doubt Lovecraft had great and sincere admiration for his young friend, who he frequently predicted would be the one writer of his circle to make a name for himself in general literature; but he never opened up to Derleth as he did to Long and Morton.

Donald Wandrei (1908–1987) got in touch with Lovecraft in late 1926 through Clark Ashton Smith. Smith was the first writer to whom Wandrei was devoted, and in some ways he remained Wandrei's model in both fiction and poetry. Through the influence of George Sterling, Wandrei's

rhapsodic appreciation of Smith, "The Emperor of Dreams," appeared in the *Overland Monthly* for December 1926. Here is an extract:

> Some of his poems are like shadowed gold; some are like flame-encircled ebony; some are crystal-clear and pure; others are as unearthly starshine. One is coldly wrought in marble; another is curiously carved in jade; there are a few glittering diamonds; and there are many rubies and emeralds aflame, glowing with a secret fire. Here and there may be found a poppy-flower, an orchid from the hot-bed of Hell, the whisper of an eldritch wind, a breath from the burning sands of region infernal.

And so on. Anyone who has fallen under the influence of Smith's poetry develops a fatal temptation to write about it like this. Wandrei certainly did better critical work, and his essay "Arthur Machen and *The Hill of Dreams*" (*Minnesota Quarterly,* Spring 1926) is a fine appreciation. But criticism was not his chief aesthetic outlet, although he did send Lovecraft the term papers on Gothic fiction he was writing at the University of Minnesota. Instead, Wandrei was initially attracted to poetry, and it should be no surprise that much of his early verse is heavily influenced by Smith. There is perhaps somewhat more horrific content in Wandrei's poetry than Smith's —as in the *Sonnets of the Midnight Hours,* to be considered a little later— but there is also a great deal of cosmic and love poetry, like Smith's. Some philosophical verse is tinged with the misanthropy and pessimism Wandrei felt in his youth, as in "Chaos Resolved":

> So few the days, so much that one could know,
> So little light, so many corridors,
> So dark whichever pathway one may go,
> So great the gap, and firmly barred the doors,
> That I am weary though I've gone not far,
> And find defeat ere I have much begun;
> Wherefor, solution distant as a star,
> And certainty, by doubt and change, undone,
> And conquest everlastingly beyond,
> Where no man walks, and shall not ever see,
> Nor ever have; and since this mortal bond
> Is too exacting for man's magistry,—
> Therefor am I, with what I have, content,

But still assail the deeper firmament.[51]

Wandrei was also experimenting with prose fiction—in some cases prose-poems, many of them appearing in his college's student magazine, the *Minnesota Quarterly,* and also with longer tales. He had already written one story, "The Chuckler," that was a very loose sequel to Lovecraft's "The Statement of Randolph Carter," although it would not be published until 1934. Some of this early work is quite striking, especially "The Red Brain" (*Weird Tales,* October 1927), which Wandrei had originally entitled "The Twilight of Time." It, along with several other works such as the celebrated "Colossus" (*Astounding Stories,* January 1934), reveals a staggeringly cosmic imagination second only to Lovecraft's in intensity; it is not surprising that the two men found much to talk about in the first year or so of their association. Like Derleth, who spent nearly the whole of his life in and around Sauk City, Wisconsin, Wandrei lived almost his entire life in his family home in St Paul, Minnesota, save for various periods in New York in the 1920s and '30s; but unlike the cheerful Derleth, Wandrei had a brooding and misanthropic streak that often intrigued Lovecraft and may perhaps have helped to shape his own later philosophical views.

I wish I knew more about Bernard Austin Dwyer (1897–1943), but as he published relatively little and was more an appreciator than a creator, he remains a nebulous figure. He lived nearly the whole of his life in and around the tiny village of West Shokan, in upstate New York, near the towns of Hurley, New Paltz, and Kingston. Although attracted to weird fiction and the author of a short poem published in *Weird Tales* ("Ol' Black Sarah" in the October 1928 issue), his chief interest was weird art; and in this capacity he naturally became fast friends with Clark Ashton Smith. Lovecraft met him in 1928 and spoke of him warmly:

> Dwyer is quite a chap, beyond a doubt; with a lot more points in his favour than against him. He has an imagination of the utmost sensitiveness, delicacy, and picturesqueness; and the way he assimilates the many books I lend him (for he has no way of getting books himself in his absolute backwoods isolation) is a proof of his thorough intelligence, sound aesthetic sense, and deep-seated literary sincerity. . . . As Wandrei has probably told you, he is a handsome, youngish near-giant—a mighty woodcutter and athlete and a modest, well-bred, and generally unspoiled personality as a whole.[52]

One gains the impression that Dwyer was a kind of mute, inglorious Milton. He came in touch with Lovecraft through *Weird Tales* in the early part of 1927.

In the spring of 1927 Frank Belknap Long met Vincent Starrett as the latter was passing through New York and gave him some of Lovecraft's stories to read. In April a brief correspondence sprang up between the two —the first, and nearly the last, time that Lovecraft came into contact with a recognised literary figure.

Starrett (1886–1974) had already achieved renown for his bibliography of Ambrose Bierce (1920), his collection of essays, *Buried Caesars* (1923), containing fine appreciations of Bierce, Cabell, W. C. Morrow, and other writers, and especially for his championing of Arthur Machen. Starrett had done much to introduce Machen to American readers, writing the essay *Arthur Machen: A Novelist of Ecstasy and Sin* (1918) and compiling two volumes of Machen's miscellaneous works, *The Shining Pyramid* (1923) and *The Glorious Mystery* (1925). These volumes had, indeed, given rise to a contretemps between the Welsh author and his American disciple (now gathered in *Starrett vs. Machen,* 1978), as Machen felt that Starrett's publication of these books with the Chicago firm of Covici-McGee undermined Knopf's efforts to reprint his work in a standard American edition; but in a few years the feud was settled. Starrett was, as I have mentioned, one of the few established authors to contribute to the early issues of *Weird Tales,* and he either forgot, did not notice, or did not care about Lovecraft's tart comment on his story "Penelope" in the May 1923 issue: "'Penelope' is clever—but Holy Pete! If the illustrious Starrett's ignorance of astronomy is an artfully conceived attribute of his character's whimsical narrative, I'll say he's right there with the verisimilitude!" (letter to the editor, printed in the October 1923 issue).

The correspondence, which lasted nearly a year (April 1927–January 1928), was cordial but reserved. Lovecraft sent Starrett several more of his tales, as well as a copy of the *Recluse* with "Supernatural Horror in Literature"; but it appears that Starrett eventually grew weary of writing to Lovecraft. It is not clear if Lovecraft expected anything to come of the association; he wrote to Wandrei: ". . . if he likes my junk he could probably help a good deal with editors by speaking a good word for it; but I doubt if he will grow very enthusiastic."[53] Starrett does indeed seem to have liked Lovecraft's stories, but apparently not enough to do any active promotion of

them at the time. After Lovecraft's death he would write favourable reviews of some of Lovecraft's posthumously published volumes in the *Chicago Tribune.*

One colleague who came to Lovecraft's attention at this time but who was not an enthusiast of the weird is Walter J. Coates (1880–1941). Coates had, as I have mentioned, written the lengthy essay on Vermont literature that opens the *Recluse.* I imagine he got in touch with Lovecraft through Cook, although I am not sure what reason he had for doing so; they clearly shared a fondness for backwoods New England, and very likely discussed this subject in their correspondence (most of which has not been made available to me). Coates had at about this time founded the regional magazine *Driftwind,* and in one of the early issues he published Lovecraft's essay "The Materialist Today" (October 1926). Lovecraft declared that this was part of a letter to Coates and prepared for publication at Coates's insistence.[54] Coates also issued it as a pamphlet in a print run of 15 copies, making it one of the rarest of Lovecraft's separate publications; indeed, for many years it was thought that no copies of it survived, but lately one or two copies have surfaced. Various of Lovecraft's remarks suggest that it actually predates the magazine appearance. The essay is a short, compact, and somewhat cynical enunciation of materialist principles. Coates would later publish several of Lovecraft's *Fungi from Yuggoth* sonnets in *Driftwind.*

In the summer of 1927 Lovecraft both played host to a succession of visitors to Providence and undertook several journeys of his own—something that would become a habit every spring and summer, as he roamed increasingly widely in quest of antiquarian oases. First on the agenda was his new friend Donald Wandrei, who undertook a trip from St Paul, Minnesota, to Providence entirely by hitchhiking. One would like to think that such an expedition was a little safer then than it would be now, and perhaps it was; Wandrei seemed to have no difficulty getting rides, even though on occasion he had to spend nights under the open sky, sometimes in the rain. He himself remarked in a postcard to Lovecraft: ". . . I think I am unusually fortunate in general because I don't look like a bum."[55] Indeed, Wandrei was a gaunt six-footer who, in some photographs of this period, seems to bear an uncanny resemblance to Boris Karloff's portrayal of Frankenstein's monster.

Arriving in Chicago on the 20th of June, where he confirmed all Lovecraft's impressions of the place ("Unimpressed. Going on. The city is filthy"[56]), Wandrei went to the *Weird Tales* office and met Farnsworth Wright. Lovecraft himself had spoken to Wright about Wandrei's work early in the year, and perhaps as a result of this Wandrei's "The Twilight of Time"—rejected a year earlier—was accepted in March, appearing under its better-known but less stimulating title "The Red Brain" in the October 1927 issue. Wandrei felt the need to return the favour, so he spoke to Wright about "The Call of Cthulhu." In a memoir he supplies an engaging account of what he said:

> I casually worked in a reference to a story, *The Call of Cthulhu,* that Lovecraft was revising and finishing and which I thought was a wonderful tale. But I added that for some reason or other, Lovecraft had talked about submitting it to other magazines. I said I just couldn't understand why he was apparently planning to by-pass *Weird Tales* unless he was seeking to broaden his markets or widen his reading public. None of this was true, but I could see that my fanciful account took effect, in the way Wright began to fidget and show signs of agitation . . .[57]

As we have seen, Wright indeed asked Lovecraft to resubmit the tale and then accepted it for $165.00; it appeared in the February 1928 issue. The amusing thing is that Lovecraft's letter to Wright accompanying the tale—the landmark letter of July 5, 1927, in which he enunciated his theory of extraterrestrialism—casually mentioned the acceptance of "The Colour out of Space" by *Amazing,* thereby unwittingly fostering Wandrei's charade! This did not, of course, prevent Wright from rejecting "The Strange High House in the Mist" (it was "not sufficiently clear for the acute minds of his highly intelligent readers"[58]) and "The Silver Key" later in the summer; but in both cases he asked to see them again. "The Silver Key" was accepted the next year for $70.00, but, although Wright specifically asked to see it in the summer of 1929, Lovecraft did not immediately resubmit "The Strange High House" because it had been promised for the second issue of Cook's *Recluse;*[59] by 1931, however, when it was clear that the *Recluse* was defunct, Lovecraft let Wright have it for $55.00. It appeared in October 1931.

Wandrei, meanwhile, continued on from Chicago through Fort Wayne, Indiana, Wooster, Ohio, Lancaster, Pennsylvania, and finally New York

City. Initially, of course—in spite of Lovecraft's furious rants about the loathsomeness of the place—Wandrei was overwhelmed and captivated; and yet, in some ways his response was not dissimilar to Lovecraft's: "So far, I have been fascinated by the city, its immensity, and wealth, and speed. But, like you, I hate the people. I have been through good districts only as yet, but everywhere are mongrel anthropoid types, the scum of Europe and Asia. I can not imagine what the slums contain."[60] But there was always the gang: he met Long, Loveman, Kirk, and the rest, and did all the things that a tourist of his type would do—bookstore hunting, museum going, reading his fellow writers' works in progress, and the like. Lovecraft had sent him a long letter detailing some of the high spots (in his view) that he should see, including some of the unspoiled suburbs, particularly Flushing and Hempstead; but it does not appear as if Wandrei had much of an opportunity to follow Lovecraft's suggestions. Lovecraft also gave him detailed instructions on how to reach his home once he got to Providence, supplying also the telephone number of 10 Barnes (DExter 9617). (It was not his private line, but that of his landlady, Florence Reynolds.)

On July 12 Wandrei arrived in Providence, staying till the 29th. Lovecraft had arranged for him to stay in an upstairs room at 10 Barnes for $3.50 a week. Very shortly after his arrival Lovecraft began squiring him to what had by now become the customary sights in both Providence and the surrounding area. On the 13th the two went to Newport, where Wandrei could indulge his lifelong wish to look out over the open sea. The next few days were spent in Quinsnicket and Roger Williams Parks, where Wandrei relates an amusing occurrence:

> One afternoon he put the morning mail and writing supplies in a cardboard portmanteau, and we went to Roger Williams Park where he sat on a bench using the back of the portmanteau as a writing surface. I climbed up on a huge outcrop of rock nearby, and fell asleep in the warm sun. About two hours later I wakened, to find Lovecraft casting an anxious eye in my direction. I quite mistook his meaning, and when I clambered down assured him I was a light sleeper and in no danger of falling off the giant boulder. But he blandly and without malice informed me that he was not at all concerned about my safety; anyone able to nap on solid rock was unlikely to fracture so thick a hide by a mere tumble to lesser rocks below; the sun was

> westering, however, and since he had no topcoat he was anxious to return home before the evening chill set in.[61]

Wandrei goes on to note that Lovecraft had written a dozen or so letters and postcards during this period, as well as several pages of a "bulky reply" to Long. Even the advent of a guest could not allow Lovecraft an intermission from his customary "wrestling" with correspondence, lest he fall hopelessly behind.

On the 16th Lovecraft and Wandrei set out for Boston, staying over at the YMCA, and the next day went to Salem and Marblehead. The Boston excursion was somewhat of a disappointment, in spite of their taking in the superb Museum of Fine Arts and some of the colonial sites. Lovecraft had been especially keen on showing Wandrei the sinister, decaying North End where "Pickman's Model" was set, but was mortified to find that "the actual alley & house of the tale [had been] utterly demolished; a whole crooked line of buildings having been torn down."[62] (Copp's Hill, of course, being an historic cemetery, still flourishes in its spectral way.) This remark is of interest in indicating that Lovecraft had an actual house in mind for Pickman's North End studio.

On Tuesday, July 19, Frank Long and his parents drove up from New York City, while simultaneously James F. Morton came down from Green Acre, Maine, where he had been visiting. Morton stayed at the Crown Hotel downtown, but the Longs put up at 10 Barnes in rooms directly across from Lovecraft's on the first floor. There was the usual round of Providence sightseeing, and on the evening of the 20th C. M. Eddy joined the crowd for a gang meeting. The next day the entire crew went to Newport, where Morton, Wandrei, and Lovecraft went to the Hanging Rocks and wrote impromptu verses on Bishop George Berkeley, who had stayed briefly there and written his *Alciphron; or, The Minute Philosopher* (1732). (The verses are not extant.)

On the 22nd the Longs left, continuing their voyage up to Cape Cod, Maine, and elsewhere. Morton then dragged Lovecraft and Wandrei to the rock quarry on which Lovecraft still held the mortgage, and for which he was still receiving his pittance of a payment ($37.08) every six months. The owner, Mariano de Magistris, set his men to hunting up specimens, while his son drove them home in his car. "That's what I call real Latin courtesy!" Lovecraft remarked in a rare show of tolerance for non-Aryans.[63]

On Saturday the 23rd occurred an historic pilgrimage—to Julia A. Maxfield's in Warren, where Lovecraft, Morton, and Wandrei staged an ice-cream-eating contest. Maxfield's advertised twenty-eight flavours of ice cream, and the contestants sampled them all:

> Each would order a double portion—two kinds—and by dividing equally would ensure *six* flavours each round. *Five* rounds took us all through the twenty-eight and two to carry. Mortonius and I each consumed two and one-half quarts, but Wandrei fell down toward the last. Now James Ferdinand and I will have to stage an elimination match to determine the champion![64]

Wandrei notes that, even after "falling down," he managed to dip his spoon into the remaining flavours so that he could at least say he had tasted them all. The three of them wrote out a statement saying that they had tried all twenty-eight flavours and signed their names; on later visits they were delighted to find that the statement had been framed and posted on the wall of the store!

That afternoon a contingent from Athol, Massachusetts, arrived—W. Paul Cook and his protégé, H. Warner Munn (1903–1981). Lovecraft had no doubt heard something of Munn before. Munn's "The Werewolf of Ponkert" (*Weird Tales,* July 1925) was apparently inspired by a comment in Lovecraft's letter to Edwin Baird published in the March 1924 issue ("Take a werewolf story, for instance—who ever wrote a story from the point of view of the wolf, and sympathising strongly with the devil to whom he has sold himself?"). Although Munn failed to understand the thrust of Lovecraft's remark, making the wolf lament his anomalous condition, the story proved popular and Munn went on to write several sequels to it. He contributed extensively to the pulps and over his long career wrote many supernatural and adventure novels; but perhaps his most distinguished works were historical novels written late in his career, notably *Merlin's Ring* (1974) and *The Lost Legion* (1980). The latter, a long novel about a Roman legion that wanders to China, would have fired Lovecraft's imagination. Lovecraft took to Munn readily, finding him "a splendid young chap—blond and burly";[65] he would visit him frequently when passing through Athol.

At some point during his stay Wandrei badgered Lovecraft to let him read his short novels of 1926–27, *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath*

and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* still untyped and destined to remain so to the end of Lovecraft's life. Wandrei thereby became the first person other than their creator to lay eyes on these texts; he gives no opinion of them in his subsequent letters or his later memoirs, but Lovecraft made a passing comment in a 1930 letter: "Wandrei read [the *Dream-Quest*] in manuscript & didn't think much of it."[66] And yet, Wandrei's interest may be gauged by the fact that a few years later he offered to type them. Lovecraft, horrified at the prospect of someone undertaking this backbreaking toil on works whose value he greatly questioned, scuttled the idea.

On the 29th Wandrei finally left, heading up to Athol via Worcester. After that he went to West Shokan, New York, where he stayed a day or two with Bernard Austin Dwyer. Then he began the long trek home, finally reaching St Paul on the 11th of August and writing Lovecraft a one-word postcard: "Home!!!"[67] Lovecraft clearly enjoyed Wandrei's visit: almost every one of his letters and postcards to Wandrei over the next few years expresses the wish that he return, but Wandrei did not have the opportunity to do so until 1932.

Lovecraft's own travels were, however, by no means over. On August 19 he went up to Worcester, where Cook picked him up and brought him back to Athol for a brief stay. The next day (his thirty-eighth birthday) Cook took Lovecraft to Amherst and Deerfield, the latter town of which Lovecraft found extraordinarily captivating. On Sunday the 21st they went to Lake Sunapee, New Hampshire, where Cook's sister lived. From here they made an unexpected detour into Vermont to visit the amateur poet Arthur Goodenough. A decade before, Goodenough had praised Lovecraft in a poem ("Lovecraft—an Appreciation") containing the grotesque image, "Laurels from thy very temples sprout." Lovecraft had thought Goodenough was spoofing him, and Cook had difficulty preventing Lovecraft from writing some devastating reply; instead, he wrote a poem in return, "To Arthur Goodenough, Esq." (*Tryout,* September 1918). Now, when meeting him, Lovecraft was captivated by Goodenough, and especially by the archaic and rustic charm of his dress and demeanour:

> Goodenough is a typical old-time rustic of a pattern almost extinct today. He has never seen a city of any size, & seldom goes even to the adjacent small town of Brattleboro. In speech, dress, & manner he reflects an admirable though vanished phase

> of American life . . . His stately courtesy & hospitality are worthy of the 17th century to which he intellectually belongs . . . [68]

He exclaimed to Cook, "Why, the man is genuine!" Cook replied, "Howard, you are yourself genuine, although different from Arthur."[69]

Lovecraft later wrote a rhapsodic essay on his entire Vermont visit, "Vermont—A First Impression," which appropriately enough appeared in Coates's *Driftwind* for March 1928. I shall have more to say of this visit, and of the essay, farther on.

After a few more days in Athol, Lovecraft went on a lone tour first to Boston on the 24th and then, the next day, to Portland, Maine. He spent two days in Portland and enjoyed the town immensely: although it was not as rich in antiquities as Marblehead or Portsmouth, it was scenically lovely—it occupies a peninsula with hills at the eastern and western ends, and has many beautiful drives and promenades—and at least had things like the two Longfellow houses (birthplace and principal residence), which Lovecraft explored thoroughly. On the 26th he took a side-trip to Yarmouth, a colonial town thirteen miles northeast of Portland on the coast, and on the 27th he took a cheap excursion to the White Mountains in New Hampshire—the first time Lovecraft saw "real mountains"[70] (if one can so refer to eminences less than 6300 feet above sea level).

Sunday the 28th found Lovecraft in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and the next day he returned to Newburyport, Massachusetts, which he had not seen since 1923. He stayed there until the 30th, at which time he went to Amesbury and Haverhill, stopping by at the home of his old amateur friend C. W. Smith. He would write up his travels in a very compressed and, frankly, not very interesting essay called "The Trip of Theobald," which Smith would publish in the *Tryout* for September 1927. Wednesday the 31st he returned to Newburyport, thence moving on to Ipswich and then to Gloucester. He had not been to the latter place since 1922 (when he went with Sonia), and found it much more stimulating this time:

> Pre-Revolutionary houses are more numerous than I expected, & there is a ghoulish hidden graveyard just off a side street. An 1805 belfry dominates the skyline. I climbed a high hill & had a stupendous view. Gloucester has an *active* maritime atmosphere not possessed by any other town I have seen. Its whole

> community life is unique & local, & the main street retains most of its Georgian brick buildings.[71]

He spent two days in Gloucester, after which he passed through Manchester, Marblehead, and Salem, finally coming home on September 2. This two-week trek through four states was entirely delightful; in "The Trip of Theobald" he wrote: "The trip, as a whole, exceeded all others I have taken in general pleasure and picturesqueness, and will surely be difficult to improve upon in future years." And yet, each spring and summer for the next eight years would see trips of increasing scope, so that he would be inclined to repeat that last statement after almost every one of them.

In September Wilfred B. Talman visited Lovecraft in Providence and hectored him to coordinate and expand his genealogical data. Talman was an indefatigable genealogist, and his enthusiasm infected Lovecraft at least to the degree of ascertaining his coat of arms (Arms: Vert, a Chevron engrailed, Or, between three Foxes' Heads, erased, Or; Crest: On a wreath, a Tower, Or; Motto: *Quae amamus tuemur*) and in hypothesising some frivolously recherché connexions to certain distinguished individuals. Through a Welsh ancestor, Rachel Morris, he found a link to David Jenkins of Machynlleth ("get that, Arthur?"); through the Fulford line he hooked up to the Moretons ("Shades of Edward John *Moreton* Drax Plunkett! I don't know what—if any—the relationship is, but I'm now calling Dunsany 'Cousin Ned'");[72] an even more remote connexion linked him to Owen Gwynedd, Prince of North Wales. "Now GWYNEDD is obviously the source of the modern name *Gwinnett* . . . and thus I am very clearly a second or third or three-thousandth cousin of my fellow-fantaisiste *Ambrose Gwinnett Bierce!* . . . No use talking—all us Machyns and Moretons and Gwynetts jes' nachelly take to imaginative writing. It's in the blood—ya can't stop us!"[73] All this is good fun; but, even though the Gwynedd/Gwinnett connexion is meant in fun, Lovecraft probably did not know that Bierce's father took the name Ambrose Gwinnett from a pseudonymously published pamphlet of 1770 entitled *The Life and Strange, Unparallel'd, and Unheard-of Voyages and Adventures of Ambrose Gwinet.*[74] Strangely enough, the pseudonym used for this publication was Isaac Bickerstaffe, which Lovecraft himself had used in 1914.

Meanwhile various prospects for the book publication of Lovecraft's stories were developing. As early as the summer of 1926, the redoubtable J. C.

Henneberger reemerged on the scene with importunate requests to be allowed to market a collection of Lovecraft's stories; Lovecraft did so, "to keep him quiet,"[75] but clearly nothing came of this improbable venture.

A more serious possibility began taking shape late that year when Farnsworth Wright broached the idea of a collection. Lovecraft noted: ". . . one of the business backers of W.T. says he is going to show certain things of mine to publishers; but I don't really think anything will come of it."[76] This project would keep Lovecraft dangling for several years before finally collapsing. The reasons for this are perhaps not far to seek. Sometime in 1927 *Weird Tales* (under its official imprint, the Popular Fiction Publishing Company) issued *The Moon Terror* by A. G. Birch and others; it contained the title novelette, which was wildly popular when it appeared as a two-part serial in May and June 1923, along with other stories from early issues ("Ooze" by Anthony M. Rud, "Penelope" by Vincent Starrett, and "An Adventure in the Fourth Dimension" by Farnsworth Wright). For whatever reason, the book was a complete commercial disaster, remaining in print nearly as long as *Weird Tales* itself was in existence (1954). And, of course, the onset of the depression hit the magazine very hard, and for various periods in the 1930s it was forced to adopt a bimonthly schedule; at this time the issuance of a book was the last thing on the publishers' minds.

Nevertheless, in late December 1927 negotiations were still serious enough for Lovecraft to write a long letter giving his own preferences as to the contents. The collection was planned for about 45,000 words, and Lovecraft considered the "*indispensable* nucleus" to consist of the following stories: "The Outsider," "Arthur Jermyn," "The Rats in the Walls," "The Picture in the House," "Pickman's Model," "The Music of Erich Zann," "Dagon," "The Statement of Randolph Carter," and "The Cats of Ulthar." This, according to Lovecraft's count, would come to 32,400 words. He then wished one of the following three longer stories to be included—"The Colour out of Space," "The Call of Cthulhu" (not yet published), or "The Horror at Red Hook," with preference for "Colour"—and, as "fillers," some of his shorter tales, such as "The Festival," "The Unnamable," or "The Terrible Old Man."

On the whole, this would have made a very worthy collection—certainly it would have contained much of the best that Lovecraft had written up to this time. It would have been better, perhaps, to have included both "Colour" and "Cthulhu," but the volume still would have been

substantial. One remark made in Lovecraft's long letter is worth quoting: "As for a *title*—my choice is *The Outsider and Other Stories.* This is because I consider the touch of cosmic *outsideness*—of dim, shadowy *non-terrestrial* hints—to be the characteristic feature of my writing."[77]

One story Lovecraft only grudgingly offered for the collection was "The Lurking Fear," which he dismissed as "thunderously melodramatic" but nevertheless one that "ought to please the followers of Nictzin Dyalhis and his congeners." (Dyalhis was a wretched writer of hack space operas.) Lovecraft sent the tale to Wright, who surprised him by wanting to print it in *Weird Tales* for $78.00. Lovecraft was for a time concerned about the possibility of a copyright problem with *Home Brew,* but, given that the magazine had folded years ago, he came to the conclusion that no conflict existed and permitted Wright to print the tale in spite of his aesthetic misgivings.

A story Lovecraft did not offer (probably just as well, as Wright had already rejected it for the magazine) was "The Shunned House," which W. Paul Cook wished to publish as a small book. Cook had initially conceived of including it in the *Recluse,*[78] but presumably held off because the magazine had already attained enormous size. Then, around February 1927, he first broached the idea of printing it as a chapbook.[79] Cook had issued Long's slim collection of poetry, *The Man from Genoa,* in early 1926 (the book had been financed by Long's wealthy aunt, Mrs William B. Symmes[80]), and later that year issued Loveman's *The Hermaphrodite;* "The Shunned House" would complete a trilogy of books uniform in format. The book was planned for 60 pages, which could be managed by printing the text with a large amount of white space on the borders. Later Cook asked Frank Long to write a preface, even though Lovecraft felt that a preface to a short story was ridiculous.

The issuance of the *Recluse* delayed work on this book project, but in the spring of 1928 things began to move. By late May Cook was importuning Lovecraft to read proofs quickly, and Lovecraft did so in early June even though he was then on another extensive series of travels.[81] By the end of June Lovecraft announced that *The Shunned House* was all printed but not bound.[82] About 300 copies were printed.

Unfortunately, things soured at this very moment. Both Cook's finances and his health were in a very shaky state. Already in February 1928 Lovecraft notified Wandrei—who had paid Cook to print his first volume of

poems, *Ecstasy*—that Cook had suffered some sort of nervous breakdown, causing a delay in the book.[83] Cook managed to recover from this and get out *Ecstasy* in April; but *The Shunned House*—which Cook was financing, without any contribution by Lovecraft—had to be put on the back burner. In late July Cook and his wife moved to a 100-acre farm east of Athol, but found that it had no heat and that they could not install heating before the winter, so they had to move out. Then, in January 1930, Cook's wife died and Cook suffered another and severer nervous breakdown. Moreover, he was having trouble with his appendix: he knew he should have an operation to remove it, but had such a phobia of the surgeon's knife that he delayed for months or even years on the procedure. Somehow he managed to limp along feebly; but then the depression completed his devastation, and emergence of *The Shunned House* became increasingly remote. By the summer of 1930 Lovecraft heard that the sheets had been sent to a binder in Boston,[84] but the book still did not come out. The matter hung fire all the way to Lovecraft's death.

Another book project involved editing rather than writing. In February 1927 John Ravenor Bullen, Lovecraft's Canadian amateur associate, died. In the fall of that year a friend of his in Chicago named Archibald Freer decided to finance the issuance of Bullen's collected poetry as a tribute to the man and a gift to his family. Bullen's mother selected Lovecraft to edit the volume—during his lifetime Bullen had already talked with Lovecraft about assisting him in preparing just such a volume[85]—and Lovecraft chose Cook as the publisher. Lovecraft found only forty of Bullen's poems fit for the book, and he no doubt revised them to some small degree; he also refurbished his article, "The Poetry of John Ravenor Bullen" (from the *United Amateur,* September 1925), as an introduction. The volume was entitled *White Fire.* Freer was very free with money, at one point sending an extra $500 so that Cook could do a more lavish job in printing and binding. The end result—which Lovecraft, although complaining bitterly about the tedium of revising and proofreading, claimed was the one book he knew that was absolutely without typographical errors—really is a very fine product. The regular edition sold for $2.00, and there was also a special leather-bound edition, which I have never seen and whose price I do not know. Although dated on the title page to 1927, the book came out only in January 1928.[86] Lovecraft sent out a good many complimentary and review copies, but I have not seen any reviews. Lovecraft reported one

appearing in the *Honolulu Star-Bulletin* written by Clifford Gessler, a poet who was a friend of Frank Long.[87]

Meanwhile there was some other encouraging news. Late in 1927 Derleth told Lovecraft of a new magazine, *Tales of Magic and Mystery,* which began publication with an issue dated December 1927. This magazine (it is debatable whether it should be considered a pulp) was to feature both fact and fiction of a mystical or occult variety. Lovecraft sent the editor, Walter B. Gibson, eight stories; one by one they were rejected, but Gibson at last accepted "Cool Air." It appeared in the March 1928 issue. In various letters of the period Lovecraft states that he received $17.50, $18.00, and $18.50 for the story (about ½¢ per word). No doubt this did not encourage him to submit any more stories to the magazine, which in any case folded after its fifth (April 1928) issue. "Cool Air" is now regarded as the only notable contribution in the entire run.

Late in 1927 Lovecraft received *You'll Need a Night Light,* a British anthology edited by Christine Campbell Thomson and published by Selwyn & Blount. It contained "The Horror at Red Hook," marking the first time that a story of Lovecraft's appeared in hardcover. The volume was part of a series of "Not at Night" books edited by Thomson; the stories for most of the volumes were culled from *Weird Tales,* and several of Lovecraft's tales and revisions would later be reprinted. Although pleased at its appearance, Lovecraft had no illusions as to the anthology's merits. "As for that 'Not at Night'—that's a mere lowbrow hash of absolutely no taste or significance. Aesthetically speaking, it doesn't exist."[88]

Rather more significant—and indeed, one of the most important items in the critical recognition of Lovecraft prior to his death—was the appearance of "The Colour out of Space" on the "Roll of Honor" of the 1928 volume of Edward J. O'Brien's *Best Short Stories.* When Lovecraft first heard from O'Brien, he was not sure whether the story was actually going to be reprinted in the volume or merely receive the highest (three-star) ranking and be listed in the "Roll of Honor"; when he learned it would be the latter, he downplayed the matter: "the 'biographical roll of honour' is so long as to lack all essential distinction."[89] This is not at all the case, and Lovecraft had eminent reason to be proud of the distinction (as, in fact, he clearly was). In the 1924 volume "The Picture in the House" had received a one-star ranking, and in the 1928 volume of the *O. Henry Memorial Award Prize Stories* (edited by Blanche Colton Williams and published by

Doubleday, Doran) "Pickman's Model" was placed in a category of "Stories Ranking Third"; but Lovecraft properly had less regard for the *O. Henry* series, as its selections tended to cater more to popular taste than to abstract literary merit, as O'Brien's did. Lovecraft would receive rankings in several subsequent O'Brien and *O. Henry* volumes, but this first appearance always remained unique.

Lovecraft sent O'Brien a somewhat lengthy autobiographical paragraph; he expected O'Brien merely to select from it, but instead the latter printed it intact, and it occupied eighteen lines of text, longer than any other biography in the volume. It is worth quoting in full:

> LOVECRAFT, HOWARD PHILLIPS. Was born of old Yankee-English stock on August 20, 1890, in Providence, Rhode Island. Has always lived there except for very brief periods. Educated in local schools and privately; ill-health precluding university. Interested early in colour and mystery of things. More youthful products—verse and essays—voluminous, valueless, mostly privately printed. Contributed astronomical articles to press 1906–18. Serious literary efforts now confined to tales of dream-life, strange shadow, and cosmic "outsideness", notwithstanding sceptical rationalism of outlook and keen regard for the sciences. Lives quietly and eventlessly, with classical and antiquarian tastes. Especially fond of atmosphere of colonial New England. Favourite authors—in most intimate personal sense—Poe, Arthur Machen, Lord Dunsany, Walter de la Mare, Algernon Blackwood. Occupation—literary hack work including revision and special editorial jobs. Has contributed macabre fiction to *Weird Tales* regularly since 1923. Conservative in general perspective and method so far as compatible with phantasy in art and mechanistic materialism in philosophy. Lives in Providence, Rhode Island.

Again we may take note of some of the things Lovecraft does *not* say, especially his marriage to Sonia. But on the whole this is an exceptionally accurate and compact account of Lovecraft's life and beliefs, and all that is required to flesh out the picture is masses of detail.

In the autumn of 1927 Frank Belknap Long took it into his head to write a longish short story entitled "The Space-Eaters." This story can be said to

have two distinctive qualities: it is the first work to involve Lovecraft as a character (if we exclude whimsies like Edith Miniter's "Falco Ossifracus," in which the central character, while modelled on Randolph Carter, shares some characteristics with Lovecraft), and—although this point is somewhat debatable—it is the first "addition" to Lovecraft's mythos.

The characters in the story are actually named Frank and Howard (no last names are provided). Long told Lovecraft about the story, and the latter in mock-sternness warned Long about how he should be portrayed: ". . . look here, young man, you'd better be mighty careful how you treat your aged and dignified Grandpa as here! You mustn't make me do anything cheerful or wholesome, and remember that only the direst of damnations can befit so inveterate a daemon of the cosmic abysses. And, young man, *don't forget that I am prodigiously lean.* I am *lean*—LEAN, I tell you! *Lean!"* [90] The crash diet of 1925 was probably still fresh in his memory. On this point, however, he need not have worried. Long writes in the story: "He was a tall, slim man with a slight stoop and abnormally broad shoulders. In profile his face was impressive. He had an extremely broad forehead, long nose, and slightly protuberant chin—a strong, sensitive face which suggested a wildly imaginative nature held in restraint by a skeptical and truly extraordinary intellect."[91] And yet, to be perfectly honest, "The Space-Eaters" is a preposterous and ridiculous story. This wild, histrionic account of some entities who are apparently "eating their way through space," are attacking people's brains, but are in some mysterious manner prevented from overwhelming the earth, is frankly an embarrassment. In this sense, however, it is sadly prophetic of most of the "contributions" other writers would make to Lovecraft's conceptions.

Whether it is indeed an addition to or extrapolation from Lovecraft's mythos is a debatable question. The entities in question are never named, and there are no references to any of Lovecraft's "gods" (only Cthulhu and Yog-Sothoth had even been invented at this time, the latter in the unpublished *Case of Charles Dexter Ward*). What there is, however, is an epigraph (omitted from the first appearance—*Weird Tales,* July 1928—and many subsequent reprintings) from "John Dee's Necronomicon"—i.e., from a purported English translation of Olaus Wormius's Latin translation of the *Necronomicon.* Lovecraft did make frequent citations of this Dee translation in later stories. This phenomenon will recur throughout Lovecraft's lifetime: a writer—usually a colleague—would either devise an elaboration

upon some myth-element in Lovecraft's stories or would create an entirely new element, which Lovecraft would then co-opt in some subsequent story of his own. This whole procedure was largely meant in fun—as a way of investing this growing body of myth with a sense of actuality by its citation in different texts, and also as a sort of tip of the hat to each writer's creations. What the phenomenon became after Lovecraft's death is worth separate treatment.

Lovecraft, meanwhile, was doing relatively little fiction writing of his own—he had written nothing since "The Colour out of Space." What he did do, however, on Hallowe'en was to have a spectacular dream that might well have been incorporated into a story but never was—not, at least, by Lovecraft. He maintained that his reading of James Rhoades's translation of the *Aeneid* (1921) exactly around the Hallowe'en period engendered the dream—the most vivid he had had in years. Rhoades's *Aeneid* really is a fine rendition, in smoothly flowing pentameter blank verse. Consider the passage Lovecraft found most stimulating—"Anchises' prophecy of future Roman glory"[92] at the end of Book VI:

> "Others the breathing brass shall softlier mould,
> I doubt not, draw the lineaments of life
> From marble, at the bar plead better, trace
> With rod the courses of the sky, or tell
> The rise of stars: remember, Roman, thou,
> To rule the nations as their master: these
> Thine arts shall be, to engraft the law of peace,
> Forbear the conquered, and war down the proud."[93]

Lovecraft's dream is a spectacular one in which he adopted a different persona—that of Lucius Caelius Rufus, a provincial quaestor in Hispania Citerior—and spent days in and around the towns of Calagurris (Calabarra) and Pompelo (Pamplona), Spain. He had argued with Cnaeus Balbutius, legatus of the XIIth Legion, about the need to extirpate a group of strange dark folk (*miri nigri*) who dwelt in the hills near Pompelo. These folk, who spoke a language not understood either by Romans or by locals, usually kidnapped a small number of Celtiberian citizens for nameless rites on the Kalends of May and November; but this year there had been a scuffle in the market in which some of these folk had been killed, and what was worrying Rufus was that so far no townspeople had been taken: "It was *not natural* for the Strange Dark Folk to spare them like that. *Something worse* must be

brewing."[94] Balbutius, however, did not think it wise to rouse up possible resentment by moving against the dark folk—they seemed to have many sympathisers and followers in the colony. But Rufus persisted, calling in the proconsul, Publius Scribonius Libo. Libo, convinced by Rufus of the need to suppress the dark folk, ordered Balbutius to send a cohort to Pompelo to put down the menace; he himself went along, as did Rufus, Balbutius, and other prominent officials. As they approached the hills, the continual drumming of the dark folk became increasingly disturbing. Night had fallen, and after a time the cohort could scarcely stumble up the hill; the leaders, who had been on horseback, had to leave their horses at the foot of the hill. Then, suddenly, came a bizarre sound—the horses began *screaming* (not merely neighing), and simultaneously the cohort's local guide killed himself by plunging a short sword into his body. The cohort stampeded, many men being killed in the process.

> From the slopes and peaks above us a crackling chorus of daemoniac laughter burst, and winds of ice swept down to engulf us all. My spirit could endure the strain no longer, and I awaked—bounding down the centuries to Providence and the present. But still there ring in my ears those last calm words of the old proconsul— "*Malitia vetus—malitia vetus est—venit—tandem venit . . .*"[95]

This must indeed have been an extraordinary dream—full of realistic details (the tedium of the march to Pompelo; a manuscript of Lucretius which Rufus was reading at the beginning, with an actual line of text quoted from Book V of *De Rerum Natura;* a dream within the dream when Rufus goes to sleep the night before the march) and with a spectacularly horrific, if somewhat ill-defined, climax. It is no wonder that Lovecraft subsequently wrote a long account of the dream to several colleagues—Frank Belknap Long, Donald Wandrei, Bernard Austin Dwyer, and perhaps others.

These accounts, however, present some problems and make us wonder how much was actually in the dream and how much is subtle, perhaps unconscious, elaboration by Lovecraft for literary effect. Aside from various minor inconsistencies—the local guide in the letter to Wandrei is named Vercellius; in the letters to Long and Dwyer, he is called Accius—the three existing accounts are surprisingly different in their scope and focus. The letter to Long was apparently written first, perhaps on the 1st or 2nd of November; the letter to Wandrei is dated only "Thursday" (i.e.,

November 3); the letter to Dwyer—by far the longest and most detailed—is apparently undated, but probably was written on the 4th or 5th. This last letter is the main difficulty, for it is here that several details occur not found in the other two letters. One may charitably think that Lovecraft, as he continued to ponder the dream in writing it out, remembered more and more of it; but one may also wonder whether he was half-consciously fashioning it into a weird tale full of realistic historical details and sly hints of terror that did not actually exist in the dream itself. Certainty on the matter is of course impossible, and no matter which version of the dream one accepts, it must have been a potent imaginative influence.

One would have liked to see Lovecraft himself write up the dream into an actual story, as Dwyer and Wandrei urged him to do; but, although he told both Dwyer and Long of some possible elaborations of the dream and of how it might be incorporated into a narrative, he never did anything with it. In 1929 Long asked Lovecraft to be allowed to use his letter verbatim in a short novel he was writing, and Lovecraft acceded. The result was *The Horror from the Hills,* published in two parts in *Weird Tales* (January and February 1931) and later as a book.

Later in the month of November Lovecraft had another peculiar dream, involving a street-car conductor whose head suddenly turns into "a mere white cone tapering to one blood-red tentacle."[96] The account of this dream appears in a letter to Wandrei of November 24, 1927. This letter is of interest because it has proved the source of a hoax whereby a work entitled "The Thing in the Moonlight" was spuriously attributed to Lovecraft. After Lovecraft's death Wandrei had passed along the texts of both the Roman dream and this shorter dream to J. Chapman Miske, editor of *Scienti-Snaps.* The Roman dream appeared in *Scienti-Snaps* (under the title "The Very Old Folk") in the Summer 1940 issue. When Miske renamed *Scienti-Snaps* as *Bizarre,* he printed the other dream-account, adding opening and closing paragraphs of his own and calling the whole farrago "The Thing in the Moonlight by H. P. Lovecraft." August Derleth, not aware that this item was not entirely Lovecraft's, reprinted it in *Marginalia* (1944). When Miske saw the volume, he wrote to Derleth informing him of the true nature of the text; but Derleth must have forgotten the matter, for he reprinted the piece again as a "fragment" in *Dagon and Other Macabre Tales* (1965). Only recently has this matter been clarified by David E. Schultz.[97]

Around this time Lovecraft also wrote a history of his mythical book, the *Necronomicon,* although largely for the purpose of keeping references clear in his own mind. He noted in a letter to Clark Ashton Smith of November 27, 1927, that he had "drawn up some data on the celebrated & unmentionable *Necronomicon* of the mad Arab Abdul Alhazred";[98] this item bears the title "History of the Necronomicon." The autograph manuscript is written on the back and front of a letter to Lovecraft by William L. Bryant, director of the museum at Roger Williams Park, dating to April 27, 1927, pertaining to Morton's visit in quest of mineral samples. On this draft the following sentence is added as an apparent afterthought: "An English translation made by Dr. Dee was never printed, & exists only in fragments recovered from the original MS." This leads one to believe that Lovecraft wrote the bulk of the text prior to seeing Long's "The Space-Eaters." He noted that he had "just received" that story in a letter to Wandrei in late September,[99] so perhaps "History of the Necronomicon" was written just before this time.

One datum in this text is of interest. Lovecraft noted that the Greek text was suppressed by the patriarch Michael in 1050. "After this it is only heard of furtively, but (1228) Olaus Wormius made a Latin translation later in the Middle Ages . . ." Those readers and critics who know anything about Olaus Wormius may wonder why Lovecraft dated him to the thirteenth century when he (1588–1654) is so clearly a Danish historian and philologist of the seventeenth century. So far as I can tell, this is a plain error; but Lovecraft came by the error in a peculiar way.

In 1914 Lovecraft wrote a poem entitled "Regner Lodbrog's Epicedium." He wrote to Moe late in the year:

> I recently tried the "Hiawatha" type of blank verse in translating a curious bit of primitive Teutonic martial poetry which Dr. Blair quotes in his "Critical Dissertation on the Poems of Ossian". This fragment is a funeral song composed in Runes by the old Danish monarch Regner Lodbrok (eighth century A.D.). In the Middle Ages Olaus Wormius made the rather incoherent Latin version which Blair uses. It is in stanzas, each headed by the words "Pugnavimus ensibus". In translating, I end each stanza with a rhyming couplet.[100]

This tells us all we need to know. Hugh Blair's *A Critical Dissertation on the Poems of Ossian, the Son of Fingal* (1763), the celebrated defence of the

authenticity of the poems of "Ossian" (James Macpherson), is frequently included in editions of Macpherson. Lovecraft had such an edition, but it is not certain which one; in any event, he clearly consulted Blair's *Dissertation* somehow. His knowledge of Olaus Wormius seems not to extend beyond what Blair writes. In discussing "the ancient poetical remains . . . of the northern nations," Blair first mentions that "Saxo Grammaticus, a Danish historian of considerable note, who flourished in the thirteenth century," said that such songs were engraved in Runic characters; Blair then goes on to quote one such example as translated into Latin by Olaus Wormius. This twenty-nine-stanza item is Regner Lodbrog's epicedium; Lovecraft has translated only the first seven stanzas, and at that he has been aided by an English prose translation of the second through seventh stanzas that Blair supplies. In any event, my feeling is that Lovecraft either confused the *floruit* of Olaus Wormius (which Blair never gives) with that of Saxo Grammaticus, or else assumed that both scholars lived at the same time.[101]

Lovecraft's poetic output for 1927 was meagre. Most of his five poems relate to amateur matters. In February he wrote his usual birthday greeting to Jonathan E. Hoag, who had now achieved the age of ninety-six; but Hoag died on October 17, and Lovecraft wrote a no doubt heartfelt but lamentably wooden elegy, "Ave atque Vale" (*Tryout,* December 1927). Another elegy is "The Absent Leader," a poem written for *In Memoriam: Hazel Pratt Adams* (1927), a volume evidently prepared by the Blue Pencil Club in Brooklyn. Adams (1888–1927) was one of the founders of this club; I do not know the reason for her early death. This poem of Lovecraft's is a little more effective, at least in its evocations of some of the landscape around both Brooklyn and the New Jersey Palisades, based as they are on first-hand experience. Then there is a curious poem, "To Miss Beryl Hoyt, Upon Her First Birthday—February 21, 1927," a delightful and delicate two-stanza ditty on a person about whom I know nothing.

Probably the best poem of the year is "Hedone" (Greek for "pleasure"), written on January 3. This piece, in ten quatrains, contrasts the life of Catullus and Virgil in emphasising the superiority of mental tranquillity over sexual pleasure—rather like a versified version of his "Lovecraft on Love" letter to Sonia, but more effective. I have no idea why Lovecraft wrote this poem; but it displays a moderately successful use of the classical learning he had accumulated over a lifetime.

In late 1927 Lovecraft declared that he had never yet advertised for his revisory services[102] (he had evidently forgotten about the "Crafton Service Bureau" ad in *L'Alouette* in 1924), so that new revision clients would have come to him only by referral. Two such clients made their appearance about this time—Adolphe de Castro and Zealia Brown Reed Bishop.

De Castro (1859–1959), formerly Gustav Adolphe Danziger (he adopted his mother's name shortly after World War I because of anti-German prejudice), was an odd case. He met Ambrose Bierce in 1886 and become an enthusiastic devotee and colleague. A few years later he translated Richard Voss's short novel, *Der Mönch des Berchtesgaden* (1890–91), and had Bierce revise it; it was published serially (as by Bierce and Danziger—Voss having been forgotten) as *The Monk and the Hangman's Daughter* in the *San Francisco Examiner* in September 1891 and then as a book in 1892. With Bierce (and some help from Joaquin Miller and W. C. Morrow), Danziger formed the Western Authors Publishing Association, which issued Bierce's poetry collection *Black Beetles in Amber* (1892) and Danziger's own short story collection, *In the Confessional and the Following* (1893). Shortly thereafter, however, Bierce and Danziger had a falling out—mostly over financial wrangling over the profits from the *Monk* and over Danziger's management of the publishing company—and although Danziger occasionally met up with Bierce on random subsequent occasions, the two did no further work together.

Bierce went down to Mexico in late 1913, evidently to observe or to participate in the Mexican Civil War between Pancho Villa and Venustiano Carranza. Danziger (now de Castro) lived in Mexico between 1922 and 1925 editing a weekly newspaper. In 1923 he managed to talk with Villa, who maintained that he threw Bierce out of his camp when Bierce began praising Carranza. Later, it appears, his body and that of a peon were found by the side of a road. (This account of Bierce's death is almost certainly false.) De Castro wrote an article in the *American Parade* for October 1926 entitled "Ambrose Bierce as He Really Was," going on at length about his collaboration on the *Monk* and discussing his search for Bierce in Mexico. The matter was elaborated in an article by Bob Davis—the old *All-Story* editor—in the *New York Sun* for November 17, 1927.[103]

It was at this point that de Castro came in touch with Lovecraft. With the publicity he was now receiving, he felt the time was right to capitalise

on his association with Bierce. He knew Samuel Loveman, and the latter recommended that de Castro write to Lovecraft and seek his help "in bringing out one or the other of my labors which sadly need revision."[104] This referred to two projects: a book-length memoir of Bierce, specifically discussing the collaboration on the *Monk* and de Castro's subsequent efforts to find information on Bierce in Mexico; and a revision of the story collection, *In the Confessional.*

Lovecraft, in a non-extant reply, appears to have quoted some rates regarding his work, the fees dependent on the nature of the work involved (ranging from mere reading and comment to light revision to wholesale rewriting). It is not clear that these rates are the same as those he was offering at a later period (a complete list is included in a letter to Richard F. Searight dated August 31, 1933). On de Castro's letter of December 5, 1927, accompanying one story he sent to Lovecraft, there are the following pen notations by Lovecraft:

> 0.50 per p. untyped
> 0.65 typed
> This story 16.00 untyped
> 20.00 typed
> (higher) Reconsidered rate
> 1.00 per page untyped
> 1.15 " " typed[105]

I do not know what the difference between the first quoted rate and the "Reconsidered" rate is. Whether the story in question is the one Lovecraft actually revised at this time—titled "A Sacrifice to Science" in de Castro's book, retitled "Clarendon's Last Test" by Lovecraft, and published as "The Last Test" in *Weird Tales* for November 1928—is not clear; Lovecraft indeed received $16.00 for this work[106] (de Castro received $175.00 from *Weird Tales*), but the story is not—at least in its initial printed version—32 pages, as Lovecraft's rate would suggest it to be. In any event, Lovecraft complained bitterly about the "measly cheque"[107] he received for this work, but perhaps it was his own fault: he may have quoted a fee of $16.00 to de Castro and then felt obliged to adhere to it even though the story ended up being a full 20,000 words long.

"The Last Test" is one of the poorest of Lovecraft's revisions. It tells the melodramatic story of a doctor, Alfred Clarendon, who is apparently developing an antitoxin for black fever while in charge of the California

State Penitentiary at San Quentin but who in reality has fallen under the influence of an evil Atlantean magus, Surama, who has developed a disease that "isn't of this earth" to overwhelm mankind. All this is narrated in the most stiff and pompous manner conceivable, and the story is further crippled by the fact that it is entirely lacking in vibrant and distinctive characters (assuming, of course, that such a hackneyed plot could ever have such), since characterisation was far and away the weakest point in Lovecraft's literary arsenal. In particular, a romance element between Clarendon's sister Georgina and the governor of California, James Dalton, is handled very badly. (De Castro's handling of it, of course, is infinitely worse.)

It should be pointed out that de Castro's original tale is not at all supernatural. It is merely a long drawn-out melodrama or adventure story in which a scientist seeks a cure for a new type of fever (never described at all in detail) and, having run out of patients because of the bad reputation he has gained as a man who cares only for science and not for human life, seeks to convince his own sister to be a "sacrifice to science" in the furtherance of his quest. Lovecraft has turned the whole scenario into a supernatural tale while yet preserving the basic framework—the California setting, the characters (although the names of some have been changed), the search for a cure to a new type of fever, and (although this now becomes only a minor part of the climax) Clarendon's attempt to persuade his sister to sacrifice herself. But—aside from replacing the nebulously depicted assistant of Dr Clarendon ("Dr Clinton" in de Castro) named Mort with the much more redoubtable Surama—he has added much better motivation for the characters and the story as a whole. This, if anything, was Lovecraft's strong point. He has made the tale about half again as long as de Castro's original; and although he remarked of the latter that "I nearly exploded over the dragging monotony of [the] silly thing,"[108] Lovecraft's own version is not without monotony and prolixity of its own.

To liven things up, if only for himself, Lovecraft has thrown in quite irrelevant references to his own developing myth-cycle. Consider this confrontation between Clarendon and Surama:

> "Be careful, you ————! There are powers against your powers—I didn't go to China for nothing, and there are things in Alhazred's *Azif* which weren't known in Atlantis! We've both meddled in dangerous things, but you needn't think you know

> all my resources. How about the Nemesis of Flame? I talked in Yemen with an old man who had come back alive from the Crimson Desert—he had seen Irem, the City of Pillars, and had worshipped at the underground shrines of Nug and Yeb—Iä! Shub-Niggurath!"

This passage represents, curiously enough, the only time in a story (as opposed to the "History of the Necronomicon") that the Arabic title of the *Necronomicon* (*Al Azif*) is cited, the first time that the mysterious entities Nug and Yeb (later deemed twin offspring of Yog-Sothoth and Shub-Niggurath) are mentioned, and the first time the oath "Iä! Shub-Niggurath!" appears in a story. But these moments of fun cannot relieve the tedium of the tale.

De Castro was not satisfied with "Clarendon's Last Test" and sent it back to Lovecraft for extensive further revisions—based, according to Lovecraft, solely on the new ideas he himself had inserted. Losing patience, Lovecraft hurled the whole thing back to him along with the $16.00 cheque; but de Castro, chastened, accepted the version as it stood. He himself typed it, making very minor changes in diction,[109] and sent it to *Weird Tales,* where, as I have remarked, it was accepted. If it seems unjust that Lovecraft got less than one-tenth of what de Castro was paid, these were the conditions under which Lovecraft operated his revision service: he was at least assured of his fee whether the end result sold or not. (Occasionally, of course, he had difficulty collecting on this fee, but that is a separate matter.) In many cases the revised or ghostwritten tale did not in fact sell. Lovecraft would, in any case, never have wanted to acknowledge such a piece of drivel as "The Last Test," and it is in some ways unfortunate that his posthumous celebrity has resulted in the unearthing of such items and their republication under his name—the very thing he was trying to avoid.

Even before Lovecraft finished "The Last Test," de Castro was pleading with him to help him with his memoirs of Bierce. This was a much more difficult proposition, and Lovecraft was properly reluctant to undertake the task without advance payment. De Castro, being hard up for cash, could not assent to this; so Lovecraft turned him over to Frank Long, who was getting into the revision business himself. Long offered to do the revision for no advance pay if he could write a signed preface to the volume (Lovecraft at one point wrote that de Castro ought to affix Long's name as coauthor,[110] but Long apparently made no such stipulation). De Castro agreed to this,

and Long did what appears to have been a very light revision—he finished the work in two days. This version, however (in spite of de Castro's earlier boast that "Bob Davis assures me that he will get me a publisher at once"[111]), was rejected by three publishers, so that de Castro came back to Lovecraft and pleaded with him to take over the project. Lovecraft again demanded that de Castro pay him $150.00 in advance,[112] and once again de Castro declined. He appears then to have gone back to Long.

The book did in fact come out—with how much more revision by Long, or anyone else, is unclear—as *Portrait of Ambrose Bierce,* published by the Century Company in the spring of 1929 and with a preface by "Belknap Long." Lovecraft claimed to take a sardonic satisfaction in the bad reviews the book received (Lewis Mumford wrote that "his portrait is beslobbered with irrelevant emotions and confessions, is full of pretentious judgments and in general has an authentic air of unreliability";[113] Napier Wilt wrote that "Such a naively uncritical picture can hardly be called a biography"[114]), but Carey McWilliams—author of a landmark biography of Bierce that came out later in 1929—was surprisingly charitable: "Dr. Danziger's book remains an interesting memoir . . . He succeeds best when he merely records remarks that Bierce made at various times. Some of these have about them the unmistakable imprint of Bierce's thought."[115] And yet, the book really is a confused farrago of mediocre biography, memoir, and not so subtle self-promotion on de Castro's part. Long's preface, a sensitive analysis of Bierce's work, may be the best thing in the volume.

Lovecraft had very mixed feelings about de Castro. He felt that both Bierce and de Castro had overstated their own role in the creation of *The Monk and the Hangman's Daughter,* the real virtues of the tale—its capturing of the wild topography of the Bavarian mountains—being in Lovecraft's impression clearly the work of Voss. De Castro does seem to have been trying to magnify his own contribution to the work and minimise that of Bierce, who was no longer around to defend himself. Moreover, de Castro comes off as both wheedling and sly, trying to get Lovecraft and Long to do work for him for little or no pay and for the mythical prospect of vast revenues at a later date (he thought he could rake in $50,000 for his Bierce reminiscence). At one point Lovecraft wrote: "This especial old bird, according to an anecdote recorded by George Sterling, parted from Bierce under the dramatic circumstance of having a cane broken over his head!" (The anecdote is found in Sterling's introduction to the Modern Library

edition of Bierce's *In the Midst of Life* [1927].) Lovecraft then adds charitably: "When I saw his fiction I wondered why Ambrosius didn't use a crowbar."[116]

And yet, de Castro was not a complete charlatan. He had published a number of distinguished books of scholarship, especially in the realm of religious studies, with major publishers (e.g., *Jewish Forerunners of Christianity* [E. P. Dutton, 1903]), and also published (in some cases, admittedly, self-published) novels and poetry. The Western Authors Publishing Association issued a book of his as late as 1950.[117] De Castro also seemed to know many languages and had served as a minor functionary in the U.S. government for many years. If there is a certain ghoulishness in his attempt to cash in on his friendship with Bierce, he was certainly not alone in this.

Another revision client that came into Lovecraft's horizon at this time was Zealia Brown Reed Bishop (1897–1968). Bishop, by her own statement,[118] was studying journalism at Columbia and also writing articles and stories to support herself and her young son. I take it that she was divorced at this point, although she never says so. One day while in Cleveland (she dates this to 1928, but this is clearly an error), she wandered into a bookstore managed by Samuel Loveman, who told her about Lovecraft's revisory service. She wrote to him in what must have been late spring of 1927, for this is when the first of Lovecraft's letters to her appears. Indeed, there may be an allusion to her in a letter of May 1927, when he speaks of "the most deodamnate piece of unending Bushwork I've ever tackled since the apogee of the immortal Davidius himself—the sappy, half-baked *Woman's Home Companion* stuff of a female whose pencil has hopelessly outdistanc'd her imagination."[119]

Bishop was in fact interested in writing *Woman's Home Companion* stuff, and—although she expresses great admiration for Lovecraft's intellect and literary skill—in her memoir she also admits rather petulantly that Lovecraft tried to steer her in directions contrary to her natural inclination: "Being young and romantic, I wanted to follow my own impulse for fresh, youthful stories. Lovecraft was not convinced that [t]his course was best. I was his protégé[e] and he meant to bend my career to his direction." There are some very odd statements in her memoir at this point—such as Lovecraft's supposed admonition to read Somerset Maugham's *Of Human Bondage* three times—but in the absence of the many letters he must have

written her, we may perhaps accept as authentic some of the criticisms he levelled against the romantic fiction she sent him: “No gentleman would dare kiss a girl in that fashion”; “No gentleman would think of knocking on a lady’s bedroom door even at a houseparty.”

Bishop complains that “The stories I sent him always came back so revised from their basic idea that I felt I was a complete failure as a writer.” It is difficult to know which stories are referred to here; they may not survive. Bishop goes on to say that at this point she returned to her sister’s ranch in Oklahoma, where she heard some tales by Grandma Compton, her sister’s mother-in-law, about a pioneer couple in Oklahoma not far away. Bishop concludes: “I wrote a tale called *The Curse of Yig,* in which snakes figured, wove it around some of my Aztec knowledge instilled in me by Lovecraft, and sent it off to him. He was delighted with this trend toward realism and horror, and fairly showered me with letters and instructions.”

There is, clearly, a large amount of prevarication here. It can hardly be doubted that the story as we have it is almost entirely the work of Lovecraft except for the bare nucleus of the plot. “The Curse of Yig” is quite an effective piece of work, telling of a couple, Walker and Audrey Davis, who settle in the Oklahoma Territory in 1889. Walker has an exceptional fear of snakes, and has heard tales of Yig (“the snake-god of the central plains tribes—presumably the primal source of the more southerly Quetzalcoatl or Kukulcan . . . an odd, half-anthropomorphic devil of highly arbitrary and capricious nature”) and of how the god avenges any harm that may come to snakes; so he is particularly horrified when his wife kills a brood of rattlers near their home. Late one night, the couple sees the entire floor of their bedroom covered with snakes; Walker gets up to stamp them out but falls down, extinguishing the lantern he is carrying. Audrey, now petrified with terror, soon hears a hideous popping noise—it must be Walker’s body, so puffed with snake-venom that the skin has burst. Then she sees an anthropoid shape silhouetted in the window. It must be Yig—so when it enters the room she takes an axe and hacks it to pieces. In the morning the truth is known: the body that burst was their old dog, while the figure that has been hacked to pieces is Walker. In a final twist, it is learned that a loathsome half-snake, half-human entity kept in a nearby asylum is not Audrey herself but the entity to which she gave birth three-quarters of a year later.

Lovecraft wrote of his contribution to the story in a letter to Derleth:

> By the way—if you want to see a new story which is practically mine, read "The Curse of Yig" in the current W.T. Mrs. Reed is a client for whom Long & I have done oceans of work, & this story is about 75% mine. All I had to work on was a synopsis describing a couple of pioneers in a cabin with a nest of rattlesnakes beneath, the killing of the husband by snakes, the bursting of the corpse, & the madness of the wife, who was an eye-witness to the horror. There was no plot or motivation—no prologue or aftermath to the incident—so that one might say the story, as a story, is wholly my own. I invented the snake-god & the curse, the tragic wielding of the axe by the wife, the matter of the snake-victim's identity, & the asylum epilogue. Also, I worked up the geographic & other incidental colour—getting some data from the alleged authoress, who knows Oklahoma, but more from books.[120]

Lovecraft sent the completed tale to Bishop in early March 1928, making it clear in his letter to her that even the title is his. He adds: "I took a great deal of care with this tale, and was especially anxious to get the beginning smoothly adjusted. . . . For geographical atmosphere and colour I had of course to rely wholly on your answers to my questionnaire, plus such printed descriptions of Oklahoma as I could find." Of Yig he states: "The deity in question is entirely a product of my own imaginative theogony . . ."[121] Yig becomes a minor deity in the evolving Lovecraft pantheon, although cited only once in an original work of fiction ("The Whisperer in Darkness," and there only in passing) as opposed to revisions, where it appears with some frequency.

Lovecraft charged Bishop $17.50 for the tale; she already owed him $25.00 for unspecified earlier work, bringing the total to $42.50. It is not clear whether she ever entirely paid off this debt. She managed to sell the story to *Weird Tales,* where it appeared in the November 1929 issue; she received $45.00 for it.

Lovecraft's early correspondence with Zealia Bishop was very cordial and revelatory, and it seems to go well beyond the courtesy Lovecraft felt was due to a woman correspondent. He gives her quite sound advice on the nature of writing; it may not be the kind of advice she wanted—how to write salable fiction—but it was advice that anyone wishing to write sincere work should ponder. He summarises his long discussions in a letter of 1929:

> This, then, is the writer's fivefold problem:
> 1. To get the facts of life.
> 2. To think straight and tell the truth.
> 3. To cut out maudlin and extravagant emotion.
> 4. To cultivate an ear for strong, direct, harmonious, simple, and graphic language.
> 5. To write what one really sees and feels.[122]

At a later stage I shall examine how Lovecraft himself had come to embrace and, in large measure, to practise these principles.

But the correspondence with Bishop extends far beyond mere literary tutoring. He tells her much about his personal life, his philosophical beliefs, and the details of his daily existence. Perhaps Bishop was merely curious about these things—it is clear that she was writing to him frequently during 1927–29—but whatever the case, Lovecraft was unusually forthcoming about himself in these letters. However, Bishop's persistent failure to pay up her debt caused the association to cool considerably on Lovecraft's side, so that by the mid-1930s he was regarding her more as a pest than as a colleague.

One letter Lovecraft wrote to Bishop in late spring of 1928 is of interest:

> When you perceive the foregoing temporary address, and correlate it with what I have quite frequently expressed as my unvarnished sentiments toward the New York region, you will probably appreciate the extent of the combined burdens and nerve-taxes which have, through malign coincidence, utterly disrupted my programme this spring, and brought me to the verge of what would be a complete breakdown if I did not have a staunch and brilliant colleague—my young "adopted grandchild" Frank B. Long—to whom to lean for coöperation and assistance in getting my tasks in shape.[123]

What could be the meaning of this? The address at the head of this letter—395 East 16th Street, Brooklyn, New York—tells part of the story; the other part—which Lovecraft told almost none of his colleagues (those, at any rate, who did not already know the situation)—is that Sonia had called him back to New York.

19. Fanlights and Georgian Steeples

(1928–1930)

Lovecraft must have arrived in New York in late April, for a long letter to Lillian is dated April 29–30 and refers to incidents occurring on Tuesday the 24th. Sonia writes in her memoir: “Late that spring (1928) I invited Howard to come on a visit once more. He gladly accepted but as a visit, only. To me, even that crumb of his nearness was better than nothing.”[1] Clearly Sonia still felt considerable affection for Lovecraft; but she knew that he could not be persuaded to spend more than a few weeks in a city he loathed, and in a situation—married life—with which he was clearly uncomfortable after two full years of resumed bachelorhood.

How “gladly” Lovecraft accepted this invitation we have already seen in the letter to Zealia Bishop; to other new correspondents (to most of whom he had not even mentioned the fact of his marriage) he was more circumspect. To Derleth he writes: “. . . I am on alien soil just now—circumstances having forced me to be in the N.Y. region for quite a spell. I don’t welcome this sojourn, since I hate N.Y. like poison . . .”[2] To Wandrei: “Necessity has forced me to be in the N.Y. region for a month or so, & I am making the best of it by sojourning in the oasis of Flatbush . . .”[3] To his old friend Morton he was a little more expansive: “The wife had to camp out here for quite a spell on account of business, and thought it only fair that I drop around for a while. Not having any snappy comeback, and wishing to avoid any domestick civil war, I played the pacifist . . . and here I am.”[4]

The “business” referred to is Sonia’s attempt to set up a hat shop in Brooklyn—368 East 17th Street, in the very next block from where she was living. This structure does not survive, and there is no longer even any address with this number, unless a small garage neighbouring the present 370 East 17th Street is the place. The apartment house, however, still survives, and Lovecraft found Sonia’s flat (on the third floor, numbered 9)

relatively comfortable: “The dining or sitting room is panelled in squares of dark oak, whilst the woodwork elsewhere is white or oak of varying degrees of richness. Papers on the walls & rugs on the floors are uniformly in good taste. The dining-sitting room has a great central indirect-lighting fixture, whilst the library has a group of chain-hung lamps precisely like those in my room.”[5] Sonia’s cooking had not suffered any lapse either in quality or in abundance (“Spaghetti with S H’s inimitable sauce, meat prepared in magical ways beyond the divining of the layman, waffles with maple syrup, popovers with honey—such are the challenges to leanness wherewith my pathway is beset!”).

Sonia had invested $1000 of her own money to set up the shop, which formally opened on Saturday the 28th. She worked hard securing hatboxes and materials and fixing up the shop to appeal to customers. Lovecraft helped Sonia on “sundry errands” on several occasions, including one stint of addressing envelopes from 11.30 P.M. to 3.30 A.M. one night. On Sunday the 29th he and Sonia went on a “delightfully circuitous walk” that led back to their old neighbourhood—the Prospect Park area—and they noticed that it was already starting that decline in spruceness and social status which has continued to the present day.

But let us not be deceived; Lovecraft was by no means resuming his marriage any more than was necessary. Sonia writes with considerable tartness: “But while visiting me, all I saw of Howard was during the few early morning hours when he would return from his jaunts with either Morton, Loveman, Long, Kleiner, or with some or all of them. This lasted through the summer.”[6] Indeed it did; and his gallivanting began almost as soon as he came to town. On April 24th he did some shopping with Sonia, but then went off on a lone walk to Prospect Park, then headed to Frank Long’s new residence at 230 West 97th Street (823 West End Avenue having been torn down to make way for a new building, now numbered 825). He returned to Brooklyn only to have dinner with Sonia, then left immediately to visit Samuel Loveman, first at his bookshop in 59th Street, Manhattan, then to his residence in Columbia Heights. He did not return home till 4 A.M.

April 27th was Long’s birthday, so his parents took him on a drive along the Hudson River to Lake Mahopac; Lovecraft accompanied them and found the wild, hilly scenery stimulating. Later trips with the Longs in May reached as far north as Peekskill and as far east as Stamford and Ridgefield

in Connecticut. On one occasion they visited West Point and witnessed an impressive dress-parade.

Lovecraft also did much solo exploration in the area. He mentioned going to some region called Gravesend, "south of Flatbush on the road to Coney-Island";[7] this appears to be a district now designated by the community of Bensonhurst. Lovecraft found "near on a dozen cottages in plain sight [that] date from before 1700." Other expeditions took him to Flatlands and New Utrecht (to the east and west of Bensonhurst, respectively).

Naturally, there were also gang meetings—although Lovecraft noted with some surprise and even dismay that the gang had "almost dissolved."[8] Plainly, he had been its guiding force during 1924–26. After one of them (on May 2), George Kirk invited Lovecraft and Everett McNeil to accompany him back to his apartment, where his new wife Lucile—half expecting such a continuation of the meeting—had tea, crackers, and cheese ready. Lovecraft again did not return home till 4 A.M.

On May 12 Lovecraft visited James F. Morton in Paterson, finding the scenery along the bus ride very poor—"oil tanks & factories . . . ugly & depressing factory towns & monotonous flatlands."[9] New Jersey's reputation for scenic dismalness, based upon the New Jersey Turnpike, was already in evidence! But Morton's museum building was very prepossessing, the entire upstairs floor being given over to his hall of minerals. Although Lovecraft got home late that evening, he still got up early enough the next day to go with Sonia to Bryn Mawr Park, the area in Yonkers where they had purchased a home lot in 1924. Sonia still owned this property—or, rather, one of the two lots, the other one having been sold. Sonia could not decide whether to build a small house on the property or to sell it.

On Thursday, May 24, Lovecraft rose at the unheard-of hour of 4 A.M. in order to meet Talman in Hoboken to catch a 6.15 train to Spring Valley, in Rockland County just above the New Jersey border. Talman lived in an estate outside the city, built in 1905 by his father. Lovecraft found both the rural countryside and the ancient farmhouses (built between 1690 and 1800) very charming, and took care to note the differences in their architectural details from corresponding structures in New England. He was, both through reading and through personal examination, becoming a formidable expert in colonial American architecture. That afternoon Talman and Lovecraft went to the town of Tappan, where Major John André—the young British officer

who conspired with Benedict Arnold to effect the surrender of West Point—was tried and hanged in 1780.

Talman drove Lovecraft to Nyack, on the western shore of the Hudson, where Lovecraft caught a ferry for Tarrytown, on the eastern shore. Here, naturally, he took a bus to Sleepy Hollow, whose 1685 church and the wooded ravine nearby he appreciated. He walked back to Tarrytown and made his way to the Washington Irving estate, but it was in private hands and not open to visitors. A ferry at Hastings-on-Hudson took him back to New York.

On the 25th Lovecraft got up early again—6.30—in order to get to Long's house by 8.30. The Long family went on a long motor drive through some of the area Lovecraft had just explored the previous day. It was an all-day expedition, and Lovecraft did not reach home until midnight. On the 29th Lovecraft met his new revision client Zealia Bishop, for whom Long was also doing some work. Subsequent days were taken up with solitary exploration closer to home—Astoria and Elmhurst (in Queens), Flushing (then still a separate community), and elsewhere. With Sonia he went to several towns in Staten Island on June 3, and he did the same with Long on June 6. The very next day, however, he unexpectedly received an invitation from Vrest Orton that changed his travel plans significantly. He had been planning to visit Bernard Austin Dwyer in West Shokan, then head south for perhaps a week to Philadelphia or Washington, D.C.; but Orton—although living in the pleasant Riverdale section of the Bronx—was disgusted with New York and wished to move out to a farm near Brattleboro, Vermont, which he had just purchased. He insisted that Lovecraft come along, and it took little persuasion for him to accede.

Lovecraft's New York stay was not entirely occupied with frivolity. Aside from his daily wrestling with mountainous correspondence, there was revision work—or, at least, the prospect of it. Long and Lovecraft had decided to team up, and they prepared the following ad that appeared in the August 1928 issue of *Weird Tales:*

> FRANK BELKNAP LONG, Jr. H. P. LOVECRAFT
> Critical and advisory service for writers of prose and verse; literary revision in all degrees of extensiveness. Address: Frank B. Long, Jr., 230 West 97th St., New York, New York City.[10]

Toward the end of the year, however, Lovecraft reported lugubriously that "Belknap & I didn't net many returns from our revision advt."[11] In fact, I cannot see that a single new client emerged from the ad, which presumably sought to bring in more would-be weird writers like Zealia Bishop.

Adolphe de Castro was being an annoyance, asking Lovecraft and Long to see him at his apartment uptown and also pestering Lovecraft both at Sonia's apartment and even at the hat shop. He was full of big plans both for his Bierce memoirs and for his other works; but Lovecraft resolutely stood by his demand of receiving $150.00 in advance for work on the Bierce book, although he charitably prepared a "critical synopsis"[12] that Long, who did the actual revision on the book, may or may not have followed. At one point de Castro became so irritating that Lovecraft fumed: "I hope he goes down to Mexico & gets shot or imprisoned!"[13]

One odd piece of writing that Lovecraft did around this time is a preface to a book of travel impressions, *Old World Footprints,* by Frank Long's wealthy aunt. The book was published later in 1928 by W. Paul Cook (surely at Mrs Symmes's expense), but the preface—signed "Frank Belknap Long, Jr., June, 1928"—is the work of Lovecraft, who noted that Long was under the pressure of other work and could not write it in time for Cook's deadline. [14]

Old World Footprints may well be the last book publication to emerge from the Recluse Press. Although Lovecraft read proofs of *The Shunned House* toward the end of his New York stay, we have already seen how that project became mired in delays at this very time. Lovecraft and Cook also worked on a second printing of Bullen's *White Fire,* since an unexpected sale of the volume in Canada had exhausted the supply; but although unbound sheets were produced, this item was also never bound or distributed.

What are we to make of the six weeks Lovecraft spent in New York? His accounts make it clear that he fell back into the old habit of congregating with friends—and avoiding his wife—that he had adopted almost immediately after his marriage. For all his loathing of the city, he seemed to have a good enough time, but he jumped at the chance to return to New England shores. There is no indication of how long Lovecraft had promised Sonia he would stay with her; his letters to Lillian suggest that the hat shop was getting off the ground pretty well (at one point Sonia hired a part-time assistant to help with orders), but Sonia says little about the matter in her

memoir and I do not know how long it stayed in business. Her irritation at Lovecraft's failure to spend any significant time with her comes out in her memoir, and in all likelihood was expressed to him in person; but it probably made little impression, since he had virtually taken the attitude that he was really no more than a guest, as he was in 1922 (he did, however, offer to pay his share of the food bills). If Sonia somehow expected this trip to jump-start the marriage, she was in for a disappointment; it is no wonder that she forced Lovecraft to pursue divorce proceedings the next year.

Lovecraft's faint taste of Vermont in 1927 had only whetted his appetite; now he would spend a full two weeks in quaint rusticity, and he made the most of it. Orton was, of course, not coming alone, but brought his whole family—wife, infant son, parents, and maternal grandmother, Mrs Teachout, an eighty-year-old woman whose recollections of the past Lovecraft found fascinating. The entire party arrived around June 10, and Lovecraft stayed till the 24th.

It is charming to read of the simple chores Lovecraft performed ("I have learned how to build a wood fire, & have helped the neighbours' boys round up a straying cow"[15])—no doubt he could momentarily indulge in the fantasy of being a grizzled farmer. Orton's farm, indeed, had few modern amenities—no plumbing except for a lead pipe to lead in the spring water, and no illumination except with oil lamps and candles.

Most of the time, however, Lovecraft struck out on lone trips of exploration. On the 13th he climbed Governor's Mountain (1823 feet above sea level), but was disappointed to find that the summit was wooded, thereby failing to provide any vista of the surrounding area. The next day he called on his old amateur friend Arthur Goodenough and then went across the Connecticut River into New Hampshire to climb Mt. Wantastiquet. On the 18th he went to Deerfield and Greenfield in Massachusetts by bus.

On the 16th Walter J. Coates came down from Montpelier, driving nearly a hundred miles just to see Lovecraft. They discussed literature and philosophy till 3 A.M., after which Orton and Lovecraft went to a neighbouring hill to build a fire and watch the sun rise. A more significant meeting occurred on the next day, when Lovecraft, Orton, and Coates went to Goodenough's home in Brattleboro for a literary conclave with several other local writers. Lovecraft reported that this gathering was written up in

the *Brattleboro Reformer,* and indeed it was, as Donovan K. Loucks has discovered.[16]

Another item has, however, also appeared in the same paper: an article on Lovecraft by Vrest Orton entitled "A Weird Writer Is In Our Midst," published on June 16. Lovecraft modestly describes it as a "puff," and it certainly is that; but in other ways it is a remarkably astute and even prophetic document. Although Orton himself had little actual interest in the weird (he said that after reading some of Lovecraft's tales he was "struck with such unmitigated horror that I shall undoubtedly never read any more"), he told of Lovecraft's popularity with *Weird Tales* ("The readers of this magazine . . . are kept in a state of unsatisfied hunger for his stuff"), explained his philosophy of the weird (shamelessly pillaging "Supernatural Horror in Literature" for the purpose), and concluded by comparing him with Poe:

> . . . like Poe, he will, I haven't the slightest doubt, set a mark for writers to shoot at for a long time. Some say he is greater than Poe as a writer of the weird . . . I don't know, but I do know that his stories strike me as having been written by a man far more profoundly interested in the subject of the weird than was Poe. . . . I do not say he is a greater writer than Poe, for in some departments he is not. But I do say that as a scholar and research worker in the one subject of the weird from his point of view, and a writer on that subject exclusively, H. P. Lovecraft is the greatest this country has ever seen or maybe will ever see.[17]

This article appeared in a column called "The Pendrifter," conducted by Charles Crane. Lovecraft met Crane on the 21st, finding him a delightful and typical Vermont Yankee.

Other locals Lovecraft met were the Lee boys, Charley, Bill, and Henry, the neighbours whom he helped round up a stray cow. On the afternoon of the 21st Charley took Lovecraft to meet an eccentric farmer named Bert G. Akley, a self-taught painter and photographer of much native skill. Lovecraft was captivated:

> His paintings—covering every field, but specialising in the local scenery, are of a remarkable degree of excellence; yet he has never taken a lesson in his life. He is Talman's equal or superior in heraldic painting, & is likewise a landscape & still-life photographer of the highest skill & taste. In other fields, too, he

> is a veritable jack-of-all-trades. Through it all he retains the primitiveness of the agrestic yeoman, & lives in unbelievable heaps & piles of disorder.[18]

Vermont was a tremendous imaginative stimulus for Lovecraft. He felt himself close to the old New England spirit that had departed from the more populated and modernised southern states, and in this way he effected that *defeat of time* which was simultaneously the source of his antiquarianism and his sense of the weird:

> Here life has gone on in the same way since before the Revolution—the same landscape, buildings, families, occupations, & modes of thought & speech. The eternal cycle of sowing & reaping, feeding & milking, planting & haying, here constitute the very backbone of existence; & old traditions of New England simplicity govern all things from dairying to fox-hunting. That Arcadian world which we see faintly reflected in the Farmer's Almanack is here a vital & vivid actuality—in all truth, the people of Vermont are our contemporary ancestors! Hills & brooks & ancient elms—farmhouse gables peeping over bends of the road at the crest of hills—white steeples in distant valleys at twilight—all these lovely reliques of the old days flourish in undiminished strength, & bid fair to transmit themselves for many generations into the future. To dwell amidst this concentrated old-fashionedness for two weeks, seeing about one every day the low-ceiled, antique-furnished rooms of a venerable farmhouse, & the limitless green reaches of planted fields, steep, stone-walled meadows, & mystical hanging woods & brook-murmurous valleys, is to acquire such a hold on the very fundamentals of authentic Novanglianism that no account of urban existence can counteract or dilute it.[19]

On the 23rd W. Paul Cook, who had already paid two visits to the Orton farm during Lovecraft's stay there, arrived with his wife and spent the night; the next day he drove Lovecraft down to Athol for a stay of about a week. Lovecraft did nothing of great note there except for buying a new suit for $17.50, meeting with H. Warner Munn, writing letters in Phillips Park whenever it wasn't raining, and seeing *The Shunned House* being printed at the *Athol Transcript* office. Perhaps the only notable event of his Athol trip

occurred on the 28th, when Munn took Lovecraft to a remarkable forest gorge southwest of the city called the Bear's Den.

But on Friday, June 29, Lovecraft moved on to another leg of his journey as distinctive as his Vermont stay; for Edith Miniter, the old-time amateur, almost demanded that Lovecraft pay her a visit in Wilbraham, Massachusetts, where she was residing with her cousin, Evanore Beebe. Accordingly, Lovecraft rose at 6.30 to catch an 8 o'clock train to North Wilbraham. He stayed for eight days, being charmed by the vast array of antiques collected by Beebe, the seven cats and two dogs who had the run of the place, and especially by the spectral local folklore Miniter told him. In "Mrs. Miniter—Estimates and Recollections" (1934) Lovecraft wrote:

> I saw the ruinous, deserted old Randolph Beebe house where the whippoorwills cluster abnormally, and learned that these birds are feared by the rustics as evil psychopomps. It is whispered that they linger and flutter around houses where death is approaching, hoping to catch the soul of the departed as it leaves. If the soul eludes them, they disperse in quiet disappointment; but sometimes they set up a chorused clamour of excited, triumphant chattering which makes the watchers turn pale and mutter—with that air of hushed, awestruck portentousness which only a backwoods Yankee can assume —"They got 'im!"

There was also a spectacular firefly display one night: "They leaped in the meadows, & under the spectral old oaks at the bend of the road. They danced tumultuously in the swampy hollow, & held witches' sabbaths beneath the gnarled, ancient trees of the orchard."[20] This trip certainly combined the archaic, the rustic, and the weird!

Finally, on July 7, Lovecraft prepared for his southern jaunt. He first took a bus to Springfield (the largest town near Wilbraham), then on up to Greenfield, where he stayed in a hotel overnight before taking the bus to Albany (over the Mohawk Trail) the next day. Lovecraft found Albany dismally Victorian, but it was meant only as a way station. The next day he took a boat down the Hudson, stopping in New York to change valises (he had borrowed Sonia's $35 suitcase for his Vermont-Massachusetts trip, but now reclaimed his own 99¢ papier-mâché bag). Strangely enough, he remarked that because Sonia was "without commodious living quarters at present," he spent the night at the Bossart Hotel in Montague Street,

Brooklyn.[21] I wonder why, in the month between his departure for Vermont and his return to New York, Sonia's quarters had suddenly become unavailable to him. In any case, on the 10th he met Long and Wandrei and had dinner with Sonia at the Milan restaurant, then saw a movie with her before boarding the 1.30 A.M. train for Philadephia.

Lovecraft spent only the afternoon in Philadelphia, which he had of course seen several times before; he then took the bus to Baltimore, reaching there around sunset. Although the bulk of the town was unmistakably Victorian, he found some compensating features: the Catholic cathedral (1808), a column erected in 1815, and various country seats dating from as early as 1754. There was, however, one more landmark: "But to me the culminating thing in Baltimore was a dingy monument in a corner of Westminster Presbyterian Churchyard, which the slums have long overtaken. It is near a high wall, and a willow weeps over it. Melancholy broods around it, and black wings brush it in the night—for it is the grave of Edgar Allan Poe." Things have not changed much since. It is a pity that Lovecraft does not seem to have entered the church itself, for in the cellar are some of the most charnelly hideous catacombs in the nation.

Lovecraft was going to go directly from Baltimore to Washington, but the colonial relics of Annapolis proved a fatal temptation; and they were no disappointment. He spent only one day (July 12) there, but saw much of the place—the naval academy, the old state house (1772–74), St John's College, and the abundance of colonial residences, which "make Annapolis the Marblehead of the south."[22]

That evening Lovecraft left for Washington, spending the next three days there. He revisited Alexandria (which he had seen briefly in 1925), saw Mt. Vernon (George Washington's home) and archaic Georgetown, and took a trip to Falls Church, a small town in Virginia. He tried to look up Edward Lloyd Sechrist, but found that he was away on business in Wyoming.

At this point yet another temptation proved fatally alluring—an excursion to the Endless Caverns in New Market, Virginia. This was a good four hours by bus from Washington, but the rate was so cheap ($2.50) that Lovecraft could ill resist. Having written about caves from boyhood, he found that the chance actually to visit one was not to be denied. As with his entire trip, this was no disappointment:

> As deep gave place to deep, gallery to gallery, and chamber to chamber, I felt transported to the strangest regions of nocturnal

> fancy. Grotesque formations leer'd on every hand, and the ever-sinking level appris'd me of the stupendous depth I was attaining. Glimpses of far black vistas beyond the radius of the lights—sheer drops of incalculable depth to unknown chasms, or arcades beckoning laterally to mysteries yet untasted by human eye—brought my soul close to the frightful and obscure frontiers of the material world, and conjured up suspicions of vague and unhallowed dimensions whose formless beings lurk ever close to the visible world of man's five senses. Buried aeras—submerged civilisations—subterraneous universes and unsuspected orders of beings and influences that haunt the sightless depths—all these flitted thro' an imagination confronted by the actual presence of soundless and eternal night.[23]

The rest of the trip was anticlimax. A bus ride to Philadelphia, then another to New York. Lovecraft was hoping for a leisurely journey home, but in New York he found a letter from Annie Gamwell reporting that Lillian had fallen ill with lumbago, so he immediately boarded a train for home. He had been away almost exactly three months.

Shortly after returning to Providence Lovecraft wrote a lengthy account of his spring travels, "Observations on Several Parts of America." It is the first of several lengthy travelogues—some of the others are "Travels in the Provinces of America" (1929), "An Account of *Charleston*" (1930), and "A Description of the Town of Quebeck" (1930–31), the single longest work Lovecraft ever wrote—and it is among the best. Its flawless capturing of eighteenth-century diction ("a compleat record of my late wanderings must embrace near three months of time, and a territory of extream bigness") is matched by the deftness with which it weaves travel impressions, history, and personal asides into a smoothly flowing narrative.

Certain practical souls have shed bitter tears at Lovecraft's "wasting" his time writing these lengthy accounts, which were manifestly produced with no idea of publication and—in the cases of the latter two documents mentioned above—with not even the prospect of meeting any other eye than their author's. Here is one of many occasions in which later commentators have tried to live Lovecraft's life for him. The only "purpose" of these items is to afford pleasure to Lovecraft and to some of his friends, and that is enough. The "Observations" and the "Travels" are single-spaced typescripts,

and in effect are open letters, the first written to Maurice W. Moe ("Dost recall it, O Sage?" Lovecraft interjects at one point) although surely circulated to other close associates. No doubt he drew upon his diaries for the periods in question, and perhaps also upon his letters to Lillian, for the details of his travels; and the historical digressions must have been derived from guidebooks and formal histories of the regions as well as personal investigation.

One small part of the "Observations" did in fact achieve print in Lovecraft's lifetime. Maurice W. Moe was assisting Sterling Leonard and Harold Y. Moffett in editing a series of literature textbooks for young adults, and was so captivated by Lovecraft's description of visiting Sleepy Hollow that he included it as an one-paragraph extract, titled "Sleepy Hollow To-day," in *Junior Literature: Book Two,* published by Macmillan in 1930. The text was printed fairly faithfully, although eliminating Lovecraft's archaisms. Only one substantive change was made: Lovecraft spoke of the river gorge "forming a place of convocation for the numerous ghouls attendant upon the subterraneous population," but Moe substituted "ghosts" for "ghouls," rendering the passage a trifle obscure. Lovecraft professed delight at the inclusion of his piece: "Wright may reject my stuff, but at least, my name will achieve a mild & grudging kind of immortality on the reluctant lips of the young."[24] Well, not exactly: although the book was reprinted in 1935, it thereafter lapsed out of print and has become one of the rarest of Lovecraft's publications.

Lovecraft did manage to do some writing aside from letters and his travelogue; in early August he wrote "The Dunwich Horror." This is, certainly, one of his most popular tales, but I cannot help finding serious flaws of conception, execution, and style in it. Its plot is well known. In the seedy area of Dunwich in "north central Massachusetts" live a small handful of backwoods farmers. One of these, the Whateleys, have been the source of particular suspicion ever since the birth, on Candlemas 1913, of Wilbur Whateley, the offspring of his albino mother and an unknown father. Lavinia's father, Old Whateley, shortly after the birth makes an ominous prediction: *"some day yew folks'll hear a child o' Lavinny's a-callin' its father's name on the top o' Sentinel Hill!"*

Wilbur grows up anomalously fast, and by age thirteen is already nearly seven feet tall. He is intellectually precocious also, having been educated by

the old books in Old Whateley's shabby library. In 1924 Old Whateley dies, but manages to wheeze instructions to his grandson to consult "page 751 *of the complete edition*" of some book so that he can "open up the gates to Yog-Sothoth." Two years later Lavinia disappears and is never seen again. In the winter of 1927 Whateley makes his first trip out of Dunwich, to consult the Latin edition of the *Necronomicon* at the Miskatonic University Library; but when he asks to borrow the volume overnight, he is denied by the old librarian Henry Armitage. He tries to do the same at Harvard but is similarly rebuffed. Then, in the late spring of 1928, Wilbur breaks into the library to steal the volume, but is killed by the vicious guard-dog. His death is very repulsive:

> . . . it is permissible to say that, aside from the external appearance of face and hands, the really human element in Wilbur Whateley must have been very small. When the medical examiner came, there was only a sticky whitish mass on the painted boards, and the monstrous odour had nearly disappeared. Apparently Whateley had no skull or bony skeleton; at least, in any true or stable sense. He had taken somewhat after his unknown father.

Meanwhile bizarre things are happening elsewhere. Some monstrous entity whom the Whateleys had evidently been raising in their home now bursts forth, having no one to feed or tend to it. It creates havoc throughout the town, crushing houses as if they were matchsticks. Worst of all, it is completely invisible, leaving only huge footprints to indicate its presence. It descends into a ravine called the Bear's Den, then later comes up again and causes hideous devastation. Armitage has in the meantime been decoding the diary in cipher that Wilbur had kept, and finally learns what the true state of affairs is:

> His wilder wanderings were very startling indeed, including . . . fantastic references to some plan for the extirpation of the entire human race and all animal and vegetable life from the earth by some terrible elder race of beings from another dimension. He would shout that the world was in danger, since the Elder Things wished to strip it and drag it away from the solar system and cosmos of matter into some other plane or phase of entity from which it had once fallen, vigintillions of years ago.

But he knows how to stop it, and he and two colleagues go to the top of a small hill facing Sentinel Hill, where the monster appears to be heading. They are armed with an incantation to send the creature back to the other dimension it came from, as well as a sprayer containing a powder that will make it visible for an instant. Sure enough, both the incantation and the powder work, and the entity is seen to be a huge, ropy, tentacled monstrosity that shouts, "HELP! HELP! . . . *ff—ff—ff*—FATHER! FATHER! YOG-SOTHOTH!" and is completely obliterated. It was Wilbur Whateley's twin brother.

It should be evident even from this narration that many points of plotting and characterisation in the story are painfully inept. Let us first contrast the *moral* implications of "The Dunwich Horror" with those of "The Colour out of Space." We have seen that it is nearly impossible to deem the entities in the earlier story "evil" by any conventional standard; but the Whateleys—especially Wilbur and his twin—are clearly meant to be perceived as evil because of their plans to destroy the human race. And yet, was it not Lovecraft himself who, five years earlier, had whimsically written the following to Edwin Baird of *Weird Tales?*

> Popular authors do not and apparently cannot appreciate the fact that true art is obtainable only by rejecting normality and conventionality in toto, and approaching a theme purged utterly of any usual or preconceived point of view. Wild and "different" as they may consider their quasi-weird products, it remains a fact that the bizarrerie is on the surface alone; and that basically they reiterate the same old conventional values and motives and perspectives. Good and evil, teleological illusion, sugary sentiment, anthropocentric psychology—the usual superficial stock in trade, all shot through with the eternal and inescapable commonplace. . . . Who ever wrote a story from the point of view that man is a blemish on the cosmos, who ought to be eradicated? [25]

This criticism applies perfectly to "The Dunwich Horror." What we have here is an elementary "good vs. evil" struggle between Armitage and the Whateleys. The only way around this conclusion is to assume that "The Dunwich Horror" is a parody of some sort; this is, indeed, exactly what Donald R. Burleson has done in an interesting essay,[26] pointing out that it is the Whateley twins (regarded as a single entity) who, in mythic terms, fulfil the traditional role of the "hero" much more than Armitage does (e.g., the

mythic hero's descent to the underworld is paralleled by the twin's descent into the Bear's Den), and pointing out also that the passage from the *Necronomicon* cited in the tale—"Man rules now where They [the Old Ones] ruled once; They shall soon rule where man rules now"—makes Armitage's "defeat" of the Whateleys a mere temporary staving off of the inevitable. These points are well taken, but there is no evidence in Lovecraft's letters that "The Dunwich Horror" was meant parodically (i.e., as a satire on immature readers of the pulp magazines) or that the figure of Armitage is meant anything but seriously. Indeed, Lovecraft clearly suggests the reverse when he says in a letter to Derleth that "[I] found myself psychologically identifying with one of the characters (an aged scholar who finally combats the menace) toward the end."[27]

Armitage is, indeed, clearly modelled upon Willett of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward:* he defeats the "villains" by incantations, and he is susceptible to the same flaws—pomposity, arrogance, self-importance—that can be seen in Willett. Armitage is, indeed, the prize buffoon in all Lovecraft, and some of his statements—such as the melodramatic *"But what, in God's name, can we do?"*—make painful reading, as does the silly lecture he delivers to the Dunwich folk at the end: "We have no business calling in such things from outside, and only very wicked people and very wicked cults ever try to."

There are problems of plot, also. What, exactly, is the *purpose* of the "powder" Armitage uses to make the creature visible for an instant? What is to be gained by this procedure? It seems to be used simply to allow Lovecraft to write luridly about ropy tentacles and the like. The spectacle of three small human figures—Armitage and his stalwart cohorts—waving their arms about and shouting incantations on the top of a hill is so comical that it seems incredible that Lovecraft could have missed the humour in it; but he seems to have done so, for this is presumably the climactic scene in the story.

What "The Dunwich Horror" did was, in effect, to make possible the rest of the "Cthulhu Mythos" (i.e., the contributions by other and less skilful hands). Its luridness, melodrama, and naive moral dichotomy were picked up by later writers (it was, not surprisingly, one of Derleth's favourite tales) rather than the subtler work embodied in "The Call of Cthulhu," "The Colour out of Space," and others. In a sense, then, Lovecraft bears some

responsibility for bringing the "Cthulhu Mythos" and some of its unfortunate results upon his own head.

In an important sense, indeed, "The Dunwich Horror" itself turns out to be not much more than a pastiche. The central premise—the sexual union of a "god" or monster with a human woman—is taken directly from Machen's "The Great God Pan"; Lovecraft makes no secret of the borrowing, having Armitage say of the Dunwich people at one point, "Great God, what simpletons! Shew them Arthur Machen's Great God Pan and they'll think it a common Dunwich scandal!" The use of bizarre footsteps to indicate the presence of an otherwise undetectable entity is borrowed from Blackwood's "The Wendigo." Lovecraft was clearly aware of the number of tales featuring invisible monsters—Maupassant's "The Horla" (certain features of which, as we have seen, had already been adapted for "The Call of Cthulhu"); Fitz-James O'Brien's "What Was it?"; Bierce's "The Damned Thing"—and derived hints from each of them in his own creation. The fact that Lovecraft on occasion borrowed from previous sources need not be a source of criticism, for he ordinarily made exhaustive alterations in what he borrowed; but in this case the borrowings go beyond mere surface details of imagery to the very core of the plot.

"The Dunwich Horror" is, of course, not a complete failure. Its portrayal of the decaying backwoods Massachusetts terrain is vivid and memorable, even if a little more hyperbolic than that of "The Colour out of Space"; and it is, as should now be evident, largely the result of personal experience. Lovecraft later admitted that Dunwich was located in the Wilbraham area, and it is clear that both the topography and some of the folklore (whippoorwills as psychopomps of the dead) are in large part derived from his two weeks with Edith Miniter. But, if Wilbraham is roughly the setting for Dunwich, why does Lovecraft in the very first sentence of the story declare that the town is located in "*north* central Massachusetts"? Some parts of the locale are indeed taken from that region, specifically the Bear's Den, which Lovecraft describes vividly in a letter to Lillian:

> There is a deep forest gorge there; approached dramatically from a rising path ending in a cleft boulder, & containing a magnificent terraced waterfall over the sheer bed-rock. Above the tumbling stream rise high rock precipices crusted with strange lichens & honeycombed with alluring caves. Of the latter

> several extend far into the hillside, though too narrowly to admit a human being beyond a few yards.[28]

The site is very much the same today. And just as H. Warner Munn took Lovecraft there in 1928, so about fifty years later he helped to lead Donald R. Burleson to the place.[29] The name Sentinel Hill is taken from a Sentinel Elm Farm in Athol.[30] Lovecraft has, in other words, *mingled* topographical impressions from various sites and coalesced them into a single imagined locale.

For those interested in following the surface details of the "Cthulhu Mythos," "The Dunwich Horror" offers much fodder for argument. That it builds in part upon "The Call of Cthulhu" and other tales is clear from the mentions of Cthulhu, Kadath, and other terms in the lengthy quotation from the *Necronomicon* in the story; but the term "Old Ones" is ambiguous, and it does not appear to refer to the "Great Old Ones" of "The Call of Cthulhu," nor is it clear whether Yog-Sothoth—who never recurs as a major figure in any subsequent Lovecraft tale—is one of the Old Ones or not. Probably Lovecraft did not expect his casually coined terms to be sifted and analysed by later critics as if they were biblical texts, and he threw them off largely for the sake of resonance and atmosphere. As will become manifestly evident, Lovecraft not only did not plan out all (or any) of the details of his pseudomythology in advance, but also had no compunction whatever in altering its details when it suited him, never being bound by previous usage —something that later critics have also found infuriating, as if it were some violation of the sanctity or unity of a mythos that never had any sanctity or unity to begin with. It should also be pointed out that this is the only story that contains a lengthy extract from the *Necronomicon;* later writers have not been so reticent, but their bungling quotations—written with a lamentable lack of subtlety and (in Derleth's case especially) a pitiable ignorance of archaic diction—have resulted in the watering down of the potentially powerful conception of a book of "forbidden" knowledge.

Lovecraft's most interesting comment in this regard is his casual remark, just after finishing the story, that it "belongs to the Arkham cycle."[31] He does not explain this expression here, nor does he ever use it again. It at least suggests that Lovecraft was by now aware that some of his tales (he doesn't say which) form some sort of pattern or sequence. The term is clearly topographical in connotation, as if Lovecraft believed that all the tales of his fictitious New England geography (including such things as "The Picture in

the House," which no later critic includes within the scope of the "Cthulhu Mythos") are linked; or perhaps it refers to the fact that Arkham is the defining point for the other mythical towns. One simply does not know.

A brief note as to the name Dunwich may be in order. It has been pointed out that there is a real town in England with this name—or, rather, that there *was* such a town on the southeast coast of the island, a town that suffered inexorable desertion as the sea washed away more and more of the coastal terrain on which it stood. It was the subject of Swinburne's memorable poem "By the North Sea" (although it is never mentioned by name there), and is cited in Arthur Machen's *The Terror* (1917). The curious thing, however, is that the English Dunwich is more similar to Lovecraft's decaying seaport of Innsmouth than it is to the inland town of Dunwich; nevertheless, it is likely enough that the name alone was indeed derived from this English counterpart. There are, of course, any number of towns in New England with the *-wich* ending (e.g., Greenwich, one of the Massachusetts towns evacuated to make way for the Quabbin Reservoir).

It is not at all surprising either that "The Dunwich Horror" was snapped up by *Weird Tales* (Lovecraft received $240.00 for it, the largest single cheque for original fiction he had ever received) or that, when it appeared in the April 1929 issue, its praises were sung by the readership. A. V. Pershing, boasting that he has read "some 'real' authors" like Shakespeare and Poe, wrote: "I say that Lovecraft has an uncanny, nearly superhuman power of transporting one bodily to scenes of his unparalleled 'horrors' and forcing upon his the exquisite pleasure of 'living the story . . .'" Lovecraft's friend Bernard Austin Dwyer, praising Clark Ashton Smith and Wandrei in passing, stated: "I can not find words sufficiently to declare my admiration of his virginity [*sic*] of conception—the weird, the outré, unhackneyed, fully satisfying depth of colorful imagery and fantasy—as strange, as terrible, and as alien to the land of our everyday experiences as a fever-dream." These two letters appeared in the June 1929 issue; in the August issue E. L. Mengshoel anticipated the queries of many by remarking: "I would like to ask [Lovecraft] if there has not really existed an old work of writing named the *Necronomicon,* which is mentioned in 'The Dunwich Horror.'" These and other comments are a sad verification of the low esteem in which Lovecraft held what he would later call the "'Eyrie'-bombarding proletariat."[32]

The rest of 1928 was quiescent. Lovecraft wrote a poem toward the end of the year; it survives under two titles. The autograph manuscript gives the title as "To a Sophisticated Young Gentleman, Presented by His Grandfather with a Volume of Contemporary Literature"; in a letter to Maurice Moe we find the title "An Epistle to Francis, Ld. Belknap, With a Volume of Proust, Presented to Him by His Aged Grandsire, Lewis Theobald, Jun." In other words, Lovecraft was giving Frank Long a copy of *Swann's Way,* the first volume of *Remembrance of Things Past.* In the process he reveals considerable familiarity with contemporary phenomena, both popular ("Devoid of Pomp as *Woolworth's* or *McCrory's,* / And cerebral as *Vogue* and *Snappy-Stories*") and elevated ("Cubist and Futurist combine to shew / Sublimer Heights in *Kreymborg* and *Cocteau*"); and yet, these references are encased in a delectable pastiche—or parody—of the eighteenth-century idiom. It is a delightful piece of work.

One other piece of fiction appears to have been written around this time, "Ibid." In a letter of 1931 Lovecraft dated this piece to 1927,[33] but several comments by Maurice W. Moe seem to date it to 1928. The first we hear of it is in a letter by Moe dated August 3, 1928, when he mentions "that delightful Spectator paper on the marvellous history of old man Ibid."[34] It is, I suppose, still possible the piece was written considerably before this mention, so a date of 1927 is conceivable.

"Ibid" was either included in a letter to Moe or was a separate enclosure in a letter to him; whether its epigraph ("'. . . As Ibid says in his famous *Lives of the Poets.*'—From a student theme") refers to some actual statement found in a paper by one of Moe's students, I do not know; I think it quite likely. In any event, Lovecraft uses this real or fabricated piece of fatuity as the springboard for an exquisite tongue-in-cheek "biography" of the celebrated Ibidus, whose masterpiece was not the *Lives of the Poets* but in fact the famous "*Op. Cit.* wherein all the significant undercurrents of Graeco-Roman expression were crystallised once for all."

But the real target of the satire in "Ibid"—the third of Lovecraft's comic tales, along with "A Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson" and "Sweet Ermengarde"—is not so much the follies of grammar-school students as the pomposity of academic scholarship. In this sense "Ibid" is more timely today than when it was first written. Full of learned but preposterous footnotes, the piece traces the life of Ibid to his death in 587, then the fortunes of his skull —which proved, among other things, to be the vessel with which Pope Leo

administered the royal unction to Charlemagne—from antiquity to the twentieth century. Its deadpan tone is flawless:

> It was captured by the private soldier Read-'em-and-Weep Hopkins, who not long after traded it to Rest-in-Jehovah Stubbs for a quid of new Virginia weed. Stubbs, upon sending forth his son Zerubbabel to seek his fortune in New England in 1661 (for he thought ill of the Restoration atmosphere for a pious young yeoman), gave him St. Ibid's—or rather Brother Ibid's, for he abhorred all that was Popish—skull as a talisman. Upon landing in Salem Zerubbabel set it up in his cupboard beside the chimney, he having built a modest house near the town pump. However, he had not been wholly unaffected by the Restoration influence; and having become addicted to gaming, lost the skull to one Epenetus Dexter, a visiting freeman of Providence.

Moe was considering submitting the sketch to the *American Mercury* or some such journal, and apparently asked Lovecraft to revise it slightly; but nothing seems to have been done, and in late January Moe (who had typed the piece and sent it to Lovecraft) agreed that revision for a commercial magazine was not possible, and that the work "would have to be content with private circulation."[35] That publication did not occur until 1938, when it appeared in the amateur journal, the *O-Wash-Ta-Nong,* edited by Lovecraft's old friend George W. Macauley.

Toward the end of the year Lovecraft heard from an anthologist, T. Everett Harré, who wished to reprint "The Call of Cthulhu" for a volume entitled *Beware After Dark!* Lovecraft felt obligated to bring the matter up with Farnsworth Wright, since "Cthulhu" was evidently being considered as a centrepiece to his proposed collection of tales. We have seen that Lovecraft had recommended "The Colour out of Space" over "Cthulhu" as the main novelette to be used; but Wright presumably chose the latter, perhaps because it had actually been published in *Weird Tales* whereas "Colour" had not been. In any event, Wright allowed the release of the story; perhaps, as Lovecraft was coming to suspect, he had already come to think it very unlikely that the Popular Fiction Publishing Company would ever issue a volume of Lovecraft's stories.

Harré bought the story for $15.00[36]—apparently not a bad deal for second rights. Wandrei lent considerable assistance to Harré in the selection of contents, and Lovecraft expressed disappointment that Harré did not see

fit to acknowledge this help. The volume appeared from the Macaulay Co. in the fall of 1929; it is a notable volume. Lovecraft is in very good company—with Ellen Glasgow, Hawthorne, Machen, Stevenson, and Lafcadio Hearn—and "The Call of Cthulhu" is one of only five stories from *Weird Tales* to be included. Harré remarks in his introduction: "H. P. Lovecraft, one of the newer fantasy writers, has done some of the best things in such fiction; only limited editions of his tales have been published. His 'Call of Cthulhu,' in its cumulative awesomeness and building of effect to its appalling finale, is reminiscent of Poe."[37] Lovecraft later met Harré in New York.

Another anthology appearance—"The Horror at Red Hook" in Herbert Asbury's *Not at Night!* (Macy-Masius, 1928)—was less happy. This matter is somewhat confused, but it appears that Asbury—a noted journalist and editor, author of the celebrated *Gangs of New York* (1928)—had pirated the contents of several of the Christine Campbell Thomson "Not at Night" anthologies published by Selwyn & Blount and illegally published an American edition. "The Horror at Red Hook" had already appeared in Thomson's *You'll Need a Night Light* (1927). In an early 1929 letter to Wright, Lovecraft gave grudging permission to lend his name in a list of plaintiffs in a lawsuit, "so long as there is positively no obligation for expense on my part in case of defeat. My financial stress is such that I am absolutely unable to incur any possible outgo or assessment beyond the barest necessities . . ."[38] Lovecraft certainly did not lose any money on the matter, but he did not gain any either; he later mentioned that Macy-Masius withdrew the book rather than pay any royalties or damages to *Weird Tales*.[39]

In the fall of 1928 Lovecraft heard from an elderly poet named Elizabeth Toldridge (1861–1940), who five years earlier had been involved in some poetry contest of which Lovecraft was a judge. I do not know what this contest was, but presumably it was either part or an outgrowth of his amateur critical work. Toldridge was a disabled person who lived a drab life in various hotels in Washington, D.C. She had published—no doubt at her own expense—two slim volumes earlier in the century, *The Soul of Love* (1910), a book of prose-poems, and *Mother's Love Songs* (1911), a poetry collection. Lovecraft wrote to her cordially and promptly, since he felt it gentlemanly to do so; and because Toldridge herself wrote with unfailing regularity, the correspondence flourished to the end of Lovecraft's life. Toldridge was,

indeed, one of the few later correspondents of Lovecraft not involved in weird fiction.

The correspondence naturally focused on the nature of poetry and its the philosophical underpinnings. Toldridge was clearly a Victorian holdover both in her poetry and in her outlook on life; and Lovecraft, while treating her views with nothing but studied respect, made it clear that he did not share them at all. It was just at this time that he was beginning a revaluation of poetic style; and the barrage of old-fashioned poetry Toldridge sent to him helped to refine his views. In response to one such poem he wrote:

> It would be an excellent thing if you could gradually work out of the idea that this kind of stilted & artificial language is "poetical" in any way; for truly, it is *not.* It is a drag & hindrance on real poetic feeling & expression, because *real* poetry means spontaneous expression in the simplest & most poignantly vital *living* language. The great object of the poet is to get rid of the cumbrous & the emptily quaint, & buckle down to *the plain, the direct, & the vital*—the pure, precious stuff of actual life & human daily speech.[40]

Lovecraft knew he was not yet ready to practice what he preached; but the mere fact that he had written very little poetry since about 1922 meant both that prose fiction had become his chief aesthetic outlet and that he had come to be profoundly disappointed in his earlier poetic work. It was in an early 1929 letter to Toldridge that he heaped abuse upon himself for being "a chronic & inveterate mimic"; although he even extended this condemnation to his prose work: "There are my 'Poe' pieces & my 'Dunsany' pieces—but alas—where are any *Lovecraft* pieces?"[41]

But if Lovecraft could not yet exemplify his new poetic theories, he could at least help to inculcate them in others. Maurice Moe was preparing a volume entitled *Doorways to Poetry,* which Lovecraft in late 1928 announced as provisionally accepted (on the basis of an outline) by Macmillan.[42] As the book developed, he came to have more and more regard for it; by the fall of 1929 he was calling it

> without exception the best & clearest exposition of the inner essence of poetry that I've ever seen—& virtually the *only* work which comes anywhere near the miracle of making novices able to distinguish good verse from cheap & specious hokum. The method is absolutely original with Moe, & involves the insertion

> of many columns of parallel specimens of verse of varying badness & excellence, together with a key containing critical & elucidative comment. The answers in the key will be largely my work, since Moe thinks I can express subtle differences between degrees of merit better than he can. I am also preparing specimen bits of verse for illustrative use in the body of the text—unusual metres, stanzaic forms, Italian & Shakespearian sonnets, & so on. [43]

This gives us some idea of the nature of Lovecraft's work on the book, for which he refused to accept any payment.[44] It is, as a result, unfortunate that the manuscript of the volume does not seem to survive; for, as with so many projects by Lovecraft and his friends, *Doorways to Poetry* was never published—neither by Macmillan, nor by The American Book Company, to which Moe had then marketed it, nor even with the Kenyon Press of Wauwatosa, Wisconsin, a small pedagogical firm that did issue a very slim pamphlet by Moe, *Imagery Aids* (1931), which may be the final pathetic remnant of *Doorways*. The specimens of verse to which Lovecraft alluded do survive in an immense letter to Moe of late summer 1927 on which he must have worked for days, and in which he collects all manner of peculiar metres and rhyme-schemes from the standard poets.[45]

Another bit survives as a typescript (probably prepared by Moe) entitled "Sonnet Study." This contains two sonnets, written by Lovecraft, one in the Italian form, the other in the Shakespearean form, with brief commentary by Moe. Neither of the poems amounts to much, but at least they begin to exemplify Lovecraft's new views on the use of living language in poetry.

In late summer 1927 Wilfred B. Talman, in gratitude for Lovecraft's assistance on his fiction, offered to design a bookplate for a nominal fee. Lovecraft was enraptured by the idea: he had never had a bookplate, and I know of none possessed by any member of his family; up to this point he had merely signed his name in his books. Some of the volumes in his library also bear a cryptic code or numbering sequence—perhaps a shelf arrangement scheme of some kind. Talman was an accomplished draughtsman and, as we have seen, an ardent genealogist. He made two suggestions for a design: a vista of colonial Providence or Lovecraft's coat-of-arms. In a long series of letters back and forth the two men debated these choices, but finally Lovecraft opted for the former. What was actually

produced, around the summer of 1929, was certainly worth waiting for: a sketch of a Providence doorway with fanlight, and the simple words "EX LIBRIS / HOWARD PHILLIPS LOVECRAFT" in the lower left-hand corner. Lovecraft waxed rhapsodic when he saw the proofs: "Mynheer, I am knock'd out . . . I grow absolutely maudlin & lyrical . . . the thing is *splendid,* beyond even those high expectations which I form'd from a survey of your pencil design! You have caught perfectly the spirit that I wished to see reproduced, & I can't find anything to criticise in any detail of the workmanship."[46] Lovecraft initially ordered only 500 to be printed, since that was the number of books he felt were in decent enough condition to merit a bookplate. He justifiably showed the thing off wherever he went.

At the very beginning of 1929 Sam Loveman came to Providence, and the two went to Boston, Salem, and Marblehead for a few days before Loveman took the boat back to New York. But before Lovecraft could undertake the southern tour he was planning for the spring, he had one small matter to take care of—his divorce from Sonia.

Around the end of 1928 Sonia must have begun pressing for a divorce. Interestingly enough, Lovecraft was opposed to the move: ". . . during this period of time he tried every method he could devise to persuade me how much he appreciated me and that divorce would cause him great unhappiness; and that a gentleman does not divorce his wife unless he has a cause, and that he has no cause for doing so."[47] It is not, certainly, that Lovecraft was contemplating any return to cohabitation, either in New York or in Providence; it is simply that the *fact* of divorce disturbed him, upsetting his notions of what a gentleman ought to do. He was perfectly willing to carry on a marriage by correspondence, and actually put forth the case of someone he knew who was ill and lived apart from his wife, only writing letters. Sonia did not welcome such a plan: "My reply was that neither of us was really sick and that I did not wish to be a long-distance wife 'enjoying' the company of a long-distance husband by letter-writing only."

What subsequently happened is still not entirely clear. According to Arthur S. Koki, who consulted various documents in Providence, on January 24 a subpoena was issued by the Providence Superior Court for Sonia to appear on March 1. On February 6 Lovecraft, Annie Gamwell, and C. M. Eddy went to the office of a lawyer, Ralph M. Greenlaw, at 76 Westminster Street (the Turk's Head Building), and presented the following testimony:

1Q: Your full name?
A: Howard Phillips Lovecraft.
2Q: You have resided in Providence for more than two years prior to the 24th day of January, 1929?
A: Since April 17, 1926.
3Q: And you are now a domiciled inhabitant of the City of Providence, State of Rhode Island?
A: Yes.
4Q: And you were married to Sonia H. Lovecraft?
A: Yes.
5Q: When?
A: March 3, 1924.
6Q: Have you a certified copy of your marriage certificate?
A: I have.
(Same received in evidence and marked by the Magistrate Petitioner as Exhibit A.)
7Q: Now have you demeaned yourself as a faithful husband since your marriage?
A: Yes.
8Q: And performed all the obligations of the marriage covenant?
A: Yes.
9Q: Now, has the respondent, Sonia H. Lovecraft, deserted you?
A: Since the 31st of December, 1924.
10Q: You gave her no cause for deserting you?
A: None whatever.
11Q: There were no children born of this marriage?
A: No.

Koki adds: "The testimony of Mrs. Gamwell and Mr. Eddy corroborated Lovecraft's assertion that his wife had deserted him, and that he was not to blame."[48]

All this was, of course, a charade; but it was necessary because of the reactionary divorce laws prevailing in the State of New York, where until 1933 the only grounds for divorce were adultery or if one of the parties was sentenced to life imprisonment. The only other option in New York was to have a marriage annulled if it had been entered into "by reason of force, duress, or fraud" (the last term being interpreted at a judge's discretion) or if one party was declared legally insane for five years.[49] Obviously these

options did not exist for Lovecraft and Sonia; and so the fiction that she "deserted" him was soberly perpetrated, surely with the knowledge of all parties in question. Lovecraft acknowledged the legal difficulties in a letter to Moe later that year:

> . . . in most enlightened states like Rhode Island the divorce laws are such as to allow rational readjustments when no other solution is wholly adequate. If other kinds of states—such as New York or South Carolina, with their mediaeval lack of liberal statutes—were equally intelligent in their solicitude for the half-moribund institution of monogamy, they would hasten to follow suit in legislation . . .[50]

The overriding question, however, is this: Was the divorce ever finalised? The answer is clearly no. The final decree was never signed. Sonia may or may not have come to Providence on March 1, in accordance with the subpoena; if she did not, it would only emphasise her "desertion." The decree was probably signed at a later date, and Sonia must have signed it, as she was the one pressing for the divorce. But how could she have allowed Lovecraft not to sign it himself? In any case, this seems to be the state of affairs. One can only believe that Lovecraft's refusal to sign was deliberate—he simply could not bear the thought of divorcing Sonia, not because he really wanted to be married to her, but because a "gentleman does not divorce his wife without cause." This purely abstract consideration, based upon social values Lovecraft was already increasingly coming to reject, is highly puzzling. But the matter had at least one unfortunate sequel. It is certain that Sonia's subsequent marriage to Dr Nathaniel Davis of Los Angeles was legally bigamous—a fact that disturbed her considerably when she was told of it late in life. It was a fittingly botched ending to the whole affair.

Lovecraft's spring travels commenced on April 4. On that day he reached New York early in the morning, spent most of the day with Frank Long and his parents, then met his host, Vrest Orton, who drove him up to a home in Yonkers which he was occupying with his wife, child, and grandmother. (I am not sure whether or why the farm in Vermont was abandoned.) The place, built around 1830 and set in an idyllic rural area, charmed Lovecraft: "Flagstone walks, old white gate, low ceilings, small-paned windows, wide-boarded floors, white-mantled fireplaces, cobwebbed attic, rag carpets &

hooked rugs, old furniture, centuried Connecticut clock with wooden works, pictures & decorations of the 'God-bless-our-home' type—in short, everything that bespeaks an ancient New England hearthside."[51] One need hardly remark the fact that Lovecraft is staying with Orton rather than Sonia; now that they were (at least in their own minds) divorced, it would hardly have been suitable for him to stay with her. Indeed, I cannot find any evidence that he even saw her during his three weeks in New York, although he may well have done so and not informed anyone (even—or especially—his aunt Lillian, to whom he was writing frequently) of the fact.

Lovecraft spent his time visiting the gang, going to various literary gatherings arranged by Orton, and generally enjoying his freedom from responsibility and work. On April 11 Lovecraft and Long looked up old Everett McNeil, now finally out of Hell's Kitchen and dwelling in a comfortable flat in Astoria. McNeil was working on a new novel, about Cortez, but he would never finish it. Not long afterward he had to go to the hospital, and Lovecraft and Long visited him there several times. On the 24th Lovecraft visited Morton in Paterson. On the 25th was a large gang meeting at the Longs', with Loveman, Wandrei, Talman, Morton, and others showing up. The next day the Longs took Lovecraft on a motor trip north of the city and over into Connecticut.

As before, Lovecraft played the outdoorsman by helping Orton about the farm: "We cleared the grounds of leaves, changed the course of a brook, built 2 stone foot bridges, pruned the numerous peach trees, (whose blossoms are exquisite) & trained the climbing rose vines on a new home-made trellis."[52]

Random business propositions of a nebulous sort emerged, but none of them amounted to anything. Talman spent the wee hours following the gang meeting discussing the possibility of Lovecraft's working for a newspaper. Orton declared that he could get Lovecraft a job with a Manhattan publisher at any time, as he appears to have done for Wandrei, who was working in the advertising department of E. P. Dutton; but Lovecraft made a typical response: "a job *in New York* is a very dubious substitute for a peaceful berth at the poorhouse in Cranston, or the Dexter Asylum!"[53] T. Everett Harré had given Lovecraft a letter of introduction to Arthur McKeogh, editor of the *Red Book,* and Lovecraft went to see him toward the end of the month; but he rightly concluded that "I don't think McKeogh of the Red Book can use any of my stuff, for the tone of his magazine is very different from mine."[54]

Lovecraft was right: although *Red Book* (founded in 1903 and later to become metamorphosed into the women's magazine we know) was at this time largely a fiction magazine, the material it published was of the usual cheap adventure or romance sort with very little emphasis on the weird and much emphasis on conventionality of outlook.

On May 1 Lovecraft's travels began in earnest. He went right down to Washington, stayed overnight at a cheap hotel (he got a room for $1.00), then caught the 6.45 A.M. bus the next morning to Richmond, Virginia. He stayed in Virginia for only four days but took in an astonishing number of sites—Richmond, Williamsburg, Jamestown, Yorktown, Fredericksburg, and Falmouth. All were delightful. Richmond, although it had no one colonial section, nevertheless revealed substantial traces of antiquity to the diligent searcher; of course, it had suffered terrible damage during the Civil War, but was rapidly rebuilt shortly thereafter, and Lovecraft—sympathetic as he always was to the Confederate cause—found the frequent monuments to the Confederate heroes heartwarming. But it was the colonial remains that most pleased him: the State Capitol (1785–92), the John Marshall house, and especially the many old churches throughout the city.

He did not forego seeing the Valentine Museum, which contained the then recently discovered letters by Poe to his guardian, John Allan, used by Hervey Allen in his biography (really a sort of biographical novel) *Israfel* (1926). He also saw the farmhouse—built either in 1685 or 1737, and probably the oldest surviving structure in Richmond—that formed the Poe Shrine (now the Edgar Allan Poe Museum), which had also opened only recently. Aside from actual furniture owned by Poe, this place had a delightful model of the entire city of Richmond as it was around 1820; this made it much easier for Lovecraft to orient himself and to locate the surviving antiquities. "I never set eyes on the place till yesterday—yet today I know it like an old resident."[55] He saw the churchyard of St. John's Church, where Poe's mother is buried. Inside he noted the pew where, in 1775, Patrick Henry "uttered those cheaply melodramatic words which have become such a favourite saw of schoolboys—'Give me liberty or give me death!'"; but "as a loyal subject of the King I refused to enter it."[56]

On May 3 Lovecraft saw Williamsburg (then only in the early stages of its restoration as a colonial village), Jamestown, and Yorktown all in a single day. Jamestown in particular—"birthplace of the British civilisation in America"—he found particularly moving, even though only the foundations

of the original settlement (dating to 1607) remain, as the town was abandoned after 1700. Yorktown, in spite of its dubious fame as the place where Lord Cornwallis surrendered in 1781, struck Lovecraft as "a kind of southern Marblehead."[57]

Fredericksburg, fifty miles north of Richmond, was explored on the 5th. Again, Lovecraft was more interested in the colonial than in the Civil War town, but he saw both aspects in the five hours he had. Early in his explorations Lovecraft encountered a "kindly, talkative, well-bred & scholarly old man"[58] named Mr Alexander who observed that he was a tourist and guided him through many of the antiquities of the place. This seems rather uncannily like the situation in "He," but Lovecraft does not seem to have perceived the resemblance; in any case, Mr Alexander no doubt wished to exhibit some of that hospitality and courtesy on which the South prided itself. Lovecraft did not fail to take in Kenmore, the mansion occupied by George Washington's sister, as well as Falmouth, the quaint town across the Rappahannock from Fredericksburg.

On May 6 Lovecraft was back in Washington. This time his amateur friend Edward Lloyd Sechrist was in town, and Lovecraft had a cordial meeting with him. He also looked up his new correspondent Elizabeth Toldridge, whom he found less boring and tiresome than he had expected. But it was the museums that most interested him. He saw interesting exhibits at the Library of Congress, went through the Corcoran and Freer Galleries, and—best of all—canvassed the Smithsonian several times, seeing the spectacular stone idols from Easter Island ("last mute and terrible survivors of an unknown elder age when the towers of weird Lemurian cities clawed at the sky where now only the trackless waters roll"[59]) that had haunted his imagination for decades. These are the only actual specimens in the country, the American Museum of Natural History in New York having only a reproduction.

Lovecraft went to Philadelphia on May 8, seeing the usual sites but this time also taking in the new art museum situated at the end of Benjamin Franklin Parkway. Lovecraft concluded that this structure

> is absolutely the most magnificent museum building in the world —the most exquisite, impressive, and imagination-stirring piece of contemporary architecture I have ever lay'd eyes on—the most gorgeously perfected and crystallised dream of beauty which the modern world hath to give. It is a vast Grecian temple

> group atop a high elevation (a former reservoir) which terminates the Parkway vista toward the Schuylkill; reacht by broad, spacious flights of steps, flankt by waterfalls, and with a gigantick fountain playing in the centre of the great tessellated courtyard. A veritable Acropolis . . .[60]

Lovecraft had seen it before but had never approached or entered it; and the interior proved no disappointment, either, with its fine array of period rooms and paintings by such eighteenth-century British artists as Gainsborough and Gilbert Stuart.

Returning to New York on the 9th, Lovecraft found that the Longs were planning a fishing trip upstate, so that they could conveniently take him right to the doorstep of Bernard Austin Dwyer, who, although residing chiefly in the town of West Shokan, was at this time occupying a house at 177 Green Street in nearby Kingston. (This house no longer survives.) They left the next morning, reaching Kingston in the early afternoon; Dwyer was not available until 6 P.M., so Lovecraft explored the town briefly in the interim. When he finally met Dwyer, he found him as congenial as he expected: "He is an absolutely delightful chap—6 ft 3 in tall, heavily built, & with an extremely handsome, open, & winning face which frequently breaks out into an infectious smile. A pleasant, deep voice, & a refreshingly pure diction & apt choice of words—& a phenomenally sensitive imagination. A true artist if ever there was one."[61] For the next several evenings they sat up discussing literature and philosophy till far into the night. On the 14th Lovecraft visited the neighbouring towns of Hurley and New Paltz, both of them full of Dutch colonial remains. Hurley is nothing more than an array of houses along a central road; perhaps its most notable structure is the Van Deusen house (1723), which was then open as an antique shop and which Lovecraft explored thoroughly. New Paltz is a larger town, but its colonial section is some distance from the modern business district, so that its antiquity has been well preserved. Huguenot Street, which Lovecraft examined with rapture, is lined with stone houses of the early eighteenth century; one of them—the Jean Hasbrouck house (1712)—was open as a museum, and he canvassed the place thoroughly.[62]

Just before seeing these towns, Lovecraft was the victim of a robbery—nothing quite so spectacular as the Clinton Street raid of 1925, but one that resulted in the loss of his customary black enamel-cloth bag "containing my stationery & diary, two copies of Weird Tales, my pocket telescope, & some

postcards & printed matter of Kingston."[63] The important thing to note here is the existence of a diary. Lovecraft went on to say that it contained "the record of all my spring travels & all my addresses," but that the former could be reconstructed "from the letters & cards I have written home." It seems likely that similar diaries for each of his spring-summer travels for the next seven years existed, but only a quite different diary for a small portion of 1936 has come to light.

Lovecraft was hoping to take the Mohawk Trail by bus from Albany, but found to his great irritation that the service would not start until May 30, even though it continued to be advertised in travel brochures; so he was forced to take the more expensive and less scenically stimulating train to Athol. Nevertheless, he was thrilled to return home to New England after an interval of five weeks: "Then the hills grew wilder & greener & more beautiful—yet less luxuriant in folige as we receded from the warmth of the south. Finally I saw a station-name which made my heart leap—*North-Pownal, in His Majesty's New-Hampshire Grants, latterly call'd Vermont, in New-England!* God Save the King!! . . . Home at last . . ."[64] The return was perhaps not quite as transporting as the homecoming from New York in 1926, for Lovecraft knew he would come home sooner or later; but the sentiments are distinctly analogous. Lovecraft met both Cook and Munn in Athol, and on the 17th they all made a brief excursion to Brattleboro, Vermont, where they looked up Arthur Goodenough. The next day Munn drove Lovecraft and Cook to Westminster, which had not changed in the thirty years since Lovecraft saw it last (as a boy in the company of his mother), then continued on to Providence via Petersham and Barre.

It had been a great trip, with ten states plus the District of Columbia traversed; and it had given Lovecraft his first fleeting taste of the South, although in later years he would see far more of it. As with his previous year's travels, he wrote up his 1929 jaunt in a tremendous 18,000-word travelogue entitled "Travels in the Provinces of America," which, however, was not published until 1995. It surely made the rounds of Lovecraft's friends and correspondents; and if they were pleased and informed—as they could hardly fail to have been—then the essay's purpose would have been fulfilled.

And yet, Lovecraft's travels were not quite at an end. On August 5 he took a bus trip to the Fairbanks house (1636) in Dedham, Massachusetts, the oldest surviving building of English origin in New England. Actually, the

bus (run by a Mr A. Johnson) was going to the Red Horse Tavern in Sudbury (site of Longfellow's *Tales of a Wayside Inn*), and it was Lovecraft who suggested the detour to Johnson. Aside from wings added in 1641 and 1648, the Fairbanks house had undergone no alterations whatever since its first construction; and it so struck Lovecraft (who wrote a short, charming essay about his journey, "An Account of a Trip to the Antient Fairbanks House, in Dedham, and to the Red Horse Tavern in Sudbury, in the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay") that

> For once I forgot my periwigg'd membership in the rational eighteenth century, and allow'd my self to be ingulph'd by the sinister sorcery of the dark seventeenth. Verily, this was the most poignantly imagination-stirring house I had ever seen. . . . I cou'd hear the sound of the builder's axe in the nighted woods three hundred years ago, when King Charles the First, still unmartyr'd by Roundhead treason, sate on the throne, and the lone, questing canoe of Roger Williams and his companions dug its prow into the sand of Moshassuck's pathless shoar, not four squares downhill from the spot where I am now seated.

Again I must emphasise the keenness of perception and imagination that allows Lovecraft to drink in such sites and weave such striking fancies around them. Is it any wonder that so many details of his travels found their way into his later fiction? The Red Horse Tavern (1683 et seq.) was also pleasing (it was then owned by Henry Ford, "a very respectable coach-maker"), but not nearly as stimulating as the hoary Fairbanks house.

On August 13 the Longs drove through Providence on their way to Cape Cod and picked up Lovecraft to accompany them. New Bedford was explored that day, and Lovecraft found the Whaling Museum—housed on the bark *Lagoda*—tremendously stirring. The next day they reached Onset, on the Cape, where they presumably stayed in a hotel or lodge; later that day they explored other towns in the vicinity—Chatham, Orleans, Hyannis, Sandwich. Lovecraft did not find the Cape very rich in colonial antiquities or even as "picturesque as its popular reputation would argue,"[65] but it was pleasing enough, especially in light of the fact that he was getting free room and board with the Longs. The next day's explorations included Wood's Hole, Sagamore, and Falmouth.

But the best part of the journey for Lovecraft was on the 17th, when he took his first ride in an airplane. It was only $3.00, and would fly passengers

all over Buzzard's Bay. It proved no disappointment: "The landscape effect was that of a bird's eye view map—& the scene was such as to lend itself to this inspection with maximum advantage. . . . This aeroplane ride (which attained a pretty good height at its maximum) adds a finishing touch to the perfection of the present outing."[66] For someone with so cosmic an imagination as Lovecraft, it is scarcely to be wondered that a ride in an airplane—the only time he was actually off the surface of the earth—would be a powerful imaginative stimulus; and only poverty prevented his ever repeating the experience.

One more trip occurred on August 29. Lovecraft and Annie Gamwell took yet another sojourn to the ancestral Foster region, renewing their acquaintances of three years earlier and extending their explorations still further. This time they investigated the area called Howard Hill, where Asaph Phillips had built his homestead in 1790. They met several people who recalled Whipple Phillips and Robie Place, saw old Phillips gravestones, and consulted genealogical records that helped Lovecraft fill in details of his ancestry. Later they returned to Moosup Valley, the site of their 1926 trip, and again Lovecraft was charmed at the unchanged nature of the region: "Here, indeed, was a small and glorious world of the past *completely* sever'd from the sullying tides of time; a world *exactly* the same as before the revolution, with *absolutely nothing* changed in the way of ritual details, currents of folk-feeling, identity of families, or social and economick order."[67] How unfortunate that such places are now so few!

This was the extent of Lovecraft's 1929 travels; but if the mountain would not come to Mohammad, Mohammad would come to the mountain. Several of his friends dropped by in Providence for brief visits—Morton in mid-June, Cook and Munn in late June, and George Kirk and his wife in early September.[68] Lovecraft himself had become a Mecca for the many friends and correspondents—in amateurdom, weird fiction, and other realms—he had developed over a lifetime.

In early July Lovecraft was forced to wrestle with the revision of another story by Adolphe de Castro, since, incredibly, de Castro had paid for it in advance.[69] This tale, which in de Castro's 1893 collection was called "The Automatic Executioner," was retitled "The Electric Executioner" by Lovecraft. In the course of rewriting it, Lovecraft transformed it into a *comic* weird tale—not a parody, but a story that actually mingles humour and

horror. He repeatedly asserted that these two modes did not mix, and in general I believe he is right; but humour was at least one way of relieving the drudgery of working on a tale that had little enough potential to start with.

An unnamed narrator is asked by the president of his company to track down a man named Feldon who has disappeared with some papers in Mexico. Boarding a train, the man later finds that he is alone in a car with one other occupant, who proves to be a dangerous maniac. This person has apparently devised an hoodlike instrument for performing executions and wishes the narrator to be the first experimental victim. Realising that he cannot overwhelm the man by force, the narrator seeks to delay the experiment until the train reaches the next station, Mexico City. He first asks to be allowed to write a letter disposing of his effects; then he asserts that he has newspaper friends in Sacramento who would be interested in publicising the invention; and finally he says that he would like to make a sketch of the thing in operation—why doesn't the man put it on his own head so that it can be drawn? The madman does so; but then the narrator, having earlier perceived that the madman has an attraction for Aztec mythology, pretends to be possessed by religious fervour and begins shouting Aztec and other names at random as a further stalling tactic. The madman does so also, and in the process his device pulls taut over his neck and executes him; the narrator faints. When revived, the narrator finds that the madman is no longer in the car, although a crowd of people is there; he is informed that in fact no one was ever in the car. Later Feldon is discovered dead in a remote cave—with certain objects unquestionably belonging to the narrator.

In de Castro's stilted and lifeless prose, this tale comes off as *unintentionally* funny; Lovecraft makes it consciously so. In so doing, he makes several in-jokes. Part of the characterisation of the madman is drawn from a rather more harmless person Lovecraft met on the train ride from New York to Washington on his recent journey—a German who kept repeating "Efferythingk iss luffly!," "I vass shoost leddingk my light shine!" and other random utterances.[70] The madman in "The Electric Executioner" does in fact say at one point, "I shall let my light shine, as it were." Later, in the course of uttering the names of various Aztec gods, the narrator cries out: "Ya-R'lyeh! Ya-R'lyeh! . . . Cthulhutl fhtaghn! Niguratl-Yig! Yog-Sototl—" The spelling variants are intentional, as Lovecraft wished to give an Aztec cast to the names so as to suggest they were part of that culture's theology.

Otherwise, Lovecraft has followed de Castro's plot far more faithfully than in "The Last Test"—retaining character names, the basic sequence of incidents, and even the final supernatural twist (although sensibly suggesting that it was Feldon's astral body, not the narrator's, that was in the car). He has, of course, fleshed out the plot considerably, adding better motivation and livelier descriptive and narrative touches. The tale is not an entire failure.

I do not know how much Lovecraft got paid for "The Electric Executioner," but it landed with *Weird Tales* and appeared in the August 1930 issue. Predictably, readers began noticing the dropping of invented names in both this and the earlier de Castro revision; N. J. O'Neail queried in the March 1930 issue about the origin of Yog-Sothoth, saying that "Mr. Lovecraft links the latter with Cthulhu in 'The Dunwich Horror' and Adolphe de Castro also refers to Yog-Sothoth in 'The Last Test.'" Lovecraft, both tickled and mortified at the deception, wrote to Robert E. Howard: "I ought, though, to write Mr. O'Neail and disabuse him of the idea that there is a large blind spot in his mythological erudition!"[71]

At some subsequent period Lovecraft revised a third tale for de Castro. He remarked in late 1930: ". . . I did accidentally land . . . three tales of Old Dolph's,"[72] and later declared: "I've also put Yog-Sothoth and Tsathoggua in yarns ghost-written for Adolphe de Castro . . ."[73] As Robert M. Price has noted,[74] these statements imply two things: 1) that Lovecraft actually *sold* (not merely revised) three stories, and that the third story makes at least passing mention of Tsathoggua, since the two known stories do not. A consultation of periodical indexes in both the general and weird/fantasy/science fiction fields has not turned up any other published tale by de Castro in this period, leading one to believe that the story may have been sold to some periodical (not *Weird Tales,* clearly) that folded before the tale could be printed. I do not believe we have lost any masterwork of literature as a result.

In the fall of 1929 Lovecraft and Derleth engaged in a debate over the best weird stories ever written. This may have been part of the honours thesis Derleth was writing ("The Weird Tale in English Since 1890," completed in 1930 and published in W. Paul Cook's late amateur journal, the *Ghost,* for May 1945), but whatever the case, the discussion ended up having an unexpectedly wider audience. In a letter of October 6 Lovecraft evaluated

the ten or twelve stories Derleth had selected as his list of "bests," agreeing with some and disagreeing with others (Derleth had already by this time gained his idolatrous fondness for "The Outsider"). Shortly thereafter Frank Long insinuated himself in the controversy. In the middle of November Lovecraft wrote to Derleth:

> The other day the literary editor of the local *Journal* had a discussion in his daily column about the weirdest story ever written—& his choices were so commonplace that I couldn't resist writing him myself & enclosing transcripts (with my own tales omitted) of your & Belknap's lists of best horror tales. He wrote back asking permission to discuss the matter publicly in his column, mentioning you, Belknap, & myself by name—& I have told him he may do so.[75]

This refers to Bertrand Kelton Hart, who signed himself B. K. Hart and wrote a column called "The Sideshow" that ran daily (except for Sundays) in the *Providence Journal,* devoted largely but not exclusively to literary matters. In the course of several columns Hart transcribed lists of best weird tales by all three participants; Lovecraft's (published in the issue for November 23) is as follows:

"The Willows" by Algernon Blackwood
"[Novel of] The White Powder" by Arthur Machen
"The White People" by Arthur Machen
"[Novel of] The Black Seal" by Arthur Machen
"The Fall of the House of Usher" by Edgar Allan Poe
"The House of Sounds" by M. P. Shiel
"The Yellow Sign" by Robert W. Chambers

A group of second choices includes:

"Count Magnus" by M. R. James
"The Death of Halpin Frayser" by Ambrose Bierce
"The Suitable Surroundings" by Ambrose Bierce
"Seaton's Aunt" by Walter de la Mare

This is very similar to a list published as "Favorite Weird Stories of H. P. Lovecraft" (*Fantasy Fan,* October 1934), and would make an excellent anthology in spite of the number of Machen items listed.

Lovecraft was tickled by his appearance in the paper. He did not ordinarily like to obtrude himself as a persistent bombarder of letters to the editorial page, feeling it callow and self-promotional; but around this time

another matter far more pressing to him than an academic discussion of weird fiction forced him once again into a vigorous letter-writing campaign. In spring it had been announced that the old warehouses along South Water Street would be torn down to make way for what was announced as a new hall of records (adjacent to the fine neo-Georgian court house, built in 1928–33, at the corner of College and North Main Streets). Lovecraft had already written a letter three years earlier in which, amidst a general paean to the archaic wonders of Providence, he had specifically praised these structures ("the incomparable colorful row of 1816 warehouses in South Water street"[76]); this letter, written on October 5, 1926, appeared in the *Sunday Journal* for October 10. Now, appalled at the threatened destruction, he wrote a long letter on March 20, 1929 (titled by Lovecraft "The Old Brick Row," published in the *Providence Sunday Journal* for March 24 in abridged form as "Retain Historic 'Old Brick Row'"), appealing almost frantically to the city government not to destroy the buildings. In his letter Lovecraft chided those who declared them "shabby, ramshackle old rookeries"; but the fact of the matter is that these utilitarian structures really had reached a state of decrepitude, and—since it was decades before the restoration of colonial sites in the city would begin—there was little option but to tear them down. On September 24 the City Council approved a measure to condemn the buildings.[77] Lovecraft tried to keep up a brave front, urging Morton to write to the *Journal* also. Morton did so on December 17 (it was published in the *Sunday Journal* for December 22); but Lovecraft must have known that the fate of the warehouses was sealed.

As a final ploy Lovecraft resurrected his rusty poetic skills and wrote the poignant twelve-stanza poem, "The East India Brick Row," on December 12:

They are the sills that hold the lights of home;
    The links that join us to the years before;
The haven of old questing wraiths that roam
    Down long, dim aisles to a familiar shore.
They store the charm that years build, cell by cell,
    Like coral, from our lives, our past, our land;
Beauty that dreamers know and cherish well,
    But hard eyes slight, too dulled to understand.

But Lovecraft knew the end was coming, and so he concluded:

So if at last a callous age must tear
    These jewels from the old town's quiet dress,

I think the harbour streets will always wear
A puzzled look of wistful emptiness.

This poem appeared in the *Providence Journal* as "Brick Row" on January 8, 1930. It received such a favourable response that the editor wrote a cordial letter to Lovecraft about it;[78] but it was too late. The Brick Row must have come down about this time, although ironically the hall of records was never built; instead, the land became a park dedicated to the memory of Henry B. Gardner, Jr, a Providence lawyer.

"The East India Brick Row" was written in the midst of an unexpected burst of poetry at the end of 1929. At the very beginning of the year, or perhaps in late 1928, Lovecraft had written the powerful weird poem "The Wood" (*Tryout,* January 1929), telling of the cutting down of an ancient wood and the building of a lavish city on its site:

Forests may fall, but not the dusk they shield;
So on the spot where that proud city stood,
The shuddering dawn no single stone reveal'd,
But fled the blackness of a primal wood.

This may be nothing more than a refined version of the shudder-mongering of earlier poems such as "The Rutted Road" or "Nemesis," but at least it is artfully done—and, what is more, it is finally beginning to exemplify those principles of poetry as a living language that Lovecraft had now embraced and was inculcating to Elizabeth Toldridge and others.

One other poem, written apparently in the summer,[79] prefaced the flood of verse at the end of the year—a 212-line mock-epic entitled "An Epistle to the Rt. Hon^{ble} Maurice Winter Moe, Esq. of Zythopolis, in the Northwest Territory of His Majesty's American Dominions," written both as a sort of versified letter to Moe (Zythopolis is a neo-Greek compound meaning "Beer-City," i.e., Milwaukee) and as a celebration of the year 1904. It was evidently designed for inclusion in a memorial booklet for the twenty-fifth reunion of the Class of 1904 at the University of Wisconsin; this item has not turned up, so I am not sure whether the poem actually appeared there. What the poem shows, if anything, is how completely Lovecraft had come to use his once-beloved heroic couplets for the purpose of self-parody.

"The Outpost," written on November 26, inaugurates the poetic outburst. It is not a great success and was rejected by Farnsworth Wright as being too long (it is in thirteen quatrains).[80] It speaks of the "great King who fears to dream" in a palace in Zimbabwe. The poem seems clearly inspired by

various anecdotes told to Lovecraft by Edward Lloyd Sechrist, who had actually been to the ruins of Zimbabwe in Africa. One evening when Lovecraft met Sechrist in Washington in May 1929

> he shewed me many rare curiosities such as rare woods, rhinoceras-hide, &c. &c.—& especially a prehistoric bird-idol of strangely crude design found near the cryptical & mysterious ruins of Zimbabwe (remnants of a vanished & unknown race & civilisation) in the jungle, & resembling the colossal bird-idols found on the walls of that baffling & fancy-provoking town. I made a sketch of this, for it at once suggested a multiplicity of ideas for weird fictional development.[81]

No bird or bird-idol actually figures in the poem, but I have no doubt that at least some of the imagery derives from Lovecraft's talks with Sechrist.

At this point B. K. Hart reenters the scene. The discussion of weird fiction had about died down when Hart stumbled upon a copy of Harré's *Beware After Dark!* containing "The Call of Cthulhu." While enjoying the tale, he was startled to note that Wilcox's residence at 7 Thomas Street was one he himself had once occupied. Hart, in a column published in the *Journal* for November 30, pretended to take umbrage ("I won't have it. My own little ghost shadows, slinking home to the sun in the healthy dawn, are quite enough for Thomas street, and I reject these sinister brutes from the other side of the beyond, cluttering up the traffic with their gargantuan bulk") and made a dire threat: ". . . I shall not be happy until, joining league with wraiths and ghouls, I have plumped down at least one large and abiding ghost by way of reprisal upon his own doorstep in Barnes street. . . . I think I shall teach it to moan in a minor dissonance every morning at 3 o'clock sharp, with a clinking of chains."[82] What else could Lovecraft do but, that night at 3 A.M., write "The Messenger"?

> The thing, he said, would come that night at three
> From the old churchyard on the hill below;
> But crouching by an oak fire's wholesome glow,
> I tried to tell myself it could not be.
> Surely, I mused, it was a pleasantry
> Devised by one who did not truly know
> The Elder Sign, bequeathed from long ago,
> That sets the fumbling forms of darkness free.
> He had not meant it—no—but still I lit

Another lamp as starry Leo climbed
Out of the Seekonk, and a steeple chimed
Three—and the firelight faded, bit by bit.
Then at the door that cautious rattling came—
And the mad truth devoured me like a flame!

Winfield Townley Scott—he who had referred to the bulk of Lovecraft's verse as "eighteenth-century rubbish"—calls this "perhaps as wholly satisfactory as any poem he ever wrote."[83] I am not entirely certain of this—the poem seems again simply an extraordinarily skilled shudder, but with no depth of thought behind it—but somehow Lovecraft had suddenly come to master a poetic idiom beyond that of the stilted heroic couplet. Both the remarkable simplicity and naturalness of the language and the unusually frequent enjambement (lack of end-stopping) are to be noted. B. K. Hart must have been pleased with the piece, for he printed it in his column for December 3, 1929.

"The East India Brick Row" followed in early December, after which Lovecraft wrote what *I* might regard as his single most successful poem, "The Ancient Track." "There was no hand to hold me back / That night I found the ancient track," begins—and ends—this brooding, pensive lyric, written in Poe-esque iambic trimeter. The narrator seems to remember the area in which he has entered ("There was a milestone that I knew— / 'Two miles to Dunwich' . . ."—the only other reference to Dunwich in all Lovecraft's fiction and poetry), but once he reaches the crest he sees nothing but "A valley of the lost and dead" and a fog

Whose curling talons mocked the thought
That I had ever known this spot.
Too well I saw from the mad scene
That my loved past had never been—

But nevertheless, "There was no hand to hold me back / That night I found the ancient track." This poem readily sold to *Weird Tales,* where it appeared in the March 1930 issue and for which Lovecraft received $11.00.[84]

Then, in the remarkable week between December 27 and January 4, Lovecraft wrote *Fungi from Yuggoth.* The thirty-six sonnets that make up this sequence are generally regarded as his most sustained weird poetic work, and the cycle has accordingly generated a considerable body of criticism. Before studying the text itself, it may be well to consider some of the factors that may have led to this tremendous outburst of weird verse.

The most general influence, perhaps, is Clark Ashton Smith. While it is true that fiction had, by around 1921, already come at least to equal poetry as Lovecraft's major aesthetic outlet, it can also be no accident that the virtual surcease of his poetic output from 1922 to 1928 commenced at the very time he came in touch with Smith. Here was a poet who was writing dense, vigorous weird and cosmic poetry in a vibrant, vital manner as far removed as possible from the eighteenth century or even from the poetry of Poe. Lovecraft, who had long realised, in an abstract way, the deficiencies of his own poetry but had rarely encountered a *living* poet doing work he could admire and even envy, now came upon just such a poet. Lovecraft's verse during this period accordingly descends to harmless birthday odes or other occasional verse, with rare exceptions such as the powerful "The Cats," "Primavera," or "Festival" ("Yule Horror").

Then, around 1928, Lovecraft began work on Moe's *Doorways to Poetry.* After a long period of quiescence, he was forced to turn his attention again to the theory of poetry, and—at least in a small way (as in the "Sonnet Study")—to its practice. It was at this time that he began voicing his new theory of poetry as simple, straightforward diction that uses the language of its own day to convey its message. A random comment made just after writing "The Outpost" suggests that Lovecraft had at least a nebulous idea that these two factors (Clark Ashton Smith and the *Doorways*) had had their effect: "Meanwhile some malign influence—prob'ly revising that Moe text book on poetick appreciation—has got me invadin' one of Klarkash-Ton's provinces . . ."[85]

The immediate influence on the *Fungi,* however, clearly seems to be Wandrei's *Sonnets of the Midnight Hours,* which Lovecraft read no later than November 1927.[86] It is difficult to know which or how many of these Lovecraft read: there are at least twenty-eight of them, but only twenty-six appear in their final (and presumably definitive) appearance in Wandrei's *Poems for Midnight* (1964); Wandrei excluded two that had earlier appeared in *Weird Tales,* perhaps because he was not satisfied with their quality. In any event, this cycle—in which all the poems are written in the first person and all are inspired by actual dreams by Wandrei—is certainly very powerful, but does not seem to me quite as polished or as cumulatively affecting as Lovecraft's. Nevertheless, Lovecraft clearly derived the basic idea of a sonnet cycle from this work, even though his differs considerably from it in actual execution.

Winfield Townley Scott and Edmund Wilson independently believed that the *Fungi* may have been influenced by Edwin Arlington Robinson, but I cannot verify that Lovecraft had read Robinson by this time, or in fact ever read him. He is not mentioned in any correspondence I have seen prior to 1935. The parallels in diction adduced by Scott seem to be of a very general sort and do not establish a sound case for any such influence.

We now come to the vexed question of what *Fungi from Yuggoth* actually is. Is it a strictly unified poem that reveals some sort of continuity, or is it merely a random collection of sonnets flitting from topic to topic with little order or sequence? I remain inclined toward the latter view. No one can possibly believe that there is any actual *plot* to this work, in spite of various critics' laboured attempts to find such a thing; and other critics' claims for a kind of "unity" based on structure or theme or imagery are similarly unconvincing because the "unity" so discovered does not seem at all systematic or coherent. My conclusion remains that the *Fungi* sonnets provided Lovecraft with an opportunity to crystallise various conceptions, types of imagery, and fragments of dreams that could not have found creative expression in fiction—a sort of imaginative housecleaning. The fact that he so exhaustively used ideas from his commonplace book for the sonnets supports this conclusion.

Certainly, the number of autobiographical features—relating both to specific details of imagery and to the overall philosophical thrust—in the *Fungi* is very large. The very first sonnet, "The Book," speaks of a man who enters a bookstore with books piled to the ceiling ("crumbling elder lore at little cost") but with evidently no "seller old in craft" tending the place. This immediately recalls Lovecraft's stream-of-consciousness recollection of various bookstalls he visited in New York ("the mystic bookstalls with their hellish bearded guardians . . . monstrous books from nightmare lands for sale at a song if one might chance to pick the right one from mouldering, ceiling-high piles"[87]). "The Pigeon-Flyers" (X) is a literal account of a strange custom in the "'Hell's Kitchen' slum of New York, where bonfire-building & pigeon-flying are the two leading recreations of youth."[88] Such examples could be multiplied almost indefinitely.

Some of the sonnets seem to be reworkings of some of the dominant conceptions of previous stories. "Nyarlathotep" (XXI) is a close retelling of the prose poem of 1920; "The Elder Pharos" (XXVII) speaks of a figure who "wears a silken mask," whom we first saw in *The Dream-Quest of Unknown*

Kadath; "Alienation" (XXXII) seems roughly based upon "The Strange High House in the Mist." More significantly, some poems seem to be anticipations of stories Lovecraft would write in later years, making the *Fungi* a sort of recapitulation of what he had written before and a presage of his subsequent work.

It may be true that many of the sonnets, like so much of Lovecraft's weird verse, have no purpose but sending a chill up one's spine; but toward the middle and end of the sequence some very different poems begin to appear, which have either beauty as their keynote or pensive autobiography. "Hesperia" (XIII) is the first such item, speaking of a "land where beauty's meaning flowers," but concluding bitterly that "human tread has never soiled these streets." "The Gardens of Yin" (XVIII) attempts to depict what was for Lovecraft the quintessence of beauty ("There would be terraced gardens, rich with flowers, / And flutter of bird and butterfly and bee. / There would be walks, and bridges arching over / Warm lotos-pools reflecting temple eaves"); some of this imagery seems to derive from Robert W. Chambers's novelette "The Maker of Moons" (in the 1896 collection of that title). The best of this type is "Background" (XXX):

> I never can be tied to raw, new things,
> For I first saw the light in an old town,
> Where from my window huddled roofs sloped down
> To a quaint harbour rich with visionings.
> Streets with carved doorways where the sunset beams
> Flooded old fanlights and small window-panes,
> And Georgian steeples topped with gilded vanes—
> These were the sights that shaped my childhood dreams.

These lines are now embossed on the H. P. Lovecraft memorial plaque at the John Hay Library in Providence, R.I.

The cycle is fittingly concluded with "Continuity" (XXXVI), which attempts to account for Lovecraft's cosmic orientation:

There is in some ancient things a trace
Of some dim essence—more than form or weight;
A tenuous aether, indeterminate,
Yet linked with all the laws of time and space.
A faint, veiled sign of continuities
That outward eyes can never quite descry;
Of locked dimensions harbouring years gone by,

And out of reach except for hidden keys.
It moves me most when slanting sunbeams glow
On old farm buildings set against a hill,
And paint with life the shapes which linger still
From centuries less a dream than this we know.
In that strange light I feel I am not far
From the fixt mass whose sides the ages are.

In one compact poem Lovecraft's antiquarianism, cosmicism, love of the weird, and his attachment to his native land are all fused into a unity. It is his most condensed, and most poignant, autobiographical statement.

Those who argue for the "unity" of the *Fungi* must take account of the somewhat odd manner in which it achieved its present state. "Recapture" (now sonnet XXXIV) was written in late November, presumably as a separate poem. For years after it was written, the *Fungi* comprised only thirty-five sonnets. When R. H. Barlow considered publishing it as a booklet, he suggested that "Recpature" be added to the cycle; but when he rather casually tacked it on at the end of a typescript he was preparing, Lovecraft felt that it should be placed third from the end: "'Recapture' seems somehow more *specific & localised* in spirit than either of the others named, hence would go better before them—allowing the *Fungi* to come to a close with more diffusive ideas."[89] To my mind, this suggests no more than that Lovecraft had some rough idea that the cycle ought to be read in sequence and ought to end with a more general utterance. And yet, shortly after finishing the series he was still mentioning casually the possibility of "grind[ing] out a dozen or so more before I consider the sequence concluded."[90]

Certainly, Lovecraft had no compunction in allowing the individual sonnets of the *Fungi* to appear quite randomly in the widest array of publications. Eleven sonnets (IX, XIII, XIV, XV, XIX, XXI, XXII, XXIII, XXVII, XXXII, XXXIV) appeared in *Weird Tales* in 1930–31 (only ten appeared under the specific heading *Fungi from Yuggoth,* since "Recapture" had been accepted earlier and appeared separately); five more (XI, XX, XXIX, XXX, XXXI) appeared in the *Providence Journal* in the early months of 1930; nine (IV, VI, VII, VIII, XII, XVI, XVIII, XXIV, XXVI) appeared in Walter J. Coates's *Driftwind* from 1930 to 1932; the remainder appeared later in amateur journals or fan magazines, and after Lovecraft's death many more were printed in *Weird Tales*. "Expectancy" (XXVIII) was

the only poem never to be periodically published in or just after Lovecraft's lifetime; and the cycle as a unit was not published until 1943.

As a whole, the *Fungi from Yuggoth* constitutes the summit of Lovecraft's weird verse. It is a compressed transcription of many of the themes, images, and conceptions that most frequently and obsessively haunted his imagination, and their expression in a relatively simple, non-archaic, but highly condensed and piquant diction (with such novel and stirring compounds as "dream-transient," "storm-crazed," and "dream-plagued") represent Lovecraft's triumphant if belated declaration of independence from the deadening influence of eighteenth-century verse. They perhaps do not precisely conform either to the Italian or Shakespearean sonnet form (which may account for Lovecraft's frequent reference to them as "pseudo-sonnets"); but they are orthodox enough in metre to be an implied rebuke to those poets who had too readily given up standard metre for the supposed liberation of free verse. It is a shame that none of his illustrious contemporaries ever saw them.

Shortly after finishing the *Fungi* Lovecraft was jolted to hear of the death of Everett McNeil, which had occurred on December 14, 1929 but news of which did not get out until well into the next month. Lovecraft wrote a paean to him in various letters—a paean that brought back all the memories of his own New York experience:

> When Sonny [Frank Long] and I first met him, in 1922, his affairs were at their lowest ebb, and he dwelt in the frightful slum of Hell's Kitchen . . . High in a squalid tenement house amidst this welter lived good old Mac—his little flat an oasis of neatness and wholesomeness with its quaint, homely pictures, rows of simple books, and curious mechanical devices which his ingenuity concocted to aid his work—lap boards, files, etc., etc. He lived on meagre rations of canned soup and crackers, and did not whimper at his lot. . . . He had suffered a lot in his day—and at one time had nothing to eat but the sugar which he could pick up free at lunch rooms and dissolve in water for the sake of its nourishment. . . . I shall always associate him with the great grey glamorous stretches of sedgy flat lands in Southern Brooklyn—salt marshes with inlets, like the Holland coast, and dotted with

> lonely Dutch cottages with curving roof-lines. All gone now—like Mac . . .[91]

Perhaps, Lovecraft felt, he had been all too close to being reduced to Mac's state before he fled for the peace and safety of Providence.

Somewhat more positive news had emerged at the very beginning of January: the critic William Bolitho had casually worked in a favourable mention of Lovecraft in his column in the New York *World* for January 4, 1930. The title of this instalment, "Pulp Magazines," tells the whole story: Bolitho was asserting that these humble organs of literature can provide not merely greater pleasure but sometimes even greater literary substance than more prestigious literary venues. Bolitho concludes:

> In this world there are chiefs, evidently. I am inclined to think they must be pretty good. There is Otis Adelbert Kline and H. P. Lovecraft, whom I am sure I would rather read than many fashionable lady novelists they give teas to; and poets too. Meditate on that, you who are tired of the strained prettiness of the verse in the great periodicals, that there are still poets here of the pure Poe school who sell and are printed for a vast public.[92]

Lovecraft was aware of this remark—he could hardly fail to be, as Bolitho's entire column was reprinted in *Weird Tales* for April 1930—and on one occasion expressed mortification at the linkage to Kline: "Another recent thing which rather tickled me was a favourable mention of my tales in William Bolitho's column in the *N. Y. World*—although it was spoiled by the coupling of my name with that of the amiable hack Otis Adelbert Kline!"[93]

It had been more than a year since Lovecraft had written any original fiction; and that tale—"The Dunwich Horror"—was itself written after more than a year's interval since its predecessor, "The Colour out of Space." Revision, travel, and inevitably correspondence ate up all the time Lovecraft might have had for fiction, for he stated repeatedly that he required a completely free schedule to achieve the mental clarity needed for writing stories. Now, however, at the end of 1929, a revision job came up that allowed him to exercise his fictional pen far beyond what he expected—and, frankly, beyond what was required by the job in question. But however prodigal Lovecraft may have been in the task, the result—"The Mound," ghostwritten for Zealia Bishop—was well worth the effort.

Of this story it is difficult to speak in small compass. It is itself, at 25,000 words, the lengthiest of Lovecraft's revisions of a weird tale and is comparable in length to "The Whisperer in Darkness." That it is entirely the work of Lovecraft can be gauged by Bishop's original plot-germ, as recorded by R. H. Barlow: "There is an Indian mound near here, which is haunted by a headless ghost. Sometimes it is a woman."[94] Lovecraft found this idea "insufferably tame & flat"[95] and fabricated an entire novelette of underground horror, incorporating many conceptions of his evolving myth-cycle, including Cthulhu (under the variant form Tulu).

"The Mound" concerns a member of Coronado's expedition of 1541, Panfilo de Zamacona y Nuñez, who leaves the main group and conducts a solitary expedition to the mound region of what is now Oklahoma. There he hears tales of an underground realm of fabulous antiquity and (more to his interest) great wealth, and finds an Indian who will lead him to one of the few remaining entrances to this realm, although the Indian refuses to accompany him on the actual journey. Zamacona comes upon the civilisation of Xinaian (which he pronounces "K'n-yan"), established by quasi-human creatures who (implausibly) came from outer space. These inhabitants have developed remarkable mental abilities, including telepathy and the power of dematerialisation—the process of dissolving themselves and selected objects around them to their component atoms and recombining them at some other location. Zamacona initially expresses wonder at this civilisation, but gradually finds that it has declined both intellectually and morally from a much higher level and has now become corrupt and decadent. He attempts to escape, but suffers a horrible fate. A manuscript that he had written of his adventures is unearthed in modern times by an archaeologist, who paraphrases his incredible tale.

This skeletonic plot outline cannot begin to convey the textural richness of the story, which—although perhaps not as carefully written as many of Lovecraft's original works—is successful in depicting vast gulfs of time and in vivifying with a great abundance of detail the underground world of K'n-yan. What should also be evident is that "The Mound" is the first, but by no means the last, of Lovecraft's tales to utilise an alien civilisation as a transparent metaphor for certain phases of human (and, more specifically, Western) civilisation. Initially, K'n-yan seems a Lovecraftian utopia: the people have conquered old age, have no poverty because of their relatively few numbers and their thorough mastery of technology, use religion only as

an aesthetic ornament, practise selective breeding to ensure the vigour of the "ruling type," and pass the day largely in aesthetic and intellectual activity. Lovecraft makes no secret of the parallels he is drawing to contemporary Western civilisation:

> The nation [had] gone through a period of idealistic industrial democracy which gave equal opportunities to all, and thus, by raising the naturally intelligent to power, drained the masses of all their brains and stamina. . . . Physical comfort was ensured by an urban mechanisation of standardised and easily maintained pattern. . . . Literature was all highly individual and analytical. . . . The modern tendency was to feel rather than to think. . . .

Lovecraft even notes that in "bygone eras . . . K'n-yan had held ideas much like those of the classic and renaissance outer world, and had possessed a natural character and art full of what Europeans regard as dignity, kindness, and nobility." But as Zamacona continues to observe the people, he begins to notice disturbing signs of decadence. Consider the state of literature and art at the time of his arrival:

> The dominance of machinery had at one time broken up the growth of normal aesthetics, introducing a lifelessly geometrical tradition fatal to sound expression. This had soon been outgrown, but had left its mark upon all pictorial and decorative attempts; so that except for conventionalised religious designs, there was little depth or feeling in any later work. Archaistic reproductions of earlier work had been found much preferable for general enjoyment.

The similarity of these remarks to those on modern art and architecture as found in "Heritage or Modernism: Common Sense in Art Forms" (1935) is manifest:

> They [the modernists] launch new decorative designs of cones and cubes and triangles and segments—wheels and belts, smokestacks and stream-lined sausage moulders—problems in Euclid and nightmares from alcoholic orgies—and tell us that these things are the only authentic symbols of the age in which we live. . . . When a given age has no new *natural* impulses toward change, is it not better to continue building on the established forms than to concoct grotesque and meaningless

> novelties out of thin academic theory? Indeed, under certain conditions is not a policy of frank and virile antiquarianism—a healthy, vigorous revival of old forms still justified by their relation to life—infinitely sounder than a feverish mania for the destruction of familiar things and the laboured, freakish, uninspired search for strange shapes which nobody wants and which really mean nothing?

But the problems of K'n-yan spread beyond aesthetics. Science was "falling into decay"; history was "more and more neglected"; and gradually religion was becoming less a matter of aesthetic ritual and more a sort of degraded superstition: "Rationalism degenerated more and more into fanatical and orgiastic superstition . . . and tolerance steadily dissolved into a series of frenzied hatreds, especially toward the outer world." The narrator concludes: "It is evident that K'n-yan was far along in its decadence—reacting with mixed apathy and hysteria against the standardised and time-tabled life of stultifying regularity which machinery had brought it during its middle period." How can one fail to recall Lovecraft's condemnation of the "machine-culture" dominating his own age and its probable outcome?

> We shall hear of all sorts of futile reforms and reformers—standardised culture-outlines, synthetic sports and spectacles, professional play-leaders and study-guides, and kindred examples of machine-made uplift and brotherly spirit. And it will amount to just about as much as most reforms do! Meanwhile the tension of boredom and unsatisfied imagination will increase—breaking out with increasing frequency in crimes of morbid perversity and explosive violence.[96]

These dour and sadly accurate reflections point to the fundamental difference between "The Mound" and such later tales as *At the Mountains of Madness* and "The Shadow out of Time": Lovecraft has not yet developed his later political theory of "fascistic socialism" whereby the spreading of economic wealth among the many and the restricting of political power to the few will (to his mind) produce a genuine utopia of useful citizens who work only a few hours a week and spend the rest of their time engaging in wholesome intellectual and aesthetic activity. That pipe-dream only emerged around 1931, as the depression became increasingly severe and forced Lovecraft wholly to renounce both democracy (in which he had never believed) and laissez-faire capitalism. The civilisation of K'n-yan is, perhaps

a little surprisingly, said to be "a kind of communistic or semi-anarchical state"; but we have already seen that there is a "ruling type" which had "become highly superior through selective breeding and social evolution," so that in reality K'n-yan is an aristocracy of intellect where "habit rather than law determin[ed] the daily order of things." There is no mention of socialism, and the notion that a "period of idealistic industrial democracy" had been "passed through" bespeaks Lovecraft's hope against hope that mechanisation could somehow be overcome or tamed in order to leave traditional aesthetics and modes of behaviour relatively unscathed. The fact that in the story this proves not to be the case makes one aware that Lovecraft, for a variety of reasons that I shall explore in the next chapter, had become very pessimistic about the ultimate fate of Western culture.

Rich in intellectual substance as "The Mound" is, it is far longer a work than Lovecraft needed to write for this purpose; and this length bode ill for its publication prospects. *Weird Tales* was on increasingly shaky ground, and Farnsworth Wright had to be careful what he accepted. It is not at all surprising to hear Lovecraft lament in early 1930: "The damned fool has just turned down the story I 'ghost-wrote' for my Kansas City client, on the ground that it was too long for single publication, yet structurally unadapted to division. I'm not worrying, because I've got my cash; but it does sicken me to watch the caprices of that editorial jackass!"[97] Lovecraft does not say how much he got from Bishop for the work; there may be a certain wish-fulfilment here, for as late as 1934 she still owed him a fair amount of money.

The lingering belief that Frank Belknap Long had some hand in the writing of the story—derived from Zealia Bishop's declaration that "Long . . . advised and worked with me on that short novel"[98]—has presumably been squelched by Long's own declaration in 1975 that "I had nothing whatever to do with the writing of *The Mound.* That brooding, somber, and magnificently atmospheric story is Lovecraftian from the first page to the last."[99] But since Long does not explain how or why Bishop attributed the work to him (perhaps because he had already forgotten), it may be well to clear up the matter here.

Long was at this time acting as Bishop's agent. He shared Lovecraft's disgust over the tale's rejection: "It was incredibly asinine of him [Wright] to reject The Mound—and on such a flimsy pretext."[100] Long's involvement up to this point had, so far as I can tell, extended only to the degree of typing

Lovecraft's handwritten manuscript of the tale, for the typescript seems to come from Long's typewriter (and there are portions of the text that are garbled or incoherent—the presumable result of his inability to read Lovecraft's handwriting in these places). It was now evidently decided (probably by Bishop) to abridge the text in order to make it more salable. Long did this by reducing the initial typescript's 82 pages to 69—not by retyping, but by merely omitting some sheets and scratching out portions of others with a pen. The carbon was kept intact. Long must have made some attempt to market this shortened version (he in fact said so to me), but Lovecraft later expressed scepticism on the point, writing in 1934: "I assumed that Sonny Belknap . . . *had* done so [i.e., tried to market the story]; & am astonished to find that any stone was left unturned."[101] Whatever the case, the story obviously failed to land anywhere, and it was finally first published only in *Weird Tales* for November 1940, and then in a severely abridged form.

In addition to enjoyable revision work like "The Mound," Lovecraft was performing what is likely to have been less congenial revision for his old amateur associate Anne Tillery Renshaw (still teaching at either the high school or college level) and for a new client, Woodburn Harris. Harris (1888–1988) came from Vermont,[102] so may have been referred to Lovecraft by Walter J. Coates; amusingly enough (given Lovecraft's strict teetotallism), among the work Harris was dumping on Lovecraft was the revision of various broadsides urging the repeal of the 18th Amendment![103] But Harris had clearly gone well beyond the client stage. Lovecraft seemed to warm to this rather poorly educated but earnest rustic, for around this time he wrote to him some of the longest letters of his lifetime—including one in late 1929 that begins with the sensible caveat: "*WARNING!* Don't try to read this all at once! I've been gradually writing it for a week, & it comes to just *70 pages*—being, so far as I recall, the longest letter I have written in a lifetime now numbering 39 years, 2 months, & 26 days. *Pax vobiscum!*"[104] (The 70 pages refer to 35 sheets written on both sides.) Only three letters to Harris survive, although there were probably more; one dates to as late as 1935. Very little is known about Woodburn Harris, but if nothing else he inspired some of the most intellectually challenging of Lovecraft's epistles.

One of the things Lovecraft may have done for Anne Tillery Renshaw is an essay entitled "Notes on 'Alias Peter Marchall' by A. F. Lorenz." This

undated essay dissects some beginner's story (a melodrama involving the difficulties of two people in achieving true love) and subjects it to searching analysis. In particular, Lovecraft is keen on the would-be author's eliminating elements of "artificiality and stereotyped convention" in his work (an entire litany follows: typical "society" atmosphere; typical adolescent romance; etc.); Lovecraft then concludes:

> The way to get rid of them all is to cast aside the idea of drawing material from one's light fictional reading, and to subject every incident in the tale to the acid test of *what ordinarily happens in actual life.* No author can be ignorant of the prosaic daily life around him. . . . It is from this kind of knowledge, and not from one's recollection of novels and magazine tales, that the material for sound fiction must be drawn.

Much of this sounds like a refinement of Lovecraft's old "Department of Public Criticism" screeds; but now, having himself become a practising fiction writer, he can speak from experience. How he justified his brand of weird fiction when, by necessity, some or much of it cannot be said to constitute "what ordinarily happens in actual life," can be reserved for a later discussion.

Lovecraft's travels for the spring–summer of 1930 began in late April. Charleston, South Carolina, was his goal, and he seems to have shot down to the South with scarcely a stop along the route—not even in New York, if the absence of postcards or letters from there is any indication. He reported being in Richmond on the afternoon of April 27 and spending a night in Winston-Salem, North Carolina. April 28 found him in Columbia, South Carolina, sitting in Capitol Park and, in spite of the fact that the town was "*not colonial* but rather *ante-bellum,*" being utterly charmed by the southern atmosphere—even the countryside he saw along the way, which in spite of being "weirdly ugly & repellent" featured villages that were "*ineffably* quaint & backward."[105] Of course, he saw these things merely from the window of the bus.

But this was only a foretaste of the real pleasures to come. Later on the 28th Lovecraft caught another bus that took him directly to Charleston. Strangely enough, there are no extant letters to Lillian until May 6; but a postcard written to Derleth on April 29 may give some inkling of Lovecraft's sentiments:

> Revelling in the most marvellously fascinating environment—scenically, architecturally, historically, & climatically—that I've ever encountered in my life! I can't begin to convey any idea of it except by exclamation points—I'd move here in a second if my sentimental attachment to New England were less strong. . . . Will stay here as long as my cash holds out, even if I have to cut all the rest of my contemplated trip.[106]

Lovecraft remained in Charleston until May 9, seeing everything there was to see; and there certainly was much to see. Charleston remains today one of the most well-preserved colonial oases on the eastern seaboard—thanks, of course, to a vigorous restoration and preservation movement that makes it today even more attractive than it was in Lovecraft's day, when some of the colonial remains were in a state of dilapidation. Nearly everything that Lovecraft describes in his lengthy travelogue, "An Account of *Charleston*" (1930), survives, with rare exceptions. As with Providence's "Brick Row," a series of old warehouses along East Bay Street are gone, replaced with a series of children's playgrounds; the Charleston Orphan House (1792) on Calhoun Street has been torn down, the site now occupied by the administration building of the College of Charleston; the site of the Old Quaker Meeting House on King Street (burned in the fire of 1861) is now occupied by the Charleston County Parking Garage (!); and so on. Of more recent sites, the YMCA on George Street, where Lovecraft no doubt stayed, is gone, as is the Timrod Inn on Meeting Street; the Francis Marion Hotel on Marion Square, opened in 1924, was renovated in the 1990s and is now a choice and expensive establishment.

In his travelogue Lovecraft, aside from supplying a detailed history of the town (including digressions on Charleston architecture, gardens, wrought-iron work, and the piquant cries of street vendors, mostly black), lays down a systematic walking tour—which he optimistically states can be covered in a single day (I did so, although it took me about seven hours and several rest-stops)—which covers all the prominent antiquities of Charleston (i.e., houses and structures up to the Civil War) with a minimum of backtracking. The tour leaves out some fairly picturesque sections that are not colonial (the western end of South Battery, for example), as well as outlying areas such as Fort Sumter, Fort Moultrie on Sullivan's Island, the Citadel, and the like, although Lovecraft probably explored these himself. He recognised that the heart of colonial Charleston is the relatively small

area south of Broad Street between Legare and East Bay, including such exquisite thoroughfares as Tradd, Church, Water, and the like; the alleys in this section—Bedon's Alley, Stolls Alley, Longitude Lane, St. Michael's Alley—are worth a study all their own. Progressing northward, the section between Broad and Calhoun becomes increasingly post-Revolutionary and antebellum in architecture, although the town's centre of government and business still remains the critical intersection of Broad and Meeting. North of Calhoun there is scarcely anything of antiquarian interest. Needless to say, even in the colonial or semi-colonial areas there have been some invasions of modernity: King Street between Hasell and Broad is now almost entirely made up of antique shops and various yuppie emporia; Meeting Street north of Broad has any number of hotels and inns catering to the tourist trade; and the northern stretches of East Bay are also drearily yuppified. But even the recent Charleston structures are in relative harmony with the colonial atmosphere, and I saw few freakishly modern specimens.

Some of the dates Lovecraft gives in his travelogue for the construction of houses, buildings, and churches are considerably in error, although perhaps this is due to more thorough antiquarian research in the past sixty years. Lovecraft's main guidebook, as mentioned in his travelogue, is *Street Strolls around Charleston, South Carolina* by Miriam Bellangee Wilson (1930), which does not seem an especially authoritative source. Many of the structures cherished by Lovecraft are actually older than he believed, a fact he would certainly have welcomed.

Charleston is very much a southern Providence: the streets may be lined with palmettos, but the houses themselves are almost exactly of the sort to be found on College Hill, and in many places are even more opulent. This fact alone perhaps accounts for part of Lovecraft's fascination with the place—it was new to him, and yet its architecture and general ambiance were of the kind he had known all his life. But there is more to it than that. In Charleston (so Lovecraft, at any rate, liked to believe) there is a *continuity* from the past: the city is not merely a fossilised museum, like Salem or even Newport, but a thriving, bustling centre of commerce and society. Lovecraft stresses this point over and over again in his travelogue:

> . . . Charleston is still Charleston, and the culture we know and respect is not dead there. . . . The original families still hold sway—Rhetts, Izards, Pringles, Bulls, Hugers, Ravenels, Manigaults, Draytons, Stoneys, Rutledges, and so on—and still uphold the

> basic truths and values of a civilisation which is genuine because it represents a settled adjustment betwixt people and landscape . . . Business is not dehumanised by speed and time-tabling, or denuded of courtesy and leisureliness. Quality, not quantity, is the standard, and there is as yet scant use for the modern fetish of "maximum returns" to be obtain'd even at the sacrifice of everything which makes those returns worth having, or life itself worth preserving. . . . The more one observes of Charleston, the more impress'd is he that he is looking upon the only thoroughly civilised city now remaining in the United States.

If that last sentence seems surprising to one whose fondness for his native city was so ardent, it cannot be attributed merely to Lovecraft's initial enthusiasm of the discovery of so charming a place; he would continue to repeat it in later years, and on every trip to the South he would make sure to spend at least a few days in Charleston, however slim his purse. He wanted to move there, and might have done so if his attachment to the scenes of his childhood were not so great.

On May 9 Lovecraft reluctantly left Charleston and proceeded to Richmond, where he remained for about ten days. In a library he had managed to find Mary C. Phillips's *Edgar Allan Poe, the Man* (1926), which, though overshadowed by Hervey Allen's *Israfel,* had a considerable amount of background information on Poe sites in Richmond. Lovecraft thereupon systematically tracked these down, as well as revisiting the Poe Shrine he had seen the year before.

On the 13th he took an excursion to Petersburg, a town about fifteen miles south of Richmond full of colonial antiquities. Although finding it very provoking that the town was so indifferent to its historic landmarks that it had no guidebook or even a city map, he managed to do much pedestrian exploration, aided by two old men "of considerable information & loquacious bent."[107] He also went on a tour of the site of the Battle of Petersburg (the culmination, on April 2, 1865, of the siege of Petersburg that had begun in mid-June 1864 and which made inevitable the Confederacy's surrender a week later), guided by an eighty-year-old Confederate veteran who had enlisted at the age of fourteen. Returning late in the afternoon to Richmond, he took in a performance of Sheridan's *The Rivals* at the Lyric Theatre. He knew the play so well from memory that he could detect the two cuts made in the original text.

Lovecraft was learning to cut expenses on the road. Wandrei tells us how he saved on cleaning bills away from home: "He neatly laid out his trousers between the mattresses of his bed in order to renew the crease and press overnight. He detached the collar from his shirt, washed it, smoothed it between the folds of a hand towel, and weighted it with the Gideon Bible, thus preparing a fresh collar for the morning."[108] So the Gideon Bible had some use for Lovecraft after all! He was now becoming an amateur self-barber, using a "patent hair-cutter"[109] he had picked up—no doubt a sort of trimmer.

On May 15 Lovecraft stumbled upon Maymont Park in Richmond, which sent him into rhapsodies. Declaring it to be superior even to the exquisite Japanese garden in the Brooklyn Botanical Gardens, and saying that it is "Poe's 'Domain of Arnheim' and 'Island of the Fay' all rolled into one . . . with mine own 'Gardens of Yin' [sonnet XVIII of *Fungi from Yuggoth*] added for good measure,"[110] Lovecraft went on:

> You are no doubt sensible . . . that to me the quality of *utter, perfect beauty* assumes *two* supreme incarnations or adumbrations: one, the sight of mystical city towers and roofs outlined against a sunset and glimps'd from a fairly distant balustraded terrace; and the other, the experience of walking (or, as in most of my dreams, aerially floating) thro' aetherial and enchanted gardens of exotick delicacy and opulence, with carved stone bridges, labyrinthine walks, marble fountains, terraces and staircases, strange pagodas, hillside grottos, curious statues, termini, sundials, benches, basins, and lanthorns, lily'd pools of swans and streams with tiers of waterfalls, spreading gingko-trees and drooping feathery willows, and sun-touched flowers of a bizarre, Klarkash-Tonic pattern never beheld on sea or land. . . .
>
> Well, by god, Sir, call me an aged liar or not—I vow *I have actually found the garden of my earliest dreams*—and in no other city than Richmond, home of my beloved Poe!

This makes one think of what Lovecraft had said a few years ago to Donald Wandrei in justification of his constant and tireless antiquarian travels:

> Sometimes I stumble accidentally on rare combinations of slope, curved street-line, roofs & gables & chimneys, & accessory details of verdure & background, which in the magic of late afternoon assume a mystic majesty & exotic significance beyond

> the power of words to describe. Absolutely nothing else in life now has the power to move me so much; for in these momentary vistas there seem to open before me bewildering avenues to all the wonders & lovelinesses I have ever sought, & to all those gardens of eld whose memory trembles just beyond the rim of conscious recollection, yet close enough to lend to life all the significance it possesses. All that I live for is to recapture some fragment of this hidden & just unreachable beauty . . .[111]

For a few moments, at least, in Maymont Park Lovecraft had found the garden of his dreams.

In Richmond he did most of the work on another ghost job for Zealia Bishop, although it seems not to have been finished until August.[112] She surely contributed as much (or as little) to this one as to the previous two; but in this case one is more regretful of the fact, for it means that the many flaws and absurdities in the tale must be placed solely or largely at Lovecraft's door. "Medusa's Coil" is as confused, bombastic, and just plain silly a work as anything in Lovecraft's entire corpus. Like some of his early tales, it is ruined by a woeful excess of supernaturalism that produces complete chaos at the end, as well as a lack of subtlety in characterisation that (as in "The Last Test") cripples a tale based fundamentally on a conflict of characters.

The story tells of a young man, Denis de Russy, who falls in love with a mysterious Frenchwoman, Marceline Bedard, marries her, and brings her back to his family estate in Missouri. It transpires that Marceline is some sort of ancient entity whose hair is animate, and she ultimately brings death and destruction upon all persons concerned—Denis, his father (the narrator of the bulk of the story), the painter Frank Marsh (who tries to warn Denis of the true horror of his wife), and herself. But for Lovecraft, the real climax—the horror that surpasses all the other horrors of the tale—is the revelation that Marceline was, "though in deceitfully slight proportion . . . a negress." As if this fatuous racism were not a bad enough ending, this proves not in fact to be the end—for it is later found that the mansion was destroyed many years ago, forcing the narrator (and the reader) to believe that it had somehow supernaturally reappeared solely to torment the hapless traveller.

The overriding problem with this tale—beyond the luridly pulpish plot—is that the characters are so wooden and stereotyped that they never come to life. Lovecraft well knew that he had both a limited understanding of and

limited interest in human beings. He contrived his own fiction such that the human figures were by no means the focus of action; but in a revision—where, presumably, he had to follow at least the skeleton of the plot provided by his client—he was not always able to evade the need for vivid characterisation, and it is precisely those revisions where such characterisation is absent that rank the poorest. Notes for the story survive, which include both a plot outline and a "Manner of Narration" (a synopsis of events in order of narration); and here too it is made clear that the final racist revelation—"woman revealed as vampire, lamia, &c. &c.—& unmistakably (surprise to reader as in original tale) a negress"[113]—is meant to be the culminating horror of the tale. The mention here of an "original tale" may suggest that there was a preexisting draft of some kind by Bishop; but if so, it does not survive.

It is, certainly, not the tale's lack of quality that prevented its publication in a pulp market, for much worse stories were published with great regularity; but for whatever reason (and excessive length may again have had something to do with it), "Medusa's Coil" was rejected by *Weird Tales*. Later in the year Lovecraft discussed with Long the possibility of sending it to *Ghost Stories,*[114] but if it was sent there, it was also rejected. It finally appeared in *Weird Tales* for January 1939. Both "The Mound" and "Medusa's Coil" were heavily altered and rewritten by Derleth for their magazine appearances, and he continued to reprint the adulterated texts in book form up to his death. The corrected texts did not see print until 1989.

Back in New York on May 20, Lovecraft was excited to read one interesting piece of forwarded mail—a letter from Clifton P. Fadiman of Simon & Schuster encouraging Lovecraft to submit a novel.[115] Lovecraft immediately responded by saying that, although he might write a novel later (clearly *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* was not even considered as a submission), he would like to submit a collection of short stories. A few days later Lovecraft's enthusiasm waned considerably: he discovered that the letter was merely a mimeographed form-letter sent to everyone who had appeared on the "Honor Roll" of the O'Brien short story annuals; moreover, Fadiman had responded by saying: "I am afraid that you are right in that our interest in a collection of short stories would not be very vivid. I hope, however, that you will buckle down & do that novel you speak of. If it is good, its subject matter will be a help rather than a hindrance."[116]

It is interesting to note that mainstream publishers' now inveterate reluctance to publish weird short story collections was already evident in 1930. Very few American weird writers issued collections at this time, and those that were published were usually reprints of British editions by already established authors like Machen, Dunsany, and Blackwood. The weird novel was, however, flourishing after a fashion in the mainstream press: such things as Francis Brett Young's *Cold Harbour* (A. L. Burt, 1925 [British edition 1924]), E. R. Eddison's *The Worm Ouroboros* (Albert & Charles Boni, 1926 [British edition 1922]), Leonard Cline's *Dark Chamber* (Viking, 1927), Herbert Gorman's *The Place Called Dagon* (George H. Doran, 1927), H. B. Drake's *The Shadowy Thing* (Macy-Masius, 1928 [British edition 1925]), and several others were all relished by Lovecraft and most were cited in either the original or the revised version of "Supernatural Horror in Literature." But Lovecraft never did "buckle down" to a novel of this exact kind, and events that occurred about a year later may clarify why.

In New York Lovecraft also saw the newly opened Nicholas Roerich Museum, then located at 103rd Street and Riverside Drive (now at 317 West 107th Street). Roerich (1874–1947) was a Russian painter who had spent several years in Tibet and become a Buddhist. His paintings of the Himalayas are spectacularly cosmic both in their suggestions of the vast bulk of the mountains and in the vivid and distinctive colours used. His work seems largely unrelated to any of the Western art movements of the period, and its closest analogue is perhaps to Russian folk art. Lovecraft, who went with Long to the museum, was transported: "Neither Belknap nor I had ever been in it before; & when we did see the outré & esoteric nature of its contents, we went virtually wild over the imaginative vistas presented. Surely Roerich is one of those rare fantastic souls who have glimpsed the grotesque, terrible secrets outside space & beyond time, & who have retained some ability to hint at the marvels they have seen."[117] Roerich was perhaps not a consciously fantastic artist, but in Lovecraft's mind he took his place with Goya, Gustave Doré, Aubrey Beardsley, S. H. Sime, John Martin (the Romantic painter and illustrator), and (the only questionable selection) Clark Ashton Smith in the gallery of weird art.

Otherwise the two weeks spent in New York included additional museum-going (Metropolitan and Brooklyn) as well as the usual round of catching up on old friendships. One unexpected acquaintance whom Lovecraft met was Hart Crane, who came to Loveman's apartment on the

evening of May 24 when Lovecraft was there. *The Bridge* had been published that spring, making him "one of the most celebrated & talked-of figures of contemporary American letters." Lovecraft's portrait of him is simultaneously admiring and pitying:

> When he entered, his discourse was of alcoholics in various phases—& of the correct amount of whiskey one ought to drink in order to speak well in public—but as soon as a bit of poetic & philosophic discussion sprang up, this sordid side of his strange dual personality slipped off like a cloak, & left him as a man of great scholarship, intelligence, & aesthetic taste, who can argue as interestingly & profoundly as anyone I have ever seen. Poor devil—he has "arrived" at last as a standard American poet seriously regarded by all reviewers & critics; yet at the very crest of his fame he is on the verge of psychological, physical, & financial disintegration, & with no certainty of ever having the inspiration to write a major work of literature again. After about three hours of acute & intelligent argument poor Crane left—to hunt up a new supply of whiskey & banish reality for the rest of the night![118]

Lovecraft was sadly correct in his prediction, for Crane would commit suicide two years later. Lovecraft goes on to say that "'The Bridge' really is a thing of astonishing merit"; but I find it difficult to imagine him actually enjoying this extraordinarily opaque if imagistically scintillating epic, even with his "new" views on the nature of poetry. He may well have relished those poignant lines about Poe's final days:

And when they dragged your retching flesh,
Your trembling hands that night through Baltimore—
That last night on the ballot rounds, did you,
Shaking, did you deny the ticket, Poe?[119]

Around June 2 Lovecraft moved up to Kingston to see Bernard Austin Dwyer for a few days; both host and guest spent much time in the open country, which for Lovecraft must surely have presented a welcome contrast to the metropolitan zone. From here Lovecraft proceeded via the Mohawk Trail (where the bus service was now operating) to Athol for a visit with W. Paul Cook and H. Warner Munn. Because of Cook's recent breakdown, Lovecraft stayed with Munn in a five-room apartment at 451 Main Street. They made sure to revisit the Bear's Den as well as some spectral

graveyards nearby. A new site was Doane's Falls, a spectacular waterfall northeast of Athol. Lovecraft reported that another issue of the *Recluse* "was partly on the press, though it may not appear for another year";[120] this issue no doubt contained "The Strange High House in the Mist," and of course it never appeared at all.

Lovecraft's return home on June 13 or 14 ended another record-breaking sojourn, but it was by no means the end of his year's travels. In early July he decided to take in the NAPA convention in Boston—only the second national amateur convention he had ever attended, the other being the NAPA convention of 1921. Lovecraft was slowly being drawn back to amateurdom, although it would never be the consuming interest it was in 1914–21. Somehow he managed to persuade himself that the apathy that had killed his UAPA in 1926 was, among the NAPA members, slowly giving way to renewed interest; in his effusive convention report ("The Convention," *Tryout,* July 1930) he wrote: "Not a delegate failed to express his keen enjoyment; everyone carried away a sense of stimulus and renewed activity which can, with proper encouragement and coöperation, be made to accomplish much in amateurdom."

The convention took place on July 3, 4, and 5 at the Hotel Statler, but Lovecraft stayed at the (no doubt cheaper) Technology Chambers near the Back Bay station. Many of his old-time colleagues were there—James F. Morton (who was presiding officer at the business sessions), Edward H. Cole, Albert A. Sandusky, Laurie A. Sawyer, and others. Victor E. Bacon (the last UAPA president) was elected President, and Helm C. Spink, a young man of whom Lovecraft thought highly, was elected Official Editor. Lovecraft did not give any speeches, as he had nine years before, but did participate in a leisurely boat ride up the Charles River on the final day of the convention. A large gathering at Laurie A. Sawyer's house in Allston allowed him to reminisce about old times—perhaps he remembered when he had been there ten years ago, then still a shy, withdrawn recluse scarcely comfortable outside the confines of his own home. How far he had come since then! The next day he took Spink and Edward H. Suhre to Salem and Marblehead, and a little later Spink visited Lovecraft in Providence and went with him on a boat ride to Newport.[121]

In mid-August the Longs invited Lovecraft to stay with them again at Onset on Cape Cod. This time he took the bus to New Bedford, where the Longs picked him up in their car. They had secured a cottage across the

street from the one they had occupied the year before; Lovecraft stayed there from the 15th to the 17th before returning home, while the Longs remained for at least two more weeks.

Even this was not the end of Lovecraft's travels. On August 30 we find him boarding a train north—to Quebec. It would be his first and last time out of the United States, aside from two further visits there in later years. Lovecraft had come upon a remarkably cheap $12.00 excursion fare to Quebec, and he could not pass up the chance to see a place of whose antiquarian marvels he had so long heard. The sight of the Canadian countryside—with its quaint old farmhouses built in the French manner and small rustic villages with picturesque church steeples—was pleasing enough, but as he approached the goal on the train he knew he was about to experience something remarkable. And he did:

> Never have I seen another place like it! All my former standards of urban beauty must be abandoned after my sight of Quebec! It hardly belongs to the world of prosaic reality at all—it is a dream of city walls, fortress-crowned cliffs, silver spires, narrow, winding, perpendicular streets, magnificent vistas, & the mellow, leisurely civilisation of an elder world. . . . Horse vehicles still abound, & the atmosphere is altogether of the past. It is a perfectly preserved bit of old royalist France, transplanted to the New World with very little loss of atmosphere.[122]

He stayed only three days, but by keeping constantly on the move saw almost everything there was to see—City Hall Square, Montmorency Park, Notre Dame des Victoires, Chateau Frontenac, the Ursuline Convent, and much more. A side trip to the falls of the Montmorency River capped the visit. Returning to Boston, he took an all-day boat trip to Provincetown and back; that Cape Cod town did not impress him, but the fact of being completely out of the sight of land at one point stirred his fancy.

The travels of 1930 had again surpassed their predecessors and were highlighted by two transcendent sites—Charleston and Quebec. In later years Lovecraft returned to both these havens of antiquity as often as his meagre funds would allow. In the meantime he could at least write about them, both in rapturous letters and postcards to his friends and in formal travelogues; and he did just that. "An Account of *Charleston,* in His Maj$^{ty's}$ Province of *South-Carolina,*" which I have already discussed, is undated, but was probably written in the fall; and this 20,000-word sketch of the history,

architecture, and topography of the old town remains one of the best of his travelogues. This essay is not to be confused with the brochure mimeographed by H. C. Koenig in 1936 as *Charleston;* for that is nothing more than a long letter to Koenig in which Lovecraft paraphrased and condensed his earlier account, writing it in modern English and leaving out some of the more charmingly idiosyncratic portions. (There is also a four-page manuscript, only recently published, entitled "Account of a Visit to Charleston, S.C.," giving Lovecraft's first impressions of the city.) "An Account of *Charleston*" was not, evidently, even typed by Lovecraft, and it is unlikely that it ever met any other eye.

But Quebec impelled an even more heroic work. In late October Lovecraft wrote to Morton: ". . . I'm *trying* to devise a *Quebeck* travelogue of some sort, which you shall behold upon its completion";[123] by late December he reports being on page 65, and by mid-January he tells Morton: "Well, Sir, I have the honour to state, that I last Wednesday [January 14] compleated the following work, design'd solely for my own perusal and for the crystallisation of my recollections, in *136* pages of this crabbed cacography . . ."[124] The work in question was:

A DESCRIPTION OF THE

TOWN OF

QUEBECK, IN *New-France,*

Lately added to His *Britannick* Majesty's Dominions.

It was the longest single work he would ever write. After a very comprehensive history of the region, there is a study of Quebec architecture (with appropriate drawings of distinctive features of roofs, windows, and the like), a detailed hand-drawn map of the principal sites, and a detailed walking tour of both the town itself and "suburban pilgrimages." That Lovecraft could have absorbed enough of the town in three days to have written even the travelogue portion (the historical section was clearly learned later through much reading) is a sufficient indication of what those three crowded days must have been like.

The Quebec travelogue also lay in manuscript until long after Lovecraft's death. In spite of Lovecraft's comment to Morton, it is pretty clear that no one other than its author ever saw it during his lifetime, and it was published only in 1976.

But beginning early in the year and continuing all through the spring, summer, and early autumn, Lovecraft was at work on a document that was actually was designed to be read by the general public: "The Whisperer in Darkness." Although this would be among the most difficult in its composition of any of his major stories, this 25,000-word novelette—the longest of his fictions up to that time aside from his two "practice" novels—conjures up the hoary grandeur of the New England countryside even more poignantly than any of his previous works, even if it suffers from some flaws of conception and motivation.

The Vermont floods of November 3, 1927, cause great destruction in the rural parts of the state and also engender reports of strange bodies—not recognisably human or animal—floating down the flood-choked rivers. Albert N. Wilmarth, a professor of literature at Miskatonic University with a side interest in folklore, dismisses these accounts as standard myth-making; but then he hears from a reclusive but evidently learned individual in Vermont, Henry Wentworth Akeley, who not only confirms the reports but maintains that there is an entire colony of extraterrestrials dwelling in the region, whose purpose is to mine a metal they cannot find on their own planet (which may be the recently discovered ninth planet of the solar system, called Yuggoth in various occult writings) and also, by means of a complicated mechanical device, to remove the brains of human beings from their bodies and to take them on fantastic cosmic voyagings. Wilmarth is naturally sceptical of Akeley's tale, but the latter sends him photographs of a hideous black stone with inexplicable hieroglyphs on it along with a phonograph recording he made of some sort of ritual in the woods near his home—a ritual in which both humans and (judging from the highly anomalous buzzing voice) some utterly non-human creatures participated. As their correspondence continues, Wilmarth slowly becomes convinced of the truth of Akeley's claims—and is both wholly convinced and increasingly alarmed as some of their letters go unaccountably astray and Akeley finds himself embroiled in a battle with guns and dogs as the aliens besiege his house. Then, in a startling reversal, Akeley sends him a reassuring letter

stating that he has come to terms with the aliens: he had misinterpreted their motives and now believes that they are merely trying to establish a workable rapport with human beings for mutual benefit. He is reconciled to the prospect of his brain being removed and taken to Yuggoth and beyond, for he will thereby acquire cosmic knowledge made available only to a handful of human beings since the beginning of civilisation. He urges Wilmarth to visit him to discuss the matter, reminding him to bring all the papers and other materials he had sent so that they can be consulted if necessary. Wilmarth agrees, taking a spectral journey into the heart of the Vermont backwoods and meeting with Akeley, who has suffered some inexplicable malady: he can only speak in a whisper, and he is wrapped from head to foot with a blanket except for his face and hands. He tells Wilmarth wondrous tales of travelling faster than the speed of light and of the strange machines in the room used to transport brains through the cosmos. Numbed with astonishment, Wilmarth retires to bed, but hears a disturbing colloquy in Akeley's room with several of the buzzing voices and other, human voices. But what makes him flee from the place is a very simple thing he sees as he sneaks down to Akeley's room late at night: "For the things in the chair, perfect to the last, subtle detail of microscopic resemblance—or identity—were the face and hands of Henry Wentworth Akeley."

Without the necessity of stating it, Lovecraft makes clear the true state of affairs: the last, reassuring letter by "Akeley" was in fact a forgery by the alien entities, written as a means of getting Wilmarth to come up to Vermont with all the evidence of his relations with Akeley; the speaker in the chair was not Akeley—whose brain had already been removed from his body and placed in one of the machines—but one of the aliens, perhaps Nyarlathotep himself, whom they worship. The attempted "rapport" which the aliens claim to desire with human beings is a sham, and they in fact wish to enslave the human race; hence Wilmarth must write his account to warn the world of this lurking menace.

The genesis of the tale is nearly as interesting as the tale itself; Steven J. Mariconda has studied the matter in detail, and in large part I am echoing his conclusions.[125] Lovecraft of course knew of the Vermont floods of 1927, as they were extensively reported in newspapers across the East Coast; he wrote to Derleth: "I shall ask Cook to lend me 'Uncanny Tales' if the floods haven't washed it . . . or him . . . away. The current cataclysm centres quite near him, & I haven't had any word in over a week."[126] More generally, the

Vermont background of the tale is clearly derived from Lovecraft's visits of 1927 and 1928; indeed, whole passages of "Vermont—A First Impression" have been bodily inserted into the text, but they have been subtly altered in such a way as to emphasise both the terror and the fascination of the rustic landscape. To choose only one example, consider first a passage from the essay and then the corresponding passage from the story:

> The nearness and intimacy of the little domed hills have become almost breath-taking. Their steepness and abruptness hold nothing in common with the humdrum, standardised world we know, and we cannot help feeling that their outlines have some strange and almost-forgotten meaning, like vast hieroglyphs left by a rumoured titan race whose glories live only in rare, deep dreams.
>
> The nearness and intimacy of the dwarfed, domed hills now became veritably breath-taking. Their steepness and abruptness were even greater than I had imagined from hearsay, and suggested nothing in common with the prosaic objective world we know. The dense, unvisited woods on those inaccessible slopes seemed to harbour alien and incredible things, and I felt that the very outline of the hills themselves held some strange and aeon-forgotten meaning, as if they were the vast hieroglyphs left by a rumoured titan race whose glories live only in rare, deep dreams.

Indeed, this very ride into Vermont in a Ford car duplicates the ride Lovecraft took to Orton's farm in 1928: "We were met [in Brattleboro] with a Ford, owned by a neighbour, & hurried out of all earthly reality amongst the vivid hills & mystic winding roads of a land unchanged for a century."[127] It should by now by evident that Henry Wentworth Akeley is based in part on the rustic Bert G. Akley whom Lovecraft met on this trip. In fact, the first time Lovecraft heard of this person, he misspelled his name (in a letter to Lillian) as "Akeley"; in the story Lovecraft echoes this error by having the aliens misspell a forged telegram as "Akely." Akeley's secluded farmhouse seems to be a commingling of the Orton residence in Brattleboro and Goodenough's home farther to the north. There is a mention of "The Pendrifter" (the columnist for the *Brattleboro Reformer*) early in the story, and the later mention of "Lee's Swamp" is a tip of the hat to the Lee boys

who were Vrest Orton's neighbours. This tale represents, then, one of the most remarkable fusions of fact and fiction in Lovecraft's entire corpus.

And yet, the actual writing of the tale was very difficult and unusually prolonged. The last page of the autograph manuscript reads: "Begun Providence, R.I., Feby. 24, 1930 / Provisionally finished Charleston, S.C., May 7, 1930 / Polishing completed Providence, R.I., Sept. 26, 1930." What is remarkable about this is that Lovecraft actually took the text with him on his lengthy travels of the spring and summer—something he had, as far as I know, never done before with a work of fiction. On March 14, before his travels began, he wrote to Long: "I am still stall'd on p. 26 of my new Vermont horror."[128] But in a postscript to a letter to Morton written the very next day, Lovecraft writes: "Whatcha thinka the NEW PLANET? HOT STUFF!!! It is probably Yuggoth."[129] This of course refers to Pluto, which C. W. Tombaugh had discovered on January 23 but which was first announced on the front page of the *New York Times* only on March 14. Lovecraft was tremendously captivated by the discovery: ". . . you have no doubt read reports of the discovery of the new trans-Neptunian planet . . . a thing which excites me more than any other happening of recent times. . . . I have always wished I could live to see such a thing come to light—& here it is! The first real planet to be discovered since 1846, & only the *third* in the history of the human race!"[130] (What Lovecraft presumably meant by that last remark is that, aside from Uranus, Neptune, and Pluto, all the planets in the solar system have been known since the dawn of civilisation.) It is evident that the Yuggoth-element could not have been part of the story's initial conception, but was only inserted—quite deftly—at an early stage of composition. Yuggoth, of course, had first been coined by Lovecraft in the *Fungi from Yuggoth;* but the citations there do not absolutely make it clear that it was actually conceived as a planet ("Recognition" [IV]: "But Yuggoth, past the starry voids"; "Star-Winds" [XIV]: "This is the hour when moonstruck poets know / What fungi sprout on Yuggoth"). But Lovecraft's comment in the letter to Morton ("It is probably Yuggoth") perhaps suggests that Yuggoth had already been conceived as the solar system's ninth planet.

But the story underwent significant revisions after it was "provisionally finished" in Charleston. Lovecraft first took it to New York, where he read it to Frank Long. In a 1944 memoir, Long speaks of the matter; although some parts of his account are clearly erroneous, there is perhaps a kernel of truth in his recollection of one point: "Howard's voice becoming suddenly

sepulchral: ‘And from the box a tortured voice spoke: “Go while there is still time—”’”[131] But then he went up to Kingston to visit Dwyer, and read the story to him as well. Lovecraft thereafter writes to Derleth:

> My “Whisperer in Darkness” has retrogressed to the constructional stage as a result of some extremely sound & penetrating criticism on Dwyer’s part. I shall not try to tinker with it during the residue of this trip, but shall make it the first item of work on my programme after I get home—which will no doubt be in less than a week now. There will be considerable condensation throughout, & a great deal of subtilisation at the end.[132]

Lovecraft, of course, did not finish the revision until after his trips to Boston (the NAPA convention), Onset, and Quebec. Nevertheless, it now becomes clear that at least one point on which Dwyer suggested revision is this warning to Akeley (presumably by Akeley’s brain from one of the canisters), which is so obvious that it would dilute the purported “surprise” ending of the story (if indeed the story in this version ended as it did). It also appears that Dwyer recommended that Wilmarth be made a rather less gullible figure, but on this point Lovecraft did not make much headway: although random details were apparently inserted to heighten Wilmarth’s scepticism, especially in regard to the obviously forged final letter by “Akeley,” he still seems very naive in proceeding blithely up to Vermont with all the documentary evidence he has received from Akeley. And yet, Wilmarth exhibits in extreme form something we have seen in many of Lovecraft’s characters: the difficulty in believing that a supernatural or supernormal event has occurred. As a professor of literature he immediately detects the alteration in style and tone in “Akeley’s” last letter: “Word-choice, spelling—all were subtly different. And with my academic sensitiveness to prose style, I could trace profound divergences in his commonest reactions and rhythm-responses.” But he attributes this—not entirely implausibly—to the spectacular alteration in Akeley’s consciousness that has resulted from his “rapport” with the aliens.

But “The Whisperer in Darkness” suffers from a somewhat more severe flaw, one that we have already seen in “The Dunwich Horror.” Once again, in violation of Lovecraft’s stated wish to discard conventional morality in regard to his extraterrestrials, he has endowed his aliens with common—and rather petty—human flaws and motivations. They are guilty of cheap forgery

on two occasions—both in that last letter and in an earlier telegram they had sent under Akeley's name to prevent Wilmarth from coming prematurely to Vermont; and on that occasion the aliens were so inept as to misspell Akeley's name, in spite of the fact that, as they themselves maintain, "Their brain-capacity exceeds that of any other surviving life-form." Their gun-battle with Akeley takes on unintentionally comic overtones, reminiscent of shoot-outs in cheap western movies. When Wilmarth comes to the Akeley farmhouse, they drug his coffee to make him sleep; but he, disliking the taste, does not drink it, hence overhears parts of a colloquy not meant for his ears.

But whereas such flaws of conception and execution cripple "The Dunwich Horror," here they are only minor blemishes in an otherwise magnificent tale. "The Whisperer in Darkness" remains a monument in Lovecraft's work for its throbbingly vital evocation of New England landscape, its air of documentary verisimilitude, its insidiously subtle atmosphere of cumulative horror, and its breathtaking intimations of the cosmic.

The story occupies a sort of middle ground in terms of Lovecraft's portrayal of extraterrestrials. So far we have seen aliens regarded as violent but "beyond good and evil" ("The Call of Cthulhu"), as utterly incomprehensible ("The Colour out of Space"), and as conventionally "evil" ("The Dunwich Horror"); "The Whisperer in Darkness" falls somewhere in between, asking us to express great horror at the aliens' physically outré form and properties (they cannot be photographed by regular cameras), their deceit and trickery, and, preeminently, their plans to remove human brains and take them off the earth in canisters. And yet, on this last point Lovecraft begins to waver a little. Wilmarth, after receiving the forged letter, ruminates: "To shake off the maddening and wearying limitations of time and space and natural law—to be linked with the vast *outside*—to come close to the nighted and abysmal secrets of the infinite and the ultimate—surely such a thing was worth the risk of one's life, soul, and sanity!" Such a thing actually sounds rather appealing; and the utterance exactly parallels Lovecraft's own views as to the function of weird fiction, as expressed in the later essay "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction" (1933): "I choose weird stories because . . . one of my strongest and most persistent wishes [is] to achieve, momentarily, the illusion of some strange suspension or violation of the galling limitations of time, space, and natural law." But Wilmarth cannot

sustain his enthusiasm for long. One of the encased brains in Akeley's room (a human being) tells him: "Do you realise what it means when I say I have been on thirty-seven different celestial bodies—planets, dark stars, and less definable objects—including eight outside our galaxy and two outside the curved cosmos of space and time?" This is a powerfully cosmic conception, and again a rather attractive one; but Wilmarth ultimately backs away in horror: "My scientific zeal had vanished amidst fear and loathing . . ."

"The Whisperer in Darkness" resembles "The Colour out of Space" more than "The Dunwich Horror" in its tantalising *hints* of wonders and horrors beyond our ken, especially in such things as the fragmentary transcript of the ritual recorded by Akeley, the almost self-parodic dropping of countless "Mythos" names and terms as contained in one of Akeley's letters, the muffled colloquy heard at the end by Wilmarth (of which he himself remarks that "even their frightful effect on me was one of *suggestion* rather than *revelation*"), and, especially, what the false Akeley tells him about the hidden nature of the cosmos. "Never was a sane man more dangerously close to the arcana of basic entity," Wilmarth states, but then refuses to do more than tease the reader with some of what he learnt:

> I learned whence Cthulhu *first* came, and why half the great temporary stars of history had flared forth. I guessed—from hints which made even my informant pause timidly—the secret behind the Magellanic Clouds and globular nebulae, and the black truth veiled by the immemorial allegory of Tao. . . . I started with loathing when told of the monstrous nuclear chaos beyond angled space which the *Necronomicon* had mercifully cloaked under the name of Azathoth.

If Lovecraft's later followers had exercised such restraint, the "Cthulhu Mythos" would not be quite the travesty it became.

One of the "hints" that Lovecraft never clarified is the possibility that the false Akeley is not merely one of the fungi but is in fact Nyarlathotep himself, whom the aliens worship. The evidence we have comes chiefly from the phonograph recording of the ritual in the woods made by Akeley, in which one of the fungi at one point declares, "To Nyarlathotep, Mighty Messenger, must all things be told. And He shall put on the semblance of men, the waxen mask and the robe that hides, and come down from the world of Seven Suns to mock . . ." This seems a clear allusion to Nyarlathotep disguised with Akeley's face and hands; but if so, it means that

at this time actually *is,* in bodily form, one of the fungi—especially if, as seems likely, Nyarlathotep is one of the two buzzing voices Wilmarth overhears at the end (the one who "held an unmistakable note of authority").

And yet, there are problems with this identification. Nyarlathotep has been regarded by some critics as a shapeshifter, but only because he appears in various stories in widely different forms—as an Egyptian pharaoh in the prose-poem of 1920 and *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath,* here as an extraterrestrial entity, as the "Black Man" in "The Dreams in the Witch House" (1932), and so on; his "avatar" appears as a winged entity in "The Haunter of the Dark" (1935). But if Nyarlathotep was a true shapeshifter, why would he have to don the face and hands of Akeley instead of merely reshaping himself as Akeley? It does not appear as if Lovecraft has entirely thought through the role of Nyarlathotep in this story; and, to my mind, Nyarlathotep never gains a coherent personality in the whole of Lovecraft's work. This is not entirely a flaw—certainly Lovecraft wished this figure to retain a certain nebulousness and mystery—but it makes life difficult for those who wish to tidy up after him.

"The Whisperer in Darkness," being the longest story Lovecraft actually bothered to type and submit to a publisher, brought corresponding proceeds. It was readily accepted by Farnsworth Wright, who paid Lovecraft $350.00 for it—the largest check he had ever received and, indeed, ever would receive for a single work of fiction. Wright planned to run it as a two-part serial; but early in 1931 *Weird Tales* was forced into bimonthly publication for about half a year, so that the story appeared complete in the August 1931 issue. The initial plan was to alternate *Weird Tales* with *Oriental Stories,* but by the summer of 1931 *Oriental* had already lapsed into a quarterly (it would change its name to *Magic Carpet* in 1933 and be published for another year) and *Weird Tales* had resumed monthly publication.

This three-year period saw Lovecraft write only two original weird tales (the severely flawed "The Dunwich Horror" and the somewhat flawed but otherwise monumental "The Whisperer in Darkness") along with three revisions for Zealia Bishop: one highly significant ("The Mound"), another fair to middling ("The Curse of Yig"), and one totally forgettable ("Medusa's Coil"). But to measure Lovecraft solely on his weird output would be an injustice both to the man and the writer. His travels to Vermont, Virginia, Charleston, Quebec, and other antiquarian oases provided much imaginative

nourishment, and his accounts of his journeys, both in letters and in travel essays, are among his most heartwarming pieces. His correspondence continued to increase as he gained new acquaintances, and their differing views—as well as his constant absorption of new information and new perspectives through books and through observation of the world around him—allowed him considerably to refine his philosophical thought. By 1930 he had resolved many issues to his satisfaction, and in later years only his political and economic views would undergo extensive revision. It is, then, appropriate to examine his thought before proceeding to the examination of the subsequent literary work based upon it.

20. Non-Supernatural Cosmic Art

(1930–1931)

By the early 1930s Lovecraft had resolved many of the philosophical issues that had concerned him in prior years; in particular, he had come to terms with the Einstein theory and managed to incorporate it into what was still a dominantly materialistic system. In so doing, he evolved a system of thought not unlike that of his later philosophical mentors, Bertrand Russell and George Santayana.

It appears that Lovecraft first read both these thinkers between 1927 and 1929. My suspicion is that he discovered Russell through reading the Modern Library edition of the *Selected Papers of Bertrand Russell* (1927), since the first mention I have found of Russell in Lovecraft's letters ("China of the old tradition was probably as great a civilisation as ours—perhaps greater, as Bertrand Russell thinks"[1]) seems to allude to a chapter in the *Selected Papers* entitled "Chinese and Western Civilization Contrasted" (from Russell's *The Problem of China* [1922]). Lovecraft clearly found Russell's reliance on science and his secular ethics to his liking, although Russell was far from being an atheist. In 1927 Russell encapsulated his philosophical outlook in terms Lovecraft would have welcomed: "I still believe that the major processes of the universe proceed according to the laws of physics; that they have no reference to our wishes, and are likely to involve the extinction of life on this planet; that there is no good reason for expecting life after death; and that good and evil are ideas which throw no light upon the nonhuman world."[2]

Santayana is a more difficult problem. Lovecraft advised Elizabeth Toldridge: "Begin with his *Scepticism and Animal Faith,* and then proceed to the five-volume *Life of Reason.*"[3] Did Lovecraft actually read these works? It is probable enough; he must surely have been tickled by Santayana's charming admission in the preface to the former title: "Now in

actual philosophy I am a decided materialist—apparently the only one living."[4] But what Lovecraft does not seem to have realised—at least in suggesting that one read *Scepticism and Animal Faith* (1923) prior to *The Life of Reason* (1905–06)—is that the former work is meant as an introduction to a philosophy (embodied in a series of books called *The Realms of Being* [1927–40]) that is designed to supplant, or at least radically to qualify, the latter. In any case, Santayana is a notoriously difficult philosopher—not through any use of the prodigiously technical vocabulary and conceptions of logic and epistemology, as with Wittgenstein, but on account of a cloudy and "poetical" use of philosophical—and even ordinary—language that baffles many readers. As John Passmore remarks: "From volumes with such titles as *The Realm of Essence* and *The Realm of Matter* the philosopher is entitled to demand a degree of precision appropriate to the subject matter. This he does not get: 'both in the realm of essence and that of matter,' Santayana confesses, 'I give only some initial hints.' And the hints are certainly dark ones."[5] Still, I think that Lovecraft either borrowed some central aspects of his later thought from Santayana or (and this is entirely conceivable) arrived independently at views strikingly similar to Santayana's.

What Lovecraft had come to realise about the Einstein theory—in particular, its bearing on the three principles of materialism emphasised by Hugh Elliot (the uniformity of law, the denial of teleology, and the denial of substances not envisaged by physics and chemistry)—is that Newtonian laws of physics still work entirely adequately in the immediate universe around us: "The given area *isn't big enough* to let relativity get in its major effects—*hence we can rely on the never-failing laws of earth to give absolutely reliable results in the nearer heavens.*"[6] This allowed Lovecraft to preserve at least the first and third of Elliot's principles. As for the second:

> The actual cosmos of pattern'd energy, including what we know as matter, is of a contour and nature absolutely impossible of realisation by the human brain; and the more we learn of it the more we perceive this circumstance. All we can say of it, is that it contains no visible central principle so like the physical brains of terrestrial mammals that we may reasonably attribute to it the purely terrestrial and biological phaenomenon call'd *conscious purpose;* and that we form, even allowing for the most radical

> conceptions of the relativist, so insignificant and temporary a part of it (whether all space be infinite or curved, and transgalactic distances constant or variable, we know that within the bounds of our stellar system no relativistic circumstance can banish the approximate dimensions we recognise. The relative place of our solar system among the stars is as much a proximate reality as the relative positions of Providence, N.Y., and Chicago) that all notions of special relationships and names and destinies expressed in human conduct must necessarily be vestigial myths.[7]

This passage reveals how intimately the denial of teleology is, for Lovecraft, connected with the idea of human insignificance: each really entails the other. If human beings are insignificant, there is no reason why some cosmic force (whether we identify it with God or not) should be leading the universe in any given direction for the benefit of humanity; conversely, the evident absence of conscious purpose in the universe at large is one more—and perhaps the most important—indication of the triviality and evanescence of the human species.

Lovecraft was still more emphatic on the third point (denial of spirit):

> The truth is, that the discovery of matter's identity with energy —and of its consequent lack of vital intrinsic difference from empty space—is *an absolute coup de grace to the primitive and irresponsible myth of "spirit". For matter, it appears, really is exactly what "spirit" was always supposed to be.* Thus it is proved *that wandering energy always has a detectable form*— that if it doesn't take the form of waves or electron-streams, *it becomes matter itself;* and that the absence of matter or any other detectable energy-form indicates *not the presence of spirit, but the absence of anything whatever.*[8]

This entire letter must be read to appreciate Lovecraft's really admirable reconcilation of Einstein and materialism here. I have no doubt that Lovecraft derived much of his data from contemporary literature on the subject—perhaps in the form of magazine or newspaper articles—but the vigour of his writing argues for a reasoned synthesis that is surely his own.

Lovecraft had a little more difficulty with quantum theory, which affects Elliot's first principle, and which Lovecraft seems to have absorbed around this time. Quantum theory asserts that the action of certain sub-atomic

particles is inherently random, so that we can only establish statistical averages of how a given reaction will transpire. Lovecraft addresses quantum theory significantly, to my knowledge, only once in his correspondence—in a letter to Long in late 1930: "What most physicists take the quantum theory, at present, to mean, is *not that any cosmic uncertainty exists* as to which of several courses a given reaction will take; but that in certain instances *no conceivable channel of information can ever tell human beings which courses will be taken,* or by what exact course a certain observed result came about."[9] It is clear from this that Lovecraft is merely repeating the views of experts; in fact, he follows the above remark with the statement: "There is room for much discussion on this point, and I can cite some very pertinent articles on the subject if necessary." The point Lovecraft is trying to establish is that the "uncertainty" of quantum theory is not *ontological,* but *epistemological;* that it is only our inability (an inherent inability, not merely some deficiency in our sense-perception or general reasoning capacity) to predict the behaviour of sub-atomic particles that results in uncertainty. Even this admission must have been a difficult one for Lovecraft to make, for it shatters the theoretical possibility—in which most of the nineteenth-century scientists and positivist philosophers had believed—that the human mind can someday absolutely predict the course of Nature if it has enough evidence at its disposal. Nevertheless, this conclusion—although accepted by Einstein in his celebrated dictum "God does not play dice with the cosmos"—appears to be wrong. Bertrand Russell has declared that the "absence of complete determinism is not due to any incompleteness in the theory, but is a genuine characteristic of small-scale occurrences";[10] although he goes on to say that atomic and molecular reactions are still largely deterministic.

And yet, in the late twenties and early thirties quantum theory was hailed as shattering the first of Elliot's materialistic principles—the uniformity of law—just as relativity was thought to have shattered, or at least qualified, the second and third. We now know—insofar as we really know the ultimate ramifications of quantum theory—that the uniformity of law is itself only qualified, and perhaps not even in a way that has any philosophical significance. The relation between quantum theory and, say, the possibility of free will is anything but clear, and there is as yet no reason to carry the effects of quantum theory into the behaviour of macrocosmic phenomena.

Some of the most bracing pages in Lovecraft's letters of this period deal with his emphatic assertion of atheism against those of his colleagues (especially Frank Long) who felt that the "uncertainty" revealed by modern astrophysics left room for the recrudescence of conventional religious belief. Lovecraft was well aware that he was living in a time of both social and intellectual ferment; but he had nothing but contempt for those thinkers who were using the relativity and quantum theories to resurrect old-time belief:

> Although these new turns of science don't really mean a thing in relation to the myth of cosmic consciousness and teleology, a new brood of despairing and horrified moderns is seizing on the doubt of all positive knowledge which they imply; and is deducing therefrom that, *since nothing is true,* therefore *anything can be true* . . . whence one may invent or revive any sort of mythology that fancy or nostalgia or desperation may dictate, and defy anyone to prove that it isn't "emotionally" true —whatever that means. This sickly, decadent neomysticism—a protest not only against machine materialism but against pure science with its destruction of the mystery and dignity of human emotion and experience—will be the dominant creed of middle twentieth centuries aesthetes . . . Little Belknap is already falling for it.[11]

He went on to note the various "plans of escape" that various thinkers have evolved: "[Ralph Adams] Cram favours mediaevalism and the ivory tower, [Joseph Wood] Krutch the grim and gritted bicuspids, [Henry] Adams the resigned superiority of contemplation, [John Crowe] Ransom the return to the older spirit where it *can* be saved, Eliot the wholesale readoption of tradition—blindly, desperately undertaken in a mad escape from the Waste Land he so terribly depicted," and the like. But "still more tragic are the ostrich-heads who shut off their reason altogether at a certain point—beyond which they prattle in the artificial twilight of a pretended mental infancy . . . G. K. Chesterton with his synthetic popery, Prof. [Arthur] Eddington with his observation-contradicting slush, Dr. Henri Bergson with his popular metaphysical pap, and so on, and so on."

And in order that "Little Belknap" not fall for this—Long was apparently toying with some sort of aesthetic belief in Catholicism at the time—Lovecraft writes him a devastating response in late 1930. "Get this

straight—*for there is no other road to probability,*" begins his screed.[12] All that the new uncertainties of science have produced, philosophically, is a situation wherein any religious explanation of the universe "has an *equal theoretical chance* with any other orthodoxy or with any theory of science of being true"; but "*it most positively has no greater chance* than has ANY RANDOM SYSTEM OF FICTION, DEVISED CAPRICIOUSLY BY IGNORANCE, DISEASE, WHIM, ACCIDENT, EMOTION, GREED, OR ANY OTHER AGENCY INCLUDING CONSCIOUS MENDACITY, HALLUCINATION, POLITICAL OR SOCIAL INTEREST, AND ULTERIOR CONSIDERATIONS IN GENERAL." What we must do is to assemble

> *all the tentative data of 1930, and forming a fresh chain of partial indications based exclusively on that data and on no conceptions derived from earlier arrays of data;* meanwhile testing, by the psychological knowledge of 1930, the workings and inclinations of our minds in accepting, correlating, and making deductions from data, *and most particularly weeding out all tendencies to give more than equal consideration to conceptions which would never have occurred to us had we not formerly harboured ideas of the universe now conclusively known to be false.*

What result does this yield? We now see that "the actual visual and mathematical evidence of 1930 does not suggest anything very strikingly different in its general probabilities . . . from the automatick and impersonal cosmos envisaged at an earlier period, which was as a negligible, purposeless, accidental, and ephemeral atom fortuitously occurring amidst the kaleidoscopic pattern-seething . . ."

The critical question then becomes: Why do religious beliefs remain even among highly intelligent individuals, even when the evidence of 1930 renders them overwhelmingly unlikely?

> Chief of all is the fact that the generation of men now in the saddle is old enough to have been mentally crippled by early pro-mythological bias in conventional homes. Their emotions are permanently distorted—trained to think the unreal real, and eager to grasp at any excuse for belief. They resent the cold probabilities of the cosmos because they have been taught to expect fairy-tale values and adjustments—hence as soon as any

> uncertainty appears in positive knowledge, they catch avidly at the loophole as an excuse to revive their comfortingly familiar superstitions. Second—many persons attribute the present bewildering changes in the social and cultural order to the decline of theistic belief, hence snatch at any chance to bolster up a placid and stabilising mythology—whether or not they inwardly believe it. Third—some persons think habitually in terms of vague, grandiose, and superficial emotions, hence find it difficult to envisage the impersonal cosmos as it is. Any system seems actually improbable to them which does not satisfy their false sense of importance, their artificial set of purpose-values, and their pseudo-wonder springing from an arbitrary and unreal standard of norms and causations.

This analysis seems to me entirely accurate, and much of it is of relevance to the present day. Lovecraft still believed that conventional religion was doomed, once a new generation of individuals not mentally crippled by youthful indoctrination into religion arises. He came to see this indoctrination as one of the greatest evils that religion produces:

> We all know that *any* emotional bias—irrespective of truth or falsity—can be implanted by suggestion in the emotions of the young, hence the inherited traditions of an orthodox community are absolutely without evidential value regarding the real "is-or-isn'tness" of things. . . . If religion were true, its followers would not try to bludgeon their young into an artificial conformity; but would merely insist on their unbending quest for *truth,* irrespective of artificial backgrounds or practical consequences. With such an honest and inflexible *openness to evidence,* they could not fail to receive any *real truth* which might be manifesting itself around them. The fact that religionists do *not* follow this honourable course, but cheat at their game by invoking juvenile quasi-hypnosis, is enough to destroy their pretentions in my eyes even if their absurdity were not manifest in every other direction.[13]

This last diatribe was directed at Maurice W. Moe, who could not have been very pleased with it; his orthodoxy had caused Lovecraft to unearth such barbs since at least 1918. Neither individual apparently affected the other's

views much, nor was their friendship in any way affected by their differing stances.

Lovecraft's later ethics is in many ways a direct outgrowth of his metaphysics, and it is also intimately connected with his evolving social and political views. The question for Lovecraft was: how to conduct oneself with the realisation that the human race was an insignificant atom in the vast realms of the cosmos? One solution was to adopt the perspective of a sort of bland cosmic spectator upon the human race. As he writes to Morton in late 1929:

> Contrary to what you may assume, I am *not a pessimist* but an *indifferentist*—that is, I don't make the mistake of thinking that the resultant of the natural forces surrounding and governing organic life will have any connexion with the wishes or tastes of any part of that organic life-process. Pessimists are just as illogical as optimists; insomuch as both envisage the aims of mankind as unified, and as having a direct relationship (either of frustration or of fulfilment) to the inevitable flow of terrestrial motivation and events. That is—both schools retain in a vestigial way the primitive concept of a conscious teleology—of a cosmos which gives a damn one way or the other about the especial wants and ultimate welfare of mosquitoes, rats, lice, dogs, men, horses, pterodactyls, trees, fungi, dodos, or other forms of biological energy.[14]

This is very piquant and even true to a point: cosmicism as a metaphysical principle could plausibly be said to entail indifferentism as an abstract ethical corollary. But this is not a very useful yardstick for actual behaviour, and Lovecraft had to devise some system of conduct, at least for himself, that might be consistent with cosmicism. It is only at this time that he came to espouse an aesthetic retention of *tradition* as a bulwark against the potential nihilism of his metaphysics. This view had no doubt been evolving unconsciously for many years, but it becomes explicit only now; but in so doing, Lovecraft left himself open to criticism at several points.

Throughout his life Lovecraft wavered between (validly) recommending tradition *for himself* and (invalidly) recommending it *for everyone.* In 1928 he had properly asserted the relativity of values (the only thing possible in a universe that has no governing deity): "Value is wholly

relative, and the very idea of such a thing as meaning postulates a symmetrical relation to something else. No one thing, cosmically speaking, can be either good or evil, beautiful or unbeautiful; for entity is simply entity."[15] To Derleth in 1930 he wrote: "Each person lives in his own world of values, and can obviously (except for a few generalities based on essential similarities in human nature) speak only for himself when he calls this thing 'silly and irrelevant' and that thing 'vital and significant', as the case may be. We are all meaningless atoms adrift in the void."[16]

All this is unexceptionable, and yet it gradually gives way to a much less defensible view: that, given the relativity of values, the only true anchor of fixity is tradition—specifically the racial and cultural tradition out of which each person grows. The matter crops up in a discussion with Morton, who appears to have questioned why Lovecraft was so passionately concerned about the preservation of Western civilisation when he believed in a purposeless cosmos:

> It is *because* the cosmos is meaningless that we must secure our individual illusions of values, direction, and interest by upholding the artificial streams which gave us such worlds of salutary illusion. That is—since nothing means anything in itself, we must preserve the proximate and arbitrary background which makes things around us seem as if they did mean something. In other words, we are either Englishmen or nothing whatever.[17]

That "we" is very ominous. Lovecraft seems unaware that it is only in those, like himself, in whom the sense of tradition has been strongly ingrained who will clutch at tradition—racial, cultural, political, and aesthetic—as the only bulwark against nihilism. Occasionally Lovecraft does realise that it is only he and people like him are who are affected: "I follow this acceptance [of traditional folkways] purely for my own personal pleasure—because I would feel lost in a limitless and impersonal cosmos if I had no way of thinking of myself but as a dissociated and independent point."[18] But this view is not consistent in Lovecraft, and he often lapsed into the paradox of offering an absolutist ethic of his own while at the same time scorning others for so doing:

> In a cosmos without absolute values we have to rely on the relative values affecting our daily sense of comfort, pleasure, & emotional satisfaction. What gives us relative painlessness &

> contentment we may arbitrarily call "good", & vice versa. This local nomenclature is necessary to give us that benign illusion of placement, direction, & stable background on which the still more important illusions of "worthwhileness", dramatic significance in events, & interest in life depend. Now what gives one person or race or age relative painlessness & contentment often disagrees sharply on the psychological side from what gives these same boons to another person or race or age. Therefore "good" is a relative & variable quality, depending on ancestry, chronology, geography, nationality, & individual temperament. Amidst this variability there is *only one anchor of fixity* which we can seize upon as the working pseudo-standard of "values" which we need in order to feel settled & contented —& that anchor is *tradition,* the potent emotional legacy bequeathed to us by the massed experience of our ancestors, individual or national or biological or cultural. Tradition means nothing cosmically, but it means everything locally & pragmatically because we have nothing else to shield us from a devastating sense of "lostness" in endless time & space.[19]

The curious thing, also, is that Lovecraft was aware of the degree to which he had departed intellectually from many of the prevailing beliefs of his tradition-stream by his atheism, his moral relativism, his scorn of democracy, and perhaps even in his taste for weird fiction, none of which were at all common to the Anglo-American culture to which he wished to associate himself: "One does not have to take these traditions seriously, in an intellectual way, and one may even laugh at their points of naiveté and delusion—as indeed I laugh at the piety, narrowness, and conventionality of the New England background which I love so well and find so necessary to contentment."[20]

It should now be clear why Lovecraft not only clung to tradition so firmly but why he so ardently sought to preserve his civilisation against onslaughts from all sides—from foreigners, from the rising tide of mechanisation, and even from radical aesthetic movements. In 1931 he was still arguing for the biological inferiority of blacks ("The black *is* vastly inferior. There can be no question of this among contemporary and unsentimental biologists—eminent Europeans for whom the prejudice-problem does not exist"[21]); but gradually his views were shifting toward a

belief in the radical *cultural* incompatibility of various races, ethnic or cultural groups, and even nationalities. He actually admitted in 1929 that "the French have a profounder culture than we have,"[22] and later admired the tenacity with which the citizens of Quebec retained their French folkways; but he nevertheless believed that the French and the English should be kept apart in order that each could preserve its own proper heritage. I do not wish to discuss Lovecraft's racial views at this juncture save to indicate that he still believed that even a small amount of mingling between different groups would weaken those bonds of tradition which he felt to be our only bulwark against cosmic meaninglessness.

But as the 1920s progressed, Lovecraft began to sense a much greater foe to tradition: the machine culture. His views on the subject are by no means original to him and can be found in many thinkers of the period; but his remarks are both incisive and compelling. What Lovecraft was coming to believe was that the present age no longer represented a continuation of "American civilisation" in any sense:

> It is "American" only in a geographic sense, & is not a "civilisation" at all except according to the Spenglerian definition of the word. It is a wholly alien & wholly puerile barbarism; based on physical comfort instead of mental excellence, & having no claim to the consideration of real colonial Americans. Of course, like other barbarisms, it may some day give birth to a culture—but that culture will not be ours, & it is natural for us to fight its incursions over territory which we wish to preserve for our own culture.[23]

Later in the same letter Lovecraft painted a picture of the future:

> The social-political future of the United States is one of domination by vast economic interests devoted to ideals of material gain, aimless activity, & physical comfort—interests controlled by shrewd, insensitive, & not often well-bred leaders recruited from the standardised herd through a competition of hard wit & practical craftiness—a struggle for place & power which will eliminate the true & the beautiful as goals, & substitute the strong, the huge, & the mechanically effective.

We have already seen views like this espoused in "The Mound"; and later works of fiction will also ruminate on the idea.

Two books powerfully affected Lovecraft's thinking on these matters, although he could say with justice that he had arrived at least nebulously at the same fundamental conceptions prior to reading them. They were Oswald Spengler's *The Decline of the West* (*Der Untergang des Abendlandes* [1918–22]; translated in two volumes in 1926 and 1928) and Joseph Wood Krutch's *The Modern Temper* (1929). Lovecraft read the first volume of Spengler (he never read the second, so far as I can tell) in the spring of 1927,[24] and seems to have read Krutch no later than the fall of 1929.[25]

Lovecraft had long been inclined to accept Spengler's basic thesis of the successive rise and fall of civilisations as each passes through a period of youth, adulthood, and old age. He later expressed reservations, as many others did, on the degree to which this biological analogy could be pressed; but as early as 1921, in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays, he was saying: "No civilisation has lasted for ever, and perhaps our own is perishing of natural old age. If so, the end cannot well be deferred." Here he went on to hold out a possibility that "we may be merely passing from youth to maturity—a period of more realistic and sophisticated life may lie ahead of us," but even this frail optimism disappears by the later 1920s. In early 1929 Lovecraft gave his dissection of the causes for America's decline:

> Real America had the start of a splendid civilisation—the British stream, enriched by a geographical setting well-calculated to develop a vital, adventurous, and imaginatively fertile existence. . . . What destroyed it as the dominant culture of this continent? Well—first came the poison of social democracy, which gradually introduced the notion of diffused rather than intensive development. Idealists wanted to raise the level of the ground by tearing down all the towers and strewing them over the surface—and when it was done they wondered why the ground didn't seem much higher, after all. And they had lost their towers! Then came the premature shifting of the economic centre of gravity to the relatively immature west; which brought western crudeness, "push", and quantity-feeling to the fore, and accelerated the evils of democracy. Sudden financial overturns and the rise of a loathsome parvenu class—natural things in a rapidly expanding nation—helped on the disaster, whilst worst of all was the rashly and idealistically

> admitted flood of alien, degenerate, and unassimilable immigrants—the supreme calamity of the western world. On this dangerous and unstable cultural chaos finally fell the curse of the machine age—a condition peculiarly adapted to favour the crude and imaginationless and to operate against the sensitive and the civilised. Its first results we behold today, though the depths of its cultural darkness are reserved for the torture of later generations.[26]

Democracy, quantity and money over quality, foreigners, and mechanisation—these are the causes of America's ruination. In all honesty, I am not at all inclined to dispute Lovecraft on the first, second, or fourth of these. In this same letter he elaborated upon his precise complaints about democracy, especially the mass democracy of his day. What he found offensive in it was its hostility to excellence. Given that *"the maintenance of [a] high cultural standard is the only social or political enthusiasm I possess."* the answer to him seemed (at least in principle) simple: establish, or recognise, an aristocracy of culture that will foster artistic excellence:

> Nobody really gives a hang about existing aristocratic families *as such.* All that is desired is *to maintain the existing standards of thought, aesthetics, and manners,* and not to allow them to sink to low levels through the dominance of coarsely-organised, sordid-minded, and aesthetically insensitive people who are satisfied with less and who would establish a national atmosphere intolerable to those civilised persons who require more.

It would only be a few years later that Lovecraft would see the full extent of the problem—the conspiracy of democracy and capitalism that produced "mass culture" and made artistic excellence less and less economically feasible—and it would also take him some years to evolve at least a theoretical model for the reversal of this situation.

Lovecraft's political concerns were at this time still in the realm of theory rather than in the politics of the moment. As late as 1928 he was still admitting that "my real *interest* in politics is virtually nil."[27] To Aunt Lillian he had expressed congratulations on the election of Coolidge in 1924,[28] then never mentioned him or any political event for the next four years. He admitted to supporting Hoover in 1928,[29] although I suspect this may have been largely because the Democratic candidate, Alfred E. Smith,

vehemently opposed Prohibition (which Lovecraft still generally supported, although he was clearly aware of the difficulties in its enforcement) and also advocated modifying the restrictive alien immigration laws passed earlier in the decade.

Lovecraft has been criticised for not taking any notice of the stock market crash of October 1929, but the full effects of the depression were not manifest for several years; Lovecraft's own revision service did not seem to suffer significantly as a result of the crash (not that it was ever a flourishing business), and in any case he had seen at first hand the hardships of unemployment in New York during the supposedly booming 1920s. And yet, the inclusion of extensive, and rather gloomy, political reflections in "The Mound" in late 1929 can hardly be accidental.

In terms of aesthetics, Lovecraft's abandonment of Decadence and his nearly wholesale rejection of Modernism allowed him to revert to a sort of refined eighteenth-century view of art as an elegant amusement. Indeed, he had casually used exactly that phrase in a letter to Elizabeth Toldridge, and in her Victorian way she had expressed surprise and disagreement; so that Lovecraft was forced to add some nuance to this stance:

> I wished to make it clear that the fun and function of poetry are all comprised within the process of creating it, and that it is needless and unwise to worry about what happens to it once it is written. Its importance resides in the pleasure it gives you during the writing—the mental and emotional satisfaction of self-expression. Once it has given you this, it has fully and adequately performed its function; and there is no need to bother about who else sees it . . .[30]

This is similar to the views anent "self-expression" found in the *In Defence of Dagon* papers; now Lovecraft develops the argument by bringing in modern developments in biology, and in this way hopes to fashion a means for distinguishing true art from hackwork:

> In stern fact, the relentless demands prompted by our glandular and nervous reactions are exceedingly complex, contradictory, and imperious in their nature; and subject to rigid and intricate laws of psychology, physiology, biochemistry, and physics which must be realistically studied and familiarly known before they can be adequately dealt with. . . . False or insincere amusement is the sort of activity which does not meet the real

> psychological demands of the human glandular-nervous system, but merely affects to do so. Real amusement is the sort which is based on a knowledge of real needs, and which therefore hits the spot. *This latter kind of amusement is what art is*—and there is nothing more important in the universe.

The crux of this passage rests upon the then-recent discovery of the importance of glands in affecting human behaviour. In making this discovery, however, many biologists and philosophers vastly overstated the case. Louis Berman's *The Glands Regulating Personality* (1921)—a book recommended by Lovecraft in "Suggestions for a Reading Guide" (1936)—is typical: focusing on the endocrine glands (chiefly the adrenal, thyroid, and pituitary), Berman maintained that they control, and perhaps even cause, all the emotions as well as the imagination and intellect:

> The internal secretions constitute and determine much of the inherited powers of the individual and their development. They control physical and mental growth and all the metabolic processes of fundamental importance. They dominate all the vital functions during the three cycles of life. They coöperate in an intimate relationship which may be compared to an interlocking directorate. A derangement of their function, causing an insufficiency of them, an excess, or an abnormality, upsets the entire equilibrium of the body, with transforming effects upon the mind and the organs. In short, they control human nature, and whoever controls them, controls human nature.[31]

Let it pass that Berman's argument is in part eugenicist and even racist (he claims that the Caucasian has a greater number of internal gland secretions and is therefore superior to the Mongoloid or the Negro); even in less extreme form his views were highly representative. Modern endocrinologists are much more reserved in their views: glandular secretions (hormones) are clearly of great importance to growth and sexual development, but the interrelation between glands, the central nervous system, and the mind and emotions is still much debated.

This emphasis on glandular "control" of emotion and intellect was, however, very useful to Lovecraft, in that it emphasised his long-standing belief in man as a "machine" who is at the mercy of forces beyond his control; his cautious embracing of Freud pointed in much the same

direction. In his aesthetics Lovecraft then used this conception as a sort of objective way of distinguishing good art from bad; but what is left unclear is how anyone is to know except by some sort of introspection whether a given work of art has "hit the spot" (satisfied the "demands prompted by our glandular and nervous reactions") or merely affected to do so.

Another phase of Lovecraft's theory of art grew out of his notions of sense-perception. Being forcefully made aware from modern psychology that each person's comprehension of the external world is at least slightly, and in some cases significantly, different from every other person's (the differences depending upon heredity, upbringing, education, and all the other biological and cultural factors that distinguish each of us as human beings), Lovecraft came to believe that

> good art means the ability of any one man to pin down in some permanent and intelligible medium a sort of idea of what he sees in Nature that nobody else sees. In other words, to make the other fellow grasp, through skilled selective care in interpretative reproduction or symbolism, some inkling of what only the artist himself could possibly see in the actual objective scene itself.[32]

The end result—and this is a dim reflection of Oscar Wilde's clever paradox that we see "more" of Nature in a painting of Turner's than in the natural scene itself—is that *"We see and feel more in Nature from having assimilated works of authentic art";* and so, "The constant discovery of different peoples' subjective impressions of things, as contained in genuine art, forms a slow, gradual approach, or faint approximation of an approach, to *the mystic substance of absolute reality itself*—the stark, cosmic reality which lurks behind our varying subjective perceptions." All this sounds a trifle abstract, and we have already seen an adumbration of it in the story "Hypnos" (1922).

Lovecraft's reading of Krutch's *The Modern Temper* brought him down from these abstractions and made him face the situation of art and culture in the modern world. Krutch's book is a lugubrious but chillingly compelling work that particularly addresses itself to the question of what intellectual and aesthetic possibilities remain in an age in which so many illusions—in particular the illusions of our importance in the cosmos and of the "sanctity" or even validity of our emotional life—have been shattered by science. This is a theme on which Lovecraft had been expatiating since at

least 1922, with "Lord Dunsany and His Work." Indeed, I believe Krutch's work was instrumental in helping Lovecraft to evolve his aesthetics to a new level. He had already passed from classicism to Decadence to a sort of antiquarian regionalism. But he was no ostrich: he knew that the past—that is, prior modes of behaviour, thought, and aesthetic expression—could be preserved only up to a point. The new realities revealed by modern science had to be faced. Around this time he began some further ruminations on art and its place in society, in particular weird art; and in so doing he produced a radical change in his theory of weird fiction that would affect much of what he would subsequently write.

Frank Long was again, somehow, the catalyst for the expression of these views. Evidently Long was lamenting the rapid rate of cultural change and was advocating a return to "splendid and traditional ways of life"—a view Lovecraft rightly regarded as somewhat sophomoric in someone who did not know much about what these traditional ways actually were. In an immense letter written in late February 1931, Lovecraft began by repeating Krutch's argument that much of prior literature had ceased to be vital to us because we could no longer share, and in some cases could only remotely understand, the values that produced it; he then wrote: "Some former art attitudes—like sentimental romance, loud heroics, ethical didacticism, &c. —are so patently hollow as to be visibly absurd & non-usable from the start." Some attitudes, however, may still be viable:

> Fantastic literature cannot be treated as a single unit, because it is a composite resting on widely divergent bases. I really agree that "Yog-Sothoth" is a basically immature conception, & unfitted for really serious literature. The fact is, I have never approached serious literature as yet. . . . The only permanently artistic use of Yog-Sothothery, I think, is in symbolic or assocative phantasy of the frankly poetic type; in which fixed dream-patterns of the natural organism are given an embodiment & crystallisation. The reasonable permanence of this phase of poetic phantasy as a *possible* art form (whether or not favoured by current fashion) seems to me a highly strong probability.

I do not know what exactly Lovecraft means by "Yog-Sothothery" here. My feeling is that it may refer to Dunsany's prodigal invention of gods in *The Gods of Pegana,* which we have already seen Lovecraft to have repudiated as far as his own creative expression is concerned; indeed, he said here of

this type of material that "I hardly expect to produce anything even remotely approaching it myself." He continued:

> But there is another phase of cosmic phantasy (which may or may not include frank Yog-Sothothery) whose foundations appear to me as better grounded than those of ordinary oneiroscopy; personal limitation regarding the *sense of outsideness*. I refer to the aesthetic crystallisation of that burning & inextinguishable feeling of mixed wonder & oppression which the sensitive imagination experiences upon scaling itself & its restrictions against the vast & provocative abyss of the unknown. This has always been the chief emotion in my psychology; & whilst it obviously figures less in the psychology of the majority, it is clearly a well-defined & permanent factor from which very few sensitive persons are wholly free.

That last remark may be a little sanguine, but let it pass. We are now getting more to the crux of the matter: Lovecraft was beginning to provide a rationale for the type of weird fiction he had been writing for the past few years, which was a fundamentally realistic approach to the "sense of outsideness" by the suggestion of the vast gulfs of space and time—in short, cosmicism. At this moment there was nothing here that was different from prior utterances of this idea, but Lovecraft was now keen on establishing that the relativity theory had no bearing on the matter:

> Reason as we may, we cannot destroy a normal perception of the highly limited & fragmentary nature of our visible world of perception & experience as scaled against the outside abyss of unthinkable galaxies & unplumbed dimensions—an abyss wherein our solar system is the merest dot (by the same *local* principle that makes a sand-grain a dot as compared with the whole planet earth) *no matter what relativistic system we may use in conceiving the cosmos as a whole* . . .

Lovecraft went on to say that "A great part of religion is merely a childish & diluted pseudo-gratification of this perpetual gnawing toward the ultimate illimitable void"; but sensible people can no longer use religion for this purpose, so what is left?

> The time has come when the normal revolt against time, space, & matter must assume a form not overtly incompatible with what is known of reality—when it must be gratified by images

> forming *supplements* rather than *contradictions* of the visible & mensurable universe. And what, if not a form of *non-supernatural cosmic art,* is to pacify this sense of revolt—as well as gratify the cognate sense of curiosity?[33]

This may be the most important theoretical utterance Lovecraft ever made: the renunciation of the supernatural, as well as the need to offer supplements rather than contradictions to known phenomena, make it clear that Lovecraft was now consciously moving toward a union of weird fiction and science fiction (although perhaps not the science fiction largely published in the pulp magazines of this time). Indeed, in formal terms nearly all his work subsequent to "The Call of Cthulhu" *is* science fiction, if by that we mean that it supplies a *scientific justification* (although in some cases a justification based upon some hypothetical advance of science) for the purportedly "supernatural" events; it is only in his manifest wish to *terrify* that his work remains on the borderline of science fiction rather than being wholly within its domain.

Lovecraft's work had been inexorably moving in this direction since at least the writing of "The Shunned House." Even in much earlier tales —"Dagon" (1917), "Beyond the Wall of Sleep" (1919), "The Temple" (1920), "Arthur Jermyn" (1920), "From Beyond" (1920), "The Nameless City" (1921), and even perhaps "Herbert West—Reanimator" (1921–22)—he had already provided pseudo-scientific rationales for weird events, and such things as *At the Mountains of Madness* (1931) and "The Shadow out of Time" (1934–35) are only the pinnacles in this development. Pure supernaturalism had, in fact—aside from such minor works as "The Moon-Bog" (1921)—*never* been much utilised by Lovecraft.

What, then, do we make of a statement uttered less than a year after the one I have quoted above? ". . . the crux of a *weird* tale is something which *could not possibly happen.*"[34] Here, certainly, "something which could not possibly happen" must be regarded as supernatural. But the context of this utterance must be examined with care. It was made in the course of a discussion with August Derleth regarding William Faulkner's "A Rose for Emily," that masterful story of necrophilia; it was included in Dashiell Hammett's *Creeps by Night* (1931), a very diverse anthology that also contained "The Music of Erich Zann." Lovecraft, while admiring Faulkner's tale, was maintaining that it was not "weird" because necrophilia

is a mundane horror that does not involve the contravention of natural law *as we know it.* The letter continues:

> If any unexpected advance of physics, chemistry, or biology were to indicate the *possibility* of any phenomena related by the weird tale, that particular set of phenomena would cease to be *weird* in the ultimate sense because it would become surrounded by a different set of emotions. It would no longer represent imaginative liberation, because it would no longer indicate a suspension or violation of the natural laws against whose universal dominance our fancies rebel.

Lovecraft is carving out a very special position for his type of weird tale: it can neither be a mere *conte cruel* or a tale of physical gruesomeness (what is now termed "psychological suspense"), nor can it plainly violate *currently known* natural laws, as in standard supernatural fiction. Only the intermediate ground—"non-supernatural cosmic art," art that presents accounts of phenomena not currently explainable by science—can offer possibilities for creative expression in this field, at least for Lovecraft.

At the Mountains of Madness, written in early 1931 (the autograph manuscript declares it to have been begun on February 24 and completed on March 22), is Lovecraft's most ambitious attempt at "non-supernatural cosmic art"; it is a triumph in every way. At 40,000 words it is his longest work of fiction save *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward;* and just as his other two novels represent apotheoses of earlier phases of his career—*The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* the culmination of Dunsanianism, *Ward* the pinnacle of pure supernaturalism—so is *At the Mountains of Madness* the greatest of his attempts to fuse weird fiction and science fiction.

The Miskatonic Antarctic Expedition of 1930–31, led by William Dyer (his full name is never supplied here but is given in "The Shadow out of Time"), begins very promisingly but ends in tragedy and horror. Spurred by a new boring device invented by engineer Frank H. Pabodie, the expedition makes great progress at sites on the shore of McMurdo Sound (on the opposite side of the Ross Ice Shelf from where Byrd's expedition had only recently camped). But the biologist Lake, struck by some peculiar markings on soapstone fragments he has found, feels the need to conduct a sub-expedition far to the northwest. There he makes a spectacular discovery: not only the world's tallest mountains ("Everest out of the running," he

laconically radios back to the camp), but then the frozen remains—some damaged, some intact—of monstrous barrel-shaped creatures that cannot be reconciled with the known evolution of this planet. They seem half-animal and half-vegetable, with tremendous brain-capacity and, apparently, with more senses than we have. Lake, who has read the *Necronomicon,* jocosely thinks they may be the Elder Things or Old Ones spoken of in that book and elsewhere, who are "supposed to have created all earth-life as jest or mistake."

Later Lake's sub-expedition loses radio contact with the main party, apparently because of the high winds in that region. After a day or so passes, Dyer feels he must come to Lake's aid and takes a small group of men in some airplanes to see what has gone amiss. To their horror, they find the camp devastated—either by winds or by the sled dogs or by some other nameless forces—but discover no trace of the intact specimens of the Old Ones; they do come upon the damaged specimens "insanely" buried in the snow, and are forced to conclude that it is the work of the one missing human, Gedney. Dyer and the graduate student Danforth decide to take a trip by themselves beyond the titanic mountain plateau to see if they can find any explanation for the tragedy.

As they scale the immense plateau, they find to their amazement an enormous stone city, fifty to one hundred miles in extent, clearly built millions of years ago, long before there could have been any humans on the planet. Exploring some of the interiors, they are eventually forced to conclude that the city was built by the Old Ones. Because the buildings contain, as wall decorations, many bas-reliefs supplying the history of the Old Ones' civilisation, they are able to learn that the Old Ones came from space some fifty million years ago, settling in the Antarctic and eventually branching out to other areas of the earth. They built their huge cities with the aid of shoggoths—amorphous, fifteen-foot masses of protoplasm which they controlled by hypnotic suggestion. Unfortunately, over time these shoggoths gained a semi-stable brain and began to develop a will of their own, forcing the Old Ones to conduct several campaigns of resubjugation. Later other extraterrestrial races—including the fungi from Yuggoth and the Cthulhu spawn—came to the earth and engaged in battles over territory with the Old Ones, and eventually the latter were forced back to their original Antarctic settlement. They had also lost the ability to fly through

space. The reasons for their abandonment of this city, and for their extinction, are unfathomable.

Dyer and Danforth then stumble upon traces that someone dragging a sled had passed by, and they follow it, finding first some huge albino penguins, then the sled with the remains of Gedney and a dog, then a group of decapitated Old Ones, who had obviously come to life by being thawed in Lake's camp. Then they hear an anomalous sound—a musical piping over a wide range. Could it be some other Old Ones? Not stopping to investigate, they flee madly; but they simultaneously turn their flashlights upon the thing for an instant, and find that it is nothing but a loathsome shoggoth:

> It was a terrible, indescribable thing vaster than any subway train—a shapeless congeries of protoplasmic bubbles, faintly self-luminous, and with myriads of temporary eyes forming and unforming as pustules of greenish light all over the tunnel-filling front that bore down upon us, crushing the frantic penguins and slithering over the glistening floor that it and its kind had swept so evilly free of all litter.

As they fly back to camp, Danforth shrieks out in horror: he has seen some further sight that unhinges his mind, but he refuses to tell Dyer what it is. All he can do is make the eldritch cry, *"Tekeli-li! Tekeli-li!"*

Once again the utter inadequacy of a synopsis of this short novel will be evident to every reader. In the first place, it cannot begin to convey the rich, detailed, and utterly convincing scientific erudition that creates the sense of verisimilitude so necessary in a tale so otherwise *outré.* We have already seen how Lovecraft was, since at least the age of twelve, an ardent student of the Antarctic: he had written small treatises on "Wilkes's Explorations" and "The Voyages of Capt. Ross, R.N." as a boy, and had followed with avidity reports of the explorations of Borchgrevink, Scott, Amundsen, and others in the early decades of the century. Indeed, as Jason C. Eckhardt has demonstrated,[35] the early parts of Lovecraft's tale clearly show the influence of Admiral Byrd's expedition of 1928–30, as well as other contemporary expeditions. I believe he also found a few hints on points of style and imagery in the early pages of M. P. Shiel's great novel *The Purple Cloud* (1901; reissued 1930), which relates an expedition to the Arctic. But it is also Lovecraft's thorough knowledge of geology, biology, chemistry, physics, and natural history that lead to a passage like this:

> This was my first word of the discovery, and it told of the identification of early shells, bones of ganoids and placoderms, remnants of labyrinthodonts and thecodonts, great mososaur skull fragments, dinosaur vertebrae and armour-plates, pterodactyl teeth and wing-bones, archaeopteryx debris, Miocene sharks' teeth, primitive bird-skulls, and skulls, vertebrae, and other bones of archaic mammals such as palaeotheres, xiphodons, dinocerases, eohippi, oreodons, and titanotheres.

Lovecraft's science in this novel is absolutely sound for its period, although subsequent discoveries have made a few points obsolete. In fact, he was so concerned about the scientific authenticity of the work that, prior to its first publication in *Astounding Stories* (February, March, and April 1936), he inserted some revisions eliminating an hypothesis he had made that the Antarctic continent had originally been two land masses separated by a frozen channel between the Ross and Weddell Seas—an hypothesis that had been proven false by the first airplane flight across the continent, by Lincoln Ellsworth and Herbert Hollick-Kenyon in late 1935.

One must wonder, however, what compelled Lovecraft to write the novel at this very time. He never provides any explicit statement on this matter, but one conjecture made by David E. Schultz is suggestive. The lead story in the November 1930 issue of *Weird Tales* was a poorly written and unimaginative tale by Katharine Metcalf Roof, "A Million Years After," that dealt with the hatching of ancient dinosaur eggs. Lovecraft fumed when he saw this tale, not only because it won the cover design but because he had been badgering Frank Long to write a story on this idea for years; Long had held off because he felt that H. G. Wells's "Æpyornis Island" had anticipated the idea. In mid-October Lovecraft wrote of the Roof tale:

> Rotten—cheap—puerile—yet winning prime distinction *because of the subject matter.* Now didn't Grandpa tell a bright young man just eight years ago this month to write a story like that? . . . Fie, Sir! Somebody else wasn't so afraid of the subject—and now a wretched mess of hash, just on the strength of its theme, gets the place of honour that Young Genoa might have had! . . . Why, damn it, boy, I've half a mind to write an egg story myself right now—though I fancy my primal ovoid would

> hatch out something infinitely more palaeogean and unrecognisable than the relatively commonplace dinosaur.[36]

Sure enough, Lovecraft seems to have done just that. But he may have felt that the actual use of a dinosaur egg was itself ruled out, so that the only other solution would be the freezing of alien bodies in the Arctic or Antarctic regions. All this is, of course, conjecture, but it seems to me a highly plausible one.

And, of course, it can scarcely be denied that Lovecraft's sight of the spectacular paintings of the Himalayas by Nicholas Roerich—seen only the previous year in New York—played a factor in the genesis of the work. Roerich is mentioned a total of six times throughout the course of the novel, as if Lovecraft is going out of his way to signal the influence. Indeed, the Roerich connexion may help to explain one anomaly in the text. Lovecraft here equates the vast superplateau discovered by Dyer and Danforth with the Plateau of Leng; but when he had first invented this locale (in "The Hound") he had placed it in Asia. Lovecraft may have been so struck by Roerich's paintings—which seemed to embody his own conception of the Plateau of Leng—that he bodily transferred both the mountains they depicted (recall that the "mountains of madness" are explicitly declared to be taller than Everest) and the plateau to the ice-bound south. He probably did not set the tale in the Himalayas themselves both because they were already becoming well known and because he wanted to create the sense of awe implicit in mountains taller than any yet discovered on the planet. Only the relatively uncharted antarctic continent could fulfil both these functions.

Some impatient readers have found the scientific passages—especially at the beginning—excessive, but they are essential for establishing the atmosphere of realism (and also of the protagonists' rationality) that make the latter parts of the novel insidiously convincing. *At the Mountains of Madness,* which avowedly presents itself as a scientific report, is the greatest instance of Lovecraft's dictum that "no weird story can truly produce terror unless it is devised with all the care & verisimilitude of an actual *hoax."* [37] Indeed, the narrator claims that even this account is a less formal version of a treatise that will appear "in an official bulletin of Miskatonic University."

The real focus of *At the Mountains of Madness* is the Old Ones. Indeed, although initially portrayed as objects of terror, they ultimately yield to the shoggoths in this regard; as Fritz Leiber remarked, "the author shows us

horrors and then pulls back the curtain a little farther, letting us glimpse the horrors of which even the horrors are afraid!"[38] There is, however, even more to it than this. It is not merely that the Old Ones become the secondary "horrors" in the tale; it is that they cease, toward the end, to be horrors at all. Dyer, studying the history of the Old Ones—their colonisation of the earth; their building of titanic cities on the Antarctic and elsewhere; their pursuit of knowledge—gradually comes to realise the profound bonds human beings share with them, and which neither share with the loathsome, primitive, virtually mindless shoggoths. The canonical passage occurs near the end, as he sees the group of dead Old Ones decapitated by the shoggoth:

> Poor devils! After all, they were not evil things of their kind. They were the men of another age and another order of being. Nature had played a hellish jest on them . . . and this was their tragic homecoming.
>
> . . . Scientists to the last—what had they done that we would not have done in their place? God, what intelligence and persistence! What a facing of the incredible, just as those carven kinsmen and forbears had faced things only a little less incredible! Radiates, vegetables, monstrosities, star-spawn—whatever they had been, they were men!

This triumphant conclusion is, however, prefigured in a number of ways. When Lake's decimated camp is discovered, it is evident to every reader (although Dyer cannot bring himself to admit it) that the destruction has been the work of the Old Ones. But are they morally culpable here? It is later ascertained that the immediate cause of the violence was a vicious attack upon them by the dogs of Lake's party (Dyer, trying to look at matters from the Old Ones' perspective, alludes to "an attack by the furry, frantically barking quadrupeds, and a dazed defence against them and the equally frantic white simians with the queer wrappings and paraphernalia"). Some of Lake's men have been "incised and subtracted from in the most curious, cold-blooded, and inhuman fashion" by the Old Ones; but how is this different from the crude dissection Lake himself had attempted on one of the damaged specimens? Later, when Dyer and Danforth discover the sled containing the body of Gedney (a specimen which the Old Ones had taken with them), Dyer notes that it was "wrapped with patent care to prevent further damage."

The most significant way in which the Old Ones are identified with human beings is in the historical digression Dyer provides, specifically in regard to the Old Ones' social and economic organisation. In many ways they represent a utopia toward which Lovecraft clearly hopes humanity itself will one day move. The single sentence "Government was evidently complex and probably socialistic" establishes that Lovecraft had himself by this time converted to moderate socialism. Of course, the Old Ones' civilisation is founded upon slavery of a sort; and one wonders whether the shoggoths might be, in part, a metaphor for blacks. There is one tantalising hint to this effect. Late in the novel the protagonists stumble upon an area that, as they learn later, has been decorated with bas-reliefs by the shoggoths themselves. Dyer reports that there is a vast difference between this work and that of the Old Ones—

> a difference in basic nature as well as in mere quality, and involving so profound and calamitous a degradation of skill that nothing in the hitherto observed rate of decline could have led one to expect it.
>
> This new and degenerate work was coarse, bold, and wholly lacking in delicacy of detail. . . .

Recall Lovecraft's remark in "An Account of *Charleston*" (written less than a year earlier) on the decline of architecture in Charleston in the nineteenth century: "Architectural details became heavy and almost crude as negro craftsmen replaced skill'd white carvers, though the good models of the eighteenth century were never wholly lost sight of." But the identification of shoggoths and blacks is perhaps too nebulous and imprecise to be worth pressing.

The Old Ones, of course, are not human beings, and Lovecraft never makes us forget that in many ways—intellectual capacity, sensory development, aesthetic skill—they are vastly our superiors. Even this point may be capable of a sociocultural interpretation, for the Old Ones—who created all earth life—can perhaps be seen as analogous to the Greeks and Romans who, in Lovecraft's view, created the best phases of our own civilisation. There are a number of similarities between the Old Ones and the ancients, slavery being only one of them. At one point an explicit parallel is drawn between the Old Ones in their decline and the Romans under Constantine. One thinks of *In Defence of Dagon:* "Modern civilisation is the direct heir of Hellenic culture—all that we have is

Greek"; and elsewhere in the same essay: "perhaps one should not wonder at *anything* Greek; the race was a super-race." The Old Ones, too, are a super-race.

The exhaustive history of the Old Ones on this planet is of consuming interest, not only for its imaginative power but for its exemplification of a belief that Lovecraft had long held and which was emphasised by his reading of Spengler's *The Decline of the West:* the inexorable rise and fall of successive civilisations. Although the Old Ones are vastly superior to human beings, they are no less subject to the forces of "decadence" than other races. As Dyer and Danforth examine the bas-reliefs and piece together the history of their civilisation, they can detect clear instances of decline from even greater heights of physical, intellectual, and aesthetic mastery. No simplistic moral is drawn from this decline—there is, for example, no suggestion whatever that the Old Ones are morally blameworthy for their creation of shoggoths as slaves, only regret that they were not able to exercise greater control over these entities and thereby subdue their rebelliousness—and it seems as if Lovecraft sees their decadence as an inevitable result of complex historical forces.

Not only have the Old Ones created all earth-life, including human beings; they have done more: "It interested us to see in some of the very last and most decadent sculptures a shambling primitive mammal, used sometimes for food and sometimes as an amusing buffoon by the land dwellers, whose vaguely simian and human foreshadowings were unmistakable." This must be one of the most misanthropic utterances ever made—the degradation of humanity can go no further. The Old Ones had created all earth-life as "jest or mistake"; and yet, "Nature had played a hellish jest" on those very Old Ones—first, perhaps, because they were annihilated by the shoggoths, and then because the few remnants of their species who had fortuitously survived to our age were revivified and suffered further horrors at the hands of the loathsome protoplasmic entities they have created. Human beings, accordingly, become merely the dupes of dupes, and Nature has the last laugh.

In terms of the Lovecraft mythos, *At the Mountains of Madness* makes explicit what has been evident all along—that most of the "gods" of the mythos are mere extraterrestrials, and that their followers (including the authors of the books of occult lore to which reference is so frequently made by Lovecraft and others) are mistaken as to their true nature. Robert M.

Price, who first noted this "demythologising" feature in Lovecraft,[39] has in later articles gone on to point out that *At the Mountains of Madness* does not make any radical break in this pattern, but it does emphasise the point more clearly than elsewhere. The critical passage occurs in the middle of the novel, when Dyer finally acknowledges that the titanic city in which he has been wandering must have been built by the Old Ones: "They were the makers and enslavers of [earth] life, and above all doubt the originals of the fiendish elder myths which things like the Pnakotic Manuscripts and the *Necronomicon* affrightedly hint about." The content of the *Necronomicon* has now been reduced to "myth." As for the various wars waged by the Old Ones against such creatures as the fungi from Yuggoth (from "The Whisperer in Darkness") and the Cthulhu spawn (from "The Call of Cthulhu"), it has been pointed out that Lovecraft has not consistently followed his earlier tales in his accounts of their arrival on the earth; but, as I have mentioned earlier, Lovecraft was not concerned with this sort of pedantic accuracy in his mythos, and there are even more flagrant instances of "inconsistency" in later works.

The casually made claim that the novel is a "sequel" to Poe's *Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym* deserves some analysis. In my view, the novel is not a true sequel at all—it picks up on very little of Poe's enigmatic work except for the cry "Tekeli-li!," as unexplained in Poe as in Lovecraft—and the various references to *Pym* throughout the story end up being more in the manner of in-jokes. It is not clear that *Pym* even influenced the work in any significant way. Lovecraft was, of course, fascinated with *Pym,* in particular its enigmatic conclusion, in which the protagonists sail deep into the southern hemisphere and near the Antarctic continent; and perhaps *At the Mountains of Madness* could be regarded as a sort of tongue-in-cheek extrapolation as to what Poe left so tantalisingly unexplained. When Clark Ashton Smith heard from Lovecraft about his plans to write the novel, he replied: "I think your idea for an Antarctic story would be excellent, in spite of 'Pym' and subsequent tales."[40] Jules Zanger has aptly noted that *At the Mountains of Madness* "is, of course, no completion [of *Pym*] at all: it might be better described as a parallel text, the two tales coexisting in a shared context of allusion."[41]

At the Mountains of Madness is not without a few flaws. The wealth of information Dyer and Danforth manage to decipher from bas-reliefs strains credulity, as does the revival of the frozen Old Ones after millennia spent in

some sort of cryogenic suspended animation. But the impressive scientific erudition in the novel, its breathtakingly cosmic sweep as it portrays millions of years of this planet's prehistory, and the harrowingly gripping conclusion with the emergence of the shoggoth—perhaps the most frightening moment in all Lovecraft, if not in all horror literature—cause this work to stand at the very pinnacle of Lovecraft's fictional achievement, even higher than "The Colour out of Space."

The fate of *At the Mountains of Madness* in print was very unfortunate. Lovecraft declared that the short novel was "capable of a major serial division in the exact middle"[42] (meaning, presumably, after Chapter VI), leading one to think that he could envision the work as a two-part serial in *Weird Tales*—which is not to say that he composed the work with that eventuality in mind. But, although he delayed his spring travels till early May while undertaking what was for him the herculean task of typing the text (it came to 115 pages), he was shattered to learn in mid-June of the rejection of the tale by Farnsworth Wright. Lovecraft wrote bitterly in early August:

> Yes—Wright "explained" his rejection of the "Mountains of Madness" in almost the same language as that with which he "explained" other recent rejections to Long & Derleth. It was "too long", "not easily divisible into parts", "not convincing"—& so on. Just what he has said of other things of mine (except for length)—some of which he has ultimately accepted after many hesitations.[43]

It was not only Wright's adverse reaction that affected Lovecraft; several colleagues to whom he had circulated the text also seemed less than enthusiastic. One of the unkindest cuts of all may have come from W. Paul Cook, the very man who had chiefly been responsible for Lovecraft's resumption of weird fiction in 1917. In 1932 Lovecraft made a passing comment on the several factors that had caused him to be severely discouraged about his work, one of which was "Cook's poor opinion of my recent things";[44] and Cook, both in his memoir and in later articles, made it very clear that he did not care at all for Lovecraft's later pseudo-scientific narratives, so that *At the Mountains of Madness* must clearly have been in Lovecraft's mind here.

There are several questions to be dealt with in this whole matter. First, let us consider whether Wright was justified in rejecting the tale. In later years Lovecraft frequently complained that Wright would accept long and mediocre serials by Otis Adelbert Kline, Edmond Hamilton, and other clearly inferior writers while rejecting his own lengthy work; but some defence of Wright might perhaps be made. The serials in *Weird Tales* may indeed have been, from an abstract literary perspective, mediocre; but Wright knew that they were critical in compelling readers to continue buying the magazine. As a result, they were by and large geared toward the lowest level of the readership, full of sensationalised action, readily identifiable human characters, and a simple (if not simple-minded) prose style. *At the Mountains of Madness* could not be said to have any of these characteristics: it was slow-moving, atmospheric, densely written, and with characters who were by design bland and colourless so as to serve as conduits for the reader's perception of the bleak Antarctic waste and the horrors that lay within it. Some of Wright's cavils, as recorded by Lovecraft, were indeed unjust; in particular, the comment "not convincing" cannot possibly be said to apply to this work. But Lovecraft himself knew that Wright had come to use this phrase as a sort of rubber-stamp whenever he was looking for an excuse to reject a work.

The strange thing is Lovecraft knew well that Wright was merely a businessman who, especially at the onset of the depression, could not allow purely literary judgments to guide his choice of material. As early as 1927 he had written to Donald Wandrei:

> Wright . . . isn't such an ass as you'd think from his editorial dicta. He knows—at least, I assume that he knows—what junk he prints, but chooses it on the basis of its proved appeal to the brachycephalic longshoremen & coal-heavers who form his clientele & scrawl "fan letters" to the Eyrie with their stubby pencils & ruled five-cent pads. I think he works intelligently—as a sound business man—doing what he's paid to do, & steadily building up the magazine as a paying proposition . . .[45]

There was, then, no abstractly logical reason why Lovecraft should have been so shattered merely because Wright had rejected it.

It is possible, however, that the rejection affected Lovecraft so badly because it coincided with yet another rejection—that of a collection of his tales by G. P. Putnam's Sons. In the spring of 1931 Winfield Shiras, an

editor at Putnam's, had asked to see some of Lovecraft's stories for possible book publication. Lovecraft sent thirty stories[46]—nearly all the manuscripts or tearsheets he had in the house at the time—and, in spite of his characteristic predictions that nothing would come of it, he may well have held out a hope that he might see his name on a hardcover book. Putnam's had, after all, come to him, and not as a matter of form as Simon & Schuster had done the year before. But by mid-July the dismal news came: the collection was rejected, and even though "Shiras . . . hems & haws & talks of changes he would like to see & plans he would like to make after the lapse of a few months,"[47] Lovecraft knew a polite letdown when he saw one.

The Putnam's rejection may in fact have been more staggering than that of *At the Mountains of Madness:*

> The grounds for rejection were twofold—first, that some of the tales are not subtle enough . . . too obvious & well-explained—(admitted! That ass Wright got me into the habit of obvious writing with his never-ending complaints against the indefiniteness of my early stuff.) & secondly, that all the tales are uniformly macabre in mood to stand collected publication. This second reason is sheer bull—for as a matter of fact unity of mood is a positive asset in a fictional collection. But I suppose the herd must have their comic relief![48]

I think Lovecraft is right on both points here. His later tales do not, perhaps, leave enough to the imagination, and in part this may indeed be a result of subconsciously writing with *Weird Tales'* market demands in mind; but in part this is precisely because of the tendency of this work to gravitate more toward science fiction. Lovecraft was in the position of being a pioneer in the fusion of weird and science fiction, but the short-term result was that his work was found unsatisfactory both to pulp magazines and to commercial publishers that were locked in their stereotypical conventions.

A third rejection occurred at the hands of Harry Bates. Bates had been appointed editor of *Strange Tales,* a magazine launched in 1931 by the William Clayton Company. Word about the magazine must have gone out by spring (although the first issue was dated September), for in April Lovecraft sent along four old stories (all rejected by Wright), "The Doom That Came to Sarnath," "The Nameless City," "Beyond the Wall of Sleep," and "Polaris."[49] They were all rejected. The next month Bates rejected "In

the Vault."[50] Lovecraft should not have been much surprised at this: not only were these on the whole inferior stories, but the Clayton firm was long known as preferring fast-paced action to atmosphere. "In the Vault" seems to have come closest to acceptance, for Lovecraft reports Bates's belief that "a better story of that kind would be rather in his line."

Strange Tales seemed at first to be a serious rival to *Weird Tales:* it paid 2¢ per word on acceptance, and it formed a significant market for such writers as Clark Ashton Smith, Henry S. Whitehead, August Derleth, and Hugh B. Cave who could mould their styles to suit Bates's requirements. Wright must have been greatly alarmed at the emergence of this magazine, for it meant that some of his best writers would submit their tales to it first and only send material to *Weird Tales* that had been rejected by *Strange Tales.* But the magazine only lasted for seven issues, folding in January 1933.

The whole issue of Lovecraft's sensitivity to rejection, or to bad opinions of his work generally, deserves consideration. Did not Lovecraft say, in the *In Defence of Dagon* essays of 1921, that he scorned the idea of writing about "ordinary people" in order to increase his audience, and that "There are probably seven persons, in all, who really like my work; and they are enough. I should write even if I were the only patient reader, for my aim is merely self-expression"? Granted that this statement was made well before his work had become more widely available in the pulp magazines; but "self-expression" remained the cornerstone of his aesthetic to the end. Lovecraft was aware of the apparent contradiction, for the issue came up in discussions with Derleth. Lovecraft had already told Derleth that "I have a sort of dislike of sending in anything which has been once rejected,"[51] an attitude that Derleth—who in his hard-boiled way sometimes submitted a single story to *Weird Tales* up to a dozen times before it was finally accepted by Wright—must have found nearly incomprehensible. Now, in early 1932, Lovecraft expanded on the idea:

> I can see why you consider my anti-rejection policy a stubbornly foolish & needlessly short-sighted one, & am not prepared to offer any defence other than the mere fact that repeated rejections *do* work in a certain way on my psychology—rationally or not—& that their effect is to cause in me a certain literary lockjaw which absolutely prevents further fictional composition despite my most arduous efforts. I would be the last

> to say that they *ought* to produce such an effect, or that they would—even in a slight degree—upon a psychology of 100% toughness & balance. But unfortunately my nervous equilibrium has always been a rather uncertain quantity, & it is now in one of its more ragged phases . . .[52]

Lovecraft had always been modest about his own achievements—excessively so, as we look back upon it; now, rejections by Wright, Bates, and Putnam's, and the cool reactions of colleagues to whom he had sent stories in manuscript, nearly shattered whatever confidence he may have had in his own work. He spent the few remaining years of his life trying to regain that confidence, and he never seems to have done so except in fleeting moments. We can see the effect of this state of mind in his very next story.

"The Shadow over Innsmouth" was written in November and December of 1931. Lovecraft reported that his revisiting of the decaying seaport of Newburyport, Massachusetts (which he had first seen in 1923), had led him to conduct a sort of "laboratory experimentation"[53] to see which style or manner was best suited to the theme. Four drafts (whether complete or not is not clear) were written and discarded,[54] and finally Lovecraft simply wrote the story in his accustomed manner, producing a 25,000-word novelette whose extraordinary richness of atmosphere scarcely betrays the almost agonising difficulty he experienced in its writing.

In "The Shadow over Innsmouth" the narrator, Robert Olmstead (never mentioned by name in the story, but identified in the surviving notes), a native of Ohio, celebrates his coming of age by undertaking a tour of New England—"sightseeing, antiquarian, and genealogical"—and, finding that the train fare from Newburyport to Arkham (whence his family derives) is higher than he would like, is grudgingly told by a ticket agent of a bus that makes the trip by way of a seedy coastal town called Innsmouth. The place does not seem to appear on most maps, and many odd rumours are whispered about it. Innsmouth was a flourishing seaport up to 1846, when an epidemic of some sort killed over half the citizens; people believe it may have had something to do with the voyages of Captain Obed Marsh, who sailed extensively in China and the South Seas and somehow acquired vast sums in gold and jewels. Now the Marsh refinery is just about the only business of importance in Innsmouth aside from fishing off the shore near

Devil's Reef, where fish are always unusually abundant. All the townspeople seem to have repulsive deformities or traits—which are collectively termed "the Innsmouth look"—and are studiously avoided by the neighbouring communities.

This account piques Olmstead's interest as an antiquarian, and he decides to spend at least a day in Innsmouth, planning to catch a bus in the morning and leaving for Arkham in the evening. He goes to the Newburyport Historical Society and sees a tiara that came from Innsmouth; it fascinates him more and more: "It clearly belonged to some settled technique of infinite maturity and perfection, yet that technique was utterly remote from any—Eastern or Western, ancient or modern—which I had ever heard of or seen exemplified. It was as if the workmanship were that of another planet." Going to Innsmouth on a seedy bus run by Joe Sargent, whose hairlessness, fishy odour, and never-blinking eyes inspire his loathing, Olmstead begins exploration, aided by directions and a map supplied by a normal-looking young man who works in a grocery chain. All around he sees signs of both physical and moral decay from a once distinguished level. The atmosphere begins to oppress him, and he thinks about leaving the town early; but then he catches sight of a nonagenarian named Zadok Allen who, he has been told, is a fount of knowledge about the history of Innsmouth. Olmstead has a chat with Zadok, loosening his tongue with bootleg whiskey.

Zadok tells him a wild story about alien creatures, half fish and half frog, whom Obed Marsh had encountered in the South Seas. Zadok maintains that Obed struck up an agreement with these creatures: they would provide him with bountiful gold and fish in exchange for human sacrifices. This arrangement worked for a while, but then the fish-frogs sought to mate with humans. It was this that provoked a violent uproar in the town in 1846: many citizens died and the remainder were forced to take the Oath of Dagon, professing loyalty to the hybrid entities. There is, however, a compensating benefit of a sort. As humans continue to mate with the fish-frogs, they acquire a type of immortality: they undergo a physical change, gaining many of the properties of the aliens, and then they take to the sea and live in vast underwater cities for millennia.

Scarcely knowing what to make of this bizarre tale and alarmed at Zadok's maniacal plea that he leave the town at once because they have been seen talking, Olmsted makes efforts to catch the evening bus out of

Innsmouth. But he is in bad luck: it has suffered inexplicable engine trouble and cannot be repaired until the next day; he will have to put up in the seedy Gilman House, the one hotel in the town. Reluctantly checking into the place, he feels ever-growing intimations of horror and menace as he hears anomalous voices outside his room and other strange noises. Finally he knows he is in peril: his doorknob is tried from the outside. He begins a frenetic series of attempts to leave the hotel and escape the town, but at one point is almost overwhelmed at both the number and the loathsomeness of his pursuers:

> And yet I saw them in a limitless stream—flopping, hopping, croaking, bleating—surging inhumanly through the spectral moonlight in a grotesque, malignant saraband of fantastic nightmare. And some of them had tall tiaras of that nameless whitish-gold metal . . . and some were strangely robed . . . and one, who led the way, was clad in a ghoulishly humped black coat and striped trousers, and had a man's felt hat perched on the shapeless thing that answered for a head. . . .

Olmstead escapes, but his tale is not over. After a much-needed rest, he continues to pursue genealogical research, and finds appalling evidence that he may himself be related to the Marsh family in a fairly direct way. He learns of a cousin locked in a madhouse in Canton, and an uncle who committed suicide because he learned something nameless about himself. Strange dreams of swimming underwater begin to afflict him, and gradually he breaks down. Then one morning he awakes to learn that he has acquired "the Innsmouth look." He thinks of shooting himself, but "certain dreams deterred me." Later he comes to his decision: "I shall plan my cousin's escape from that Canton madhouse, and together we shall go to marvel-shadowed Innsmouth. We shall swim out to that brooding reef in the sea and dive down through black abysses to Cyclopean and many-columned Y'ha-nthlei, and in that lair of the Deep Ones we shall dwell amidst wonder and glory for ever."

This masterful tale of insidious regional horror requires volumes of commentary, but we can only touch upon a few notable features here. To begin most mundanely, let us specify the location of Innsmouth. The name had been invented in so early a tale as "Celephaïs" (1920), but was clearly located in England; Lovecraft resurrected the name for the eighth sonnet ("The Port") of the *Fungi from Yuggoth* (1929–30), where the setting is not

entirely clear, although a New England locale is likely. In any event, it is plain that Newburyport is the basic setting for Innsmouth, even if today it has been substantially renovated into a yuppie resort town and is no longer the decaying backwater that Lovecraft saw. Robert D. Marten has soundly refuted Will Murray's contention that some aspects of the topography of Innsmouth derive from other towns, such as Gloucester.[55]

"The Shadow over Innsmouth" is Lovecraft's greatest tale of degeneration; but the causes for that degeneration here are quite different from what we have seen earlier. In such tales as "The Lurking Fear" and "The Dunwich Horror," unwholesome inbreeding within a homogeneous community has caused a descent upon the evolutionary scale; in "The Horror at Red Hook" it is merely said that "modern people under lawless conditions tend uncannily to repeat the darkest instinctive patterns of primitive half-ape savagery," and all we can perhaps infer is that the breeding of foreigners amongst themselves has resulted in the wholesale squalor we now see in Red Hook. "The Shadow over Innsmouth" is, however, clearly a cautionary tale on the ill effects of *miscegenation,* or the sexual union of different races, and as such may well be considered a vast expansion and subtilisation of the plot of "Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family" (1920). It is, accordingly, difficult to deny a suggestion of racism running all through the story. By means of his protagonist, Lovecraft occasionally betrays his own paranoia: during his escape from Innsmouth, Olmstead hears "horrible croaking voices exchanging low cries in what was certainly not English," as if a foreign language were in itself a sign of aberration. All through the tale the narrator expresses—and expects us to share—his revulsion at the physical grotesqueness of the Innsmouth people, just as in his own life Lovecraft frequently comments on the "peculiar" appearance of all races but his own.

This racist interpretation is not refuted by the suggestion made by Zadok Allen that human beings are ultimately related to the fish-frogs; for this has an entirely different implication. Zadok declares: "Seems that human folks has got a kind o' relation to sech water-beasts—that everything alive come aout o' the water onct, an' only needs a little change to go back agin." Forget for the nonce that Lovecraft had, in *At the Mountains of Madness,* supplied an entirely different account of the emergence of humanity: the intent here and in that story is the same—the denigration of

human importance by the suggestion of a contemptible and degrading origin of our species.

An examination of the literary influences upon the story can clarify how Lovecraft has vastly enriched a conception that was by no means his own invention. There is little doubt that the use of hybrid fishlike entities was derived from at least two prior works for which Lovecraft always retained a fondness: Irvin S. Cobb's "Fishhead" (which Lovecraft read in the *Cavalier* in 1913 and praised in a letter to the editor, and which was also reprinted in Harré's *Beware After Dark!,* where Lovecraft surely reread it) and Robert W. Chambers's "The Harbor-Master," a short story later included as the first five chapters of the episodic novel *In Search of the Unknown* (1904). (Derleth had given a copy of this book to Lovecraft in the fall of 1930.[56]) But in both these stories we are dealing with a *single* case of hybridism, not an entire community or civilisation; this latter feature is, however, found in Algernon Blackwood's masterful novelette "Ancient Sorceries" (in *John Silence—Physician Extraordinary* [1908]), where the inhabitants of a small French town appear, through witchcraft, to transform themselves at night into cats. Lovecraft vastly expands on this conception to create the sense of worldwide menace that we find in "The Shadow over Innsmouth." What is more, there is no guarantee that human beings will prevail in any future conflict with the fish-frogs; for, loathsome as they are, they nevertheless possess—as do the fungi from Yuggoth and the Old Ones—qualities that raise them in many ways above our species. Aside from their near-immortality (Olmstead in a dream meets his great-great-grandmother, who has lived for 80,000 years), they clearly possess aesthetic skills of a high order (that tiara "belonged to some settled technique of infinite maturity and perfection"), and in fact are allowing human beings to dwell on the earth on *their* sufferance: as Zadok says, "they cud wipe aout the hull brood o' humans ef they was willin' to bother." And, although they are damaged by the destruction of the town in 1927–28 when Olmstead calls in Federal authorities after his experience, they are by no means extirpated; Olmstead ponders ominously at the very end: "For the present they would rest; but some day, if they remembered, they would rise again for the tribute Great Cthulhu craved. It would be a city greater than Innsmouth next time."

The lengthy chase scene that occupies the fourth chapter of the story is certainly engaging enough reading, if only because we witness the customarily staid and mild-mannered Lovecraftian protagonist battering

through doors, leaping out windows, and fleeing along streets or railway tracks. It is, of course, typical that he does not engage in any actual fisticuffs (he is far outnumbered by his enemies), and he reverts to the Lovecraftian norm by fainting as he cowers in a railway cut and watches the loathsome phalanx of hybrids rush by him. More seriously, this notion of *seeing* horrors go by is of some significance in augmenting the atmosphere of nightmarish terror Lovecraft is clearly wishing to achieve; as he wrote in a letter: "I believe that—because of the foundation of most weird concepts in dream-phenomena—the best weird tales are those in which the narrator or central figure remains (as in actual dreams) largely passive, & witnesses or experiences a stream of bizarre events which—as the case may be—flows past him, just touches him, or engulfs him utterly."[57]

As for Zadok Allen's monologue—which occupies nearly the entirety of the third chapter—it has been criticised for excessive length, but Lovecraft was writing at a time when the use of dialect for long stretches was much commoner than now. The dialogue portions of John Buchan's enormously long novel *Witch Wood* (1927) are almost entirely in Scots dialect, as is the whole of Robert Louis Stevenson's "Thrawn Janet." Zadok's speech is undeniably effective in both supplying the necessary historical backdrop of the tale and in creating a sense of insidious horror. Zadok occupies a structurally important place in the narrative: because he has witnessed, at first hand, the successive generations of Innsmouth folk become increasingly corrupted by the Deep Ones, his account carries irrefutable weight, in spite of Olmstead's harried attempt to dismiss it as the ravings of a senile toper. Olmstead could not possibly have come by this information in any other way, even by some laborious course of historical research. And some of Zadok's words are both hideous and poignant:

> "Hey, yew, why dun't ye say somethin'? Haow'd ye like to be livin' in a town like this, with everything a-rottin' an' a-dyin', an' boarded-up monsters crawlin' an' bleatin' an' barkin' an' hoppin' araoun' black cellars an' attics every way ye turn? Hey? Haow'd ye like to hear the haowlin' night arter night from the churches an' Order o' Dagon Hall, *an' know what's doin' part o' the haowlin'?* Haow'd ye like to hear what comes from that awful reef every May-Eve an' Hallowmass? Hey? Think the old man's crazy, eh? Wal, Sir, *let me tell ye that ain't the wust!"*

There seem to be two dominant influences upon the creation of Zadok Allen, one real and the other fictional. The life dates of Lovecraft's aged amateur friend, Jonathan E. Hoag (1831–1927), coincide exactly with those of Zadok. More substantially, Zadok seems loosely based upon the figure of Humphrey Lathrop, an elderly doctor in Herbert Gorman's *The Place Called Dagon* (1927), which Lovecraft read in March 1928.[58] Like Zadok, Lathrop is the repository for the secret history of the Massachusetts town in which he resides (Leominster, in the north-central part of Massachusetts); and, like Zadok, he is partial to spirits—in this case apple-jack!

But it is Olmstead around whom the entire story revolves—unusually so for the cosmically oriented Lovecraft; and yet, in this tale Lovecraft succeeds brilliantly both in making Olmstead's plight inexpressibly tragic and also in hinting at the awesome horrors that threaten the entire planet. It is his greatest union of internal and external horror. The many mundane details that lend substance and reality to Olmstead's character are in large part derived from Lovecraft's own temperament and, especially, from his habits as a frugal antiquarian traveller. Olmstead always "seek[s] the cheapest possible route," and this is usually—for Olmstead as for Lovecraft—by bus. His reading up on Innsmouth in the library, and his systematic exploration of the town by way of the map and instructions given him by the grocery youth, parallel Lovecraft's own thorough researches into the history and topography of the places he wished to visit and his frequent trips to libraries, chambers of commerce, and elsewhere for maps, guidebooks, and historical background.

Even the ascetic meal Olmstead eats at a restaurant—"A bowl of vegetable soup with crackers was enough for me"—echoes Lovecraft's parsimonious diet both at home and on his travels. But it does more than that. Lovecraft's characters have frequently but inanely been criticised for their failure to eat, go to the bathroom, or indulge in long-winded conversation; but it should be evident by now that this type of mundane realism was not to his purpose. Even in his novelettes and short novels, Lovecraft's prime concern—beyond even verisimilitude and topographical realism—was a rigid adherence to Poe's theory of unity of effect; that is, the elimination of any words, sentences, or whole incidents that do not have a direct bearing on the story. Accordingly, a character's eating habits are wholly dispensed with because they are inessential to the denouement of a tale and will only dilute that air of tensity and inevitability which Lovecraft

is seeking to establish. It is significant that virtually the only two characters in Lovecraft who do eat—Olmstead and Wilmarth (in "The Whisperer in Darkness")—do so for reasons that are critical to the development of the plot: Wilmarth because Lovecraft wishes to hint at the unsuccessful attempt to drug him with coffee, and Olmstead because he is forced to spend the evening in Innsmouth and this frugal meal contributes to the psychological portrait of a tourist increasingly agitated by his sinister surroundings.

But it is Olmstead's spectacular conversion at the end—where he not merely becomes reconciled to his fate as a nameless hybrid but actually embraces it—that is the most controversial point of the tale. Does this mean that Lovecraft, as in *At the Mountains of Madness,* wishes to transform the Deep Ones from objects of horror to objects of sympathy or identification? Or rather, are we to imagine Olmstead's change of heart as an augmentation of the horror? I can only believe that the latter is intended. There is no gradual "reformation" of the Deep Ones as there is of the Old Ones in the earlier novel: our revulsion at their physical hideousness is not mollified or tempered by any subsequent appreciation of their intelligence, courage, or nobility. Olmstead's transformation is the climax of the story and the pinnacle of its horrific scenario: it shows that not merely his physical body but also his mind has been ineluctably corrupted.

This transformation is achieved in many ways, subtle and obvious; one of the most subtle is in the simple use of descriptives. The title, "The Shadow over Innsmouth," is not chosen by accident; for throughout the tale it is used with provocative variations. We first encounter it when Olmstead, after hearing the account of the ticket agent, states: "That was the first I ever heard of shadowed Innsmouth." This mildly ominous usage then successively becomes "rumour-shadowed Innsmouth," "evil-shadowed Innsmouth," and other coinages that bespeak Olmstead's increasing sense of loathing at the town and its inhabitants; but then, as he undergoes his "conversion," we read at the very end of "marvel-shadowed Innsmouth" and the even greater marvels of Y'ha-nthlei, where he shall "dwell amidst wonder and glory for ever"—an utterance that, in its hideous parody of the 23rd Psalm ("Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the Lord for ever"), ineffably unites Olmstead's sense of triumph and the reader's sense of utter horror.

In the end, "The Shadow over Innsmouth" is about the inexorable call of heredity; it is one more meditation on that poignant utterance, "The past

is *real*—it is *all there is*."[59] For Lovecraft, the future was essentially unknown in its unpredictability; the present, conversely, was nothing but the inevitable result of all antecedent and circumjacent events of the past, whether we are aware of them or not. Throughout the story Olmstead is secretly guided by his heredity, but is entirely oblivious of the fact. His ambivalent utterance when he sees Zadok Allen and decides to question him—"It must have been some imp of the perverse—or some sardonic pull from dark, hidden sources"—neatly conveys this point, for that "sardonic pull" is nothing other than the past, embodied by his own heredity, that is ineluctably leading him to Innsmouth and causing him to undergo what he believes to be a merely fortuitous series of unrelated events.

Lovecraft never achieved a greater atmosphere of insidious decay than in "The Shadow over Innsmouth": one can almost smell the overwhelming stench of fish, see the physical anomalies of the inhabitants, and perceive the century-long dilapidation of an entire town in the story's evocative prose. And once again he has produced a narrative that progresses from first word to last without a false note to a cataclysmic conclusion—a conclusion, as noted before, that simultaneously focuses on the pitiable fate of a single human being and hints tantalisingly of the future destruction of the entire race. The cosmic and the local, the past and the present, the internal and the external, and self and the other are all fused into an inextricable unity. It is something that Lovecraft had never achieved before and would never achieve again save—in a very different way—in his last major story, "The Shadow out of Time."

And yet, Lovecraft was profoundly dissatisfied with the story. A week after finishing it on December 3, he wrote lugubriously to Derleth:

> I don't think the experimenting came to very much. The result, 68 pages long, has all the defects I deplore—especially in point of style, where hackneyed phrases & rhythms have crept in despite all precautions. Use of any other style was like working in a foreign language—hence I was left high & dry. Possibly I shall try experimenting with another plot—of as widely different nature as I can think of—but I think an hiatus like that of 1908 is the best thing. I have been paying too much attention to the demands of markets & the opinions of others—hence if I am ever to write again I must begin afresh; writing only for myself & getting into the old habit of non-self-

> conscious storytelling without any technical thoughts. No—I don't intend to offer "The Shadow over Innsmouth" for publication, for it would stand no chance of acceptance.[60]

Given this statement, is it nevertheless possible that Lovecraft was, even subconsciously, thinking of a specific market in mind when writing the story? Will Murray, largely on the strength of the chase scene in the fourth chapter, has conjectured that Lovecraft may have had *Strange Tales* in mind;[61] but the theory must remain unproven in the entire absence of any documentary evidence to this effect. We have seen that *Strange Tales* not only paid better than *Weird Tales,* but that Harry Bates wished "action" stories, and the chase scene is otherwise uncharacteristic of Lovecraft; but if *Strange Tales* was the contemplated market, it is odd that Lovecraft did not actually submit the tale there (or anywhere), forcing Murray to conclude that Lovecraft was so dissatisfied with the story when he finished it that he did not wish to submit it to a professional market. This makes Murray's theory incapable either of proof or refutation—barring, of course, the unlikely emergence of a statement by Lovecraft in a letter during the writing of the tale that *Strange Tales* was the market he had in mind.

August Derleth had, in the meantime, developed a sort of frantic interest in the story—or, more specifically, in its sale to a pulp market. After hearing of Lovecraft's discouragement about the tale, Derleth offered to type it himself;[62] this at least prodded Lovecraft to prepare a typescript, which he completed around the middle of January 1932.[63] Derleth read and evidently liked the story, for by late January he was already asking his new artist protégé Frank Utpatel to prepare some illustrations for it, even though it had not been accepted or even submitted anywhere.[64] Derleth had, however, suggested some changes—specifically, he felt that the narrator's "taint" had not been sufficiently prepared for in the early part of the story (Clark Ashton Smith echoed this view[65]) and thought Lovecraft should drop a few more hints at the beginning. Lovecraft was, however, "so thoroughly sick of the tale from repeated re-revisions that it would be out of the question to touch it for years."[66] At this point Derleth himself offered to make the revisions![67] Lovecraft naturally rejected this idea, but did allow Derleth to keep a permanent copy of one of the two carbons.

Meanwhile, evidently in response to Wright's request to send in new work (perhaps he had heard of "The Shadow over Innsmouth" from

Lovecraft's colleagues), Lovecraft wrote an extraordinarily snide letter in mid-February 1932:

> Sorry to say I haven't anything new which you would be likely to care for. Lately my tales have run to studies in geographical atmosphere requiring greater length than the popular editorial fancy relishes—my new "Shadow over Innsmouth" is three typed pages longer than "Whisperer in Darkness", and conventional magazine standards would undoubtedly rate it "intolerably slow", "not conveniently divisible", or something of the sort.[68]

Lovecraft has deliberately thrown back into Wright's face the remarks Wright had made about *At the Mountains of Madness.*

But if Lovecraft himself refused to submit "The Shadow over Innsmouth" to *Weird Tales,* Derleth was not so reticent. Without Lovecraft's permission or knowledge, he sent to Wright the carbon of the story in early 1933; but Wright's verdict was perhaps to be expected:

> I have read Lovecraft's story, THE SHADOW OVER INNSMOUTH, and must confess that it fascinates me. But I don't know just what I can do with it. It is hard to break a story of this kind into two parts, and it is too long to run complete in one part.
>
> I will keep this story in mind, and if some time in the near future I can figure out how to use it, I will write to Lovecraft and ask him to send me the manuscript.[69]

Lovecraft must have eventually found out about this surreptitious submission, for by 1934 he was speaking of its rejection by Wright.[70] Lovecraft himself, it should be pointed out, did not—with one exception—personally submit a story to Wright for five and a half years after the rejection of *At the Mountains of Madness.*

Shortly after writing "The Rats in the Walls" in the fall of 1923, Lovecraft discussed with Long one possible drawback about using some Celtic words (lifted directly from Fiona Macleod's "The Sin-Eater") at the end of the story: "The only objection to the phrase is that it's *Gaelic* instead of *Cymric* as the south-of-England locale demands. But as with anthropology—details don't count. Nobody will ever stop to note the difference."[71]

Lovecraft was wrong on two counts. First, the notion that the Gaels arrived first in Britain and were driven north by the Cymri is now seriously doubted by historians and anthropologists; second, someone did note the difference. When "The Rats in the Walls" was reprinted in *Weird Tales* for June 1930, a young writer wrote Farnsworth Wright asking whether Lovecraft was adhering to an alternate theory about the settling of Britain. Wright felt that the letter was interesting enough to pass on to Lovecraft. It was in this way that Lovecraft came into contact with Robert E. Howard.

Robert Ervin Howard (1906–1936) is a writer about whom it is difficult to be impartial. Like Lovecraft, he has attracted a fanatical cadre of supporters who both claim significant literary status for at least some of his work and take great offence at those who do not acknowledge its merits. My own opinion, however, is that, although individual stories are exceptional (but none equal to the best of Lovecraft's), the bulk of Howard's work is simply above-average pulp writing.

Howard himself is in many ways more interesting than his stories. Born in the small town of Peaster, Texas, about twenty miles west of Fort Worth, he spent the bulk of his short life in Cross Plains. His ancestors were among the earliest settlers of this "post oaks" region of central Texas, and his father, Dr I. M. Howard, was one of the pioneer physicians in the area. Howard was more hampered by his lack of formal education than Lovecraft —he briefly attended Howard Payne College in Brownwood, but only to take bookkeeping courses—because of the lack of libraries in his town; his learning was, accordingly, very uneven, and he was quick to take very strong and dogmatic opinions on subjects about which he knew little.

As an adolescent Howard was introverted and bookish; as a result, he was bullied by his peers, and to protect himself he undertook a vigorous course of body-building that made him, as an adult of 5' 11" and 200 pounds, a formidable physical specimen. He took to writing early, however, and it became his only career aside from the odd jobs at which he occasionally worked. A taste for adventure, fantasy, and horror—he was an ardent devotee of Jack London—and a talent for writing allowed him to break into *Weird Tales* in July 1925 with "Spear and Fang." Although Howard later published in a wide variety of other pulp magazines, from *Cowboy Stories* to *Argosy, Weird Tales* remained his chief market and published his most representative work.

That work runs the gamut from westerns to sports stories to "Orientales" to weird fiction. Many of his tales fall into loose cycles revolving around recurring characters, including Bran Mak Morn (a Celtic chieftain in Roman Britain), King Kull (a warrior-king of the mythical prehistoric realm of Valusia, in central Europe), Solomon Kane (an English Puritan of the seventeenth century), and, most famously, Conan, a barbarian chieftain of the mythical land of Cimmeria. Howard was keenly drawn to the period of the prehistoric barbarians—whether because that age dimly reflected the conditions of pioneer Texas that he learnt and admired from his elders, or from early readings, or from some other cause. Howard himself was not entirely clear on the sources for this attraction:

> . . . I have lived in the Southwest all my life, yet most of my dreams are laid in cold, giant lands of icy wastes and gloomy skies, and of wild, windswept fens and wilderness over which sweep great sea-winds, and which are inhabited by shock-headed savages with light fierce eyes. With the exception of one dream, I am never, in these dreams of ancient times, a civilized man. Always I am the barbarian, the skin-clad, tousle-haired, light-eyed wild man, armed with a rude axe or sword, fighting the elements and wild beasts, or grappling with armored hosts marching with the tread of civilized discipline, from fallow fruitful lands and walled cities. This is reflected in my writings, too, for when I begin a tale of old times, I always find myself instinctively arrayed on the side of the barbarian, against the powers of organized civilization.[72]

One does not, of course, wish to deny all literary value to Howard's work. He is certainly to be credited with the founding of the subgenre of "sword-and-sorcery," although Fritz Leiber would later vastly refine the form; and, although many of Howard's stories were written purely for the sake of cash, his own views do emerge clearly from them. The simple fact is, however, that these views are not of any great substance or profundity and that Howard's style is on the whole crude, slipshod, and unwieldy. Several of Howard's tales are, in addition, appallingly racist—more barefacedly so than anything Lovecraft ever wrote.

Howard's letters, as Lovecraft rightly maintained, deserve to be classed as literature far more than does his fiction. It might well be imagined that the letters of two writers so antipodally different in temperament as

Lovecraft and Howard might at the very least be provocative, and sure enough their six-year correspondence not only ranges widely in subject-matter—from somewhat pedantic and now very antiquated discussions of racial origins and types ("The truly Semitic Jew is doubtless superior to the Mongoloid Jew in moral and cultural aspects," Howard once opined[73]) to long disquisitions on each writer's upbringing to arguments about the relative merits of civilisation and barbarism to contemporary political matters (Howard would probably be classified today as a libertarian in his violent objection to any sort of authority)—but also becomes, at times, somewhat testy as each man expresses his views with vigour and determination. I shall have more to say about the substance of some of these disputes later, but one interesting fact can be noted now. Actual rough drafts of some of Howard's letters to Lovecraft have recently been discovered, making it plain that Howard wished to present himself as cogently as he could in his arguments. Howard was clearly intimidated by Lovecraft's learning and felt hopelessly inferior academically; but perhaps he also felt that he had a better grasp of the realities of life than the sheltered Lovecraft, so that he was not about to back down on some of his cherished beliefs. In some instances, as in his frequent descriptions of the violent conditions of the frontier with fights, shootouts, and the like, one almost feels as if Howard is subtly teasing Lovecraft or attempting to shock him; some of Howard's accounts of these matters may, in fact, have been invented.

And yet, Lovecraft is entirely right in his assessment of Howard the man:

> There's a bird whose *basic mentality* seems to me just about the good respectable citizen's (bank cashier, medium shopkeeper, ordinary lawyer, stockbroker, high school teacher, prosperous farmer, pulp fictionist, skilled mechanic, successful salesman, responsible government clerk, routine army or navy officer up to a colonel, &c.) average—bright & keen, accurate & retentive, but not profound or analytical—yet who is at the same time one of the most eminently interesting beings I know. Two-Gun is interesting because he has refused to let his thoughts & feelings be standardised. He remains himself. He couldn't—today—solve a quadratic equation, & probably thinks that Santayana is a brand of coffee—but he has a set of emotions which he has moulded & directed in uniquely harmonious patterns, & from

> which proceed his marvellous outbursts of historic retrospection & geographical description (in letters), & his vivid, energised & spontaneous pictures of a prehistoric world of battle in fiction . . . pictures which insist on remaining distinctive & self-expressive despite all outward concessions to the stultifying pulp ideal.[74]

Lovecraft habitually overpraised his friends' writings, but on the whole this assessment is quite accurate.

One of Howard's earliest enquiries to Lovecraft was information regarding Cthulhu, Yog-Sothoth, and the like, which Howard took to be genuine mythic lore; the issue was of particular interest in that one reader of *Weird Tales,* N. J. O'Neail, had thought that Howard's Kathulos (a preternatural Egyptian entity featured in "Skull-Face" [*Weird Tales,* October–December 1929]) was somehow related to or derived from Cthulhu. Naturally, Lovecraft told Howard the true state of affairs. As a result, Howard decided to start dropping references to Lovecraft's pseudomythology in his own work; and he did so in exactly the spirit Lovecraft intended—as fleeting background allusions to create a sense of unholy presences behind the surface of life. Very few of Howard's stories seem to me to owe much to Lovecraft's own tales or conceptions, and there are almost no actual pastiches. The *Necronomicon* is cited any number of times; Cthulhu, R'lyeh, and Yog-Sothoth come in for mention on occasion; but that is all.

Howard's "contribution" to the "Cthulhu Mythos" was a new mythical book, Von Junzt's *Nameless Cults,* frequently referred to by the variant title "Black Book" and apparently first cited in "The Children of the Night" (*Weird Tales,* April–May 1931). In 1932 Lovecraft thought to devise a German title for this work, coming up with the rather ungainly *Ungenennte Heidenthume.* August Derleth vetoed this title, replacing it with *Unaussprechlichen Kulten.* At this point a pedantic argument developed among Lovecraft's colleagues, and also with Farnsworth Wright, who felt that *unaussprechlich* could only mean "unpronounceable" and not "unspeakable" or "nameless"; he wished to substitute the rather colourless *Unnenbaren Kulten,* but the *Weird Tales* artist C. C. Senf, a native German, approved of *Unaussprechlichen Kulten,* and so it has come down to us.[75] To add to the absurdity, this title itself is flawed German, and should either be *Die Unaussprechlichen Kulten* or *Unaussprechliche Kulten.* Even more

preposterously, Lovecraft was under the impression that he had, in a ghostwritten story, devised a first name—Friedrich—for von Junzt, which Howard himself had neglected to do, when in fact Lovecraft did so only in a letter.[76] Such are the complexities of "Cthulhu Mythos" scholarship.

Meanwhile Clark Ashton Smith was getting into the act. In the spring of 1925 he had written "The Abominations of Yondo"—the first short story he had written since the early teens. It was not, however, until the fall of 1929, with "The Last Incantation," that he began writing stories in earnest; over the next five years he wrote more than a hundred tales, surpassing in quantity Lovecraft's entire fictional output. Like much of Howard's work, a large proportion of Smith's fiction is routine pulp hackwork, although very different in subject-matter; and because Smith was writing primarily to make money (chiefly to support himself and his increasingly ailing parents), he felt little compunction in altering his tales radically to suit the various pulp markets he cultivated. *Weird Tales* was by no means his only venue; he also wrote for *Strange Tales* and wrote many science fiction tales for *Wonder Stories.* Like Howard's, Smith's tales divide into loose cycles, although they focus not on a character but on a setting: Hyperborea (a prehistoric continent), Atlantis, Averoigne (a region in mediaeval France; the name clearly derived from the actual French province of Auvergne), Zothique (a continent of the far future, when the sun is dying), a conventionalised Mars, and several others.

Smith's stories also exact widely differing responses. They are overcoloured almost beyond belief—and, to some, beyond tolerance; but while Smith unleashes his wide and esoteric vocabulary without restraint, his plots tend to be simple, even simple-minded. My belief is that Smith's fiction is largely an outgrowth of his poetry—or, at least, has many of the same functions as his poetry—in the sense that what he was chiefly trying to achieve was a kind of sensory overload, in which the exotic and the outré are presented merely as such, as a foil to prosy mundanity. There is, therefore, by design little depth or profundity to his fiction; its chief value resides in its glittering surface.

Naturally, some facets of Smith's work are better than others. The Zothique cycle may perhaps be his most successful, and some of the tales —"Xeethra" (*Weird Tales,* February–March 1934), "The Dark Eidolon" (*Weird Tales,* January 1935)—meld beauty and horror in a highly distinctive way. Smith was, in fact, not very successful at pure horror, as for example

in his Averoigne tales, which lapse into conventionality in their exhibition of routine vampires and lamias. His science fiction tales have dated lamentably, although "The City of the Singing Flame" (*Wonder Stories,* January 1931) is intoxicatingly exotic, while the horror/science fiction tale "The Vaults of Yoh-Vombis" (*Weird Tales,* May 1932) may be his single finest prose work.

Smith's allusions to Lovecraft's pseudomythology are, like Howard's, very fleeting; indeed, it is highly misleading to think that Smith was somehow "contributing" to Lovecraft's mythos, since from the beginning he felt that he was devising his own parallel mythology. Smith's chief invention is the god Tsathoggua, first created in "The Tale of Satampra Zeiros." Written in the fall of 1929, this story evoked raptures from Lovecraft:

> I must not delay in expressing my well-nigh delirious delight at "The Tale of Satampra Zeiros"—which has veritably given me the one arch-kick of 1929! . . . I can see & feel & smell the jungle around immemorial Commoriom, which I am sure must lie buried today in glacial ice near Olathoë, in the land of Lomar! It is of this crux of elder horror, I am certain, that the mad Arab Abdul Alhazred was thinking when he—even he—left something unmention'd & signified by a row of stars in the surviving codex of his accursed & forbidden "Necronomicon"! [77]

And so on. Lovecraft is again being very charitable, for the story is rather reminiscent of some of Dunsany's flippant tales of thieves who come to a bad end when they attempt to steal from the gods. Here we have two burglars who seek to rob the temple of Tsathoggua; their end is entirely predictable. But the description of Tsathoggua is of interest: "He was very squat and pot-bellied, his head was more like that of a monstrous toad than a deity, and his whole body was covered with an imitation of short fur, giving somehow a vague suggestion of both the bat and the sloth. His sleep lids were half-lowered over his globular eyes; and the tip of a queer tongue issued from his fat mouth."[78] Lovecraft generally followed this description in most of his citations of the god. Indeed, he was so taken with the invention that he cited it immediately in "The Mound" (1929–30) and "The Whisperer in Darkness"; and since the latter tale was printed in *Weird Tales* for August 1931, three months before "The Tale of Satampra Zeiros,"

Lovecraft beat Smith into print with the mention of the god. Smith also invented the *Book of Eibon,* which Lovecraft cited frequently. It might well be said that Smith would perhaps not have created the god or the book without Lovecraft's example; indeed, it could well be that Lovecraft's diligent work as a fiction writer (which Smith had seen develop from 1922 onward) encouraged Smith in the writing of tales, although Lovecraft's actual work does not seem to have influenced Smith's appreciably.

Nevertheless, Lovecraft was fully aware that he was borrowing from Smith. In disabusing Robert E. Howard about the reality of the myth-cycle, he remarks: "Clark Ashton Smith is launching another mock mythology revolving around the black, furry toad-god 'Tsathoggua' . . ."[79] Smith himself, noting a few years later how many other writers had borrowed the elements he had invented, remarked to Derleth: "It would seem that I am starting a mythology."[80]

Smith of course returned the favour and cited Lovecraft's inventions in later tales—the *Necronomicon,* Yog-Sothoth (under the variant forms Yok-Sothoth and Iog-Sotôt), Cthulhu (also under variant forms). Just as Robert E. Howard mentioned Lovecraft's "The Call of Cthulhu" by name in "The Children of the Night," Smith cited Lovecraft in "The Hunters from Beyond" (*Strange Tales,* October 1932), a story that, in its account of a mad painter, may have been inspired by "Pickman's Model." (Lovecraft had already cited Smith in *At the Mountains of Madness* as "Klarkash-Ton.") Most of Smith's borrowings from Lovecraft appear in the tales of his Hyperborea cycle.

August Derleth was also active. As early as 1931 he felt that this developing pseudomythology should be given a name; and he suggested, of all things, the "Mythology of Hastur." Hastur had been alluded to in only a single passage in "The Whisperer in Darkness" (and it is not even clear there whether Hastur is an entity—as it is in the work of Ambrose Bierce, who invented the term—or a place, as in the work of Robert W. Chambers, who borrowed it from Bierce); but Derleth became fascinated with this term, as later events will show. Lovecraft—who had never given his pseudomythology a name except when referring to it somewhat flippantly as the "Arkham cycle" or "Yog-Sothothery"—gently deflected the idea:

> It's not a bad idea to call this Cthulhuism & Yog-Sothothery of mine "The Mythology of Hastur"—although it was really from Machen & Dunsany & others, rather than through the Bierce-

> Chambers line, that I picked up my gradually developing hash of theogony—or daimonogony. Come to think of it, I guess I sling this stuff more as Chambers does than as Machen & Dunsany do—though I had written a good deal of it before I ever suspected that Chambers ever wrote a weird story![81]

It would, certainly, have been better for Lovecraft's subsequent reputation had the "Cthulhu Mythos" not been exploited as it later was; but that exploitation—under the aegis of Derleth—occurred in a very different manner from the way it did in Lovecraft's lifetime, and Lovecraft cannot be held responsible for it. It is a phenomenon we shall have to study at length later.

Some other new colleagues were coming into Lovecraft's horizon at this time. One was Henry George Weiss (1898–1946), who published under the name "Francis Flagg." Weiss was a poet of some note but published a small amount of weird and science fiction in the pulps, beginning with "The Machine Man of Ardathia" in *Amazing Stories* for November 1927. His "The Chemical Brain" appeared in the January 1929 issue of *Weird Tales,* and he went on to publish several other stories there and in *Amazing* and *Astounding.*

Weiss came in touch with Lovecraft in early 1929 by means of their mutual friend Walter J. Coates.[82] Weiss was a full-fledged communist, and he and Lovecraft must have argued vigorously on the issue; unfortunately, little of Lovecraft's side of the correspondence has turned up. Weiss, at any rate, seems to have been one of the few who could match Lovecraft in epistolary verbosity: in August 1930 he sent Lovecraft a forty-page single-spaced typed letter. Weiss may have had something to do with waking Lovecraft up to the importance of economic issues for an understanding of society.

Toward the end of 1930 Lovecraft heard from Henry St Clair Whitehead (1882–1932), an established pulp writer who published voluminously in *Adventure, Weird Tales, Strange Tales,* and elsewhere. In "In Memoriam: Henry St Clair Whitehead" (1933) Lovecraft states that Whitehead was a native of New Jersey who attended Harvard in the same class as Franklin Delano Roosevelt, and that he later gained a Ph.D. from Harvard, studying for a time under Santayana. Whether he was told this by Whitehead is unclear (the correspondence on both sides seems to have perished), but A.

Langley Searles has ascertained that several of these details are either false or unverified.[83] In fact, Whitehead attended both Harvard and Columbia, but did not receive even a B.A., much less a Ph.D., from either institution. In 1912 he was ordained as a deacon of the Episcopal Church, later serving as rector in parishes in Connecticut and New York City. In the late 1920s he was archdeacon in the Virgin Islands, where he gained the local colour for many of his weird tales. By 1930 he was established in a rectory in Dunedin, Florida.

Whitehead's urbane, erudite weird fiction is one of the few literary high spots of *Weird Tales,* although its lack of intensity and the relative conventionality of its supernaturalism have not won it many followers in recent years. Still, his two collections, *Jumbee and Other Uncanny Tales* (1944) and *West India Lights* (1946), contain some fine work. There is some little mystery as to what has become of Lovecraft's correspondence with Whitehead; it appears to have been inadvertently destroyed.[84] In any case, the two men became fast friends and had great respect for each other, both as writers and as human beings. Whitehead's early death was one of a succession of tragedies that would darken Lovecraft's later years.

Another significant correspondent was Joseph Vernon Shea (1912–1981). Lovecraft may have been momentarily amused to read a letter by Shea in the letter column of *Weird Tales* for October 1926: "I am just a boy of thirteen, but I am in the opinion that *Weird Tales* is the best magazine ever published." Shea went on to praise "The Outsider" as "the weirdest, most thrilling and most eery tale I have ever had the good fortune to read." But Shea did not feel courageous enough to write to Lovecraft himself until 1931; but when he did so (sending a letter to *Weird Tales* for forwarding), there rapidly developed a warm and extensive correspondence—in many senses one of the most interesting of Lovecraft's later letter-cycles, even if some of the material is embarrassingly racist and militarist in content. Shea was blunt and, in youth, a trifle cocksure in the expression of his opinions, and he inspired Lovecraft to some vivid and piquant rebuttals.

Shea was born in Kentucky but spent most of his youth in Pittsburgh. He attended the University of Pittsburgh for only a year before being forced to withdraw because of his parents' impoverishment from the depression. As a result, he too was largely self-taught, and in the process became a considerable authority on music and film. He attempted to write both weird and mainstream fiction in youth, but he did not pursue writing vigorously,

even though he later published some weird and science fiction tales in magazines. He edited two anthologies, *Strange Desires* (1954), concerning sexual aberrations, and *Strange Barriers* (1955), about interracial relationships. Some of his essays on Lovecraft—especially "H. P. Lovecraft: The House and the Shadows" (1966)—are quite notable.

Another young colleague that came into Lovecraft's horizon in 1931 was Robert Hayward Barlow (1918–1951). It is certain that Lovecraft had no knowledge, when first receiving a letter from Barlow, that his new correspondent was thirteen years old; for Barlow was then already a surprisingly mature individual whose chief hobby was, indeed, the somewhat juvenile one of collecting pulp fiction, but who was quite well read in weird fiction and enthusiastically embraced a myriad of other interests, from playing the piano to painting to printing to raising rabbits. Barlow was born in Kansas City, Missouri, and spent much of his youth at Fort Benning, Georgia, where his father, Col. E. D. Barlow, was stationed; around 1932 Col. Barlow received a medical discharge and settled his family in the small town of DeLand, in central Florida. Family difficulties later forced Barlow to move to Washington, D.C., and Kansas.

Lovecraft was taken with Barlow, although their correspondence was rather perfunctory for the first year or so. He recognised the youth's zeal and incipient brilliance, and nurtured his youthful attempts at writing weird fiction. Barlow was more interested in pure fantasy than in supernatural horror, and the models for his early work are Lord Dunsany and Clark Ashton Smith; he was so fond of Smith that he bestowed upon the closet where he stored his choicest collectibles the name "The Vaults of Yoh-Vombis." This collecting mania—which extended to manuscripts as well as published material—would prove a godsend in later years. As early as 1932 he was offering to type Lovecraft's old stories in exchange for the autograph or the (by then tattered) original typed manuscripts; Lovecraft, whose horror of the typewriter was by this time reaching phobic proportions, welcomed the offer, and in fact felt a little sheepish in trading clean typescripts for what he regarded as the worthless scrawls of a literary nonentity. Barlow even pestered Lovecraft into letting him attempt to type *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* but he did not get very far with these.

By the time he got to know Barlow well, Lovecraft regarded him as a child prodigy on the order of Alfred Galpin; and in this he may not have

been far wrong. It is true that Barlow sometimes spread himself too thin and had difficulty focusing on any single project, with the result that his actual accomplishments prior to Lovecraft's death seem somewhat meagre; but in his later years he distinguished himself in an entirely different field—Mexican anthropology—and his early death deprived the world of a fine poet and scholar. Lovecraft did not err in appointing Barlow his literary executor.

One may as well give some consideration now to Lovecraft's correspondence, for it would only grow in later years as he became the focal point of the fantasy fandom movement of the 1930s. He himself addresses the issue with Long in late 1930:

> As for Grandpa's correspondence list—well, Sir, I concede it stands badly in need of abridgment . . . yet where, after all, is one to begin? A few figures of older years have indeed disappeared as frequent bombarders, but the increase seems to exceed the elimination a trifle. In the last five years the permanent additions have been Derleth, Wandrei, Talman, Dwyer, [Woodburn] Harris, Weiss, Howard, and (if permanent) Whitehead; of whom Derleth is frequent but not voluminous, Wandrei sparse of late, Talman medium, Dwyer ample but infrequent, Howard heavy and moderate, Weiss encyclopaedic but very infrequent, and Harris voluminous and frequent. Orton, Munn, and Coates are not heavy enough to be counted in. As a palliative measure I can think of nothing at the moment save cutting down Harris a bit.[85]

This list, of course, does not include his old-time amateur colleagues—Moe, Edward H. Cole, Galpin (probably infrequent by this time), Morton, Kleiner (probably very infrequent), and Long himself. Routine amateur correspondence was, of course, at an end, but Lovecraft is probably understating the matter when he says that the "increase seems to exceed the elimination a trifle". In late 1931 he estimated that his regular correspondents numbered between fifty and seventy-five.[86] But numbers do not tell the entire story. It certainly does seem as if Lovecraft—perhaps under the incentive of his own developing philosophical thought—was engaging in increasingly lengthy arguments with a variety of colleagues. I have already mentioned the seventy-page letter he wrote to Woodburn Harris in early 1929; a letter to Long in early 1931 may have been nearly as

long (it occupies fifty-two pages in *Selected Letters* and is clearly abridged). His letters are always of consuming interest, but on occasion one feels as if Lovecraft is having some difficulty shutting up.

Many have complained about the amount of time Lovecraft spent (or, as some have termed it, "wasted") on his correspondence, whining that he could have written more fiction instead. Certainly, his array of original fiction (exclusive of revisions) over the last several years was not numerically large: one story in 1928, none in 1929, one in 1930, and two in 1931. Numbers again, however, are deceiving. Almost any one of these five stories would be in itself sufficient to give Lovecraft a place in weird fiction, for most of them are novelettes or short novels of a richness and substance rarely seen outside the work of Poe, Machen, Blackwood, and Dunsany. Moreover, it is by no means certain that Lovecraft would have written more fiction even had he the leisure, for his fiction-writing was always dependent upon the proper mood and the proper gestation of a fictional conception; sometimes such a conception took years to develop.

But the overriding injustice in this whole matter is the belief that Lovecraft should have lived his life for us and not for himself. If he had written no stories but only letters, it would have been our loss but his prerogative. Lovecraft did indeed justify his letter-writing in the same letter to Long:

> . . . an isolated person requires correspondence as a means of seeing his ideas as others see them, and thus guarding against the dogmatisms and extravagances of solitary and uncorrected speculation. No man can learn to reason and appraise from a mere perusal of the writing of others. If he live not in the world, where he can observe the publick at first-hand and be directed toward solid reality by the force of conversation and spoken debate, then he must sharpen his discrimination and regulate his perceptive balance by an equivalent exchange of ideas in epistolary form.

There is certainly much truth in this, and anyone can tell the difference between the cocksure Lovecraft of 1914 and the mature Lovecraft of 1930. What he does not say here, however, is that one of the chief motivations for his correspondence was simple courtesy. Lovecraft answered almost every letter he ever received, and he usually answered it within a few days. He felt it was his obligation as a gentleman to do so. His first letter to J. Vernon

Shea is fourteen pages (seven large sheets written on both sides), although in part this is because Shea's first letter to him was a sort of rapid-fire questionnaire probing nosily into both his writing habits and his private life. But this is the sort of thing Lovecraft did habitually, and this is how he established strong bonds of friendship with far-flung associates, many of whom never met him; it is why he became, both during and after his lifetime, a revered figure in the little worlds of amateur journalism and weird fiction.

21. Mental Greed

(1931–1933)

The year 1931 was, of course, not an entire disaster for Lovecraft, even though the rejections of some of his best work stung him. In fact, his now customary late spring and summer travels reached the widest extent they would ever achieve in his lifetime, and he returned home with a fund of new impressions that well offset his literary misfortunes.

Lovecraft began his travels on Saturday, May 2, the day after finishing the back-breaking work of typing *At the Mountains of Madness.* His customary stop in New York was very brief: he merely went to the Longs' apartment for dinner, then caught the 12.40 A.M. bus for Charleston via Washington, D.C., Richmond, Winston-Salem and Charlotte, North Carolina, and Columbia, South Carolina. The total time of this bus ride was thirty-six hours. The ride through Virginia was enlivened by music from a blind guitar player and a cross-eyed tenor who regaled their captive audience with "the traditional folk airs of ancient Virginia."[1] They sang purely for the fun of it, and tried to refuse a collection taken up for them, saying, "We don' expeck any money, folks! We're having jes' as good a tahm as you all!"

Lovecraft found Charleston pretty much the same as the year before, aside from the fact that one old Charleston house had been demolished to make way for a filling station—but even this station was (somehow) of Old Charleston architecture! Tuesday the 5th was chilly and cloudy, so Lovecraft devoted himself to interiors, including the Old Exchange with its spectral basement dungeon, the Charleston Museum, and elsewhere. On the 6th Lovecraft took a bus for Savannah, and from there caught another bus for Jacksonville (saving a night's hotel or YMCA bill), arriving at 6 A.M. on the 7th. Jacksonville was a modern town and hence had no appeal for Lovecraft; it was only a way station to a more archaic place—nothing less than the oldest continuously inhabited city in the United States, St Augustine, Florida.

In the two weeks Lovecraft spent in St Augustine he absorbed all the antiquities the town had to offer. The mere fact of being in such an ancient place delighted him, although the town, with its predominantly Hispanic background, did not strike so deep a chord as a town of British origin such

as Charleston did. Nevertheless, he was marvellously invigorated by St Augustine—both spiritually and physically, since the genuine tropicality of the town endowed him with reserves of strength unknown in the chilly North. He stayed at the Rio Vista Hotel on Bay Street for $4.00 a week, and during much of his stay he was accompanied by Dudley Newton (1864–1954)—an elderly acquaintance about whom we know virtually nothing.

Lovecraft canvassed the entire town—including the Post Office (housed in a 1591 mansion), Fort San Marcos, the Fountain of Youth, the Bridge of Lions, the Franciscan monastery, and what is presumed to be the oldest house in the United States, built in 1565—as well as nearby Anastasia Island, which offers a spectacular view of the archaic skyline. Lovecraft rhapsodised about the place in letters and postcards sent to friends:

> Around me are the narrow lanes & ancient buildings of the old Spanish capital, the formidable bulk of ancient Fort San Marcos, on whose turreted, sun-drenched parapet I love to sit, the sleepy old market (now a benched loafing-place) in the Plaza de la Constitución, & the whole languorous atmosphere (the tourist season being over) of an elder, sounder, & more leisurely civilisation. Here is a city founded in 1565, 42 years before the first Jamestown colonist landed, & 55 years before the first Pilgrim set foot on Plymouth Rock. Here, too, is the region where Ponce de Leon fared on his vain quest of 1513. . . . It will be like pulling a tooth to break away from here . . .[2]

Lovecraft finally did break away around May 21, as his new correspondent Henry S. Whitehead insisted that he come and visit for an extended period in Dunedin, a small town on a peninsula north of St Petersburg and Clearwater. Letters to Lillian during this three-week stay are in curiously short supply, so that we do not know much about this visit; but Lovecraft found both the environment and his host delightful. He also met several of Whitehead's friends and neighbours, including a young man named Allan Grayson, for whom he wrote a poem in two quatrains entitled "To a Young Poet in Dunedin," the first bit of verse he had written since *Fungi from Yuggoth* a year and a half before. On one occasion Lovecraft recited a sort of synopsis of "The Cats of Ulthar" (he presumably did not have the actual text with him) to a group of young boys from a nearby boys' club. Lovecraft and Whitehead were of almost exactly the same build, and

the latter lent Lovecraft a white tropical suit to wear during especially hot days, later making a present of it.

Lovecraft made an excursion to Tampa, the nearest large city, but he found it "sprawling & squalid & without any buildings or traditions of great age."[3] Dunedin itself was not especially ancient, but it was a pleasing small town with well-landscaped gardens, and the Gulf of Mexico was only a few feet from Whitehead's front steps. The natural scenery was magnificent, and in a postcard to Derleth written jointly by Lovecraft and Whitehead, the former waxed eloquent: "Last night we saw the white tropic moon making a magical path on the westward-stretching gulf that lapped at a gleaming, deserted beach on a remote key. Boy! What a sight! It took one's breath away!"[4] The birds were also remarkable—herons, cranes, flamingoes, and others who fluttered very near to where Lovecraft sat reading or writing postcards on the shore. The whippoorwills had a curiously different type of cry than those in New England. Toward the end of his stay Whitehead caught a mottled snake, pickled it, and presented it to Lovecraft.

Either while at Dunedin or when he returned home a month or two later, Lovecraft assisted Whitehead on the writing of a story, "The Trap." He noted in one letter that he "revised & totally recast"[5] the tale, and in another letter said that he "suppl[ied] the central part myself."[6] My feeling is that the latter three-fourths of the story is Lovecraft's. "The Trap" is an entertaining if insubstantial account of an anomalous mirror that sucks hapless individuals into a strange realm where colours are altered and where objects, both animate and inanimate, have a sort of intangible, dreamlike existence. The mirror had been devised by a seventeenth-century Danish glassblower named Axel Holm who yearned for immortality and found it, after a fashion, in his mirror-world, since "'life' in the sense of form and consciousness would go on virtually forever" so long as the mirror itself was not destroyed. A boy, Robert Grandison, one of the pupils at the Connecticut academy where Gerald Canevin teaches, gets drawn into this world, and the tale—narrated in the first person by Canevin—tells of the ultimately successful effort to extricate him.

Because this was a tale that would appear under Whitehead's name—Lovecraft, in his gentlemanly way, refused a collaborative byline—Lovecraft did not drag in references (whimsical or otherwise) to his pseudomythology as he had done in the tales ghostwritten for Zealia Bishop

or Adolphe de Castro. (Whitehead is, indeed, one of the few literary associates of Lovecraft's who did not draw upon this body of invented myth or create new elements of his own as "additions" to it.) Whitehead's and Lovecraft's styles do not seem to me to meld very well, and the urbanely conversational style of Whitehead's beginning abruptly gives way to Lovecraft's long paragraphs of dense exposition. The tale was published in the March 1932 issue of *Strange Tales*—Lovecraft's only "appearance" (if it can be called that) in the magazine.

By early June Lovecraft was ready to return north, although he wished to spend at least another week each in St Augustine and Charleston; but two timely revision checks allowed him to prolong the trip unexpectedly. Instead of heading north, on June 10 he went south to Miami—whose vegetation he found strikingly tropical, and which he generally found more prepossessing than Tampa or Jacksonville—and the next day he arrived at his ultimate destination, Key West. This was the farthest south Lovecraft would ever reach, although on this and several other occasions he yearned to hop on a boat and get to Havana, but never had quite enough money to make the plunge.

Key West, the most remote of the Florida Keys, was reached by a succession of ferries and bus rides, since the depression had not allowed the state to construct the continuous series of causeways that now connects all the Keys. Lovecraft wished to explore this place not only because of its remoteness but because of its genuine antiquity: it had been settled in the early nineteenth century by Spaniards, who called it Cayo Hueso (Bone Key); later the name was corrupted by Americans to Key West. Its naval base was of great importance in the Spanish-American War of 1898. Because of its relative isolation, it had not yet been invaded by tourists, so that its archaic charm was preserved: "the town is absolutely natural & unspoiled; a perfect bit of old-time simplicity which is truly quaint because it does not know that it is quaint."[7] Lovecraft spent only a few days in Key West, but he canvassed the place thoroughly.

Lovecraft then returned, apparently, to Miami, as he described making a side-trip to a Seminole village and also a trip over a coral reef on a glass-bottomed boat;[8] it is possible, however, that these Miami excursions had occurred earlier, on his way down. In any event, by June 16 he was back in St Augustine, soaking up the antiquity and spending more time with Dudley Newton. It was at this time that Lovecraft learned that the "accursed cheap

skate"[9] Wright had turned down *At the Mountains of Madness.* The manuscript had of course been sent back to Providence, and Lillian had told him of a large parcel that had come from *Weird Tales;* Lovecraft, suspecting the worst, asked her to open it, remove any letter Wright may have enclosed, and send it on to Frank Long, where he would read the bad news as he passed through New York. But the charm of St Augustine took his mind off things for a while. It is interesting to note, however, that Lovecraft remarks having done "quite a bit on a new story yesterday"[10] (June 21), but he ceased abruptly once he heard the news of the rejection. This story fragment does not, apparently, survive.

On the evening of June 22 Lovecraft took a bus back to Jacksonville, then a midnight bus to Savannah. In two hours he looked up all the old parts of the town (he apparently had had no time to do so on his trip down), finding considerable charm in the ancient district: "The town in general is marvellously attractive, having a drowsy & beautiful atmosphere all its own, & being utterly different from CHARLESTON. . . . The whole effect of Savannah is that of one vast sleepy park."[11] He especially liked some of the burying-grounds, including the vast cemetery outside the compact part of the town called Colonial Park with its above-ground wall graves. This is where the Rhode Island colonial general Nathanael Greene is buried, and Lovecraft made sure to seek out this reminder of home.

At 7.30 A.M. on the 23rd Lovecraft took a bus to Charleston, where he stayed a mere two days. Late afternoon on the 25th he left for Richmond, reaching there at noon the next day. He spent less than a day there, exploring some of the Poe sites, and the next morning (the 27th) he made his way to Fredericksburg. The day after found him passing through Philadelphia on his way to New York, which he reached that evening. After a week of looking up his old friends, visiting museums (including the Roerich), and a weekend with the Longs at the seaside resort of Asbury Park, New Jersey, Lovecraft accepted Wilfred B. Talman's offer to spend a week in his large Flatbush apartment. Like Whitehead, Talman also gave Lovecraft one of his suits, as he had become too stout for it. (Throughout his trip Lovecraft worked hard to keep to his "ideal" weight of 140 pounds.) On July 6 a gang meeting at Talman's featured, as a special guest, Seabury Quinn, the *Weird Tales* hack. Lovecraft, although taking a dim view of his endless array of clichéd stories (most revolving around the psychic detective Jules de Grandin), found him "exceedingly tasteful &

intelligent,"[12] although more a businessman than an aesthete. Another curious encounter was with a friend of Loveman's named Leonard Gaynor, connected with Paramount. He had become interested in possible film adaptations of Lovecraft's work from Loveman's descriptions of it, but clearly nothing came of this meeting. On Friday the 10th Lovecraft accompanied the Longs on their usual motor trip, this time to the Croton Dam in Westchester County. The scenery was spectacular: "Vivid green slopes, fantastic clusters of trees, blue threads & patches of water, & great lines of outspread hills from the green eminences close at hand to the faint, half-fabulous purple peaks on the far horizon."[13] After another ten days of dawdling in the metropolitan area (including hearing the bad news on the 14th of the rejection by Putnam's of his story collection), Lovecraft finally returned home on July 20. It had been another record-breaking trip, but aside from the letters to Lillian—some of which have clearly been lost—and to other correspondents, he produced no connected travelogue of the journey.

The rest of the year was taken up with lesser trips or with visits to Providence by friends. The day after Lovecraft came home, James F. Morton visited for three days.[14] August 24 found Lovecraft spending the day in Plymouth because of the cheap ($1.75) bus fares. At the beginning of September a journey of a somewhat shorter distance ensued: steam heat was being installed at 10 Barnes, and the resulting racket and disruption forced Lovecraft to spend most of the days at aunt Annie's flat, at 61 Slater Avenue on the East Side. It was at this time that Lovecraft, passing by 454 Angell Street, discovered to his dismay that the old barn of the place had been torn down a month before. Annie also was heartbroken:

> . . . she had seen it built—it being newer than the house. Last month she recovered from the shattered walls the baking-powder tin with "historical data"—tintype, newspaper sheet, & "to whom it may concern" letter—which she had put in in 1881, for the benefit of future archaeologists. How melancholy—& how illustrative of the emptiness of human designs—that she should have to reclaim herself that which was intended for a remote posterity! Eheu, fugaces . . . sic transit gloria mundi![15]

In early October Lovecraft took a trip with Cook to Boston, Newburyport, and Haverhill, looking up the Old Ship Church (1681) in Hingham and visiting with Tryout Smith. Around this time Lovecraft

organised an informal fund to purchase a new set of typesetting equipment for Tryout, calling on all his amateur friends to contribute and himself adding a dollar.[16] The fund was completed early the next year and the equipment purchased shortly thereafter; but it did not seem to make much difference in the accuracy of the *Tryout,* which was as error-riddled as before.

In early November, Indian summer lingering unusually late, Lovecraft and Cook took another excursion to Boston, Salem, Marblehead, Newburyport, and Portsmouth.[17] No doubt these visits were the immediate inspiration for "The Shadow over Innsmouth," begun later in the month and finished in early December. At this point, however, the cold curtailed any further outings that required extensive outdoor travel.

New Year's Day 1932, a Friday, was exceptionally mild, so Lovecraft took occasion to spend the weekend with Cook in Boston. They saw five museums in Cambridge on the 2nd (Germanic, Semitic, Peabody, Agassiz, and Fogg) and two more in Boston (Fine Arts and Gardner) the next day. More destruction was occurring in the "Pickman's Model" district in the North End, but of course much of the area had already been razed in 1927. [18]

Lovecraft's financial situation was not getting any better, although for the moment it was not getting any worse. The publication of "The Whisperer in Darkness" in the August 1931 *Weird Tales* enriched him by $350.00—a sum that, given his boast that he had now reduced his expenses to $15.00 per week, could have lasted him for more than five months. Here is how he did it:

> $15.00 per week will float any man of sense in a very tolerable way—lodging him in a cultivated neighbourhood if he knows how to look for rooms, (this one rule, though, breaks down in really megalopolitan centres like New York—but it will work in Providence, Richmond, or Charleston, & would probably work in most of the moderate-sized cities of the northwest) keeping him dressed in soberly conservative neatness if he knows how to choose quiet designs & durable fabrics among cheap suits, & feeding him amply & palatably if he is not an epicurean crank, & if he does not attempt to depend upon restaurants. One must have a kitchen-alcove & obtain provisions at grocery &

> delicatessen prices rather than pay cafes & cafeterias the additional price they demand for mere service.[19]

Of course, this is predicated on Lovecraft's habit of eating only two (very frugal) meals a day. He actually maintained that "my digestion raises hell if I try to eat oftener than once in 7 hours."[20]

But original fiction—especially now that he was writing work that was not meeting the plebeian criteria of pulp editors—was not going to help much in making ends meet. Reprints brought in very little: he received $12.25 from Selwyn & Blount in mid-1931[21] (probably for "The Rats in the Walls" in Christine Campbell Thomson's *Switch On the Light* [1931]), and another $25.00 for "The Music of Erich Zann" in Dashiell Hammett's *Creeps by Night* (1931);[22] but, aside from "The Whisperer in Darkness" and $55.00 for "The Strange High House in the Mist" from *Weird Tales,* that may have been all for original fiction sold for the year. Of course, after his double rejections of the summer, Lovecraft was in no mood to hawk his work about. In the fall he sent Derleth several stories the latter had asked to see, including "In the Vault." On his own initiative Derleth retyped the story (Lovecraft's typescript was becoming tattered to the point of disintegration), and then badgered Lovecraft into resubmitting it to Wright; Lovecraft did so, and the tale was accepted in early 1932 for $55.00.[23]

The *Creeps by Night* anthology is worth pausing over, since it evolved into a kind of literary meeting-place for Lovecraft's associates and also represented one of those fleeting occasions in which he—or, in this case, his work—came to the attention of an established literary figure. Dashiell Hammett, who had attained celebrity initially by writing hard-boiled detective stories in the magazine—*Black Mask*—that years earlier had rejected Lovecraft, had already published his first two novels, *Red Harvest* (1929) and *The Maltese Falcon* (1930). Now he was commissioned by the John Day Co. to compile an anthology of weird, horror, and suspense tales. Hammett assembled the volume, however, in a peculiar way: he solicited suggestions from readers and offered them $10 if a story they recommended was selected for the book. In this way August Derleth pocketed $10 for suggesting "The Music of Erich Zann." Of the twenty stories in the volume, six come from *Weird Tales;* aside from Lovecraft's, the others are S. Fowler Wright's "The Rat," Donald Wandrei's "The Red Brain," W. Elwyn Backus's "The Phantom Bus," Paul Suter's "Beyond the Door" (an early favourite of Lovecraft's), and Frank Belknap Long's "A Visitor from

Egypt." Something of Derleth's was considered but did not make the final cut.

Lovecraft professed to be somewhat disappointed with *Creeps by Night,* because (understandably in light of Hammett's own work) it tended to feature *contes cruels* rather than tales of the supernatural. And yet, the volume would be notable solely for being the first book appearance (following its publication in the *Forum* for April 1930) of William Faulkner's "A Rose for Emily"; such other superb tales as Hanns Heins Ewers's "The Spider" and Conrad Aiken's "Mr. Arcularis" are also included. Lovecraft violently disliked John Collier's "Green Thoughts," but he never cared for the mingling of humour and horror, even the dark, sardonic humour of Collier. Hammett's very brief introduction makes no mention of Lovecraft's story or any other in the volume. Largely on the basis of his name, *Creeps by Night* proved notably successful, being reprinted by Victor Gollancz in England in 1932 under the title *Modern Tales of Horror,* by Blue Ribbon Books in 1936, by the World Publishing Co. in 1944, and in sundry abridged paperback editions. It was the British edition that surely led to the reprinting of "The Music of Erich Zann" in the London *Evening Standard* on October 24, 1932, netting Lovecraft another $21.61.[24]

In early 1932 a potential new magazine market emerged, only to fizzle. A Carl Swanson of Washburn, North Dakota, had come up with the idea of a semi-professional magazine, *Galaxy,* that would use both original stories and reprints from *Weird Tales.* At this stage Swanson had not determined how much he would pay, but he promised to pay something. Lovecraft heard about the magazine from Henry George Weiss and was about to write to Swanson when Swanson himself wrote. Lovecraft sent him "The Nameless City" and "Beyond the Wall of Sleep" (both *Weird Tales* rejects), and Swanson accepted them with alacrity.[25] Lovecraft was also keen on sending Swanson some *Weird Tales* stories for which he owned second serial rights; and because he evidently did not know for which stories he owned such rights, he asked Farnsworth Wright about the matter. Lovecraft told Talman what Wright's response was:

> Wright replied that it was nix on the ones he owned, and that—since Swanson was likely to prove a rival of his—he did not favour the second sale of those tales in which I hold later rights. In other words, this bozo who has exploited his authors for his

> own profit—cabbaging all their rights until they learned to reserve them, rejecting their best tales, reprinting others without added remuneration, and backing out of book-publishing promises while he pushes the work of his pal [Otis Adelbert] Kline—this hard egg who actually boasted to a friend of Belknap's that he has his authors at his mercy financially because for the most part there's nowhere else they can place their work—expects his lamb-like contributors to forfeit their legitimate rights as a personal favour to him in exchange for his unnumbered kindnesses! Gents, I like that! Well—what I did was to give him the civilised Rhodinsular equivalent of that curt injunction so popular in his own tempest-swept cosmopolis —"go jump in the lake"![26]

Lovecraft's relations with Wright had certainly reached rock-bottom. Wright was clearly using strong-arm tactics to dissuade his authors from submitting to Swanson, suggesting that he would be disinclined to accept stories of theirs if they published in *Galaxy*. Frank Long was so intimidated by this threat that he had nothing to do with Swanson. Lovecraft, who at this juncture was not much inclined to send anything to Wright anyway, felt no such compunction.

Unfortunately, the Swanson venture never materialised: by late March it had collapsed, as Swanson was unable to arrange for the financing and printing of the magazine. He had vague ideas of issuing a mimeographed magazine or a series of booklets, but Lovecraft rightly concluded that this did not sound very promising, and in fact it never came about. Swanson disappeared and was never heard of again.

It was certainly unfortunate that Lovecraft, in the course of his entire life, was never able to secure a reliable second market for his work aside from *Weird Tales*. His one sale to *Amazing Stories* was his last, as the pay was outrageously low and late in coming. *Tales of Magic and Mystery* also paid poorly and folded after five issues. Lovecraft's submissions to *Strange Tales* were all rejected (it died after seven issues anyway), and his two sales to *Astounding Stories* came only in the mid-1930s and were essentially luck-shots. If such a second market had emerged, Lovecraft could have used it as leverage to persuade Wright to accept items that he might otherwise have been hesitant to take, in order to retain Lovecraft's presence in *Weird Tales*.

Of course, a book would have been a real venue to both financial gain and literary recognition. In March 1932 such a prospect emerged for the third time, but once again it collapsed. Arthur Leeds had spoken to a friend of his who was an editor at Vanguard (formerly Macy-Masius, which had been involved in the Asbury *Not at Night* imbroglio) about Lovecraft, who accordingly received a letter of enquiry. Vanguard wanted a novel, but Lovecraft (having already repudiated *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* and evidently not considering *At the Mountains of Madness* a true novel) said he had none at hand. Nevertheless, the firm did ask to see some of his short stories, so Lovecraft sent them "Pickman's Model," "The Dunwich Horror," "The Rats in the Walls," and "The Call of Cthulhu."[27] The stories eventually came back.

How was revision faring? Not especially well. After the work done for Zealia Bishop and Adolphe de Castro, no new would-be weird writers were appearing on the horizon. Of course, the revision of weird fiction was a relatively small facet of his revisory work, which centred on more mundane matter—textbooks, poetry, and the like. But the departure of David Van Bush as a regular client, along with Lovecraft's unwillingness or lack of success in advertising his services, made this work very irregular.

It was around this time that Lovecraft prepared a definitive chart of his revisory rates, giving full particulars of the type of activity he would undertake (from mere reading to full-fledged ghostwriting) and the rates he would charge. These rates, although perhaps a little higher than what he was charging earlier, still seem criminally low; and yet, Lovecraft appears to have been lucky to get the clients he did even with these rates. The chart reads as follows:

H. P. Lovecraft—Prose Revision Rates

Reading Only—rough general remarks

1000 words or less 0.50
1000–2000 0.65
2000–4000 1.00
4000–5000 1.25
20¢ for each 1000 wds over 5000

———————————————————————————————

Criticism Only—analytical estimate in detail

without revision

1000 words or less 1.50
1000–2000 2.00
2000–4000 3.00
4000–5000 3.75
60¢ for each 1000 wds over 5000

———————————————————————————————

Revision & Copying (Per page of 330 words)

(a) Copying on typewriter—double space, 1 carbon. No revision except spelling, punctuation, & grammar 0.25

(b) Light revision, no copying (prose improved locally—no new ideas) 0.25

(c) Light revision typed, double-space with 1 carbon 0.50

(d) Extensive revision, no copying (through improvement, including structural change, transposition, addition, or excision—possible introduction of new ideas or plot elements. Requires new text or separate MS.) In rough draught longhand 0.75

(e) Extensive revision as above, typed, double space, 1 carbon 1.00

(f) Rewriting from old MS., synopsis, plot-notes, idea-germ, or mere suggestion—i.e., "ghost-writing". Text in full by reviser—both language & development. Rough draught, longhand 2.25

(g) Rewriting as above, typed, double space, 1 carbon 2.50

Special flat rates quoted for special jobs, depending on estimated consumption of time & energy.[28]

The prospect of a regular position apparently emerged sometime in 1931, but Lovecraft was unable to accept it. Early in the year he speaks of a "reading & revisory post" that was offered to him, but it was in Vermont, which "made it physically out of the question as a year-round matter."[29] I am not sure whether this is the same or similar to the offer that he talked about later in the year, when the Stephen Daye Press of Brattleboro, Vermont (managed by Vrest Orton), gave him the job of revising and proofreading Leon Burr Richardson's *History of Dartmouth College* (1932). Lovecraft mentioned this in September,[30] and stated that he might have to

go to Vermont to work on it; but that does not seem to have occurred. A month later, however, in early October, a telegram summoned him to Hartford, Connecticut, for a "personal conference" of some kind connected with the project. Although Lovecraft received only $50.00 plus expenses for his work on the book, he thought that it "may prove the opening wedge for a good deal of work from the Stephen Daye";[31] but, again, this did not happen. Lovecraft's revision on the Dartmouth College history really amounted to mere copyediting, for I cannot detect much actual Lovecraft prose in the treatise.

Lovecraft also occasionally had problems collecting on the revision work he did. I have already mentioned that Zealia Bishop was quite remiss in paying her bill: she still owed Lovecraft money till the day he died, and long after he had ceased to do any work for her. One amusing incident occurred in the fall of 1930, when one Lee Alexander Stone inexplicably failed to pay $7.50 for an article, "Is Chicago a Crime-Ridden City?," that Lovecraft had revised a year and a half before. Wearying of dunning Stone for the amount, Lovecraft finally wrote it off as a loss, but sent a tart letter to Stone as a parting shot:

> In the matter of your persistently unpaid revision bill—concerning which you so persistently withhold all explanations despite repeated inquiries—I have decided, at the risk of encouraging sharp practices, to forego the use of a collecting agency and make you a present of the amount involved.
>
> This is my first encounter with such a hopelessly bad bill, and I believe I may consider the sum ($7.50) as not ill spent in acquiring practical experience. I needed to be taught caution in accepting unknown clients without ample references—especially clients from a strident region which cultivates ostentatious commercial expansion rather than the honour customary among gentlemen.
>
> Meanwhile I am grateful for so concrete an answer to the popular question, "Is Chicago a Crime-Ridden City?"[32]

Quite a zinger. But Lovecraft later learned from Farnsworth Wright—who had recommended Stone—that Stone was bankrupt and ill. Lovecraft was a little abashed, although he still wrote petulantly, ". . . the fellow *might* have written me instead of ignoring all my polite early reminders!"[33]

Lovecraft did occasionally make other attempts to bring in cash. Wilfred Blanch Talman had left his position at the *New York Times* and begun work for Texaco; part of his responsibilities involved the editorship of several trade papers, including the *Texaco Star*. In late 1930 Lovecraft said to Talman that he could write a whole series of "descriptive travel-treatises" with the series title "On the Trail of the Past."[34] This offer seems to have been made somewhat whimsically, and of course nothing came of it. Talman did, however, urge Lovecraft to try to market his travelogue material, but Lovecraft was sceptical:

> I have my doubts about the commercial availability of such material, since my style—as well as my basic principles of selection in assembling material—would seem to me to be one to which the modern world of trade is antipodally alien & even actively hostile. I have seen some of the publications of coach companies—which are stacked for distribution in waiting rooms —& have so far found their travel material altogether different in tone, atmosphere, & content from mine. Possibly I might artificially turn out something to suit their needs if I studied those needs more exactly . . . Marketing, though, is easier said than done. Various persons have thought my stuff might fit the Christian Science Monitor, which has rather a bias toward travel; but upon examination it appears that Monitor stuff always concerns more exotic & unusual places than I visit.[35]

Lovecraft is probably right in his assessment. For his travelogues to become marketable would have required not merely the elimination of his archaisms of style but a radical recasting and reemphasis, and the suppression of his piquant personal opinions. The travelogues as they stand are so delightful to read precisely because they are the product of a person who is both keenly observant and delightfully idiosyncratic; and, given Lovecraft's temperament, the attempt to water them down to suit a commercial market would have been as difficult and repugnant as the production of hack fiction.

One very curious job Lovecraft had around this time was that of a ticket-seller in a movie theatre. A professor at Brown University, Robert Kenny (1902–1983), maintained that he saw Lovecraft go downtown in the evening (he worked the night shift) and sit in a booth in one of the theatres, reading a book whenever he was not actually dispensing tickets. Harry K.

Brobst confirms the story, stating that Lovecraft admitted to him that he had held such a job, saying that he actually liked it at the start, but that it did not last very long. Brobst does not know when Lovecraft held the position, but he believes it to have been in the early days of the depression, perhaps 1929–30.

Somehow or other, in spite of rejections and the precarious status of his revision work, Lovecraft managed to write another tale in February 1932, "The Dreams in the Witch House." Its working title—"The Dreams of Walter Gilman"—tells the whole story. A mathematics student at Miskatonic University named Walter Gilman who lives in a peculiarly angled room in the old Witch House in Arkham begins experiencing bizarre dreams filled with sights, sounds, and shapes of an utterly indescribable cast; other dreams, much more realistic in nature, reveal a huge rat with human hands named Brown Jenkin, who appears to be the familiar of the witch Keziah Mason, who once dwelt in the Witch House. Meanwhile Gilman, in his classwork, begins to display a remarkable intuitive grasp of hyperspace, or the fourth dimension. But then his dreams take an even weirder turn, and there are indications that he is sleepwalking. Keziah seems to be urging him on in some nameless errand ("He must meet the Black Man, and go with them all to the throne of Azathoth at the centre of ultimate Chaos"). Then in one very clear dream he sees himself "half lying on a high, fantastically balustraded terrace above a boundless jungle of outlandish, incredible peaks, balanced planes, domes, minarets, horizontal discs poisoned on pinnacles, and numberless forms of still greater wildness." The balustrade is decorated with curious designs representing ridged, barrel-shaped entities (i.e., the Old Ones from *At the Mountains of Madness*); but Gilman wakes screaming when he sees the living barrel-shaped entities coming toward him. The next morning the barrel-shaped ornament—which he had broken off the balustrade *in the dream*—is found in his bed.

Things seem rapidly to be reaching some hideous culmination. A baby is kidnapped and cannot be found. Then, in a dream, Gilman finds himself in some strangely angled room with Keziah, Brown Jenkin, and the baby. Keziah is going to sacrifice the child, but Gilman knocks the knife out of her hand and sends it clattering down some nearby abyss. He and Keziah engage in a fight, and he manages to frighten her momentarily by

displaying a crucifix given to him by a fellow tenant; when Brown Jenkin comes to her aid, he kicks the familiar down the abyss, but not before it has made some sort of sacrificial offering with the baby's blood. The next night Gilman's friend Frank Elwood witnesses a nameless horror: he sees some ratlike creature literally eat its way through Gilman's body to his heart. The Witch House is rented no more, and years later, when it is torn down, an enormous pile of human bones going back centuries is discovered, along with the bones of some huge ratlike entity.

One can agree wholeheartedly with Steven J. Mariconda's labelling this story "Lovecraft's Magnificent Failure."[36] In a sense, "The Dreams in the Witch House" is the most cosmic story Lovecraft ever wrote: he has made a genuine, and very provocative, attempt actually to visualise the fourth dimension:

> All the objects—organic and inorganic alike—were totally beyond description or even comprehension. Gilman sometimes compared the inorganic masses to prisms, labyrinths, clusters of cubes and planes, and Cyclopean buildings; and the organic things struck him variously as groups of bubbles, octopi, centipedes, living Hindoo idols, and intricate Arabesques roused into a kind of ophidian animation.

The imaginative scope of the novelette is almost unthinkably vast; but it is utterly confounded by slipshod writing and a complete confusion as to where the story is going. Lovecraft here lapses into hackneyed and overblown purple prose that sounds almost like a parody of his own style: "Everything he saw was unspeakably menacing and horrible; . . . he felt a stark, hideous fright." There are countless unresolved elements in the tale. What is the significance of the sudden appearance of the Old Ones in the story? To what purpose is the baby kidnapped and sacrificed? How can Lovecraft the atheist allow Keziah to be frightened off by the sight of a crucifix? In the final confrontation with Keziah, what is the purpose of the abyss aside from providing a convenient place down which to kick Brown Jenkin? How does Brown Jenkin subsequently emerge from the abyss to eat out Gilman's heart? Lovecraft does not seem to have thought out any of these issues; it is as if he were aiming merely for a succession of startling images without bothering to think through their logical sequence or coherence.

Nevertheless, the "cosmic" portions of "The Dreams in the Witch House" almost redeem the many flaws in the tale. "Dreams" is really the critical term here; for this story brings to a culmination all Lovecraft's previous ruminations on the "occasionally titanic significance of dreams," as he commented in "Beyond the Wall of Sleep." Gilman's are not, indeed, ordinary dreams—"faint and fantastic reflections of our waking experiences"—but avenues toward other realms of entity normally inaccessible to human beings. This point is made perhaps a little too obviously by the appearance of the balustrade-ornament from hyperspace into our world.

"The Dreams in the Witch House" is also Lovecraft's ultimate modernisation of a conventional myth (witchcraft) by means of modern science. Fritz Leiber, who has written the most perspicacious essay on the tale, notes that it is "Lovecraft's most carefully worked out story of hyperspace-travel. Here (1) a rational foundation for such travel is set up; (2) hyperspace is visualized; and (3) a trigger for such travel is devised."[37] Leiber elaborates keenly on these points, noting that the absence of any mechanical device for such travel is vital to the tale, for otherwise it would be impossible to imagine how a "witch" of the seventeenth century could have managed the trick; in effect, Keziah simply applied advanced mathematics and "thought" herself into hyperspace.

Lovecraft's hints that Keziah's hyperspace-travel is a secret type of knowledge that is only now coming to light in the work of advanced astrophysicists (Planck, Heisenberg, Einstein, and Willem de Sitter are mentioned by name) make for one more "updating" of an older Lovecraftian conception. When Gilman boldly maintains that "Time could not exist in certain belts of space" and goes on to justify this view, we are cast back to the early story "The White Ship" (1919), in which the narrator remarks: "In the Land of Sona-Nyl there is neither time nor space, neither suffering nor death; and there I dwelt for many aeons." Granting the difference between a Dunsanian fantasy and a quasi-science fiction tale, the greater intellectual rigour now underlying Lovecraft's fiction is manifest.

Nevertheless, "The Dreams in the Witch House" overall is indeed a failure, and is one of the most disappointing of his later tales. Lovecraft seems to have known that it was perhaps a step backward in his fictional development, and he never ranked it high among his works.

Lovecraft remarked that the story was typed by a revision client as payment for revisory work.[38] I do not know who this is; perhaps it is Zealia Bishop. The typescript is remarkably accurate, and the typist seems to have had a fair ability to read Lovecraft's handwriting. Lovecraft was, however, still in such a state of uncertainty about the merits of his own work that he felt the need to elicit his colleagues' opinion on the story before he submitted it anywhere, and so he sent both the original and the carbon on a series of rounds among his correspondents. Several seemed to like the story, but August Derleth's reaction was very much the contrary. One can gauge the severity of Derleth's criticism by Lovecraft's response: ". . . your reaction to my poor 'Dreams in the Witch House' is, in kind, about what I expected—although I hardly thought the miserable mess was *quite* as bad as you found it. . . . The whole incident shews me that my fictional days are probably over."[39] This is not exactly what Lovecraft needed to hear at this point, even if Derleth was (in this instance) correct in his analysis. Elsewhere he elaborated on Derleth's verdict: ". . . Derleth didn't say it was *unsalable;* in fact, he rather thought it *would* sell. He said it was a *poor story,* which is an entirely different and much more lamentably important thing."[40] In other words, in Derleth's opinion the story was just like most of the junk appearing in *Weird Tales,* on which Lovecraft regularly heaped abuse. It is not surprising that Lovecraft refused to submit the tale to any magazine and merely let it gather dust.

A year or so later Derleth redeemed himself by asking to see the story again and surreptitiously submitting it to Farnsworth Wright, who accepted it readily and paid Lovecraft $140.00 for it. It appeared in the July 1933 issue of *Weird Tales.*

Around this time still more fans, colleagues, and writers were coming into Lovecraft's horizon. One was a very strange individual named William Lumley. Lovecraft writes of him to Derleth in 1931:

> Did I tell you of the amusing freak who has looked me up through W.T.? A chap named William Lumley of Buffalo N.Y., who *believes in magic* & has seriously read all such half-fabulous tomes as Paracelsus, Delrio, &c. &c.—despite an illiteracy which makes him virtually unable to spell. He wanted to know the real facts about the Cthulhu & Yog-Sothoth cults—

> & when I disillusioned him he made me a gift of a splendid illustrated copy of "Vathek"![41]

To Clark Ashton Smith he wrote:

> [Lumley] says he has witnessed monstrous rites in deserted cities, has slept in pre-human ruins and awaked 20 years older, has seen strange elemental spirits in all lands (including Buffalo, N.Y.—where he frequently visits a haunted valley and sees a white, misty Presence), has written and collaborated on powerful dramas, has conversed with incredibly wise and monstrously ancient wizards in remote Asiatic fastnesses . . ., and not long ago had sent him from India for perusal a palaeogean and terrible book in an unknown tongue . . . which he could not open without certain ceremonies of purification, including the donning of a white robe![42]

Lumley (1880–1960) was one of several individuals who had become intrigued with Lovecraft's evolving pseudomythology (in 1929 Lovecraft had heard from a woman in Boston who was descended from the Salem witches[43] and from a "grotesque Maine person"[44] who sought information on diabolism from Lovecraft, promising not to put it to malign use); most of these correspondents drifted away after a few weeks or months, but Lumley persisted. As with several modern occultists, he was convinced of the literal truth of Lovecraft's mythos, and it did not matter that Lovecraft and his colleagues claimed it all to be an invention: "We may *think* we're writing fiction, and may even (absurd thought!) disbelieve what we write, but at bottom we are telling the truth in spite of ourselves—serving unwittingly as mouthpieces of Tsathoggua, Crom, Cthulhu, and other pleasant Outside gentry."[45]

A rather more level-headed person was Harry Kern Brobst (1909–2010), who was born in Wilmington, Delaware, and moved to Allentown, Pennsylvania, in 1921. He had become interested in weird and science fiction as a youth, being especially fond of the work of Poe, Verne, Dunsany, Clark Ashton Smith, and Lovecraft. Writing to Farnsworth Wright of *Weird Tales,* he acquired Lovecraft's address and began a correspondence, probably in the autumn of 1931. Not long thereafter, however, a fortunate circumstance brought him into much closer touch with his new colleague.

After graduating from high school, Brobst decided to enter the field of psychiatric nursing. A friend of his recommended that he apply to the medical program at Butler Hospital in Providence, and he was accepted. Telling Lovecraft of this turn of events, Brobst received a long letter detailing all the antiquarian glories of Providence and making Brobst feel, as it were, at home in the city even before he got there.

Brobst arrived in Providence in February 1932. A few weeks later he came to visit Lovecraft, and his impressions both of the man and his humble residence at 10 Barnes Street are affecting:

> He was a tall man, of sallow complexion, very animated . . ., with dark, sparkling eyes. I don't know if this description makes much sense, but that was the impression he made—a very *vital* person. We were friends immediately. . . .
>
> Now at 10 Barnes Street I believe he was on the ground floor. . . . when you went into the room that he occupied there were no windows—it was completely cut off, and he just lived by artificial light. I remember going in there one time and it was in the colder time of the year . . . The room was stuffy, very dusty (he wouldn't allow anybody to dust it, especially the books); his bedding was quite (I hate to say this) dirty. . . . And he had nothing to eat excepting a piece of cheese.[46]

How will Lovecraft ever live down the ignominy of dirty sheets! He who was so meticulous about his personal tidiness appears to have been less scrupulous about his surroundings. Brobst goes on to say that Lovecraft somewhat theatrically took a book from his shelves and blew off the dust that had accumulated upon it: evidently he felt it quaint for an old fossil like himself to have shelves full of dusty old books.

Brobst would be in very close contact with Lovecraft for the next five years, visiting him several times a week, going with him to museums, having meals with him in restaurants, and welcoming Lovecraft's out-of-town visitors as they came to visit him. Few knew Lovecraft better at this period, on a personal level, than Harry Brobst. He would later gain a B.A. from Brown in psychology and an M.A. and Ph.D. from the University of Pennsylvania. He spent many years teaching at Oklahoma State University, and later resided in Stillwater, Oklahoma.

Carl Ferdinand Strauch (1908–1989) was a friend of Brobst's who first wrote to Lovecraft in the autumn of 1931. Born in Lehighton, Pennsylvania,

Strauch spent most of his life in Allentown, graduating from Muhlenberg College and later receiving a M.A. from Lehigh (1934) and a Ph.D. from Yale (1946). He worked at the Muhlenberg College library from 1930 to 1933, then began a long teaching career at Lehigh, retiring in 1974 as a full professor. Strauch had published a slim book of poetry, *Twenty-nine Poems,* in 1932. He later became a distinguished scholar of American literature, publishing studies of Emerson and serving on the editorial board of the Harvard University Press edition of Emerson's *Collected Works* (1971f.).

Strauch wrote to Lovecraft quite regularly for a period of about two years; but the correspondence broke off abruptly in the summer of 1933. Strauch had sent Lovecraft a story to assess, and during an all-night session Lovecraft, E. Hoffmann Price, and Brobst evidently tore the thing to shreds, although not maliciously. Brobst believes that Strauch was so crushed by this criticism that he became discouraged and ceased writing to Lovecraft.

In the summer of 1932 Lovecraft came in touch with Ernest A. Edkins. Edkins (1867–1946) was a renowned amateur from the "halcyon days" of amateurdom in the 1890s; Lovecraft much admired this early work, some of which was powerfully weird, although later Edkins repudiated it and claimed to have a great disdain for weird fiction. Lovecraft managed to lure him back into amateurdom in the mid-1930s, and Edkins issued several fine issues of the amateur journal *Causerie* in 1936. Incredibly, Lovecraft kept all of Edkins's letters to him, something he rarely did because of his chronic lack of space; and these letters suggest that their correspondence must have been of exceptional interest. But Edkins has written that he somehow lost most or all of Lovecraft's letters.[47]

Richard Ely Morse (1909–1986) was another associate whom Samuel Loveman introduced to Lovecraft. The two met in person in May 1932, when Lovecraft passed through New York on his way south, and after Lovecraft's return a brisk correspondence ensued. Morse, a graduate of Amherst College with family ties to Princeton University, had published a book of poetry, *Winter Garden* (1931), at Amherst, although he did not do much writing thereafter. He worked for a time at the Princeton University Library, then in 1933 was hired by his uncle to do research at the Library of Congress in Washington.

Lovecraft's feelings about Morse were mixed. While admiring Morse's sensitivity to poetry, art, and the weird, he saw some drawbacks in his character: "He is a very lean, hatchet-faced dark chap with horn-rimmed

glasses. Just a trifle dandified—immaculate, & inclined toward walking-sticks. A suspicion of languid affectation in his voice—which the passing years will doubtless dispel. . . . Decidedly pleasant, on the whole."[48] Later he was still harsher: "Didn't see Morse after all—for which I'm rather glad. He has many gifts, and much taste in many fields, but affected, sissified poseurs give me a pain in the neck."[49]

The Minnesota pulp writer Carl Jacobi (1908–1997) came into personal communication with Lovecraft in late February 1932. Lovecraft spoke warmly of his enjoyment of Jacobi's fine tale of undersea horror, "Mive" (*Weird Tales,* January 1932), which might have been influenced by Lovecraft. He read other of Jacobi's works in the weird, science fiction, and "weird menace" pulps with somewhat less enthusiasm. Jacobi does not seem to have become a regular correspondent of Lovecraft's, and only one letter (February 27, 1932) has come to light. August Derleth would publish three collections of Jacobi's weird fiction with Arkham House.

When Harry Brobst arrived in Providence in February 1932, Lovecraft gave him the now customary tour of the city's antiquarian delights. On this occasion Lovecraft and Brobst saw at the Athenaeum an issue of the *American Review* for December 1847 containing an unsigned appearance of Poe's "Ulalume," with the copy signed in pencil by Poe himself.[50] On April 21 Lovecraft went to Boston, where he met with W. Paul Cook and H. Warner Munn.[51] But the real travels for the year began on May 18.

On that day Lovecraft left for New York, intending to stop only briefly before proceeding farther south; but Frank Long persuaded him to stay a week, since his family's apartment would be undergoing renovation in June and it would therefore be awkward for Lovecraft to stay there on his return trip. Lovecraft underwent the usual flurry of social calls on the New York gang—Morton, Leeds, Loveman, Kirk, Kleiner, Talman, and others—but finally managed to pull away on May 25, taking the night bus to Washington and from there a succession of buses to Knoxville, Chattanooga (where he went up Lookout Mountain and also into a cave in the mountain), and Memphis (where he saw the Mississippi River for the first time), then down to Vicksburg (whose quaint streets he appreciated) and finally to Natchez.

In Natchez Lovecraft was stimulated both by the spectacular natural landscape (200-foot bluffs above the Mississippi, invigorating tropical

climate and vegetation) and the antiquities of the town itself. It had been founded by the French in 1716, transferred to Great Britain in 1763, overrun by the Spanish in 1779, and ceded to the United States in 1798. Many stately mansions still remain, and—rather like Charleston and Newport—the very fact that it gave way in commercial importance to another town (Vicksburg) has allowed its antiquities to be preserved in a sort of museum effect. Lovecraft spent only two days there, but averred that "It takes rank with Charleston, Quebec, Salem, Marblehead, & Newburyport as one of my favourite early-American backwaters."[52]

Lovecraft then proceeded still farther south to his ultimate destination—New Orleans. It did not take long for him to feel the charm of this distinctive city: having arrived in late May, he was ready to declare by June 6 that the three towns of Charleston, Quebec, and New Orleans "stand out as the most thoroughly ancient & exotic urban centres of North America."[53] Naturally the French Quarter—the Vieux Carré—with its unique conjoining of French and Spanish architectural styles appealed to him most, although he found even the newer parts with their long shady streets and stately homes appealing. Such things as above-ground cemeteries, inner courtyards of both public and private buildings, the great 1794 cathedral in Jackson Square, and other sites were absorbed; and on June 11 Lovecraft took a ferry across the river to the suburb of Algiers, thus representing the only time in his life that he would set foot on land west of the Mississippi.

An interesting social call occurred toward the end of Lovecraft's New Orleans stay. He had written of his trip to Robert E. Howard, who bitterly regretted his inability to travel there himself and meet his much-admired correspondent; but Howard did the next best thing and telegraphed his friend E. Hoffmann Price, who had a room in the French Quarter, and told him of Lovecraft's presence. Price accordingly met Lovecraft on Sunday, June 12, conducting a call that lasted 25½ hours, till midnight on Monday.

Edgar Hoffmann Price (1898–1988) was certainly an unusual individual. A man of many talents ranging from Arabic to fencing, he wrote some fine stories for *Weird Tales* and other pulps in the early 1920s, including the superb "Stranger from Kurdistan" (*Weird Tales,* July 1925), which I have already noted as being a possible influence on "The Horror at Red Hook." Price was a good friend of Farnsworth Wright and may have been acquainted with him even before he became editor of *Weird Tales.*

Lovecraft makes the odd remark in 1927 that "after due deliberation & grave consultation with E. Hoffman [*sic*] Price, Wright has very properly rejected my 'Strange High House in the Mist,' as not sufficiently clear for the acute minds of his highly intelligent readers,"[54] suggesting that Price was acting as a sort of informal consultant to Wright. In 1931 Lovecraft heard from Robert E. Howard that Price and his fellow-writer W. Kirk Mashburn were planning an anthology that would include "Pickman's Model," but this came to nothing and Lovecraft evidently did not hear from Price directly on the matter.[55] The next year Price and an agent named August Lenniger conceived of another anthology that would include "The Picture in the House," but this too came to nothing.

The depression hurt Price in more than one way: in May 1932 he was laid off from the well-paying job he had held with the Prestolite Company, and he decided to try his hand at making a living by writing. He felt he could do so only by writing exactly what the editors wanted, so he began catering quite coldbloodedly to market requirements in many different realms of pulp fiction—weird, "Oriental," "weird menace," and the like. The result was that throughout the 1930s and '40s Price landed a flood of very slick but literarily valueless material in such magazines as *Weird Tales, Strange Detective Stories, Spicy-Adventure Stories, Argosy, Strange Stories, Terror Tales,* and the like, spelling his aesthetic damnation and relegating the vast majority of his work to the oblivion it deserves.

And yet, Lovecraft was very taken with Price as a person:

> Price is a remarkable chap—a West-Pointer, war veteran, Arabic student, connoisseur of Oriental rugs, amateur fencing-master, mathematician, dilettante coppersmith & iron worker, chess-champion, pianist, & what not! He is dark & trim of figure, not very tall, & with a small black moustache. He talks fluently & incessantly, & might be thought a bore by some—although I like to hear him rattling on.[56]

Price, in turn, has an affecting account of his first meeting with Lovecraft:

> . . . he carried himself with enough of a slouch to make me underestimate his height as well as the breadth of his shoulders. His face was thin and narrow, longish, with long chin and jaw. He walked with a quick stride. His speech was quick and inclined to jerkiness. It was as though his body was hard put to it to keep up with the agility of his mind. . . .

> He was not pompous, and he was not pretentious—quite the contrary. He merely had a knack of using formal and academic diction for the most casual remark. We had not walked a block before I realized that no other way of speech could be truly natural for HPL. Had he used locutions less stilted, and taken to speaking as others did, *that* would have been an affectation. . . .
>
> Twenty-eight hours we gabbled, swapping ideas, kicking fancies back and forth, topping each other's whimsies. He had an enormous enthusiasm for new experience: of sight, of sound, of word pattern, of idea pattern. I have met in all my time only one or two others who approached him in what I call "mental greed." A glutton for words, ideas, thoughts. He elaborated, combined, distilled, and at a machine gun tempo.[57]

As if it were not evident in so many other ways, this first encounter with Price goes far in showing how Lovecraft had matured as a human being over the past fifteen years. In 1917 his meeting with Rheinhart Kleiner—a man with whom he had been corresponding for two years—was stiff and formal to the point of eccentricity. Now, meeting a man with whom he was not previously acquainted at all, he acted with the informality and cordiality of a friend of many years' standing. It is scarcely to be wondered that a lively correspondence sprung up between the two men upon Lovecraft's return—a correspondence that Lovecraft himself valued so much, in spite of his antipodal opposition to many of Price's aesthetic views, that he saved every scrap of it. Aside from Price's, the only letters to Lovecraft we have in any abundance are those from Donald Wandrei, Robert E. Howard, Clark Ashton Smith, C. L. Moore, and Ernest A. Edkins.

One curious myth that has somehow developed from Lovecraft's New Orleans trip is the belief that Price took Lovecraft to a whorehouse where the girls proved to be avid readers of *Weird Tales* and were especially fond of Lovecraft's stories. In fact, this story applies to Seabury Quinn (assuming it is not entirely apocryphal); the story goes that the girls offered Quinn "one on the house" in honour of his illustrious status. Price explicitly and rather dryly remarks is his memoir that, out of deference to Lovecraft's sensibilities, "I skipped concubines entirely."

From New Orleans Lovecraft finally moved on to Mobile, Alabama, then to Montgomery and Atlanta, although the latter city was modern and had no attractions for him. He then proceeded up the Carolinas to

Richmond, which he reached toward the end of June. After canvassing the usual sites relating to Poe and the Confederacy, Lovecraft stopped briefly at Fredericksburg, Annapolis, and Philadelphia, finally ending up back in New York around June 25. This time he stayed in an apartment a few doors away from Loveman in Brooklyn Heights. He expected to linger in the city for more than a week, but a telegram from Annie on July 1 called him suddenly home.

Lillian was critically ill and not expected to survive. Lovecraft caught the first train to Providence, arriving late on the 1st. He found Lillian in a semi-coma; she died on the 3rd without, apparently, regaining consciousness. She was seventy-six years old. The cause of death was given on her death certificate as atrophic arthritis. Lovecraft had spoken over the years of her various ailments—chiefly neuritis and lumbago—the general effect of which was to limit her mobility severely and render her largely housebound. These various maladies now finally caught up with her.

Lovecraft was not given to expressing extreme emotions in his correspondence, and that was his right; but his remarks to friends about Lillian's passing scarcely mask the deep grief he felt:

> The suddenness of the event is both bewildering and merciful —the latter because we cannot yet realise, *subjectively,* that it has actually occurred at all. It would, for example, seem incredibly unnatural to disturb the pillows now arranged for my aunt in the rocker beside my centre-table—her accustomed reading-place each evening.[58]
>
> The vacuum created in this household is easy to imagine, since my aunt was its presiding genius and animating spirit. It will be impossible for me to get concentrated on any project of moment for some time to come—and meanwhile there intervenes the painful task of distributing my aunt's effects . . . whose familiar arrangement, so expressive of her tastes and personality, I dread to disturb.[59]

That last remark is a dim echo of the turbulence Lovecraft felt at his mother's death eleven years before—dim because few would feel as much grief at the loss of an aunt as of a mother, and because in that decade's interval Lovecraft had matured to the point of being able to handle personal loss in a way that did not entail excessive melancholy or wild thoughts of suicide.

What, then, did Lillian mean to Lovecraft? It is unusually difficult to say, not only because of the absence of even a single document from her hand but because Lovecraft almost never spoke about her to correspondents. This does not mean that he cared little for her; rather, since 1926 she had become such an expected fixture at 10 Barnes, such a critical part of the normality of his world, that her absence would have been unthinkable. Any friction that may have been caused by her objections to his marriage (something that still remains only a conjecture) must long ago have passed; indeed, Lovecraft would not have poured his heart out to Lillian in letters during his New York stay if they were in any way estranged. Lillian was not only an important link to his mother, but also to his beloved uncle Franklin Chase Clark, who with Whipple Phillips had filled the role of father that Winfield Lovecraft had not had the opportunity to do.

In the short term, after the funeral—an Anglican service conducted at the Knowles Funeral Chapel on Benefit Street on July 6, with the Rev. Alfred Johnson, an old friend of both the Phillips and Clark families, presiding (he had also presided over Susie's funeral in 1921)—Lovecraft attempted to dispel his grief by travel. The local ferries were conducting fare wars, and Lovecraft found that he could get a round-trip fare to Newport for only 50¢. He took advantage of this bargain on several occasions in late July, writing on the cliffs overlooking the Atlantic. In early August Morton came by from New York, and the two of them went to Newport on the 5th.

In August Lovecraft received two small augmentations to his self-esteem. The July 1932 issue of the *American Author,* a writers' journal, contained an article by J. Randle Luten entitled "What Makes a Story Click?" It cited Lovecraft, Clark Ashton Smith, and Edmond Hamilton (!) as models of narrative prose. In fact, the article is an atrocious piece of work by a writer completely insensitive to any loftier narrative values than "glamor" and suspense. After quoting the first paragraph of "In the Vault," Luten remarks: "There you are, isn't that a good opening? Mr. Lovecraft gives his readers a nice morsel to chew on, and prepares you for a nice horror tale." Although Luten claims to have an admiration for Edgar Allan Poe, he repeatedly misspells his name as well as the title of Smith's story "The Gorgon." The article was clearly based on a reading of the April 1932 *Weird Tales,* which contained both "In the Vault" and "The Gorgon."

A somewhat more significant piece of recognition came from Harold S. Farnese (1885–1945), a composer who had won the 1911 composition prize at the Paris Conservatory and was then assistant director of the Institute of Musical Art at Los Angeles. Farnese wished to set two of Lovecraft's *Fungi from Yuggoth* sonnets, "Mirage" and "The Elder Pharos" (both in *Weird Tales* for February–March 1931) to music. Having done so shortly thereafter, Farnese then proposed that Lovecraft write the libretto of an entire opera or music drama based generally on his work, to be titled (rather outlandishly) *Yurregarth and Yannimaid* or *The Swamp City;*[60] but Lovecraft declined the offer, citing his complete lack of experience in dramatic composition (evidently his 1918 squib *Alfredo* did not qualify). It is difficult to imagine what such a work would have been like. As for the music for the two sonnets: from the single page of "The Elder Pharos" (presumably for alto and piano) that I have been able to examine,[61] the work seems like a typical modernist composition of the period, with wildly fluctuating modulations (the key signature gives one sharp, but the melody rarely resolves into either G major or E minor) and a florid and dissonant piano part. I have never heard either work performed.

One other datum of some moment has emerged from Lovecraft's brief association with Farnese. In several letters Lovecraft explained his theory of weird fiction at length, but Farnese did not seem quite to grasp its essence. After Lovecraft's death, Farnese, asked by August Derleth whether he had any letters from Lovecraft, said that he had two long letters and a postcard; but in relating to Derleth the basic thrust of the correspondence, Farnese wrote:

> Upon congratulating HPL upon his work, he answered: *"You will, of course, realize that all my stories, unconnected as they may be, are based on one fundamental lore or legend: that this world was inhabited at one time by another race, who in practicing black magic, lost their foothold and were expelled, yet live on outside, ever ready to take possession of this earth again"* [emphasis Farnese's]. "The Elders," as he called them. [62]

Incredible as it may seem, Farnese was not quoting any actual letter by Lovecraft but paraphrasing—erroneously—some passages from a letter of September 22, 1932. Consider the following:

> In my own efforts to crystallise this spaceward outreaching, I try to utilise as many as possible of the elements which have, under earlier mental and emotional conditions, given man a symbolic feeling of the unreal, the ethereal, & the mystical . . . I have tried to weave them into a kind of shadowy phantasmagoria which may have the same sort of vague coherence as a cycle of traditional myth or legend—with nebulous backgrounds of elder forces & trans-galactic entities which lurk about this infinitesimal planet, (& of course about others as well), establishing outposts thereon, & occasionally brushing aside other accidental forms of life (like human beings) in order to take up full habitation. . . . Having formed a cosmic pantheon, it remains for the fantaisiste to link this "outside" element to the earth in a suitably dramatic & convincing fashion. This, I have thought, is best done through glancing allusions to immemorially ancient cults & idols & documents attesting the recognition of the "outside" forces by men—or by those terrestrial forces which preceded man. The actual climaxes of tales based on such elements naturally have to do with sudden latter-day intrusions of forgotten elder forces on the placid surface of the known . . .[63]

The result of Farnese's botched remembrance is vaguely similar to Lovecraft's letter to Farnsworth Wright of July 5, 1927 (when he resubmitted "The Call of Cthulhu"), but the real thrust of the spurious passage is very different. Nevertheless, August Derleth seized upon it and circulated it (in slightly altered form) as an utterance by Lovecraft as early as "H. P. Lovecraft, Outsider" (*River,* June 1937), and it became the most notorious piece of "evidence" supporting Derleth's own misconception of the "Cthulhu Mythos" as a battle of good and evil fundamentally similar to Christianity. Until recently, this "quotation" has been the single most frequently cited sentence attributed to Lovecraft.

Farnese and Derleth share the blame pretty equally for circulating this apocryphal utterance. Derleth at first had no reason to doubt that the sentence indeed came from a Lovecraft letter, since Farnese had enclosed it within quotation-marks; but he should have known better, for shortly thereafter Farnese sent Lovecraft's actual letters to Derleth for transcription in the *Selected Letters* project, and they appear to have been transcribed in

their entirety (although not ultimately published in their entirety), and no such quotation appears in these transcripts. But the passage seemed to Derleth so overwhelming a confirmation of his misguided view of Lovecraft—even though it contradicted everything else Lovecraft ever wrote on the subject—that he was unwilling to give it up. Toward the end of his life, when suspicion began to emerge as to the source of the quotation, Derleth became angry when asked to supply its provenance, since he was unable to find it in an actual Lovecraft letter; this led some scholars to believe that Derleth himself had fabricated the quotation—a plausible enough belief until David E. Schultz discovered the letters by Farnese that finally cleared up the whole sorry matter.[64]

Lovecraft's travels for 1932 were by no means over. On August 30 he went to Boston to spend time with Cook. The next day the two of them went to Newburyport to see the total solar eclipse, and were rewarded with a fine sight: "The landscape did not change in tone until the solar crescent was rather small, & then a kind of sunset vividness became apparent. When the crescent waned to extreme thinness, the scene grew strange & spectral —an almost deathlike quality inhering in the sickly yellowish light."[65] From there Lovecraft proceeded to Montreal and Quebec, spending four full days in the two towns (September 2–6). Lovecraft tried to persuade Cook to come along, but Cook did not relish the very ascetic manner in which his friend travelled (sleeping on trains or buses, scant meals, nonstop sightseeing, etc.). Cook did, however, see Lovecraft on his return, and his portrait is as vivid a reflexion of Lovecraft's manic travelling habits as one could ask for:

> Early the following Tuesday morning, before I had gone to work, Howard arrived back from Quebec. I have never before nor since seen such a sight. Folds of skin hanging from a skeleton. Eyes sunk in sockets like burnt holes in a blanket. Those delicate, sensitive artist's hands and fingers nothing but claws. The man was dead except for his nerves, on which he was functioning. . . . I was scared. Because I was scared I was angry. Possibly my anger was largely at myself for letting him go alone on that trip. But whatever its real cause, it was genuine anger that I took out on him. He needed a brake; well, he'd have the brake applied right now.[66]

Cook immediately took Lovecraft to a Waldorf restaurant and made him have a plentiful meal, then took him back to his rooming house so that he could rest. Cook, returning from work at five, forced Lovecraft to have another meal before letting him go. How Lovecraft could actually derive enjoyment from the places he visited, functioning on pure nervous energy and with so little food and rest, it is difficult to imagine; and yet, he did so again and again.

Almost immediately upon his return Lovecraft welcomed visitors to Providence. One of them, arriving on the 8th, was his new friend Carl Ferdinand Strauch. He evidently stayed a few days, and surely his old friend Harry Brobst joined in on the proceedings; but he could not stay long enough to meet Lovecraft's other visitor, Donald Wandrei, who returned to Providence after a five-year absence and arrived around the 13th. All this socialising threw Lovecraft's work schedule all out of whack—correspondence alone must have piled up prodigiously—but Lovecraft still managed to sneak in another trip to Boston, Salem, and Marblehead in early October.

Sometime in the spring or summer of 1932 a promising new revision client emerged—promising not because she showed any talent or inclination to become a writer in her own right but because she gave Lovecraft regular work. She was Hazel Heald (1896–1961), a woman about whom I know almost nothing. She was born and apparently spent most of her life in Somerville, Massachusetts, and so far as I know published nothing aside from the five stories Lovecraft revised or ghostwrote for her. Unlike Zealia Bishop, she wrote no memoir of Lovecraft, so that it is not clear how she came in touch with him and what their professional or personal relations were like. Muriel Eddy (if we can trust her on this point) reports that Heald had joined a writers' club established by the Eddys, and that the latter steered her to Lovecraft when the tenor of her work became evident. Eddy goes on to say that Heald confided to her a vague romantic interest in Lovecraft: she managed to persuade Lovecraft to come to her home in Somerville on one occasion, when she arranged a candlelight dinner with him.[67] I am not at all certain of the veracity of this entire account, given Muriel Eddy's apparent unreliability on other matters; indeed, the only thing in Lovecraft's own correspondence to suggest any sort of romantic involvement with Heald (even—as would surely have been the case—a

one-sided one) is an amusing mention in a letter to Duane W. Rimel in late 1934, in which he comments on the disappearance of Mrs Heald's cat, "who ate some Paris green in the cellar, was seized with a sort of frenzy, and dashed out of the house, never to be seen again."[68] This suggests that their correspondence was not purely on business matters; but neither are his letters to Zealia Bishop, whom nobody suspects of carrying a torch for Lovecraft. Cook reports that Lovecraft was scheduled to meet Heald in Somerville upon his return from Quebec in early September, but this may have been a harmless half-business half-social call. The fact that Lovecraft refers to her as "Mrs Heald" must mean that she was either divorced or widowed.

There is good reason to believe that several, if not all five, of the stories Lovecraft revised for Heald were written in 1932 or 1933, even though the last of them did not appear in print until 1937. The first of them seems to have been "The Man of Stone" (*Wonder Stories,* October 1932). Heald wrote to Derleth about the tale: "Lovecraft helped me on this story as much as on the others, and did actually rewrite paragraphs. He would criticize paragraph after paragraph and pencil remarks beside them, and then make me rewrite them until they pleased him."[69] I think that nearly the entirety of this utterance is false or suspect. Judging from Lovecraft's comments on Heald's stories, it is unlikely that Lovecraft merely touched them up or recommended revisions that Heald herself then carried out; instead, most or all of the stories were based on mere synopses and were written by Lovecraft almost entirely on his own. Of all his revisions, along with those written for Zealia Bishop, they come the closest to original composition. None of them is as good as "The Mound," but several are very fine.

Lovecraft does not mention "The Man of Stone" in any correspondence I have seen, but he must have worked on it by the summer of 1932 at the latest in order for it to have appeared in the October *Wonder Stories*. It is in the end a conventional story about Daniel "Mad Dan" Morris, who finds in his ancestral copy of the *Book of Eibon* a formula to turn any living creature into a stone statue. Morris admits that the formula "depends more on plain chemistry than on the Outer Powers" and that "What it amounts to is a kind of petrification infinitely speeded up"—a pseudo-scientific explanation that evidently was sufficient to pass muster with Hugo Gernsback. Morris successfully turns the trick on Arthur Wheeler, a sculptor who he believes had been making overtures to his wife Rose, but when he attempts it on

Rose herself, she tricks him and turns him into stone. Here again, aside from the implausible nature of the supernatural or pseudo-scientific mechanism, Lovecraft's inability at characterisation betrays him: his depiction of the love triangle is hackneyed and conventional, and Mad Dan's diary is written in an entirely unconvincing colloquialism. Of course, Lovecraft is hampered by the nature of the basic plot he was given to revise: he himself would never have chosen this scenario for a tale of his own.

The flaws in "Winged Death," however, seem largely of Lovecraft's own making. This preposterous story tells of a scientist, Thomas Slauenwite, who has discovered a rare insect in South Africa whose bite is fatal unless treated with a certain drug; the natives call this insect the "devil-fly" because after killing its victim it purportedly takes over the deceased's soul or personality. Slauenwite kills a rival scientist, Henry Moore, with this insect, but is later haunted by an insect that seems uncannily to bear tokens of Moore's personality. The tale ends ridiculously: Slauenwite himself is killed, his soul enters the body of the insect, and he writes a message on the ceiling of his room by dipping his insect body in ink and walking across the ceiling. This grotesque and unintentionally comical conclusion—which Lovecraft admitted was his own invention—is clearly intended to be the acme of horror, but ends up being merely bathetic.

Lovecraft discussed the story in a letter to Derleth that probably dates to August 1932:

> Sorry your new story parallelled [*sic*] an earlier author's work. Something odd befell a client of mine the other day—involving a story-element which *I* had intended & introduced under the impression that it was strictly original with me. The tale was sent to Handsome Harry [Bates], & he rejected it on the ground that the element in question (the act of an insect dipping itself in ink & writing on a white surface with its own body) formed the crux of another tale which he *had* accepted. Hell's bells!—& I thought I'd hit on an idea of absolute novelty & uniqueness![70]

I do not know what immortal masterwork of literature beat Lovecraft to the punch in this insect-writing idea; but the note about the tale's submission to *Strange Tales* is of some interest. Although I have expressed my doubts about Will Murray's theory that "The Shadow over Innsmouth" was written

with *Strange Tales* in mind, I think it quite plausible that the earlier Heald tales were written with that better-paying market in view; for here we have an actual submission made to Bates. There is no evidence that the other tales were submitted there; they could well have been, assuming that they were written prior to the magazine's folding at the end of the year. Lovecraft submitted "Winged Death" to Farnsworth Wright, but the latter must have delayed in accepting the tale, for it was published only in *Weird Tales* for March 1934. When it appeared, Lovecraft wrote: "'Winged Death' is nothing to run a temperature over . . . My share in it is something like 90 to 95%."[71]

I fervently hope that "The Horror in the Museum" is a conscious parody—in this case, a parody of Lovecraft's own myth-cycle. Here we are introduced to a new "god," Rhan-Tegoth, which the curator of a waxworks museum, George Rogers, claims to have found on an expedition to Alaska. Rogers's sceptical friend Stephen Jones looks at a photograph of the entity: "To say that such a thing could have an *expression* seems paradoxical; yet Jones felt that that triangle of bulging fish-eyes and that obliquely poised proboscis all bespoke a blend of hate, greed, and sheer cruelty incomprehensible to mankind because mixed with other emotions not of the world or this solar system." The extravagance of this utterance points clearly to parody. Indeed, "The Horror in the Museum" could be read as a parody of both "Pickman's Model" and "The Call of Cthulhu," Consider the absurdity of the scenario: it is not a mere representation of a god that is secreted in a crate in the cellar of the museum, but *the actual god itself!* The utterances of the raving Rogers as he madly seeks to sacrifice Jones to Rhan-Tegoth are grotesque:

> "Iä! Iä!" it [Rogers] was howling. "I am coming, O Rhan-Tegoth, coming with the nourishment. You have waited long and fed ill, but now you shall have what was promised. . . . You shall crush and drain him, with all his doubts, and grow strong thereby. And ever after among men he shall be shewn as a monument to your glory. Rhan-Tegoth, infinite and invincible, I am your slave and high-priest. You are hungry, and I provide. I read the sign and have led you forth. I shall feed you with blood, and you shall feed me with power. Iä! Shub-Niggurath! The Goat with a Thousand Young!"

Later Rogers spouts such oaths as "Spawn of Noth-Yidik and effluvium of K'thun! Son of the dogs that howl in the maelstrom of Azathoth!" Long before his talentless disciples and followers unwittingly reduced the "Cthulhu Mythos" to absurdity, Lovecraft himself consciously did so.

The story is mentioned in a letter of October 1932: "My latest revisory job comes so near to pure fictional ghost-writing that I am up against all the plot-devising problems of my bygone auctorial days";[72] he goes on to recite the plot of the story in a lurid manner that I hope indicates his awareness of its parodic nature. Elsewhere he said: "'The Horror in the Museum'—a piece which I 'ghost-wrote' for a client from a synopsis so poor that I well-nigh discarded it—is virtually my own work."[73] This story seems to have been readily accepted by Wright, for it appeared in *Weird Tales* for July 1933, in the same issue as "The Dreams in the Witch House." Lovecraft must have been wryly amused when a letter by Bernard J. Kenton (the pseudonym of Jerry Siegel, later the co-creator of *Superman*) appeared in "The Eyrie" for May 1934 in praise of the work: "Even Lovecraft—as powerful and artistic as he is with macabre suggestiveness—could hardly, I suspect, have surpassed the grotesque scene in which the other-dimensional shambler leaps out upon the hero."

"Out of the Aeons"—which Lovecraft was working on in early August 1933[74]—is perhaps the only genuinely successful Heald revision, although it too contains elements of extravagance that border on self-parody. This tale concerns an ancient mummy housed in the Cabot Museum of Archaeology in Boston and an accompanying scroll in indecipherable characters. The mummy and scroll remind the narrator—the curator of the museum—of a wild tale found in the *Black Book* or *Nameless Cults* of von Junzt, which tells of the god Ghatanothoa, "whom no living thing could behold . . . without suffering a change more horrible than death itself. Sight of the god, or its image . . . meant paralysis and petrification of a singularly shocking sort, in which the victim was turned to stone and leather on the outside, while the brain within remained perpetually alive . . ." This idea is, of course, suspiciously like the drug utilised in "The Man of Stone." Von Junzt goes on to speak of an individual named T'yog who, 175,000 years ago, attempted to scale Mount Yaddith-Gho on the lost continent of Mu, where Ghatanothoa resided, and to "deliver mankind from its brooding menace"; he was protected from Ghatanothoa's glance by a magic formula, but at the last minute the priests of Ghatanothoa stole the parchment on

which the formula was written and substituted another one for it. The antediluvian mummy in the museum, therefore, is T'yog, petrified for millennia by Ghatanothoa.

It is manifestly obvious that Heald's sole contribution to this tale is the core notion of a mummy with a living brain; all the rest—Ghatanothoa, T'yog, the setting on Mu, and, of course, all the prose of the tale—are Lovecraft's. He admits as much when he says: "Regarding the scheduled 'Out of the *Æ*ons'—I should say *I did* have a hand in it . . . I *wrote* the damn thing!"[75] The tale is substantial, but it too is written with a certain flamboyance and lack of polish that bar it from taking its place with Lovecraft's own best tales. It is, however, of interest in uniting the atmosphere of his early "Dunsanian" tales with that of his later "Mythos" tales: T'yog's ascent of Yaddith-Gho bears thematic and stylistic similarities with Barzai the Wise's scaling of Ngranek in "The Other Gods," and the entire subnarrative about Mu is narrated in a style analogous to that of Dunsany's tales and plays of gods and men. The story appeared in *Weird Tales* for April 1935.

"The Horror in the Burying-Ground," on the other hand, returns us to earth very emphatically. Here we are in some unspecified rustic locale where the village undertaker, Henry Thorndike, has devised a peculiar chemical compound that, when injected into a living person, will simulate death even though the person is alive and conscious. Thorndike attempts to dispose of an enemy in this fashion, but in so doing is himself injected with the substance. The inevitable occurs: although the undertaker pleads not to be entombed, he is pronounced dead and buried alive.

Much of the story is narrated in a backwoods patois reminiscent—and perhaps a parody—of that used in "The Dunwich Horror." Other in-jokes—such as the use of the character names Akeley (from "The Whisperer in Darkness"), Zenas (from "The Colour out of Space"), Atwood (from *At the Mountains of Madness*), and Goodenough (referring to Lovecraft's amateur colleague Arthur Goodenough)—suggest that the story is meant, if not as an actual parody, at least as an instance of graveyard humour; and as such it is relatively successful. Lovecraft never mentions this revision in any correspondence I have seen, so I do not know when it was written; it did not appear in *Weird Tales* until May 1937.

It is clear from the synopses of these stories that several of them feature the same fundamental plot element: the idea of a living brain encased in a

dead or immobilised body. This encompasses "Out of the Aeons" and "The Horror in the Burying-Ground"; in "The Horror in the Museum" the effect of Rhan-Tegoth's depradations is to leave the victim looking like a wax statue, a fate somewhat similar to that of "The Man of Stone"; while "Winged Death" presents a human brain or personality in an alien form. One wonders how much beyond this nucleus was provided by Heald, if indeed she even supplied this much.

Lovecraft no doubt was paid regularly by Heald, even though it took years for her stories to be published; at least, he makes no complaints about dilatory payments as he did for Zealia Bishop. Although Lovecraft was still speaking of her in the present tense as a revision client as late as the summer of 1935, it does not seem as if he did much work for her after the summer of 1933.

Another revision or collaboration in which Lovecraft became unwillingly involved in the fall of 1932 was "Through the Gates of the Silver Key." E. Hoffmann Price had become so enamoured of "The Silver Key" that, during Lovecraft's visit with him in New Orleans in June, he "suggested a sequel to account for Randolph Carter's doings after his disappearance."[76] There is no recorded response on Lovecraft's part to this suggestion, although it cannot have been very enthusiastic. On his own initiative, therefore, Price wrote his own sequel, "The Lord of Illusion." Sending it to Lovecraft in late August, he expressed the hope that Lovecraft might agree to revise it and allow it to be published as an acknowledged collaboration. Lovecraft took his time replying to Price's letter, but when he did so he stated that extensive changes would be needed to bring the sequel in line with the original story. In a charitable response of October 10, Price agreed with nearly all Lovecraft's suggestions. He went on to hope that Lovecraft could perform the revision in a few days—after all, he had written his own version in only two days.[77] Instead, Lovecraft did not finish the job until April 1933.

"The Lord of Illusion"[78] is an appallingly awful piece of work. It tells the ridiculous story of how Randolph Carter, after finding the silver key, enters a strange cavern in the hills behind his family home in Massachusetts and encounters a strange man who announces himself as "'Umr at-Tawil, your guide," who leads Carter to some other-dimensional realm where he meets the Ancient Ones. These entities explain the nature of the universe to

Carter: just as a circle is produced from the intersection of a cone with a plane, so our three-dimensional world is produced from the intersection of a plane with a figure of a higher dimension; analogously, time is an illusion, being merely the result of this sort of "cutting" of infinity. It transpires that all Carters who have ever lived are part of a single archetype, so that if Carter could manipulate his "section-plane" (the plane that determines his situation in time), he could be any Carter he wished to be, from antiquity to the distant future. In a purported surprise ending, Carter reveals himself as an old man amongst a group of individuals who had assembled to divide up Carter's estate.

It would be difficult to imagine a story more lame than this, and yet Lovecraft felt some sort of obligation to try to make something of it. In the letter in which he evaluates Price's work, he specified several faults that must be rectified: 1) the style must be made more similar to that of "The Silver Key" (Price's version, although by no means full of his usual frenetic action and swordplay, is lamentably flat, stilted, and pompous); 2) various points of the plot must be reconciled with that of "The Silver Key"; 3) the transition from the mundane world to the hyperspace realm (if that is what it is) must be vastly subtilised; and 4) the atmosphere of lecture-room didacticism in the Ancient Ones' discussions with Carter must be eliminated. Lovecraft rightly concluded: "Hell, but it'll be a tough nut to crack!"[79] The rush of other work prevented him from working on it for months; by March 1933 he managed to grind out 7½ pages,[80] but more revision work delayed him until he finally finished the job in early April.[81]

The result cannot by any means be considered satisfactory. Whereas "The Silver Key" is a poignant reflection of some of Lovecraft's innermost sentiments and beliefs, "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" is nothing more than a fantastic adventure story with awkward and laboured mathematical and philosophical interludes. Lovecraft has made extensive revisions to the plot, although preserving as much of Price's ideas as he could. The story opens in New Orleans, where several individuals—Etienne Laurent de Marigny (a stand-in for Price himself), Ward Phillips (whose identity is no mystery), the lawyer Ernest B. Aspinwall, and a strange individual named the Swami Chandraputra—are gathered to discuss the disposition of Carter's estate. The Swami opposes any such action, since he maintains that Carter is still alive. He proceeds to tell a fabulous story of

what happened to Carter after his return to boyhood (as noted in "The Silver Key"):

Carter passed through a succession of "Gates" into some realm "outside time and the dimensions we know," led by a "Guide," 'Umr at-Tawil, the Prolonged of Life. This guide eventually led Carter to the thrones of the Ancient Ones, from whom he learned that there are "archetypes" for every entity in the universe, and that each person's entire ancestry is nothing more than a facet of the single archetype; Carter learned that he himself is a facet of the "SUPREME ARCHETYPE," whatever that means. Then, in some mysterious fashion, Carter found himself in the body of a fantastically alien being, Zkauba the Wizard, on the planet Yaddith. He managed to return to earth, but must go about in concealment because of his alien form.

When the hard-nosed lawyer Aspinwall scoffs at this story by Swami Chandraputra, a final revelation—which can scarcely be a surprise to any reader—is made: the Swami is himself Randolph Carter, still in the monstrous shape of Zkauba. Aspinwall, having pulled off the mask Carter is wearing, dies immediately of apoplexy. Carter then disappears through a large clock in the room.

Price has remarked that "I estimated that [Lovecraft] had left unchanged fewer than fifty of my original words,"[82] a comment that has led many to believe that the finished version of "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" is radically different from Price's original; but, as we have seen, Lovecraft adhered to the basic framework of Price's tale as best he could. The quotations from the *Necronomicon* are largely Price's, although somewhat amended by Lovecraft; and a striking passage later on—"[Carter] wondered at the vast conceit of those who had babbled of the *malignant* Ancient Ones, as if They could pause from their everlasting dreams to wreak a wrath upon mankind"—is so strikingly similar to Lovecraft's own evolving conceptions of his pseudomythology that it is no wonder he left it in nearly intact.

Lovecraft sent his handwritten scrawl to Price for typing, adding typically—although in this case justifiably—deprecatory remarks ("I'm a rotten hand at collaboration—but at least I've done my poor best"[83]). Price, however, was enthusiastic, although expressing quibbles here and there; in particular, he did not care for Lovecraft's use of some terms from the theosophic mythology Price himself had earlier supplied him (Shalmali, Shamballah, Lords of Venus, and the like), and either changed some of

these references himself or asked Lovecraft to do so. Another typescript must have been prepared, since the existing one contains numerous errors and several handwritten marginal notations by both Price and Lovecraft.

Price submitted the story to *Weird Tales* on June 19, both praising the story and minimising his own role in it: "It is so much a Lovecraft story, and so little mine that it seems of all things the most natural to sit here and tell you . . . this is one of the most self consistent, carefully worked out pictures of the cosmos and hyperspace that I have ever read."[84] Farnsworth Wright's response, in a letter to Lovecraft on August 17, is perhaps what one might have expected:

> I have carefully read THROUGH THE GATES OF THE SILVER KEY and am almost overwhelmed by the colossal scope of the story. It is cyclopean in its daring and titanic in its execution. . . .
>
> But I am afraid to offer it to our readers. Many there would be . . . who would go into raptures of esthetic delight while reading the story; just as certainly there would be a great many —probably a clear majority—of our readers who would be unable to wade through it. These would find the descriptions and discussions of polydimensional space poison to their enjoyment of the tale. . . .
>
> . . . I assure you that never have I turned down a story with more regret than in this case.[85]

That last comment is not likely to have appeased Lovecraft much, even though he had not placed much emotional stock in the selling of the story. Both Price and Lovecraft let the text sit, apparently disinclined to submit it elsewhere. It is a little peculiar that no thought was given to trying the tale on the science fiction pulps; perhaps it was felt that since "The Silver Key" had appeared in *Weird Tales,* no other market would have been appropriate or feasible. But, true to his contrary ways, by mid-November 1933 Wright was asking to see the story again,[86] and he accepted it a week later. It appeared in the issue for July 1934, where it did indeed receive a somewhat mixed reader response, although not quite of the sort that Wright had feared. An amusing letter by a very young Henry Kuttner in the September 1934 issue criticises the tale for being overexplanatory and for a contrived ending: "Lovecraft at one time could supply a good ending, but now he is getting trite as hell. It is a bad example of a forced surprize [*sic*] ending that

he has on that story." Lovecraft evidently did not remember or had forgiven Kuttner for this remark when he came in touch with the youth two years later.

Slowly but inexorably Lovecraft was being drawn back into amateur activity, although this time in the National Amateur Press Association, since his United was defunct. Sometime in late 1931 he was persuaded to take a place on the Bureau of Critics, the NAPA's version of the Department of Public Criticism. On April 18 he produced an untitled essay-review for the *National Amateur,* but it proved to be so lengthy that it could not be fit into the issue, so Helm C. Spink, the Official Editor, arranged for the Official Printer, George G. Fetter of Lexington, Kentucky, to publish it as a separate pamphlet later in the year under the title *Further Criticism of Poetry.* It is one of Lovecraft's rarest publications. A typescript of the piece prepared by R. H. Barlow bears a title, "Notes on Verse Technique"; I am not entirely sure that this title is Lovecraft's, but I think it likely.

"Notes on Verse Technique" is a sensible disquisition on what constitutes "real poetry, as distinguished from mere rhyming prose," embodying Lovecraft's later views on the subject. Interestingly, he does not condemn free verse uniformly, remarking only that "the indiscriminate use of this medium is not to be highly recommended to the novice" because it is difficult for the novice to develop a natural sense of rhythm outside of the recognised metres. He quotes two poems—which B . K. Hart had published in his "Sideshow" column some years before—one of which is in standard quatrains, the other in free verse; and Lovecraft declares rightly that the latter is much more vital and genuinely poetic because of its distinctive, unhackneyed diction. This long theoretical discussion is only a somewhat topheavy preface to the actual evaluation of amateur verse that concludes the essay.

Lovecraft would in subsequent years be repeatedly drawn into serving on the Bureau of Critics, in spite of his pleas that he be called upon only if no other "victims" could be found (they never could). He usually handled poetry and usually managed to talk Edward H. Cole into contributing a criticism of prose contributions. Early in 1932 he also wrote a brief foreword to a slim book of poetry, *Thoughts and Pictures,* by the Rev. Eugene B. Kuntz, an old-time amateur whom Lovecraft always regarded fondly. The pamphlet was typically misprinted by "Tryout" Smith; the title

page in fact declares that it was "Cooperatively published by H. P. Loveracft and C. W. Smith."

Another book project that would presumably have emerged out of the amateur community was a plan by Earl C. Kelley to issue the complete *Fungi from Yuggoth*—the first of several instances in Lovecraft's lifetime in which this sonnet series was to have been published, all of which would come to nothing. Kelley was editor of an amateur journal entitled *Ripples from Lake Champlain,* to which Lovecraft had earmarked a few of the *Fungi* sonnets; only one of them, "The Pigeon-Flyers," actually appeared there, in the Spring 1932 issue. In late February 1932 Kelley made his request to Lovecraft to print the cycle.[87] But his project never came to fruition. Kelley had been elected president of the NAPA in 1931 and presided over the 1932 convention in Montpelier, Vermont, in July, then proceeded to blow his brains out with a revolver.[88] He was twenty-seven years old.

Late in 1932 Lovecraft was pained by the death on November 23 of Henry S. Whitehead, who finally succumbed to the gastric ailment that had enfeebled him for years. Lovecraft's tribute to him is unaffected as he recalls his visit of the year before:

> It is doubtful if any other host ever reached quite his level of cordiality, thoughtfulness, & generosity over a period exceeding a fortnight. I really had, for his sake, to be careful what books or other possessions of his I openly admired; for like some open-handed Eastern prince he would insist on presenting me with whatever seemed to arouse my enthusiasm. He compelled me to consider his wardrobe my own (for his physique was almost identical with mine), & there still hangs in my clothespress one of the white tropical suits he lent me—& finally insisted that I retain permanently as a souvenir. As I glance at my curio shelf I see a long mottled snake in a jar, & reflect how good old Canevin caught & killed it with his own hands—thinking I might like a sample of Dunedin's lurking horrors. He was not afraid of the devil himself, & the seizure of that noxious wriggler was highly typical of him. The astonishing versatility & multiplicity of attractive qualities which he possessed sound almost fabulous to one who did not know him in person.[89]

In assessing Whitehead's fiction, Lovecraft made note of a series of three tales set in a New England town called Chadbourne—which Whitehead evidently conceived as a parallel to Lovecraft's own Arkham. One of these ("The Chadbourne Episode") had been accepted by *Weird Tales* and would appear in the issue for February 1933; the other two—which Lovecraft does not name—have not been identified and may not survive. One was accepted by Harry Bates for *Astounding* but returned when that magazine folded; the other had apparently not been submitted anywhere.

I have already mentioned Lovecraft's revision of Whitehead's "The Trap." There are two other stories on which he gave some assistance, although my belief is that he contributed no actual prose to either of them. One is "Cassius," which is clearly based upon entry 133 of Lovecraft's commonplace book: "Man has miniature shapeless Siamese twin—exhib. in circus—twin surgically detached—disappears—does hideous things with malign life of its own." Whitehead has followed the details of this entry exactly in his tale, with the exception of the circus element; instead, he transfers it to his customary West Indian locale, where a black servant of Gerald Canevin's named Brutus Hellman removes the diminutive twin that was attached to its groin, thereby releasing its malevolent instincts and causing it to attack Hellman repeatedly until it is finally killed.

"Cassius" (*Strange Tales,* November 1931) is an able and suspenseful story, although its middle section gets bogged down with a laborious pseudo-scientific discussion of the case, and it ends with unintentional comedy when Canevin—reluctant to kill the homunculus because it had been baptised and was therefore a Christian—tries to capture the creature with a net but is anticipated by its cat, which dispatches it with brutal efficiency. Whitehead, when first learning of the plot, wished Lovecraft to collaborate with him, but Lovecraft declined and made a present of the idea.

Lovecraft, however, later admitted that his own development of the idea would have been very different from Whitehead's:

> Th[e] idea was to have the connexion of the man and his miniature twin *much more complex and obscure* than any doctor had suspected. The operation of separation is performed—but lo! An unforeseen horror and tragedy results. For it seems *that the brain of the twin-burdened man lay in the minature twin alone* . . . so that the operation has produced *a hideous monster only a foot tall, with the keen brain of a man, and a handsome*

> *man-like shell with the undeveloped brain of a total idiot.* From this situation I planned to develop an appropriate plot, although —from the magnitude of the task—I had not progressed very far.[90]

What a shame that Lovecraft never wrote this story out! He went on to state that the plot was derived from witnessing a freak show at Hubert's Museum in New York in 1925, when he saw a man named Jean Libbera (Lovecraft misspells it Libera) had an anomalous little anthropoid excrescence growing out of his abdomen. It later transpired that Libbera (a friend of Arthur Leeds) was a fan of weird fiction and liked Lovecraft's own work in *Weird Tales!*

The other story on which Lovecraft had been assisting Whitehead was called "The Bruise," but he was uncertain whether it had ever been completed. This matter first comes up in April 1932, when Lovecraft noted that "I'm now helping Whitehead prepare a new ending and background for a story Bates had rejected." The story involves a man who suffers a bruise to the head and—in Lovecraft's version—"excite[s] cells of hereditary memory causing the man to hear the destruction and sinking of fabulous Mu 20,000 years ago!"[91] Some have believed that Lovecraft may have actually written or revised this story, but from internal evidence it seems to me that none of the writing is Lovecraft's.

There is, in fact, a distinct possibility that none of the writing is Whitehead's, either. The story was published (as "Bothon") in *Amazing Stories* for August 1946 and, nearly simultaneously, in Whitehead's second Arkham House volume, *West India Lights* (1946). The anomalously late publication of the story—clearly arranged by August Derleth—is to be noted. A. Langley Searles believes that Derleth himself may have written the story, having found Lovecraft's synopsis for it among Whitehead's papers. Searles claims that the story sounds radically different from anything else Whitehead ever wrote; and it must be kept in mind that Derleth was not above passing off his own work as that of others, as when he published a story of his entitled "The Churchyard Yew" in *Night's Yawning Peal* (1952) and attributed it to J. Sheridan Le Fanu. No external evidence for this theory has emerged, but it is worth keeping in mind.

Lovecraft wrote a two-page obituary of Whitehead and sent it to Farnsworth Wright, urging that it be used as a quarry for an announcement in *Weird Tales.* Wright ran the piece as a separate unsigned article—"In

Memoriam: Henry St. Clair Whitehead"—in the March 1933 issue, but used only about a quarter of what Lovecraft had sent him,[92] and since Lovecraft kept no copy of his original, the full text has now been lost. Very likely, however, it was similar to the long tribute to Whitehead found in Lovecraft's letter to E. Hoffmann Price of December 7, 1932.

One strange piece of writing Lovecraft did at this time was "European Glimpses," dated on the manuscript to December 19. This is a very conventionalised travelogue of the principal tourist sites in western Europe (chiefly in Germany, France, and England), and is nothing less than a ghostwriting job for his ex-wife Sonia, although Lovecraft—on the few occasions when he spoke of the assignment to correspondents—went out of his way to conceal the fact. Consider a remark made to Alfred Galpin in late 1933:

> For the past year I have had such a knowledge of Paris that I've felt tempted to advertise my services as a guide without ever having seen the damn place—this erudition coming from a ghost-writing job for a goof who wanted to be publicly eloquent about a trip from which he was apparently unable to extract any concrete first-hand impressions. I based my study on maps, guide-books, travel folders, descriptive volumes, & (above all) pictures . . .[93]

Lovecraft goes on in this letter to cite exactly the places—Paris, Chartres, Rheims, Versailles, Barbizon, Fontainebleau, and various locales in London—described in "European Glimpses." Consider now Sonia's remark in her memoir: ". . . In 1932 I went to Europe. I was almost tempted to invite him along but I knew that since I was no longer his wife he would not have accepted. However, I wrote to him from England, Germany and France, sending him books and pictures of every conceivable scene that I thought might interest him. . . . I sent a travelogue to H. P. which he revised for me."[94] Sonia also mentions in detail the sites described in the travelogue. Why then did Lovecraft carry out this deception? Perhaps he felt embarrassed to admit that he was still in touch with Sonia and was doing work for her—for which, I imagine, he did not charge her. Galpin was one of his oldest friends, and he had also known Sonia for more than a decade. Lovecraft does not, to my knowledge, even mention "European Glimpses" to any other correspondent except Galpin—who was a longtime resident of Paris, so that the passing citation would have been natural. Just as Lovecraft

almost never mentioned the fact of his marriage to younger correspondents, so he here failed to acknowledge his continued association with his ex-wife.

"European Glimpses" itself is by far the least interesting of Lovecraft's travelogues—if, indeed, it can even be called such—because of its hackneyed descriptions of hackneyed tourist sites that no bourgeois traveller ever fails to visit. Perhaps its only interesting feature is its record of Sonia's glimpse of Hitler in the flesh in Wiesbaden:

> During my stay of five days in Wiesbaden I had opportunities to observe the disturbed political state of Germany, and the constant squabbles between various dismally uniformed factions of would-be patriots. Of all the self-appointed leaders, Hitler alone seems to retain a cohesive and enthusiastic following; his sheer magnetism and force of will serving—in spite of its deficiencies in true social insight—to charm, drug, or hypnotise the hordes of youthful "Nazis" who blindly revere and obey him. Without possessing any clear-cut or well-founded programme for Germany's economic reconstruction, he plays theatrically on the younger generation's military emotions and sense of national pride; urging them to overthrow the restrictive provisions of the Versailles treaty and reassert the strength and supremacy of the German people. . . .
>
> Hitler's lack of clear, concrete objectives seems to lose him nothing with the crowd; and when—during my stay—he was scheduled to speak of Wiesbaden, the Kurpark was crowded fully two hours before the event by a throng whose quiet seriousness was almost funereal. The contrast with America's jocose and apathetic election crowds was striking. When the leader finally appeared—his right hand lifted in an approved Fascist salute—the crowd shouted *"Heil!"* three times, and then subsided into an attentive silence devoid alike of applause, heckling, or hissing. The general spirit of the address was that of Cato's *"Delenda est Carthago"*—though one could not feel quite sure what particular Carthage, material or psychological, "Handsome Adolf" was trying to single out for anathema.

Some of this clearly represents Sonia's own impressions, and some of it is Lovecraft's overlay of opinion—for it was he who, as we shall see, passed

so cavalierly over Hitler's "deficiencies in true social insight" in his grudging approval of him.

At the very end of 1932 Lovecraft instituted what would become another travelling ritual, as he spent the week or so after Christmas in New York with the Longs. Naturally, he spent Christmas with Annie in Providence, but the very next day he caught a bus for New York and arrived at 230 West 97th Street for a visit of seven or eight days. Loveman and Kirk were dumbfounded to see Lovecraft in the city, but Morton proved to be away from his museum for more than a week, so that no meeting could be arranged. On the 27th Lovecraft and Long saw the "modernistic junk"[95] at the Whitney Museum of American Art, then returned for a colossal turkey dinner prepared by Mrs Long. Lovecraft then went alone to look up Loveman in his new apartment at 17 Middagh Street in Brooklyn; he played with Loveman's radio (evidently the latter had replaced the one stolen from Lovecraft's Brooklyn flat in 1925), and was delighted to find a station in Mexico City speaking in suave Spanish.

On Friday, December 30, a gang meeting was held at the Longs', although only Wandrei, Leeds, Loveman, and Loveman's friend Patrick McGrath showed up. The next day Lovecraft apparently met Loveman and Richard Ely Morse, and on January 2 he and Long saw "Whistler's Mother"—a "splendid piece of quietly effective art"[96]—at the Museum of Modern Art. He returned home the next day.

Early in 1933 Lovecraft performed some revision work of a somewhat more congenial variety than usual. Robert H. Barlow had begun to write fiction and, although scarcely fifteen years old at the time, was showing considerable promise. In February Lovecraft evaluated three items sent by Barlow, one of which was "The Slaying of the Monster" (the title, as is plain from the manuscript, was supplied by Lovecraft):

> I read your stories with a great deal of interest, & really think that they display a gratifying degree of merit & promise. You have a good idea of what a dramatic situation is, & seem to be distinctly sensitive to the nuances of style. Of course, there are at present many marks of the beginner's work—but these are only to be expected. Emphatically, I think you are headed in the right direction. . . . In "The Slaying of the Monster" I have taken the liberty of changing many words in order to carry out fully

> the Dunsanian prose-poetic effect which you are obviously seeking. . . . In changing parts of your text I have sought to give it some of the smoothness or rhythm which this kind of writing demands.[97]

Lovecraft urged Barlow to send the revised tales to some NAPA journal, but this was apparently not done. Barlow's first tale, however, appeared in the amateur press about this time: "Eyes of the God" was published in the *Sea Gull* for May 1933 and won the NAPA story laureateship for that year.

By March 1933 Barlow was showing Lovecraft some of his early "Annals of the Jinns" sketches, although Lovecraft does not seem to have revised them very much. A market for them did not open up until the *Fantasy Fan* was founded that fall. The "Annals" appeared fitfully throughout the entirety of that fan magazine's eighteen-month tenure: nine numbered episodes appeared in the issues for October 1933, November 1933, December 1933, January 1934, February 1934, May 1934, June 1934, August 1934, and February 1935. A tenth episode has been discovered in an issue of the *Phantagraph,* and there could conceivably have been others.

One of the "Annals"—the fourth, "The Sacred Bird"—is of importance in providing the background for "The Hoard of the Wizard-Beast," a story on which Lovecraft lent considerable assistance. This tale seems to be a loose sequel to "The Sacred Bird," for it picks up on that story's mention of a Sacred Bird and is also set in the land of Ullathia (spelled "Ulathia" in "The Sacred Bird"). It seems, therefore, very likely that "The Hoard of the Wizard-Beast" was meant as one of the "Annals of the Jinns," which for some reason Barlow did not send to the *Fantasy Fan.* That he sent it to some publisher (probably a fan magazine) is clear from the note he has written at the top of the manuscript ("only copy except at pub[lisher]"); but, if it was published, the appearance has not come to light.

Barlow has dated the manuscript to September 1933, but Lovecraft first saw it in a letter dating to December. He discusses the story at length:

> Your new tale is highly colourful & interesting, & I have taken the liberty to make a few changes in wording, rhythm, & transitional modulation, which may perhaps bring it a bit closer to the Dunsanian ideal evidently animating it. . . . If there is any defect, it is possibly a certain lack of compactness & unity—that is, the tale is not a closely-knit account of a *single episode,* but is rather a loosely-constructed record with which early space

> given to a description of the *occasion* for Yalden's journey, while the latter parts involve the *journey itself* in a way essentially dissociated from the *occasion.* An ideal short story would concentrate on a *single thing* like the *journey itself,* disposing of the *journey's reason* in as brief an explanatory paragraph as possible. The kind of vehicle for composite & diffuse narratives of this sort is the novel or picaresque romance. Still—it is to be admitted that Dunsany often creates similarly non-unified sketches of short story length, hence this specimen must not be criticised too severely. I'm letting it alone so far as this point goes. . . . As for your new tale—my changes largely concern certain niceties of language, & certain handlings of emotional stress at important turns of the action. A study of the altered text itself will be more instructive than any comment I can make here. What you need is simply more practice—which the years will readily supply.[98]

It is perhaps worth pausing to ponder the literary influences on both "The Slaying of the Monster" and "The Hoard of the Wizard-Beast." Lovecraft assumed that Dunsany is Barlow's model, and indeed he had lent Barlow several of his Dunsany volumes some years earlier; and while the ironically elementary moralism of the two stories does indeed bring Dunsany's *The Book of Wonder* (1912) and other early fantastic tales to mind, perhaps an equally strong influence is the fiction of Clark Ashton Smith, whom Barlow revered. Whatever the case, in his own fiction Barlow remained more drawn to the realm of pure fantasy than to the realistic supernaturalism of Lovecraft's later work.

The story as it stands is probably about 60% Lovecraft, although the end result is still a pretty mediocre piece of work, with a predictable and contrived comeuppance befalling a man who attempts to steal the vast treasure of the "wizard-beast." The revised version of the very short "Slaying of the Monster" is about 30% Lovecraft; it too amounts to little. Barlow's "Annals of the Jinns" do not bear many revisory touches by Lovecraft, and in many cases Lovecraft does not appear to have seen these items until after they were published. It would, however, not be long before Lovecraft was aiding Barlow on more significant items—and, indeed, it would not be long before Barlow himself was writing highly meritorious

fiction of his own that could have given him a place in the field had he chosen to pursue this facet of his career.

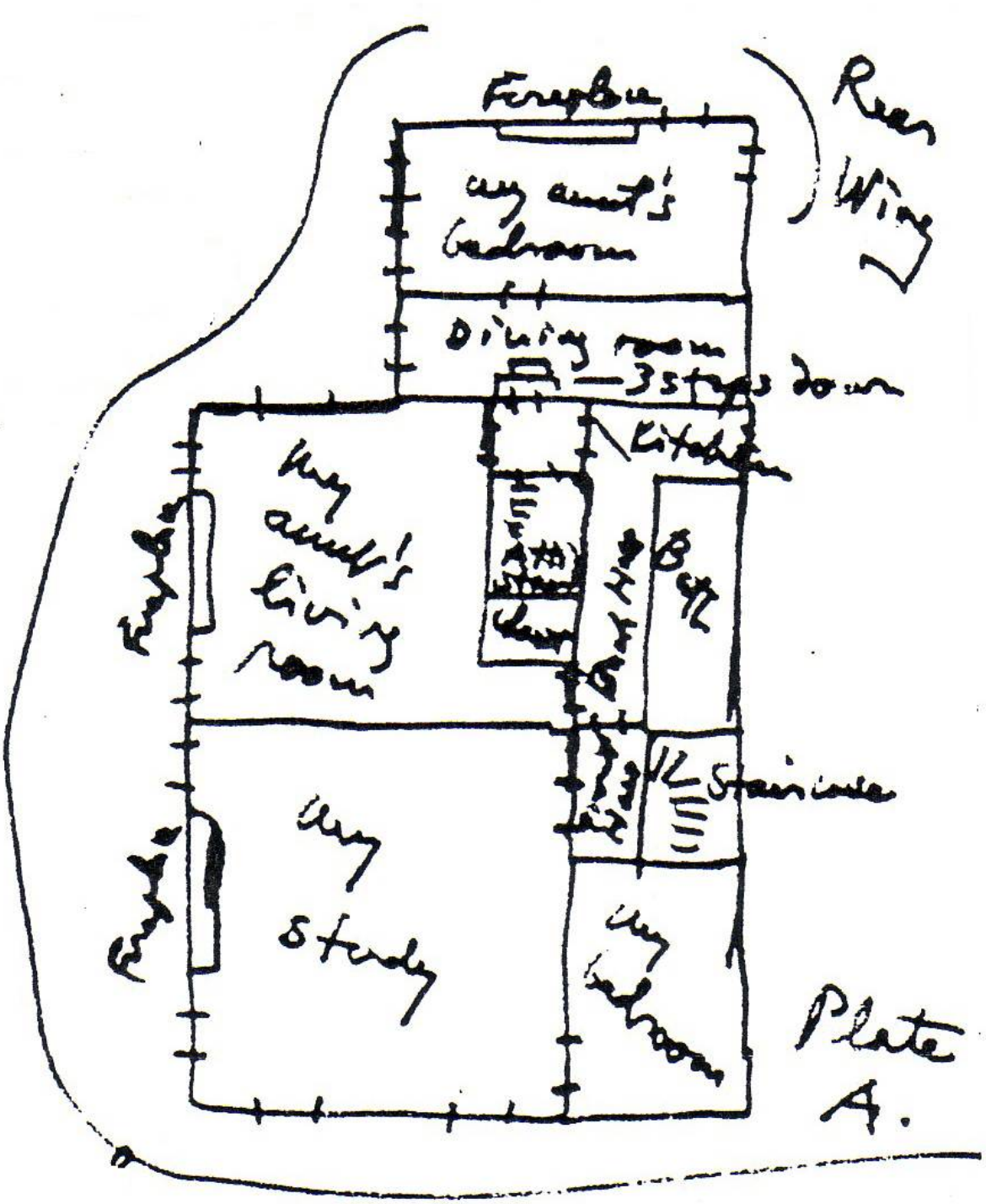
Lovecraft's own writing career was, as noted, not progressing very well: only a single story ("The Dreams in the Witch House") in 1932, and none in the first half of 1933 (excluding the collaboration "Through the Gates of the Silver Key"). How much income the new revision client, Hazel Heald, along with other revision jobs, brought in is unclear; but some suggestion is offered by Lovecraft's remark to Donald Wandrei that in mid-February 1933 "my aunt & I had a desperate colloquy on family finances,"[99] with the result that Lovecraft would move from 10 Barnes Street and Annie would move from 61 Slater Avenue and unite to form a single household. That Lovecraft and Annie could not afford even the meagre rent they were no doubt paying (Lovecraft's was $10 per week, Annie's probably similar) speaks volumes for the utter penury in which both of them existed—Annie eking by solely on Whipple Phillips's bequest, Lovecraft on whatever share of that bequest remained ($5000 to his mother, $2500 to himself) along with his paltry revision work and even paltrier sales of original fiction.

But luck was, on this occasion, with them. After looking at several apartments on the East Side and the college district, Lovecraft and Annie found a delightful house at 66 College Street, on the very crest of the hill, directly behind the John Hay Library and in the midst of Brown's fraternity row. The house was actually owned by the university and was leased out as two large apartments, one on each of the two floors. The top floor—five rooms plus two attic storerooms—had suddenly become vacant, and Lovecraft and Annie seized on it once they heard of its rent—$10 per week total, presumably half the combined rent for their two separate apartments. Best of all, from Lovecraft's perspective, was that the house was built in the colonial style. He thought that the house was actually colonial or post-colonial, built around 1800; but current research dates it to about 1825. He would have two rooms—a bedroom and a study—along with an attic storeroom for himself. The place fell vacant on May 1, and Lovecraft moved in on May 15; Annie moved in two weeks later. Lovecraft was unable to believe his good fortune, and hoped only to be able to keep the place for a significant length of time. As it happened, he would remain there for the four years remaining in his life.

22. In My Own Handwriting

(1933–1935)

> The house is a square wooden edifice of the 1800 period . . . The fine colonial doorway is like my bookplate come to life, though of a slightly later period with side lights & fan carving instead of a fanlight. In the rear is a picturesque, village-like garden at a higher level than the front of the house. The upper flat we have taken contains 5 rooms besides bath & kitchenette nook on the main (2nd) floor, plus 2 attic storerooms—one of which is so attractive that I wish I could have it for an extra den! My quarters—a large study & a small adjoining bedroom—are on the south side, with my working desk under a west window affording a splendid view of the lower town's outspread roofs & of the mystical sunsets that flame behind them. The interior is as fascinating as the exterior—with colonial fireplaces, mantels, & chimney cupboards, curving Georgian staircase, wide floor-boards, old-fashioned latches, small-paned windows, six-panel doors, rear wing with floor at a different level (3 steps down), quaint attic stairs, &c.—just like the old houses open as museums. After admiring such all my life, I find something magical & dreamlike in the experience of actually *living in one* . . . I keep half-expecting a museum guard to come around & kick me out at 5 o'clock closing time![1]

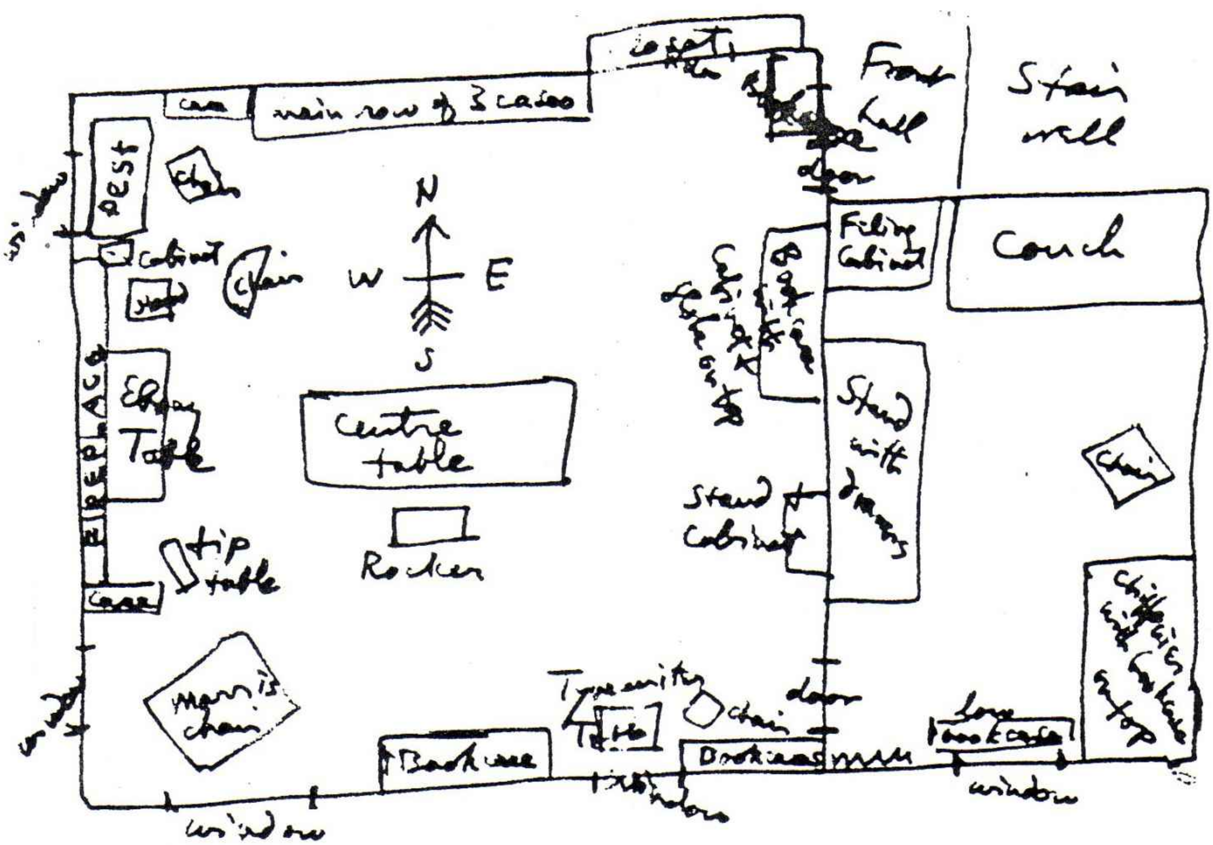


A passage like this can be found in nearly every letter Lovecraft wrote during this period, and it testifies to the miraculous stroke of luck whereby a move made for purely economic reasons—and after Lovecraft had come to feel so at home at 10 Barnes after seven years' residence there—resulted in his landing in a colonial-style house he had always longed for. Even his

birthplace, 454 Angell Street, was not colonial, although of course it remained dear to his heart for other reasons.

Lovecraft also provides a plan of the entire place.[2]

The space seems to have been pretty evenly divided between Lovecraft and Annie, since one imagines both had use of the kitchen and dining room. There certainly seemed to be an abundance of space; indeed, the two of them were able to rescue from storage several pieces of furniture and other items that had not been in use since 454 Angell Street days—a slat-back chair from the eighteenth century, a bust of Clytië on a pedestal, and an immense painting by Lillian.[3] Lovecraft goes on to provide a plan of his own two rooms:[4]



Examining this plan in conjunction with two photographs taken by R. H. Barlow[5] shortly after Lovecraft's death gives us a very good picture of Lovecraft's final home—the study at any rate, as no photographs of the

bedroom survive. The study may seem a trifle congested, but Lovecraft always preferred to have as many of his familiar furnishings around him as possible, even if they violated abstract rules of interior decoration.

The house itself was somewhat oddly positioned. Although the address was 66 College Street, it was set far back from the street, at the end of a narrow alley once called Ely's Lane; the house itself was perhaps closer to Waterman Street than College. Across the back garden was a boarding-house, at which Annie customarily ate both her meals; Lovecraft would eat there occasionally, but he preferred either going downtown to some cheaper eatery or making his own humble meals out of cans or from groceries purchased at delicatessens or grocery stores such as the Weybosset Food Basket (still in operation). The boarding-house occasionally served as a lodging for Lovecraft's out-of-town guests, although those who felt inclined to rough it used a mattressless camp cot that Lovecraft purchased.

One of the most engaging features of the place was a shed next to the boarding-house, whose flat roof supplied an excellent sunning place for the several cats in the area. It was not long before Lovecraft began to make friends with these cats, luring some to his study with catnip and allowing them to sleep in the morris chair or even play on his desk (they were fond of swatting at his rapidly moving pen as he wrote letters). Since he was living on what was then Brown University's fraternity row, Lovecraft christened this group of felines the Kappa Alpha Tau (K.A.T.), which he claimed stood for Kompwn ?Ailourwn T¢xis (Band of Elegant Cats). Their comings and goings would provide Lovecraft much pleasure, and some heartache, over the years.

A few months before he moved to 66 College, around March 11, Lovecraft had taken a trip to Hartford, Connecticut—on what he tells one correspondent as "a job of research which a client was conducting at the library there."[6] Again Lovecraft has prevaricated, and again the reason is connected with his ex-wife; for this was the last time he and Sonia saw each other face to face. After she returned from her European tour, Sonia took a trip to the Hartford suburbs of Farmington and Wethersfield; she was so captivated with the colonial antiquities in these towns that she wrote to Lovecraft and asked him to join her. He did so, spending a day and a night there.

That evening, before they parted for the night, Sonia said, "Howard, won't you kiss me goodnight?" Lovecraft replied, "No, it is better not to."

The next morning they explored Hartford itself, and that evening, as they bade each other adieu, Sonia did not ask for a kiss.[7] They never saw each other again nor, so far as I can tell, corresponded.

The new household at 66 College got off, literally, on the wrong foot when, on June 14, Annie fell down the stairs in answering the doorbell and broke her ankle. She remained in Rhode Island Hospital for four weeks in a cast and returned home on July 5, essentially bedridden and with a nurse in attendance; the cast was removed on August 3, but Annie had to continue using crutches until well into the fall. She did not seem fully recovered from the injury until the next spring. Lovecraft dutifully visited the patient every day while she was in the hospital, and when she came back to 66 he had to stay home during afternoons while the nurse got a few hours off. Slight relief was provided by the installation of an automatic door-answerer in mid-September, shortly after the nurse was dismissed. All this could not have helped the finances of the household, and in an unguarded moment Lovecraft makes note of the "financial strain utterly ruinous to us at the present juncture!"[8] His plan to attend the NAPA convention in New York with W. Paul Cook in early July was abruptly cancelled.

There was some relief, however. On June 30 the peripatetic E. Hoffmann Price paid Lovecraft a four-day call in Providence in the course of an automobile tour across the country in a 1928 Ford that Lovecraft deemed the Juggernaut. This handy vehicle allowed Lovecraft to see parts of his own state that he had never visited before, in particular the so-called Narragansett Country or South County—the stretch of countryside on the western and southern side of Narragansett Bay, where in the colonial period actual plantations resembling those in the South had existed.

Harry Brobst joined in some of the festivities. It was at this time, apparently, that the three of them engaged in the all-night dissection of a story by Carl Strauch. There was also a midnight session in St John's Churchyard, and a feast of Indian curry prepared by Price—the first time Lovecraft had eaten this delicacy. The two had been discussing the exact ingredients to be used in this dish for months in their correspondence, and when it came time actually to make it, they behaved like mad scientists cooking up some nameless and sinister brew. As Price tells it:

> "More chemicals and acids?" I'd ask him.

> "Mmm . . . this is savory, and by no means lacking in fire, but it could be more vigorous."
>
> When he agreed that it was about right, I admitted that while I had eaten hotter curry in my time, this was certainly strong enough.[9]

Brobst, however, made the faux pas of bringing a six-pack of beer. Price in his memoir states that beer was now legal, but it would not become so until the end of the year; but repeal of the 18th Amendment was imminent, and no one had any fear from the police. Lovecraft, however, had apparently never seen such a quantity of alcoholic beverages before. Let Price again tell the story:

> "And what," he asked, out of scientific curiosity, "are you going to do with so *much* of it?"
>
> "Drink it," said Brobst. "Only three bottles a-piece."
>
> I'll never forget HPL's look of utter incredulity. . . . And he watched us with unconcealed curiosity, and with a touch of apprehension, as we drank three bottles a-piece. I'm sure he made a detailed entry in his journal to record this, to him, unusual feat.

Still another entertaining episode occurred when Lovecraft, responding to Price's relentless insistence, took his guest to a celebrated seafood restaurant in Pawtuxet for a clam dinner. Price knew of Lovecraft's detestation of seafood and should have predicted the response: "While you are devouring that *God-damned* stuff, I shall cross the street and eat a sandwich. Please excuse me." Price goes on to say that profanity of this sort was saved for "state occasions"; this seems to be the case both in speech and in correspondence, where the worst I have found is "goddamned bull-shit."[10]

Frank Long and his parents took Lovecraft again to Onset for a weekend in late July, and James F. Morton visited Lovecraft from July 31 to August 2. Among a flurry of activities were long rural walks and a boat trip to Newport, where the two of them sat on the sea-cliffs where, two centuries before, George Berkeley had dwelt for a few years.

Lovecraft's third and last trip to Quebec occurred in early September, when Annie gave Lovecraft a belated birthday present of a week's vacation from nursing. He prefaced the trip by visiting Cook in Boston on September 2, then crammed as much into the next four days as possible, seeing all the sights he had seen on his two previous visits. Lovecraft also managed one

day in Montreal, which he found appealing if entirely modern. Annie tended to laugh at Lovecraft for wanting to visit the same spots over and over again (especially Charleston and Quebec);[11] but in reality Lovecraft in the last decade of his life did cover a pretty fair ground up and down the eastern seaboard. It is, however, no surprise that he kept being drawn to certain especial concentrations of antiquity and charm—they seemed to have the power to evoke endless chains of associations that allowed him to merge his consciousness into the historic time-stream of this continent and of its European founders.

In somewhat the same vein, Lovecraft in the fall did something he had been always been meaning to do: he spent Thanksgiving at Plymouth, where the ceremony had begun 312 years before. It was, in part, the incredibly warm temperature—68? in the afternoon—that permitted him to make such a trip so close to winter, and he had a delightful time: "The old town was fascinating . . . I put in most of the time exploring, & saw an exquisite sunset from the top of Burial Hill. In the evening the moonlight on the harbour was fascinating."[12]

In late summer 1933 Samuel Loveman spoke with an editor at Alfred A. Knopf, Allen G. Ullman, about Lovecraft's stories, showing him "The Dreams in the Witch House." On the 1st of August Ullman wrote to Lovecraft asking to see a few more tales, and on the 3rd Lovecraft sent Ullman seven stories: "The Picture in the House," "The Music of Erich Zann," "The Rats in the Walls," "The Strange High House in the Mist," "Pickman's Model," "The Colour out of Space," and "The Dunwich Horror." Ullman seemed reasonably impressed with this batch and (apparently through Loveman) conveyed the desire to see still more—"everything which I or others have thought good in the past."[13] The result was that Lovecraft now sent Ullman eighteen more stories—nearly all the work he had not repudiated.

Sympathetic as I generally am to Lovecraft's relentlessly uncommercial stance, I have difficulty refraining from a strong inclination to kick him in the seat of the pants for the letter he wrote to Ullman accompanying these eighteen stories. Throughout the letter Lovecraft denigrates his own work out of what he fancies to be gentlemanly humility but which Ullman probably took to be lack of confidence in his own work. It is irrelevant that Lovecraft is probably correct in some of his evaluations; if he was serious in

trying to sell a collection of his tales to one of the most prestigious of New York publishing houses, he ought not to have commented that "The Tomb" is "stiff in diction"; that "The Temple" is "nothing remarkable"; that "The Outsider" is "rather bombastic in style & mechanical in climax"; that "The Call of Cthulhu" is "not so bad"; and on and on. For some unexplained reason, perhaps because they were not published, Lovecraft did not send *At the Mountains of Madness* or "The Shadow over Innsmouth," two of his strongest works.

It is scarcely a surprise that Ullman ultimately rejected the collection, sending Lovecraft on another round of self-recrimination. And yet, in this case the rejection was not entirely the fault of Lovecraft's lack of salesmanship. Ullman had asked Farnsworth Wright of *Weird Tales* whether he could dispose of 1000 copies of a proposed collection of Lovecraft's stories through the magazine; Wright said he could not guarantee such a sale, and Ullman promptly turned down the stories.[14] Wright certainly seems to have been excessively cautious on the issue, although perhaps *Weird Tales'* own dubious fortunes in the depression had something to do with it. Wright compounded the problem by stating tantalisingly in the December 1933 issue of *Weird Tales* that "We hope to have an important announcement to make soon about Lovecraft's stories"[15]—a remark Lovecraft was forced to explain away to his many correspondents who saw it.

The Knopf deal is probably the closest Lovecraft ever came to having a book published in his lifetime by a mainstream publisher. If he had done so, the rest of his career—and, it is not too much to say, the entire subsequent history of American weird fiction—may have been very different. But, after this fourth failure at book publication (following *Weird Tales,* Putnam's, and Vanguard), the last four years of Lovecraft's life were increasingly filled with doubt, diffidence, and depression about his work, until toward the end he came to believe that he had entirely failed as a fictionist. Lovecraft's sensitivity to rejection was a regrettable flaw in his character, and it has perhaps robbed us of more stories from his pen.

In September 1933 *The Fantasy Fan* began publication. This is, canonically, the first "fan" magazine in the domain of weird/fantastic fiction, and it inaugurated a rich, complex, and somewhat unruly tradition—still flourishing today—of fan activity in this realm. The word "fan"—short for *fanatic*—began gaining currency in late nineteenth-century America as a

term denoting followers of sporting teams, later being extended to devoted followers of any hobby or activity. From the beginning it connoted uncritical adulation, immaturity, and, perhaps, unworthiness of the object of devotion. These connotations, in some senses unjust, are perhaps not entirely to be dismissed. There may be fantasy fans, but there are no Beethoven fans.

It is an anomaly beyond my powers of explanation that the fields of fantasy, horror, and science fiction have attracted legions of fans who are not content to read and collect the literature but must write about it and its authors, and publish—often at considerable expense—small magazines or books devoted to the subject. There is no analogous fan network in the fields of detective fiction or the Western, even though the first of these fields certainly attracts a far larger body of fans than does weird fiction. Nor is this fan activity entirely to be despised: many of today's leading critics of weird fiction emerged from the realm of fandom and still retain connexions with it. Fandom is perhaps most charitably seen as a training ground that permits young writers and critics (most individuals become fans as teenagers) to hone their nascent abilities; but the field has gained well-deserved contempt because so many of its participants never seem to advance beyond its essentially juvenile level.

The *Fantasy Fan* was edited by Charles D. Hornig (1916–1999) of Elizabeth, New Jersey, who was scarcely seventeen when the magazine was launched. Celebrated as it is, it operated at a loss during its entire run: it had a pitifully small circulation in its day—only 60 subscribers[16] and a print run probably not exceeding 300—and, in spite of the fact that it was typeset (the printer was the young Conrad Ruppert), looks very crude and amateurish today, especially since it was printed on poor paper that has turned a dark brown over the years. But it attracted immediate attention throughout the world of weird fiction, not only among fans but among its leading authors. Lovecraft saw in it a chance to land (without pay, of course) his oft-rejected tales, so that in this way he could gain a modicum of lending copies in printed form and save wear and tear on his manuscripts. He urged Clark Ashton Smith, Robert E. Howard, and even the relentlessly professional August Derleth to send original stories to it, and the appearance of works by these and other writers has made *The Fantasy Fan* a choice collectible commanding high prices. It is rare to find a complete set of the eighteen monthly issues.

But *The Fantasy Fan* was not chiefly made up of contributions by the "big names" of the weird fiction field; instead, it offered ready access for novices to express their opinions in letters to the editor and brief articles and tales. R. H. Barlow published nine of his "Annals of the Jinns" sketches throughout the magazine's run; such fans as Duane W. Rimel, F. Lee Baldwin, and others who would later come into direct contact with Lovecraft had articles or columns in early issues.

Hornig did, however, make one mistake in judgment by instituting, in the very first issue, a write-in column called "The Boiling Point" in which controversial and polemical opinions were deliberately sought out. The first column featured a gauntlet thrown down by the redoubtable Forrest J Ackerman (1916–2008; the J stands for James, but Ackerman affected the policy of placing no period after it), then already a well-known fan. He criticised the publication of Clark Ashton Smith's "Dweller in Martian Depths" in *Wonder Stories* for March 1933: *Wonder Stories* was a prototypical "scientifiction" pulp, and in Ackerman's view Smith's tale was a pure horror story that had no place in the magazine. Had Ackerman restricted his criticism to this point, he would not have left himself so open to attack; but he went on actually to deny merit to the tale ("Frankly, I could not find one redeeming feature about the story"), going on to proclaim: "May the ink dry up in the pen from which [it] flow[s]!"

This was too much for Lovecraft and other supporters of Smith. Firstly, Smith's title for the story was "The Dweller in the Gulf"; and secondly, the ending had been wilfully changed, and not for the better, by the *Wonder Stories* staff. "The Dweller in the Gulf" may not be an immortal masterwork of literature, but purely as a story it was leagues better than much else that appeared in the magazine.

The next several issues of the *Fantasy Fan* included hot-tempered letters by Lovecraft, Barlow, and many others heaping abuse on Ackerman, Smith guardedly defending himself, Ackerman fighting back, and on and on. No one comes off very well in the debate, if it can be called that; Robert Nelson perhaps put it best when he said in the November 1933 issue, "The Ackerman-Smith controversy assumes all the aspects of a mad comedy." By February 1934 Hornig decided that "The Boiling Point" had served its purpose and had in fact aroused too much ill-feeling to be productive. And yet, bitter, vituperative controversies of this sort have remained common in fandom and continue to this day.

Hornig made a wiser decision when he accepted Lovecraft's offer of preparing a new edition of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" for serialisation in the magazine.[17] Since writing the essay seven years before, Lovecraft had continued to take notes for additions to it for some future republication. In letters Lovecraft frequently made note of the worthiness—or lack of it—of this or that weird writer for inclusion in his treatise. Finally, the humble *Fantasy Fan* offered him the chance for revision.

Lovecraft evidently revised the essay all at once, not piecemeal over the course of the serialisation (October 1933–February 1935); indeed, he seems simply to have sent Hornig an annotated copy of the *Recluse,* with separate typed (or even handwritten) sheets for the major additions.[18] This is borne out by the nature of the revisions: aside from random revisions in phraseology ("the modern writer D. H. Lawrence" becomes "the late D. H. Lawrence," since he had died in 1930), there is almost no change in the text save the following additions:

Chapter VI: the small paragraph on H. H. Ewers and part of the concluding paragraph (on Meyrink's *The Golem*);

Chapter VIII: the section beginning with the discussion of Cram's "The Dead Valley" up to that discussing the tales of Edward Lucas White; the last paragraph, on Clark Ashton Smith, is augmented;

Chapter IX: the paragraph on Buchan, much of the long paragraph discussing "the weird short story", and the long section on Hodgson.

Of these, the section on Hodgson was added separately in August 1934, while the section on *The Golem* was revised after April 1935, when Lovecraft (who had based his note on the film version) read the actual novel and disconcertedly observed its enormous difference from the film.

The serialisation in the *Fantasy Fan* progressed very slowly, as the magazine could only accommodate a small portion of text in each issue; when the magazine folded in February 1935, it had only published the text up to the middle of Chapter VIII. For the rest of the two years of his life Lovecraft sought in vain to find some fan publisher to continue the serialisation. The complete, revised text of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" did not appear until *The Outsider and Others* (1939).

Another individual who established—or attempted to establish—various journals wavering uncertainly between the fan and semi-professional levels was William L. Crawford (1911–1984), with whom Lovecraft came in touch

in the fall of 1933. Lovecraft would, with a certain good-natured maliciousness, poke fun at Crawford's lack of culture by referring to him as Hill-Billy, presumably alluding both to Crawford's residence in Everett, Pennsylvania (in the Alleghenies), and to his stolid insensitivity to highbrow literature. In a letter to Barlow he presented an annotated version of an actual letter he received from Crawford:

> "I probably will never be able to appreciate literature. I can 'get it' [oh, yeah?], but I just can't appreciate it. When I want to read something deep, I think of a text-book [like Greenleaf's Primary-School Arithmetic or the First Reader, no doubt!]; when I want to be amused or entertained, I think of 'pulp' or light reading. The stories I get in Literature & Life practically put me to sleep—& I don't think—conceitedly maybe—that it's because I'm entirely a light-thinker, either, as I spend all my spare time, you might say, speculating on this or that." [Atta boy, Billy, but be careful not to wear out the ol' cerebrum!][19]

Probably Lovecraft didn't need to add the annotations after all.

But Crawford meant well. Initially he proposed a non-paying weird magazine titled *Unusual Stories* but almost immediately ran into difficulties, even though he accepted Lovecraft's "Celephaïs" and "The Doom That Came to Sarnath" for the magazine.[20] By early 1934 he had proposed a second journal, *Marvel Tales,* either as a companion to *Unusual* or a replacement for it. "Celephaïs" appeared in the first issue (May 1934) of *Marvel,* while "The Doom That Came to Sarnath" finally appeared in the March–April 1935 issue. Two issues of *Unusual Stories* did emerge in 1935 (prefaced by a queer "advance issue" in the spring of 1934), but contained no work by Lovecraft.

But Crawford's bumbling attempts deserve commendation for at least one good result. In the fall of 1933 he asked Lovecraft for a 900-word autobiography for *Unusual,* evidently the first of a series. Lovecraft had great difficulty condensing his life and opinions into 900 words, so on November 23 he wrote a longer version of about 2300 words and somehow managed to trim this down to the requisite size. The shortened version, now lost, never appeared; but providentially Lovecraft sent the longer version to Barlow for preservation, and this is how we have the piece entitled "Some Notes on a Nonentity."

There is not much in this essay that Lovecraft had not said somewhere before, at least in letters; but it is a singularly felicitous and compact account of his life and, toward the end, of his views on the nature and purpose of weird fiction. Some anomalies—such as the omission of any mention of his marriage—have already been noted; but beyond such things, "Some Notes on a Nonentity" is a wonderfully illuminating document—not so much for facts (which we can secure in abundance elsewhere) but for Lovecraft's own impressions of his character and development. It is, moreover, an elegantly written essay in its own right—perhaps the best single essay Lovecraft ever wrote, with the possible exception of "Cats and Dogs":

> Nature . . . keenly touched my sense of the fantastic. My home was not far from what was then the edge of the settled residence district, so that I was just as used to the rolling fields, stone walls, giant elms, squat farmhouses, and deep woods of rural New England as to the ancient urban scene. This brooding, primitive landscape seemed to me to hold some vast but unknown significance, and certain dark wooded hollows near the Seekonk River took on an aura of strangeness not unmixed with vague horror. They figured in my dreams . . .

But the essay did not appear until 1943, and then in a corrupt text.[21]

Lovecraft was, inexorably, being drawn back into purely amateur as well as fannish activity. One such venture was the essay "Some Dutch Footprints in New England," which he wrote sometime in the summer or fall of 1933. The date is difficult to specify because the piece—less than 1500 words long—was the source of months of picayune wrangling between Lovecraft and Wilfred B. Talman, who commissioned it for the Holland Society's journal, *De Halve Maen,* which he edited. Talman reports in his memoir that "the quibbling in correspondence over spelling, punctuation, and historical facts before the script suited us both approached book-length proportions,"[22] and was—on Talman's part—inspired by Lovecraft's high-handed revision suggestions for "Two Black Bottles" seven years earlier. This is a remarkable admission by Talman, and one that does not redound to his credit: was he waiting nearly a decade to pay Lovecraft back in coin for work that actually launched Talman's (fleeting and undistinguished) career in the pulps? Let it pass: Lovecraft was tickled at appearing in *De Halve Maen,* one of the few occasions in which he was published in other than an

amateur, fan, or pulp magazine. The article itself—on Dutch colonial traces in various obscure corners of Rhode Island—is no more than competent.

The revision of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" coincided with an extensive course of rereading and analysing the weird classics in an attempt to revive what Lovecraft believed to be his flagging creative powers. Rejections were still affecting him keenly, and he was beginning to feel written out. Perhaps he needed a break from fiction as he had had in 1908–17; or perhaps a renewed critical reading of the landmarks in the field might rejuvenate him. Whatever the case, Lovecraft produced several interesting documents as a result of this work.

One can gain an exact knowledge of what Lovecraft read by consulting a notebook of jottings, similar to the commonplace book, titled "Weird Story Plots." Here we find analytical plot descriptions of works by Poe, Machen, Blackwood, de la Mare, M. R. James, Dunsany, E. F. Benson, Robert W. Chambers, John Buchan, Leonard Cline (*The Dark Chamber*), and a number of lesser items.[23] Rather more interesting, from an academic perspective, are such things as "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction," "Types of Weird Story," and "A List of Certain Basic Underlying Horrors Effectively Used in Weird Fiction" (this item matching the plot descriptions in "Weird Story Plots" fairly precisely), which represent in their rough and humble way some of the most suggestive theoretical work on the horror tale ever set down. "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction" (which exists in several different versions, all slightly different; the soundest text seems to be the one published posthumously in *Amateur Correspondent* for May–June 1937) is Lovecraft's canonical statement of his own goals for weird writing, as well as a schematic outline of how he himself wrote his own stories. The centrepiece of this latter section is the idea of preparing *two* synopses, one giving the scenario of a tale in order of its *chronological occurrence,* the second in order of its *narration in the story.* Naturally, the two could be quite different; indeed the degree of their difference is an index to the structural complexity of the tale.

And yet, this research does not seem to have helped Lovecraft much in the short term, for the first actual story he wrote at this time—"The Thing on the Doorstep," scribbled frenetically in pencil from August 21 to 24, 1933—is, like "The Dreams in the Witch House," one of his poorest later efforts.

The tale, narrated in the first person by Daniel Upton, tells of Upton's young friend Edward Derby, who since boyhood has displayed a remarkable aesthetic sensitivity toward the weird, in spite of the overprotective coddling he receives from his parents. Derby frequently visits Upton, using a characteristic knock—three raps followed by two more after an interval—to announce himself. Derby attends Miskatonic University and becomes a moderately recognised fantaisiste and poet. When he is thirty-eight he meets Asenath Waite, a young woman at Miskatonic, about whom strange things are whispered: she has anomalous hypnotic powers, creating the momentary impression in her subjects that they are in her body looking across at themselves. Even stranger things are whispered of her father, Ephraim Waite, who died under very peculiar circumstances. Over his father's opposition, Derby marries Asenath—who is one of the Innsmouth Waites—and settles in a home in Arkham. They seem to undertake very recondite and perhaps dangerous occult experiments. Moreover, people observe curious changes in both of them: whereas Asenath is extremely strong-willed and determined, Edward is flabby and weak-willed; but on occasion he is seen driving Asenath's car (even though he did not previously know how to drive) with a resolute and almost daemonic expression, and conversely Asenath is seen from a window looking unwontedly meek and defeated. One day Upton receives a call from Maine: Derby is there in a crazed state, and Upton has to fetch him because Derby has suddenly lost the ability to drive. On the trip back Derby tells Upton a wild tale of Asenath forcing him out of his body, and going on to suggest that Asenath is really Ephraim, who forced out the mind of his daughter and placed it in his own dying body. Abruptly Derby's ramblings come to an end, as if "shut off with an almost mechanical click": Derby takes the wheel away from Upton and tells him to pay no attention to what he may just have said.

Some months later Derby visits Upton again. He is in a tremendously excited state, claiming that Asenath has gone away and that he will seek a divorce. Around Christmas of that year Derby breaks down entirely. He cries out: "My brain! My brain! God, Dan—it's tugging—from beyond—knocking—clawing—that she-devil—even now—Ephraim . . ." He is placed in a mental hospital, and shows no signs of recovery until one day he suddenly seems to be better; but, to Upton's disappointment and even latent horror, Derby is now in that curiously "energised" state such as he had been during the ride back from Maine. Upton is in an utter turmoil of confusion

when one evening he receives a phone call. He cannot make out what the caller is saying—it sounds like "glub . . . glub"—but a little later someone knocks at his door, using Derby's familiar three-and-two signal. This creature—a "foul, stunted parody" of a human being—is wearing one of Derby's old coats, which is clearly too big for it. It hands Upton a sheet of paper which explains the whole story: Derby had killed Asenath as a means of escaping her influence and her plans to switch bodies with him altogether; but death did not put an end to Asenath/Ephraim's mind, for it emerged from the body, thrust itself into the body of Derby, and hurled his mind into the decaying corpse of Asenath, buried in the cellar of their home. Now, with a final burst of determination, Derby (in the body of Asenath) has climbed out of the shallow grave and is now delivering this message to Upton, since he was unable to communicate with him on the phone. Upton promptly goes to the madhouse and shoots the thing that is in Edward Derby's body; this account is his confession and attempt at exculpation.

"The Thing on the Doorstep" has many flaws: first, the obviousness of the basic scenario and the utter lack of subtlety in its execution; second, poor writing, laden (as with "The Dreams in the Witch House") with hyperbole, stale idioms, and dragging verbosity; and third, a complete absence of cosmicism in spite of the frequent dropping of the *word* "cosmic" throughout the tale ("some damnable, utterly accursed focus of unknown and malign cosmic forces"). The story was clearly influenced by H. B. Drake's *The Shadowy Thing* (1928), a poorly written but strangely compelling novel about a man who displays anomalous powers of hypnosis and mind-transference. An entry in the commonplace book (#158) records the plot-germ: "Man has terrible wizard friend who gains influence over him. Kills him in defence of his soul—walls body up in ancient cellar—BUT—the dead wizard (who has said strange things about soul lingering in body) *changes bodies with him* . . . leaving him a conscious corpse in cellar." This is not exactly a description of the plot of *The Shadowy Thing,* but rather an imaginative extrapolation based upon it. In Drake's novel, a man, Avery Booth, does indeed exhibit powers that seem akin to hypnosis, to such a degree that he can oust the mind or personality from another person's body and occupy it. Booth does so on several occasions throughout the novel, and in the final episode he appears to have come back from the dead (he had been killed in a battle in World War I) and occupied the body of a friend and soldier who had himself been horribly mangled in battle. Lovecraft has

amended this plot by introducing the notion of *mind-exchange:* whereas Drake does not clarify what happens to the ousted mind when it is taken over by the mind of Booth, Lovecraft envisages an exact transference whereby the ousted mind occupies the body of its possessor. Lovecraft then adds a further twist by envisioning what might happen if the occupier's body were killed and a dispossessed mind was thrust into it. It turns out, then, that in "The Thing on the Doorstep" there are *two* supernatural phenomena at work: first, the mind-exchange practised by Ephraim/Asenath Waite; and second, the ability of Edward Derby to lend a sort of hideous animation to the dead body of Asenath purely by the strength of his own mind. (It is not at all surprising that the sexually reserved Lovecraft has nothing at all to say about the potentially intriguing gender-switching implied by this mind-exchange.)

The significant difference between the story and the plot-germ as recorded in the commonplace book is that the "wizard friend" has become the man's wife. This leads me to suspect the influence of another relatively obscure novel, Barry Pain's *An Exchange of Souls* (1911), a book Lovecraft had in his library, which tells the compelling tale of a man who invents a device that will effect the transfer of his "soul" or personality with that of his wife; the man is successful in the enterprise, but in the process his own body dies, leaving him stranded in that alien body of his wife. I have no doubt that Lovecraft picked up hints from this novel for his own tale; but at the same time, this husband-wife interchange allows the story to gain some interest, if only from a biographical perspective. I have earlier noted that some features of Edward Derby's life supply a masked version of Lovecraft's own marriage, as well as of certain aspects of his childhood. But there are some anomalies in the portrayal of the youthful Edward Derby that need to be addressed. Derby was "the most phenomenal child scholar I have ever known": would Lovecraft write something like this about a character who was modelled upon himself? It seems unlikely, given his characteristic modesty; and this makes me think that Derby is an amalgam of several individuals. Consider this remark on Alfred Galpin: "He is intellectually *exactly like me* save in degree. In degree he is immensely my superior";[24] elsewhere he refers to Galpin—who was only seventeen when Lovecraft first came in touch with him in 1918—as "the most brilliant, accurate, steel-cold intellect I have ever encountered."[25] However, Galpin never wrote "verse of a sombre, fantastic, almost morbid cast" as Derby did as a boy; nor did he publish a volume, *Azathoth and Other Horrors,* when he was eighteen. But

did not Clark Ashton Smith create a sensation as a boy prodigy when he published *The Star-Treader and Other Poems* in 1912, when he was nineteen? And was Smith not a close colleague of George Sterling, who—like Justin Geoffrey in the tale—died in 1926 (Sterling by suicide, Geoffrey of unknown causes)? (Justin Geoffrey was invented by Robert E. Howard in "The Black Stone" [*Weird Tales,* November 1931], but the date of his death has here been invented by Lovecraft.) On a more whimsical note, Lovecraft's mention that Derby's "attempts to grow a moustache were discernible only with difficulty" recalls his frequent censures of the thin moustache Frank Belknap Long attempted for years to cultivate in the 1920s.

But if Derby's youth and young manhood are an amalgam of Lovecraft and some of his closest associates, his marriage to Asenath Waite brings certain aspects of Lovecraft's marriage to Sonia manifestly to mind. In the first place there is the fact that Sonia was clearly the more strong-willed member of the couple; it was certainly from her initiative that the marriage took place at all and that Lovecraft uprooted himself from Providence to come to live in New York. The objections of Derby's father to Asenath—and specifically to Derby's wish to marry her—may dimly echo the apparently unspoken objections of Lovecraft's aunts to his marriage to Sonia.

Aside from these points of biographical interest, however, "The Thing on the Doorstep" is crude, obvious, lacking in subtlety of execution or depth of conception, and histrionically written. One of its few memorable features is the hideous and grisly conclusion, where Edward—who, trapped in Asenath's decaying body, displays more will and determination than he ever had in his own body—resolutely attempts to call Upton over the phone and, finding that his decomposing body is incapable of enunciating words, writes a note to Upton and brings it to him before dissolving on his doorstep in "mostly liquescent horror." In a sense this story is a reprise of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* although actual mind-exchange does not occur there as it does here; but the attempt by Asenath (in Derby's body) to pass herself off as Edward in the madhouse is precisely analogous to Joseph Curwen's attempts to maintain that he is Charles Dexter Ward. In this case, however, it cannot be said that Lovecraft has improved on the original.

One glancing note in the story that has caused considerable misunderstanding is Upton's remark about Asenath: "Her crowning rage . . . was that she was not a man; since she believed a male brain had certain unique and far-reaching cosmic powers." This sentiment is clearly expressed

as Asenath's (who, let us recall, is only Ephraim in another body), and need not be attributed to Lovecraft. A decade earlier he had indeed uttered some silly remarks on women's intelligence: "Females are in Truth much given to affected Baby Lisping . . . They are by Nature literal, prosaic, and commonplace, given to dull realistick Details and practical Things, and incapable alike of vigorous artistick Creation and genuine, first-hand appreciation."[26] One wonders on what evidence this could have been based, since Lovecraft had known almost no women except members of his own family up to this time. But by the 1930s he had come to a more sensible position: "I do not regard the rise of woman as a bad sign. Rather do I fancy that her traditional subordination was itself an artificial and undesirable condition based on Oriental influences. . . . The feminine mind does not cover the same territory as the masculine, but is probably little if any inferior in total quality."[27] I am not sure what the exact import of that remark is, but at least his attitude is a little more rational than before—indeed, more rational than that of many of his generation.

The year 1933 seems to have been an especially difficult one for Lovecraft as a writer. He was clearly attempting to capture on paper various ideas clamouring for expression, but seemed unable to do so. At least two other works of fiction may have been written at this time; one of them is the fragment entitled (by R. H. Barlow) "The Book." The exact date of this item is not known, but in a letter of October 1933 Lovecraft wrote as follows: "I am at a sort of standstill in writing—disgusted at much of my older work, & uncertain as to avenues of improvement. In recent weeks I have done a tremendous amount of experimenting in different styles & perspectives, but have destroyed *most* [my italics] of the results."[28] If "The Book" was one of the things Lovecraft was writing at this time, it could well qualify as a piece of experimentation; for it appears to be nothing more than an attempt to write out *Fungi from Yuggoth* in *prose.* The first three sonnets of the cycle do indeed form a connected narrative; and the fact that the story fragment peters out into inconclusive vagueness after this point may further suggest that there is no "continuity"—certainly not on the level of plot—in the sonnet sequence. And the very fact that he undertook such a task suggests that Lovecraft, despairing of finding new ideas for fiction (in spite of the dozens of unused entries in his commonplace book), was desperately seeking to cannibalise from his own work in a vain attempt to revive his flagging inspiration.

The other item that was probably written in 1933 is "The Evil Clergyman." This is nothing more than an account of a dream written up in a letter to Bernard Austin Dwyer. The excerpt was made and a title ("The Wicked Clergyman") supplied by Dwyer; it was first published in *Weird Tales* (April 1939) and retitled "The Evil Clergyman" by Derleth. Lovecraft remarked in a letter to Clark Ashton Smith on October 22, 1933, that "Some months ago I had a dream of an evil clergyman in a garret full of forbidden books,"[29] and it is likely that the account of the dream was written up in a letter to Dwyer at this time or earlier; Derleth's dating of the item to 1937 is entirely unfounded.

It is hardly worth discussing "The Evil Clergyman" as a story, since it was never meant to stand as a discrete and self-contained narrative. Some of the imagery and atmosphere are reminiscent of "The Festival," although the dream takes place in England. Unlike "The Thing on the Doorstep" and other tales, this dream-fragment does not involve *mind*-transference but transference of a very physical sort: because the protagonist has unwisely handled a small box that he was specifically told not to touch, he has summoned the "evil clergyman" and somehow effected an exchange of external features with him, while yet retaining his mind and personality. It is difficult to say how Lovecraft would have developed this curiously conventional supernatural scenario in light of his later quasi-science fictional work.

Lovecraft was becoming the hub of an increasingly complex network of fans and writers in the field of weird and science fiction; and in the last four years of his life he attracted a substantial number of young people (mostly boys) who looked upon him as a living legend. I have already noted that R. H. Barlow first came in touch with Lovecraft at the age of thirteen in 1931; now other teenagers came to the fore.

The most promising of them—or, rather, the one who in the end amounted to the most—was Robert Bloch (1917–1994), who first wrote to Lovecraft in the spring of 1933. Bloch, born in Chicago but at this time a resident of Milwaukee, had just turned sixteen and had been reading *Weird Tales* since 1927. To the end of his life Bloch remained grateful to Lovecraft for his lengthy reply to his fan letter and for continuing to write to him over the next four years.

In that very first letter, Lovecraft asked his young correspondent whether he had written any weird work and, if so, whether he might see samples of it. Bloch took up Lovecraft's offer in late April, sending him two short items. Lovecraft's response to these pieces of juvenilia (which, along with a good many others Bloch sent to Lovecraft, do not survive) is typical: while praising them, he also gave helpful advice derived from his many years as both a critic and a practitioner of the weird tale:

> It was with the keenest interest & pleasure that I read your two brief horror-sketches; whose rhythm & atmospheric colouring convey a very genuine air of unholy immanence & nameless menace, & which strike me as promising in the very highest degree. I think you have managed to create a dark tension & apprehension of a sort all too seldom encountered in weird fiction, & believe that your gift for this atmosphere-weaving will serve you in good stead when you attempt longer & more intricately plotted pieces. . . . Of course, these productions are not free from the earmarks of youth. A critic might complain that the colouring is laid on too thickly—too much *overt inculcation* of horror as opposed to the *subtle, gradual suggestion of concealed horror* which actually raises fear to its highest pitch. In later work you will probably be less disposed to pile on great numbers of horrific words (an early & scarcely-conquered habit of my own), but will seek rather to select a *few* words—whose precise position in the text, & whose deep associative power, will make them in effect more terrible than any barrage of monstrous adjectives, malign nouns, & unhallowed verbs.[30]

This is a litany that Lovecraft would repeat for at least another year. The advice paid off more expeditiously than either correspondent could have imagined, for in just over a year, in July 1934, Bloch landed his first story in *Weird Tales.* The tale—"The Secret in the Tomb" (*Weird Tales,* May 1935)—appeared after his second accepted story, "The Feast in the Abbey" (*Weird Tales,* January 1935); but from this point on Bloch rapidly became a regular in the magazine, and—although this occurred chiefly after Lovecraft's death—branched out into the mystery and science fiction fields as well.

F. Lee Baldwin (1913–1987) came in touch with Lovecraft in the fall of 1933, as he wished to reissue "The Colour out of Space" as a booklet, in an edition of 200 copies that would sell for 25¢.[31] Although Lovecraft

prepared a slightly revised text of the story for Baldwin, this venture was yet another of the many book prospects for Lovecraft's work that never came off. The correspondence continued, however, for another two years, until Baldwin lost interest in the field of weird fiction. Lovecraft found Baldwin interesting because he was a native of Lewiston, Idaho, and was familiar with the Snake River area where Lovecraft's grandfather Whipple Phillips had worked in the 1890s. In 1933 Baldwin was in Asotin, in the western part of Washington State.[32]

Strangely enough, Lovecraft independently came into contact with another individual in Asotin, Duane W. Rimel, in early 1934; he put Baldwin in touch with Rimel shortly thereafter. Rimel (1915–1996) continued his correspondence with Lovecraft until the latter's death and would become as close a colleague and informal revision client as their situation on opposite sides of the country allowed. Rimel was, like Bloch, a budding writer of weird fiction, but even under Lovecraft's tutelage he did not develop into a full-fledged professional; he did manage to have a few stories published in professional magazines (two in *Weird Tales*) and several more in fan and semi-pro magazines, but that was all. After Lovecraft's death he wrote Westerns and other hackwork (including soft-core pornography) under a variety of pseudonyms.[33]

Richard F. Searight (1902–1975) was not exactly a teenage fan when he began corresponding with Lovecraft in late summer of 1933; indeed, he had had one collaborative story in an early issue of *Weird Tales* ("The Brain in the Jar" in November 1924). A native of Michigan, Searight worked as a telegraph operator for many years. By the early 1930s he decided to return to literature, writing a series of tales and poems that he wished Lovecraft to revise and help him to place professionally. Lovecraft felt that he could not help Searight in a revisory capacity (his stories' "occasional shortcomings are matters of subject-matter rather than of technique"[34]) but encouraged him to reconceive his work along less conventional lines. Searight attempted to follow Lovecraft's advice and did manage to land some tales in *Wonder Stories* and other science fiction pulps, although many remained unpublished.

One story that landed in *Weird Tales* for March 1935, "The Sealed Casket," is worth some consideration—not intrinsically, for it is at best a mediocre item, but for Lovecraft's tangential involvement in it. Lovecraft read the tale in January 1934, remarking of it: "I . . . believe it is

unqualifiedly the best thing you have done so far."[35] There is no evidence that Lovecraft revised any portion of the text proper. Some have believed that the epigraph—not published in *Weird Tales*—is Lovecraft's, but there is no evidence for this assertion, either. The epigraph and its purported source (the Eltdown Shards) are clearly the work of Searight: Lovecraft admitted only to altering a single word in the epigraph's text.[36] Lovecraft, of course, later cited the Eltdown Shards as another of the many cryptic documents of occult lore in his mythos, but the Shards themselves are clearly the invention of Searight.

Herman C. Koenig (1893–1959) was, like Searight, well beyond his teen years when he wrote to Lovecraft in the fall of 1933. An employee of the Electrical Testing Laboratories in New York City, Koenig had an impressive private collection of rare books, and he had asked Lovecraft about the *Necronomicon* and how it could be procured. Lovecraft, disillusioning Koenig about the reality of the volume, nevertheless continued to stay in touch with him, and Koenig would lend him a significant number of weird books that would affect Lovecraft strongly over the next several years.

Helen V. Sully (1905–1997) met Lovecraft in person before corresponding with him. The daughter of Genevieve K. Sully, a married woman in Auburn, California, with whom Clark Ashton Smith apparently carried on a longtime affair, Sully decided to explore the eastern seaboard in the summer of 1933, and Smith urged her to look up Lovecraft in Providence. She did so, arriving in the city in early July and being shown all the sites in Providence as well as Newport, Newburyport, and elsewhere. Lovecraft paid for all Sully's expenses—meals, trips, lodging at the boarding house across the street from 66 College—while he was her host; she could not have known what a severe burden this must have placed upon his own perilous financial condition. One evening Lovecraft took her to one of his favourite haunts, the hidden churchyard of St John's Episcopal Church:

> It was dark, and he began to tell me strange, weird stories in a sepulchral tone and, despite the fact that I am a very matter-of-fact person, something about his manner, the darkness, and a sort of eerie light that seemed to hover over the gravestones got me so wrought up that I began to run out of the cemetery with him close at my heels, with the one thought that I must get up to the street before he, or whatever it was, grabbed me. I reached a street lamp, trembling, panting, and almost in tears, and he had

> the strangest look on his face, almost of triumph. Nothing was said.[37]

What a ladies' man. It should be noted that Sully was indeed an exceptionally attractive woman. When she went to New York after visiting Lovecraft, she bowled over the entire weird fiction crowd there: Lovecraft dryly reports having to keep Frank Long and Donald Wandrei from fighting a duel over her.[38]

Lovecraft, for his part, regarded Sully with avuncular benignance, writing her long letters about his travels and about the morality of the younger generation; but he so irritated her with his formality of address that she demanded that he refer to her as Helen and not as Miss Sully, to which he replied sheepishly: "Certainly, I am no surname-addict!"[39] I shall have more to say about the content of these letters presently.

Meanwhile some of Lovecraft's older colleagues were achieving literary or commercial success in the pulp field at the very time that his own work was faring poorly because of its failure to conform to pulp conventions. Frank Belknap Long had made the transition from weird fiction to science fiction with ease, and by the early 1930s was grinding out hackwork for *Astounding* and other pulps. Earlier he had incorporated Lovecraft's "Roman dream" of 1927 into the novel *The Horror from the Hills,* serialised in *Weird Tales* in 1931 (it did not achieve separate book publication until 1963). Long continued to publish short stories in *Weird Tales,* but he realised that he needed to expand his markets, so turned to "scientifiction." Lovecraft was amused to note that Long, although flirting with communism, was enough of a businessman to make a suitable amount of spending money in pulp fiction.

Clark Ashton Smith—who, as I have mentioned earlier, voluminously took to fiction writing in early 1930—also came to realise that the field of science fiction or science fantasy offered more, and more lucrative, markets than the very narrow realm of weird fiction, where *Weird Tales* was basically alone aside from fleeting and sporadic competitors. Accordingly, Smith—whose work in some senses fitted naturally into the science fantasy mode in any event—managed to break into many markets that Lovecraft was unable or unwilling to attempt: Hugo Gernsback's *Wonder Stories,* the revived Street & Smith *Astounding Stories,* even now-obscure pulps such as *Amazing Detective Tales* (also edited by Gernsback). *Wonder Stories* proved to be Smith's most regular market, and its editors frequently asked him for

series of interplanetary tales written more or less according to formula; Smith complied, attempting as best he could to infuse some of his own personality in them. The only problem with *Wonder Stories* was a mundane but highly irritating one: in true Gernsbackian fashion, it paid very poorly and very late. In the mid-1930s Smith actually had to hire a lawyer to collect on a debt of nearly $1000 owed him for many stories and novelettes.

But Smith continued to be rejected nearly as often as he was accepted by the weird and science fiction pulps. Six of his *Weird Tales* rejects—no worse, and in some cases much better, than the stories he published in the magazine—were self-published in the summer of 1933 as *The Double Shadow and Other Fantasies.* This oddly dimensioned booklet—8½ × 11½", in two columns, and consisting of only 30 pages—sold for 25¢; and at that, it took Smith several years to recoup his printing costs (the book was printed at the office of the *Auburn Journal*). Lovecraft frequently noted what a bargain Smith was offering: six stories for a quarter as opposed to his own stillborn *Shunned House,* a single story for which W. Paul Cook had planned to charge a dollar. Smith somehow managed to eke out a living for himself and his parents through the early 1930s. His mother died in September 1935 and his father in December 1937; but by then Smith had virtually ceased to write fiction, turning his attention to sculpture.

Donald Wandrei had published a second collection of poetry, *Dark Odyssey,* at his own expense in 1931, but he too then turned to the pulps to establish a name for himself as a weird and science fiction author. In the course of the 1930s Wandrei published in *Weird Tales, Astounding, Wonder Stories, Argosy,* and even the newly founded men's magazine *Esquire;* he also wrote a series of potboiler mysteries for *Clues Detective Stories.* A more serious work was a weird novel initially titled *Dead Titans, Waken!,* which Lovecraft read in manuscript in early 1932.[40] Lovecraft thought it a powerful work—especially the climactic scene of underground horror—but felt that earlier portions needed revision. Wandrei, however, could not bear the thought of retyping the novel so soon after finishing it; instead, he sent it on the rounds of publishers, who rejected it. Finally it was published, in a slightly different form, as *The Web of Easter Island* in 1948.

August Derleth had, since the mid-1920s, established himself as a fixture of sorts in *Weird Tales* with very short macabre tales. In 1929 he turned to what would, in effect, become his trademark: pastiche. A year before the death of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, Derleth invented a Sherlock Holmes

imitation named Solar Pons; the first story in which Pons figured, "The Adventure of the Black Narcissus," appeared in *Dragnet* for February 1929. Derleth asked Lovecraft to write a letter of commendation to the editor of *Dragnet* so that more of his stories might be considered; Lovecraft genially complied, writing in a letter to the editor (published in the April 1929 issue) that "'Solar Pons' seems eminently qualified to take rank with the standard detectives of fiction." Derleth published only one more Solar Pons story in *Dragnet,* but Pons's career was launched, and his adventures would eventually fill six collections of short stories, one short novel, and assorted addenda. In the early 1930s Derleth created another detective hero, Judge Peck. He wrote three novels in quick succession: *The Man on All Fours* (1934); *Three Who Died* (1935); and *The Sign of Fear* (1935). Lovecraft guessed the solutions to the murders on pp. 32, 145, and 259, respectively.

But Derleth had, Janus-like, been writing these potboilers with his left hand and sensitive regional and personality sketches with his right hand for non-paying little magazines since at least 1929. It was this work—beginning with a novel initially titled *The Early Years* that was later metamorphosed, after many revisions, into *Evening in Spring* (1941)—upon which Derleth hoped to build his mainstream reputation; for a time, just before and just after Lovecraft's death, he was doing exactly that.

Derleth's first serious work to be published in book form was *Place of Hawks* (1935), a series of four interconnected novelettes about individuals and families in the Sac Prairie region of Wisconsin, narrated by a young boy, Stephen Grendon (one of Derleth's pseudonyms), who observes his surroundings in the company of his doctor grandfather. *Place of Hawks* is a poignant volume and a credit to any writer intent on staking a claim in the mainstream literary world. One passage, placed in the mouth of a character, perhaps describes Derleth's own motives in writing:

> "Every spring to watch the earth grow green, to see the birds come back again, to feel the sky become a softer blue, to breathe new life with every breath; every summer to see the grain green and ripen, to mow and stack sweet-smelling hay, to drowse in the season's somnolence; every fall to gather fruit from laden branches, to see the leaves turn red and brown and fall, carpeting the earth, to watch the birds take flight; every winter to look out upon the fields and rolling hills, soothed by the soft white snow, to mark the drear, grey days with trivial details of living here—

> sweet, sweet living. That's my life. I want nothing more. I write. How could I keep from writing? How the wind crests the hills in April, how the violets purple the earth in May, how the spring night soothes with a thousand kindly hands. These things enrich my life."[41]

Affecting as this is, it is nevertheless an incomplete account of Derleth's serious work; for throughout *Place of Hawks* and other writings of this period Derleth reveals a remarkable skill at character portrayal and at the interplay of emotional tensions in close-knit rural families. As early as 1932 Lovecraft remarked to E. Hoffmann Price:

> Look how Derleth does it—he, a husky young egotist of 23, can for a time *actually be,* in a psychological sense, a wistful, faded old lady of 85, with all the natural thoughts, prejudices, feelings, perspectives, fears, prides, mental mannerisms, and speech-tricks of such a lady. Or he can be an elderly doctor—or a small boy—or a half-demented young mother—in every case understanding and entering into the type so fully that, for the moment, his interests and outlooks and difficulties and idioms are *those of the character,* with the corresponding qualities of August William Derleth quite forgotten.[42]

No doubt Lovecraft envied Derleth his skill in character portrayal, since this was one of his most significant deficiencies. He had read the novelettes comprising *Place of Hawks* as early as 1932 and had made comments on small points of language and motivation—points that Derleth resolutely ignored (as he ignored similar suggestions by Lovecraft for his weird and detective fiction), even though Lovecraft was clearly right on some issues.

Lovecraft had been reading *The Early Years* since 1929, but it is unclear how close is the final published book, *Evening in Spring,* to the several drafts Derleth successively wrote. Lovecraft's comments suggest that this work was a reminiscent novel in the manner of Proust, but *Evening in Spring* is merely a tale of young love with few if any of the extended, pseudo-stream-of-consciousness passages Lovecraft appears to have read. In its final form it is, to my mind, inferior to *Place of Hawks.* Nevertheless, upon its publication it was hailed as a significant contribution to American literature and Derleth a noteworthy young novelist (he was only thirty-two when it appeared); but, in the eyes of most readers and critics, Derleth failed to

deliver on this early promise and after World War II his reputation declined inexorably.

Lovecraft's colleagues were not merely getting widely published in the pulps; they were writing work clearly influenced by Lovecraft and were laying the groundwork for the proliferation of what came to be called the "Cthulhu Mythos." After Lovecraft's death it was August Derleth who would spearhead this movement; but at this juncture the lead was perhaps taken by Smith, Howard, Wandrei, and Bloch.

It would be tedious to record the various name-droppings and other cross-references that Lovecraft and his colleagues made in their tales—a procedure that, as early as 1930, led some readers of *Weird Tales* to suspect that a real body of myth was being drawn upon. What was really happening was that some of Lovecraft's associates were evolving their own pseudo-mythological cycles that merged into Lovecraft's own cycle through mutual citation and allusion. It is, certainly, unlikely that this would have occurred had not Lovecraft's own work provided the model and impetus; but it is still somewhat problematical to meld his associates' creations into his own without considering their separate origin. Hence, Clark Ashton Smith invented the sorcerer Eibon (who wrote the *Book of Eibon*), the city of Commoriom, the god Tsathoggua, and the like; Howard, von Junzt's *Nameless Cults* (= *Unaussprechlichen Kulten*); Bloch, Ludvig Prinn's *Mysteries of the Worm* (*De Vermis Mysteriis*); and so on.

In terms of actual imitation of Lovecraft's style and manner, it was Wandrei who at this period led the way, but without appreciably "adding" to the overall mythology. Hence, "The Tree-Men of M'Bwa" (*Weird Tales,* February 1932) is considered a tale of the "Cthulhu Mythos" but makes no reference to any books, places, or entities of the cycle; it does, however, allude to a "master in the Whirling Flux" who is "of a different universe, a different dimension,"[43] bringing "The Dunwich Horror" to mind. "The Witch-Makers" (*Argosy,* May 2, 1936) is a story of mind-exchange, perhaps drawing upon "The Thing on the Doorstep" or "The Shadow out of Time." "The Crystal Bullet" (*Weird Tales,* March 1941) is clearly influenced by "The Colour out of Space" in its account of a large bulletlike object that falls from the sky upon a farm.

Howard attempted on occasion to imitate Lovecraft's cosmicism, but was not very successful at it. Consider this bombastic passage from "The

Fire of Asshurbanipal" (*Weird Tales,* December 1936):

> "Mankind isn't the first owner of the earth; there were Beings here before his coming—and now, survivals of hideously ancient epochs. Maybe spheres of alien dimensions press unseen on this material universe today. Sorcerers have called up speeling devils before now and controlled them with magic. It is not unreasonable to suppose an Assyrian magician could invoke an elemental demon out of the earth to avenge him and guard something that must have come out of Hell in the first place."[44]

This is an unwitting travesty of Lovecraft, very much like what Derleth would write later.

Bloch is perhaps the most interesting case. In many of his tales of the mid-1930s he seems so saturated with the Lovecraftian influence that certain recollections of his mentor may be unconscious; hence, something so slight as one character's observation in "The Grinning Ghoul" (*Weird Tales,* June 1936) that there is no dust on the stairs of a crypt may be an echo of the similarly dust-free corridors of the ancient city in *At the Mountains of Madness,* swept clean by the passing of a shoggoth. "The Creeper in the Crypt" (*Weird Tales,* July 1937) is set in Arkham and makes clear allusion to Lovecraft's "The Dreams in the Witch House"; but it may also betray the influence of "The Shadow over Innsmouth" (the narrator, after his experiences, seeks aid from the federal government to suppress the horror), and also perhaps of "The Terrible Old Man," as the tale involves a Polish and an Italian criminal who kidnap a man only to meet a loathsome fate in the cellar of an old house, just as in Lovecraft's story a Pole, a Portuguese, and an Italian seek to rob the Terrible Old Man but meet death at his hands instead.

For all Lovecraft's assistance to Bloch (the former tirelessly read story after story by the latter in the 1933–35 period, making painstaking comments on each one), he seems to have done little actual revision of Bloch's work. In June 1933 Lovecraft remarked that "I added corrections here & there"[45] to a story entitled "The Madness of Lucian Grey," which was accepted for publication by *Marvel Tales* but was never published and does not now survive. A blurb in *Marvel Tales* described it as "a weird-fantasy story of an artist who was forced to paint a picture . . . and the frightful thing that came from it," which makes one immediately think of "Pickman's Model."

Lovecraft seems to have done much more extensive work in November 1933 on a story called "The Merman":

> I have read "The Merman" with the keenest interest & pleasure, & am returning it with a few annotations & emendations. . . . My changes—the congested script of which I hope you can read—are of two sorts; simplifications of diffuse language in the interest of more direct & powerful expression, & attempts to make the *emotional modulations* more vivid, lifelike, & convincing at certain points where the narrative takes definite turns.[46]

But unfortunately this tale also does not survive.

If any extant work of Bloch's can be called a Lovecraft revision, it is "Satan's Servants," written in February 1935. Bloch has commented that the story came back from Lovecraft "copiously annotated and corrected, together with a lengthy and exhaustive list of suggestions for revision," and goes on to say that many of Lovecraft's additions are now undetectable, since they fused so well with his own style:

> From the purely personal standpoint, I was often fascinated during the process of revision by the way in which certain interpolated sentences or phrases of Lovecraft's seemed to dovetail with my own work—for in 1935 I was quite consciously a disciple of what has since come to be known as the "Lovecraft school" of weird fiction. I doubt greatly if even the self-professed "Lovecraft scholar" can pick out his actual verbal contributions to the finished tale; most of the passages which would be identified as "pure Lovecraft" are my work; all of the sentences and bridges he added are of an incidental nature and merely supplement the text.[47]

And yet, it is not surprising that the original version of the story was rejected by Farnsworth Wright of *Weird Tales;* his comment as noted by Bloch —"that the plot-structure was too flimsy for the extended length of the narrative"[48]—is an entirely accurate assessment of this overly long and unconvincing story.

"Satan's Servants" had initially been dedicated to Lovecraft, and after its rejection Bloch urged Lovecraft to collaborate on its revision; but, aside from whatever additions and corrections he made, Lovecraft bowed out of full-fledged collaboration. He did, however, have much to say on the need

for historical accuracy in this tale of seventeenth-century New England, and he had other suggestions as to the pacing of the story. Bloch apparently did some revisions in 1949 for its publication in *Something about Cats,* but the story still labours under its excess verbiage and its rather comical ending: a pious Puritan, facing a mob of hundreds of devil-worshippers in a small Maine town, defeats them all by literally pounding them with a Bible! It is just as well that "Satan's Servants" lay in Bloch's files until resurrected purely as a literary curiosity.

Lovecraft's response to the rapid success (if publication in the pulps can be called success) of his colleagues is interesting. In early 1934 he offered a prediction on how his associates would fare in the broader literary world: "Of all the *W.T.* contributors, only a few are likely to break into real literature. Derleth will—though not through his weird work. Smith may. Wandrei & Long very possibly may. Howard has a chance—though he'd do better with traditional Texas material. Price *could,* but I don't think he will because commercial writing is 'getting' him."[49] That last comment is significant, for it was with the prototypical pulp hack Price that Lovecraft had some of his most searching debates about the value (if any) of pulp fiction and its relation to genuine literature. In reading both sides of this correspondence, one rapidly gains the impression that each writer is talking at cross-purposes with the other: each has so much difficulty comprehending the other's position sympathetically that the same views are repeated over and over again.

It would perhaps be unfair to present only Lovecraft's side, for Price does manage to argue his position cogently from the premises he has adopted: that writing is a business in which he has engaged in order to feed himself now that the depression has made it very difficult for him to find any other source of income; and that it may still be possible to infuse some actual literary substance—or, at least, some personality and sincerity—into work that is nevertheless basically formulaic. This position—given Lovecraft's entire philosophical and aesthetic upbringing, from the eighteenth-century ideal of literature as an elegant amusement through his Decadent phase and into his final "cosmic regionalism" period—was anathema to Lovecraft, not on highbrow grounds but because it was deeply and personally offensive and contradictory to his own purpose as a writer: "My attitude . . . is based upon a frank dislike of professional writing as a pursuit for persons anxious to

approach actual literary expression. I think that literary aspirants ought to follow paying jobs outside literature and its fake penumbra, and keep their writing free from commercial objects." Lovecraft's sense of outrage is very clear; but as a sop to Price he adds somewhat more moderately, although with perhaps unconscious sarcasm: "As for the business of supplying artificial formula-writing to the various commercial media catering to herd tastes—that is an honest enough trade, but in my opinion more proper for clever craftsmen having no real urge toward self-expression than for persons who really have something definite to say."[50]

There is, of course, scarcely a doubt that Lovecraft is right. No one from the weird pulp magazines except Lovecraft himself has emerged as a serious figure in literature. "You don't call us clumsy *W.T.* hacks 'real authors' do you?" Lovecraft writes acidly to J. Vernon Shea in 1931:

> . . . the popular magazine world is essentially an *underworld* or caricature-imitation-world so far as serious writing is concerned. Absolutely nothing about it is worthy of mature consideration or permanent preservation. That is why I am so absolutely unwilling to make any 'concessions' to its standards, & so much disposed to repudiate it entirely in an effort to achieve real aesthetic expression even on the humblest plane.[51]

It is a litany Lovecraft would continue to repeat, with interesting modifications, throughout his career.

Lovecraft did not have much more enthusiasm for the art in the pulps, especially *Weird Tales;* in fact, to him it was even worse, on the whole, than the fiction, if that were possible. "All the alleged 'art' work is indescribably vile, & I feel lucky whenever Wright is merciful enough to leave the beastly stuff off my effusions," Lovecraft wrote as early as 1926.[52] Lovecraft did have kind words for a few of the earlier *Weird Tales* artists, such as J. Allen St John and especially Hugh Rankin (even though Rankin gave away the ending of "The Whisperer in Darkness" by depicting the face and hands of Akeley on a chair on the second page of the story). Later, when Margaret Brundage began her celebrated paintings of nude women (their more sensitive parts always concealed by curling smoke or other convenient stratagems), his disgust turned to mere resigned weariness. And yet, he was by no means as prudish as some of his own correspondents, who vehemently objected to such covers on moral grounds:

> About *WT* covers—they are really too trivial to get angry about. If they weren't totally irrelevant and unrepresentative nudes, they'd probably be something equally awkward and trivial, even though less irrelevant. . . . I have no objection to the nude in art—in fact, the human figure is as worthy a type of subject-matter as any other object of beauty in the visible world. But I don't see what the hell Mrs. Brundage's undressed ladies have to do with weird fiction![53]

A quotation like this should help to dispel the silly rumour that Lovecraft habitually tore off the covers of *Weird Tales* because he was either outraged or embarrassed by the nude covers; although the real proof of the falsity of this rumour comes from a consultation of his own complete file of the magazine, sitting perfectly intact at the John Hay Library of Brown University.

The curious thing, in light of his scorn of pulp fiction, is that Lovecraft's view of "real" weird writing—what in this letter to Shea he termed "the Blackwood-Dunsany-Machen-James type"—was not as high as one might imagine. Throughout the 1930s he found each of these once-revered figures wanting in various ways. On Machen: "People whose minds are—like Machen's—steeped in the orthodox myths of religion, naturally find a poignant fascination in the conception of things which religion brands with outlawry and horror. Such people take the artificial and obsolete conception of 'sin' seriously, and find it full of dark allurement."[54] On M. R. James: "I'll concede he isn't really in the Machen, Blackwood, & Dunsany class. He is the earthiest member of the 'big four.'"[55] Lovecraft's estimation of Blackwood remained generally high, but even this writer was not immune from criticism: "It's safe to say that Blackwood is the greatest living weirdist despite vast unevenness and a poor prose style."[56]

All his former mentors came in for qualified censure at one point: "What I miss in Machen, James, Dunsany, de la Mare, Shiel, and even Blackwood and Poe, is a sense of the *cosmic*. Dunsany—though he seldom adopts the darker and more serious approach—is the most cosmic of them all, but he gets only a little way."[57] This remark is significant because it was exactly cosmicism that Lovecraft himself elsewhere vaunted as the distinguishing feature of his own work. Is this whole procedure an attempt to escape, in part, from the influence of these titans? Without in any way raising himself to their level ("Some of my stuff . . . may be as good as the *poorer* work of

Blackwood and the other big-timers"[58]), Lovecraft was perhaps unconsciously carving out a small corner of the field in which he could stand preeminent.

But Lovecraft never stopped seeking new works of weird fiction to relish. He continued reading the stories in *Weird Tales* with a kind of grim determination to find some worthy specimens, although he commented with increasing impatience about their shortcomings. "Someone ought to go over the cheap magazines and pick out story-germs which have been ruined by popular treatment; then getting the authors' permission and *actually writing the stories*."[59] But it was thanks to a new colleague—H. C. Koenig—that he received one of the greatest surprises of his later years: the discovery, in the summer of 1934, of the forgotten work of William Hope Hodgson.

Hodgson (1877–1918) had published four novels and many short stories before dying in Belgium in a battle of the Great War. Lovecraft had previously been familiar with a collection of linked short stories, *Carnacki, the Ghost-Finder* (1913), a tepid imitation of Algernon Blackwood's "psychic detective" John Silence, so he was entirely unprepared for the radically superior if also flawed excellence of *The Boats of the "Glen Carrig"* (1907), *The House on the Borderland* (1908), *The Ghost Pirates* (1909), and *The Night Land* (1912). The first and third of these novels are powerful tales of sea horror; the second is probably Hodgson's most finished work, an almost unendurably potent compendium of regional and cosmic horror; and the last is a stupendous epic fantasy of the far future after the sun has died. Lovecraft immediately prepared a note on Hodgson to be inserted into the ninth chapter of the *Fantasy Fan* serialisation of "Supernatural Horror in Literature"; but the insert first appeared only as a separate article, "The Weird Work of William Hope Hodgson" (*Phantagraph,* February 1937), then in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" in *The Outsider and Others* (1939). Lovecraft and Koenig seem jointly responsible for the subsequent resurrection of Hodgson's work, perhaps a little more of the credit going to Koenig, who later teamed with August Derleth to republish the novels and tales.

Koenig later passed on to Lovecraft the novels of Charles Williams, the English colleague of J. R. R. Tolkien and C. S. Lewis; but Lovecraft's evaluation of these mystical, heavily religious works is very much on target:

> Essentially, they are not horror literature at all, but philosophic allegory in fictional form. Direct reproduction of the texture of

> life & the substance of moods is not the author's object. He is trying to illustrate human nature through symbols & turns of idea which possess significance for those taking a traditional or orthodox view of man's cosmic bearings. There is no true attempt to express the indefinable feelings experienced by man in confronting the unknown. . . . To get a full-sized kick from this stuff one must take seriously the orthodox view of cosmic organisation—which is rather impossible today.[60]

In other words, one must be a Christian, which Lovecraft emphatically was not.

The post-Christmas season of 1933–34 again found Lovecraft in New York, and this time he ended up meeting an unusual number of colleagues old and new. Leaving Providence Christmas night, he arrived at the Longs' residence (230 West 97th Street, Manhattan) at 9.30 A.M. on the 26th. That afternoon Samuel Loveman overwhelmed Lovecraft with a gift of an authentic Egyptian *ushabti* (a funerary ornament) nearly a foot long. Loveman had given Lovecraft two museum pieces the previous year.

From this point on the socialising began. On the 27th Lovecraft met Desmond Hall, the associate editor of *Astounding Stories* as revived by Street & Smith. (When Lovecraft first heard of the revival of *Astounding,* in August 1933, he was somehow led to believe that it would be a primarily weird magazine, or at least very receptive to weird fiction; but the early issues disillusioned him by being fairly conventional "scientifiction," so that he did not submit any of his stories to it.) Later in the day he went to Donald Wandrei's flat on Horatio Street, where he met both Donald and his younger brother Howard (1909–1956), whose magnificent weird drawings took his breath away. Lovecraft may or may not have noticed Howard Wandrei's illustrations in Donald's *Dark Odyssey* (1931); but seeing his work in the original was, understandably, an overwhelming experience. Lovecraft was bold enough to say of Howard: "he certainly has a vastly greater talent than anyone else in the gang. I was astonished at [the paintings'] sheer genius & maturity. When the name Wandrei first becomes known, it will probably be through this brother instead of Donald."[61] Frank Long declared hyperbolically that Howard Wandrei was a greater artist than Dürer. He may not have been that good, but he really is one of the premier fantastic artists of the century, and his work deserves to be much better known. He also went

on to write a small number of weird, science fiction, and detective tales—some of which is as good as, or perhaps even a bit better than, the work of his brother.

On the 31st Lovecraft saw the old year out at Samuel Loveman's flat in Brooklyn Heights, where he renewed his acquaintance with Hart Crane's mother, whom he had met in Cleveland in 1922.[62] Crane, of course, had committed suicide in 1932. It was on this occasion, evidently—if Loveman's word can be trusted—that Loveman's roommate Patrick McGrath spiked Lovecraft's drink, causing him to talk even more animatedly than he usually did.[63] Lovecraft gave no indication of any such thing, and one would imagine that someone so sensitive to alcohol (its mere smell was nearly an emetic) would have detected the ruse. I am half inclined to doubt this anecdote, engaging as it is. On January 3 Lovecraft had dinner with the anthologist T. Everett Harré, who was somewhat of a lush but who had a delightful cat named William. Returning to Long's apartment, Lovecraft met his new correspondent H. C. Koenig, "a blond, boyish looking German of absolutely delightful qualities."[64]

But the culmination occurred on the 8th, when Lovecraft had dinner with A. Merritt at the Players Club near Gramercy Park. Merritt surely picked up the tab. Lovecraft reports: "He is genial & delightful—a fat, sandy, middle-aged chap, & a real genius in the weird. He knows all about my work, & praises it encouragingly."[65] Lovecraft, of course, had revered Merritt ever since he read "The Moon Pool" in the *All-Story* for June 22, 1918; and his correspondence shows that he was abundantly familiar with the whole of Merritt's published work up to that time. His final assessment of Merritt was mixed but fundamentally sound:

> Abe Merritt—who could have been a Machen or Blackwood or Dunsany or de la Mare or M. R. James . . . if he had but chosen—is so badly sunk that he's lost the critical faculty to realise it. . . . Every magazine trick & mannerism must be rigidly unlearned & banished even from one's subconsciousness before one can write seriously for educated mental adults. That's why Merritt lost—he learned the trained-dog tricks too well, & now he can't think & feel fictionally except in terms of the meaningless & artificial clichés of 2¢-a-word romance. Machen & Dunsany & James *would not learn* the tricks—& they have a record of genuine creative achievement beside which a whole

> library-full of cheap *Ships of Ishtar* & *Creep, Shadows* remains essentially negligible.[66]

The remark about Merritt's admiration for Lovecraft's own work is interesting in that Merritt had just paid homage to Lovecraft in what is clearly a pastiche of sorts—the novel *Dwellers in the Mirage,* serialised in the *Argosy* from January 23 to February 25, 1932, and published as a book later in 1932. The use of Khalk'ru the Kraken, an octopuslike creature dwelling in the Gobi desert, is a clear nod to Lovecraft's Cthulhu, although otherwise the novel is full of conventional romance of the kind that Lovecraft would not have cared for. R. H. Barlow had lent Lovecraft at least some instalments of the *Dwellers in the Mirage* serial as early as March 1932,[67] but Lovecraft does not appear to have noticed the borrowing from himself.

Nor did he do so in the case of another, much more obscure author named Mearle Prout, who published a story in *Weird Tales* for October 1933 entitled "The House of the Worm." In the first place, it is a little odd that the title duplicates Lovecraft's unwritten novel idea of 1924; but the story is more interesting in being, in part, a clear plagiarism of "The Call of Cthulhu." Consider the following from "The House of the Worm":

> I think that the limitation of the human mind, far from being a curse, is the most merciful thing in the world. We live on a quiet, sheltered island of ignorance, and from the single current flowing by our shores we visualize the vastness of the black seas around us, and see—simplicity and safety. And yet, if only a portion of the cross-currents and whirling vortexes of mystery and chaos could be revealed to our consciousness, we should immediately go insane.

This is nothing but a watered-down version of the first paragraph of Lovecraft's story. Lovecraft actually took note of the author, remarking charitably: "This latter is a newcomer, but to me his story seems to have a singularly authentic quality despite certain touches of naiveté. It has a certain atmosphere and sense of brooding evil—things which most pulp contributors lack."[68] Lovecraft is quite right about the story: it gains a sense of cumulative power and sense of the cosmic that make it a notable early pastiche. Prout went on to publish three more stories in *Weird Tales* before vanishing into oblivion.

Lovecraft returned home to Providence to experience one of the bitterest winters of his life: in February the temperature descended to -17?, the lowest figure ever recorded up to that time by the weather bureau. Sometime in the beginning of the year he heard from a woman named Dorothy C. Walter (1889–1967), a Vermont native who was spending the winter in Providence. Her friend W. Paul Cook urged her to look up Lovecraft, but she felt diffident about marching up to his doorstep at 66 College Street and announcing herself, so she wrote a rather teasing letter to him asking him to visit her; she concluded the letter, "I think I shall take the princess's prerogative of anger if you do not wish to come."[69]

The gentlemanly Lovecraft could scarcely refuse an invitation of this sort, especially by a woman. But when the day for the visit came, he was compelled to beg off because of the bitter cold. On the phone he apologised profusely to Walter and begged to be allowed to come another day: "Do be kind and say I still may come—please don't be angry—but it's just too cold for me to come out!" Walter magnanimously agreed, and Lovecraft came a few days later. Their meeting—in the company of Walter's aunt and a rather pert housekeeper, Marguerite—was pretty innocuous: the topics were Vermont, the colonial antiquities of Providence, and the weather. Lovecraft tried in vain to interest the ladies in the weird. Walter does not appear to have had even the remotest romantic interest in Lovecraft and never met him in person again, but she found the three hours spent in his company sufficiently piquant to write a memoir of the occasion twenty-five years later. She also went on to write a fine essay, "Lovecraft and Benefit Street," shortly after Lovecraft's death.

Another woman with whom Lovecraft came in touch was Margaret Sylvester. Actually, Sylvester (b. 1918) was not quite sixteen years old at this time; she had written to Lovecraft care of *Weird Tales,* asking him to explain the origin and meaning of the term *Walpurgisnacht* (which she may have encountered in "The Dreams in the Witch House"). Only a few of his letters to her have turned up, but the correspondence continued right up to his death. Sylvester, for her part, remembered her association with Lovecraft; after marrying and becoming Margaret Ronan, she wrote the introduction to a school edition of Lovecraft's stories (*The Shadow over Innsmouth and Other Stories of Horror* [1971]).

The rest of the winter and early spring of 1934 passed uneventfully, until in mid-March R. H. Barlow made a momentous announcement: he invited

Lovecraft for an indefinite visit to his family's home in DeLand, Florida. Lovecraft, whose last trip to Florida and its energising heat was in 1931, was exceptionally eager to accept the invitation, and the only obstacle was money. He remarked pointedly: "It all depends on whether I can collect certain amounts due me before starting-time—for I wouldn't dare dig into any sums reserved for household expenses. If I did that my aunt would—quite deservedly—give me hell!"[70] The "collect certain amounts" remark seems to refer to revision-checks, but it is not clear what these are. In March 1933 he had spoken of having to revise an 80,000-word novel,[71] and one would certainly like to know what this was and whether it was ever published.

In any case, the money does indeed seem to have come in, for by mid-April Lovecraft was making definite plans to head south. Still, he remarked ominously that "I never before planned so long a trip on so little cash":[72] the round trip bus fare from Providence to DeLand was $36.00, and Lovecraft would have only $30.00 or so for all other expenses along the way. Of course, he would have to come to New York for at least a week (where he would stay with Frank Long), and he could not bear to go to Florida without first spending a little time in Charleston.

The trip began around April 17, when Lovecraft boarded the bus to New York. It is unclear what exactly he did in the five days he was there, but no doubt it was the usual round of looking up old friends. Lovecraft again met Howard Wandrei and was impressed afresh with the magnificence of his artwork. By the early morning of the 24th, after a day and a half on the bus, he was in Charleston, and he spent almost a week there, finally boarding a bus to DeLand via Savannah and Jacksonville. He stepped off the bus at DeLand just after noon on May 2.

Although Barlow's mailing address was DeLand, he and his family actually lived a good thirteen miles southwest of that city along what Barlow calls the "Eustis-DeLand highway"[73] (state road 44); the residence was probably closer to the small town of Cassia than to DeLand. There was a lake on the property, and the nearest neighbour was three miles away. Recently, Stephen J. Jordan, following clues in Lovecraft's letters and other sources, has located the residence, which is still standing. He writes:

> The imposing two-story log house and the adjoining lake, just visible through a thick growth of pines, appeared with startling suddenness on my left. The house next to the lake matched

> Lovecraft's description perfectly, which possibly accounted for my having the strange feeling I was viewing a time capsule of sorts. . . . The home, a sizeable two-story log house buttressed by two chimneys, is surrounded by woods.[74]

Barlow reports picking up some furniture for the guest room in his pickup truck on the morning before Lovecraft arrived, and then going to meet Lovecraft at the bus station. His first impression of Lovecraft is interesting: "He spoke interminably in a pleasant but somewhat harsh voice, and proved to be a smooth-skinned man of face not unlike Dante. His hair was short and thinningly grey."[75]

We do not know a great deal about what Lovecraft actually did in the more than six weeks he spent with Barlow. Barlow had by this time himself become perhaps his closest, and certainly one of his most voluminous and intimate, correspondents, far more so than Derleth or Wandrei or Howard (to whom Lovecraft's letters were lengthy but infrequent and not full of personal details); in the sudden absence of letters to Barlow we are left to reconstruct the particulars of the visit from correspondence to a wide variety of other associates, from Barlow's later memoir, "The Wind That Is in the Grass" (1944), and also from a unique document—Barlow's contemporaneous notes of the visit, first published in an adulterated form in 1959 as "The Barlow Journal" and in complete form in 1992.

It should be borne in mind that Barlow was at this time scarcely sixteen years old. Lovecraft does not seem to have been aware of the fact until he actually met Barlow in the flesh, at which time he realised that he had begun correspondence with Barlow when the latter was thirteen. "The little imp!"[76] Barlow's notes, accordingly, are somewhat haphazard and not always insightful. There are, of course, all sorts of amusingly disparaging comments that Lovecraft made on his own tales ("I'm afraid 'The Hound' is a dead dog"; "'The White Ship' is sunk"), along with some more pertinent remarks on the genesis of some of his stories. There are some unusually catty criticisms of his colleagues ("He remarked also [that] Long is a Bolshevist, *poseur,* and has been even so mercenary as to sell letters of famous men to him; and his grandfather's cane"; "Adolphe de Castro Danziger . . . he pronounced a charlatan, though clever"), things Lovecraft would presumably allow himself to say in person but never in correspondence. Then, of course, there is Barlow's priceless account of going with Lovecraft and the hired hand Charles B. Johnston to pick berries

beyond a shallow creek. As they were returning, Lovecraft lagged behind but claimed to know where Barlow had positioned a makeshift bridge over the creek. But clearly something went amiss, and Lovecraft returned to the Barlow home soaking wet, and with most of the berries gone. He then apologised to Barlow's mother for losing the berries!

In his later memoir Barlow gives an impressionistic account of the visit:

> We rowed on the lake, and played with the cats, or walked on the highway with these cats as the unbelievable sun went down among pines and cypresses . . . Above all, we talked, chiefly of the fantastic tales which he wrote and which I was trying to write. At breakfast he told us his dreams . . .
>
> . . . Our talk was full of off-hand references to ghouls and vaults of terror on the surfaces of strange stars, and Lovecraft wove an atmosphere of ominous illusion about any chance sound by the roadside as we walked with my three cats, one of whom he had named Alfred A. Knopf. At other times he could be prevailed upon to read his own stories aloud, always with sinister tones and silences in the proper spots. Especially he liked to read with an eighteenth century pronunciation, *sarvant* for "servant" and *mi* for "my."[77]

Antiquity was not in very great supply in this region of Florida, but Lovecraft and Barlow did manage to get to a Spanish sugar-mill at De Leon Springs constructed before 1763, and other sites at nearby New Smyrna, including a Franciscan mission built in 1696. In early June Lovecraft was taken to Silver Springs, about 45 miles northwest of DeLand: "There is a placid pool at the head of the Silver River whose floor is pitted with huge abysses—visible clearly through a glass-bottomed boat—while the Silver River itself is a tropical jungle stream like the Congo or Amazon. The cinema of Tarzan was taken on it. I rode 5 miles down stream & back in a launch, & saw alligators &c in their native habitat."[78] Lovecraft desperately hoped to get to Havana, but simply did not have the cash. Of course, the Barlows fed and housed him at their expense, and were so abundantly hospitable that they continually vetoed any suggestion that he move on. No doubt Barlow's parents perceived that their son and Lovecraft, in spite of the almost thirty-year difference in their ages, had become fast friends. Perhaps Barlow had a lonely existence, with his much older brother Wayne (born in 1908) in the army and not around to aid in his maturation. Barlow, of course,

kept himself busy with all manner of literary, artistic, and publishing projects. One of the things he conceived at this time was to issue large 11 × 14" reproductions of Howard Wandrei's artwork, but Donald peremptorily rejected the plan, perhaps because he had his own notions (never realised, as it happened) of issuing his brother's work. Another photographic project that did succeed was the taking of a formal studio photograph of Lovecraft by Lucius B. Truesdell—an image that has helped to make Lovecraft's face an icon. For the rest of his life, Lovecraft continued to order duplicate prints of the Truesdell shot to circulate to friends and colleagues.

Another project by Barlow, more directly pertinent to Lovecraft, also ended in frustration. Since 1928 the sheets of W. Paul Cook's edition of *The Shunned House* had been knocking about from pillar to post in the wake of Cook's nervous and financial breakdown. Barlow first learnt of this stillborn enterprise in early 1933, and in February he proposed taking the unbound sheets and distributing them. Lovecraft was initially receptive to the idea and broached it to Cook, who agreed to it in principle; but then, in April, Cook was sheepishly obliged to back out because he had forgotten that he had promised to let Walter J. Coates (the editor of *Driftwind*) handle the distribution of the sheets. There the matter stood for nearly a year. When it became evident that Coates was going to do nothing on the matter, Lovecraft approached Barlow again to see if he was still interested in the idea. Barlow was.

Sometime in the late winter of 1933 or early spring of 1934 Barlow received 115 out of the 300 copies Cook had printed. For a time it was thought that these were all that survived, but in May 1935 Cook discovered another 150 more sheets and sent these to Barlow. (This leaves only 35 sheets unaccounted for, and these may have been distributed in 1928, lost, or damaged.) But Barlow himself—in the whirlwind of activities in which he was involved at this time—did little in terms of actual distribution. Although having by then become a skilled amateur binder, he bound only about eight copies in 1934–35: one in natural leather for Lovecraft, the other seven in boards. Some copies actually bear a printed label on the copyright page, "Copyright 1935 by R. H. Barlow"! Barlow may have distributed perhaps 40 more copies as unbound sheets, mostly to Lovecraft's colleagues. In late 1935 Samuel Loveman proposed assisting Barlow distribute the sheets through his bookstore, but Barlow for some reason failed to communicate with Loveman on the matter. Lovecraft expressed considerable irritation at

Barlow's dilatoriness in the whole affair, finally resigning himself to the prospect that his first "book" was a total loss.[79]

Barlow has remarked in his memoir that he and Lovecraft were busy with various writing projects; but relatively little survives of this material. There are two poems bearing the respective titles "Beyond Zimbabwe" and "The White Elephant" and collectively titled "Bouts Rimés," in which Barlow has invented the rhymes and Lovecraft written the verses to match them. Barlow also reports Lovecraft correcting Barlow's partial typescripts of *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* which he had been badgering Lovecraft for years to send down to him for transcription; but Lovecraft's letters indicate that he sent these to Barlow only in October 1934,[80] so that this typing and correcting must have occurred during Lovecraft's 1935 visit.

One literary project actually did materialise—the spoof known as "The Battle That Ended the Century." Barlow was clearly the originator of this squib, as typescripts prepared by him survive, one with extensive revisions in pen by Lovecraft. The idea was to make joking mention of as many of the authors' mutual colleagues as possible in the course of the document, which purported to report the heavyweight fight between Two-Gun Bob, the Terror of the Plains (Robert E. Howard) and Knockout Bernie, the Wild Wolf of West Shokan (Bernard Austin Dwyer). More than thirty individuals are mentioned. Barlow had initially cited them by their actual names, but Lovecraft felt that this was not very interesting, so he devised parodic or punning names for them: instead of Frank Belknap Long, one reads of Frank Chimesleep Short. Lovecraft himself becomes Horse-Power Hateart. Some of the parodic names have only recently been correctly identified. All this is good if harmless fun, the only real maliciousness being the note about the pestiferous Forrest J Ackerman: "Meanwhile a potentate from a neighbouring kingdom, the Effjay of Akkamin (also known to himself as an amateur critic), expressed his frenzied disgust at the technique of the combatants, at the same time peddling photographs of the fighters (with himself in the foreground) at five cents each." (Ackerman really was offering photographs of himself at this time.)

Naturally, the thing to do was to circulate the whimsy, but in such a way that its authorship would not be immediately evident. The plan, so far as I can reconstruct it, was this: Barlow would mimeograph the item (copies exist in two long 8½ × 14" sheets, each with text on one side only) and then

have the copies mailed from some other location, so that they could not be traced to either Lovecraft or Barlow. It appears that the 50 duplicated copies were prepared toward the middle of June and were sent to Washington, D.C., where they would be mailed (possibly by Elizabeth Toldridge, a colleague of both Lovecraft's and Barlow's but not associated with the weird fiction circle). This seems to have been done just before Lovecraft himself left DeLand and began heading north, so that the items would already be in the hands of associates by the time Lovecraft reached Washington.

But there is of course no question of Lovecraft's and Barlow's involvement in "The Battle That Ended the Century," even though both of them—especially Lovecraft—never admitted authorship. The two of them talk in amusingly conspiratorial tones about its reception by colleagues: "Note the signature—Chimesleep Short—which indicates that our spoof has gone out & that he [Long] at least thinks I've seen the thing. Remember that if you didn't know anything about it, you'd consider it merely a whimsical trick of his own—& that if you'd merely seen the circular, you wouldn't think it worth commenting on. I'm ignoring the matter in my reply."[81] Long was clearly tickled, but others were less so. Lovecraft noted: "Wandrei wasn't exactly in a rage, but (according to Belknap) sent the folder on to Desmond Hall with the languid comment, 'Here's something that may interest you—it doesn't interest me.'"[82] Wandrei doesn't seem to have been a very good sport about the thing, and one wonders whether this incident (along with the earlier minor contretemps about the reproduction of Howard Wandrei's artwork) had anything to do with the bad blood between Wandrei and Barlow in later years.

Lovecraft pushed on to St Augustine on June 21, remaining there till the 28th. He then spent two days in Charleston, one in Richmond, one in Fredericksburg, two in Washington (where he looked up Elizabeth Toldridge), and one in Philadelphia. When he reached New York he found that the Longs were about to leave for the beach resorts of Asbury Park and Ocean Grove, in New Jersey, and he tagged along for the weekend. He finally returned home on July 10, nearly three months after he had set out.

But travel was by no means over for the year. August 4 found Lovecraft and James F. Morton at Buttonwoods, Rhode Island (a locality in the town of Warwick), as part of a three-day visit by the latter in quest of genealogical research. On August 23 Lovecraft met Cook and Cole in Boston; the next

day he and Cook went to Salem and later met up with Tryout Smith in Lawrence; the next day Edward H. Cole took Lovecraft to Marblehead.

But all this proved merely the preliminary for a trip of relatively short distance but powerful imaginative stimulus. The island of Nantucket lay only 90 miles from Lovecraft's doorstep (six hours by combined bus and ferry), but he never visited it until the very end of August 1934. What a world of antiquity he stumbled upon:

> Whole networks of cobblestoned streets with nothing but colonial houses on either side—narrow, garden-bordered lanes—ancient belfries—picturesque waterfront—*everything* that the antiquarian could ask! . . . I've explored old houses, the 1746 windmill, the Hist. Soc. Museum, the whaling museum, etc.—and am doing every inch of the quaint streets and alleys on foot. [83]

But during Lovecraft's week-long stay (August 31–September 6) he did more than explore on foot: for the first time since boyhood he mounted a bicycle to cover the districts outside the actual town of Nantucket. "It was highly exhilarating after all these years—the whole thing brought back my youth so vividly that I felt as if I ought to hurry home for the opening of Hope St. High School!"[84] Lovecraft ruefully regretted the social convention that frowned upon adults riding bicycles in respectable cities like Providence.

Lovecraft's brief description of Nantucket, "The Unknown City in the Ocean," must have been written around this time, it appeared in Chester P. Bradley's amateur journal *Perspective Review* for Winter 1934. It is not one of his distinguished travelogues, and several letters of the period speak of his journey far more piquantly.

Returning home, Lovecraft found the legion of cats called the Kappa Alpha Tau flourishing in customary state. In August he had even devised a kind of anthem or fight song for the band, the first stanza of which (all I can endure to quote) goes like this:

> Here we are,
> The Kappa Alpha Tau boys;
> We'll give a great meow, boys,
> For Bast, & Sekhmet too.
> Near and far,
> We gather here as fellows,

And none may e'er excel
The Kappa Alpha Tau![85]

But tragedy was in the offing. A cat Lovecraft had named Sam Perkins, born only in June of 1934, was found dead in the shrubbery on September 10. Lovecraft immediately wrote the following elegy, now titled "Little Sam Perkins":

The ancient garden seems tonight
A deeper gloom to bear,
As if some silent shadow's blight
Were hov'ring in the air.
With hidden griefs the grasses sway,
Unable quite to word them—
Remembering from yesterday
The little paws that stirr'd them.

There were, of course, other cats still surviving: Peter Randall, president of the fraternity; Vice-President Osterberg; Little Johnny Perkins, Sam's brother; and others. And, of course, Lovecraft was always happy to be regaled by the antics of his various colleagues' cats: Clark Ashton Smith's ancient matriarch Simaetha; R. H. Barlow's legions of cats, including Doodlebug, High, Low, Cyrus and Darius (two Persians, of course), Alfred A. Knopf, etc.; Duane W. Rimel's snow-white Crom; and, most engagingly, Nimrod, the ferocious cat who one day in early 1935 showed up on E. Hoffmann Price's doorstep and took up residence, wolfing down beans and raw meat, fighting with the dogs of the area, hunting out and devouring gophers, and disappearing on at least two occasions before finally vanishing for good sometime in 1936. Ailurophily ran high in the Lovecraft circle.

R. H. Barlow and Robert Bloch were not the only young boys who showered Lovecraft with their halting if promising works of fiction; another one who did so, almost from the beginning of his association with Lovecraft, was Duane W. Rimel. Rimel first needed to bone up on the classics of weird fiction, and to that end Lovecraft lent him key volumes from his library that Rimel could not get in his small and remote Washington town. From the first Lovecraft warned Rimel not to take the fiction in the pulp magazines as models:

> You can easily see that fully ¾ of the yarns in these pulp rags are "formula stories"—that is, mechanical concoctions designed

> to tickle simple & uncritical readers, & having cut-&-dried stock characters (brave young hero, beauteous heroine, mad scientist, &c. &c.) & absurdly artificial "action" plots. Only a very small minority of the tales have any serious merit or literary intent.[86]

Rimel attempted to follow Lovecraft's lofty advice as best he could. As early as February 1934, a month after he had begun correspondence with Lovecraft, Rimel sent him a story entitled "The Spell of the Blue Stone" (later, evidently, simply "The Blue Stone"), which Lovecraft praised as "very remarkable for a beginner's work."[87] This story does not seem to survive. By March there was mention of a story entitled "The Tree on the Hill," and Lovecraft saw it in May while in Florida with Barlow. He wrote: "I read your 'Tree on the Hill' with great interest, & believe it truly captures the essence of the weird. I like it exceedingly despite a certain cumbrousness & tendency toward anticlimax in the later parts. I've made a few emendations which you may find helpful, & have tried a bit of strengthening toward the end. Hope you'll like what I've done."[88] Whether Rimel liked what Lovecraft had done or not is not recorded, nor whether Rimel prepared a text of the story including Lovecraft's revisions to send to a publisher. For some reason the story did not see print until it appeared in the fan magazine *Polaris* for September 1940.

"The Tree on the Hill"—a rather confused tale in which a character stumbles upon a strange landscape (possibly from another planet), is unable to find it again, but then finally manages to photograph it—is clearly a Lovecraft revision, even if a minor one; of the three sections of the story, the final one—as well as the citation from a mythical volume, the *Chronicle of Nath* by Rudolf Yergler—is certainly by Lovecraft. Some have believed that much of the actual prose of the second section is also Lovecraft's, but this is an open question that must be decided merely from internal evidence, since no manuscript survives. Rimel has made it clear that both the title *Chronicle of Nath* and the extract from it are Lovecraft's invention.[89]

In July Lovecraft read a story which Rimel had entitled "The Sorcery of Alfred." Finding the use of a common English given name in what purported to be a Dunsanian fantasy unconvincing, Lovecraft changed the title to "The Sorcery of Aphlar" and also made a "few changes"[90] in the text itself. The tale appeared in the *Fantasy Fan* for December 1934 and then in the *Tri-State Times* (a small local newspaper published in upstate New York) for Spring 1937; in one copy of the latter publication someone (R. H. Barlow?)

has written next to the story: "revised by HPL." On the basis of this note I reprinted the work as a Lovecraft revision, but I now do not believe that Lovecraft's changes (which again must be inferred only by internal evidence) are significant enough to warrant such a designation.

Rimel was also attempting to write poetry. In the summer of 1934 he sent Lovecraft the first sonnet in what would prove to be a cycle titled "Dreams of Yid"; evidently, Rimel was unaware that "Yid" was an opprobrious term for a Jew, so Lovecraft altered the title to "Dreams of Yith." There is manuscript evidence that Lovecraft and perhaps also Clark Ashton Smith[91] revised this cycle, the ten sonnets of which appeared in two parts in the *Fantasy Fan* (July and September 1934). Around this time Lovecraft confidently declared that "Rimel is gradually learning for himself";[92] but, with one remarkable exception, his later fictional work does not amount to much.

Rimel falls into one of two classes of revision clients for whom Lovecraft was willing to work for no charge:

> First—I help all genuine *beginners* who need a start. I tell them at the outset that I shan't keep it up for long, but that I'm willing to help them get an idea of some of the methods needed. If they have real stuff in them, they soon outgrow the need for such help. In either event, no one of them has my assistance for more than a year or so. Second—I help certain *old or handicapped people* who are pathetically in need of some cheering influence—these, even when I recognise them as incapable of improvement. In my opinion, the good accomplished by giving these poor souls a little more to live for, vastly overbalances any harm which could be wrought through their popular overestimation. Old Bill Lumley & old Doc Kuntz are typical cases of this sort. The good old fellows need a few rays of light in their last years, & anybody would be a damned prig not to let 'em have such if possible—irrespective of hyper-ethical minutiae.[93]

Even in his professional revision work, Lovecraft adopted a weird sort of altruism:

> When I revised the kindergarten pap and idiot-asylum slop of other fishes, I was, in a microscopic way, putting just the faintest bit of order, coherence, direction, and comprehensible language into something whose Neanderthaloid ineptitude was already

> mapped out. My work, ignominious as it was, was at least in the right direction—making that which was utterly amorphous and drooling just the minutest trifle less close to the protozoan stage. [94]

More free work was being dumped on Lovecraft's shoulders at this time. The Bureau of the Critics of the NAPA was chronically understaffed, and by the mid-1930s Lovecraft was gradually allowing himself to be dragged back into his long-abandoned but never-forgotten role as public critic of amateurdom. For the 1933–34 term he had the chairmanship of the bureau shoved on him and immediately asked old-time amateur Edward H. Cole for assistance: Lovecraft would write the criticism of poetry contributions, Cole of prose. This pattern was repeated for the 1934–35 term, although Lovecraft eventually got the ancient amateur Truman J. Spencer (whose *Cyclopaedia of the Literature of Amateur Journalism* appeared so long ago as 1891) to relieve him as chairman.

Lovecraft ended up writing at least part of the Bureau of Critics columns in the *National Amateur* for the following issues: December 1931; December 1932; March, June, and December 1933; June, September, and December 1934; March, June, and December 1935. These articles are in essence similar to the old "Department of Public Criticism" columns for the *United Amateur* of 1914–19, but much briefer and incorporating the radical shifts in Lovecraft's aesthetic sensibility that had clearly occurred in the interval. The column for December 1931 enunciates his new conception of poetry:

> A real poem is always a mood or picture about which the writer feels very strongly, and is always couched in illustrative hints, concrete bits of appropriate pictorial imagery, or indirect symbolic allusions—never in the bald declarative language of prose. It may or may not have metre or rhyme or both. These are generally desirable, but they are not essential and in themselves most certainly do not make poetry.

Nevertheless, Lovecraft knew that few amateurs could ever exemplify these tenets. He was aware that most of the poetry coming under his review was (as he declared in the column for June 1934) "on the level of hit-or-miss doggerel" and that "The chief complaint against this type of writing is not that it is not poetry, but that it is not forcible or effective expression of any kind."

One other amateur task unexpectedly falling on Lovecraft's lap was caused by the death on June 8, 1934, of the amateur Edith Miniter. Although

Lovecraft had not met Miniter since 1928, he always retained respect for her and did not wish her role as amateur, novelist, and folklore authority to be forgotten. On September 10 he wrote an uninspired poetic elegy, "Edith Miniter" (published in *Tryout* in an issue—seriously delayed, clearly—dated August 1934), then, on October 16, wrote the much more significant prose memoir, "Edith Miniter—Estimates and Recollections." Like "Some Notes on a Nonentity," it is one of his finest later essays and includes as much valuable information on himself as it does on its purported subject. It is here that we learn of Miniter's early parody of Lovecraft, "Falco Ossifracus, by Mr. Goodguile"; here, too, of her accounts of whippoorwills and other legends in the Wilbraham area, which Lovecraft worked into "The Dunwich Horror." It is a warm, heartfelt memoir, revealing the full breadth of the humanity that flowered in his later years:

> It is difficult to realise that Mrs. Miniter is no longer a living presence; for the sharp insight, subtle wit, rich scholarship, and vivid literary force so fresh in one's memory are things savouring of the eternal and the indestructible. Of her charm and kindliness many will write reminiscently and at length. Of her genius, skill, courage, and determination, her work and career eloquently speak.

The essay, however, appeared only posthumously in Hyman Bradofsky's amateur journal, the *Californian,* in Spring 1938.

Not long after Miniter's death, Lovecraft became embroiled in a dispute over the disposition of her papers. The townspeople of Wilbraham may have destroyed some of her fictional work because it showed them in what they took to be a bad light. It is not clear what happened to her effects, although Lovecraft had previously obtained—from Miniter herself, I imagine—several manuscripts of her work, including some lengthy pieces of fiction. These are now in the John Hay Library. Lovecraft was also designated the editor of a proposed memorial volume devoted to Miniter, to be issued by W. Paul Cook (who was apparently making an attempt—vain, as it happened—to return to publishing). Although Lovecraft gathered memoirs and other pieces desultorily for the next year or so and also accompanied Cook to see many Miniter associates in Boston in November 1934,[95] the volume was never published.

Around July Lovecraft wrote an essay, "Homes and Shrines of Poe," for Hyman Bradofsky's *Californian.* Bradofsky (1906–2002) quickly became

one of the significant figures in the NAPA during the mid-1930s; for although he was himself an undistinguished writer, his *Californian* offered unprecedented space for writers of articles and prose fiction. During the next several years he repeatedly asked Lovecraft for pieces of substantial length; in this case Bradofsky wanted a 2000-word article for the Winter 1934 issue. Lovecraft decided to write an account of all known Poe residences in America, but the resulting article is a little too mechanical and condensed to be effective.

A somewhat more significant amateur piece—perhaps an offshoot of his renewed work as public critic—is "What Belongs in Verse," published in the Spring 1935 issue of the *Perspective Review.* Here again Lovecraft, reflecting his new views on the function of poetry, admonishes budding poets to ascertain what exactly is the domain of poetry before writing anything:

> It would be well if every metrical aspirant would pause and reflect on the question of just what, out of the various things he wants to utter, ought indeed to be expressed in verse. The experiences of the ages have pretty well taught us that the heightened rhythms and unified patterns of verse are primarily adapted to *poetry*—which consists of strong feelings sharply, simply, and non-intellectually presented through indirect, figurative, and pictorial images. Therefore it is scarcely wise to choose these rhythms and patterns when we wish merely to tell something or claim something or preach something.

Another essay that appeared in Bradofsky's *Californian* (in the Winter 1935 issue) is "Some Notes on Interplanetary Fiction"; but this piece had been composed around July 1934 for one of William L. Crawford's magazines[96] although, like "Some Notes on a Nonentity," it never appeared there. In this essay Lovecraft copied whole passages from "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction," and in the end he did not see a very promising future for science fiction unless certain significant changes in outlook were made by its writers: "Insincerity, conventionality, triteness, artificiality, false emotion, and puerile extravagance reign triumphant throughout this overcrowded genre, so that none but its rarest products can possibly claim a truly adult status. And the spectacle of such persistent hollowness has led many to ask whether, indeed, any fabric of real literature can ever grow out of the given subject-matter." Although his low opinion of the field was clearly derived

from a sporadic reading of the science fiction pulps, Lovecraft did not think that "the idea of space-travel and other worlds is inherently unsuited to literary use"; such ideas must, however, be presented with much more seriousness and emotional preparation than had been done heretofore. What was cryingly essential, to Lovecraft's mind, is "an adequate sense of wonder, adequate emotions in the characters, realism in the setting and supplementary incidents, care in the choice of significant detail, and a studious avoidance of . . . hackneyed artificial characters and stupid conventional events and situations"—a mighty tall order for pulp writers, and one that most of them could not fill. Lovecraft of course singled out H. G. Wells as one of the few shining lights in the field (he did not place Verne in the rank of serious science fiction authors, his early fondness for him notwithstanding), and toward the end he cited some other random works that meet his approval: Olaf Stapledon's *Last and First Men,* G. MacLeod Winsor's *Station X* (1919; reprinted in *Amazing Stories* in July, August, and September 1926, where Lovecraft undoubtedly read it), Donald Wandrei's "The Red Brain," and "Clark Ashton Smith's best work." Lovecraft had not read the Stapledon novel by this time, as we shall see shortly, but must have heard reports of its literary substance.

It is difficult to gauge the influence of Lovecraft's essay on the subsequent development of the field, especially since it did not originally appear in a science fiction or even weird magazine and hence did not immediately reach the market for which it was written. Science fiction certainly did become a more aesthetically serious genre beginning around 1939, when John W. Campbell took over the editorship of *Astounding;* but whether Lovecraft had any direct influence on the leading writers of that period—Isaac Asimov, Robert A. Heinlein, A. E. Van Vogt, and others—is highly questionable. Nevertheless, it will become evident that he himself utilised the principles he had spelled out in this essay in his own later interplanetary work.

Late in the year Lovecraft wrote another essay for amateur publication, but it too did not appear in any amateur journal; indeed, until recently it was believed to be lost. Maurice W. Moe had asked Lovecraft to contribute an article of his choice for an amateur magazine being produced by his students. Lovecraft felt tempted to write on the subject of Roman architecture—or, more specifically, the influence of Roman architecture in the United States. The essay was finished on December 11,[97] and Lovecraft

sent the autograph manuscript off to Moe without bothering to type it—a task he could not contemplate without horror and loathing. He later believed that Moe lost the essay, for it was indeed never published; but the text of it survives in a transcript made by Arkham House. It is not an especially distinguished piece of work, being a somewhat schematic account of Roman architecture and its influence on Romanesque, Renaissance, and classic revival architecture in Europe, England, and America. Lovecraft did, apparently, manage to preserve the introductory section of it, in which he vigorously attacked modernistic (and particularly functionalist) architecture; this was published in 1935 under the title "Heritage or Modernism: Common Sense in Art Forms."

The Christmas season of 1934 was an unusually festive one at 66 College Street. Lovecraft and Annie had a tree for the first time in a quarter-century, and Lovecraft took naive delight in describing its decoration: "All my old-time ornaments were of course long dispersed, but I laid in a new & inexpensive stock at my old friend Frank Winfield Woolworth's. The finished product—with tinsel star, baubles, & tinsel draped from the boughs like Spanish moss—is certainly something to take the eye!"[98]

The New Year's season of 1934–35 once more found Lovecraft in the New York area. He left Providence very late in the evening of December 30–31, barely getting to the station alive because of the cold: "Kept my handkerchief to my nose & mouth all the time, so avoided acute lung pain & stomach sickness. But the cold got at my heart action rather badly, so that I was forced to pant for some time."[99] Reaching Pennsylvania Station at 7 A.M. on the 31st, he cooled his heels for a bit before reaching the Longs' residence at 8 A.M. R. H. Barlow was in town, and he came over in the afternoon. On January 2 occurred an unprecedentedly large gang meeting, with fifteen present—Barlow, Kleiner, Leeds, Talman, Morton, Kirk, Loveman (with a friend named Gordon), Koenig, Donald and Howard Wandrei, Long, and someone named Phillips (probably not a relative) and his friend Harry, along with Lovecraft. Talman took pictures of the various guests, catching them in odd expressions: Lovecraft felt that his picture made him look as if he were about to whistle a tune or expectorate. On the 3rd Lovecraft, Barlow, and Long visited Koenig's Electrical Testing Laboratories, a rather bizarre, futuristic place where electrical appliances of

various sorts were tested for durability. Lovecraft came home early in the morning of January 8.

On New Year's night Lovecraft had stayed up till 3 A.M. with Barlow revising a story of his—"'Till A' the Seas'" (*Californian,* Summer 1935). This fairly conventional "last man" story is of interest only because Barlow's typescript, with Lovecraft's revisions in pen, survives, so that the exact degree of the latter's authorship can be ascertained. Lovecraft has made no significant structural changes, merely making a number of cosmetic changes in style and diction; but he has written the bulk of the concluding section, especially the purportedly cosmic reflexions when the last man on earth finally meets his ironic death:

> And now at last the Earth was dead. The final, pitiful survivor had perished. All the teeming billions; the slow aeons; the empires and civilisations of mankind were summed up in this poor twisted form—and how titanically meaningless it all had been! Now indeed had come an end and climax to all the efforts of humanity—how monstrous and incredible a climax in the eyes of those poor complacent fools of the prosperous days! Not ever again would the planet know the thunderous tramping of human millions—or even the crawling of lizards and the buzz of insects, for they, too, had gone. Now was come the reign of sapless branches and endless fields of tough grasses. Earth, like its cold, imperturbable moon, was given over to silence and blackness forever.

Pretty routine stuff—but Lovecraft was at this very time in the midst of writing something on somewhat the same theme but in a much more compelling way.

By the fall of 1934 Lovecraft had not written a work of original fiction for more than a year. His confidence in his own powers as a fiction writer was clearly at a low ebb. In December 1933 he wrote to Clark Ashton Smith:

> In everything I do there is a certain concreteness, extravagance, or general crudeness which defeats the vague but insistent object I have in mind. I start out trying to find symbols expressive of a certain mood induced by a certain visual conception . . . , but when I come to put anything on paper the chosen symbols seem forced, awkward, childish, exaggerated, & essentially

> inexpressive. I have staged a cheap, melodramatic puppet-show without saying what I wanted to say in the first place.[100]

In March 1934 he fleetingly mentioned a plot idea:

> I'm not working on the actual text of any story just now, but am planning a novelette of the Arkham cycle—about what happened when somebody inherited a queer old house on the top of Frenchman's Hill & obeyed an irresistible urge to dig in a certain queer, abandoned graveyard on Hangman's Hill at the other edge of the town. This story will probably not involve the actual supernatural—being more of the "Colour Out of Space" type . . . greatly-stretched "scientifiction".[101]

Nothing more is heard of this story, which was clearly not completed and perhaps not even begun. As a preliminary for the writing of this tale, however, Lovecraft did prepare a map of Arkham—one of perhaps three he prepared in his life. As the months dragged on, Lovecraft's colleagues began to wonder whether any new story would ever emerge from his pen. In October E. Hoffmann Price urged Lovecraft to write another story about Randolph Carter, but Lovecraft declined.

Given all the difficulties Lovecraft was experiencing in capturing his ideas in fiction, it is not surprising that the writing of his next tale, "The Shadow out of Time," took more than three months (November 10, 1934, to February 22, 1935, as dated on the autograph manuscript) and went through two or perhaps three entire drafts. Moreover, the genesis of the story can be traced back at least four years before its actual composition. Before examining the painful birth of the story, let us gain some idea of its basic plot.

Nathaniel Wingate Peaslee, a professor of political economy at Miskatonic University, suddenly experiences some sort of nervous breakdown on May 14, 1908, while teaching a class. Awaking in the hospital after a collapse, he appears to have suffered an amnesia so severe that it has affected even his vocal and motor faculties. Gradually he relearns the use of his body, and indeed develops tremendous mental capacity, seemingly far beyond that of a normal human being. His wife, sensing that something is gravely wrong, obtains a divorce, and only one of his three children, Wingate, continues to have anything to do with him. Peaslee spends the next five years conducting prodigious but anomalous research at various libraries around the world, and also undertakes expeditions to various mysterious

realms. Finally, on September 27, 1913, he suddenly snaps back into his old life: when he awakes after a spell of unconsciousness, he believes he is still teaching the economics course in 1908.

From this point on Peaslee is plagued with dreams of increasing bizarrerie. He thinks that his mind has been placed in the body of an alien entity shaped like a ten-foot-high rugose cone, while this entity's mind occupies his own body. These creatures are called the Great Race "because it alone had conquered the secret of time": they have perfected a technique of mind-exchange with almost any other life-form throughout the universe and at any point in time—past, present, or future. The Great Race had established a colony on this planet in Australia 150,000,000 years ago; their minds had previously occupied the bodies of another race, but had left them because of some impending cataclysm; later they would migrate to other bodies after the cone-shaped beings were destroyed. They had compiled a voluminous library consisting of the accounts of all the other captive minds throughout the universe, and Peaslee himself writes an account of his own time for the Great Race's archives.

Peaslee believes that his dreams of the Great Race are merely the product of his esoteric study during his amnesia; but then an Australian explorer, having read some of Peaslee's articles on his dreams in psychological journals, writes to him to let him know that some archaeological remains very similar to the ones he has described as the city of the Great Race appear to have been recently discovered. Peaslee accompanies this explorer, Robert B. F. Mackenzie, on an expedition to the Great Sandy Desert, and is horrified to find that what he took to be dreams may have a real source. One night he leaves the camp to conduct a solitary exploration. He winds his way through the now underground corridors of the Great Race's city, increasingly unnerved at the *familiarity* of all the sites he has traversing. He knows that the only way to confirm whether his dreams are only dreams or some monstrous reality is to find that account he had written for the Great Race's archives. After a laborious descent he comes to the place, finds his own record, and opens it:

> No eye had seen, no hand had touched that book since the advent of man to this planet. And yet, when I flashed my torch upon it in that frightful megalithic abyss, I saw that the queerly pigmented letters on the brittle, aeon-browned cellulose pages were not indeed any nameless hieroglyphs of earth's youth. They

> were, instead, the letters of our familiar alphabet, spelling out the words of the English language in my own handwriting.

But because he loses this record on his maniacal ascent to the surface, he can still maintain, with harried rationalisation: "There is reason to hope that my experience was wholly or partly an hallucination."

The cosmic scope of this work—second only to *At the Mountains of Madness* in this regard—allows "The Shadow out of Time" to attain a very high place in Lovecraft's fictional work; and the wealth of circumstantial detail in the history, biology, and civilisation of the Great Race is as convincing as in *At the Mountains of Madness* and perhaps still better integrated into the story. Once again, it is cosmicism of both space and time that is at work here; this is made especially clear in a piquant passage in which Peaslee meets other captive minds of the Great Race:

> There was a mind from the planet we know as Venus, which would live incalculable epochs to come; and one from an outer moon of Jupiter six million years in the past. Of earthly minds there were some from the winged, star-headed, half-vegetable race of palaeogean Antarctica; one from the reptile people of fabled Valusia; three from the furry pre-human Hyperborean worshippers of Tsathoggua; one from the wholly abominable Tcho-Tchos; two from the arachnid denizens of earth's last age; five from the hardy coleopterous species immediately following mankind, to which the Great Race was some day to transfer its keenest minds en masse in the face of horrible peril; and several from different branches of humanity.

That mention of the "hardy coleopterous species" (i.e., beetles) again points to an undercurrent that we have already seen in other tales—the denigration of human self-importance. Lovecraft is, of course, on solid ground scientifically in believing that insects will in all likelihood survive humanity on this planet (he had appended a note to this effect to Barlow's "'Till A' the Seas,'" since Barlow had postulated that mankind would be the last species on the earth); but he adds a further dryly cynical twist by maintaining that beetles will not only outlast us but also become the dominant *intellectual* species on the planet, so much that the Great Race will deign to occupy their bodies when the cone-shaped bodies face peril. Shortly afterwards Peaslee adds a harrowing note: "I shivered at the mysteries the past may conceal, and trembled at the menaces the future may bring forth. What was hinted in the

speech of the post-human entities of the fate of mankind produced such an effect on me that I will not set it down here."

Of course, it is the Great Race that become the centrepiece of the story, in such a way that they—like the Old Ones of *At the Mountains of Madness*—come to seem like the "heroes" of the tale. Much is told of their history and civilisation; but, unlike the Old Ones, they have suffered scarcely any decline from the prodigious intellectual and aesthetic heights they have achieved, perhaps because their goal is not so much the acquisition of territory and the establishment of colonies as the pure exercise of thought. I shall study the political and utopian speculations in this story a little later.

One of the few flaws in the tale, perhaps, is Lovecraft's imprecision—indeed, his complete silence—on the matter of exactly *how* the Great Race effect their mind-exchanges, especially across gulfs of time. When the mind of one of the Great Race is about to vacate Peaslee's body, it sets up a device made up of "a queer mixture of rods, wheels, and mirrors, though only about two feet tall, one foot wide, and one foot thick"; in some fashion this device effects the exchange, although there is absolutely no indication of how it does so. There is a later reference to "suitable mechanical aid" that somehow permits a mind to go forward in time and displace the mind of some entity, but this is again the only clue we ever receive of this procedure; and the mention of "mind-casting outside the recognised senses" and "extra-sensory" methods used by the Great Race stretches Lovecraft's mechanistic materialism to the very limit.

But this is a small blemish in a tale that opens up tremendous cosmic vistas and, as with *At the Mountains of Madness,* succeeds triumphantly in displacing humanity from centre stage and enthroning fabulously alien entities there instead. The spectacular concluding tableau—a man finding a document he must have written 150,000,000 years ago—must be one of the most outré moments in all literature. As Peaslee himself reflects, "If that abyss and what it held were real, there is no hope. Then, all too truly, there lies upon this world of man a mocking and incredible shadow out of time."

The basic mind-exchange scenario of the tale has been taken from at least three sources. First, of course, is H. B. Drake's *The Shadowy Thing,* which we have already seen as an influence on "The Thing on the Doorstep." Second, there is Henri Béraud's obscure novel *Lazarus* (1925), which Lovecraft had in his library and which he read in 1928.[102] This novel presents a man, Jean Mourin, who remains in a hospital for sixteen years (for

the period 1906–22) while suffering a long amnesia; during this time he develops a personality (named Gervais by the hospital staff) very different from that of his usual self. Every now and then this alternate personality returns; once Jean thinks he sees Gervais when he looks in the mirror, and later he thinks Gervais is stalking him. Jean even undertakes a study of split personalities, as Peaslee does, in an attempt to come to grips with the situation. (Parenthetically, the amnesia motif in "The Shadow out of Time" makes for a very provocative autobiographical connexion. Peaslee's amnesia dates from 1908 to 1913, the exact time when Lovecraft himself, having had to withdraw from high school, descended into hermitry. Perhaps he had himself come to believe that another personality had taken over during this time.)

A third dominant influence is not a literary work but a film: *Berkeley Square* (1933), which enraptured Lovecraft by its portrayal of a man whose mind somehow drifts back into the body of his ancestor in the eighteenth century. This source in particular may have been critical, for it seems to have supplied Lovecraft with suggestions on how he might embody his long-held belief (expressed in "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction") that "*Conflict with time* seems to me the most potent and fruitful theme in all human expression."

Lovecraft first saw *Berkeley Square* in November 1933, on the recommendation of J. Vernon Shea, who even then was an ardent film enthusiast and would remain one for the rest of his life. Lovecraft was initially much taken with the fidelity with which the eighteenth-century atmosphere was captured;[103] but later, having seen the film again (he saw it a total of four times[104]), he began to detect some flaws in conception. *Berkeley Square* is based on a play of that title by John L. Balderston (1929), and is a very faithful adaptation of the play, since Balderston himself cowrote the screenplay. It tells the story of Peter Standish, a man in the early twentieth century who is so fascinated with the eighteenth century—and in particular his own ancestor and namesake—that he somehow transports himself literally into the past and into the body of his ancestor. Lovecraft detected two problems with the execution of the idea: 1) Where was the mind or personality of the eighteenth-century Peter Standish when the twentieth-century Peter was occupying his body? 2) How could the eighteenth-century Peter's diary, written in part while the twentieth-century Peter was occupying his body, not take cognisance of the fact?[105] These

sorts of difficulties seem to adhere in any sort of time-travel story, but "The Shadow out of Time" seems to have obviated them as well as could be imagined.

Berkeley Square is a striking production, with Leslie Howard superbly playing the role of Peter Standish. In some ways it is more similar to Lovecraft's *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* which is perhaps why Lovecraft was so initially struck with it. I cannot tell whether Lovecraft ever read the play; certainly he had not before he saw the film. At one point in the play (but not in the film), Peter even compares himself to a shadow.[106] But both the play and the film are worth studying for their possible influence on this last of Lovecraft's major tales.

Other, smaller features in "The Shadow out of Time" may also have literary sources. Peaslee's alienation from his family may echo Walter de la Mare's novel *The Return* (1910), in which again an eighteenth-century personality seems to fasten itself upon the body of a twentieth-century individual, causing his wife to cease all relations with him. And Leonard Cline's *The Dark Chamber* (1927), in which a man attempts to recapture his entire past, is perhaps the source for the vast archives of the Great Race: Cline's protagonist, Richard Pride, keeps an immense warehouse full of documents about his own life, and toward the end of the novel the narrator frantically traverses this warehouse before finding Pride killed by his own dog.

Two other literary influences can be noted if only to be dismissed. It has frequently been assumed that "The Shadow out of Time" is simply an extrapolation upon Wells's *The Time Machine;* but there is really very little resemblance between the two works. Lovecraft did, as noted earlier, read Wells's novel in 1925, but there is little in it that might be thought to have a direct bearing on his story. Olaf Stapledon's *Last and First Men* (1930) has been suggested as an influence on the enormous stretches of time reflected in the story, but Lovecraft did not read this work until August 1935, months after the tale's completion.[107]

It is, indeed, highly misleading to imagine that "The Shadow out of Time" is merely a stitching-together of previous works of literature and film. Lovecraft would not have been struck by these works if he had not for many years had ideas running roughly parallel with them. At best, these various works gave suggestions as to how Lovecraft could execute his conception;

and in the end he executed it in a manner far more intellectually compelling and imaginatively stimulating than any of his predecessors.

Lovecraft had, to be sure, suggested the vast gulfs of time in *At the Mountains of Madness,* but he does so here in a particularly *intimate* way that effects a powerful fusion between internal and external horror. Although Peaslee is emphatic (and correct) in believing that "What came, came from *somewhere else,*" the moment when, in his dream, he sees himself to be in the body of one of the alien entities is as chilling an instance of existential horror as one is likely to find. Peaslee comments poignantly, "it is not wholesome to watch monstrous objects doing what one had known only human beings to do." In a sense, it could be thought that this notion of "possession" by an extraterrestrial being harks back all the way to "Beyond the Wall of Sleep" (1919); but the monumentally expanded and subtilised expression of the idea in "The Shadow out of Time" makes one realise the enormous strides Lovecraft had made as a writer in a mere fifteen years.

It is now time to return to the difficulties Lovecraft experienced in capturing the essence of this story on paper. The core of the plot had already been conceived as early as 1930, emerging out of a discussion between Lovecraft and Clark Ashton Smith regarding the plausibility of stories involving time-travel. Lovecraft properly noted: "The weakness of most tales with this theme is that they do not provide for the recording, in history, of those inexplicable events in the past which were caused by the backward time-voyagings of persons of the present & future."[108] He had already mapped out the cataclysmic ending at this time: "One baffling thing that could be introduced is to have a modern man discover, among documents exhumed from some prehistoric buried city, a mouldering papyrus or parchment *written in English, & in his own handwriting*."

By March 1932 Lovecraft had already devised the basic idea of mind-exchange over time, as outlined in another letter to Smith:

> I have a sort of time idea of very simple nature floating around in the back of my head, but don't know when I shall ever get around to using it. The notion is that of a race in primal Lomar perhaps even before the founding of Olathoë & in the heyday of Hyperborean Commoriom—who gained a knowledge of all arts & sciences by sending thought-streams ahead to drain the minds of men in future ages—angling in time, as it were. Now & then they get hold of a really competent man of learning,

> & annex all his thoughts. Usually they only keep their victims tranced for a short time, but once in a while, when they need some special piece of continuous information, one of their number sacrifices himself for the race & actually changes bodies with the first thoroughly satisfactory victim he finds. The victim's brain then goes back to 100,000 B.C.—into the hypnotist's body to live in Lomar for the rest of his life, while the hypnotist from dead aeons animates the modern clay of his victims.[109]

It is important to quote this passage at length to see both the significant alterations made in the finished story—where the mind of the Great Race rarely remains in a captive body for the rest of its life, but only for a period of years, after which a return switch is effected—and to show that the conception of mind-exchange over time had been devised *before* Lovecraft saw *Berkeley Square,* the only other work that may conceivably have influenced this point.

Lovecraft began the actual writing of "The Shadow out of Time" in late 1934. He announced in November: "I developed that story *mistily and allusively* in 16 pages, but it was no go. Thin and unconvincing, with the climactic revelation wholly unjustified by the hash of visions preceding it."[110] What this sixteen-page version could possibly have been like is almost beyond conjecture. The disquisition about the Great Race must have been radically compressed (Lovecraft suggested as much when he noted "an occasional plethora of *visibly explanatory* matter" in his tales and the possibility of replacing it with *"brief implication or suggestion"*[111]), and this is what clearly dissatisfied Lovecraft about this version; for he came to realise that this passage, far from being an irrelevant digression, was actually the heart of the story. What then occurred is a little unclear: Is the second draft the version we now have? In late December he spoke of a "second version" that "fails to satisfy me"[112] and was uncertain whether to finish it as it was or to destroy it and start afresh. He may have done the latter, for long after finishing the story he declared that the final version was "itself the 3d complete version of the same story."[113] Whether there were two or three entire versions must remain uncertain; but clearly this tale, scribbled harriedly in pencil in a small notebook later given to R. H. Barlow, was one of the most difficult in genesis of any of Lovecraft's tales. And yet, in many ways it is the culmination of his fictional career and by no means an

unfitting capstone to a twenty-year attempt to capture the sense of wonder and awe he felt at the boundless reaches of space and time. Although Lovecraft would write one more original tale and work on several additional revisions and collaborations with colleagues, his life as a fiction writer ends, and ends fittingly, with “The Shadow out of Time.”[114]

23. Caring about the Civilisation

(1929–1937)

In the summer of 1936 Lovecraft made an interesting admission:

> I used to be a hide-bound Tory simply for traditional and antiquarian reasons—and because I had never done any real *thinking* on civics and industry and the future. The depression—and its concomitant publicisation of industrial, financial, and governmental problems—jolted me out of my lethargy and led me to reëxamine the facts of history in the light of unsentimental scientific analysis; and it was not long before I realised what an ass I had been. The liberals at whom I used to laugh were the ones who were right—for they were living in the present while I had been living in the past. They had been using science while I had been using romantic antiquarianism. At last I began to recognise something of the way in which capitalism works—always piling up concentrated wealth and impoverishing the bulk of the population until the strain becomes so intolerable as to force artificial reform.[1]

This is, oddly enough, one of the few times Lovecraft explicitly mentioned the depression as signalling a radical change in his beliefs on politics, economics, and society; but perhaps he need not have made such an admission, for his letters from 1930 onward return again and again to these subjects.

The stock market crash of October 1929 would not have affected Lovecraft very significantly, or at least directly, since of course the chief victims were those who had invested in stocks, and Lovecraft was so poor that he had little money to invest. Nor did he have any fears of immediate unemployment, since he was working freelance as a revisionist and very occasional contributor to the pulps. It is certainly true that many pulp

magazines did not fare well in the depression—*Strange Tales* (1931–33) folded after seven issues, *Astounding* temporarily ceased publication in 1933 and did not resume until it was sold to another publisher, and even *Weird Tales* went temporarily to a bimonthly schedule in 1931—but Lovecraft was not writing much original fiction at this time, so that he had no great concern about the shrinkage in markets. The vast bulk of his revision work did not involve selling stories to the pulps, but rather the revising or copyediting of general fiction, essays, poetry, or treatises, and all through the 1930s he seems to have managed to eke along in no worse a situation than he was before.

It is essential to emphasise all this, for it means that there was little in Lovecraft's *personal* circumstances that led him to the adoption of a moderate socialism; he did not—as many impoverished individuals did—become attracted to political or economic radicalism merely because he found himself destitute. Firstly, he was never truly destitute—at least, not in comparison with many others in the depression (including some of his own friends), who lost all their money and belongings and had no job and no roof over their heads; secondly, he scorned communism as unworkable and culturally devastating, recommending an economic system considerably to the left of what this country actually adopted under Roosevelt but nevertheless supporting the New Deal as the only plan of action that had any chance of being carried out.

And yet, Lovecraft's conversion to socialism was not entirely surprising, first because socialism as a political theory and a concrete alternative to capitalism was experiencing a resurgence during the 1930s, and second because Lovecraft's brand of socialism still retained many of the aristocratic features that had shaped his earlier political thought. The latter point I shall take up presently; the former is worth elaborating briefly.

The United States has never been an especially fertile soil for socialism or communism, but there have been occasions when they have been a little less unpopular than usual. Socialism had done reasonably well in the first two decades of the century: the I.W.W. (Industrial Workers of the World), founded in 1905, was gaining influence in its support of strikes by a variety of labour unions, and Eugene V. Debs won nearly a million votes in 1912 as a third-party candidate. But in the period immediately after World War I, with its "Red Scare" and virulent suppression of all radical groups, socialism was forced underground for nearly a decade.

The depression led to a resurgence in which socialists teamed with labour to demand reforms in working conditions. The socialist presidential candidate Norman Thomas polled a little less than 900,000 votes in 1932—not a very large figure, but a larger one than he achieved during any of his other campaigns (he was a candidate in every presidential election from 1928 to 1948). Intellectuals were also in support of socialism (either of a moderate or Marxist variety) or outright communism, as Lovecraft himself notes on one occasion:

> Virtually *all* the reputable authors & critics in the United States are political radicals—Dreiser, Sherwood Anderson, Hemingway, Dos Passos, Eastman, O'Neill, Lewis, Maxwell Anderson, MacLeish, Edmund Wilson, Fadiman—but the list is endless. . . . The cream of human brains—the sort of brains not wrapped up in personal luxury & immediate advantage is slowly drifting away from the blind class-loyalty toward a better-balanced position in which the symmetrical structure & permanent stability of the whole social organism is a paramount consideration.[2]

The degree to which Lovecraft's own thought underwent a radical shift in just over a decade is strikingly illustrated by contrasting his snide reference to the "lawless I.W.W." in "Bolshevism" (*Conservative,* July 1919) with his echo of the I.W.W. song "Hallelujah, I'm a bum!" in a 1936 letter.[3]

And yet, that shift was in many ways very slow, even grudging at the outset. It seems jointly to have been the result of observation of the increasingly desperate state of affairs engendered by the depression and by more searching thought on what could be done about it. President Hoover's staunch belief in voluntarism had made him unwilling to permit the government to give direct relief to the unemployed. In later years Lovecraft flayed the man he had supported in 1928 with the vicious and commonly used soubriquet "Let-'em-Starve Hoover"; Hoover was, however, not an evil man but merely a basically timid politician who did not realise the extraordinary difficulties into which the country had fallen and did not have the flexibility of imagination to propose radical solutions for them. Even Roosevelt was only just radical enough to advocate policies that kept the country from total economic collapse, and everyone knows that it was really World War II that pulled the United States and the world out of the depression.

It is in January 1931 that we first find an inkling of a change. Lovecraft wrote:

> Ethical idealism demands socialism on poetical cosmic grounds involving some mythical linkage of individuals to one another and to the universe—while hard-fact realism is gradually yielding to socialism because it is the only mechanical adjustment of forces which will save our culture-fostering stratified society in the face of a growing revolutionary pressure from increasingly desperate under-men whom mechanisation is gradually forcing into unemployment and starvation.[4]

But it can be seen from the tone of this passage—and of the whole letter in which it is embedded—that Lovecraft was advocating the second motive for socialism, and that what really concerned him was not the welfare of "the rabble" but the civilisation-ending revolution this rabble could cause if it was not appeased. For after all, "All that I care about is *the civilisation":*[5] "*The maintenance of [a] high cultural standard is the only social or political enthusiasm I possess* . . . In effect, I venerate the principle of aristocracy without being especially interested in aristocrats as persons. I don't care who has the dominance, so long as that dominance remains a *certain kind* of dominance, intellectually and aesthetically considered."[6] In other words, Lovecraft sought a state of culture that allowed for the free exercise of thought and imagination, the production of vital works of art, and a general ambiance of "civilised" values and modes of behaviour. Up to the last few years of his life, Lovecraft believed that only a socially recognised aristocracy could ensure such a condition—either through actual patronage of the arts or through a general climate of refined civilisation that would axiomatically be regarded as a condition toward which all society would aspire. Revolution of any kind was the last thing he wanted, and this is why he loathed Bolshevik Russia to the end of his days—because it had fostered a *cultural* destruction that was in no way necessary to the *economic* reform that its leaders were claiming as their paramount goals. It would take some years for Lovecraft to modify his position on aristocracy, but I may as well note here how that modification was finally articulated in 1936:

> . . . what I used to respect was not really aristocracy, but a set of personal qualities which aristocracy then developed better than any other system . . . a set of qualities, however, whose merit lay only in a psychology of non-calculative, non-competitive

> disinterestedness, truthfulness, courage, and generosity fostered by good education, minimum economic stress, and assumed position, AND JUST AS ACHIEVABLE THROUGH SOCIALISM AS THROUGH ARISTOCRACY.[7]

Lovecraft's debate with Robert E. Howard on the relative merits of civilisation and barbarism clarifies his political concerns while at the same time linking them with his general metaphysics and ethics. The debate was an offshoot of a number of polarities discussed by these two very different individuals—the physical vs. the intellectual, the frontier vs. the city, and the like. Neither man's position is as simple as these dichotomies suggest, and I don't think it is possible to assert (as many Howard supporters have done) that the debate—which became quite testy at times and even led to a certain hostility and resentment, although each always claimed to respect the other's position—was somehow "won" by Howard. As with Lovecraft's dispute with E. Hoffmann Price as to the relative merits of pulp fiction and literature, the matter really is one of temperamental preference rather than truth or falsity.

Lovecraft began the debate—and at the same time justified his advocacy of a political system that encourages what he felt to be the highest fruits of civilisation, aesthetic and intellectual development—by saying:

> We cannot, in view of what the cultural capacity of mankind has been shown to be, afford to base a civilisation on the low cultural standards of an undeveloped majority. Such a civilisation of mere working, eating, drinking, breeding, and vacantly loafing or childishly playing isn't worth maintaining. None of the members of it are really better off than as if they didn't exist at all. . . . No settled, civilised group has any reason to exist unless it can develop a decently high degree of intellectual and artistic cultivation. The more who can share in this cultivation the better, but we must not invidiously hinder its growth merely because the number of sharers has to be relatively small at first, and because it can perhaps never . . . include every individual in the whole group.[8]

Howard—although he admitted (perhaps disingenuously) that the physical side of human beings was "admittedly inferior to the mental side"—objected to what he believed to be Lovecraft's exaltation of the artist or intellectual as the summit of humanity; but in doing so he seriously

distorted Lovecraft's point: "Of all snobberies, the assumption that intellectual endeavors, attainments and accomplishments are the only worth-while and important things in life, is the least justifiable."[9] Lovecraft countered:

> No one has ever claimed that the artist is more important in the maintenance of some sort of civilisation than is the farmer, mechanic, engineer, or statesman. . . . However, when we consider the vast enlargement of life made possible by the expansion of the personality under the influence of art; and realise how infinitely more worth living is a life enriched by such an expansion; we are certainly justified in censuring any civilisation which does not favour this process. It is not that we regard art or any other thing in life as "sacred", but that we recognise the importance of something which naturally forms the chief life-interest of the most highly evolved types. Art certainly *is* more intrinsically removed from the unevolved protoplasmic stage of organic reaction than any other human manifestation except pure reason—hence our grouping of it as one of the "highest" things in life. By "highest" we do not mean "most important to survival", but simply "most advanced in intrinsic development".[10]

At this point Howard became angry, feeling insulted because of Lovecraft's suggestion (very implicit, but probably real in some sense) that Howard was somehow "inferior" for not being able to appreciate the "highest" fruits of culture; and the debate lost steam thereafter, as both sides apparently decided it would be politic to suspend it to preserve amity. Nevertheless, Lovecraft's conception of his ideal society is etched strongly in these and other letters of this period.

During the early years of the depression Lovecraft actually fancied that the plutocracy—now about the only thing equivalent to an aristocracy in this country—might itself take over the role as patron of the arts: "The chances are that our future plutocrats will try to cultivate all the aristocratic arts, and succeed at a fair number of them. The new culture will of course lack certain emotional overtones of the old culture which depended on obsolete views and feelings—but . . . there's no need of mourning about that too deeply."[11] My feeling is that this view was derived from observation of Samuel Insull, the Chicago electricity magnate who—at least

before the spectacular collapse of his utilities empire in 1932 and his later indictment on embezzlement and larceny charges—was a leading patron of the arts (he had, among other things, been the chief financial backer of the new Chicago Civic Opera Building). Lovecraft also believed that the plutocrats would willingly make concessions to the masses simply in order to stave off revolution:

> Being men of sense at bottom despite their present confused myopia, they will probably see the need of some new division of the fruits of industry, and will at last call in the perfectly disinterested sociological planners—the men of broad culture and historic perspective whom they have previously despised as mere academic theorists—who have some chance of devising workable middle courses. Rather than let an infuriated mob set up a communist state or drag society into complete anarchical chaos, the industrialists will probably consent to the enforcement of a fascistic regime under which will be ensured a tolerable minimum of subsistence in exchange for orderly conduct and a willingness to labour when labouring opportunities exist. They will accept their overwhelmingly reduced profits as an alternative preferable to complete collapse and business-social annihilation.[12]

These views may strike us as quite naive, but perhaps we have become too cynical from the rebirth of an appallingly consumeristic capitalism following World War II, in which the "captains of industry" are anything but cultivated in their artistic tastes or interested in anything but personal aggrandisement. In any case, in the course of time Lovecraft saw the error of his ways and discarded this approach to the solution of the problem.

There were probably no specific events that led Lovecraft to the shift, but rather an accumulation of many. He was well aware of the furore caused by the Bonus Army in the summer of 1932. The Bonus Army was a pathetic group of desperately poor unemployed World War I veterans who marched across the country to Washington in late May to demand the early distribution of a bonus that was not scheduled for payment until 1945. They hung about in makeshift tents for months; eventually their numbers swelled to about 20,000. On July 28 the police provoked a confrontation with the veterans, and in the ensuing riots two veterans were killed. In the end they disbanded without achieving their aim.

Lovecraft, commenting in August, believed that the government had no choice but to act with vigour ("The idea of marching on a capital with the idea of influencing legislation is at best a crazy one and at worst a dangerously revolutionary one"), but he nevertheless sympathised with the marchers and felt that the issue of the bonus itself was not easily resolved: "I find myself sometimes on one side and sometimes on the other."[13]

More significant, perhaps, was the so-called Technocracy survey of 1932. The term technocracy was coined by an inventor, William H. Smith, to mean rule by technologists. Elaborated by Howard Scott, an economist and intellectual, the notion led to what is perhaps Lovecraft's most important conclusion about the economic state of the nation: that technology had made full employment impossible even in principle because machines that required only a few workers to tend them were now doing the work previously done by many individuals, and this tendency would only increase as more and more sophisticated machines were developed:

> Do you attempt to account for the magnitude of the present depression? In surveying the effects of mechanis'd industry upon society, I have been led to a certain change of political views. . . . With the universal use and improvement of machinery, all the needed labour of the world can be perform'd by a relatively few persons, leaving vast numbers permanently unemployable, depression or no depression. If these people are not fed and amused, they will dangerously revolt; hence we must either institute a programme of steady pensioning—panem et circenses—or else subject industry to a governmental supervision which will lessen its profits but spread its jobs amongst more men working less hours. For many reasons the latter course seems to me most reasonable . . .[14]

Here again, of course, the danger of revolt seems uppermost in Lovecraft's mind. Although the Technocracy movement fizzled by early 1933, its influence on this aspect of Lovecraft's thought was permanent; and its real significance was in bringing emphatically home to Lovecraft the brutal truth—one that he had tried to prevent himself from acknowledging at least through 1930—that the machine age was here to stay. Any sensible and realistic economic and political system must then be based on this premise.

The election of 1932 was of course a landmark. Lovecraft actually declared just before the election that he didn't think there was much to

choose between Hoover and Roosevelt,[15] since he claimed to believe that neither the Republicans nor the Democrats were bold enough to propose sufficiently radical measures to solve the long-term problem of capitalism; but he also knew that the election was a foregone conclusion. Roosevelt won in one of the largest landslides in American history; but his inauguration would not occur until March 4, 1933, and on February 22 Lovecraft wrote one of his most concentrated and impassioned pleas for political and economic reform—the essay "Some Repetitions on the Times."

The timing of the piece is no accident. The few weeks preceding Roosevelt's inauguration could well be said to have been the closest this country ever came to an actual revolt by the dispossessed. The depression had reached its nadir: banks were failing across the country; troops were actually deployed in many major cities to guard against riots; the economy seemed at a near-standstill. Lovecraft's fears of a culture-destroying revolution seemed quite realistic, and they no doubt account for the urgent, even harried tone of his essay.

"Some Repetitions on the Times" survives only in an autograph manuscript, and Lovecraft appears to have made no effort whatever to prepare it for publication. Perhaps he felt that he was not enough of an authority on the subject, but in that case why write the treatise at all? There is no evidence that he even showed it to any of his colleagues, with whom he conducted long debates in letters about the economic situation. In any case, Lovecraft had by this time landed wholly in the (moderate) socialist camp—economically, at least.

In this essay Lovecraft finally realised that business leaders—and, for that matter, the ordinary run of politicians—were simply not going to deal with economic realities with the vigour and radicalism they required; only direct government intervention could solve the immediate problem. "It is by this time virtually clear to everyone save self-blinded capitalists and politicians that the old relation of the individual to the needs of the community has utterly broken down under the impact of intensively productive machinery." What is the solution? In purely economic terms Lovecraft advocated the following proposals:

> 1. Governmental control of large accumulations of resources (including utilities) and their operation not on a basis of profit but strictly on need;

2. Fewer working hours (but at higher pay) so that all who were capable of working could work at a livable wage;
3. Unemployment insurance and old age pensions.

None of these ideas was, of course, Lovecraft's original contribution—they had been talked about for years or decades, and the very title of Lovecraft's essay, "Some Repetitions on the Times," makes it clear that he is simply echoing what others had said over and over again. Let us consider the history of these proposals in greater detail.

The least problematical was the last. Old age pensions had been instituted in Germany as early as 1889, in Australia in 1903, and in England tentatively in 1908 and definitively by 1925. In 1911–14 unemployment insurance came to England. In the United States, the Social Security Act was signed by Roosevelt on August 14, 1935, although disbursement of money did not begun until 1940.

Government control of large accumulations of wealth has always been a pipe-dream in this country—plutocrats will always be plutocrats—but government control (or at least supervision) of utilities and other institutions was by no means a radical conception in the 1930s. The Roosevelt administration did not undertake such an action until 1934, when the Federal Communications Commission (FCC) was formed to regulate interstate telephone and telegraph rates. By 1935 the Federal Power Commission was governing interstate sale of electric power (natural gas came under control in 1938), the Public Utility Holding Company Act had authorised the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) to curb abuses by holding companies (specifically those governing utilities), banks came under federal regulation, and higher taxes were imposed on the wealthy. This was certainly not socialism—although reactionary politicians and businessmen constantly bandied that word about to frighten the electorate and to preserve their own wealth—but it was at least a step in that direction. Of course, many foreign countries exercised actual governmental ownership of public utilities, whereas the United States continues to this day to settle only for governmental supervision. As for what Lovecraft in "Some Repetitions on the Times" calls "bald assertion of governmental control over large accumulations of resources [and] a potential limitation of private property beyond certain liberal limits"—I have trouble imagining that he believed this to be a political reality even during the depression; but evidently he did so.

The most striking of Lovecraft's proposals is the limitation of working hours so that all who were capable of working could work. This idea enjoyed a brief popularity among political theorists and reformers, but in the end the rabid opposition of business doomed it. In April 1933 Senator Hugo Black of Alabama and William Connery, chairman of the House Labor Committee, proposed a bill for a thirty-hour week so that more people could be employed. Roosevelt did not favour it and countered with the NIRA (National Industrial Recovery Act), which ultimately created the NRA (National Recovery Administration). This established a minimum wage of $12 a week for a forty-hour week. But, although hailed initially as a landmark in cooperation between government, labour, and business, the NRA quickly ran into trouble because its director, General Hugh Samuel Johnson, believed that businesses would of their own accord adopt codes of fair competition and fair labour practice, something that naturally did not happen. The NRA became the object of criticism from all sides, especially among labour unions and small businesses. Less than two years after it was enacted, on May 27, 1935, it was struck down by the Supreme Court as unconstitutional and was officially abolished on January 1, 1936. Many of its labour provisions, however, were ultimately reestablished by other legislation.

Although the movement for shorter working hours continued to the end of the depression, it never regained the momentum it had had in the early 1930s, prior to its coopting by the NRA.[16] The forty-hour work week has now been enshrined as a sacrosanct tenet of business, and there is not much likelihood that shorter hours—the chief component of Lovecraft's (and others') plans for full employment—will ever be carried out.

Roosevelt, of course, realised that unemployment was the major problem to be dealt with in the short term (at least 12,000,000 were unemployed in 1932—nearly a quarter of the work force), and one of the first things he did upon gaining office was to establish various emergency measures in an attempt to relieve it. Among these was the CCC (Civilian Conservation Corps), which would enlist young men from the ages of seventeen to twenty-four for the reforestation of parks, flood control, power development, and the like. Incredibly, Lovecraft's friend Bernard Austin Dwyer, although thirty-eight at the time, was accepted for the CCC and in late 1934 went to Camp 25 in Peekskill, New York, where he eventually became editor of the camp newsletter.

Some have wondered why Lovecraft himself never made an attempt to sign on to some such program. But he was never strictly speaking unemployed: he always had revision work and very sporadic sales of original fiction, and perhaps he feared that he would lose even these modest sources of income if he joined a government-sponsored work program. What of the WPA (Works Progress Administration), instituted in the summer of 1935? This mostly generated blue-collar construction jobs obviously unsuited for Lovecraft, but the Federal Writers' Project was an important subdivision of the WPA and resulted in the production of a number of significant works of art and scholarship. Lovecraft could perhaps have worked on the guide to Rhode Island published in 1937, but he never made any effort to do so.

Once Lovecraft had jumped on the New Deal bandwagon, he defended its policies, at least privately, from attacks on both sides of the political spectrum. Attacks from the right were, of course, the more vociferous, and Lovecraft faced a good deal of it in his own hometown. In the spring of 1934 the conservative *Providence Journal* wrote a series of editorials hostile to the new administration, and Lovecraft responded with a lengthy letter to the editor, titled "The Journal and the New Deal," dated April 13, 1934. As with "Some Repetitions on the Times," I wonder what compelled Lovecraft to write this treatise; or, rather, how he expected the newspaper to publish even a fraction of this 4000-word screed. The piece does, however, begin to evince that scornful sarcasm which enters into much of Lovecraft's later political writing (mostly in letters) as he found himself becoming increasingly exasperated with the slowness of reform and the ferocity of right-wing sniping:

> And so, though a sincere admirer of the Journal and Bulletin's news and literary standards, a third-generation subscriber without other daily informative pabulum, and a product of an hereditarily Republican and conservative background, the writer must register dissent from the heated periods of the editorial genius whose alarm for the public liberties is so touching. It is impossible not to see in such an alarm the blind defensive gesture of vested capital and its spokesmen as distinguished from the longer-range thought which recogises historic change, values the essence instead of the surface forms of human quality, and tests its appraisals by

> standards deeper than those of mere convention and recent custom.

One perhaps unintended effect of the economic crisis was to deflect Lovecraft's attention from other social evils. The 18th Amendment was repealed on December 6, 1933. A year and a half earlier Lovecraft had already announced that his enthusiasm for prohibition was a thing of the past,[17] but he made it clear that this was only because he realised that the law against liquor was essentially unenforceable:

> As for prohibition, I was originally in favour of it, & would still be in favour of anything which could make intoxicating liquor *actually* difficult to get or retain. I see absolutely no good, & a vast amount of social harm, in the practice of alcohol drinking. It is clear, however, that under the existing governmental attitude (i.e., in the absence of a strong fascistic policy) prohibition can scarcely be enforced, & can scarcely be even imperfectly half-enforced, without an altogether disproportionate concentration of energy & resources—so that the repeal of the 18th amendment at this trying historic period was hardly worth fighting. In other words, the burden of fighting the alcohol evil was so heavy as to form a new evil greater than the original one—like getting crippled from the recoil of a huge musket shot off at a relatively insignificant rat. The present age is so full of perils & evils—principally economic—infinitely worse than alcohol, that we cannot spare the strength just now for a fight against this minor enemy.[18]

Lovecraft was surely not pleased at the repeal, but this reference to alcoholism as a "relatively insignificant rat" certainly contrasts with his fulminations against drinking a decade and a half earlier.

Where Lovecraft departed most radically from the Roosevelt administration itself as well as from the main stream of American opinion was in his suggestions for political reform. In effect, he saw economics and politics as quite separate phenomena requiring separate solutions. While proposing the spreading of economic wealth to the many, he concurrently advocated the restricting of political power to the few. This should come as no surprise, given Lovecraft's early (and romanticised) support for the English aristocracy and monarchy, his later readings in Nietzsche, and his own

intellectual superiority. And yet, because Lovecraft enunciated his view somewhat misleadingly—or, perhaps, in a deliberately provocative way—he has taken some criticism from later commentators.

In the first place, Lovecraft's "oligarchy of intelligence and education" (as he termed it in "Some Repetitions on the Times") was not actually an aristocracy or even an oligarchy in the strictest sense. It was indeed a democracy—but merely a democracy that recognised the ill effects of universal suffrage if the electorate consisted (as in fact it does) largely of the uneducated or the politically naive. Lovecraft's argument was a very simple one, and was again an outgrowth of his realisation of the socioeconomic complexities brought on by the machine age: governmental decisions are now too complex for anyone other than a sophisticated specialist to understand.

> Today all government involves the most abstruse & complicated technology, so that the average citizen is absolutely without power to form any intelligent estimate of the value of any proposed measure. Only the most highly trained technicians can have any real idea of what any governmental policy or operation is about—hence the so-called "will of the people" is merely a superfluity without the least trace of value in meeting & dealing with specific problems.[19]

He discussed the matter with pungent cynicism to Robert E. Howard:

> Democracy—as distinguished from universal opportunity and good treatment—is today a fallacy and impossibility so great that any serious attempt to apply it cannot be considered as other than a mockery and a jest. . . . Government "by popular vote" means merely the nomination of doubtfully qualified men by doubtfully authorised and seldom competent cliques of professional politicians representing hidden interests, followed by a sardonic farce of emotional persuasion in which the orators with the glibbest tongues and flashiest catch-words herd on their side a numerical majority of blindly impressionable dolts and gulls who have for the most part no idea of what the whole circus is about.[20]

How little things have changed.

The first thing that should be done about this situation, in Lovecraft's view, was to restrict the vote "to those able to pass rigorous educational

examinations (emphasising civic and economic subjects) and scientific intelligence tests" ("Some Repetitions on the Times"). It need not be assumed that Lovecraft automatically included himself in this number; in "Some Repetitions on the Times" he declared himself a "rank layman" and went on to say: "No non-technician, be he artist, philosopher, or scientist, can even begin to judge the labyrinthine governmental problems with which these administrators must deal." Lovecraft did not seem entirely aware of the difficulty of ensuring that these tests be fair to all (although I suspect he would have little patience with modern complaints that many intelligence tests are culturally biased), but he maintained that such a restriction of the vote would indeed be fair because—as we shall see presently—educational opportunities would be vastly broadened under his political scheme.

This whole idea—that the common people in the United States are not intelligent enough for democracy to work—was not nearly as radical in Lovecraft's time as it now seems. In the early 1920s Charles Evans Hughes, Harding's secretary of state, had already proposed the notion of a meritocracy in government—even though the thoroughly corrupt and inept Harding administration was about as far from putting that notion into practice as any could have been. Walter Lippmann in *Public Opinion* (1922) and its sequel, *The Phantom Public* (1925), had come close to this idea also. Lippmann's very complex views are difficult to summarise in brief compass, but essentially he felt that the common person was no longer able to make intelligent decisions on specific courses of action relating to public policy, as had been possible in earlier stages of democracy in the United States, when political, social, and economic decisions were less complex. Lippmann did not renounce democracy or even majority rule; rather, he believed that a democratic elite of administrators and technicians should have a relatively free hand in actual decision-making, with the public to act as a kind of umpire over them. There is no evidence that Lovecraft read Lippmann: I have found only one mention of him in letters, and that is an admission of his ignorance of Lippmann's work. In any case, Lovecraft's distrust of democracy had already emerged much earlier, first perhaps from readings in Nietzsche, and then by plain observation.

And yet, Lovecraft's elitism on this point (if indeed it is such), although it might now be associated with various conservative thinkers with whom he would otherwise have little in common, has recently been echoed by the

unimpeachably liberal Arthur Schlesinger, Jr, who in a discussion of George F. Kennan writes:

> More nonsense has been uttered in this country over the perils of elitism than on almost any other subject. All government known to history has been government by minorities, and it is in the interests of everyone, most especially the poor and powerless, to have the governing minority composed of able, intelligent, responsive, and decent persons with a large view of the general welfare. There is a vast difference between an elite of conscience and an elite of privilege—the difference that Thomas Jefferson drew between the "natural aristocracy" founded on "virtue and talents" and the "artificial aristocracy founded on wealth and birth," adding that the natural aristocracy is "the most precious gift of nature" for the government of society.[21]

It is unfortunate that Lovecraft occasionally used the term fascism to denote this conception; it does not help much that he says on one occasion, "Do not judge the sort of fascism I advocate by any form now existing."[22] Lovecraft never actually renounced Mussolini, but his support of him in the 1930s does not seem quite as ardent as it was when Mussolini first rose to power in 1922. The problem was, however, that by the 1930s the term fascism connoted not only Mussolini but various English and American extremists with whom Lovecraft had no intention of aligning himself. It is true that he rather discouragingly says on one occasion that "I have my eye on Sir Oswald Moseley [*sic*] & his element of British fascists,"[23] since Mosley—who had founded the British Union of Fascists in 1932—quickly revealed himself to be an anti-Semite and pro-Hitlerian who spent much of World War II in a British prison for subversive activities. But the American fascists of the middle to late thirties were a very different proposition, and Lovecraft regarded them on the whole not so much as dangerous radicals as mere buffoons who could do little harm to the political fabric. They were not by any means a coordinated group, but even individually they represented various threats to the government with which both the administration and political thinkers (even armchair ones like Lovecraft) had to come to terms.

The first was the redoubtable Senator Huey P. Long of Louisiana. Elected governor in 1928, Long quickly achieved popularity by appealing

for a radical redistribution of wealth. Then, in 1934, as a senator he formed the Share Our Wealth Society in an attempt to put his theories into practice. If it be thought that Long's political vision was actually similar to Lovecraft's in its union of economic socialism and political fascism, it should be made very clear that Long was not a socialist by any means—he did not believe in collectivism but instead yearned nostalgically for a small-town America in which everyone would be an individualistic small business person—and his fascism was of an utterly ruthless sort that rode roughshod over his opponents and in the end led to his being shot on September 8, 1935, and his death two days later.

Then there was the Reverend Charles E. Coughlin, who in his weekly radio programme ("The Golden Hour of the Little Flower") had, since 1930, fulminated against both communism and capitalism, attacking bankers specifically. In late 1934 he conceived of a wealth distribution scheme by forming the National Union for Social Justice.

Lovecraft took frequent note of Long and Coughlin, and in the end he finally repudiated them—not for their economic policies (with which he was more in agreement than otherwise), but for their genuinely fascistic political tactics. But he never regarded them as serious threats. He wrote airily in early 1937 that "I doubt whether the growing Catholic-fascist movement will make much headway in America"[24] (an explicit reference to Coughlin) and later remarked, in regard to a broad group of pro-Nazi organisations in America: "Granting the scant possibility of a Franco-like revolt of the Hoovers and Mellons and polite bankers, and conceding that—despite Coughlinism, the Black Legion, the Silver Shirts, and the K.K.K.—the soil of America is hardly very fertile for any variant of Nazism, it seems likely that the day of free and easy plutocracy in the United States is over."[25] He might have been less sanguine had he seen how Coughlin—who was already becoming increasingly anti-Semitic by 1936—sloughed off his social justice pretence in 1938 and came out forthrightly as a pro-Nazi, attracting millions in the process.

Lovecraft knew that Roosevelt was trying to steer a middle course between both right- and left-wing extremism; and on the whole he approved that course. Just after the 1932 election he remarked that a vote for the Socialist Norman Thomas "would have been simply thrown away."[26] And yet, he supported Upton Sinclair's radical senatorial campaign in 1934 and said that he would vote for Sinclair if he were a Californian.[27] He said

nothing, though, about the vicious attacks on Sinclair by Republicans that led to his defeat. Nevertheless, although he yearned for Roosevelt to progress still farther and faster with reform, it quickly became obvious to him that the New Deal was the only series of measures that had any real hope of actually passing, given the violent resistance on both sides of the political spectrum:

> That is why we must go slowly and cautiously, lending our support to *anything headed in the right direction which has a real chance of adoption,* even if it does not suit us as exactly as some other plan which has less chance of adoption. . . . The New Deal, in spite of its present internal inconsistencies and frankly experimental phases, probably represents as great a step in the right direction as could *now* command any chance of support . . .[28]

He referred to Coughlin, Sinclair, and Long as "salutary irritants"[29] who would help push Roosevelt more to the left (something that in fact happened following the midterm elections of 1934, which gave Congress a more liberal slant). But in early 1935 he was announcing that he wanted something "considerably to the left of the New Deal,"[30] although he did not think it was practicable; and by the summer of 1936 he expressed a naive irritation that the administration was "too subservient to capitalism"[31]—as if Roosevelt had any intention of ushering in real socialism (even of a liberal, non-Marxist variety) instead of merely shoring up capitalism!

The death-knell of capitalism was indeed being rung by many political thinkers of the day, as was entirely natural in the wake of the depression, capitalism's most signal disaster. John Dewey's thunderous declaration —"Capitalism must be destroyed"—is prototypical.[32] Some of Lovecraft's younger colleagues—Frank Long, R. H. Barlow, Kenneth Sterling—were wholeheartedly espousing communism, to the point that at the very end of his life Lovecraft expostulated in mock horror, "Damme, but are all you kids going bolshevik on grandpa?"[33]

And yet, as time went on Lovecraft increasingly lost patience with the social and political conservatism of the middle-class milieu in which he found himself. He came to understand the *temperament* that led fiery youths like Long and Barlow to communism without being himself entirely inclined in that direction. Lovecraft was of course well aware that

Providence was a bastion of Republicanism; by the time the election of 1936 he claimed to have nearly a family feud on his hands, as Annie Gamwell and her friends remained firmly opposed to Roosevelt, leading Lovecraft to explode:

> The more I observe the abysmal, inspissated *ignorance* of the bulk of allegedly cultivated people—folks who think a lot of themselves and their position, and who include a vast quota of university graduates—the more I believe that something is radically wrong with conventional education and tradition. These pompous, self-complacent "best people" with their blind spots, delusions, prejudices, and callousness—poor devils who have no conception of their orientation to human history and the cosmos—are the victims of some ingrained fallacy regarding the development and direction of cerebral energy. They don't lack brains, but have never been taught how to get the full benefit of what they have.[34]

Turning specifically to politics:

> As for the Republicans—how can one regard seriously a frightened, greedy, nostalgic huddle of tradesmen and lucky idlers who shut their eyes to history and science, steel their emotions against decent human sympathy, cling to sordid and provincial ideals exalting sheer acquisitiveness and condoning artificial hardship for the non-materially-shrewd, dwell smugly and sentimentally in a distorted dream-cosmos of outmoded phrases and principles and attitudes based on the bygone agricultural-handicraft world, and revel in (consciously or unconsciously) mendacious assumptions (such as the notion that *real liberty* is synonymous with the single detail of *unrestricted economic license,* or that a rational planning of resource-distribution would contravene some vague and mystical "American heritage" . . .) utterly contrary to fact and without the slightest foundation in human experience? Intellectually, the Republican idea deserves the tolerance and respect one gives to the dead.[35]

How little things have changed.

When the election actually occurred—with another landslide for Roosevelt against the hapless Alf Landon and a third-party candidate,

William Lemke, a stooge of Coughlin and Francis E. Townsend, the proponent of old age pensions—Lovecraft could not help gloating:

> It amuses me to see the woebegone state of the staid reactionary reliques with whom I am surrounded. Around election-time I came damn near having a family feud on my hands! Poor old ostriches. Trembling for the republic's safety, they actually thought their beloved Lemke or Langston or Langham (or whatever his name was) had a chance! However, the alert university element was not so blind—indeed, one of the professors said just before the election that his idea of a bum sport was a man who would actually *take* one of the pro-Lansdowne (or whatever his name was) bets offered by the white-moustached constitution-savers of the Hope Club easy-chairs. Well—even the most stubborn must some day learn that the tide of social evolution can't be checked for ever. King Canute & the waves![36]

Lovecraft's last few months were perhaps spent in satisfaction, with the thought that Roosevelt could now continue his reforms and achieve a genuine moderate socialist state; it must have been a comforting thought as he lay dying.

What Lovecraft was seeking, in the totality of his speculations on this subject, was the *economic and political reform* that was so cryingly needed, but also *cultural continuity.* He saw no conflict in this, since he wholly rejected the Marxist notion that culture is an inextricable product of socioeconomic forces, and that the alteration of the one inevitably entails the alteration of the other. In "Some Repetitions on the Times" he could not speak with sufficient loathing about the horrors of the Russian revolution and urges, a little frantically, that it is "worth going to any length to escape" a duplication of its effects in America:

> What the Soviets have done is to ensure a meagre livelihood to the least competent classes by destroying the whole background of tradition which made life endurable for persons of a higher degree of imagination and richer store of cultivation. It is their claim that they could not have guaranteed security to the humble without this wholesale destruction of accustomed ideas, but we may easily see that this is but a thin veil for a purely theoretical fanaticism bearing all the earmarks of a new

> religion—a fetichistic cult woven around the under-man's notion of transvaluated social values and around a fantastically literal application and extension of the groping theories and idealistic extravagances of the late Karl Marx.

This may sound self-serving—Lovecraft wants the cultural tokens of his civilisation to be preserved even with fairly radical political and economic reforms—but then, his economic suggestions were, at least on paper, capable of implementation without serious disturbance of the cultural fabric.

Nevertheless, toward the very end of his life Lovecraft did indeed come to see the need for social and economic justice beyond any mere worry of a violent overthrow by the dispossessed. Capitalism was the implacable enemy, and it must go. The whole economic structure must be changed: "I am likewise no friend of aimless idleness—but I do not see why a savage and feverish scramble for bare necessities, *made artificially hard after machinery has given us the means of easier production,* is necessarily superior to a reasonable amount of sensible work plus an intelligently outlined programme of cultural development."[37] Here again Lovecraft was coming to terms with technology—and, now, realising that it can be beneficial as well as deleterious. The machine can be the liberating friend of mankind, and it can allow society to end poverty and physical hardship *instantly* through a rational redistribution of resources; but old-time capitalism still rules the minds of business and government leaders alike. Lovecraft, finally abandoning his worries about a revolution of "under-men," came to regard the whole issue of full employment as a simple matter of human dignity:

> I agree that most of the motive force behind any contemplated change in the economic order will necessarily come from the persons who have benefited least by the existing order; but I do not see why that fact makes it necessary to wage the struggle otherwise than as *a fight to guarantee a place for everybody* in the social fabric. The just demand of the citizen is that society assign him a place in its complex mechanism whereby he will have equal chances for education at the start, and a guarantee of just rewards for such services as he is able to render (or a proper pension if his services cannot be used) later on.[38]

But the forces of reaction were relentless:

> The greatest peril to civilised progress—aside from an annihilative war—is some kind of basically reactionary system with enough grudging concessions to the dispossessed to make it *really work after a fashion,* and thus with the capacity to postpone indefinitely the demand of the masses for their real rights—educational, social, and economic—as human beings in a world where the great resources should be cornered by none. . . . Unsupervised capitalism is through. But various Nazi and fascist compromises can be cooked up to save the plutocrats most of their spoils while lulling the growing army of the unpropertied with either a petty programme of *panem et circenses,* or else a system of artificially created and distributed jobs at starvation wages on the C.C.C. or W.P.A. idea. A regime of that sort, spiced with the right brand of hysterical flag-waving, sloganeering, and verbal constitution-saving, might conceivably be as stable and popular as Hitlerism—and that is what the younger and more astute babbitts of the Republican party are quietly and insidiously working toward.[39]

It is as if Lovecraft had a crystal ball and saw Ronald Reagan in it.

As the 1930s advanced Lovecraft became more and more concerned not only with the problems of economics and government but with the place of art in modern society. I have already shown how the notion of civilisation was the central guiding principle behind all his shifts in political allegiance; and as he matured he became convinced that art could not retreat unthinkingly into the past but must—as he himself had done on an intellectual level—come to some sort of terms with the machine age if it were to survive and remain a living force in society. This created an immediate problem, for as early as 1927 Lovecraft had concluded: "The future civilisation of mechanical invention, urban concentration, and scientific standardisation of life and thought is a monstrous and artificial thing which can never find embodiment either in art or in religion. Even now we find art and religion completely divorced from life and subsisting on retrospection and reminiscence as its vital material."[40] If the machine age is inherently unsuited for artistic expression, what is one to do? Lovecraft's answer to this was a little curious, but entirely in consonance with his broadly conservative outlook. We need not rehearse his antipathy

to what he considered such freakish artistic tendencies as imagism, stream-of-consciousness, or the recondite allusiveness of Eliot's *Waste Land,* which were all, to his mind, symptoms of the general decline of this phase of Western culture. Avant-garde movements in painting and architecture similarly met with his disapproval. Lovecraft's solution—spelled out in the essay "Heritage or Modernism: Common Sense in Art Forms," written in late 1934—was a *conscious* antiquarianism:

> When a given age has no new *natural* impulse toward change, is it not better to continue building on the established forms than to concoct grotesque and meaningless novelties out of thin academic theory?
>
> Indeed, under certain conditions is not a policy of frank and virile antiquarianism—a healthy, vigorous revival of old forms still justified by their relation to life—infinitely sounder than a feverish mania for the destruction of familiar things and the laboured, freakish, uninspired search for strange shapes which nobody wants and which really mean nothing?

This too is conveniently self-serving, but Lovecraft is acute in puncturing the pompous theorisings of artists and architects who were resolutely dictating the spirit of the age:

> If the moderns were *truly* scientific, they would realise that their own attitude of *self-conscious theory* removes them absolutely from all kinship with the creators of genuine artistic advances. Real art must be, above all else, *unconscious and spontaneous*—and this is precisely what modern functionalism is *not.* No age was ever truly "expressed" by theorists who sat down and deliberately mapped out a technique for "expressing" it.

The real issue Lovecraft was facing was how to steer a middle course between "high" culture, which in its radicalism was consciously being addressed to an increasingly small coterie of devotees, and "popular" culture—notably the pulps—which was adhering to false, superficial, and outmoded standards through the inevitable moral conservatism such forms of culture have always displayed. This may be the primary reason for Lovecraft's lack of commercial success in his lifetime: his work was not conventional enough for the pulps but not daring enough (or daring enough

in the right way) for the modernists. Lovecraft correctly recognised that capitalism and democracy gave rise to this split in the nineteenth century:

> Bourgeois capitalism gave artistic excellence and sincerity a death-blow by enthroning cheap *amusement-value* at the expense of that *intrinsic excellence* which only cultivated, non-acquisitive persons of assumed position can enjoy. The determinant market for written . . . and other heretofore aesthetic material ceased to be a small circle of truly educated persons, but became a substantially larger . . . circle of mixed origin numerically dominated by crude, half-educated clods whose systematically perverted ideals . . . prevented them from ever achieving the tastes and perspectives of the gentlefolk whose dress and speech and external manners they so assiduously mimicked. This herd of acquisitive boors brought up from the shop and the counting-house a complete set of artificial attitudes, oversimplifications, and mawkish sentimentalities which no sincere art or literature could gratify—and they so outnumbered the remaining educated gentlefolk that most of the purveying agencies became at once reoriented to them. Literature and art lost most of their market; and writing, painting, drama, etc. became engulfed more and more in the domain of *amusement enterprises*.[41]

The principal foe, again, is capitalism, in that it inculcates values that are actively hostile to artistic creation:

> . . . in the past did capitalism award its highest benefits to such admittedly superior persons as Poe, Spinoza, Baudelaire, Shakespeare, Keats, and so on? Or is it just possible that the *real* beneficiaries of capitalism are *not* the truly superior, but merely *those who choose to devote their superiority to the single process of personal acquisition rather than to social service or to creative intellectual or aesthetic effort* . . . those, and the lucky parasites who share or inherit the fruits of their narrowly canalised superiority?[42]

America, of course, is especially bad in that the nineteenth century brought to the fore a psychology that vaunted money- or possession-grubbing as the chief gauge of human worth. This is something Lovecraft had always

repudiated, and his new views on economics only emphasised his sentiments:

> . . . I always despised the bourgeois use of *acquisitive power* as a measure of human character. I have never believed that the securing of material resources ought to form the central interest of human life—but have instead maintained that *personality* is an independent flowering of the intellect and emotions wholly apart from the struggle for existence. . . .
>
> . . . Now we live in an age of easy abundance which makes possible the fulfilment of all moderate human wants through a relatively slight amount of labour. What shall be the result? Shall we still make resources *prohibitively hard to get* when there is really a plethora of them? . . . If "stamina" and "Americanism" demand a state of constant anxiety and threatened starvation on the part of every ordinary citizen, then they're not worth having![43]

But what then is to be done? Even if economic reform is effected, how does one change a society's *attitude* in regard to the relative value of money as opposed to the development of personality? The solution was—again on paper—simple: education. The shorter working hours proposed in Lovecraft's economic scheme would allow for a radically increased leisure time for all citizens, which could be utilised profitably in education and aesthetic appreciation. As he states in "Some Repetitions on the Times": "Education . . . will require amplification in order to meet the needs of a radically increased leisure among all classes of society. It is probable that the number of persons possessing a sound general culture will be greatly increased, with correspondingly good results to the civilisation." This was a common proposal—or dream—among the more idealistic social reformers and intellectuals. Did Lovecraft really fancy that such a Utopia of a broadly educated populace that was willing or able to enjoy the aesthetic fruits of civilisation would actually come about? It certainly seems so; and yet, we cannot hold Lovecraft responsible for failing to predict either the spectacular recrudescence of capitalism in the generations following his own or the equally spectacular collapse of education that has produced a mass audience whose highest aesthetic experiences are pornography, television miniseries, and sporting events.

It is an open question whether Lovecraft's entire economic, political, and cultural system—moderate socialism; restriction of the vote; increased education and aesthetic appreciation—is inherently unworkable (perhaps people are simply not good enough—not sufficiently intelligent, unselfish, and culturally astute—to function in such a society) or whether it may be effected if the people and government of the United States ever make a concerted effort to head in that direction. The prospects at the moment certainly do not look good: a fair number of his economic proposals (Social Security, unemployment insurance, fair labour and consumer laws) are now well established, but his political and cultural goals are as far from realisation as ever. Needless to say, a fairly broad segment of the population does not even acknowledge the validity or propriety of Lovecraft's recommendations, so is not likely to work toward bringing them about.

The interesting thing about these speculations of the 1930s is that they gradually enter into his fiction as well as his letters and essays. We have seen that "The Mound" (1929–30) contains searching parallels between the political and cultural state of the underground mound denizens and Western civilisation; and in *At the Mountains of Madness* (1931) there is a fleeting mention that the government of the Old Ones was probably socialistic. These tentative political discussions reach their culmination with "The Shadow out of Time."

The Great Race is a true utopia, and in his description of its political and economic framework Lovecraft is manifestly offering his view as to the future of mankind:

> The Great Race seemed to form a single, loosely knit nation or league, with major institutions in common, though there were four definite divisions. The political and economic system of each unit was a sort of fascistic socialism, with major resources rationally distributed, and power delegated to a small governing board elected by the votes of all able to pass certain educational and psychological tests. . . .
>
> Industry, highly mechanised, demanded but little time from each citizen; and the abundant leisure was filled with intellectual and aesthetic activities of various sorts.

This and other passages can be seen as virtually identical to those in Lovecraft's later letters on the subject and with "Some Repetitions on the Times." The note about "highly mechanised" industry is important in

showing that Lovecraft has at last—as he had not done when he wrote "The Mound" (1929–30) and even *At the Mountains of Madness*—fully accepted mechanisation as an ineradicable aspect of modern society, and has devised a social system that will accommodate it.

Lovecraft's specific responses to contemporary mainstream literature are certainly worth studying in detail. Around 1922 he made a concerted effort (perhaps egged on by Frank Belknap Long and other younger associates) to keep up on the fashionable highbrow literature of the day, although we have seen that he admitted never actually having read Joyce's *Ulysses*. By the 1930s Lovecraft grudgingly felt that perhaps another refresher course was necessary, but he was rather less enthusiastic than before—it was less important to him to be literarily contemporary (even though he always remained scientifically and philosophically contemporary), since he was generally out of sympathy with the now entrenched trend of modernism. In 1930 he called Dreiser "*the* novelist of America,"[44] even though by this time Dreiser was little more than an elder statesman with his best work decades behind him (his 1925 behemoth, *An American Tragedy,* received generally mixed reviews, even from such devoted advocates as H. L. Mencken). Sinclair Lewis—whose *Babbitt* and *Main Street* he presumably read, if one gauges by the frequency with which those terms are peppered through his writings in his *épater le bourgeois* period—he considered more a social theorist or even propagandist than a creative artist, although he felt that Lewis's receiving the Nobel Prize in 1930 was "not as bad as it might be."[45] He mentioned F. Scott Fitzgerald, the laureate of the Jazz Age, only twice in all the correspondence I have seen, and in a manner that is both disparaging and suggestive that he never actually read Fitzgerald.[46] He did not run a temperature over Willa Cather, although he read her historical novel *Shadows on the Rock* (1931) for its Quebec setting.[47] Aside from "A Rose for Emily," it does not seem as if Lovecraft read much of William Faulkner, although he wanted to read more. Gertrude Stein he understandably dismissed: "I must admit that I've never read any book of hers, since scattered fragments in periodicals discouraged any interest I might otherwise have acquired."[48] Hemingway came in for random discussion, but only to be scorned for the "machine-gun fire" of his prose; but Lovecraft added cogently:

> I refuse to be taken in by the goddam bunk of this aera just as totally as I refused to fall for the pompous, polite bull of Victorianism—and one of the chief fallacies of the present is that smoothness, even when involving no sacrifice of directness, is a defect. The best prose is vigorous, direct, unadorn'd, and closely related (as is the best verse) to the language of actual discourse; but it has its natural rhythms and smoothness just as good oral speech has. There has never been any prose as good as that of the early eighteenth century, and anyone who thinks he can improve upon Swift, Steele, and Addison is a blockhead.[49]

This is certainly a good attack, in principle, on the skeletonic prose of Hemingway or Sherwood Anderson; but whether Lovecraft himself followed some of its recommendations is more open to question. Even his later prose can hardly be called "unadorn'd"; and although some of his friends remarked that his writing (in correspondence, at least) did in fact duplicate his speech, this is only because Lovecraft was generally given to formality in both writing and discourse.

Lovecraft was relatively conservative on British novelists, choosing those writers who had already well established themselves in the early part of the century. He defended Galsworthy against J. Vernon Shea's iconoclastic attack by remarking: "Galsworthy, I think, will survive. His style at times halts one, but the substance is there."[50] The day before he discovered the robbery of his Brooklyn flat in 1925, he was reading Joseph Conrad's *Lord Jim* and came away tremendously impressed. He admitted having previously read "only the shorter and more minor productions" of the author (among which one hopes *Heart of Darkness* might have been included, although Lovecraft never mentions it), but now he declares:

> Conrad is at heart supremely a poet, and though his narration is often very heavy and involved, he displays an infinitely potent command of the soul of men and things, reflecting the tides of affairs in an unrivalled procession of graphic pictures which burn their imagery indelibly upon the mind. . . . No other artist I have yet encountered has so keen an appreciation of the essential *solitude* of the high-grade personality—that solitude whose projected overtones form the mental world of each sensitively organised individual . . .[51]

This may be a trifle self-serving, too, since Lovecraft axiomatically regarded himself as one of those solitary, high-grade personalities (as, indeed, he was). Hardy he considered overrated and sentimental—a rather surprising judgment (made, apparently, on the basis of *Tess of the d'Urbervilles* and *Jude the Obscure*) on a writer whose bleakness of vision Lovecraft might have been expected to appreciate. D. H. Lawrence, too, he not surprisingly thought overrated: "his fame was fortuitously boosted by the fact that he was a biassed neurotic in an age generally permeated by the same neurosis."[52] This was not an uncommon accusation in Lovecraft's day, and indeed there is some validity in it. Interestingly enough, Lovecraft once declared, "Writers I'd call morbid are D. H. Lawrence & James Joyce, Huysmans & Baudelaire";[53] but this did not stop him from relishing the latter two as powerful weird writers. Aldous Huxley's fiction did not appeal to him, but he did charitably refer to him as an "arresting social thinker."[54] He admitted that he had not read *Brave New World* (1932),[55] and it is unlikely that he would have cared for it if he had, for (as he remarked in "Some Notes on Interplanetary Fiction") "Social and political satire [in science fiction] is always undesirable." I find no mention of Evelyn Waugh or Virginia Woolf anywhere in Lovecraft. He did, incredibly, admit to reading "extracts" of Joyce's *Anna Livia Plurabelle* (a short piece published separately in 1928 and eventually incorporated into *Finnegans Wake*) without much actual enjoyment, but he went on to say, a little surprisingly: "And yet there is no more powerful or penetrant writer living than Joyce when he is not pursuing his theory to these ultimate extremes."[56]

As it is, the chief contemporary novelist of the day, for Lovecraft, was neither American nor British but French—Marcel Proust. Although he never read more than the first two volumes in English (*Swann's Way* and *Within a Budding Grove*) of *Remembrance of Things Past,* he nevertheless doubted that "the 20th century has so far produced anything to eclipse the Proustian cycle as a whole."[57] Proust occupied the ideal middle ground between stodgy Victorianism and freakish modernism; and Lovecraft's fondness for Derleth's mainstream work rested in large part on his belief that it reflected that sense of delicate reminiscence which was Proust's own chief feature.

Lovecraft, indeed, repeatedly vaunted the entire French novelistic tradition as far superior to the English or American:

> The French are the real masters of that field—Balzac, Gautier, Flaubert, de Maupassant, Stendhal, Proust . . . Nobody can beat them unless it is in the 19th century Russians—Dostoievsky, Chekhov, Turgeniev—& they reflect a racial temper so unlike ours that we really have much difficulty in appraising them. On the whole, I believe that Balzac is the supreme novelist of western Europe.[58]

There is much truth to this, but part of Lovecraft's preference may have been his relative coolness for the eighteenth-century British novelists, who reflected so different a world from the polished British essayists and historians of the period on whom he doted, and his utter detestation of Dickens, whose sentimentality he abhorred and whom he even claimed did not draw character well: "Dickens never drew a real human being in all his career—just a pageant of abstractions, exaggerations, & general characters. Each 'character' is merely an abstraction of a single human instinct. Character—motivation—values—all false, artificial, & conventional."[59] Lovecraft would probably not be much impressed if one were to counter that Dickens wasn't aiming for "realism" as such, and that his characters are meant to be "larger than life." On one occasion Lovecraft could even give some moderate praise to writers he did not otherwise care for merely as a stick with which to beat Dickens over the head: "I certainly loathe sentimental hypocrites like Dickens and Trollope far more than honest portrayers and intelligent interpreters like Zola and Fielding and Smollett and Flaubert and Hemingway."[60]

Lovecraft could be pretty shrewd in assessing the real merits of the popularly acclaimed novels of his day. At a time when all the world (especially August Derleth) was vaunting Thornton Wilder's *Bridge of San Luis Rey* (1927) as a masterwork, Lovecraft, who read the novel several years after its publication, remarked more soberly: "That book is clever & striking, but undeniably artificial & in places even mawkish. It was absurdly overrated upon its appearance, & now seems to be receding into something more like its proper niche."[61] Even though the novel won the Pulitzer Prize, this judgment now seems sound. Sometimes there is a virtue in not being so "desperately contemporary," as Lovecraft once quoted Brown University President W. H. P. Faunce. And yet, he could waste five days reading Hervey Allen's enormous best-seller *Anthony Adverse*—solely, it appears, because of its portrayal of the late eighteenth century

(and, perhaps, because of Lovecraft's admiration of Allen's landmark biography of Poe, *Israfel* [1926]). Lovecraft, of course, had no intention of keeping up with best-sellers or even with critically acclaimed recent works; not only was the inclination not there, but his very lean purse prohibited purchase of expensive new books of doubtful permanent value.

And yet, even if Lovecraft did not enjoy much of the actual prose work of his day, he had a healthy respect for the social realism that had become the characteristic style of the novels of the 1920s and 1930s. He expressed regret—sincerely, I think—at his own inability to write this sort of realism, because of his lack of wide experience in life and, perhaps more importantly, his inability (or disinclination) to invest the ordinary phenomena of life with the *importance* and *vitality* that a realistic writer must be able to do:

> When I say that I can write nothing but weird fiction, I am not trying to exalt that medium but am merely confessing my own weakness. The reason I can't write other kinds is not that I don't value & respect them, but merely that my slender set of endowments does not enable me to extract a compellingly acute personal sense of interest & drama from the natural phenomena of life. I know that these natural phenomena are more important & significant than the special & tenuous moods which so absorb me, & that an art based on them is greater than any which fantasy could evoke—but I'm simply not big enough to react to them in the sensitive way necessary for artistic response & literary use. God in heaven! I'd certainly be glad enough to be a Shakespeare or Balzac or Turgeniev *if I could!* . . . I respect realism more than any other form of art—but must reluctantly concede that, through my own limitations, it does not form a medium which I can adequately use.[62]

There is nothing new here, but it leads to two celebrated and resounding utterances:

> Time, space, and natural law hold for me suggestions of intolerable bondage, and I can form no picture of emotional satisfaction which does not involve their defeat—especially the defeat of time, so that one may merge oneself with the whole historic stream and be wholly emancipated from the transient and the ephemeral.[63]

> There is no field other than the weird in which I have any aptitude or inclination for fictional composition. Life has never interested me so much as the escape from life.[64]

That last utterance in particular is in great danger of misinterpretation, since one might easily conclude from it—if one knew nothing else about its author—that Lovecraft was an escapist who had no active interest in the world. It should by now be sufficiently obvious that this is manifestly false: even if his late and consuming interest in the problems of society, economics, and government were not evidence enough, then the intense pleasure he took at the very real sites he witnessed on his far-flung travels emphatically proves that Lovecraft was one for whom the real world existed. It is simply that the mundane activities of human beings were not intrinsically interesting to him (recall *In Defence of Dagon:* "Man's relations to man do not captivate my fancy"), and that he required a literature that might allow for a sort of imaginative overlay upon the events of the real world. Lovecraft wanted to see *beyond* or *through* reality—or, more specifically, *behind* it, temporally and imaginatively. And yet, his own most characteristic work is indeed realism except where the supernatural enters.

Lovecraft's views on contemporary poetry are a little mixed. Although he flayed T. S. Eliot's *Waste Land* in 1923, he grudgingly went to see Eliot give a reading of some of his poetry in Providence in February 1933. He reported that the reading was "interesting if not quite explicable."[65] But regarding poetry as a whole, Lovecraft came to a perhaps surprising conclusion: ". . . *verse* is spectacularly and paradoxically *improving;* so that I do not know any age since that of Elizabeth in which poets have enjoy'd a better medium of expression."[66] I think, though, that the remark needs interpretation and contextualisation. Lovecraft was contrasting the present age of poetry in comparison with what he regarded as the hollowness and insincerity of his favourite whipping-boy, late Victorianism; and he did not come out and say that there actually *were* as many great poets in his day as in that of Elizabeth, merely that there was the *possibility* of greatness. The above remark is followed by this: "One can but wish that a race of major bards surviv'd to take advantage of the post-Victorian rise in taste and fastidiousness." In other words, poets like Tennyson and Longfellow would have had the potential to be authentically great if they had lived longer and shed the crippling affections—both in terms of style (inversions, investing

of spurious glamour upon certain words and conceptions) and aesthetic orientation (sentimentality, hypocrisy, excessive prudishness)—that doomed their work to flawed greatness at best and mediocrity at worst. As it was, Lovecraft thought that Yeats was "probably the greatest living poet,"[67] and the only other poet whom he placed even remotely in his class was, interestingly, Archibald MacLeish, whom he heard lecture in Providence in January 1935 and whom he said "comes about as near to a major poet as this hemisphere can now boast."[68] MacLeish was, in spite of being influenced by Eliot and Pound, relatively conservative, and even his free verse is rhythmical, metaphorical, and full of compact imagery—just the sort of thing Lovecraft appreciated. Lovecraft seemed genuinely fond of MacLeish's long narrative poem, *Conquistador* (1932).

It might be thought that one could accurately gauge Lovecraft's opinion of modern literature by examining certain passages in the document known as "Suggestions for a Reading Guide"—the final chapter of Lovecraft's revision of Renshaw's *Well Bred Speech* (1936), which was excised from the published version. But in fact it is abundantly clear that he has listed in this bulky article a good many works of literature that he has not read, and on whose merits he is relying only on the word of others, or by general reputation. Hence, among British novelists he lists Galsworthy, Conrad, Bennett, Lawrence, Maugham, Wells, Huxley, and some others; among British poets, Masefield, Housman, Brooke, de la Mare, Bridges, and T. S. Eliot. The Irish Yeats he again calls "the greatest living poet." Among American novelists, we find Norris, Dreiser, Wharton, Cather, Lewis, Cabell, Hemingway, Hecht, Faulkner, and Wolfe; among American poets, Frost, Masters, Sandburg, Millay, and MacLeish. But consultation of his letters shows that, while he had indeed read a good many of these, others he either was planning to read but apparently never did or knew merely by reputation. In hindsight this list may perhaps seem, even by the standards of 1936, a little old-fashioned; but Lovecraft felt that in an elementary treatise of this kind it was better to be conservative and list those authors who had genuinely stood the test of time. He opens his discussion of twentieth-century literature in English with the caveat: "Crossing into the present century, we are confronted by a flood of books and authors whose relative merits are still undetermined . . ."

Lovecraft also fleetingly turned his attention to another medium—film—but again his judgment was mixed. I have shown that he enthusiastically watched the early films of Chaplin, Douglas Fairbanks, and others in the teens; but as the twenties advanced he lost interest, seeing films only when Sonia or Frank Long or others dragged him to them. Although talkies were introduced in 1927, Lovecraft took no notice of them until 1930: "Despite the recent improvement in quality in some films—due to the new talking device—the majority are as inane & insipid as before . . ."[69] I would not care to dispute Lovecraft's judgment on the films he actually saw at this time.

But it appears that Lovecraft was harbouring at least one misconception or prejudice that hampered his appreciation of film as an independent aesthetic mode. Of course, many of the films of his day—even those now regarded by misplaced nostalgia as "classic"—were extraordinarily crude and technologically backward; and Frank Long did not help matters any by taking Lovecraft to an endless series of vapid musicals or romantic comedies on the latter's successive trips to New York. But Lovecraft seemed to feel that films based on literary works should be rigidly faithful to those works, and any departure from the text should be regarded as an inherent flaw.

This prejudice comes into play specifically in regard to Lovecraft's evaluation of horror films. In one choice passage he roundly abuses one relatively obscure work and two "classics":

> "The Bat" made me drowse back in the early 1920's—and last year an alleged "Frankenstein" on the screen *would* have made me drowse had not a posthumous sympathy for poor Mrs. Shelley made me see red instead. Ugh! And the screen "Dracula" in 1931—I saw the beginning of that in Miami, Fla. —but couldn't bear to watch it drag to its full term of dreariness, hence walked out into the fragrant tropic moonlight![70]

The Bat (in spite of Lovecraft's mention of "early 1920's") must be the silent film of 1926, and is really more of a mystery than a horror film (it is an adaptation of Mary Roberts Rinehart's best-selling mystery novel *The Circular Staircase*). Lovecraft elaborated upon his disapproval of *Frankenstein* to Barlow: "I saw the cinema of 'Frankenstein', & was tremendously disappointed because no attempt was made to follow the story." But Lovecraft went on to remark: "However, there have been many

worse films—& many parts of this one are really quite dramatic when they are viewed independently & without comparison to the episodes of the original novel." But he concluded ruefully, "Generally speaking, the cinema always cheapens & degrades any literary material it gets hold of—especially anything in the least subtle or unusual."[71] I believe that last utterance still carries a good deal of truth.

Lovecraft expressed keen regret at not seeing *The Cabinet of Dr. Caligari* (1922) both on its initial release and on several revivals; it is quite likely that he would have enjoyed this startling work of German Expressionist cinema. He noted seeing *King Kong* (1933), but said only that it had "good mechanical effects."[72]

Lovecraft's abuse of *Dracula* came in the context of his refusal to grant Farnsworth Wright permission for radio dramatisation rights to "The Dreams in the Witch House." Although Lovecraft occasionally listened to the radio for news and liked to "fish" for distant channels for imaginative stimulation, he had little respect for radio shows as an art form, specifically horror programs.

> What the public consider "weirdness" in drama is rather pitiful or absurd—according to one's perspective. As a thorough soporific I recommend the average popularly "horrible" play or cinema or radio dialogue. They are all the same—flat, hackneyed, synthetic, essentially atmosphereless jumbles of conventional shrieks and mutterings and superficial, mechanical situations.

One other medium Lovecraft sampled on a single occasion was television. On October 22, 1933, he wrote to Clark Ashton Smith: "Saw an interesting demonstration of *television* in a local department store yesterday. Flickers like the biograph pictures of 1898"[73] (a reference to the old film technique used from 1895 to 1913, chiefly by D. W. Griffith). Television was at this time still in its infancy. The first public demonstration of television had occurred in 1926, and General Electric had broadcast a dramatic presentation in 1928. RCA made tests in 1931 and the next year began experimental broadcasts; but mechanical difficulties caused blurry images, which no doubt prompted Lovecraft's comment. Although interest in television continued to increase throughout the decade, the first television sets for public use did not appear until 1939.

One other social issue—the place of sex and sexual orientation in life and literature—did, incredibly enough, on rare occasions come up for discussion in the last decade of Lovecraft's life. Lovecraft does indeed seem to be among the most asexual individuals in human history, and I do not think this was a mere façade: certainly his letter to Sonia prior to his marriage (published as "Lovecraft on Love") evokes only snickers today, and would probably have seemed extreme in its asceticism even in its own day; but there is every reason to believe that Lovecraft himself abided by its precepts, to the point that it surely became one (if only one) cause of his wife's refusal to continue the marriage.

We have also seen that Lovecraft exhibited quick prejudice against homosexuals when he met one in Cleveland in 1922. By 1927 his views had changed little; in a discussion with Derleth about Oscar Wilde (who, let us recall, was a clear source for Lovecraft's Decadent aesthetics), he unleashed this remarkable passage:

> As a man, however, Wilde admits of absolutely no defence. His character, notwithstanding a daintiness of manners which imposed an exterior shell of decorative decency and decorum, was as thoroughly rotten and contemptible as it is possible for a human character to be . . . So thorough was his absence of that form of taste which we call a moral sense, that his derelictions comprised not only the greater and grosser offences, but all those petty dishonesties, shiftinesses, pusillanimities, and affected contemptibilities and cowardices which mark the mere "cad" or "bounder" as well as the actual "villain". It is an ironic circumstance that he who succeeded for a time in being the Prince of Dandies, was never in any basic sense what one likes to call a *gentleman.*[74]

(As an aside, let us turn to "The Shadow over Innsmouth," where we find Capt. Obed Marsh described as a "great dandy" of whom "people said he still wore the frock-coated finery of the Edwardian age." Marsh too had introduced sexual irregularities into his community.)

Six years later Lovecraft intoned: "So far as the case of homosexualism goes, the primary and vital objection against it is that it is naturally (physically and involuntarily—not merely 'morally' or aesthetically) repugnant to the overwhelming bulk of mankind . . ."[75] How Lovecraft arrived at this view is a mystery; but I suppose it was common enough then

—as it is now, sadly enough. No one need censure him for not revealing a tolerance toward homosexuality that is still a relative rarity in our own time. The point has been raised that many of Lovecraft's own colleagues were gay, but he was surely either unaware of the fact (as in the case of Samuel Loveman) or their homosexuality had presumably not yet made itself evident (as in the case of R. H. Barlow). Lovecraft never commented on Hart Crane's homosexuality on the few occasions he met him; but again, perhaps Crane made no overt demonstration of it in Lovecraft's presence. He may have done so covertly, but Lovecraft was probably so ignorant of the matter that he perhaps did not recognise it for what it was.

Nevertheless, on at least one occasion (late 1929) Lovecraft felt sufficiently informed on the subject of "normal" sexual relations to give friendly advice to one even more ignorant than he: Woodburn Harris, a resident of rural Vermont who evidently expressed some astoundingly naive and ignorant views on the subject of female sexuality. Lovecraft scientifically avers:

> a) the desire is *more slowly excited* than in the male;
>
> b) but, once excited, it is *certainly just as strong,* and according to a large group of physiologists, much stronger.
>
> c) eroticism is *more of a motivating force* in the female than in the male—& there is a more persistent tendency to regard it sentimentally or cosmically.
>
> d) females, in the absence of the male, experience desires & frustrations just as intense as those of the isolated male—hence the savage sourness of old maids, the looseness of modern spinsters, & the infidelity or tendency thereto of wives left alone by their husbands for more than a week or two.[76]

There is a great deal more, but this is enough to suggest that Lovecraft has arrived at his views jointly by a reading of various anthropological and psychological studies of sex and by actual sexual experience with Sonia. In the course of this letter Lovecraft mentions such things as Havelock Ellis's *Little Essays in Love and Virtue* (1922) and other contemporary authorities, whom he presumably read or at least (as he frankly admits to doing in other matters) read representative reviews of their work. There is also a long discussion about the "many & complex causes of change in erotic standards" in his time—a largely neutral discussion in which such things as "decline of illusions of religion & romantic love," "discovery of effective

contraceptive methods," and "economic independence of women" are listed in sequence.

What is more, the question of the role of sex in literature found Lovecraft much more tolerant in his final decade. Of course, there is virtually no sex in the whole length and breath of his own work: heterosexual sex is rendered moot by the near-total absence of female characters, while homosexual sex, either between men or between women, would have been unthinkable given Lovecraft's views on the subject. This is what makes Lovecraft's comment in 1931—"I can't see any difference in the work I did before marriage & that I did during a matrimonial period of some years"[77]—somewhat unhelpful. One must look very hard even to find hints of sex in the fiction: the undescribed "orgiastic licence" of the worshippers of Cthulhu in the Louisiana bayou, in "The Call of Cthulhu" is perhaps the only remotely explicit reference, while the suggestions in "The Dunwich Horror" (Lavinia Whateley mating with Yog-Sothoth) and "The Shadow over Innsmouth" (the Innsmouth folk mating with the fish-frogs) are so oblique as almost to pass unnoticed. Not a word is said of Edward and Asenath Derby's sexual relations in "The Thing on the Doorstep," perhaps because they are irrelevant to the story; but nothing is even said about the potential anomalies of sex reversal. Ephraim Waite takes over the body of his daughter Asenath: what are his sentiments when he becomes a woman, and especially when he marries Derby? If, as this story suggests, Lovecraft regards the mind or personality (rather than the body) as the essence of an individual, is this marriage homosexual? What does Derby feel when his mind is thrown into the rotting body of his wife? If someone were to write a story on this basic premise today, it is unlikely that such issues would be avoided.

But, as I say, Lovecraft loosened up on the subject, at least where works by other writers were concerned. From one perspective, he felt the need to continue battling against censorship (as he had done in "The Omnipresent Philistine" [1924]), an issue that was coming to the fore as the 1920s—an age of sexual awakening, liberation, and perhaps decadence in both life and literature—progressed. His chief opponent, predictably, was the rigid theist Maurice W. Moe.

Lovecraft was addressing the issue of "that peculiar rage felt by persons over forty . . . concerning the free presentation of erotic matters in art and literature"[78] (he himself was seven months before forty when writing this),

and—aside from predictably finding one more opportunity to trash the Victorian age ("the whole structure of Victorian art and thought and sexual morality was based upon a tragic sham")—specified seven different types or methods of sexual discussion in art:

1. Impersonal and serious descriptions of erotic scenes, relationships, motivations, and consequences in real life.
2. Poetic—and other aesthetic—exaltations of erotic feelings.
3. Satirical glimpses of the erotic realities underlying non-erotic pretences and exteriors.
4. Artificial descriptions or symbols designed to stimulate erotic feelings, yet without a well-proportioned grounding in life or art.
5. Corporeal nudity in pictorial or sartorial art.
6. Erotic subject-matter operating through the medium of wit and humour.
7. Free discussion of philosophic and scientific issues involving sex.

He illustrated these seven methods with the following examples: 1) Theodore Dreiser, Ernest Hemingway, James Joyce; 2) Catullus, Walt Whitman; 3) James Branch Cabell, Voltaire, Henry Fielding; 4) Pierre Louys, the Marquis de Sade; 5) Giorgione, Praxiteles, or modern bathing-suit designers; 6) the dramatists of the Restoration; 7) Havelock Ellis, Auguste Forel, Richard von Kraft-Ebing, Freud. Of these, he declared that numbers 1, 2, 3, and 7 were not debatable at all—there was no question of censorship in these cases, and any imposition of it is barbarous and uncivilised; 5 was outside the present question because it was not, properly speaking, an erotic phenomenon at all ("No one but a ridiculous ignoramus or a warped Victorian sees anything erotic in the healthy human body . . . Only fools, jokers or perverts feel the urge to put overalls on Discobulus or tie an apron around the Venus of the Medici!"—the use of "perverts" here is exquisite); 6 was genuinely debatable, but even here Lovecraft did not think that much of a case for actual censorship could be made. Point 4 was the one on which he and Moe agreed; but Lovecraft turned the matter ingeniously to his advantage so as to enunciate his own moral and aesthetic foci: "These things are like Harold Bell Wright and Eddie Guest in other fields—pap and hokum, and emotional short-cuts and fakes." Lovecraft nevertheless said he would not actually censor a copy of Sacher-Masoch's

Venus in Furs if he received one as a present, but would turn around and sell it for a young fortune!

The matter came up for discussion three years later in connexion with Donald Wandrei's unpublished mainstream novel *Invisible Sun,* a work that contained some fairly explicit depictions of sexual activity, although they were presented as part of an overall depiction of the general amoralism of modern youth. Here it was Derleth (who also read the work in manuscript) who found these passages objectionable. Although it is exactly in the course of this discussion that Lovecraft made his comment that homosexuality is "naturally" repugnant, he went on to say (not having yet read Wandrei's novel): "although I detest all sexual irregularities *in life itself,* as violations of a certain harmony which seems to me inseparable from high-grade living, I have a scientific approval of perfect realism in *the artistic delineation of life.*"[79] After reading the novel, Lovecraft generally defended Wandrei's use of sexual situations (including a soliloquy in which a female character fantasises about sex and ends up masturbating to climax, and another scene where a college party leads to public sexual intercourse), remarking: "Concerning the element of repulsiveness—I repeat that this is only a logical outcome of that repudiation of natural & age-old aesthetic attitudes concerning certain departments of life which (though neither new nor moral) arrogates to itself the title of 'new morality' . . ."[80]

I do not wish to say a great deal about Lovecraft's later metaphysics or ethics, for they do not appear to have undergone much significant change since the later 1920s. One thing may be worth emphasising here—the remarkable if complex *unity* of nearly all phases of his thought. It is clear that Lovecraft had worked out an all-encompassing philosophical system in which each part logically (or at least psychologically) implied the other.

Beginning with metaphysics, Lovecraft espoused cosmicism in its broadest form: the universe, even if not theoretically infinite in space and time (Einstein's notion of curved space is noted), is still of such vastness that the human sphere assumes a role of utter negligibility when compared to the cosmos. Science also establishes the extreme unlikelihood of the immortality of the "soul" (whatever that may be), the existence of a deity, and nearly all other tenets espoused by the religions of the world. Ethically, this means that values are relative either to the individual or to the race, but that (and I have already displayed that this argument is fallacious and contradictory) there is one anchor of fixity for human beings in this cosmic

flux—the cultural traditions in which each individual was raised. Aesthetically, the cosmicism/traditionalism dichotomy implies conservatism in art (repudiation of modernism, functionalism, etc.) and, in the realm of weird fiction, the suggestion of the simultaneously terrifying and imaginatively stimulating gulfs of space and time. Many of Lovecraft's other predilections—antiquarianism, gentlemanliness of comportment, even perhaps racialism (as an aspect of cultural traditionalism)—can be harmonised within this complex of beliefs.

How Lovecraft's late political and economic views harmonise with his general philosophy is perhaps a little harder to gauge. That there is no contradiction between Lovecraft's fervent, even compulsive interest in these matters in the last five years of his life and his general cosmicism—which purports to minimise human importance and human effort—is made clear by a single statement in 1929, even though the subject of discussion here is art: "Art, then, is really very important . . . though it abrogates its function and ceases to be art as soon as it becomes self-conscious, [or] puffed with illusions of *cosmic* significance, (as distinguished from local, human, emotional significance) . . ."[81] The distinction between cosmic and human significance is critical: we may not matter a whit to the cosmos, but we matter sufficiently to ourselves to fashion the fairest political and economic system that we can.

Now and then Lovecraft spoke more personally on his beliefs, desires, and reasons for living—still in a generally philosophical mode, but with no expectation of persuading anyone to adopt his views. One very poignant utterance was made to August Derleth in 1930:

> I am perfectly confident that I could never adequately convey to any other human being the precise reasons why I continue to refrain from suicide—the reasons, that is, why I still find existence enough of a compensation to atone for its dominantly burthensome quality. These reasons are strongly linked with architecture, scenery, and lighting and atmospheric effects, and take the form of vague impressions of adventurous expectancy coupled with elusive memory—impressions that certain vistas, particularly those associated with sunsets, are avenues of approach to spheres or conditions of wholly undefined delights and freedoms which I have known in the past and have a slender possibility of knowing again in the future. Just what those

> delights and freedoms are, or even what they approximately resemble, I could not concretely imagine to save my life; save that they seem to concern some ethereal quality of indefinite expansion and mobility, and of a heightened perception which shall make all forms and combinations of beauty simultaneously visible to me, and realisable by me. I might add, though, that they invariably imply a total defeat of the laws of time, space, matter, and energy—or rather, an individual independence of these laws on my part, whereby I can sail through the varied universes of space-time as an invisible vapour might . . . upsetting none of them, yet superior to their limitations and local forms of material organisation. . . . Now this all sounds damn foolish to anybody else—and very justly so. There is no reason why it should sound anything except damn foolish to anyone who has not happened to receive precisely the same series of inclinations, impressions, and background-images which the purely fortuitous circumstances of my own especial life have chanced to give me.[82]

Much as I admire the logician in Lovecraft—the fierce foe of religious obscurantism, the rationalist and materialist who absorbed Einstein and retained a lifelong belief in the validity of scientific evidence—I think a passage like this, personal and even mystical in its way, gets closer to what Lovecraft was all about; for this is an honest and sincere exposure of his *imaginative life,* and—while there is nothing here that contradicts his general metaphysics and ethics—it humanises Lovecraft and shows that, beyond the cold rationalism of his intellect, he was a man whose emotions responded deeply to many of the varied phenomena of life. *Persons* may not have moved him—he may have genuinely loved no one in his life but his closest family members—but he felt intensely and profoundly many things that most of us pass over with scarcely a thought.

The opening sentence of this utterance—a reflection of his abiding acknowledgement of Schopenhauer's belief in the fundamental wretchedness of existence—may be of relevance in considering another series of statements that has caused a certain amount of controversy: his letters to Helen Sully.

L. Sprague de Camp has interpreted these statements as revealing a profound depression on Lovecraft's part in his later years; and, taken out of

context—or perhaps without an awareness of their import—they could indeed be interpreted as such. Consider the following:

> In actual fact, there are few total losses & never-was's which discourage & exasperate me more than the venerable E'ch-Pi-El. I know of few persons whose attainments fall more consistently short of their aspirations, or who in general have less to live for. Every aptitude which I wish I had, I lack. Everything which I value, I have either lost or am likely to lose. Within a decade, unless I can find some job paying at least $10.00 per week, I shall have to take the cyanide route through inability to keep around me the books, pictures, furniture, & other familiar objects which constitute my only remaining reason for keeping alive. . . . The reason I have been more "melancholy" than usual in the last few years is that I am coming to distrust more & more the value of the material I produce. Adverse criticism has of late vastly undermined my confidence in my literary powers. And so it goes. Decidedly, Grandpa is not one of those beaming old gentlemen who radiate cheer wherever they go![83]

This certainly sounds pretty bad, but—although there are perhaps no actual falsehoods in any of it—a consideration of its context, and of some passages I have omitted, may allow us to take a different view.

Reading the entirety of Lovecraft's letters to Sully (we do not have her side of the correspondence), it becomes readily apparent that Sully was a high-strung, hypersensitive woman who was experiencing a series of disappointments (among them unfortunate love affairs) and was looking for Lovecraft to lend her some fortitude and encouragement. Lovecraft makes frequent reference to her "recent sombre reflections" and "feeling of oppression,"[84] and—in the very letter in which the above extract is drawn—even quotes some phrases in Sully's letter in which she described herself as feeling "hopeless, useless, incompetent, and generally miserable" and Lovecraft as a "beautifully balanced, contented person." Lovecraft's tactic—which may or may not have been successful—was two-pronged: first, suggest that "happiness" as such was a relatively little-realised goal among human beings; and second, suggest that he was in a far worse position than herself, so that if *he* can be tolerably contented, so much more should she be.

As to the first point:

> Of course, real *happiness* is only a rare & transient phenomenon; but when we cease to expect this extravagant extreme, we usually find a very tolerable fund of mild contentment at our disposal. True, people & landmarks vanish, & one grows old & out of the more glamorous possibilities & expectancies of life; but over-against these things there remains the fact that the world contains an almost inexhaustible store of objective beauty & potential interest & drama . . .[85]

Lovecraft goes on to say that the best way to gain this mild contentment is to abolish one's emotions, take an objective view of things, etc. etc.—things Sully probably did not especially want to hear and would probably have been unable or unwilling to carry out in any case. As her "sombre reflections" continued, Lovecraft felt that self-deprecation was the only option to make his correspondent feel better; hence the passage I quoted above. But here are some parts I did not quote:

> Meanwhile, of course, I certainly *do* get a lot of pleasure from books, travel (when I *can* travel), philosophy, the arts, history, antiquarianism, scenery, the sciences, & so on . . . & from such poor attempts in the way of aesthetic creation (= fantastic fiction) as I can kid myself into thinking I can sometimes achieve. . . . I'm no pining & picturesque victim of melancholy's romantic ravages. I merely shrug my shoulders, recognise the inevitable, let the world march past, & vegetate along as painlessly as possible. I suppose I'm a damned sight better off than millions. There are dozens of things I can actually enjoy.
>
> But the point is, that I'm probably *a thousand times worse off than you are* . . . The gist of my "sermon" is that if analysis & philosophy can make *me* tolerably resigned, it *certainly* ought to produce even better results with one not nearly so gravely handicapped.

And Lovecraft ends with the rousing peroration, "So—as a final homiletic word from garrulous & sententious old age—for Tsathoggua's sake cheer up!" Again, I am not clear how well Lovecraft succeeded in relieving Sully of her depression; but certainly the passages in his letters to her cannot be taken straightforwardly as evidence of any depression of his own. Very little

of the rest of his correspondence of this period corroborates such an impression.

The one area of Lovecraft's thought that has—justifiably—aroused the greatest outrage among later commentators is his attitude on race. My contention is, however, both that Lovecraft has been criticised for the wrong reasons and that, even though he clearly espoused views that are illiberal, intolerant, or plain wrong scientifically, his racism is at least logically separable from the rest of his philosophical and even political thought.

Lovecraft retained to the end of his days a belief in the biological inferiority of blacks and also of Australian aborigines, although it is not clear why he singled out this latter group. Even the 9th edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*—where he obtained most of the information on Australia for "The Shadow out of Time"—declared that the aborigines' "mental faculties, through probably inferior to those of the Polynesian copper-coloured race, are not contemptible. They have much acuteness of perception for the realations of individual objects . . . The grammatical structure of some North Australian languages has a considerable degree of refinement."[86] Nevertheless, the general thrust of the article could lead someone like Lovecraft to believe that the race is irremediably mired in savage primitivism.

In any event, Lovecraft advocated an absolutely rigid colour line against intermarriage between blacks and whites, so as to guard against "miscegenation." This view was by no means uncommon in the 1920s, and many leading American biologists and psychologists wrote forebodingly about the possibility that racial intermixture could lead to biological abnormalities.[87] Of course, laws against interracial marriage survived in this country until an embarrassingly recent time.

Lovecraft's views on the matter no doubt affected his judgment of the celebrated Scottsboro case. In March 1931 nine black youths between the ages of thirteen and twenty-one were charged with the rape of two white women while riding on a freight train near Scottsboro, Alabama. In two weeks the defendants were found guilty by an all-white jury and sentenced to the electric chair. Lovecraft made no mention of the case at this time. After the convictions, the Communist-backed International Labor Defense took up the case, and in November 1932 the U.S. Supreme Court ordered a new trial on the grounds that the defendants had not received adequate

counsel. The trial began in March 1933. The first defendant was again sentenced to death, while the trial of the others was postponed indefinitely because of the furore that erupted. Two years later, on April 1, 1935, the U.S. Supreme Court reversed the conviction because blacks were systematically barred from the jury. In subsequent trials in 1936–37 five of the defendants were convicted and sentenced to long prison terms; the other four defendants were dismissed.

In May 1933 Lovecraft remarked to J. Vernon Shea, who clearly believed in the defendants' innocence: "Naturally nobody wants to kill the poor niggers unless they were guilty . . . but it doesn't seem to me that their innocence is at all likely. This is no low-grade lynching incident. A very fair court has passed on the case . . ."[88] Lovecraft charitably recommended mere life imprisonment for the suspects rather than execution, so that any "mistake" in their conviction could be rectified. In February 1934 Lovecraft, continuing to argue over the case with Shea, made the remarkable claim: "It doesn't seem natural to me that well-disposed men would deliberately condemn even niggers to death if they were not strongly convinced of their guilt."[89] To be fair to Lovecraft, there was little suspicion at the time that the alleged victims were fabricating the whole story, even though we now know that that was indeed the case; but it is dismaying how Lovecraft could be so oblivious of the deep-seated racism that routinely resulted in African-Americans in the South (and elsewhere) being convicted on poor evidence by white juries.

But, as we have seen earlier, Lovecraft in the course of time was forced to back down increasingly from his claims to the superiority of the Aryan (or Nordic or Teuton) over other groups aside from blacks and aborigines:

> No anthropologist of standing insists on the uniformly advanced evolution of the Nordic as compared with that of other Caucasian and Mongolian races. As a matter of fact, it is freely conceded that the Mediterranean race turns out a higher percentage of the aesthetically sensitive and that the Semitic groups excel in sharp, precise intellection. It may be, too, that the Mongolian excels in aesthetick capacity and normality of philosophical adjustment. What, then, is the secret of pro-Nordicism amongst those who hold these views? Simply this—that ours is a Nordic culture, and that the roots of that culture are so inextricably tangled in the national standards, perspectives,

> traditions, memories, instincts, peculiarities, and physical aspects of the Nordic stream that no other influences are fitted to mingle in *our* fabric. We don't despise the French *in France or Quebec,* but we don't want them grabbing *our* territory and creating foreign islands like Woonsocket and Fall River. The fact of this uniqueness of every separate culture-stream—this dependence of instinctive likes and dislikes, natural methods, unconscious appraisals, etc., etc., on the physical and historical attributes of a single race—is too obvious to be ignored except by empty theorists.[90]

This passage is critical. Now that his race has been stripped of any recognisable superiority over others (although, of course, the "concessions" he made as to the distinguishing features of other races are merely simple-minded stereotypes), how could Lovecraft continue to defend segregation? He did so by asserting—from an illegitimate generalisation of his own prejudices—a wildly exaggerated degree of incompatibility and hostility among different cultural groups. And there is a subtle but profound hypocrisy here also: Lovecraft trumpeted "Aryan" conquests over other races (European conquest of the American continent, to name only one example) as justified by the inherent strength and prowess of the race; but when other "races" or cultures—the French-Canadians in Woonsocket, the Italians and Portuguese in Providence, the Jews in New York—made analogous incursions into "Aryan" territory, he saw it as somehow contrary to Nature. He was backed into this corner by his claim that the Nordic is *"a master in the art of orderly living and group preservation"* [91]—and he therefore cannot account for the increasing heterogeneity of "Nordic" culture.

Lovecraft was, of course, entirely at liberty to feel personally uncomfortable in the presence of aliens; he was even, I believe, at liberty to wish for a culturally and racially homogeneous society. This wish is, in itself, not pernicious, just as the wish for a racially and culturally diverse society—such as the United States has now become—is not in itself self-evidently virtuous. Each has its own advantages and drawbacks, and Lovecraft clearly preferred the advantages of homogeneity (cultural unanimity and continuity, respect for tradition) to its drawbacks (prejudice, cultural isolationism, fossilisation). Where Lovecraft went astray philosophically is in attributing his own sentiments to his "race" or culture

at large: “We can *like* a fool or a boor even when we laugh at him. There is nothing *loathsome* or *monstrous* to us in weak thinking or poor taste. But for the cringing, broken, unctuous, subtle type we have a *genuine horror—a sense of outraged Nature*—which excites our deepest nerve-fibres of mental and physical repugnance.”[92] That repeated “we” is rhetorically clever but transparently fallacious.

In my view, Lovecraft leaves himself most open to criticism on the issue of race not by the mere espousal of such views but by his lack of openmindedness on the issue, and more particularly his resolute unwillingness to study the most up-to-date findings on the subject from biologists, anthropologists, and other scientists of unquestioned authority who were, through the early decades of the century, systematically destroying each and every pseudo-scientific “proof” of racialist theories. In every other aspect of his thought—metaphysics, ethics, aesthetics, politics—Lovecraft was constantly digesting new information (even if only through newspaper reports, magazine articles, and other second-hand sources) and readjusting his views accordingly. Only on the issue of race did his thinking remain relatively static. He never realised that his beliefs had been largely shaped by parental and societal influence, early reading, and outmoded late nineteenth-century science. The mere fact that he had to defend his views so vigorously and argumentatively in letters—chiefly to younger correspondents like Frank Long and J. Vernon Shea—should have encouraged him to rethink his position; but he never did so in any significant way.

The brute fact is that by 1930 every “scientific” justification for racism had been demolished. The spearhead of the scientific opposition to racism was the anthropologist Franz Boas (1857–1942), but I find no mention of him in any of Lovecraft’s letters or essays. The intelligentsia—among whom Lovecraft surely would have wished to number himself—had also largely repudiated racist assumptions in their political and social thought. Indeed, such things as the classification of skulls by size or shape (dolichocephalic, brachycephalic, etc.)—which Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard waste much time debating in their letters of the early 1930s—had been shown to be preposterous and unscientific even by the late nineteenth century. At least Lovecraft did not generally utilise intelligence tests (such as the Stanford-Binet test perfected in 1916) to “prove” the superior brain-

capacity of whites over non-whites—something that, remarkably enough, has experienced a recrudescence in our own day.

And yet, ugly and unfortunate as Lovecraft's racial views are, they do not materially affect the validity of the rest of his philosophical thought. They may well enter into a significant proportion of his fiction (miscegenation and fear of aliens are clearly at the centre of such tales as "The Lurking Fear," "The Horror at Red Hook," and "The Shadow over Innsmouth"), but I cannot see that they affect his metaphysical, ethical, aesthetic, or even his late political views in any meaningful way. These views do not stand or fall on racialist assumptions. I certainly have no desire to brush Lovecraft's racism under the rug, but I do not think that the many compelling positions he advocated as a thinker should be dismissed because of his clearly erroneous views on race.

If Lovecraft's racism has been the one aspect of his thought that has been subject to the greatest censure, then within that aspect it is his qualified support of Hitler and his corresponding suspicion of Jewish influence in America that has—again justifiably—caused even greater outrage. He argued the matter at length with J. Vernon Shea in the early 1930s, and the late date of this discussion emphatically refutes the claims of many of Lovecraft's apologists (among whom, surprisingly, can be numbered L. Sprague de Camp, who otherwise has been criticised for so openly displaying Lovecraft's racialist comments, especially during his New York period) that he somehow "reformed" at the end of his life and shed many of the beliefs he had spouted so carelessly in his earlier years. Some of his comments are acutely embarrassing:

> [Hitler's] vision is of course romantic & immature, & coloured with a fact-ignoring emotionalism. . . . There surely *is* an actual Hitler peril—yet that cannot blind us to the honest rightness of the man's basic urge. . . . I repeat that there is a great & pressing need behind every one of the major planks of Hitlerism—racial-cultural continuity, conservative cultural ideals, & an escape from the absurdities of Versailles. The crazy thing is not what Adolf wants, but the way he sees it & starts out to get it. I know he's a clown, but by God, I *like* the boy![93]

These points are elaborated at great length in this and other letters. According to Lovecraft, Hitler is right to suppress Jewish influence in

German culture, since "no settled & homogeneous nation ought (a) to admit enough of a decidedly alien race-stock to bring about an actual alteration in the dominant ethnic composition, or (b) tolerate the dilution of the culture-stream with emotional & intellectual elements alien to the original cultural impulse." Hitler is, according to Lovecraft, wrong in the extremism of his hostility toward anyone with even a small amount of Jewish blood, since it is culture rather than blood that should be the determining criterion. It is remarkable and distressing to hear Lovecraft praising Hitler's "conservative cultural ideals," since—in spite of his vociferous protests that his brand of fascistic socialism would assure complete freedom of thought, opinion, and art—this reference must allude to Hitler's philistine objections to and suppression of what he deemed "degenerate" art. Admittedly, much of this art was of that modernist school that Lovecraft despised, although even so one cannot imagine him wishing to censor it; and it is quite likely that his own weird fiction might have come under such a ban if it had been written in Germany.

The whole question of American and British support for Hitler is one that has received surprisingly little scholarly study. Certainly, Lovecraft was not alone among the intellectual classes prior to 1937 in expressing some approbation of Hitler; and just as certainly, Lovecraft cannot possibly be considered of the same stripe as the American pro-Nazi groups in this country (which, as we have already seen, he scorned and repudiated), much less such organisations as the Friends of the New Germany or the German-American Bund, who largely attracted a small number of disaffected German-Americans and were even operated for the most part by German Nazis. It is true that the German-American Bund, established in 1936 as the successor to the Friends of the New Germany, published much literature that warned in foreboding terms of Jewish control of American government and culture, in tones that (as we shall see presently) are not entirely dissimilar to Lovecraft's; but this literature began appearing years after Lovecraft's views on the matter were already solidified. Lovecraft cannot even be lumped indiscriminately with the common run of American anti-Semites of the 1930s, most of whom were extreme political conservatives who sought to equate Jewishness with Bolshevism.[94] My feeling is that Lovecraft came by his overall economic and political views, as well as his racial stance, by independent thought on the state of the nation and the world. His beliefs are so clearly and integrally an outgrowth of his previous

thinking on these issues that the search for some single intellectual influence seems misguided.

Harry Brobst provides some evidence of Lovecraft's awareness of the horrors of Hitler's Germany toward the very end of his life. He recalls that a Mrs Sheppard (the downstairs neighbour of Lovecraft and Annie Gamwell at 66 College) was a German native and wished to return permanently to Germany. She did so, but (in Brobst's words) "it was at that time that Nazism was beginning to flower, and she saw the Jews beaten, and she was so horrified, upset, distraught that she just left Germany and came back to Providence. And she told Mrs. Gamwell and Lovecraft about her experiences, and they were both very incensed about this."[95]

Lovecraft indeed took note of the departure of Mrs Alice Sheppard in late July 1936, observing that she dumped upon Lovecraft some very welcome volumes from her library. He stated, however, that she was planning to settle in Germany for three years, then return to live out her life in Newport, Rhode Island.[96] I find, however, no mention in any letters of her abrupt return, nor any expression of horror at any revelations she may have conveyed. But references to Hitler do indeed drop off radically in the last year of Lovecraft's life, so it is conceivable that Lovecraft, having heard accounts from Mrs Sheppard, simply clammed up about the matter in the realisation that he had been wrong. It would be a comforting thought.

Lovecraft's point about Jewish domination of German culture leads directly to his assessment of what he felt was happening in this country, specifically in its literary and publishing capital, New York:

> As for New York—there is no question but that its overwhelming Semitism has totally removed it from the American stream. Regarding its influence on literary & dramatic expression—it is not so much that the country is flooded directly with Jewish authors, as that Jewish publishers determine just which of our Aryan writers shall achieve print & position. That means that those of us who least express our own people have the preference. Taste is insidiously moulded along non-Aryan lines—so that, no matter how intrinsically good the resulting body of literature may be, it is a special, rootless literature which does not represent us.[97]

Lovecraft went on to mention Sherwood Anderson and William Faulkner as writers who, "delving in certain restricted strata, seldom touch on any chord

to which the reader personally responds." If this is not a case of generalising from personal experience, I don't know what is! I have trouble believing that Lovecraft was actually serious on this point, but the frequency with which he spoke of it must mean that he was. Newspaper reporting in New York also angered him:

> . . . not a paper in New York dares to call its soul its own in dealing with the Jews & with social & political questions affecting them. The whole press is absolutely enslaved in that direction, so that on the whole length & breadth of the city *it is impossible to secure any public American utterance—any frank expression of the typical mind & opinions of the actual American people—on a fairly wide & potentially important range of topics*. . . . Gawd knows I have no wish to injure any race under the sun, but I *do* think that something ought to be done to free American expression from the control of *any* element which seeks to curtail it, distort it, or remodel it in any direction other than its natural course.[98]

But what *is* the "natural course" of American expression? And why did Lovecraft axiomatically believe that he and people like him were the "actual American people" (which means that others who did not share his views were necessarily "un-American")? Lovecraft is again being haunted by the spectre of change: Faulkner and Sherwood Anderson don't write the way the more conservative novelists write or used to write, so they are deemed "unnatural" or unrepresentative.

The degree to which matters of race were central to Lovecraft's own sense of "placement" and comfort is made clear in a late letter:

> In my opinion the paramount things of existence are those whose mental and imaginative landmarks—language, culture, traditions, perspectives, instinctive responses to environmental stimuli, etc.—which gives to mankind the illusion of significance and direction in the cosmic drift. Race and civilisation are more important, according to this point of view, than concrete political or economic status; so that the weakening of any racial culture by political division is to be regarded as an unqualified evil . . .[99]

I am inclined to think that Lovecraft exaggerated the actual "racial" aspect of this sentiment—as similarly when he stated, as late as 1930, "I am

hitched on to the cosmos not as an isolated unit, but as a Teuton-Celt"[100] —but in any case it was his view. What he wanted was simply *familiarity*—the familiarity of the milieu in a racially and culturally homogeneous Providence that he had experienced in youth. In stating that even art must satisfy our "homesickness . . . for the things we have known" ("Heritage or Modernism"), Lovecraft was testifying to the homesickness he himself felt when, as an "unassimilated alien"[101] in New York or even in latter-day Providence, he witnessed the increasing urbanisation and racial heterogeneity of his region and his country. Racialism was for him a bulwark against acknowledging that his ideal of a purely Anglo-Saxon America no longer had any relevance and could never be recaptured.

More generally, the increasing racial and cultural heterogeneity of his society was for Lovecraft the chief symbol of *change*—change that was happening too fast for him to accept. The frequency with which, in his later years, he harps on this subject—"change is intrinsically undesirable";[102] "Change is the enemy of everything really worth cherishing"[103]—speaks eloquently of Lovecraft's frantic desire for social stability and his quite sincere belief (one, indeed, that has something to recommend it) that such stability is a necessary precondition of a vital and profound culture.

Lovecraft's final years were characterised both by much hardship (painful rejections of his best tales and concomitant depression over the merit of his work; increasing poverty; and, toward the very end, the onset of his terminal illness) and by moments of joy (travels all along the eastern seaboard; the intellectual stimulus of correspondence with a variety of distinctive colleagues; increasing adulation in the tiny worlds of amateur journalism and fantasy fandom). But to the end, Lovecraft continued to wrestle, mostly in letters, with the fundamental issues of politics, economics, society, and culture, with a breadth of learning, acuity of logic, and a deep humanity born of wide observation and experience that could not have been conceived by the "eccentric recluse" who had so timidly emerged from self-imposed hermitry in 1914. That his largely private discussions did not have any influence on the intellectual temper of the age is unfortunate; but his unceasing intellectual vigour, even as he was descending into the final stages of cancer, is as poignant a testimonial to his courage and to his devotion to the life of the mind as anyone could wish. Lovecraft himself, at any rate, did not think the effort wasted.

24. Close to the Bread-Line

(1935–1936)

For the time being "The Shadow out of Time" remained in manuscript; Lovecraft was so unsure of its quality that he didn't know whether to type it up or tear it up. Finally, in a kind of despair, he sent the notebook containing the handwritten draft to August Derleth at the end of February 1935—as if he no longer wished to look at it. Derleth sat on it for months without, evidently, making even the attempt to read it.

Meanwhile the fifth proposal by a publisher to issue a collection of Lovecraft's stories emerged in mid-February—this time through the intercession of Derleth. He had importuned his own publishers, Loring & Mussey (who issued both his Judge Peck detective novels and his *Place of Hawks*) to consider a volume of Lovecraft's tales. Already by early March Derleth was suggesting to Lovecraft that he write an introduction to the collection, even though Lovecraft had not even sent to Loring & Mussey any actual stories but only a list of them. The publishers took their time making a decision. Things didn't look good by the end of May: "Mussey is indecisive; his wife (who is in the business) doesn't like the stories & wants to turn them down; & Loring hasn't read them."[1] A definite rejection came in the middle of July. Lovecraft's response was typical: "This about finishes me with writing. No more submissions to publishers."[2]

Lovecraft meant what he said. He had already announced to Derleth at the beginning of 1935, "I send nothing to W T now";[3] so that when E. Hoffmann Price, to whom the idea of not submitting a finished story must have appeared a species of lunacy, continually badgered Lovecraft to send in "The Thing on the Doorstep" (still unsubmitted anywhere) to *Weird Tales,* Lovecraft was not much inclined to listen. As early as February 1934 Price said he would himself send the story to Farnsworth Wright, but clearly he never did. In August 1935 Price again urged Lovecraft to

collaborate, the proceeds to go to a trip to California where he could see Clark Ashton Smith and other Pacific coast associates; but of course Lovecraft declined.

Meanwhile, in the tiny world of fandom, the humble little *Fantasy Fan* ceased publication after the February 1935 issue, to the lamentations of all parties. It really was a very useful forum for the expression of readers' views on weird and fantasy fiction, and the work it published—fiction, poetry, and articles—was on the whole substantially better than what followed it. The loss was doubly unfortunate for Lovecraft, for not only did it cause the suspension of the serialisation of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" in midstream but it also prevented the appearance of a biographical article on Lovecraft written by F. Lee Baldwin.

This item was, however, transferred to Julius Schwartz's *Fantasy Magazine,* where it appeared in April 1935 as "H. P. Lovecraft: A Biographical Sketch". Much of the content of the article was drawn quite directly from Lovecraft's letters to Baldwin, although Lovecraft also noted that Baldwin had sent him a questionnaire to answer.[4] It was the first of what would be many articles in the fan magazines appearing just before and just after Lovecraft's death. It also featured a fine linoleum cut of Lovecraft by Duane W. Rimel.

William L. Crawford had a wild idea of reviving the *Fantasy Fan* and installing Lovecraft as editor; Lovecraft actually tentatively accepted the offer, but he was pretty certain that Crawford could never pull off the project. In the spring of 1935 Crawford proposed a variety of book ideas to Lovecraft—the issuance of *At the Mountains of Madness* or "The Shadow over Innsmouth" as a booklet, or both together in one volume. This undertaking, however, took a long time to reach fruition.

In March 1935 Lovecraft heard from Lloyd Arthur Eshbach (1910–2003), the editor of an amateur magazine called the *Galleon.* Although Eshbach published a good many science fiction stories in the pulps in the 1930s, he specifically conceived the *Galleon* as a general magazine that would not focus on the weird or on science fiction. Lovecraft did not think he had anything that Eshbach would want, but in the end two pieces of his were published in the magazine: the poem "Background" (sonnet XXX of *Fungi from Yuggoth*) in the May–June 1935 issue, and the story "The Quest of Iranon" in the July–August 1935 issue. Later in the year it was decided that the magazine would become purely a regional Pennsylvania enterprise,

and Esbach resigned as editor, returning another *Fungi* sonnet, "Harbour Whistles," that had been accepted. Eshbach later went on to do more work in the fantasy and science fiction fields as author and editor.

In August Duane W. Rimel proposed editing and publishing a fan magazine entitled, of all things, the *Fantaisiste's Mirror* that would resume the serialisation of "Supernatural Horror in Literature." Rimel was teaming up with Emil Petaja (1915–2000), a Montana fan with whom Lovecraft had come in touch at the end of 1934. They presumably corresponded to the end of Lovecraft's life, although not many of Lovecraft's letters to him have come to light. Petaja went on to become a minor writer in the science fiction field. The Rimel-Petaja magazine was never published.

Lovecraft continued to be the hub of an increasingly wide network of fans and writers in both the amateur and weird fiction fields. One name very little known until recently, precisely because his prime concern was not the weird, is Lee McBride White (1915–1989). Although born in Monroe, North Carolina, White spent most of his life in Alabama. He had written to Lovecraft through *Weird Tales* as early as 1932, while he was a senior in high school; but, after a three-year silence during which he attended Howard College (now Samford University) in Birmingham, White seemed to lose his interest in the weird and became devoted to general literature, mostly in a modernist vein. He worked on several college literary publications, and in later life was a journalist. He wrote one book, *The American Revolution in Notes, Quotes, and Anecdotes* (1975).

Because of White's literary orientation, he did not associate much with other members of Lovecraft's correspondence circle, even though Lovecraft himself occasionally tried to put White in touch with potentially congenial individuals. The letters to White are full of Lovecraft's opinions on contemporary mainstream literature, and toward the end there emerges a very interesting discussion of John Donne and the Metaphysical poets (then experiencing a revival thanks to their seeming anticipation of many modernist tendencies). Lovecraft revised an untitled poem White wrote about Donne, although commenting that he was "an anti-Donnite" who believed that Donne was "not primarily a poet—but rather a thinker & minute analyser of human nature"—exactly the same criticism he had levelled at T. S. Eliot, who, not surprisingly, was a leading advocate of the Metaphysical poets.

William Frederick Anger (1920–1997) was a more typical late correspondent of Lovecraft's. A devotee of weird fiction (and, apparently, little else), he came in touch with Lovecraft in the summer of 1934. A Californian who later became one of the few fans or writers to visit Clark Ashton Smith in person, Anger and his colleague Louis C. Smith (about whom almost nothing is known) had ambitious plans that in the end came to nothing. First they proposed an index to *Weird Tales*—a prophetic idea, anticipating T. G. L. Cockcroft's index by almost thirty years—but never completed it; in any case, it appeared to be not so much an index as a simple listing of the tables of contents of every issue. Then, in the summer of 1935, they conceived the notion of producing a mimeographed edition of Lovecraft's *Fungi from Yuggoth.* Although this project too ran aground very quickly, it gains importance for one feature that I shall explore a little later. The only thing Anger and Smith seem actually to have accomplished is a brief article on E. Hoffmann Price (whom Lovecraft had put in touch with them) in the *Fantasy Fan* for December 1934. Lovecraft's correspondence with Anger exclusively concerns weird fiction and the fantasy fan circuit, and if nothing shows how gentlemanly he could be to anyone who wrote to him: the correspondence continued to the very end of his life.

A much more significant later colleague was Donald A. Wollheim (1914–1990). A New York City resident (he lived for most of his life in Rego Park, a district in Queens), Wollheim in 1935 took over a fan magazine started by Wilson Shepherd, the *International Science Fiction Guild Bulletin,* and renamed it the *Phantagraph,* continuing it into 1946. Although a very slim publication (some issues consisted of only four pages), the *Phantagraph* might perhaps be—largely because of its relative regularity of issuance and its longevity—the most significant fanzine since the *Fantasy Fan.* Lovecraft published a number of minor items—mostly prose poems and sonnets from the *Fungi*—in its pages from 1935 onward, and Wollheim continued to print such items well after Lovecraft's death. The correspondence to Wollheim has not surfaced, so it is impossible to gauge its duration (it commenced probably no earlier than 1935) or its substance. Wollheim of course went on in later years to become an important figure in the fantasy and science fiction community, chiefly as the editor of the *Avon Fantasy Reader* (1947–52) and of many other science fiction anthologies. He also wrote a number of science fiction novels for juveniles.

In addition to new correspondents, colleagues old and new began descending upon Lovecraft in person throughout 1935. The first was Robert Ellis Moe (1912–1992?), the eldest son of Lovecraft's longtime amateur associate Maurice W. Moe. Lovecraft had met Robert in 1923, when the latter was eleven; now, at twenty-three, he had secured a position at the General Electric Company in Bridgeport, Connecticut, and, having a car, paid Lovecraft a visit in Providence on March 2–3. Lovecraft gave him the usual tour of Providence and Newport antiquities, and they stopped at Warren, Bristol, East Greenwich, and Wickford also. Three days after Moe left, Lovecraft took a solitary twelve-mile walk to the Quinsnicket area north of Providence.[5]

Sometime in early March Lovecraft received another visitor:

> One night last week I was reading the paper in my study when my aunt entered to announce (with a somewhat amused air) a caller by the name of Mr. Kenneth Sterling. Close on her heels the important visitor appeared . . . in the person of a little Jew boy about as high as my waist, with unchanged childish treble & swarthy cheeks innocent of the Gilette's [*sic*] harsh strokes. He *did* have long trousers—which somehow looked grotesque upon so tender an infant.

Sterling (1920–1995) was not quite fifteen at this time. He was a member of a fan organisation called the Science Fiction League, and his family had recently moved to Providence, where he was attending Classical High School. Knowing that a master of weird fiction lived in the city, Sterling with the boldness of youth took the liberty of introducing himself in the most direct imaginable way. But when they began actually discussing both science and science fiction, Lovecraft's amusement turned to admiration:

> Damme if the little imp didn't talk like a man of 30—correcting all the mistakes in the current science yarns, reeling off facts & figures a mile a minute, & displaying the taste & judgment of a veteran. He's already sold a story to *Wonder* . . ., & is bubbling over with ideas. . . . Hope he won't prove a nuisance—but I wouldn't for the world discourage him in his endeavours. He really does seem like an astonishingly promising brat—& means to become a research biologist.[6]

Sterling did in fact visit Lovecraft with some frequency over the next year or so, but in the fall of 1936 he went to Harvard, where he gained a B.S. in

1940; three years later he earned a medical degree at Johns Hopkins. He would spend many years on the staffs of the Columbia University College of Physicians and Surgeons and the Department of Veterans Affairs Medical Center in the Bronx. His interest in weird and science fiction would fade rather quickly, but one notable item would emerge from it.

Robert Moe returned for another visit on April 27–28, at which time the Lovecraft took him again to Newport and then to New Bedford, with its abundance of whaling memories (but the whaling museum was closed). Later they explored an area of southern Massachusetts and southeastern Rhode Island that Lovecraft—because of his own lack of a vehicle—had never seen before: "Splendid unspoiled countryside with rambling stone walls & idyllic white-steepled villages of the old New England type. Of the latter the two best specimens—Adamsville & Little Compton Commons—are both in Rhode Island. Adamsville contains the world's only known monument to a *hen*—perpetuating the fame of the Rhode Island Red . . ."[7] This rural area is pretty much the same today. They returned via Tiverton, Fall River (which Lovecraft rightly declares to be "a lousily ugly mill city just over the line in Mass."), and Warren, where they had a dinner consisting entirely of ice cream.

Lovecraft went to see Edward H. Cole in Boston on May 3–5, and in spite of the unusually cold weather managed at least to get to beloved Marblehead. Amateurdom was the subject of much discussion, as the NAPA was heating up with a variety of controversies and feuds from which Lovecraft attempted to remain aloof (although quietly supporting those individuals he felt most honourable and most likely to further the amateur cause) but into which he would in the course of time get dragged in spite of himself. But at the moment Lovecraft was a mere observer of the fray.

On May 25 Charles D. Hornig, the erstwhile editor of the *Fantasy Fan,* stopped by to visit Lovecraft in Providence. He was given the usual historic tour, which he seemed to appreciate the more because it reminded him of his own hometown of Elizabeth, New Jersey. Ken Sterling was on hand for most of the festivities.

By this time, however, Lovecraft was already in the midst of planning for another grand southern tour—the last, as it happened, he would ever take. For in early May Barlow had invited him down to Florida for another stay of indefinite length. Lovecraft was naturally inclined to accept, and

only money stood in the way; but by May 29 Lovecraft concluded optimistically, "Counting sestertii, & I think I can make it!"[8]

The trip began on June 5. Reaching New York in the early afternoon, he found time so short that he did not look up anyone, not even Frank Long. Instead, he spent some time writing postcards in Prospect Park, Brooklyn, before catching the 9.40 P.M. bus to Washington. Arriving there at 6.15 A.M. on the 6th, he immediately caught another bus to Fredericksburg, managing to get six hours of exploring and postcard-writing there before catching a late bus to Charleston, which he reached on the morning of the 7th. By spending two nights on buses, Lovecraft saved two nights' expense in hotels or YMCAs. He did spend the night of the 7th in the Charleston YMCA after a full day of sightseeing. The next day was apparently spent in Charleston also, as Lovecraft could not bear to leave the place after only a single day; but late that day he must have caught another bus to Jacksonville, where he stayed in a hotel (the Aragon, apparently) before catching another bus the next morning (the 9th) for DeLand.

Once again we are in the position of not knowing much of Lovecraft's activities during his unprecedentedly long stay with Barlow (June 9–August 18). Correspondence to others is our sole guide, and this time we do not even have the supplements of any memoirs—either written at the time or later—by Barlow himself. In a postcard to Donald and Howard Wandrei written in July, Lovecraft gives some idea of his activities:

> Programme much the same as last year, except that Bob's father —a retired colonel—is home. Bob's brother Wayne—a fine chap of 26—has been here on a furlough from Ft. Sam Houston, Texas, but has now returned to his 2nd Lieutenanting. ¶ Bob has built a cabin in an oak grove across the lake from the house, & is busy there with various printing projects—of some of which you'll hear later on. . . . ¶ Last month we explored a marvellous tropical river near the Barlow place. It is called Black Water Creek, & is lined on both sides by a cypress jungle with festoons of Spanish moss. Twisted roots claw at the water's edge, & palms lean precariously on every hand. Vines & creepers— sunken logs—snakes & alligators—all the colour of the Congo or Amazon.[9]

The trip to Black Water Creek took place on June 17. The cabin is of some interest, since it appears that Lovecraft actually did some work on it.

Barlow later declared that Lovecraft "helped to creosote [it] against termites,"[10] and by August 4 Lovecraft was noting: "The edifice is now quite complete, & not long ago I cleared a road to it through the scrub palmetto growths."[11]

Of the printing projects Lovecraft mentioned, we know one in particular —an edition of Long's collected poetry written subsequent to *The Man from Genoa* (1926), entitled *The Goblin Tower*. Lovecraft helped to set type on this slim pamphlet, which Barlow managed to print and bind by late October.[12] Lovecraft took the occasion to correct Long's faulty metre in some of the poems. Barlow was bursting with ideas for other projects, chiefly a collection of Clark Ashton Smith's poems entitled *Incantations;* but, as with so many other of his ambitious endeavours, this venture hung fire for years before finally coming to nothing.

One other idea Barlow had evolved at about this time was a volume of C. L. Moore's best stories. Catherine Lucile Moore (1911–1987) first appeared in *Weird Tales* in November 1933 with the striking fantasy "Shambleau"; she wrote under a gender-concealing name because she did not wish to reveal to her employers (she worked for the Fletcher Trust Co. in Indianapolis) that she had an alternate source of income, which during these lean times might give them an excuse to fire her. She went on to publish several more stories in *Weird Tales*—"Black Thirst" (April 1934), "The Black God's Kiss" (October 1934), "Black God's Shadow" (December 1934)—that evocatively combined exotic romance, even sexuality, with otherworldly fantasy. Lovecraft was not long in recognising their merit:

> These tales have a peculiar quality of cosmic weirdness, hard to define but easy to recognise, which marks them out as really unique. "Black God's Shadow" isn't up to the standard—but you can get the full effect of the distinctive quality in "Shambleau" and "Black Thirst". In these tales there is an indefinable atmosphere of vague *outsideness* & *cosmic dread* which marks weird work of the best sort.[13]

Barlow had contemplated a book of Moore's work in the spring of 1935, but wished her to revise some of her work for the volume; he entrusted Lovecraft with the delicate task of making this request to her. Lovecraft felt very awkward doing so, but he must have sufficiently praised Moore's work in his first letter to her (probably around April) that she took

no offence. A substantive correspondence ensued, Lovecraft continually beseeching her not to kowtow to pulp standards and to preserve her aesthetic independence, even if it meant economic losses in the short term. Unusually for him, he kept all her responses; unfortunately, Lovecraft's letters to her now exist, for unknown reasons, only in fragments. Had he lived longer, he would have taken heart in her subsequent career, for she became one of the most distinctive and respected voices in the next generation of science fiction and fantasy writers.

Barlow's negotiations with Moore about the volume do not seem to have progressed very far, and it must have been dropped when Barlow, with his incandescent temperament, found other projects more compelling. But he had at least put Moore and Lovecraft in touch, and both were very likely grateful for it.

Aside from printing, some actual writing was accomplished by the pair. Once again they engaged in a whimsy, although unlike "The Battle That Ended the Century" this one was not distributed until after Lovecraft's death. "Collapsing Cosmoses" is a story fragment of scarcely 500 words, but has some moments of piquant humour nonetheless. The idea was for each author to write every other paragraph or so, although on occasion Lovecraft only wrote a few words before yielding the pen back to his younger colleague, so that considerably more than half the piece is Barlow's, as are a fair number of the better jokes.

As a satire on the space-opera brand of science fiction popularised by Edmond Hamilton, E. E. "Doc" Smith, and others, "Collapsing Cosmoses" is undeniably effective; the fact that it is unfinished makes little difference, for the absurdity of the plot would have precluded any neat resolution in any event. The opening (by Lovecraft) tells the whole story:

> Dam Bor glued each of his six eyes to the lenses of the cosmoscope. His nasal tentacles were orange with fear, and his antennae buzzed hoarsely as he dictated his report to the operator behind. "It has come!" he cried. "That blur in the ether can be nothing less than a fleet from outside the space-time continuum we know. Nothing like this has ever appeared before. It must be an enemy. Give the alarm to the Inter-Cosmic Chamber of Commerce. There's no time to lose—at this rate they'll be upon us in less than six centuries. Hak Ni must have a chance to get the fleet in action at once."

Later, when Hak Ni leads his fleet into space, he hears a sound, "which was something like that of a rusty sewing-machine, only more horrible" (this is by Barlow). Certainly, it would have been an entertainment of this piece had gone on a little longer, but the authors had made their point, and Barlow probably lost patience and dragged Lovecraft to some other activity. He printed the item in the second issue of *Leaves* (1938).

But perhaps the most important function that Barlow performed was neither printing nor writing, but typing. By mid-July Derleth had still given no report on the autograph manuscript of "The Shadow out of Time"; and, although Robert Bloch had expressed interest in seeing it, Barlow was still more enthusiastic about it, so Lovecraft asked Derleth to send it down to Florida. By early August Lovecraft was expressing a certain irritation that neither Derleth nor Barlow had apparently made much of an effort to read the thing: "The bad handwriting is perhaps partly responsible for their inattention; but in addition to that the story must lack interest, else they would be carried along in spite of the difficult text."[14] Now this is all pretty unreasonable, and a clear indication of the near-complete despair into which he had fallen in regard to his own work; but very shortly he was forced, delightedly, to eat his words. For in fact Barlow was surreptitiously preparing a typescript of the story.

Lovecraft was completely bowled over by Barlow's diligence and generosity in this undertaking, and he seems not to have suspected anything when Barlow asked him to copy over one page (page 58 of the autograph), probably because it was unusually hard to read. This one-page text—with the note at the bottom, "Copied Aug. 15, 1935"—was all that survived of any manuscript of the story until the recent discovery of the original autograph draft. Although Lovecraft generously wrote that Barlow's transcript was "accurately typed,"[15] he later admitted, "I fear Barlow's text had many errors, some of which greatly misrepresent my style—since I recall doing quite a bit of correction on my copy."[16] Barlow also failed to prepare even a single carbon (Lovecraft usually prepared two). Nevertheless, Lovecraft sent the typescript on the usual round of readers.

Lovecraft clearly had a wonderful time in Florida, if for no other reason than the climate. It was not that central Florida was *hot,* in an absolute sense —the hottest it got was 88?, while correspondents from the Northwest and Northeast reported still higher temperatures—but that the absence of *low* temperatures (it was never below 80? during his entire visit) prevented

Lovecraft from experiencing that debilitating enervation he felt during northern winters. In early August he noted with amazement, "At present I'm feeling so well that I scarcely know myself!"[17]

The Barlows were again insistent that Lovecraft stay on as long as he liked. They even wanted him to stay all winter, and even move down permanently (perhaps being housed in the cabin that Robert had built), but both these plans were clearly impracticable. Lovecraft appreciated the gesture, but would have felt helpless without his books and papers for any extended period of time.

Lovecraft finally moved along on August 18. The Barlows took him as far as Daytona Beach, where they were spending a fortnight; from there he caught a bus to St Augustine. The antiquity of the place was a balm to him after nearly three months of rustic modernity. On the 20th (Lovecraft's forty-fifth birthday) Barlow came up unexpectedly, and Lovecraft showed him the sights—including a newly discovered Indian burying ground north of the town, where the skeletons were preserved as they were buried.[18] By the 26th Lovecraft was in Charleston; on the 30th he was in Richmond for a day; the 31st saw him in Washington, the 1st of September in Philadelphia, and the 2nd in New York, where he holed up with the Wandrei brothers, who had obtained a flat above New York's oldest bar, Julius's, at 155 West 10th Street. He finally reached home on September 14.

One thing Lovecraft did in Charleston and Richmond was finish what he called a "composite story"—a round-robin weird tale entitled "The Challenge from Beyond." This was the brainchild of Julius Schwartz, who wanted two round-robin stories of the same title, one weird and one science fiction, for the third anniversary issue of *Fantasy Magazine* (September 1935). He initially signed up C. L. Moore, Frank Belknap Long, A. Merritt, Lovecraft, and a fifth undecided writer for the weird version, and Stanley G. Weinbaum, Donald Wandrei, E. E. "Doc" Smith, Harl Vincent, and Murray Leinster for the science fiction version. It was something of a feat to have harnessed all these writers—especially the resolutely professional A. Merritt—for such a venture, in which each author would write a section building upon what his or her predecessor had done; but the weird version did not go quite according to plan.

Moore initiated the story with a rather lacklustre account of a man named George Campbell who, while camping alone in the Canadian wilderness, comes upon a curious quartzlike cube for whose exact nature

and purpose he cannot account. Long then wrote what Lovecraft called "a rather clever development";[19] but this left Merritt in the position of actually developing the story. Merritt balked, saying that Long had somehow deviated from the subject-matter suggested by the title, and refused to participate unless Long's section were dropped and Merritt allowed to write one of his own. Schwartz, not wanting to lose such a big name (Long, not having such an impressive reputation, was apparently considered expendable), weakly went along with the plan. Merritt's own version is pretty inane and fails to move the story along in any meaningful way: Campbell is merely impressed with the bizarrerie of the object ("It was alien, he knew it; not of this earth. Not of earth's life"), and while peering into it finds his mind sucked into the core of the object. Lovecraft, next on the list, realised that he would have to take the story in hand and actually make it go somewhere.

Notes to Lovecraft's segment survive and make interesting reading—if only for the amusing drawings of the alien entities he introduces into the tale (giant worm- or centipede-like creatures) and for the clear borrowings he has made from the plot of "The Shadow out of Time." For this segment of "The Challenge from Beyond" is nothing more than an adaptation of the central conception of that story—mind-exchange. Here the exchange is effected by the cubes, which draw the mind of anyone who looks into it and flings it back to the transgalactic world of the centipede creatures, where it is somehow housed in a machine; by the reverse method one of the centipedes casts his mind into the body of the mind so captured. Campbell manages to figure out what has happened to him because he has, handily enough, read "those debatable and disquieting clay fragments called the Eltdown Shards" which tell the whole story of this centipede race and their explorations of space via the cubes.

Lovecraft need scarcely be held responsible for pillaging his own recently completed story for the core of the plot of "The Challenge from Beyond"; for the latter was clearly a sporting venture of no conceivable literary consequence. The anomaly, however, is that this mind-exchange idea actually got into print months before its much better utilisation in "The Shadow out of Time" did. Lovecraft's segment is about three to four times as long as that of any other writer's, taking up about half the story. Robert E. Howard, who had been talked into taking the fourth instalment, displays Campbell (in the body of a centipede) suddenly reviving from a fainting fit

to engage in an orgy of slaughter against his slimy opponents, while Long —whom Lovecraft had talked into coming back on board the project after he had walked away in a huff when Schwartz had dumped his initial instalment—concludes the story by showing the centipede-bodied Campbell becoming a god on the distant planet while the human-bodied alien degenerates into mindless bestiality. It's all good fun of a sort, although even Lovecraft's segment—clearly the most substantial of the lot (it has actually been published separately as a self-contained narrative)—cannot claim much aesthetic value. The science fiction version is, if possible, even worse.

Another story on which Lovecraft worked around this time—Duane W. Rimel's "The Disinterment"—is, however, a very different proposition. This tale—very similar in atmosphere to some of Lovecraft's early macabre stories, especially "The Outsider"—is to my mind either wholly written by Lovecraft or a remarkably faithful imitation of Lovecraft's style and manner. Rimel has emphatically maintained that the story is largely his, Lovecraft acting only as a polisher; and correspondence between the two men—especially Lovecraft's enthusiastic initial response to the story—seems to support this claim. Consider a passage in Lovecraft's letter to Rimel of September 28, 1935: "First of all, let me congratulate you on the story. Really, it's *splendid*—one of your best so far! The suspense & atmosphere of dread are admirable, & the scenes are very vividly managed. . . . I've gone over the MS. very carefully with a view to improving the smoothness of the prose style—& I hope you'll find the slight verbal changes acceptable."[20] The critical issue is what to make of that final sentence (the manuscript or typescript, with Lovecraft's putative corrections, does not survive). The fact that Lovecraft refers to "slight verbal changes" should not lead us to minimise his role in the tale, since this may simply be another instance of his customary modesty. It is, moreover, odd that Rimel subsequently wrote nothing even remotely as fine (or, at any rate, as Lovecraftian) as this tale. Rimel (or Lovecraft) has taken the hackneyed "mad doctor" trope and shorn it of its triteness and absurdity by a very restrained portrayal, one that suggests far more than it states; and although the "surprise" ending—a man whose body is afflicted with leprosy finds that his head has been severed and reattached to the body of some other person (apparently a black man)—is hardly a surprise to the alert reader, it follows the lead of many Lovecraft stories in which the narrator

cannot bring himself to state, unequivocally and definitively, the hideous truth until the very last line. The prose seems to me remarkably Lovecraftian:

> It was on the evening following my half-recovery that the dreams began. I was tormented not only at night but during the day as well. I would awaken, screaming horribly, from some frightful nightmare I dared not think about outside the realm of sleep. These dreams consisted mainly of ghoulish things; graveyards at night, stalking corpses, and lost souls amid a chaos of blinding light and shadow. The terrible *reality* of the visions disturbed me most of all: it seemed that some *inside* influence was inducing the grisly vistas of moonlit tombstones and endless catacombs of the restless dead. I could not place their source; and at the end of a week I was quite frantic with abominable thoughts which seemed to obtrude themselves upon my unwelcome consciousness.

"The Disinterment" was initially rejected by Farnsworth Wright but then, in early 1936, accepted; it was not published in *Weird Tales,* however, until the January 1937 issue. Rimel went on to have one more story, "The Metal Chamber," in *Weird Tales* (March 1939), but neither this nor any of Rimel's other published stories aside from "The Tree on the Hill" appear to bear any significant amount of Lovecraft prose, even though Lovecraft seems to have been looking over and perhaps lightly touching up a number of Rimel's other stories of the period.

More travel loomed on Lovecraft's horizon. He spent September 20–23 in Massachusetts with Edward H. Cole, but this time the trip was not entirely for pleasure: the two men were entrusted with the melancholy duty of scattering the ashes of the old amateur Jennie E. T. Dowe (1841–1919), the mother of Edith Miniter, in the Wilbraham region where she was born. The trip had been in the offing for more than a year, but kept being delayed because of obligations by either Cole or Lovecraft; W. Paul Cook was to have accompanied them but was unable at the last moment to go. Some of the ashes were scattered in the Dell cemetery, the rest in the rose garden of the then-deserted house, Maplehurst, where Lovecraft himself had stayed in 1928 with Miniter. This was, of course, the "Dunwich" region, and

Lovecraft was heartened to find that "Nothing had changed—the hills, the roads, the village, the dead houses—all the same."[21]

On the 22nd Cole and his family took Lovecraft to Cape Cod, going through Hyannis and Chatham, the latter being the easternmost point of Massachusetts. The next day the party explored Lynn and Swampscott, on the North Shore, and Lovecraft went home that evening.

One more trip that Lovecraft managed before the cold drove him indoors for the winter was a day's journey on October 8 to New Haven, where he and Annie were taken by a friend in a car. Lovecraft had passed through the town on a number of occasions but had never stopped there. He was delighted, particularly with the Yale campus and its imitation Gothic quadrangles—

> each an absolutely faithful reproduction of old-time architecture & atmosphere, & forming a self-contained little world in itself. The Gothic courtyards transport one in fancy to mediaeval Oxford or Cambridge—spires, oriels, pointed arches, mullioned windows, arcades with groined roofs, climbing ivy, sundials, lawns, gardens, vine-clad walls & flagstoned walks—everything to give the young occupants the massed impression of their accumulated cultural heritage which they might obtain in Old England itself. To stroll through these quadrangles in the golden afternoon sunlight; at dusk, when the lights in the diamond-paned casements flicker up one by one; or in the beams of a mellow Hunter's Moon; is to walk bodily into an enchanted region of dream. It is the past—& the ancient mother land—brought magically to the present time & place. . . . Lucky is the youth whose formative years are spent amid such scenes! I wandered for hours through this limitless labyrinth of unexpected elder microcosms, & mourned the lack of further time.[22]

Lovecraft yearned to visit New Haven again, but he never got the chance.

Even this was not quite the end of his year's travels, for at 6 A.M. on October 16 Sam Loveman reached Providence from the New York boat, and the two friends spent two days in Boston exploring bookshops, museums, antiquities, and the like. Lovecraft lamented the destruction of two more old houses in the North End ("Pickman's Model") area.

In mid-October 1935 Lovecraft broke his self-imposed rule against collaboration by revising a story by William Lumley entitled "The Diary of Alonzo Typer." Lumley had produced a hopelessly illiterate draft of the tale and sent it to Lovecraft, who, feeling sorry for the old codger, rewrote the story wholesale while still preserving as much of Lumley's conceptions and even his prose as possible. Lumley's version still survives, although it would be a blessing for his reputation if it did not. We are here taken to some spectral house, evidently in upstate New York (Lumley was a resident of Buffalo), where strange forces were called up by the Dutch family that had resided there. The narrator, an occult explorer, attempts to fathom the mysteries of the place, but in Lumley's version the tale ends quite inconclusively, with the explorer awaiting some mysterious fate while thunder and lighting rage all around. Some parts of his account are unintentionally comical, as when the narrator goes to a hill and recites a chant he finds in a strange book but is disappointed that not much happens; he concludes laconically, "Better luck next time."[23]

Lovecraft, while preserving as much as he could of this farrago of nonsense—including such of Lumley's inventions as the *Book of Forbidden Things,* "the seven lost signs of terror," the mysterious city Yian-Ho, and the like—at least made some coherent sense of the plot. The result, however, is still a dismal failure. Lovecraft felt the need to supply a suitably cataclysmic ending, so he depicted the narrator coming upon the locus of horror in the basement of the house, only to be seized by a monster at the end while heroically (or absurdly) writing in his diary: "Too late—cannot help self—black paws materialise—am dragged away toward the cellar. . . ."

To compound the absurdity, Lovecraft was hoping to foist the typing of the story on to someone else, but noted that his autograph version was so hopelessly interlined that no one but he could type it—something he found singularly ironic given the story's title. Lovecraft thought that Lumley would dump the thing upon some fan or semi-professional magazine like *Marvel Tales,* but Lumley enterprisingly sent it to Farnsworth Wright, who accepted it in early December for $70.00.[24] Wright noticed the traces of Lovecraft's style in the piece, and one wonders whether this had anything to do with the long delay in its publication (it appeared in *Weird Tales* only in February 1938). Lovecraft magnanimously let Lumley keep the entire $70.00.

He may have been in a generous mood at this time because of some remarkable financial developments of his own. Probably during Lovecraft's stay in New York in early September, Julius Schwartz had come to a gathering of the weird fiction gang at Donald Wandrei's apartment. The exact date of this event is unclear: Schwartz did meet Lovecraft at Frank Long's on September 4,[25] but this was in connexion with "The Challenge from Beyond"; and Schwartz is clear that he met Lovecraft at Wandrei's, not Long's.[26] In any event, Schwartz, who was attempting to establish himself as an agent in the weird and science fiction fields, had been in touch with F. Orlin Tremaine, editor of *Astounding,* who was wanting to broaden the scope of the magazine to include some weird or weird/science material. Schwartz asked Lovecraft whether he had any tales that might fit into this purview, and Lovecraft replied that *At the Mountains of Madness* had been rejected by Wright and had not been submitted elsewhere. Schwartz, recalling the incident fifty years after the fact, thinks that Lovecraft must have given him the story on the spot; but this seems highly unlikely, unless the typescript happened to have been lent to Wandrei or some other New York colleague at that time. In any event, Schwartz eventually got the story and took it to Tremaine, probably in late October. Here is his account of what transpired:

> The next time I went up to Tremaine, I said, roughly, "I have in my hands a 35,000 word story by H. P. Lovecraft." So he smiled and said roughly to the equivalent, "You'll get a check on Friday." Or "It's sold!" . . .
>
> Now I'm fairly convinced that Tremaine never read the story. Or if he tried to, he gave up.

What this shows is that Lovecraft was by this time sufficiently well known in the weird/science fiction pulp field that Tremaine did not even need to read the story to accept it; Lovecraft's name on a major work—whose length would require it to be serialised over several issues—was felt to be a sufficient drawing card. Tremaine was true to his word: Tremaine paid Schwartz $350.00; after keeping his $35.00 agent's fee, he sent the rest to Lovecraft.

Lovecraft was of course pleased at this turn of events, but in less than a week he would have reason to be still more pleased. In early November he learned that Donald Wandrei had submitted "The Shadow out of Time"—which presumably had found its way to him on Lovecraft's circulation list

—to Tremaine, and that story was also accepted, for $280.00. In all likelihood Tremaine scarcely read this tale either.

There has been considerable confusion over the exact details of this remarkable double sale. Schwartz and Wandrei have each maintained that he alone was responsible for selling both stories, but Lovecraft's letters clearly state that Schwartz sold the one and Wandrei the other. Wandrei's whole account in his memoir, "Lovecraft in Providence" (1959), is highly suspect, since he reports that after sounding out Tremaine about the prospect of publishing the two stories, he wrote to Lovecraft immediately and asked Lovecraft to send him the typescripts without delay; but no such exchange is found in the extant letters between Lovecraft and Wandrei. All we find is a postcard, on November 3, in which Lovecraft has already received a cheque from Street & Smith:

> What's this I hear about philanthropic agenting activities behind Grandpa's back? A couple of days ago certain rumours began to filter in from Sonny & little Meestah Stoiling [Kenneth Sterling] —& this morning a $280 cheque from S & S confirmed the most extreme reports. Yuggoth, what a stroke! Hope you took out a good commission—if you didn't, Grandpa'll have to send you one! ¶ No doubt you heard that Leedle Shoolie [Julius Schwartz] managed to sell the "Mts. of Madness" to S & S for a sum which nets me $315. The coincidence of *two* such stories successfully landing is almost unbelievable, since neither has anything in common with the policy & formulae of *Astounding*. I thought they had not the slightest shadow of a chance with Tremaine. The combined sum—595—comes as a crisis-postponing life-saver at this juncture . . . & I certainly wish such marketing could keep up![27]

This surely tells us all we need to know. The financial boon was certainly marked: Lovecraft put it in graphic but perhaps not exaggerated terms when he wrote, "I was never closer to the bread-line than this year."[28] Elsewhere he bluntly stated: "The recent cheques were indeed life-savers—so much so that I fear they can't be translated into travel, or anything less prosaic than food & rent!"[29] Aside from $105 for "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" and $32.50 from the London agency Curtis Brown for a proposed reprinting of "The Music of Erich Zann" that never transpired,[30] Lovecraft had had no sales of original fiction in 1934 or 1935. In late 1935 we even

read of Lovecraft having to conserve on ink: he felt unable to make repeated purchases of his usual Skrip ink, at 25¢ a bottle, and was trying to get by on Woolworth's 5¢ brand.[31] In a short time we shall see that even these two welcome checks from Street & Smith could scarcely save Lovecraft and Annie from severe economies in the coming spring.

Meanwhile, William L. Crawford, who must have heard from Lovecraft about the *Astounding* acceptances, contemplated submitting "The Shadow over Innsmouth"—which he had by this time resolved to issue as a booklet—to *Astounding*.[32] Lovecraft had no objection in principle, although he warned Crawford that this might be a case of going to the well once too often, and he also knew that "The Shadow over Innsmouth" was much less allied to the realm of science fiction than the two tales that had been taken. Nothing more is heard of this matter, and it is not clear that Crawford actually submitted the story to *Astounding;* if he did, it was of course rejected.

Lovecraft's jubilation at the *Astounding* sales would later turn sour when he saw the actual stories in print; but that was months in the future. It is very evident that, just as a rejection—or even an unfavourable report from an associate—would plunge Lovecraft into depression and self-doubt about his abilities as a writer, so this double acceptance directly stimulated him into renewed composition. On November 5–9 he reeled off a new tale, "The Haunter of the Dark."

This last original story by Lovecraft came about almost as a whim. Robert Bloch had written a story, "The Shambler from the Stars," in the spring of 1935, in which a character—never named, but clearly meant to be Lovecraft—is killed off. Lovecraft was taken with the story, and when it was published in *Weird Tales* (September 1935), a reader, B. M. Reynolds, praised it and had a suggestion to make: "Contrary to previous criticism, Robert Bloch deserves plenty of praise for *The Shambler from the Stars.* Now why doesn't Mr. Lovecraft return the compliment, and dedicate a story to the author?"[33] Lovecraft took up the offer, and his story tells of one Robert Blake who ends up a glassy-eyed corpse staring out his study window.

But the flippancy of the genesis of "The Haunter of the Dark" should not deceive us; it is one of Lovecraft's more substantial tales. Robert Blake, a young writer of weird fiction, comes to Providence for a period of writing. Looking through his study window down College Hill and across to the far-

away and vaguely sinister Italian district known as Federal Hill, Blake becomes fascinated by one object in particular—an abandoned church "in a state of great decrepitude." Eventually he gains the courage actually to go to the place and enter it, and he finds all sort of anomalous things within. There are copies of strange and forbidden books; there is, in a large square room, an object resting upon a pillar—a metal box containing a curious gem or mineral—that exercises an unholy fascination upon Blake; and, most hideously, there is the decaying skeleton of an old newspaper reporter whose notes Blake reads. These notes speak of the ill-regarded Starry Wisdom church, whose congregation gained in numbers throughout the nineteenth century and was suspected of satanic practices of a very bizarre sort, until finally the church was shut down by the city in 1877. The notes also mention a "Shining Trapezohedron" and a "Haunter of the Dark" that cannot exist in light. Blake concludes that the object on the pillar is the Shining Trapezohedron, and in an "access of gnawing, indeterminate panic fear" he closes the lid of the object and flees the place.

Later he hears anomalous stories of some lumbering object creating havoc in the belfry of the church, stuffing pillows in all the windows so that no light can come in. Things come to a head when a tremendous electrical storm on August 8–9 causes a blackout for several hours. A group of superstitious Italians gathers around the church with candles, and they sense some enormous dark object appearing to fly out of the church's belfry:

> Immediately afterward an utterly unbearable foetor welled forth from the unseen heights, choking and sickening the trembling watchers, and almost prostrating those in the square. At the same time the air trembled with a vibration as of flapping wings, and a sudden east-blowing wind more violent than any previous blast snatched off the hats and wrenched the dripping umbrellas of the crowd. Nothing definite could be seen in the candleless night, though some upward-looking spectators though they glimpsed a great spreading blur of denser blackness against the inky sky—something like a formless cloud of smoke that shot with meteor-like speed toward the east.

Blake's diary tells the rest of the tale. He feels that he is somehow losing control of his own sense of self ("My name is Blake—Robert Harrison Blake of 620 East Knapp Street, Milwaukee, Wisconsin. . . . I am on this planet"; and still later: "I am it and it is I"); his perspective is all confused

("far is near and near is far"); finally he sees some nameless object approaching him ("hell-wind—titan blur—black wings—Yog-Sothoth save me—the three-lobed burning eye. . . ."). The next morning he is found dead—of electrocution, even though his window was closed and fastened.

What, in fact, has happened to Blake? His poignant but seemingly cryptic diary entry "Roderick Usher" tells the whole story. Just as in "Supernatural Horror in Literature" Lovecraft analysed Poe's "The Fall of the House of Usher" as a tale which "displays an abnormally linked trinity of entities at the end of a long and isolated family history—a brother, his twin sister, and their incredibly ancient house all sharing a single soul and meeting one common dissolution at the same moment," so in "The Haunter of the Dark" we are led to believe that the entity in the church—the Haunter of the Dark, described as an avatar of Nyarlathotep—has possessed Blake's mind but, at the moment of doing so, is struck by lightning and killed, and Blake dies as well. Just as, in "The Call of Cthulhu," the accidental sinking of R'lyeh saves the world from a monstrous fate, so here a random bolt of electricity is all that prevents a creature of spectacular power from being let loose upon the planet.

Many of the surface details of the plot were taken directly from Hanns Heinz Ewers's "The Spider," which Lovecraft read in Dashiell Hammett's *Creeps by Night* (1931). This story involves a man who becomes fascinated with a strange woman he sees through his window in a building across from his own, until finally he seems to lose hold of his own personality. The entire story is told in the form of the man's diary, and at the end he writes: "My name—Richard Bracquemont, Richard Bracquemont, Richard—oh, I can't get any farther . . ."[34] It is not entirely clear that Lovecraft has improved on Ewers.

"The Haunter of the Dark" does not involve any grand philosophical principles—Lovecraft does not even do much with the basic symbolism of light and dark as parallel to good and evil or knowledge and ignorance—but it is simply an extremely well-executed and suspenseful tale of supernatural horror. There are only hints of the cosmic, especially in Blake's diary ("What am I afraid of? Is it not an avatar of Nyarlathotep, who in antique and shadowy Khem even took the form of man? I remember Yuggoth, and more distant Shaggai, and the ultimate void of the black planets"), but otherwise the tale is notable chiefly for its vivid evocation of Providence.

Many of the landmarks described in the story are manifestly based upon actual sites. The view from Blake's study, as is well known, is nothing more than a poignant description of what Lovecraft saw out of his own study at 66 College Street:

> Blake's study . . . commanded a splendid view of the lower town's outspread roofs and of the mystical sunsets that flamed behind them. On the far horizon were the open countryside's purple slopes. Against these, some two miles away, rose the spectral hump of Federal Hill, bristling with huddled roofs and steeples whose remote outlines wavered mysteriously, taking fantastic forms as the smoke of the city swirled up and enmeshed them.

A passage almost identical to this can be found in Lovecraft's letters to Bloch and others as he moved into 66 College Street in May 1933. Moreover, this exact view can be seen today from such a vantage point as Prospect Terrace on the brow of College Hill.

The church that figures so prominently in the tale is—or was—real: it is St John's Catholic Church on Atwell's Avenue in Federal Hill (recently condemned and now destroyed). This church was in fact situated on a raised plot of ground, as in the story, although there was (at least prior to its demolition) no metal fence around it. It was, in Lovecraft's day, very much a going concern, being the principal Catholic church in the area. The description of the interior and belfry of the church is quite accurate. Lovecraft heard that the steeple had been destroyed by lightning in late June of 1935 (he was not there at the time, being in Florida visiting Barlow); and instead of rebuilding the steeple, the church authorities decided merely to put a rather stubby cap on the brick tower.[35] This incident no doubt started his imagination working.

The end of 1935 saw Lovecraft's fourth—and last—Christmas visit to Frank Long and the rest of the New York gang. Oddly enough, the letters or postcards he must have written to Annie Gamwell do not survive, so we have to piece together the details of the visit from letters to others. Lovecraft apparently left Providence on Sunday, December 29, and stayed till January 7. Amid the usual round of socialising with old friends (Long, Loveman, the Wandreis, Talman, Leeds, Kleiner, Morton), he met some new figures: his new correspondent Donald A. Wollheim; Arthur J. Burks,

the pulp writer whose "Bells of Oceana" (December 1927) he rightly considered one of the best things ever to appear in *Weird Tales;* and Otto Binder, half of a collaborative team (with his brother Earl) that published weird and science fiction tales under the name Eando (= "E. and O.") Binder. He met Seabury Quinn for the first time since 1931 and attended a dinner of the American Fiction Guild, an organisation that Hugh B. Cave had for years been trying to get him to join.

On two occasions Lovecraft went to the new Hayden Planetarium of the American Museum of Natural History, where he was quite taken with the sophisticated displays, including a gigantic orrery that depicts the planets revolving around the sun at their actual relative speeds, and a dome capable of depicting the celestial vault as seen at any hour, in any season, from any latitude, and at any period of history. Lovecraft bought two 25¢ planispheres and charitably gave them to Long and Donald Wandrei, so that they would make fewer mistakes in citing the constellations in their stories.

Just before his trip Lovecraft heard dim reports of a Christmas surprise that Barlow had prepared for him—a pamphlet reprinting "The Cats of Ulthar." Lovecraft had suspected nothing when, around October, Barlow had casually asked whether there had been any misprints in the *Weird Tales* appearance of the story;[36] he had replied in the negative and let it go at that. Given his fastidiousness about the accurate printing of his work, it is therefore no surprise that the first thing he asked Barlow when he heard about the pamphlet was: "Bless my soul, Sir, but what's this your Grandpa hears about a Yuletide brochure publish'd without permission or proofreading?"[37] But his fears were groundless: when he actually saw the booklet at Frank Long's, he was not only overwhelmingly delighted at Barlow's generosity, but relieved to find it a very soundly printed text.

The Cats of Ulthar is one of the choicest items for the Lovecraft collector. Forty copies of a "regular" edition (bearing the imprint of The Dragon-Fly Press, Cassia, Florida) were printed and bound, and two copies were printed on what Barlow calls Red Lion Text. One of these copies (Lovecraft's) is in the John Hay Library; the whereabouts of the other is unknown. Lovecraft's praises of the appearance of this charming item are justified: "Let me repeat my congratulations anent the taste and accuracy of the brochure. The Dragon-Fly Press is surely coming along!"[38]

Another booklet that seems to have emerged at this time is *Charleston.* This is a mimeographed pamphlet that exists in two "editions," if they can

be called that. H. C. Koenig was planning a trip to Charleston in early 1936 and asked Lovecraft for a brief description of some of the highlights of the place. Lovecraft, always willing to expatiate on the city he loved second only to Providence, wrote a long letter on January 12 that combined a potted history of Charleston with a specific walking tour. This letter actually does no more than paraphrase and abridge Lovecraft's superb (and at the time still unpublished) 1930 travelogue, "An Account of *Charleston,*" leaving out the archaic usages and also some of the more interesting but idiosyncratic personal asides. Koenig was so taken with this letter that he typed it up and mimeographed it, running off probably fewer than 25 copies. When Lovecraft received the item, he found a number of mistranscriptions that he wished to correct; meanwhile Koenig had asked Lovecraft to rewrite the beginning and ending so as to transform the piece from a letter into an essay. After these corrections and changes were made, Koenig ran off about 30–50 copies of the new version, "binding" it (as he had done with the first version) in a cardboard folder with the words "CHARLESTON / By H. P. Lovecraft" typed on it.

The actual date of these editions is difficult to specify. Lovecraft mentioned receiving the first (letter) version on April 2[39] and the second version in early June.[40] One other anomaly is that a brochure on Charleston, printed by the Electrical Testing Laboratories (where Koenig worked) in the spring of that year, contained Lovecraft's hand-drawn illustrations of Charleston houses and other architectural details. The president of the laboratories had seen the illustrations (which Lovecraft had included as separate sheets to accompany his letter) just as the brochure was going to press, and he had asked Koenig (but not Lovecraft) permission to print them. Lovecraft was tickled at his first published appearance as an artist in thirty years[41]—the first occasion being the astronomy articles he wrote for the *Providence Tribune* (1906–08), which contained hand-drawn star charts. This Charleston item has not been located.

Not long after returning from New York, Lovecraft—although overwhelmed by revision work, a growing feud in the NAPA, and (ominously) a severe case of what he called "grippe," which involved "headache, nausea, weakness, drowsiness, bad digestion, and what the hell"[42]—still managed to find time to lapse into one more collaborative

fiction venture—this time with Kenneth Sterling. The result is the interesting if insubstantial science fiction tale "In the Walls of Eryx."

Sterling has stated that the idea of the invisible maze was his, and that this core idea was adapted from Edmond Hamilton's celebrated story (which Lovecraft liked), "The Monster-God of Mamurth" (*Weird Tales,* August 1926), which concerns an invisible building in the Sahara Desert. Sterling wrote a draft of 6000–8000 words; Lovecraft entirely rewrote the story ("in very short order," Sterling declares) on a small pad of lined paper (perhaps similar to the one on which he had written "The Shadow out of Time"), making it about 12,000 words in the process.[43] Sterling's account suggests that the version as we have it is entirely Lovecraft's prose, and indeed it reads as such; but one suspects (Sterling's original draft is not extant) that, as with the collaborated tales with Price and Lumley, Lovecraft tried to preserve as much of Sterling's own prose, and certainly his ideas, as possible.

The authors have made the tale amusing by devising nasty in-jokes on certain mutual colleagues (e.g., farnoth-flies = Farnsworth Wright of *Weird Tales;* effjay weeds and wriggling akmans = Forrest J Ackerman); I suspect these are Lovecraft's jokes, since they are roughly similar to the punning names he devised for "The Battle That Ended the Century." The narrative, however, turns into a *conte cruel* when the hapless protagonist, trapped in the invisible maze whose opening he can no longer locate, reveals his deteriorating mental and physical condition in the diary he writes as he vainly seeks to escape.

The already hackneyed use of Venus as a setting for the tale is perhaps its one significant drawback. It should be noted that the spectacle of a human being walking without much difficulty (albeit with an oxygen mask and protective suit) on the surface of Venus was not preposterous in its day. There was much speculation as to the surface conditions of the planet, some astronomers believing that the planet was steamy and swampy like our own Palaeozoic age, others believing that it was a barren desert blown by dust storms; still others thought the planet covered with huge oceans of carbonated water or even with hot oil. It was only in 1956 that radio waves showed the surface temperature to be a minimum of 570? F, while in 1968 radar and radio observations at last confirmed the temperature to be 900? F and the surface atmospheric pressure to be at least ninety times that of the earth.[44]

Lovecraft's handwritten version of the story was presumably typed by Sterling, since the existing typescript is in an otherwise unrecognisable typewriter face. The byline reads (surely at Lovecraft's insistence) "By Kenneth Sterling and H. P. Lovecraft." The story was submitted to *Astounding Stories, Blue Book, Argosy, Wonder Stories,* and perhaps *Amazing Stories* (all these names, except the last, are crossed out on a sheet prefacing the typescript). Finally it was published in *Weird Tales* for October 1939.

Lovecraft, according to Sterling, had helped his young friend on this story because he wished to give him some practical advice and encouragement in story writing, although both Lovecraft and Sterling sensed even then that the latter's career lay in science and not literature. Sterling had, however, previously published a story entitled "The Bipeds of Bjhulhu" (*Wonder Stories,* February 1936), whose title was consciously meant to evoke Cthulhu, although there are no Lovecraftian touches in the tale itself.

Less than a month after Lovecraft recovered from his bout of "grippe," he reported to his correspondents that his aunt Annie was stricken with a much severer case, one that ultimately involved hospitalisation (beginning March 17), then a two-week stay at the private convalescent home of one Russell Goff (April 7–21). Here is one more of the relatively few occasions in which Lovecraft is guilty of deceit, but in this case it is entirely understandable. In fact, Annie Gamwell was suffering from breast cancer, and her hospital stay involved the removal of her right breast.[45] It is not a subject someone like Lovecraft would wish to discuss openly even to close associates.

The result for Lovecraft was a complete disruption of his schedule. Even before Annie's actual hospital stay, her illness (which had become serious by February 17) caused Lovecraft to have "no time to be aught save a combined nurse, butler, & errand boy";[46] then, with the hospital stay, things went from bad to worse, causing Lovecraft to find an analogy to his troubles only in Milton:

> All my own affairs went absolutely to hell—letters unanswered, borrowed books piled up unread, N.A.P.A. duties shifted to others, revision jobs unperformed, fiction-writing a thing of the past . . .

With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout—
Confusion worse confounded.[47]

Lovecraft added graciously, "But it was a damn sight worse on my aunt than on me!" He went on to note rather harrowingly: "My own programme is totally shot to pieces, & I am about on the edge of a nervous breakdown. I have so little power of concentration that it takes me about an hour to do what I can ordinarily do in five minutes—& my eyesight is acting like the devil." The weather didn't help any, remaining anomalously chilly until well into July.

The one thing Annie's illness and hospital stay brought out was the severe state of the family finances—something made graphically real by one of the saddest documents ever written by Lovecraft, a diary that he kept while Annie was away and which he would bring to her every few days in order to give an account of his activities. Amidst constant references to "wrestling with correspondence" (both his own and Annie's) and intermittently attempting to do his own revision work, we receive an unvarnished account of the perilous state of the household finances (made severer by the expenses of the hospital, a private nurse, and the like) and the severe economies—especially in food—which Lovecraft was compelled to practise.

On March 20 we learn that Lovecraft had gone back to a bad habit of Clinton Street days—eating canned food cold—for we now hear of his "experiment[ing] with *heating*" a can of chile con carne. It gets worse. On March 22 some twenty-minute eggs plus half a can of baked beans made "a sumptuous repast." Around March 24 Lovecraft felt the necessity to use canned goods that had been lying around for at least three years, since they had been brought over from Barnes Street. These included Zocates (a type of canned potato), Protose (a vegetarian substitute for meat made by Kellogg), and even some canned brown bread. On the 26th he made a potato salad with the Zocates and some old mayonnaise and salt; but finding it "a bit lacking in taste," he added a touch of ketchup—"which made an absolutely perfect & highly appetising blend." On March 29 he began using up some old Chase & Sanborn coffee that would otherwise go bad, even though he liked Postum better. Dinner on March 30 was cold hot dogs, biscuits, and mayonnaise.

On April 10 Lovecraft began experimenting with a tin of ten-year-old Rich's Cocoa and found that it had "acquired an earthy taste": "However, I

shall use it up somehow." He was true to his word: over the next three days he mixed it with condensed milk and resolutely drank it. Afterward he found a tin of Hershey's Cocoa, a nearly full container of salt from Barnes Street, and a can of Hatchet diced carrots on the top shelf of a kitchen cabinet and set these down for eventual use, also beginning to eat the canned brown bread, which seemed all right.

The entire effect of all this economising and eating of old and possibly spoiled food can only be conjectured. Is it any wonder that on April 4 Lovecraft admitted to feeling so tired during the middle of the day that he had to rest instead of going out, and that on April 13 he found, after a nap, that "I was too weak & drowsy to do anything"? It should, of course, be emphasised that the meals prepared during this period did not represent his normal eating habits, although these latter were themselves ascetic enough. I shall have more to say about this later.

As I have suggested, one of the things Lovecraft had to do during Annie's illness was to tend to her own correspondence. She had many friends in Providence with whom she stayed in touch either in person or by correspondence, and when they found that she was in the hospital they wrote many cards of condolence. Lovecraft felt obligated to answer every one of them, thanking them for their concern and giving updates on Annie's condition.

One such individual who evolved into a rather quaint correspondent of her own—or, at least, inspired in Lovecraft a charmingly piquant series of letters—is Marion F. Bonner, who lived at The Arsdale at 55 Waterman Street. Bonner appears to have known Annie from at least the time they moved into 66 College Street, which was not at all far from her own residence, and in a memoir she states that she visited them often at their home; but if Lovecraft wrote any letters to her prior to Annie's illness, they do not survive.

In the course of this correspondence Lovecraft revealed his fondness for cats, and he filled the margins of his letters with the most delightful drawings of cats gambolling with each other or playing with balls of yarn or other activities so heartwarmingly written about in his old essay "Cats and Dogs." Bonner, discussing the Kappa Alpha Tau fraternity, writes:

> Whenever I told him of any cat in down-town Providence, suggesting election into above fraternity, he almost always knew of it. Possibly these endeavors of mine earned me the election

> into the "Fraternity" as an honorary member, "with complimentary purrs." At one time he wrote in a brochure on cats, which he presented to me, that the said brochure was "not yet published." The latter is now in the possession of the John Hay Library of Brown University.[48]

I do not know exactly what this brochure is; it may simply be some transcription of "Cats and Dogs." No such item survives, as far as I know, in the John Hay Library.

The reference to cats in downtown Providence makes one think of Lovecraft's celebrated account of Old Man, an incredibly aged cat whom he knew nearly his whole life. The description is too good not to quote:

> So I hadn't spoken about "Old Man" and my dreams of him! Well—he was a great fellow. He belonged to a market at the foot of Thomas Street—the hill street mentioned in "Cthulhu" as the abode of the young artist—and could usually (in later life) be found asleep on the sill of a low window almost touching the ground. Occasionally he would stroll up the hill as far as the Art Club, seating himself at the entrance to one of those old-fashioned courtyard archways (formerly common everywhere) for which Providence is so noted. At night, when the electric lights make the street bright, the space within the archway would remain pitch-black, so that it looked like the mouth of an illimitable abyss, or the gateway of some nameless dimension. And there, as if stationed as a guardian of the unfathomed mysteries beyond, would crouch the Sphinxlike, jet-black, yellow-eyed, and incredibly ancient form of Old Man. I first knew him as a youngish cat in 1906, when my elder aunt lived in Benefit St. nearby, and Thomas St. lay on my route downtown from her place. I used to pat him and remark what a fine boy he was. I was sixteen then. The years went by, and I continued to see him off and on. He grew mature—then elderly —and finally cryptically ancient. After about ten years—when I was grown up and had a grey hair or two myself—I began calling him "Old Man". He knew me well, and would always purr and rub around my ankles, and greet me with a kind of friendly conversational "e-ew" which finally became hoarse with age. I came to regard him as an indispensable acquaintance,

> and would often go considerably out of my way to pass his habitual territory, on the chance that I might find him visible. Good Old Man! In fancy I pictured him as an hierophant of the mysteries behind the black archway, and wondered if he would ever invite me *through* it some midnight . . . wondered, too, if I could ever could back to earth alive after accepting such an invitation. Well—more years slipped away. My Brooklyn period came and went; and in 1926, a middle-aged relique of thirty-six, with a goodly sprinkling of white in my thatch, I took up my abode in Barnes Street—whence my habitual downtown route led straight down Thomas St. hill. And there by the ancient archway Old Man still lingered![49]

The cat continued to live until at least 1928, when Lovecraft—seeing him no more and almost dreading to ask the proprietors of the market about the matter—finally learned that he had died. After this Lovecraft dreamed of him even more than before—he would "gaze with aged yellow eyes that spoke secrets older than Aegyptus or Atlantis." An entry in the commonplace book (#153) is about Old Man, and Lovecraft reported that he had lent it to Bernard Austin Dwyer for use; but Dwyer wrote no story about Old Man and neither, regrettably, did Lovecraft.

Meanwhile R. H. Barlow was importuning Lovecraft with a variety of publishing projects. One in which Lovecraft was not directly involved but on which he supplied generous encouragement was Barlow's own NAPA journal, the *Dragon-Fly.* Two very creditable issues appeared, dated October 15, 1935, and May 15, 1936. They do not contain any material by Lovecraft, although in response to Barlow's request he had somewhat half-heartedly offered him "The Haunter of the Dark," rightly believing that Barlow would find it too long to use. The weird is not significantly present in the contents, although the first issue contains Barlow's striking tale "A Dream"; otherwise it includes poetry by Elizabeth Toldridge, August Derleth, Eugene B. Kuntz, and Ernest A. Edkins, essays by J. Vernon Shea and Edkins, and some epigrams ("The Epigrams of Alastor") by Clark Ashton Smith. The second issue's chief feature is a fine story by Barlow, "Pursuit of the Moth," and a long essay on "What Is Poetry?" by Edkins. The printing is a little uneven at times, but the typesetting is generally accurate and attractive.

More relevant to Lovecraft was Barlow's idea of printing the complete *Fungi from Yuggoth.* Once it became clear that William Frederick Anger and Louis C. Smith would not come through on their mimeographed edition, Lovecraft asked Smith to send to Barlow the typescript he had lent him; Smith took his time doing so, but eventually did. Barlow began setting up type on the volume in late 1935. In the summer of 1936, however, he reiterated a suggestion he had already made in the summer of 1935[50]—adding the sonnet "Recapture," written just before the other thirty-five *Fungi* sonnets, to the cycle. Barlow had prepared a new typescript of the cycle, placing "Recapture" at the end; but Lovecraft, looking over this sequence, felt that "'Recapture' better be *#34*—with 'Evening Star' as *35* & 'Continuity' as *36.* 'Recapture' seems somehow more *specific & localised* in spirit than either of the others named, hence would go better before them—allowing the Fungi to come to a close with more diffuse ideas."[51] It is remarkable that Lovecraft himself had not thought of adding "Recapture" to the series, and that the *Fungi* took six and a half years to reach the form we have come to know. Although Barlow ended up typesetting a good many of the *Fungi,* this was another project that never came to fruition.

By this time, however, Barlow had come up with yet another scheme—nothing less than The Collected Poetical Works of H. P. Lovecraft. When Lovecraft first heard of this project, in early June 1936, he laughed off the idea of anything approaching a complete edition of his poetry, since he would pay heavy blackmail to keep his general amateur verse in the oblivion of long-forgotten amateur journals. He did, however, prepare a list of his *weird* verse which he would not be wholly opposed to seeing reprinted; it is as follows:

Fungi from Yuggoth and Other Verses

by H. P. Lovecraft

Fungi from Yuggoth, I–XXXVI
Aletheia Phrikodes?
The Ancient Track
Oceanus?
Clouds?
Mother Earth?
The Eidolon?

The Nightmare Lake?
The Outpost
The Rutted Road?
The Wood
Hallowe'en in a Suburb?
The City
The House
Primavera
October
To a Dreamer
Despair?
Nemesis

This is a very instructive list. It is, of course, not a complete list of even his weird poetry: such things as "Astrophobos," the lengthy "Psychopompos," "Despair" (if its plangent pessimism can be said to have carried it over into the weird), "Bells," and any number of other published poems, as well as several unpublished ones (including the very striking "The Cats" and the Poe hoax, "To Zara," which Lovecraft did in fact send to Barlow at this time merely for examination), are omitted. The question-marks, denoting poems about whose merits Lovecraft was uncertain, seem generally to apply to the earlier verse, while most of the poems of the 1929–30 burst of poetry writing are preserved (but, surprisingly, the fine sonnet "The Messenger" is left off the list). Lovecraft explicitly specified "Aletheia Phrikodes," the central section of "The Poe-et's Nightmare," since he now resolved not to have the comic framework (which, as I have remarked, seems to undercut the cosmic central section) reprinted.

It need hardly be said that this project too never materialised, although perhaps the fault was not entirely Barlow's: a family breakup was impending, causing him to leave Florida and indefinitely lose touch with much of his weird fiction collection and printing material. Nevertheless, when Lovecraft was faced with these successive waves of book ideas by Barlow, he delivered a stern lecture—a lecture that many individuals in the science fiction and fan community ought to take to heart:

> You get me wrong about that *one-thing-at-a-time-&-finish-what-you-start* advice. I'm not urging you to *do anything more.* Indeed, I'm urging you to do *less!* My main point is that you

> ought to *stop starting new things* until you've finished up what's already under way. Not that you ought to hurry with the latter. Go easy, & avoid overstrain. But simply *choose the existing jobs to work at when you feel like working at anything at all.* That's the only way they'll ever get done. It's better to *finish one job* than to get a dozen started & have them all stalled at various stages. . . . Simply limit your plans to things you know you can finish. Many things—perhaps this new volume of verse—ought not to be started at all. How about "Incantations"—copy for which Klarkash-Ton says he has sent in? Wasn't that to follow "The Goblin Tower" on your programme? *There's* a volume fifty times more deserving of publication than this crap of mine! Take an old man's advice & put your energies . . . into the few things that count most![52]

In fairness to Barlow, however, he really was accomplishing a good deal—writing some fine stories, completing two issues of the *Dragon-Fly* as well as *The Goblin Tower* and *The Cats of Ulthar,* establishing an impressive collection of published work and manuscripts by leading pulp weird writers, pursuing his career as a pictorial artist, and many other things—all with very bad eyesight that needed constant medical attention and a family situation that would cause serious disruptions in his life for years. Some of his projects are so prophetic that they can only inspire amazed head-shaking even today: a *Collected Poetical Works of H. P. Lovecraft,* although in the planning stages in the early 1990s, did not appear until 2001.

At exactly this point, however, Lovecraft was distracted by another débâcle that nearly drove him to give up writing altogether. In mid-February he had seen the first instalment of *At the Mountains of Madness* in the February 1936 *Astounding* and professed to like it; in particular, he had words of praise for the interior illustrations by Howard Brown, which clearly indicated that Brown had actually read the story and had based his descriptions of the Old Ones upon the text. Lovecraft went so far as to say: "The illustrator drew the nameless Entities precisely as I had imagined them . . ."[53] He made no mention of the fact that he received the cover design for the issue—or, rather, noting it, never alluded to the fact that *Weird Tales* never gave him a cover during his entire lifetime. (The Canadian issue of *Weird Tales* for May 1942 gave Lovecraft the cover for "The Shadow over

Innsmouth.") But the attractiveness of the illustrations soon soured when Lovecraft actually studied the text.

Although he purchased the third and last instalment (April 1936) as early as March 20,[54] Lovecraft apparently did not consult it in detail until the end of May. It was only then that he discovered the serious tampering that the *Astounding* editors had performed on the story, particularly the last segment. Lovecraft went into a towering rage:

> But hell & damnation! . . . In brief, that goddamn'd dung of a hyaena Orlin Tremaine has given the "Mts." the worst hashing-up any piece of mine ever received—in or out of Tryout! I'll be hanged if I can consider the story as published at all—the last instalment is a joke, with whole passages missing. . . .
>
> But what I think of that decayed fish Tremaine wouldn't go in a wholesome family paper! I'll forgive him *real misprints,* as well as the lousy spelling used by Street & Smith—but *some* of the things on his "style sheet" are beyond tolerance! (He changes "Great God!" to "Great *Heavens!*")
>
> Why, for example, are *Sun, Moon,* & even *Moonlight* (!!) always *capitalised?* Why must the damn fool invariably change my ordinary animal name to its capitalised scientific equivalent? (dinosaurs = "Dinosauria" &c) Why does he change *subterrene* to *subterrane,* when the latter has no existence as an adjective? Why, in general, an overcapitalising & *overpunctuating* mania? . . . I pass over certain affected changes in sentence-structure, but see red again when I think of the *paragraphing.* Venom of Tsathoggua! Have you seen the damn thing? *All my paragraphs cut up into little chunks* like the juvenile stuff the other pulp hacks write. Rhythm, emotional modulations, & minor climactic effects thereby destroyed. . . . Tremaine has tried to make "snappy action" stuff out of old-fashioned leisurely prose. . . .
>
> But the *supremely* intolerable thing is the way the text is cut in the last instalment—to get an old serial out of the way quickly. Whole passages . . . are left out—the result being to decrease vitality & colour, & make the action mechanical. So many important details & impressions & touches of sensation are missing from the concluding parts that the effect is that of a flat ending. After all the adventure & detail *before* the encounter

> with the shoggoth in the abyss, the characters are shot up to the surface without any of the gradual experiences & emotions which make the reader *feel* their return to the world of man from the nighted aeon-old world of the Others. All sense of the *duration & difficulty* of the exhausted climb is lost when it is dismissed objectively in only a few words, with no hint of the fugitives' reactions to the scenes through which they pass. . . . [55]

There is more, but this is surely enough; and volumes could be written on it.

In the first place, what this passage does is to show how conscious Lovecraft was of the emotional and psychological effect of prose, right down to the level of punctuation, and the need (in serious literature as opposed to pulp hackwork) to ground a weird or wonder tale in the most careful realism both of scene and of mood in order for it to convince an adult reader. Perhaps Lovecraft is trying to have his cake and eat it too in writing a story containing very advanced philosophical and scientific conceptions in "old-fashioned leisurely prose" and then expecting it to appear intact in a science fiction pulp magazine. Moreover, he later realised that the fault was in some sense his for not insisting (as he had done at the very beginning of his relationship with *Weird Tales*) on the stories' being printed without alteration or not being printed at all.

In the second place, Lovecraft was entirely within his rights to complain about the *nature* of the changes made, many of which seem needless even for a pulp magazine. The most serious alterations are the paragraphing and the cuts toward the end. The first is perhaps marginally justifiable—on pulp standards—because *Astounding* was, like most pulps, printed in two rather narrow columns per page, making Lovecraft's long paragraphs even longer and providing little relief for the eye of the generally juvenile and ill-educated readership of the magazine. Almost every one of his paragraphs has been cut into two, three, or more smaller paragraphs. The cuts at the end seem also quite arbitrary and in parts rather ridiculous. They only amount to about 1000 words, or perhaps one or two printed pages. Some of Lovecraft's most powerful and poignant utterances here have been rendered almost comical. The sentence "We had passed two more penguins, and heard others immediately ahead" becomes the flat "We had heard two more penguins." The mere omission of ellipses at one point (the celebrated ". . .

poor Lake, poor Gedney . . . and poor Old Ones!" becomes "Poor Lake. Poor Gedney. And poor Old Ones!") is a significantly weakening effect.

Lovecraft was, of course, wrong in attributing the changes directly to F. Orlin Tremaine. It is not even clear that Tremaine even saw or approved of them; rather, they were probably done by various subeditors or copyeditors —among them Carl Happel and Jack DuBarry[56]—who were evidently expected to make as many copyediting changes as they could in order to justify their positions. This may account for some of the changes, although no doubt someone in the *Astounding* offices really did think that the ending of the story was dragging on and needed abridging.

What Lovecraft therefore did—aside from considering the story to be essentially unpublished—was to purchase three copies of each instalment and laboriously correct the text either by writing in the missing portions and connecting the paragraphs together by pencil or by eliminating the excess punctuation by scratching it out with a penknife. This whole procedure took the better part of four days in early June. All this may seem somewhat anal retentive, but Lovecraft wished to lend these three copies to colleagues who had not seen the typescript when it was circulated and would otherwise be reading only the adulterated *Astounding* text. Unfortunately, Lovecraft did not in fact correct many of the errors, some (e.g., the Americanisation of his British spellings) perhaps because he considered them insignificant, others because he did not notice them (such as two small omissions in the first instalment, which he does not seem to have gone over carefully), and some because he was basing his corrections not upon the typescript—his one carbon was apparently lent to someone—but the autograph manuscript. He had made a number of changes in the autograph when preparing his typescript, but in the five-year interval between writing and publication he had forgotten some of these changes, so that in some cases he restored the original autograph reading instead of the revised reading of the typescript. The result is that a good many of the approximately 1500 errors in the *Astounding* text were not corrected by Lovecraft or were corrected erroneously. The only means to prepare a text that is even partially accurate is to go by the typescript, following Lovecraft's corrected copies in those instances (e.g., the erroneous hypothesis about the Antarctic continent being two land masses separated by a frozen sea) where demonstrable revisions were made on the now non-extant typescript sent to *Astounding*.

On top of this, the story itself was received relatively poorly by the readers of the magazine. This negative response has perhaps been exaggerated by later critics, but certainly there were a sufficient number of readers who failed to understand the point of the tale or felt it inappropriate for *Astounding.* The letters start appearing in the April 1936 issue, and they were generally praiseworthy rather than otherwise: only Carl Bennett's philistine "*At the Mountains of Madness* would be good if you leave about half the description out of it" qualifies as a genuine knock. Lovecraft's new colleague Lloyd Arthur Eshbach contributed general praise of Lovecraft but did not seem to have read the actual story.

In May the letters were uniformly praiseworthy, and there were at least a half-dozen of them. August Derleth was the only associate of Lovecraft's who wrote in, but others who were mere fans wrote letters of commendation. Some of these may not have been very astute ("*At the Mountains of Madness* is one keen yarn," opines Lyle Dahibrun), but in this issue there is not a word of criticism.

In the June issue the letters that comment on Lovecraft divide into four praiseworthy and three critical, with one neutral. Here, however, are some of the most piquant attacks. Although James L. Russell declared that the story "will make history" and that Lovecraft "is excelled only by Edgar Allen [*sic*] Poe in creating a desired mood in his readers" and Lew Torrance refers to Lovecraft's "superb style," Robert Thompson observed with pungent sarcasm: "I am glad to see the conclusion to *At the Mountains of Madness* for reasons that would not be pleasant to Mr. Lovecraft." But Cleveland C. Soper, Jr, was the most devastating:

> . . . why in the name of science-fiction did you ever print such a story as *At the Mountains of Madness* by Lovecraft? Are you in such dire straits that you *must* print this kind of drivel? In the first place, this story does not belong in Astounding Stories, for there is no science in it at all. You even recommend it with the expression that it was a fine word picture, and for that I will never forgive you.
>
> If such stories as this—of two people scaring themselves half to death by looking at the carvings in some ancient ruins, and being chased by something that even the author can't describe, and full of mutterings about nameless horrors, such as the windowless solids with five dimensions, Yog-Sothoth, etc.—are

> what is to constitute the future yarns of Astounding Stories, then heaven help the cause of science-fiction!

Much of this is reminiscent of Forrest J Ackerman's attack on Clark Ashton Smith in the *Fantasy Fan.* Although it is scarcely worth going into Soper's misconceptions (as Lovecraft once said many years earlier of an amateur journalist's attack on him, "It refuted itself "[57]), such myopic criticisms would frequently be aimed at Lovecraft by subsequent generations of science fiction readers, writers, and critics.

Of the relatively few (and on the whole negative) comments on Lovecraft in the July issue, one must by all accounts be quoted: "*At the Mountains of Madness* was rather dry, although a pretty girl and the appearance of the Elders [*sic*] would have made it an excellent story for a weird magazine." I do not know if Mr Harold Z. Taylor is being subtly sarcastic here, but I doubt it.

"The Shadow out of Time" appeared in the June 1936 issue of *Astounding.* Lovecraft incredibly said that "It doesn't seem even nearly as badly mangled as the Mts.,"[58] and the one surviving annotated copy of the issue bears relatively few corrections; but the recently unearthed autograph manuscript makes it abundantly clear that this story suffered the same reparagraphing that *At the Mountains of Madness* received, and yet Lovecraft has failed to make the necessary restorations. Other errors are apparently due to Barlow's inability to read Lovecraft's handwriting when he prepared the typescript. It is a mystery why Lovecraft did not complain more vociferously about the corruption of this text, even though no actual passages of significance were dropped. My feeling is that he may have felt so indebted to both Barlow (for typing the story) and Wandrei (for submitting it) that any complaints might have struck him as a sign of ingratitude. In any event, in a short time other matters would distract him from such a relatively harmless matter.

"The Shadow out of Time" was received much more unfavourably than *At the Mountains of Madness* by readers. The August 1936 issue (the only one that contains any significant comment on the story) contains a barrage of criticism: "*At the Mountains of Madness* . . . was bad enough: but when I began to read *The Shadow out of Time* I was so darned mad that I was tempted to leave the story unfinished" (Peter Ruzella, Jr); "I'm fed up with Lovecraft and this is the worst yet. I think *The Shadow out of Time* is the height of the ridiculous" (James Ladd); "Lovecraft's *The Shadow out of*

Time was very disappointing" (Charles Pizzano). Other comments were less hostile, and meanwhile some individuals either came to Lovecraft's defence in regard to the attacks received by *At the Mountains of Madness* or had generous praise for the new story. Corwin Stickney, then perhaps already in touch with Lovecraft through Willis Conover, declared hotly: "Say, what's the matter with your readers' literary tastes, anyhow? Lovecraft's *At the Mountains of Madness* is perhaps the best-written story ever to find its way into Astounding's pages . . ." Calvin Fine disputed Cleveland C. Soper's view of that novel, while John V. Baltadonis flatly declared: "*The Shadow out of Time* is the best story in the issue." But the most perspicacious comment—and the lengthiest comment on Lovecraft in all the issues of *Astounding*—came from one W. B. Hoskins, who started by claiming that Lovecraft is one of "only three or four authors who could qualify as authors *only,* not merely as authors of science-fiction," and went on rather poetically to say:

> Lovecraft does much the same thing in his stories that Tschaikowsky does in his music—his climaxes are obvious, yet you always get a kick out of them. In my own case, at least, his description is so convincing that I wonder: Is this man chiseling his stories out of fresh, uncut granite, or is he merely knocking away the detritus of some age-old carving? His lore has all the somber ring of truth. You get the general idea. I like Lovecraft.

This may not place Mr Hoskins in the company of F. R. Leavis or Harold Bloom, but it certainly negates the claim that Lovecraft's work was universally panned in *Astounding.*

Lovecraft, however, had little time to bother with the reaction of his work in the magazine: he knew that he was not likely to write very much more that would find favour with *Astounding.* In any case, other events closer to home were occupying his attention.

The only viable amateur organisation, the NAPA, was reaching levels of spite and vindictiveness rarely seen even in the teens, when the UAPA and NAPA were violently hostile to each other, when the two separate factions of the UAPA were bickering over which was the legitimate association, and when Lovecraft himself was embroiled in extraordinarily bitter controversies with James F. Morton, Anthony F. Moitoret, Ida C. Haughton, and others. The locus of this new feuding was Hyman Bradofsky, whose

Californian offered unprecedented space for lengthy prose contributions and whom Lovecraft had supported in his successful bid for the presidency of the NAPA for the 1935–36 term. Lovecraft had presumably got in touch with Bradofsky at least by 1934, since this is when his first contributions to the magazine appear; he wrote some fifty letters to Bradofsky, but only one has been published.

I am not entirely clear why Bradofsky created so much hostility among other members. He was evidently accused of being high-handed in various procedural matters relating to the NAPA constitution, and he himself apparently responded to criticism in a somewhat testy manner. Whether Bradofsky's being a Jew had anything to do with it is similarly unclear; I suspect that this was a factor, although Lovecraft never acknowledges it. In any case, it is certainly to Lovecraft's credit that he came to Bradofsky's defence, since by all accounts many of the attacks upon him were highly unjust, capricious, and snide. As examples of these attacks Lovecraft mentioned a magazine containing harsh criticism of Bradofsky which was mailed to every NAPA member except Bradofsky himself, and another magazine that contained a rather lame story by Bradofsky with sneering annotations added.

Lovecraft responded to all this, on June 4, with "Some Current Motives and Practices." It is, in its way, a noble document, as Lovecraft censured Bradofsky's opponents—or, rather, the thoroughly despicable tactics they are using against him—refuted the attacks by vindicating Bradofsky's conduct, and in general pleaded for a return to civilised standards in amateurdom:

> It is again appropriate, as on many past occasions, to ask whether the primary function of amateur journalism is to develop its members in the art of expression or to provide an outlet for crude egotism and quasi-juvenile spite. Genuine criticism of literary and editorial work, or of official policies and performances, is one thing. It is a legitimate and valuable feature of associational life, and can be recognised by its impersonal approach and tone. Its object is not the injury or denigration of any person, but the improvement of work considered faulty or the correction of policies considered bad. The zeal and emphasis of the real critic are directed solely toward the rectification of certain definite conditions, irrespective of the individuals

> connected with them. But it takes no very acute observer to perceive that the current floods of vitriol and billingsgate in the National Amateur Press Association have no conceivable relationship to such constructive processes.

Lovecraft did not mention the names of any of the attackers, but he knew that one of Bradofsky's chief opponents was Ralph W. Babcock, an otherwise distinguished amateur who had somehow developed a furious hostility toward the NAPA president. In a letter to Barlow, Lovecraft noted wryly that his salvo might well "arouse some squawking & feather-ruffling in the roosts of Great Neck, L.I.,"[59] a direct reference to Babcock.

Lovecraft, of course, felt at liberty to speak out on the matter because he was, with Vincent B. Haggerty and Jennie K. Plaisier, one of the Executive Judges of the NAPA for this 1935–36 term. And yet, he evidently regarded it as impolitic to have "Some Current Motives and Practices" actually published in an amateur paper, so he arranged with Barlow to mimeograph enough copies to send to all NAPA members. Lovecraft wrote out the essay in a relatively neat hand, but at that he still complained that Barlow had made mistranscriptions when he typed out the text. The result was, like "The Battle That Ended the Century," two long (8½ × 14") sheets, each with type on only one side of the page. Barlow must have distributed the item by the end of June. I cannot sense that it had any particular effect. The next election was, in any event, held in early July, and Bradofsky was elected Official Editor, although he shortly afterward resigned on what he claimed were physician's orders. Lovecraft felt that "the convention gave young Babcock rather a trouncing."[60]

25. The End of One’s Life

(1936–1937)

In early June Robert E. Howard wrote to his friend Thurston Tolbert: “My mother is very low. I fear she has not many days to live.”[1] He was correct: on the morning of June 11, Hester Jane Ervin Howard, who had failed to recover from an operation performed the previous year, fell into a coma from which her doctors said she would never emerge. Howard got into his car and shot himself in the head. He died eight hours later; his mother died the next day, leaving Howard’s aged father, Dr I. M. Howard, doubly bereaved. Robert E. Howard was thirty years old.

At a time when telephones were not as common as now, the news spread relatively slowly. Lovecraft only heard of it around June 19, when he received a postcard written three days earlier by C. L. Moore. This postcard does not survive, and I do not know how Moore heard the news before any of Lovecraft’s other colleagues. Whatever the case, Lovecraft—who hoped against hope that the news was some sort of joke or error—got the full story a few days later from Dr Howard.

Lovecraft was overwhelmed with shock and grief:

> Damnation, what a loss! That bird had gifts of an order even higher than the readers of his published work could suspect, and in time would have made his mark in real literature with some folk-epic of his beloved southwest. He was a perennial fount of erudition and eloquence on this theme—and had the creative imagination to make old days live again. Mitra, what a man! . . . I can’t understand the tragedy—for although R E H had a moody side expressed in his resentment against civilisation (the basis of our perennial and voluminous epistolary controversy), I always thought that this was a more or less impersonal sentiment . . . He himself seemed to me pretty well adjusted—in an environment he loved, with plenty of congenial souls . . . to talk and travel with, and with parents whom he obviously idolised. His mother’s pleural illness imposed a great strain upon both him and his father, yet I cannot think that this would be sufficient to drive his tough-fibred nervous system to self-destructive extremes.[2]

Lovecraft was not the only one who could not understand the tragedy—other friends and later scholars and biographers have also been mightily puzzled. This is scarcely the place for a posthumous psychoanalysis of Robert E. Howard, even if such a thing could be done with any sort of accuracy. Suffice it to say that the facile attribution of an Oedipus complex to Howard is highly problematical, not least because it begs the question by assuming the actual existence of the Oedipus complex, which many psychologists have now come to doubt.[3] Lovecraft later came to feel that Howard's extreme emotional sensitivity caused him somehow to refuse to accept the loss of a parent "as part of the inevitable order of things."[4] There is something to this, and some Howard scholars have also seen an obsession with death in much of his work. Whatever the cause, Lovecraft had lost a colleague of six years' standing who—although the two never met—meant a great deal to him.

In the short term Lovecraft assisted Dr Howard as best he could, by sending various items—including his letters from Howard—to a memorial collection at Howard Payne College in Brownwood, Texas (Lovecraft calls it Howard's alma mater, but Howard spent less than a year there). Lovecraft's own letters to Howard met a more unfortunate fate, and appear to have been inadvertently destroyed by Dr Howard sometime in the late 1940s. But extensive extracts of them had been transcribed under August Derleth's direction; a relatively small proportion of them was actually published in the *Selected Letters,* but the joint correspondence, in two large volumes, has now appeared.

Howard left such a staggering number of unpublished manuscripts that not only are all his book publications posthumous, but—in spite of his voluminous appearances in pulps of all sorts—far more of his work has been issued since his death than before. One of the first such items was *The Hyborian Age* (Los Angeles: LANY Coöperative Publications, 1938), Howard's clever "history" of the world before, during, and after the lifetime of Conan. This publication featured, as an introduction, a letter Lovecraft had sent to Donald A. Wollheim, probably in September 1935, accompanying Howard's piece.

Almost immediately Lovecraft wrote a poignant memoir and brief critical appraisal, "In Memoriam: Robert Ervin Howard," that appeared in *Fantasy Magazine* for September 1936. It contains, in somewhat more formalised diction, much of the substance of his letter to E. Hoffmann Price

of June 20, embodying his initial reactions to Howard's death. A shorter version of this article, "Robert Ervin Howard: 1906–1936," appeared in the *Phantagraph* for August 1936. R. H. Barlow wrote a touching sonnet, "R. E. H.," that formed his first and last appearance in *Weird Tales* (October 1936). That issue contained a wealth of tributes to Howard in the letters column, one of which was of course from Lovecraft.

Various outings in spring and summer and visits by a number of friends old and new during the latter half of the year made 1936 not quite the disaster it had been up to then. On May 4 the Rhode Island Tercentenary celebration began with a parade in colonial costumes that began at the Van Wickle Gates of Brown University, scarcely a hundred yards from Lovecraft's door. Later, at the Colony House, there was a reenactment of the "tragic sessions of the rebel legislature"[5] three hundred years earlier in which the signers were each portrayed by lineal descendants. Lovecraft was one of the few to get into the building to see the ceremony—he had "had work not to hiss the rebels & applaud the loyal minority who stood firmly by his Majesty's government"! Later Governor Curley of Massachusetts presented to Governor Green of Rhode Island a copy of the revocation of Roger Williams's banishment of 1635. "After 300½ years, I am sure that Roger highly appreciates this mark of consideration!"[6]

The summer was anomalously late in arriving, but the week of July 8 finally brought temperatures in the 90s and saved Lovecraft "from some sort of general breakdown."[7] In six days he accomplished more than in the six week previous. On July 11 he took a boat trip to Newport, doing considerable writing on the lofty cliffs overlooking the ocean.

As for guests, first on the agenda was Maurice W. Moe, who had not seen Lovecraft since the latter's fat days of 1923. Moe came with his son Robert for a visit on July 18–19, and since Robert had come in his car, they had convenient transport for all manner of sightseeing. They went to the old fishing village of Pawtuxet (then already absorbed into the Providence city limits), drove through Roger Williams Park, and visited the Warren-Bristol area that Robert and Lovecraft had seen in March of the previous year. At Warren they had another all-ice cream dinner. Maurice could only finish two and a half pints, Robert barely managed three, and Lovecraft finished three and could have eaten three more.

Moe was not much involved with amateurdom at this time, but he nevertheless managed to talk Lovecraft into becoming involved in a round-robin correspondence group, the Coryciani, similar to the old Kleicomolo and Gallomo. Although Moe was evidently the leader of this group, it had been founded by John D. Adams; Natalie H. Wooley, an amateur journalist and correspondent of Lovecraft's since at least 1933 about whom almost nothing is known, was also involved. The focus of the group's activities was the analysis of poetry, although in the one letter by Lovecraft that survives (July 14, 1936) there is a discussion—evidently in response to another member's query—as to what Lovecraft might do on his last hour of life:

> For my part—as a realist beyond the age of theatricalism & naive beliefs—I feel quite certain that my own known last hour would be spent quite prosaically in writing instructions for the disposition of certain books, manuscripts, heirlooms, & other possessions. Such a task would—in view of the mental stress—take at least an hour—& it would be the most useful thing I could do before dropping off into oblivion. If I *did* finish ahead of time, I'd probably spend the residual minutes getting a last look at something closely associated with my earliest memories—a picture, a library table, an 1895 Farmer's Almanack, a small music-box I used to play with at 2½, or some kindred symbol—completing a psychological circle in a spirit half of humour & half of whimsical sentimentality. Then—nothingness, as before Aug. 20, 1890.[8]

July 28 saw the arrival of no less important a guest than R. H. Barlow, who was forced to leave his Florida home because of family disruptions that ultimately sent him to live with relatives in Leavenworth, Kansas. Barlow stayed more than a month in Providence, taking up quarters at the boarding-house behind 66 College and not leaving until September 1. During this time he was quite unremitting in his demands on Lovecraft's time, but the latter felt obliged to humour him in light of the superabundant hospitality he himself had received in Florida in 1934 and 1935:

> Ædepol! The kid took a room at the boarding-house across the garden, but despite this degree of independence was a constant responsibility. He *must* be shewn to this or that museum or bookstall . . . he *must* discuss some new fantasy or chapter in his

> future monumental novel . . . & so on, & so on. What could an old man do—especially since Bobby was such a generous & assiduous host himself last year & the year before?[9]

In fairness to Barlow, this letter was written to a revision client who was demanding work on which Lovecraft was very late, so that perhaps he was merely making excuses; there is every reason to believe that he was delighted with Barlow's company and was glad of the visit. To Elizabeth Toldridge—whom Barlow had visited frequently when in Washington some months earlier attending art classes at the Corcoran Gallery—Lovecraft declared, "I was so glad to see him that I forgave him the fierce moustache & side-whiskers!"[10] It was at this time that Lovecraft and Barlow discovered that they were sixth cousins—having a common ancestry in John Rathbone or Rathbun (b. 1658).

Still another visitor descended upon Providence on August 5—the redoubtable Adolphe de Castro, who had just been to Boston to scatter his wife's ashes in the sea. By now a broken man—in his seventies, with no money, and his beloved wife dead—de Castro was still trying to foist various unrealistic projects upon Lovecraft. Two years previous he had pleaded with Lovecraft to work on a collection of miscellaneous historical and political essays entitled *The New Way,* in one essay of which he purported to have discovered the "true" facts about the parents of Jesus—derived from "Germanic [*sic*] and Semitic sources." Lovecraft, in looking over this piece, found elementary errors in the sections dealing with Roman history, so was naturally sceptical about the rest; in any case, he felt unable to conduct any revision on the work except over a very long period of time—a tactful way of telling de Castro that he really did not want to work on the thing at all. De Castro, however, did not get the message and sent the manuscript to Lovecraft anyway in November 1934; Lovecraft returned it to him in the summer of 1935, saying that he would look it over only after a first reviser had done a major overhauling of its factual basis. Whether as a joke or not, Lovecraft suggested that de Castro consider publishing the chapters on Jesus as historical fiction rather than as a work of scholarship.

All this was forgotten, however, when de Castro came to Providence. Trying to cheer the old boy up, Lovecraft and Barlow took him on August 8 to St John's Churchyard in Benefit Street, where the spectral atmosphere—and the fact that Poe had been there courting Sarah Helen Whitman ninety years before—impelled the three men to write acrostic "sonnets" on the

name Edgar Allan Poe. (These were, of course, one line shorter than an actual sonnet.) The full title of Lovecraft's is "In a Sequester'd Providence Churchyard Where Once Poe Walk'd"; Barlow's is titled "St. John's Churchyard"; de Castro's, merely "Edgar Allan Poe." Of these three Barlow's may well be the best. But de Castro—whose poem is rather flat and sentimental—was the canniest of the bunch, for he later revised his poem and submitted it to *Weird Tales,* where it was quickly accepted, appearing in the May 1937 issue. When Lovecraft and Barlow learnt this, they too submitted their poems—but Farnsworth Wright wanted to use only one. Lovecraft and Barlow were forced to dump their pieces on the fan magazines—specifically the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent,* where they appeared in the March–April 1937 issue.

News of the poetical escapade spread quickly among Lovecraft's colleagues, and Maurice W. Moe not only composed his own sonnet (not especially distinguished) but duplicated all four in a hectographed booklet for his classes, under the title *Four Acrostic Sonnets on Edgar Allan Poe* (1936). August Derleth saw this item and decided to reprint Moe's poem in the anthology he was co-editing with Raymond E. F. Larsson, *Poetry out of Wisconsin* (1937). Still later, toward the end of the year, Henry Kuttner added his own piece—which is easily the best of the lot. Unfortunately, it remained unpublished for many years.[11]

De Castro left shortly after the churchyard visit. Barlow hung around for another three weeks, and he and Lovecraft visited Newport on the 15th and Salem and Marblehead on the 20th (Lovecraft's forty-sixth birthday). On the way up they picked up Kenneth Sterling, who was staying in Lynn recovering from an operation prior to his entry into Harvard that fall.

Another literary project on which Lovecraft and Barlow probably worked during his stay in Providence was "The Night Ocean." We are now able to gauge the precise degree of Lovecraft's contribution to this tale, as Barlow's typescript, with Lovecraft's revisions, has now surfaced. Prior to this discovery, all we had to go on were various remarks in letters and certain other documents. Lovecraft told Hyman Bradofsky (who published the tale in the Winter 1936 issue of the *Californian*) that he "ripped the text to pieces in spots";[12] but in a letter to Duane W. Rimel upon appearance of the work, he waxed eloquent about its merits: "The kid is coming along—indeed, the N.O. is one of the most truly artistic weird tales I've ever read."[13] It would be uncharacteristic of Lovecraft so to praise a story in

which he had had a very large hand; and sure enough, Lovecraft's contribution probably amounts to no more than 10%. He was in any event correct that Barlow had been "coming along," as the latter's "A Dim-Remembered Story" (*Californian,* Summer 1936) is a superbly crafted tale but one that does not seem to bear any revisory hand by Lovecraft at all. The story is in fact dedicated to Lovecraft, and each of its four sections is prefaced by a half-line of the celebrated *Necronomicon* couplet, "That is not dead which can eternal lie, / But with strange aeons even death may die"; but otherwise it bears little stylistic or conceptual similarity to Lovecraft's work. Lovecraft waxed enthusiastic about it when he read it: "Holy Yuggoth, but it's a masterpiece! *Magnificent* stuff—will bear comparison to the best of C A S! Splendid rhythm, poetic imagery, emotional modulations, & atmospheric power. Tsathoggua! But *literature* is certainly your forte, say what you will! . . . You've rung the bell this time! All the cosmic sweep of Wandrei's early work—& infinitely more substance. Keep it up!"[14] Indeed, it is possible that Lovecraft was commenting not on a manuscript but upon the printed version, which would conclusively militate against Lovecraft's revisory hand in the tale. Even though Lovecraft urged Barlow to send the story to Farnsworth Wright, he went on to add, "Previous amateur appearance is no barrier to W T publication," as if the tale had already been scheduled for publication in the *Californian* or had in fact already appeared there. Barlow does not appear to have submitted the story to *Weird Tales.* Lovecraft repeated his praise for it in a "Literary Review" that appeared in the very same issue of the *Californian* as "The Night Ocean" itself.

It is difficult to deny that "The Night Ocean" is one of the most pensively atmospheric tales produced by anyone in the Lovecraft circle. It comes very close—closer, perhaps, than any of Lovecraft's own works with the exception of "The Colour out of Space"—to capturing the essential spirit of the weird tale, as he wrote of some of Blackwood's works in "Supernatural Horror in Literature": "Here art and restraint in narrative reach their very highest development, and an impression of lasting poignancy is produced without a single strained passage or a single false note. . . . Plot is everywhere negligible, and atmosphere reigns untrammelled." The plot of the story—an artist occupies a remote seaside bungalow for a vacation and senses strange but nebulous presences on the beach or in the ocean—is indeed negligible, but the artistry is in the telling:

the avoidance of explicitness—one of the besetting sins of Lovecraft's later works—is the great virtue of the tale, and at the end all the narrator can conclude is that

> . . . a strangeness . . . had surged up like an evil brew within a pot, had mounted to the very rim in a breathless moment, had paused uncertainly there, and had subsided, taking with it whatever unknown message it had borne. . . . I had come frighteningly near to the capture of an old secret which ventured close to man's haunts and lurked cautiously just beyond the edge of the known. Yet in the end I had nothing.

"The Night Ocean" is a richly interpretable story that produces new insights and pleasures upon each rereading. It is the last surviving piece of fiction on which Lovecraft is known to have worked.

James F. Morton visited Lovecraft in Providence on September 11–13, and Robert Moe stopped by on September 19–20, although he was now coming chiefly to court Eunice French (1915–1949), a philosophy student at Brown. A surviving photograph of Lovecraft and French must have been taken at this time, presumably by Moe.

The revision client to whom Lovecraft made his mock-complaint about Barlow was his old amateur colleague Anne Tillery Renshaw, who had gone from being a professor to running her own school, The Renshaw School of Speech, in Washington, D.C. In early 1936 she made Lovecraft a proposal: she wished him to revise and edit a booklet she was writing entitled *Well Bred Speech,* designed for her adult education classes. Lovecraft was, of course, entirely willing to work on the project, not only because it would be intrinsically interesting but because it would presumably bring in revenue at a time when revision work was apparently lean and sporadic.

Lovecraft received at least a partial draft of the text by mid-February and came to realise that "the job is somewhat ampler than I had expected—involving the furnishing of original elements as well as the revision of a specific text"; but—in spite of his aunt's illness at this time—he was willing to undertake the task if he received clear instructions on how much expansion he should do. He breezily added, "Rates can be discussed later—I fancy that any figure you would quote (with current precedent in mind) would be satisfactory."[15] Later, after all the work was finished, he felt that

Renshaw would be a cheapskate if she paid him anything less than $200. In the end, he received only $100, but this seems to have been his own fault, since his own final price was $150, which he reduced to $100 because of his tardiness.[16]

Renshaw responded to Lovecraft's initial queries on February 28, but—because of Annie's hospital stay and the attendant congestion of his schedule—he did not reply until March 30. By this time, however, he had done work on chapters 2 (Fifty Common Errors) and 4 (Terms Which Should Own a Place in Your Conversation); all the revisions he had made were done from resources of his own personal library, since he had no time to go to the public library. Hitherto Lovecraft had merely corrected an existing text by Renshaw; now he realised that it was time for original work to begin, and he again wished specific instructions on how much of this work—particularly on bromides, words frequently mispronounced, and a reading guide—he should do. Indeed, he held out a slim hope that Renshaw, irritated at his dilatoriness, might relieve him of his duties and dump the book on someone else, like Maurice W. Moe.

Renshaw disillusioned Lovecraft on that last point: in her response on April 6, she clarified her intentions and set a deadline of May 1 for the entire project. This would, presumably, allow the book to be printed in time for the opening of the fall semester. Lovecraft, however, was still engulfed in attending to Annie, coming to terms with the *Astounding* debacle, absorbing the death of Robert E. Howard, dealing with the NAPA contretemps, and receiving his various guests of the late summer and fall. As a result, he did not reply to Renshaw until September 19, and then only after a letter from her on September 15 made such a reply mandatory. Lovecraft had, indeed, been doing work piecemeal on the text in August, during Barlow's stay: "Well—I did a lot of work in the small hours after the kid had retired to his trans-hortense cubicle (& then he thought it funny that Grandpa didn't get up till noon!), but what headway could such stolen snatches make against a schedule-congestion which had things *already* half shot to hades?"[17] But this was clearly inadequate: faced with a new deadline of October 1, Lovecraft worked for *sixty hours without a break* on or around the time he wrote this letter.

Much of both Renshaw's and Lovecraft's work on *Well Bred Speech* survives in manuscript and allows us to gauge precisely how much each contributed to most parts of the text. It should be said at the outset that the

book overall is not exactly a work of towering scholarship; but without Lovecraft's assistance it would have been totally hopeless. Renshaw may or may not have been an able teacher (her specialty, it appears, was elocution as opposed to grammar or literature); but as a writer she falls considerably below the level one can reasonably expect even for an instructor of adult education courses. It is true that the work's purpose is relatively humble; and Lovecraft's assessment of it, and of Renshaw, was quite charitable, as when he wrote to another colleague who had expressed amusement that an English professor would need help on a book on English usage: "A teacher may know the elements of correct speech, yet lack altogether the ability to *formulate* the material in a neat & effective fashion. Using good phraseology & *organising a treatise* are two different matters. In this case the author's lack of time is the main factor."[18] This is, as we shall see, a very charitable assessment indeed.

The contents of the finished book is as follows:

I. The Background of Speech [history of human language]
II. Fifty Common Errors [errors of grammar and syntax]
III. Words Frequently Mispronounced
IV. Terms Which Should Own a Place in Your Conversation
V. Increasing Your Vocabulary
VI. Bromides Must Go [on clichés]
VII. Tone Training [on elucution]
VIII. Conversational Approaches
IX. Speech in Social Usage
X. What Shall I Read?

The first thing Lovecraft had to do was to put the work in order, since Renshaw's draft was very much out of sequence and did not progress logically. Then there was the question of amplification: although Lovecraft admitted that he was given carte blanche by Renshaw for additions, he wished to be entirely clear on the matter before undertaking significant work. As it happens, much of his work turned out to be for naught.

Chapter I is an extraordinarily brief account—all of two and a half printed pages—on the development of the language faculty in human beings. Lovecraft clearly wrote a good portion of it (no manuscript of it survives); indeed, it seems to embody much of what Lovecraft had written

to Renshaw in his letters of February 24 and March 30, when he successfully persuaded her to give up the notions that language was a "divine revelation" to humans and that the English language has its origins in Hebrew!

Chapter II (also non-extant in manuscript) seems largely by Renshaw, although some of the examples of erroneous usage (e.g., "Mr. Black is an *alumni* of Brown University") are probably by Lovecraft; some of them repeat the strictures found in his old piece on "Literary Composition" (1920).

Chapter III survives in manuscript, and it can be seen that Lovecraft has written nearly the whole of it. His list of mispronounced words at the end of the chapter is a little truncated in the published version, and his very long list of words with more than one acceptable pronunciation has been excised altogether.

Chapter IV, in the printed text, follows a typescript prepared by Renshaw and somewhat revised by Lovecraft. The bulk of the chapter is a list of terms—chiefly drawn from history, literature, and economics—and their definitions and connotations; some are largely or entirely by Lovecraft.

Chapter V similarly follows a text initially written by Renshaw and exhaustively revised and augmented (especially at the end) by Lovecraft.

Chapter VI is also a text initially written by Renshaw, but Lovecraft has made so many additions that it is now largely his. The manuscript lists an enormous number of bromides, but this has been radically cut down in the published version. Renshaw had, indeed, asked for only fifty specimens;[19] Lovecraft has supplied nearly six times as many. Incredibly, he asked for this list to be returned to him (as it evidently was) for future use of his own!

Chapter VII, VIII, and IX are ones in which Lovecraft admitted to having little or no expertise (or interest), so presumably (the manuscript does not survive for any of these chapters) he only polished up an existing text by Renshaw. Random portions do, however, bear traces of his style.

Chapter X, whose manuscript is extant, is the most interesting—and unfortunate. In the published version, the first two paragraphs of the text are by Renshaw (slightly revised by Lovecraft), while the rest of the text—sixteen printed pages—is by Lovecraft. This does not, however, tell the whole story; for he had written a chapter some two or three times as long (it has been published posthumously as "Suggestions for a Reading Guide"),

but Renshaw—perhaps concerned about space or about some seemingly technical parts of this section or about its possible disproportion in relation to the rest of the work—has essentially gutted it and made it vastly less useful than it could have been. I wish to discuss this chapter in detail before commenting on some features in the previous ones.

We have seen that Lovecraft here supplies his fairly conservative opinions on modern literature, and that he had certainly not read all the works he mentions. In fact, however, "Suggestions for a Reading Guide" is a comprehensive—and on the whole quite sound—reading list of the highlights of world literature from antiquity to the present as well as the most up-to-date works in all the sciences and arts. It would have been an exceptionally useful pedagogical tool for its day if it had appeared intact.

Renshaw has preserved a good deal of Lovecraft's recommendations of classical literature, although she reduces Lovecraft's citation of the four great Greek playwrights (Aeschylus, Sophocles, Euripides, and Aristophanes) to only Aeschylus. About half of Lovecraft's paragraph on mediaeval literature is preserved, but his discussion of Malory's *Morte d'Arthur* and (much to his chagrin, no doubt) the *Arabian Nights* is omitted. The paragraph on Renaissance literature is reduced to Lovecraft's discussions of Shakespeare, Bacon, and Spenser. Almost the whole of his paragraph on seventeenth-century literature is excised, except for a reduced section on Milton; and Renshaw has so bumblingly edited this passage that Milton's name never gets mentioned.

For eighteenth-century literature, Renshaw keeps Lovecraft's discussion of the English novel and English poetry but drops his recommendations on the English essayists (who were, of course, his favourites of this period). The paragraph on nineteenth-century English literature is preserved largely intact, but incredibly Renshaw drops Lovecraft's entire discussion of French literature of this period—and we have already seen how high he ranked Balzac as a novelist. Scandinavian and Russian literature of the nineteenth century survives more or less whole.

Lovecraft's discussion of the twentieth century does not fare so well. While preserving most of his mentions of British writers, she cuts out the passage on Irish literature—including the mention of Yeats as the "greatest living poet" and the citation of Dunsany as well as of Joyce. The entire discussion of the American novel is dropped, and only Lovecraft's mentions of the leading American poets is preserved. Lovecraft should, I suppose,

have predicted that Renshaw would cut most of his discussion of "lighter" literature, including an entire half-paragraph on weird and detective fiction.

The greatest disfigurement is in Lovecraft's subsequent recommendations—on dictionaries, literary histories, literary criticism, language, history, and the sciences. This last section—covering mathematics, physics, chemistry, geology, geography, biology, zoology, human anatomy and physiology, psychology, anthropology, economics, political science, and education—is all gone. Renshaw keeps only a small bit of Lovecraft's discussion of philosophy (including only his recommendation of Will Durant's *The Story of Philosophy*), and drops his discussion of works on ethics, aesthetics, the various arts (including music), and technology. Lovecraft's concluding remarks are also highly truncated.

Although "Suggestions for a Reading Guide" does contain recommendations of a fair number of titles from Lovecraft's own library, he did do considerable work at the public library to find the soundest and most up-to-date works on some of the technical subjects. It is, indeed, of some interest to trace some autobiographical connexions in this section—some insignificant, some perhaps less so. Among the music books Lovecraft mentions is "Isaacson's *Face to Face with the Great Musicians*"—a work by none other than his old amateur foe Charles D. Isaacson, who had gone on to write a number of popular works on music. He cannot help ridiculing Carlyle, whom he quite correctly characterises as "having a choppy, artificial style suggestive of the modern news-magazine *Time.*" He is obliged to speak kindly of the hated Dickens, but recommends only *David Copperfield.* But perhaps the most charming autobiographical allusion is a passage toward the end on how the impecunious reader may go about assembling a book collection:

> Acquire as many books of the right sort as you can afford to house, for ownership means easy and repeated access and permanent usefulness. Don't be a foppish hoarder of fine bindings and first editions. Get books for what's in them, and be glad enough of that. Marvellous bargains can be found on the dime counters of second-hand shops, and a really good library can be picked up at surprisingly little cost. The one great trouble is housing when one's quarters are limited; though by using many small bookcases—cheap sets of open shelves—in odd corners one can stow away a gratifying number of volumes.

As for the rest of the book, Lovecraft has received considerable criticism for being outdated in some of his recommendations, especially in regard to pronunciation; but it is not at all clear that he deserves such censure. On page 22 of the published book, he records four preferred pronunciations: *con-cen´trate* to *con´cen-trate; ab-do´-men* to *ab´-do-men; ensign* to *ensin;* and *profeel* to *profyle.* The *Oxford English Dictionary* of 1933 supports Lovecraft on the last three of these. It is possible that American usage had changed in regard to these words, as well as on the other ones on the enormous list that was not used; but Lovecraft is by no means as antiquated as he has been accused of being.

Nevertheless, *Well Bred Speech* cannot possibly be called a work of any great merit; and it is something one wishes Lovecraft had not spent such back-breaking effort working on at this time. Lovecraft read the proofs of the book later in the year, and—although it bears a copyright date of 1936—it is not clear that it actually came out before the end of the year. But it was presumably available for the beginning of the second semester of Renshaw's school. In 1937 Renshaw published another book, *Salvaging Self-Esteem: A Program for Self-Improvement.* Since it found its way into Lovecraft's library, it was presumably published sometime in the spring. There is, mercifully, no evidence that Lovecraft worked on this item.

"Suggestions for a Reading Guide" was finally published in 1966. The first two paragraphs—basically by Renshaw, with light editing by Lovecraft—had also been previously revised by R. H. Barlow. The title was probably supplied either by Barlow or August Derleth.

In his final year Lovecraft continued to attract new—and mostly young—correspondents who, unaware of his increasing ill health, were thrilled to receive actual letters from this giant of weird fiction. Most of them continued to reach him through *Weird Tales,* but several got in touch through the increasingly complex network of the science fiction and fantasy fan circuit.

Among the most promising of these was Henry Kuttner (1915–1958). A friend of Robert Bloch's, he had published only a single poem in *Weird Tales* ("Ballad of the Gods" in February 1936) before writing to Lovecraft early in 1936. Lovecraft later confessed that several colleagues thought that he had either ghostwritten or extensively revised Kuttner's "The Graveyard Rats" (*Weird Tales,* March 1936),[20] but this story had already been

accepted before Lovecraft heard from Kuttner. It is, in fact, difficult to believe how anyone could have mistaken this story for Lovecraft's: although an entertaining (if not very plausible) tale of grue involving the caretaker of a cemetery who is despatched by the huge rats that burrow into coffins and remove the mortal remains, its only conceivable connexions with Lovecraft are its setting (Salem) and its very dim echoes of "The Rats in the Walls"; the style is not even very Lovecraftian.

Kuttner had, however, by this time already written a tale whose first draft—rejected by *Weird Tales*—may have been consciously Lovecraftian. In his second letter to Kuttner, on March 12, Lovecraft offered a lengthy criticism of "The Salem Horror"; and it is clear that Kuttner made major changes in the story based upon these comments. What is uncertain, however, is whether the first draft had been as consciously Lovecraftian—or, rather, had contained a "new" mythical god, Nyogtha, and a quotation from the *Necronomicon* in which the attributes of this god are specified—as it now stands. Nothing in Lovecraft's letter would lead one to think so, although a comment in his previous letter, in reference to various stories by Kuttner that Lovecraft had not yet seen—"I appreciate the compliment implied in the use of some of my settings & dramatic entities"[21]—suggests that perhaps some allusions already were present in the initial draft.

Kuttner's geographical, historical, and architectural knowledge of Salem was all wrong, and Lovecraft set about correcting it; his letter is full of drawings of representative Salem houses, a map of the city, and even sketches of various types of headstones found in the older cemeteries. Lovecraft remarks that "Derby St. is a slum inhabited by Polish immigrants,"[22] and Kuttner has indeed set the final version of "The Salem Horror" in Derby St. Other parts of Lovecraft's letter suggest that significant overhauling to the basic plot and incidents of the story were also done, since Lovecraft felt (as he had done with some of Bloch's early tales) that the story was "a little *vaguely motivated.*"[23]

Lovecraft's letters to Kuttner predictably discuss almost nothing but weird fiction, but one small detail proved to be of great moment in the subsequent history of weird, fantasy, and science fiction. In May he casually asked Kuttner to pass on some photographs of Salem and Marblehead to C. L. Moore once Kuttner himself had finished with them; [24] and it was in this casual way that Moore and Kuttner became acquainted. Marrying in 1940, the couple went on to write some of the most

distinguished work of the "Golden Age" of science fiction. It is now nearly hopeless to untangle the novels and tales that may have been written predominantly by Moore and those written largely by Kuttner; they collaborated on nearly every work of fiction until Kuttner's death in 1958. Indeed, in his very last letter to Kuttner, written in February 1937, Lovecraft already commented that Kuttner and Moore were collaborating on some unspecified "dual masterpiece."[25] However the authorship of their works is apportioned, such works as "Judgment Night" (1943), *Earth's Last Citadel* (1943), and "Vintage Season" (1946) well fulfil the high expectations Lovecraft had for both his younger colleagues.

One of the most distinctive of Lovecraft's late associates—not so much for what he accomplished at the time as for what he did later—was Willis Conover, Jr (1920–1996). In the spring of 1936, as a fifteen-year-old boy living in the small town of Cambridge, Maryland, Conover had conceived the idea of a Junior Science-Fiction Correspondence Club, where like-minded fans from all over the country would write letters to each other; this idea metamorphosed quickly into a magazine, the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent,* on which Conover began actively working in the summer. In addition to publishing the work of fans, Conover wished to lend prestige to his magazine by soliciting minor pieces from professionals. He could not, of course, pay anything: he and his printer, Corwin F. Stickney of Belleville, New Jersey, could scarcely afford the printing bills for each issue. Still, Conover had ambitious plans, and he wrote letters to August Derleth, E. Hoffmann Price, and many other leading writers in the field—including, in July 1936, Lovecraft.

In a brief but cordial response on July 9, Lovecraft wished Conover well in his venture and, although having no prose contribution available (that is, no unpublished story short enough for inclusion in a fan magazine), did send him the poem "Homecoming" (sonnet V of *Fungi from Yuggoth*); later Lovecraft discovered to his dismay that this sonnet, which he thought unpublished, had actually appeared in the January 1935 *Fantasy Fan.*

A more significant development occurred in late August, when Conover expressed regret that the *Fantasy Fan* serialisation of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" had ended so abruptly. It was Lovecraft who casually suggested that Conover continue the serialisation in his own magazine from the point where it had left off (the middle of chapter eight), and Conover jumped at this idea. This item could not be accommodated in the first issue

of the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent* (November–December 1936), but by September Lovecraft had already sent Conover the same annotated copy of the *Recluse* (with additions written on separate sheets) that he had lent (and received back) from Hornig.

In early December Conover asked Lovecraft to prepare a "short summary" of the first eight chapters of "Supernatural Horror in Literature," for the benefit of those readers who had not seen the earlier appearances. Lovecraft agreed, but was unclear what Conover meant by "short"; in any event, as he began preparing the summary, he found it difficult to condense those eight chapters (about 18,000 words) into a compass that would convey any meaning. In the end, he wrote a 2500-word summary that ably abstracts the essence of this very dense essay. One actual addition is highly amusing: in speaking of Walpole's *Castle of Otranto,* Lovecraft berated its "brisk, cheerful style (like much of the pulp magazine 'weird' fiction of today)"—a slam at the pulps that Lovecraft had elaborated at great length in late letters to E. Hoffmann Price, August Derleth, C. L. Moore, and many others.

Shortly after this time, however, Conover took over Julius Schwartz's *Fantasy Magazine,* since Schwartz wished to abandon fan editing to become a full-time agent in the science fiction field. Conover then decided to reprint "Supernatural Horror in Literature" from the beginning. The second issue of the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent* was dated January–February 1937, but did not contain any segment of the essay; Conover had, however, typed out the whole of it and sent it to Lovecraft, who managed to correct at least the first half of it by mid-February 1937, after which he became too ill to do any further work. No more issues of Conover's magazine appeared, however; some of the material was later transferred to Stickney's *Amateur Correspondent* (including what is apparently the best of three separate manuscript versions of "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction"), but Conover lost interest in the field at about this time—perhaps, indeed, as a direct consequence of Lovecraft's death.

We know so much about the relationship between Conover and Lovecraft—which is, in all frankness, a fairly minor one in the totality of Lovecraft's life, although clearly it was significant to Conover—not only because Lovecraft's letters to him survive, but because of the volume Conover published in 1975 entitled *Lovecraft at Last.* This book is not only one of the finest examples of modern book design, but a poignant, even

wrenching testimonial to the friendship between a middle-aged—and dying—man and a young boy who idolised him. Although the two never met, the correspondence was warm from the beginning. Some of it is a trifle silly, as Lovecraft indulged Conover in some of his juvenile tastes: he patiently answered Conover's inane questions regarding some figures in Lovecraft's invented pantheon ("Incidentally, how is your stooge Yog-Sothoth? And where do you keep him at night?"[26]) and claimed that he would soberly cite Conover's mythical book *Ghorl Nigral* in a story (he thankfully never did so, chiefly because he did not write any original stories in the last six months of his life). No doubt Lovecraft was remembering his own enthusiasm as a boy reading the *Argosy* and *All-Story,* and he did recognise in Conover an unusual level of competence (he praised the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent* for its near-total lack of typographical errors) and diligence.

There were other fan editors and publishers with whom Lovecraft came in touch at this time. One of them was Wilson Shepherd (1917–1985), Wollheim's colleague on the *Phantagraph.* Lovecraft had already learnt something of Shepherd just prior to beginning his brief correspondence with him in the spring of 1936, but it was not at all to Shepherd's credit. In March R. H. Barlow had presented to Lovecraft a sheaf of letters between himself and Shepherd, dating to 1932, in which Shepherd had apparently tried to bamboozle Barlow out of a part of his magazine collection. Shepherd had claimed that he had a complete file of *Weird Tales,* among other things, and agreed to part with the issues for 1923–25 (which Barlow lacked) in exchange for eight bound volumes of *Amazing Stories.* Barlow sent the *Amazings* but received in return an assortment of very ordinary magazines which he already had, but no issues of *Weird Tales.* When Barlow protested, Shepherd offered him a complete set of "*Science Fiction Magazine* and its sister magazine INTERPLANETARY STORYS" [*sic*], two nonexistent magazines. Barlow at this point came to the conclusion that he was dealing with either a thief or an insane person. It is not clear what the upshot of this whole deal was, but in the spring of 1936 Barlow had asked Lovecraft to prepare a précis of this correspondence to circulate to other colleagues, and the result is a sober but unwittingly hilarious piece entitled "Correspondence between R. H. Barlow and Wilson Shepherd of Oakman, Alabama, Sept.–Nov. 1932." It is probable, incidentally, that Shepherd never had a complete set of *Weird Tales,* which even at that time was pretty rare.

Lovecraft did not know what to make of Shepherd; to Barlow he expressed the belief that he was "a poor white or illiterate hill-billy grades below even [William L.] Crawford—jest an Allybammy cracker with the amorality of a Faulkner peasant."[27] Although he referred to Shepherd as "Share-Cropper Shep" to other correspondents, Lovecraft dealt with him cordially enough when actually coming into direct touch with him in April 1936. He offered Shepherd advice on improving the typography and design of the *Phantagraph;* he sent "The Nameless City" for printing in the semi-professional magazine that Wollheim and Shepherd were planning, *Fanciful Tales;* and he even revised two poems by Shepherd, "Death" and "Irony" (which Lovecraft retitled "The Wanderer's Return"). Neither of these poems amounts to much, but in Lovecraft's version they at least scan and rhyme.

Shepherd (in conjunction with Wollheim) gave Lovecraft a nice forty-sixth birthday present in return for his various kindnesses. He issued a broadside containing the poem "Background" (titled "A Sonnet") as the sole contribution to Volume XLVII, No. 1 of a magazine called the *Lovecrafter.* It is a very appropriate tribute, for this poem—sonnet XXX of *Fungi from Yuggoth*—certainly reflects the essence of Lovecraft's imaginative life. Lovecraft was delighted at the birthday gift, and was also relieved at the absence of typographical errors.

He was less happy with the sole issue of the Wollheim-Shepherd *Fanciful Tales of Time and Space* appeared. Dated Fall 1936, it contained the much-rejected "The Nameless City," along with pieces by Rimel, David H. Keller, Robert E. Howard, Derleth, and others; but the Lovecraft contribution contained at least fifty-nine misprints. "That is surely something of a record!"[28] Lovecraft bemoaned (later a correspondent caught still more errors). But he himself may have been partly to blame, for he read proofs of several pages of the story as Shepherd sent them to him. Lovecraft was, however, a bad proofreader of his own material (he was much better when proofreading others' work). To pick one example at random, he failed to notice that the unidentified typist of "The Thing on the Doorstep" had not only made serious misreadings, but severely erred in making section divisions in the story. And yet, this was the typescript that was sent to *Weird Tales* and ultimately printed in this erroneous condition.

Still another new correspondent, Nils Helmer Frome (1918–1962), is an interesting case. Born in Sweden but spending most of his life in Fraser

Mills, British Columbia (a northern suburb of Vancouver), Frome has the distinction of being Canada's first active science fiction fan.[29] In the fall of 1936 Frome evidently solicited some contributions from Lovecraft for his fan magazine *Supramundane Stories,* but the first issue—initially planned for October 1936 but later dated December [1936]–January 1937—did not contain any work by him. The second (and last) issue, dated Spring 1938, contained Lovecraft's "Nyarlathotep" as well as a version of his essay on weird fiction, which Frome titled "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction—the 'Why' and 'How.'" Lovecraft had also sent Frome the prose-poem "What the Moon Brings" (1922), but upon the folding of *Supramundane Stories* the piece was passed on to James V. Taurasi, who used it in his fanzine, *Cosmic Tales,* for April–May–June 1941. Frome also let some of his letters from Lovecraft appear in *Phantastique/The Science Fiction Critic* for March 1938.

Lovecraft did not know quite what to make of Frome. He was no doubt pleased to have a correspondent in a country that still retained its loyalty to the British throne, but Frome was a strange, mystical character who believed in numerology, fortune-telling, the immortality of the soul, and other conceptions Lovecraft found preposterous. And yet, Frome seemed to be a man of such keen native intelligence that Lovecraft strove to instruct and aid him as best he could. While nearly on his deathbed, he sent to Frome a list of recent books on the sciences (culled largely from "Suggestions for a Reading Guide") that would, he hoped, clear up the many misconceptions about the universe Frome had. How successful Lovecraft was in his educational efforts, it is difficult to say. Frome eventually lost touch with fandom and died before his forty-fourth birthday.

Two final fan editors with whom Lovecraft exchanged a few letters were James Blish (1921–1975) and William Miller, Jr (b. 1921), two youths living in East Orange, New Jersey. They were publishing a fanzine entitled the *Planeteer,* whose first issue was dated November 1935 (Nils Frome did the artwork for some of its covers); but they do not seem to have come into touch with Lovecraft until the summer of 1936. At that time they inevitably asked Lovecraft for a contribution, and he sent them the poem "The Wood," which had hitherto appeared only in the *Tryout* for January 1929. Although the pages containing the poem were set up, this issue—which was dated September 1936, and which had by this time absorbed the fanzine *Tesseract* and had become retitled *Tesseract Combined with The Planeteer*—was

never completed. (The next year the young Sam Moskowitz bought the uncompleted copies—about fifteen or so—and sold them for five or ten cents each.[30])

What scraps of correspondence we have to Blish and Miller (Lovecraft wrote to them jointly) is pretty insignificant and deals with Lovecraft disillusioning them as to the reality of the *Necronomicon* and then, in response to a suggestion by the two boys, suggesting rather half-heartedly that he might write, not the whole *Necronomicon* (for he had already cited a passage from page 751 of the tome in "The Dunwich Horror"), but perhaps an excerpt or chapter from it (as Clark Ashton Smith had done in "The Coming of the White Worm," purportedly a chapter from the *Book of Eibon*) or producing a sort of "abridged and expurgated" version.

Although Miller vanished into oblivion shortly after this time, Blish did not. He went on to become one of the most important science fiction writers of his generation, and such works as *Doctor Mirabilis* (1964), *Black Easter* (1968), and *The Day After Judgment* (1972) are among the most philosophically challenging of their kind. Lovecraft's influence on Blish cannot be said to be especially significant, but Blish certainly seems to have remembered his brief association for the whole of his own tragically abbreviated life.

In addition to writers, editors, and publishers, Lovecraft also heard from weird artists. Chief among these was Virgil Finlay (1914–1971), whose work in *Weird Tales* Lovecraft had admired for several months prior to coming in touch with him. Finlay is indeed now recognised as perhaps the greatest pictorial artist to emerge from the pulps, and his stunning pen-and-ink work is unmistakable in its precision and imaginative scope. Lovecraft first heard from him in September 1936, and their correspondence was cordial even though Lovecraft in the end wrote only five letters and one postcard to him. Willis Conover had secretly arranged for Finlay to draw the celebrated portrait of Lovecraft as an eighteenth-century gentleman to head the first instalment of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" in the *Science-Fantasy Correspondent,*[31] a portrait that, after the demise of that fanzine, appeared on the cover of *Amateur Correspondent* for April–May 1937.

Finlay was responsible for what proved to be Lovecraft's penultimate creative utterance. Hearing Finlay's lament on the decline of the old custom of writing verses on current works of art and literature, Lovecraft included

one in his letter of November 30: "To Mr. Finlay, upon His Drawing for Mr. Bloch's Tale, 'The Faceless God'" (Finlay's illustration for "The Faceless God" in *Weird Tales* for May 1936 was regarded by many as the best work of art ever to appear in the magazine). Lovecraft prefaced the sonnet by the remark, "I could easily scrawl a sonnet to one of your masterpieces if you weren't too particular about quality,"[32] leading one to believe that he wrote the poem on the spot while writing the letter. This may well be the case, although the poem also appears in a letter to Barlow of the same date. In any case, it is a fine sonnet, the more remarkable if it really was the work of a few impromptu minutes.

About a week later Lovecraft wrote what might be definitively his last work—another sonnet, titled on one manuscript as "To Clark Ashton Smith, Esq., upon His Fantastic Tales, Verse, Pictures, and Sculptures" and on another manuscript as "To Klarkash-Ton, Lord of Averoigne." This too is a fine evocation of Smith's variegated creative work, although it is excelled by Smith's own poignant elegy to Lovecraft written a few months later.

In October 1936 Lovecraft got in touch with Stuart Morton Boland (1909–1973), a young librarian in San Francisco. In his own account of his brief association with Lovecraft, Boland states that he had initially sent to Robert E. Howard a reproduction of an illuminated manuscript that he had seen in Budapest and that Howard had passed this on to Lovecraft, wondering whether this was anything like what the *Necronomicon* was supposed to be. When Boland came home months later, he found a long letter by Lovecraft awaiting him.[33] There is, however, no mention of Boland in the surviving Lovecraft-Howard correspondence, and in any case Howard's last letter to Lovecraft appears to have been written on May 13, leading one to wonder why another five months passed before Boland and Lovecraft got into direct communication.

In any event, Boland was knowledgeable in Mesoamerican lore, and in reply to Lovecraft's query as to whether there might be any similarity between his invented pantheon and actual gods of the Aztecs or Mayans, Boland sent an annotated list of some of the more peculiar deities ("*Chiminig-Agua:* A violent deity and keeper of the Cosmic Light. Creator of the colossal Black Avians that distribute light about the Universe during the daytime and who gobbled it up every night"[34]). Lovecraft, although pleased with this exotic folklore, found that it would require "a great deal of interpretation and modification" for fictional use. He had always

maintained that synthetic "gods" were much more amenable than actual deities for such a purpose, since their attributes could be moulded to suit the precise requirements of the story.

Brief as his association was, Boland seized on one aspect of Lovecraft's work that has eluded many of his self-styled disciples:

> . . . I got the impression that the Lovecraft Theology was a source of considerable amusement and secret mirth to him . . . He seemed to be bubbling over with a deep Jovian inner laughter because supposedly intelligent readers of his tales took his gods for granted as real existing powers. I further sensed that his attitude was that Man *"created god in his own image and likeness"* to serve his own ends and purposes. I felt a sardonic impulse at play here, but one which with all its burden of tremendous knowledge faced the future with a courage and fortitude unmatched in my experience.[35]

It was in November 1936 that Lovecraft heard from an individual whom he correctly identified as "a genuine find."[36] Fritz Leiber, Jr (1910–1992) was the son of the celebrated Shakespearean actor Fritz Leiber, Sr, whom Lovecraft had seen around 1912 playing in Robert Mantell's company when it came to the Providence Opera House. The son was also interested in drama, but was increasingly turning toward literature. He had been reading the weird and science fiction pulps from an early age, and much later he testified that "The Colour out of Space" in the September 1927 *Amazing* "gave me the gloomy creeps for weeks."[37] Then, when *At the Mountains of Madness* and "The Shadow out of Time" appeared in *Astounding,* Leiber's interest in Lovecraft was renewed and augmented—perhaps because these works probed that borderline between horror and science fiction that Leiber himself would later explore in his own work. And yet, he himself was too diffident to write to Lovecraft, so his wife Jonquil did so care of *Weird Tales;* for a time Lovecraft was corresponding quasi-separately to both of them.

In mid-December Leiber sent Lovecraft his poem cycle, *Demons of the Upper Air,* and a novella or short novel, "Adept's Gambit." Both profoundly impressed Lovecraft, especially the latter. This first tale of Fafhrd and the Gray Mouser—two swashbuckling characters (modelled upon Leiber himself and his friend Harry O. Fischer [1910–1986], with whom Lovecraft also corresponded briefly) who roamed some nebulous fantastic realm in

search of adventure—must have been scintillating, for Lovecraft wrote a long letter commenting in detail about it and praising it effusively:

> My appreciation & enjoyment of "Adept's Gambit" as a capturer of dark currents from the void form an especially good proof of the story's essential power, since the style & manner of approach are almost antipodal to my own. With me, the transition to the unreal is accomplished through humourless pseudo-realism, dark suggestion, & a style full of sombre menace & tension. You, on the other hand, adopt the light, witty, & sophisticated manner of Cabell, Stephens, the later Dunsany, & others of their type—with not a few suggestions of "Vathek" & "Ouroboros" [E. R. Eddison's *The Worm Ouroboros*]. Lightness & humour impose a heavy handicap on the fantaisiste, & all too often end in triviality—yet in this case you have turned liabilities to assets & achieved a fine synthesis in which the breezy whimsicality ultimately builds up rather than dilutes or neutralises the tension & sense of impending shadow.[38]

The published version of "Adept's Gambit" (in Leiber's collection, *Night's Black Agents,* 1947) apparently differs somewhat from the version Lovecraft saw. The nature of Lovecraft's remarks leads one to believe that the story was set more firmly in Graeco-Roman antiquity than it now is. Indeed, the fact that Lovecraft pointed out so many anachronisms and actual errors in the historical setting probably led Leiber to make the story less an historical fantasy and more of a pure fantasy. In the draft Lovecraft read there were also references to his myth-cycle; these were also excised in the final draft. The original manuscript of "Adept's Gambit" has recently surfaced, but it has yet to be published and has not been made available to me.

Leiber has testified frequently and eloquently to the importance of his brief but intense relationship with Lovecraft. Writing in 1958, he confessed: "Lovecraft is sometimes thought of as having been a lonely man. He made my life far less lonely, not only during the brief half year of our correspondence but during the twenty years after."[39] Elsewhere he has even stated that Lovecraft was "the chiefest influence on my literary development after Shakespeare"[40]—a statement I shall want to examine more detailedly later. Here it can be said that Leiber is the one colleague of Lovecraft's who can even remotely be considered his literary equal—more

so than August Derleth, Robert E. Howard, Robert Bloch, C. L. Moore, Henry Kuttner, or even James Blish. Leiber's subsequent career—with such landmark works of fantasy and science fiction as *Gather, Darkness!* (1950), *Conjure Wife* (1953), *The Big Time* (1958), *A Specter Is Haunting Texas* (1969), *Our Lady of Darkness* (1977), and dozens of Fafhrd and Gray Mouser stories—is as distinguished as that of any writer in these fields during the past half-century; but like Dunsany and Blackwood, the very mass and complexity of his work seems to have deterred critical analysis, so that Leiber remains merely a revered but ill-understood figure. He learned much from Lovecraft, but like the best of Lovecraft's associates and disciples, he became his own man and his own writer.

Finally, let us consider the case of Jacques Bergier (pseudonym of Yakov Mikhailovich Berger, 1912–1978). This Russian-born Frenchman, living in Paris in the late 1930s, claimed in later years to have corresponded with Lovecraft; indeed, he presents us with the charming anecdote of having asked Lovecraft how he had so realistically portrayed Paris in "The Music of Erich Zann," to which Lovecraft is supposed to have replied that he had visited that city—"in a dream, with Poe."[41] This is all very quaint, but it may be apocryphal. Lovecraft never mentions Bergier in any correspondence I have ever seen. Bergier did write a letter to *Weird Tales,* published in the March 1936 issue, in which he singles out Lovecraft for praise ("By all means, give us more stories by H. P. Lovecraft. He is the only writer of today who is really *haunted"*), so it is just conceivable that Bergier had asked Farnsworth Wright to forward a letter to his idol. Bergier also wrote a letter to *Weird Tales* about Lovecraft after the latter's death, without mentioning any correspondence with him; but perhaps it would have been out of place to do so. Lovecraft had no foreign-language correspondents to my knowledge. In any event, Bergier certainly did in later years spearhead the effort to disseminate Lovecraft's work in France.

Lovecraft both lamented and delighted in his burgeoning correspondence. To Willis Conover he wrote in September 1936:

> As for the curtailment of my correspondence . . . this will not mean any abrupt policy of arrogant and neglectful silence. It will mean rather a cutting down of the *length and promptness* of such letters as do not absolutely demand space and speed. I immensely enjoy the new points of view, varied ideas, and diverse reactions offered by a wide correspondence, and would

> be infinitely reluctant to have any drastic or large-scale elimination.[42]

About three months later he was telling Barlow: "I find my list has grown to 97 now—which surely calls for some pruning. . . . but how the hell can one get out of epistolary obligations without becoming snobbish & uncivil?"[43] No greater testimonial to Lovecraft's flexibility of mind, openness to new information and new impressions, and gentlemanliness of behaviour is required than these two quotations. He was dying, but he was still seeking to learn and still adhering to the standards of civilised discourse.

Late in 1936 Lovecraft finally saw something he never thought he would see—a published book bearing his name. But predictably, the entire venture was, from first to last, an error-riddled débâcle. It is certainly little consolation that *The Shadow over Innsmouth* has, by virtue of its being the only actual book published and released in Lovecraft's lifetime, become a valued collectors' item.

William L. Crawford's first book publication was a peculiar little booklet in which Clark Ashton Smith's "The White Sybil" (yes, Smith misspelled "Sibyl") was issued jointly with David H. Keller's "Men of Avalon"; this item emerged under the imprint of Fantasy Publications in 1934. I have already mentioned that Crawford had a variety of plans for issuing either *At the Mountains of Madness* or "The Shadow over Innsmouth" or both as a booklet. In a later article Crawford maintains that he had wanted to do *Mountains* but found it too long, whereupon Lovecraft had suggested "Innsmouth";[44] but Lovecraft's correspondence belies this simple scenario and suggests that Crawford was proposing all manner of schemes for the two stories—including prior serialisation in either *Marvel Tales* or *Unusual Stories* before their book appearance. Finally—presumably after learning of the acceptance of *Mountains* by *Astounding*—Crawford focused on "Innsmouth." The process began in early 1936, and the book was typeset by the *Saxton Herald,* the local paper in Everett, Pennsylvania. Lovecraft began reading proofs later that spring, finding them full of mistakes but laboriously correcting them as best he could; some pages were apparently so bad that they had to be reset virtually from scratch.

It was Lovecraft who, in late January or early February, urged Crawford to use Frank Utpatel as an artist for the book.[45] He had remembered that Utpatel (1905–1980), a Midwesterner of Dutch origin, had been encouraged by his friend August Derleth to do some pen-and-ink drawings for the story as early as 1932, when Derleth was trying to market the tale on his own. The two drawings Utpatel had made at that time no longer existed, and in any event Crawford and Utpatel decided that the illustrations for the book would be in the form of woodcuts. Utpatel executed four woodcuts, one of which—a spectacularly hallucinatory depiction of Innsmouth's decaying roofs and spires, rather suggestive of El Greco—was also used for the jacket illustration. Lovecraft had initially sent Utpatel a set of pictures of some unspecified New England seaport (it may indeed have been Newburyport, the town that had partly inspired the setting), but in mid-February providentially found in the newspaper—as an advertisement by a bank urging depositors to be thrifty and keep their property in good condition[46]—a picture that came very close to capturing his idea of the crumbling town. Lovecraft was delighted with the resultant illustrations by Utpatel, as well he should be, even though the bearded Zadok Allen was portrayed as clean-shaven.

The illustrations, in the end, proved to be perhaps the only worthy item in the book, for certainly the text itself was seriously mangled. The fact that Lovecraft read proofs did not seem to make much difference, for new errors were evidently introduced in making the corrections he indicated, as frequently occurs in a linotype process where an entire line has to be reset even if a single error occurs in it. Lovecraft did not receive a copy of the book until November[47]—a point worth noting, since the copyright page of the book itself gives the date of April 1936 (the title page supplies Crawford's new imprint, Visionary Publishing Co.). Lovecraft claimed to have found 33 misprints in the book, but other readers found still more. He managed to persuade Crawford to print an errata sheet—whose first version was itself so misprinted as to be virtually worthless[48]—and also found the time and effort to correct many copies of the book manually. He did so by a method somewhat analogous to that used to correct the *Astounding* serialisation of *At the Mountains of Madness:* erroneous or supernumerary words, letters, or punctuation marks would be removed with a knife, and corrections written in with a sharp pencil. It seems as if copies bearing such corrections are more numerous than those that do not.

This may have to do with the fact that, although 400 copies of the sheets were printed, Crawford had the money to bind only about 200. Lovecraft declared that Crawford had actually borrowed money from his father for the entire enterprise;[49] indeed, at about the time *The Shadow over Innsmouth* came out, Crawford incredibly asked Lovecraft for a $150 loan to continue *Marvel Tales*.[50] The book—although advertised in both *Weird Tales* and some of the fan journals—sold slowly (it was priced at $1.00), and shortly after its publication Crawford was forced to give up printing and publishing for seven years; at some point during this time the remaining unbound sheets were destroyed. So much for Lovecraft's "first book."

Lovecraft's own career as a practising fiction writer was certainly not going very well. In late June Julius Schwartz, evidently intent on following up the success of placing *At the Mountains of Madness* with *Astounding,* had proposed what Lovecraft considered a wild and impractical idea of placing some of his stories in England. Lovecraft sent him "a lot of manuscripts"[51] (leading one to think that Schwartz may have had a mind to approach book publishers), and in order to exhaust the American market for as-yet unpublished stories, he finally submitted "The Thing on the Doorstep" and "The Haunter of the Dark" to *Weird Tales*—the first stories he had personally submitted since the rejection of *At the Mountains of Madness* in 1931, with the exception of "In the Vault" in 1932. Lovecraft claimed to be surprised that Farnsworth Wright accepted these stories immediately, but he should not have been. Readers of the magazine had been clamouring for his work for years and had to be satisfied with reprints. In 1933 *Weird Tales* had published one original story ("The Dreams in the Witch House") and two reprints; in 1934, one original story (if the collaboration "Through the Gates of the Silver Key" can count as such) and one reprint; in 1935, no original stories and one reprint; in 1936, one original story ("The Haunter of the Dark" in December) and three reprints. (These figures exclude the several revisions that appeared at this time.)

The exact tone of Lovecraft's letter to Wright when submitting these stories is of interest. It is as if he is almost asking for rejection:

> Young Schwartz has persuaded me to send him a lot of manuscripts for possible placement in Great Britain, and it occurs to me that I'd better exhaust their cisatlantic possibilities before turning them over to him. Accordingly I am going

> through the formality of obtaining your official rejection of the enclosed—so that I won't feel I've overlooked any theoretical source of badly-needed revenue.[52]

I doubt that Wright took any great pity on Lovecraft for that last note about much-needed revenue; he simply wanted new Lovecraft stories that he could successfully publish (*At the Mountains of Madness* and "The Shadow over Innsmouth" apparently did not fall into that category), and perhaps he was even concerned—after seeing the two *Astounding* appearances—that Lovecraft was finally preparing to abandon *Weird Tales* altogether. Wright could not possibly have known that Lovecraft would write no more original fiction. Lovecraft, for his part, was simply shielding himself psychologically from rejection by paradoxically assuming—or claiming to assume—that the stories were certain to be rejected.

In fact, Lovecraft had reached a psychological state that made the writing of any new stories nearly impossible. As early as February 1936—three months after the writing of his last original tale, "The Haunter of the Dark," and several months before the contretemps over his stories in *Astounding*—he was already admitting:

> [*At the Mountains of Madness*] was written in 1931—and its hostile reception by Wright and others to whom it was shewn probably did more than anything else to end my effective fictional career. The feeling that I had failed to crystallise the mood I was trying to crystallise robbed me in some subtle fashion of the ability to approach this kind of problem in the same way—or with the same degree of confidence and fertility.[53]

Lovecraft was already speaking of his fictional career in the past tense. In late September 1935 he had announced to Duane W. Rimel, "I may be experimenting in the wrong medium altogether. It may be that poetry instead of fiction is the only effective vehicle to put such expression across"[54]—a remark modified about a half-year later when he hypothesised that "*fiction* is *not* the medium for what I *really want to do.* (Just what the right medium would be, I don't know—perhaps the cheapened and hackneyed term 'prose-poem' would hint in the general direction.)"[55]

We have some dim hints of new stories being written—or at least contemplated—around this time, but clearly nothing came of them. Ernest

A. Edkins writes:

> Just before his death Lovecraft spoke to me of an ambitious project reserved for some period of greater leisure, a sort of dynastic chronicle in fictional form, dealing with the hereditary mysteries and destinies of an ancient New England family, tainted and accursed down the diminishing generations with some grewsome variant of lycanthropy. It was to be his *magnum opus,* embodying the results of his profound researches in the occult legends of that grim and secret country which he knew so well, but apparently the outline was just beginning to crystallize in his mind, and I doubt if he left even a rough draft of his plan. [56]

We have to take Edkins's word on this matter, for his correspondence with Lovecraft has not surfaced and this plot-germ is never mentioned anywhere else. It sounds rather like a horrific version of *The House of the Seven Gables,* and—if genuine—suggests that Lovecraft was contemplating a move away from the science fiction/horror compound that he had evolved in much of his later work.

An actual story that Lovecraft is supposed to have written late in life is mentioned by one Lew Shaw:

> Lovecraft had written a story about a true incident. At one time there was a young woman, a chambermaid in the hotel on Benefit Street, who left and married into wealth. Sometime afterward, she returned to visit the hotel as a guest. When she found herself discourteously treated and snubbed, she departed but put a "curse"on the hotel, on all those who had humiliated her, and on everything concerned with the hotel. In short order, ill luck apparently befell all and the hotel itself burned down. Furthermore, it had never been possible, somehow, for anyone to rebuild on the site.[57]

Shaw claims that Lovecraft wrote the story but failed to prepare a carbon of it. He sent it to a magazine but was apparently lost in the mails.

There is much reason to suspect this entire account. In the first place, the story sounds like nothing Lovecraft would have written—the idea is hackneyed, and the protagonist would uncharacteristically have been a woman. Secondly, it is inconceivable that Lovecraft would have prepared a story without his usual two carbons. In the case of his essay on Roman

architecture in late 1934, he wrote the piece by hand and sent it to Moe without typing it at all. Lew Shaw claims to have actually met Lovecraft on the street, in the company of a friend "who was interested in science-fiction" and knew Lovecraft; this might conceivably have been Kenneth Sterling, but Sterling never mentions this matter in either of his two memoirs. Shaw also claims to be of the Brown Class of 1941; but there is no one of that name in that class listed in the Brown University alumni directory. There is a Lewis A. Shaw in the Class of 1948, and a Lew Shaw who received a Ph.D. in 1975, but that is all. My feeling is that Lew Shaw (probably a pseudonym) is perpetrating a hoax.

This brings us to the final, and perhaps the saddest, episode in Lovecraft's career as a "professional" writer. In the fall of 1936 Wilfred B. Talman proposed acting as agent to market either a collection of tales or a new novel to William Morrow & Co., where Talman evidently had some connexions. Lovecraft casually gave Talman a free hand in the matter, declaring first that "I am done with all direct contact with publishers," and then (about the novel idea), "A full-length novel to order (acceptance not being guaranteed) would be quite a gamble—although I'd enjoy attempting such a thing if I could get the time."[58] Talman apparently interpreted that last remark rather more forcefully than Lovecraft intended; for Morrow, although declining a short-story collection, expressed some interest in a novel. The firm wished Lovecraft to submit the first 15,000 words, acceptance being predicated upon this portion.

At this point Lovecraft got alarmed and backed off. Of course, he had nothing to submit, and could not have written the first 15,000 words of a novel without having a clear idea of where the rest of it was going. Also, he did not want Morrow to dictate an ending, as it seemed inclined to do. In effect, it appears—in spite of Lovecraft's urging Talman in early November that "it would perhaps be best to avoid the making of any promises"[59]—that Talman had already half committed Lovecraft to such a work. Lovecraft knew that he was "all out of the fictional mood now—having written nothing original in a year," and that he would have to start by writing some short stories before he could work up to a novel.

Talman must have written a somewhat irritated reply, perhaps because he had been forced to renege on whatever commitment he had made with Morrow. Lovecraft was effusively contrite: "I genuflect. I grovel. And my regret is of the most acute & genuine, as distinguished from the formal &

perfunctory, sort. Damn it all! But you can at least justify yourself with the firm by telling them—with my cordial permission—that your client is a muddled old fool who doesn't know enough to say what he means the first time!"[60] Lovecraft gave approval for Talman "to give [Morrow] a reasonably strong promise of a synopsis sooner or later, & much less definite suggestions regarding a complete or fractional novel-manuscript in the remote future." The matter was still being discussed as late as mid-February 1937, but by then Lovecraft was in no shape to do anything about it. Talman seems much more to blame in this whole fiasco than Lovecraft, for the latter's offhand remarks in his letters could not possibly have been plausibly interpreted as committing Lovecraft to the composition of a substantial work of fiction.

It is difficult to know exactly when Lovecraft realised that he was dying. The summer of 1936 finally brought the temperature up to a level where he could actually enjoy being outdoors and have the energy to accomplish his work. Barlow's visit was certainly delightful, even though it entailed a sixty-hour session with *Well Bred Speech* after his departure. The fall saw Lovecraft still taking long walks, and resulted in his seeing several sections of terrain he had never before seen in his life. One expedition—on October 20 and 21—took him to the east shore of Narragansett Bay, in an area called the Squantum Woods. Here, during his walk on the 20th, he met two small kittens, one of whom became very playful and allowed Lovecraft to carry him on his journey; the other was hostile and aloof, but tagged along reluctantly because it did not wish to lose its mate. On October 28 Lovecraft went to an area of the Neutaconkanut woods three miles northwest of College Hill:

> From some of its hidden interior meadows—remote from every sign of nearby human life—I obtained truly marvellous glimpses of the remote urban skyline—a dream of enchanted pinnacles & domes half-floating in air, & with an obscure aurea of mystery around them. . . . Then I saw the great yellow disc of the Hunter's Moon (2 days before full) floating above the belfries & minarets, while in the orange-glowing west Venus & Jupiter commenced to twinkle.[61]

The presidential election in November cheered him; he had seen a glimpse of Roosevelt on the morning of October 20 during a campaign rally

in downtown Providence.

Christmas was a festive occasion. Lovecraft and Annie again had a tree, and the two of them had dinner at the boarding-house next door. Naturally they gave each other gifts, and Lovecraft received one outside gift which he certainly did not expect but which he professed to find quite delightful: a long-interred human skull, found in an Indian graveyard and sent to him by Willis Conover. Conover has received much criticism for sending this item at this time, but of course he could not have known of the state of Lovecraft's health; and Lovecraft's pleasure at receiving this mortuary relic seems entirely sincere.

The entire winter was unusually warm, allowing Lovecraft to continue neighbourhood walks into December and even January. Various letters of this time certainly bespeak no intimations of mortality. With the Leibers he had been discussing the feasibility of editing a high-grade weird magazine sometime in the future, and he wrote to Jonquil in mid-December: "I shall probably be available—if still living at so advanced an age—for that good-weird-magazine editorship which Mr. Leiber has in mind!"[62] Ruminating on politics with Henry George Weiss, the communist with whom Lovecraft now found he shared many views in common, he wrote as late as early February: "The next few years in America will be intensely interesting to watch"[63]—as if he were confident that he would be around to watch them.

In early January, however, Lovecraft admitted to feeling poorly —"grippe" and bum digestion, as he put it. By the end of the month he was typing his letters—always a bad sign. Then, in mid-February, he told Derleth that he had an offer (of which nothing is known) for a revised version of some old astronomical articles (presumably the *Asheville Gazette-News* series), which caused him to unearth his old astronomy books and explore new ones. (In mid-October 1936 he had been delighted to attend a meeting of the Skyscrapers, a newly formed amateur astronomy group in Providence.) He added at the end of this letter: "Funny how early interests crop up again toward the end of one's life."[64]

Lovecraft was at this time finally receiving the attention of a doctor, who prescribed three separate medications. On February 28 he made a feeble response to Talman's continued queries about the Morrow book deal: "Am in constant pain, take only liquid food, and so bloated with gas that I can't lie down. Spend all time in chair propped with pillows, and can read or write only a few minutes at a time."[65] Two days later Harry Brobst, who

was much on the scene during this time, wrote to Barlow: “Our old friend is quite ill—and so I am writing this letter for him. He has seemed to grow progressively weaker the last few days.”[66] On a postcard sent to Willis Conover on March 9, Lovecraft wrote in pencil: “Am very ill & likely to be so for a long time.”[67]

The nature of Lovecraft’s various illnesses is ill understood, at least in terms of their aetiology. This may be because Lovecraft waited so long to have them examined by a competent medical authority. On his death certificate the principal cause of death was given as “Carcinoma of small intestine”; a contributory cause was “chronic nephritis,” or kidney disease.

Cancer of the small intestine is relatively rare, colon cancer being much more common; as a result, this cancer frequently goes undetected for years, even when patients are examined. Lovecraft, of course, was never examined until a month before his death, at which time it was too late to do anything except relieve his pain—and even massive doses of morphine seemed to offer little alleviation. It can be hypothesised why Lovecraft did not go to a doctor earlier, since he first experienced a serious bout of what he called indigestion as early as October 1934 (“I was in bed—or dragging betwixt there & the kitchen & bathroom—a week, & have thereafter been distinctly flabby & shaky”[68]). Lovecraft’s habitual term for this condition —“grippe”—is simply an antiquated layman’s term for the flu, although it is quite clear (and was probably clear to Lovecraft) that that is not what he had. But Lovecraft’s phobia of doctors and hospitals may have been of very long standing. Recall that his mother’s death was caused by a gall bladder operation from which she was unable to recover. Although it was probably Susie’s general physical and psychological debilitation that led to her death, rather than any medical malfeasance, perhaps Lovecraft gained a fear and suspicion of doctors from this point onward.

The causes of intestinal cancer are various. Chief among them is diet: a high-fat, low-fiber diet results in the greater absorption of animal proteins in the digestive tract, and cancer can result in this manner. Interestingly enough, in view of the amount of canned food Lovecraft ate, studies have shown that modern food additives and preservatives may actually inhibit intestinal cancer.[69] In other words, it was not that the preservatives in the canned food Lovecraft ate caused his cancer, but that their possible absence may have done so.

It is a difficult question whether Lovecraft's kidney problems were related to or actually produced by his cancer or were a separate phenomenon entirely; the latter seems quite possible. Chronic nephritis is a now antiquated term for a variety of kidney ailments. In all likelihood, Lovecraft had chronic glomerulonephritis (formerly known as Bright's disease)—the inflammation of the renal glomeruli (small bulbs of blood capillaries in the kidney). If unrelated to the cancer, the cause of this ailment is not entirely clear. In some cases it is a function of a breakdown of the immune system; in other cases, poor nutrition may be a factor.[70] In other words, poor diet may have caused or contributed to both his cancer and his renal failure, hence it is worth examining once more his eating habits, especially as they evolved toward the end of his life.

In a letter to Jonquil Leiber written three months before his death, Lovecraft outlined the average content of his two daily meals:

> (a) *Breakfast* . . .
> Doughnut from Weybosset Pure Food Market 0.015
> York State Medium Cheese (for sake of round numbers) 0.060
> Coffee + Challenge Brand Condensed Milk + $C_{12}H_{22}O_{11}$ 0.025
> Total Breakfast 0.100
>
> (b) *Dinner* . . .
> 1 can Rath's Chili con Carne* 0.100
> 2 slices Bond Bread 0.025
> Coffee (with accessories as noted above) 0.025
> Slice of cake or quadrant (or octant) oif pie 0.050
> Total Dinner 0.200
> Grand Total for Entire Day 0.30
> 7
> Average Total per Week 2.10
>
> (*or Armour's Corned Beef Hash or baked beans from delic., or Armour's Frankfort Sausage or Boiardi Meat Balls and Spaghetti or chop suey from delicatessen or Campbell's Vegetable Soup, etc., etc. etc.)[71]

This table's chief purpose was to show how Lovecraft could eat on 30¢ a day or $2.10 a week; as Lovecraft had written some months earlier to Willis Conover, if the remnants of his inheritance didn't help to augment (minimally) the income from revision (sporadic) and original fiction (nearly non-existent except from accidents like the *Astounding* sales), "I wouldn't be eating very much."[72] But the brute fact of the matter is that Lovecraft was *not* eating very much, and that much of his diet was indeed high-fat (cheese, ice-cream, cake, pie). August Derleth maintained that it is a "myth" that Lovecraft died of starvation; but clearly his poor diet contributed significantly to his early death.

I have delayed discussion of Lovecraft's anomalous sensitivity to cold till now because I am convinced that it has some relation to his worsening cancer, although it is perhaps now impossible to ascertain what that relation may be. It has previously been thought that Lovecraft suffered from a supposed ailment called poikilothermia. This is, however, not a disease but merely a physiological property of certain animals, whereby their body temperature varies with the external environment; in other words, this property applies to cold-blooded animals such as reptiles. Mammals are all homeothermic, or capable of maintaining a constant body temperature (within narrow limits) regardless of the external environment.

Now there is no explicit evidence that Lovecraft's actual body temperature decreased during the cold, although it could have; since he was never hospitalised when suffering from exposure to cold, no tests exist on what his body temperature was in such a state. We only have various anecdotes as to his symptoms on such occasions: disturbed cardiovascular and respiratory functions (he had to pant when exposed to cold during a Christmas visit to New York); swelling of feet (customarily an indication of poor blood circulation); difficulty in the manipulation of hands;[73] headache and nausea,[74] sometimes leading to vomiting;[75] and in extreme cases (perhaps three or four times in his life), actual unconsciousness. I have no idea what this concatenation of symptoms signifies.

What could have caused this condition? There does not seem to be any actual illness coinciding with these symptoms, but one hypothesis can perhaps be made. Body temperature is, in mammals, almost certainly regulated by the central nervous system. Experiments with animals have shown that a lesion in the caudal section of the hypothalamus can result in

homeothermic animals becoming quasi-poikilothermic: they do not sweat in hot weather, nor do they shiver in cold weather.[76] Lovecraft, of course, *did* admit to sweating profusely in hot weather, but claimed nevertheless that he had nearly unbounded energy on these occasions. Nevertheless, I believe it is at least possible that some sort of damage to the hypothalamus—which does not affect intellectual or aesthetic capacity in any way—caused Lovecraft's sensitivity to cold.

And yet, Lovecraft makes it abundantly clear that his "grippe" really did improve whenever the weather warmed up. This, at any rate, was the case during the winter of 1935–36. This fact may have led Lovecraft to believe that his digestion problems were some by-product of his sensitivity to cold, which he apparently believed to be non-treatable; if so, it could have contributed to his failure to see a doctor until the very end.

Lovecraft's last month of life is agonising merely to read about; what it must have been like to experience can scarcely be imagined. This period has been made suddenly more vivid by a document that was long thought to be lost or even apocryphal: a "death diary" of his condition that Lovecraft kept until he could scarcely hold a pen. We do not have the actual document: Annie Gamwell gave it to R. H. Barlow after Lovecraft's death, and it has subsequently been lost; but Barlow copied out selected portions of it in a letter to August Derleth. These selections, in addition to Lovecraft's medical record and the recollections of two doctors who treated him, give us a stark account of his last days.[77]

Lovecraft began keeping the diary at the very beginning of 1937. He notes lingering digestive trouble throughout the first three weeks of January. There is one curious note on January 27: "revise Rimel story." He finished the revision the next day. This is a story entitled "From the Sea," which Lovecraft returned to Rimel in mid-February "with such minor changes as I think are needed."[78] The story was apparently never published and presumably does not now survive. However minor the revisions, it is the last piece of fiction on which Lovecraft worked.

Dr Cecil Calvert Dustin was brought in on February 16. According to his recollections, he could tell immediately that Lovecraft was suffering from terminal cancer, so that he probably prescribed a variety of painkillers (Lovecraft states three different "nostrums" given to him). Lovecraft's condition did not improve, and the medications did not even appear to

alleviate his pain. He took to sleeping propped up in the morris-chair, since he could not lie down comfortably. Also, there was enormous distension in his abdomen. This is an edema in the peritoneal cavity caused by his kidney disease.

On February 27th Annie told Dr Dustin that Lovecraft was much worse. When Dustin came over, he claims to have notified Lovecraft that his condition was terminal. Lovecraft, of course, kept up a good front to his colleagues, saying merely that he would be out of commission for an indefinite period; but perhaps he assumed that this euphemism would be correctly understood. On March 1 Annie asked Dustin to call in a specialist in internal medicine. Dustin contacted Dr William Leet, but clearly not much could be done at this stage. The diary entry for March 2 tells the story: "pain—drowse—intense pain—rest—great pain." On March 3 and 4 Harry Brobst and his wife paid a visit; Brobst, with his medical knowledge, must have immediately known of the nature of Lovecraft's condition, although he too put up a good front when writing to mutual colleagues.

On March 6 Dr Leet came over and found Lovecraft in the bath: immersions in hot water appeared to alleviate the pain somewhat. On this day Lovecraft suffered "hideous pain." By March 9 Lovecraft was unable to take any food or drink. Leet called the next day and advised that Lovecraft check into Jane Brown Memorial Hospital. He was taken there that day in an ambulance and placed in what was then Room 232 (the rooms were renumbered during an expansion of the hospital in the 1960s).[79] Lovecraft's diary ends on March 11; presumably he was unable to hold a pen thereafter.

For the next several days Lovecraft had to be fed intravenously, as he continued vomiting up all nourishment, even liquids. On March 12 Annie wrote to Barlow:

> I have intended to write you a gay little letter, long since, but now I am writing a sad little letter telling you that Howard is so pitifully ill & weak. . . . the dear fellow grows weaker & weaker —nothing can be retained in his stomach. . . .
>
> Needless to say he has been pathetically patient & philosophical through it all. . . .[80]

On March 13 Harry Brobst and his wife came to visit Lovecraft in the hospital. Brobst asked Lovecraft how he felt; Lovecraft responded, "Sometimes the pain is unbearable." Brobst, in parting, told Lovecraft to

remember the ancient philosophers. Lovecraft smiled—the only response Brobst received.[81]

On March 14 Lovecraft's edema was so severe that a stomach tap drained six and three-fourths quarts of fluid. That day Barlow, having received Annie's letter, telegraphed her from Leavenworth, Kansas: "WOULD LIKE TO COME AND HELP YOU IF AGREEABLE ANSWER LEAVENWORTH TONIGHT."[82]

Howard Phillips Lovecraft died early in the morning of March 15, 1937. He was pronounced dead at 7.15 A.M. That evening Annie telegraphed a reply to Barlow:[83]

HOWARD DIED THIS MORNING NOTHING TO DO THANKS

26. Thou Art Not Gone

(1937–2010)

On the evening of March 15 the *Providence Evening Bulletin* ran an obituary, full of errors large and small; but it made mention of the "clinical notes" Lovecraft kept of his condition while in the hospital—notes that "ended only when he could no longer hold a pencil." This feature was picked up by the wire services, and an obituary entitled "Writer Charts Fatal Malady" appeared in the *New York Times* on March 16. Frank Long, Lovecraft's best friend, learnt of his death from reading this obituary.

A funeral service was held on March 18 at the chapel of Horace B. Knowles's Sons at 187 Benefit Street. Only a small number of friends and relatives were there—Annie, Harry Brobst and his wife, and Annie's friend Edna Lewis. These individuals then attended the actual burial at Swan Point Cemetery, where they were joined by Edward H. Cole and his wife and Ethel Phillips Morrish, Lovecraft's second cousin. The Eddys had planned to come but arrived after the gravesite ceremony was over. Lovecraft's name was inscribed only on the central shaft of the Phillips plot, below those of his father and mother: "their son / HOWARD P. LOVECRAFT / 1890–1937." It took forty years for Lovecraft and his mother to receive separate headstones.

News of Lovecraft's death spread a little faster than that of Robert E. Howard, but some of his closest colleagues still did not hear of it for weeks. Donald Wandrei had written Lovecraft a long letter on March 17, concluding: "What of your own winter? Did you make a holiday visit to Belknap, or indulge in explorations farther south? Have you written, or are you writing, any new tales?"[1] And yet, it was Wandrei who, when he eventually did learn of the matter, passed the news on to August Derleth. Derleth noted that he read Wandrei's letter "on my way into the marshes below Sauk City, where I had intended to spend an afternoon reading Thoreau's *Journal.* Instead, I sat at a railroad trestle beside the brook and considered ways and means of putting together Lovecraft's best works and bringing them out in book form."[2]

Derleth told Clark Ashton Smith, but Smith had already heard from Harry Brobst. "The news of Lovecraft's death seems incredible and nightmarish, and I cannot adjust myself to it. . . . It saddens me as nothing

has done since my mother's death . . ."[3] Recall that neither Smith nor Derleth had ever met Lovecraft but had merely corresponded with him for fifteen and eleven years, respectively.

The outpouring of grief from both the weird fiction and the amateur press was instantaneous and overwhelming. The June 1937 issue of *Weird Tales* contained only the first wave of letters from colleagues and fans alike. Farnsworth Wright prefaced the letters with the touching note: "We admired him for his great literary achievements, but we loved him for himself; for he was a courtly and noble gentleman, and a dear friend. Peace be to his shade!" It is remarkable how perfect strangers such as Robert Leonard Russell, who knew Lovecraft only from his work, could write: "I feel, as will many other readers of *Weird Tales,* that I have lost a real friend." Many real friends—from Hazel Heald to Robert Bloch to Kenneth Sterling to Clark Ashton Smith to Henry Kuttner—also wrote moving letters. Kuttner wrote: "I've been feeling extremely depressed about Lovecraft's death. . . . He seemed, somehow to have been an integral part of my literary life . . ." In the August 1937 issue Robert A. W. Lowndes, who exchanged exactly two letters with Lovecraft, wrote: " . . . it may seem somewhat strange for me to say that it is as though I had lost a beloved friend of many years' acquaintance. Yet this is the case . . ." Jacques Bergier, in the September 1937 issue, concluded: "The passing of Lovecraft seems to me to mark an end of an epoch in the history of American imaginative fiction . . ."

As for amateurs, Walter J. Coates wrote an affecting obituary in *Driftwind* for April 1937. Perhaps the most significant tribute was a special issue of the *Californian* (Summer 1937) prepared by Hyman Bradofsky, full of memoirs, poetry by Lovecraft, the first significant publication of his letters ("By Post from Providence"—excerpts of his letters to Rheinhart Kleiner on amateur affairs), and a moving eulogy by Bradofsky:

> Great as was Howard Lovecraft in heart and mind, we of today are unable to evaluate him at his true worth. Time and the march of events will bring increased understanding of him and of his tangible legacies. . . .
>
> Lovecraft's passing is a distinct loss to this writer. When we visit Boston we will not see him. That hurts, when we force ourselves to realize it. But Lovecraft lives on in his work; lives, too, in the memory of those who knew him, and lives well.[4]

Edward H. Cole revived his amateur journal, the *Olympian,* after a twenty-three-year hiatus to produce a superb Autumn 1940 issue containing poignant memoirs by Ernest A. Edkins, James F. Morton, Cole himself, and W. Paul Cook. Cook's piece was an early version of his full-length memoir, *In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Recollections, Appreciations, Estimates* (1941), which remains the finest memoir ever written about Lovecraft.

One of the most remarkable phenomena about Lovecraft's passing is the number of poetic tributes it inspired. Henry Kuttner, Richard Ely Morse, Frank Belknap Long, August Derleth, Emil Petaja, and many others wrote fine elegies; but the best without question is Clark Ashton Smith's "To Howard Phillips Lovecraft," written on March 31, 1937 and published in *Weird Tales* for July. Its conclusion can only be quoted:

> And yet thou art not gone
> Nor given wholly unto dream and dust:
> For, even upon
> This lonely western hill of Averoigne
> Thy flesh had never visited,
> I meet some wise and sentient wraith of thee,
> Some undeparting presence, gracious and august.
> More luminous for thee the vernal grass,
> More magically dark the Druid stone
> And in the mind thou art for ever shown
> As in a wizard glass;
> And from the spirit's page thy runes can never pass.[5]

R. H. Barlow, of course, had been the first to hear the news of Lovecraft's death, and he immediately caught a bus from Kansas City to Providence, arriving a few days after Lovecraft's interment. He had done this because of a document Lovecraft had written some months before his death: "Instructions in Case of Decease." Annie had been horrified to catch sight of Lovecraft writing this melancholy if very businesslike set of notes, but felt obligated to follow its strictures.[6] It begins: "All files of weird magazines, scrap books not wanted by A. E. P. G. and all original mss. to R. H. Barlow, my literary executor."

"Instructions in Case of Decease" is not, of course, a legal document, and no one has ever claimed that it is: it was not drafted by a lawyer or in the presence of a lawyer, it does not represent a codicil to Lovecraft's 1912

will, and it was never filed for probate; indeed, the document itself does not survive in its original form but only in a handwritten transcription by Annie Gamwell, who wished to keep the original for sentimental purposes. Nevertheless, Annie sought to follow its particulars as best she could; accordingly, on March 26 she had at least the note about Barlow's literary executorship made legal by a formal contract, part of which reads:

> WHEREAS, the late Howard P. Lovecraft was the nephew of the said Mrs. Gamwell; and
>
> WHEREAS, the said Howard P. Lovecraft expressed a wish and desire that the said Mr. Barlow should have his manuscripts (typewritten and long-hand), completed and uncompleted, and note books and should attend to the arrangements with respect to publishing and republishing the said manuscripts, published or unpublished; and
>
> WHEREAS, the said Mrs. Gamwell desires to carry out the wish of her said late nephew, Howard P. Lovecraft. . . .
>
> The said Mr. Barlow agrees to arrange for the publication or republication of said manuscripts, either typed or in long-hand, at his own expense and to pay the said Mrs. Gamwell all receipts that he shall receive from said publications or otherwise, less a three per cent (3%) commission of the gross amount received.

Barlow accordingly took away many books and manuscripts, distributing some of the former to Lovecraft's colleagues in accordance with the "Instructions." Some papers—chiefly letters to Lovecraft by his associates—Barlow deposited immediately in the John Hay Library of Brown University, which was initially somewhat grudging in accepting the material (it was not properly catalogued for another thirty years). After a year or two, his personal life still troubled, Barlow felt that he should deposit the remaining manuscripts and effects, and in the course of the next several years did so; this included all story manuscripts except "The Shadow out of Time," Lovecraft's complete file of *Weird Tales* (to which Barlow eventually added portions of his own file to cover the period after Lovecraft's death), and much other matter. It should be noted that Lovecraft's "Instructions" give Barlow outright ownership of his manuscripts and some of his other effects; it is not simply that Barlow is to work toward securing the publication of any of this material, as would be

customary for a literary executor. So Barlow was within his rights to do with the material what he wished; and it is to his eternal credit that he decided so unhesitatingly to deposit most of this material in a public institution.

Because of his frequent moves across the country and his consequent tardiness or negligence in answering letters, Barlow inadvertently created considerable ill-will among Lovecraft's colleagues. He also later admitted that he had erred in not making public the statement regarding himself in Lovecraft's "Instructions," since some parties believed that Barlow had pilfered Lovecraft's property. In the winter of 1938–39 he was jolted to receive this letter from Clark Ashton Smith: "R. H. Barlow: Please do not write me or try to communicate with me in any way. I do not wish to see you or hear from you after your conduct in regard to the estate of a late beloved friend. Clark Ashton Smith."[7] Donald Wandrei seemed particularly to have a bee in his bonnet about Barlow, and damned his memory to his own dying day.

And yet, Barlow was in some ways the most significant figure in the posthumous recognition of Lovecraft. His depositing Lovecraft's papers in the John Hay Library has made much of the Lovecraft scholarship of the past four decades possible, and he continually urged many colleagues to donate their own letters and other materials from Lovecraft to the library. Barlow did not, indeed, manage to get much of Lovecraft's work into print: his edition of the *Notes & Commonplace Book,* published in 1938 by The Futile Press (run by Claire and Groo Beck in Lakeport, California), is full of errors, although less so than Derleth's various editions. Barlow, of course, did not have the means to undertake full-scale publication of Lovecraft's major stories; and we have already seen that it was another individual who, quite literally at the moment he heard of Lovecraft's death, conceived of a plan of doing so.

August Derleth perhaps felt that he himself had been—or should have been—deemed Lovecraft's literary executor on the strength of two comments Lovecraft had made to him in various letters. In 1932 Lovecraft had remarked rather wistfully (but prophetically): "Yes—come to think of it—I fear there might be some turbulent doings among an indiscriminately named board of literary heirs handling my posthumous junk! Maybe I'll dump all the work on you by naming you soul heir."[8] Then, in late 1936, when Derleth was again hounding Lovecraft about the marketing of a book

of his tales, Lovecraft had stated rather wearily: "As for trying to float a volume of Grandpa's weird tales some day—naturally I shall have blessings rather than objections to offer, but I wouldn't advise the expenditure of too much time & energy on the project."[9] Derleth used this remark as the ultimate basis for his later work on Lovecraft's behalf.

Derleth wasted no time. By the end of March 1937 he had already mapped out the venture in broad details and enlisted the aid of Donald Wandrei. In short order he evolved the following scheme: he would assemble three volumes, the first containing Lovecraft's most significant tales, the second containing the remaining fiction and perhaps some poetry and essays, and the third containing letters. Derleth maintained that it was Wandrei who suggested that all Lovecraft's work, especially the letters, be preserved;[10] but this idea would presumably have followed logically in any event.

Where did Barlow fit into these plans? The thinking on Derleth's part appears to have been: if Barlow wishes to cooperate, fine; if not, he had better not interfere. As it happens, Barlow lent what aid he could in the assembling of what became *The Outsider and Others.* By late March Derleth was asking Barlow to send him Lovecraft's annotated copies of *Astounding* containing *At the Mountains of Madness,*[11] since he knew that the printed text was corrupt. Since all the contents of the volume consisted of previously published material, Derleth assembled copy himself by preparing tearsheets of the stories (in many cases, however, taking them from the poorest published sources—e.g., the *Fanciful Tales* text of "The Nameless City" with its fifty-nine bad misprints—since these were the easiest to hand) and having his personal secretary, Alice Conger, prepare a mammoth typescript, which ultimately came to 1500 pages. It contained thirty-six stories plus "Supernatural Horror in Literature."

It was at this point that Derleth made a critical decision. He had first submitted the volume to Charles Scribner's Sons:

> Scribner's were at that time my own publishers, and, while sympathetic to the project and cognizant of the literary value of Lovecraft's fiction, rejected the manuscript because the cost of producing so bulky a book, combined with the public's then sturdy resistance to buying short story collections and the comparative obscurity of H. P. Lovecraft as a writer, made the project financially prohibitive. Simon & Schuster, to whom the

> manuscript was next submitted, likewise rejected, for similar reasons.[12]

This process, Derleth says elsewhere,[13] took several months, and he was unwilling to waste more time submitting to other publishers. But did it never occur to Derleth to offer a smaller volume, with perhaps a dozen of Lovecraft's best stories? Might not Scribner's or Simon & Schuster have accepted such an offer? But Derleth seemed fixated on his three-volume conception, so he did the inevitable: he formed, with Wandrei, his own small press, Arkham House, and issued the volume himself.

In the short term *The Outsider and Others,* which emerged in December 1939, certainly attracted the attention of the publishing world. Many regarded as a noble curiosity—a kind of monument to friendship regardless of the actual contents of the book. Derleth complained that, in spite of ads taken out in *Weird Tales* and the fan publications, the volume took a full four years to sell out its 1268 copies; but what can he have expected from generally impecunious weird fiction enthusiasts who were loath to spend $5.00 (the average price for a volume being then $2.00) for 550 pages of 9-point type? *The Outsider and Others* is unreadable today, and is nothing but a collector's item. It is, to be sure, a landmark in publishing, but of a decidedly mixed sort: at the very time that it launched what was for many years the most prestigious small press in the weird fiction community, it effected the ghettoisation of Lovecraft and his type of weird tale. Had Lovecraft been issued by Scribner's or some other mainstream house, then the entire history of his critical recognition, and the entire subsequent history of weird fiction, would have been very different. It is not clear how many other writers would have escaped the genre ghetto: whether Clark Ashton Smith or Robert E. Howard or Henry S. Whitehead would have followed Lovecraft into the mainstream is very much in doubt. But certainly Lovecraft would not have been quite the literary curiosity he became over the next several decades. One develops the strong suspicion, however, that Derleth simply did not want to give up his control of Lovecraft, as he would in part have done if a mainstream house had published his work. For the next thirty years Derleth effectively owned Lovecraft, even though he had little right to do so.

And yet, *The Outsider and Others* received very cordial reviews. It is no surprise that, in the *Providence Journal,* B. K. Hart sang its praises, nor that Will Cuppy enthusiastically if uncritically lauded the book in the *New York*

Herald Tribune. What is indeed surprising is that Thomas Ollive Mabbott, then the world's leading Poe scholar, wrote a glowing review in *American Literature* (March 1940)—the first review, or mention, of Lovecraft in an academic journal. "Time will tell if his place be very high in our literary history; that he has a place seems certain."[14] Four years later, writing in a fan magazine, Mabbott was still more enthusiastic: "I have never quite been sure *how* great he was; though I do feel he was a great writer."[15] One other notice possibly inspired by *The Outsider* was an article by William Rose Benét in which he mentioned in passing that his brother Stephen Vincent "was entirely familiar with the work of H. P. Lovecraft long before that little-known master of horror was brought to the attention of the critics."[16]

Meanwhile Derleth, in spite of the slow sales of *The Outsider,* was pushing on with the next Lovecraft omnibus. He also published a volume of his own stories and one by Clark Ashton Smith to keep the Arkham House imprint in the public eye. At the same time he was vigorously marketing to *Weird Tales* those of Lovecraft's stories that had not appeared there, including many that Farnsworth Wright had rejected. This pace of magazine publication picked up when Wright died in 1940. His place was taken over by Dorothy McIlwraith, who edited the magazine until it folded in 1954. McIlwraith seemed a trifle less finical than Wright, accepting Lovecraft's longer stories but publishing them in appallingly butchered abridgements: "Medusa's Coil" (January 1939), "The Mound" (November 1940), *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* (May and July 1941), "The Shadow over Innsmouth" (January 1942). Derleth turned all the proceeds of these fiction sales to Annie Gamwell; they amounted to nearly $1000.[17]

Annie died of cancer on January 29, 1941. She was, really speaking, the last direct familial link to Lovecraft, for among Annie's own heirs Ethel Phillips Morrish was only a second cousin (albeit one who recalled Lovecraft from the age of four) and Edna Lewis was only a friend. She was pleased with Derleth's devotion and also had considerable fondness for Barlow, although toward the end she seemed to become a little frazzled and wished that all the various individuals interested in her nephew could work harmoniously together.

Beyond the Wall of Sleep came out from Arkham House in 1943; the print run, because of war restrictions, was only 1217. It was nearly the same size as its predecessor and sold for the same price; it too took years to go out of print. Its chief features were the two unpublished novels, *The Dream-*

Quest of Unknown Kadath and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward,* which Derleth or his secretary transcribed (inaccurately) from the autograph manuscripts supplied by Barlow. This volume also received relatively cordial reviews in the mainstream press: a laudatory but comically error-riddled one in the *New York Times Book Review* by William Poster, another enthusiastic one by Will Cuppy in the *New York Herald Tribune,* and a rather lukewarm one by the comic novelist Peter de Vries, of all people, in the *Chicago Sun Book Week.*

By this time, however, Derleth realised that the volume of letters would have to be postponed: he had received thousands upon thousands of pages of correspondence from Lovecraft's associates, and Donald Wandrei's entry into the army in 1942 severely limited the amount of time he had to work on the editing of the letters. In 1944 Derleth issued a "stop-gap" volume, *Marginalia.* In one way it was prophetic: aside from containing a few revisions, essays, juvenilia, and fragments, it featured a large number of memoirs and other writings commissioned by Derleth from Lovecraft's colleagues. In this way there began a flood of Lovecraft memorabilia that has proceeded almost to the present day. This is certainly one of Derleth's most significant contributions to Lovecraft studies: valuable insights have been provided by these memoirs, the authors of many of which died not long after their writing. One of the best pieces in *Marginalia* was not a memoir but a formal essay, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," by Winfield Townley Scott. Scott had taken over B. K. Hart's role as literary editor of the *Providence Journal,* and he had already written several keen articles on Lovecraft and discussed Lovecraft regularly in his column, "Bookman's Gallery." In "His Own Most Fantastic Creation" Scott, using many primary documents, wrote the first important biographical study of Lovecraft, one that still retains considerable value today.

The title of Scott's essay was derived from a review by Vincent Starrett, who around this time began paying attention to his old correspondent in brief articles and reviews. His review of *Beyond the Wall of Sleep* contains some celebrated remarks:

> But to me Lovecraft himself is even more interesting than his stories; he was his own most fantastic creation—a Roderick Usher or C. Auguste Dupin born a century too late. . . He was an eccentric, a dilettante, and a *poseur par excellence;* but he was also a born writer, equipped with a delicate feeling for the

> beauty and mystery of words. The best of his stories are among the best of their time, in the field he chose to make his own.[18]

Although this is meant in affectionate flattery, I think it has caused considerable mischief and has fostered the illusion that Lovecraft was a freak who should be more regarded for his "eccentricities" than for his literary work.

In the meantime the fan world had not been idle. At the beginning this community paid tribute to Lovecraft not so much with memoirs or criticism as with publications: hence, Corwin F. Stickney issued a small brochure of Lovecraft's poetry, *HPL* (1937); Wilson Shepherd issued a "Limited Memorial Edition" of *A History of the Necronomicon* (1937); Barlow compiled the *Notes & Commonplace Book* (1938); William H. Evans mimeographed the first thirty-three sonnets of *Fungi from Yuggoth* for the Fantasy Amateur Press Association (FAPA) in 1943 (there is no explanation as to why he left off the final three sonnets; presumably he was working from an incomplete typescript).

But in 1942 a significant event occurred: Francis T. Laney founded the *Acolyte,* the most noteworthy fan magazine since the *Fantasy Fan* and one that during its four-year run published a number of valuable rare works by Lovecraft and astute memoirs and studies of him. Laney had been drawn into the fan world by Duane W. Rimel,[19] and he, Rimel, and F. Lee Baldwin (whose interest had been rekindled) were the guiding forces behind the quarterly magazine. Crude in appearance as it is (the first issue was run off on ditto and is now virtually illegible; the other issues were mimeographed), it generated much worthwhile material. Laney later had a violent reaction against the fan world, recorded in his piquant autobiography, *Ah, Sweet Idiocy!* (1948). Another magazine, A. Langley Searles's *Fantasy Commentator,* also generated much valuable critical material about Lovecraft.

Other fan publishers issued Lovecraft's obscurer stories, poems, essays, and even letters, as well as quaint tributes to him. One of the strangest and most affecting was J. B. Michel's "The Last of H. P. Lovecraft," in the *Science Fiction Fan* for November 1939. Michel had never known Lovecraft but had gone with Donald A. Wollheim to 66 College Street. Annie Gamwell had allowed the two young men to examine Lovecraft's study, which remained unaltered since his death. Michel concludes with a

poignant and half-hostile peroration that shows how Lovecraft was already becoming a myth:

> Lovecraft, for all his giant knowledge and piercing, calculating intellect, was the deadly enemy of all that to me is everything, an inflexible Jehovah-man, a gaunt, prophet-like high priest of dark rites and darker times, clad in funereal robes and funereal visage, gazing with suppressed hate upon a great new world which placed more value upon the sanitary condition of a bathroom fixture than all the greasy gold and jewels, the bones and dirt-crushed half knowledge of a thousand and a thousand-thousand kingdoms of the hoary past, whose faithful chronicler he was and in which he lived.[20]

A much more sensible piece was J. Chapman Miske's "H. P. Lovecraft: Strange Weaver" (*Scienti-Snaps,* Summer 1940), a surprisingly sane, accurate, and balanced biographical article. "For Lovecraft was eccentric to the point of being born 'out of his due time'. Not freakish, simply different, by temperament, tastes, and, to certain degrees, actions. . . . Lovecraft is dead, but the strange patterns he wove will always be appreciated by a small but intelligent group."[21]

Meanwhile Lovecraft's work was being disseminated beyond the confines of the small press. In December 1943 F. Orlin Tremaine, the erstwhile editor of *Astounding,* contacted Derleth about reprinting Lovecraft in paperback for his company, Bartholomew House. Derleth prepared a list of tales, but Tremaine thought it too long and prepared one of his own. The result was *The Weird Shadow over Innsmouth and Other Stories of the Supernatural* (1944), the first Lovecraft paperback volume. It contained only five stories. Tremaine requested an initial print run of 100,000, and, incredibly, it must have sold well, for by November 1944 he was proposing a second volume. Interestingly enough, one of his ideas was to issue *At the Mountains of Madness* and "The Shadow out of Time"—the two stories he had bought for *Astounding*—together in one volume. This plan did not materialise, but what did emerge in 1945 was *The Dunwich Horror,* containing only three long stories.[22]

Lovecraft was also beginning to appear in important anthologies. The most important of all was the inclusion of "The Rats in the Walls" and "The Dunwich Horror" in Herbert A. Wise and Phyllis Fraser's *Great Tales of Terror and the Supernatural,* a landmark volume—probably the finest

anthology of weird tales ever published—issued by the Modern Library (now an imprint of Random House) in 1944. It was reprinted frequently and published also in England. Also significant was Donald A. Wollheim's *The Portable Novels of Science* (1945), issued by Viking Press and including "The Shadow out of Time."

The year 1945 was both very good and very bad for Lovecraft. In this year Derleth published *H. P. L.: A Memoir* through the publisher Ben Abramson, who also simultaneously issued Derleth's edition of *Supernatural Horror in Literature.* Derleth's small monograph can hardly be called a biography, and it is only fleshed out to the length of a small book by the inclusion of several items by Lovecraft in a large appendix. Of its three large chapters two are biographical and one critical; all three are quite undistinguished. Although Derleth had by this time the enormous resources of Lovecraft's letters at his disposal, he was too busy as a writer and publisher to make careful use of them; he was, in any event, not a scholar in any sense. The work was really nothing more than a means of popularising Lovecraft, and in this sense it may perhaps have succeeded modestly.

Also in 1945 the World Publishing Company issued Derleth's compilation of Lovecraft's *Best Supernatural Stories.* William Targ of World had approached Derleth about the idea in May 1944; he wished a collection of about 120,000 words. Derleth, realising the importance of the venture, solicited many colleagues' opinions as to their favourite Lovecraft tales; in the end the selection was good, aside from the unfortunate "In the Vault" and "The Terrible Old Man." The volume appeared in April 1945; a second printing appeared in September and a third in June 1946. By the end of 1946, 67,254 copies had been sold in hardcover—a remarkable figure. From this point on sales tapered off, although by mid-1949 sales had reached 73,716.[23] The paper used for the first three printings is very poor in quality; that for the fourth printing (September 1950) is much better.

Parenthetically, it appears that the emergence of the *Best Supernatural Stories* put an end to efforts by Winfield Townley Scott to market a collection of Lovecraft's stories with E. P. Dutton.[24] In 1942 Scott had also queried with Knopf for a collection, but this too came to nothing.[25] Whether Derleth would even have allowed such a thing is, of course, very much in question.

What made 1945 a bad year, however, was a review that some of these items received. In 1944 Edmund Wilson had written "A Treatise on Tales of Horror," in which he expressed great disdain for most weird stories with the exception of Henry James's *The Turn of the Screw* and a few others. It is clear that Wilson had a prejudice toward genre fiction generally and imaginative fiction in particular, although I must confess that his several attacks on the detective story seem to me pretty much on the mark. But when his article appeared, many readers objected that he had failed to consider the new phenomenon, H. P. Lovecraft. Securing such books as *Marginalia, Best Supernatural Stories,* and *H. P. L.: A Memoir,* he rendered his verdict in a *New Yorker* article on November 24, 1945, entitled "Tales of the Marvellous and the Ridiculous."

The title says it all:

> I regret that, after examining these books, I am no more enthusiastic than before. . . . the truth is that these stories were hack-work contributed to such publications as *Weird Tales* and *Amazing Stories,* where, in my opinion, they ought to have been left.
>
> The only real horror in most of these fictions is the horror of bad taste and bad art. Lovecraft was not a good writer. The fact that his verbose and undistinguished style has been compared to Poe's is only one of the many sad signs that almost nobody any more pays real attention to writing.[26]

And so on. It is scarcely worth dissecting the errors and misconceptions in even the above passage, let alone the piece as a whole. Wilson should have realised that Lovecraft's tales, regardless of their merits, were not "hack-work" because they were at least written with a sincerity of purpose lacking in most work of this kind; and as for the comparison with Poe, Wilson cannot comprehend how T. O. Mabbott (who wrote a fine appreciation of Lovecraft in *Marginalia*) actually likes Lovecraft: evidently the leading Poe scholar of his generation is lacking in critical judgment on the very issue of Lovecraft's similarity to Poe! The fact is that Wilson has merely tossed off a book review without much thought behind it—a point emphasised by the number of factual errors made in the piece, a result of his extreme carelessness in reading some of Lovecraft's tales. Certainly, on the basis of this review Wilson would not deserve the title—which he does indeed

deserve on the basis of his work as a whole—of America's leading literary critic of the period.

What is interesting, however, is the praise of Lovecraft that sneaks through Wilson's hostility almost in spite of himself. He first echoes Vincent Starrett in saying "Lovecraft himself, however, is a little more interesting than his stories," citing his erudition and praising "Supernatural Horror in Literature"; he finds Lovecraft's letters full of wit and humour; and at the end he even concludes:

> But Lovecraft's stories do show at times some traces of his more serious emotions and interests. He had a scientific imagination rather similar, though much inferior, to that of the early Wells. The story called "The Colour out of Space" more or less predicts the effects of the atomic bomb, and "The Shadow out of Time" deals not altogether ineffectively with the perspectives of geological eons and the idea of controlling time-sequence.

What is abundantly clear is that Wilson actually found Lovecraft the man rather fascinating—and his work perhaps a little more disturbing than he cared to indicate.

There is, indeed, a curious and little-known sequel to Wilson's evaluation of Lovecraft. In his play, *The Little Blue Light* (1950), there are clear references to Lovecraft at various points. When a friend of Wilson's, David Schvchavadze, later made note of these allusions, Wilson "livened up considerably and produced a book of Lovecraft's correspondence, which he had obviously read and enjoyed."[27] (This must have been after 1965, when the first volume of *Selected Letters* appeared.) Wilson, unfortunately, never had occasion to voice his reevaluation of Lovecraft in print.

It is difficult to gauge the actual effect of Wilson's attack on Lovecraft's subsequent critical reputation. Certainly Derleth must have fumed over it, and not long after this time he seems to have ceased sending out Arkham House books to mainstream reviewers, thereby augmenting the ghettoisation of Lovecraft and weird fiction generally. And yet, as early as the summer of 1946 Fred Lewis Pattee wrote an almost excessively flattering review of the Ben Abramson *Supernatural Horror in Literature* in *American Literature,* referring to the amazing concision of the essay ("One's first impression is that it is a remarkable piece of literary compression"), declaring (contrary to the opinion of many later critics) that

"he has omitted nothing important," and concluding generally, "It is a brilliant piece of criticism."[28] Then, in 1949, Richard Gehman wrote an article on science fiction for the *New Republic* in which he took no notice whatever of Wilson in declaring that "Howard Phelps [*sic!*] Lovecraft was the first notable modern practitioner of science-and-fantasy in this country."[29] After this, however, critical articles and reviews begin to trail off and would not resume until the 1970s.

But Lovecraft's own work was continuing to be disseminated widely. Philip Van Doren Stern arranged for a paperback edition of Lovecraft, *The Dunwich Horror and Other Weird Tales,* to be published with the Editions for the Armed Services.[30] This volume, costing 49¢, appeared probably in late 1945 or early 1946, and introduced Lovecraft to large numbers of servicemen still stationed in Europe after the war. It is an excellent collection of twelve of Lovecraft's best tales. Avon issued a paperback in 1947, *The Lurking Fear and Other Stories.*

In 1945 Derleth published another volume, *The Lurker at the Threshold* —"by H. P. Lovecraft and August Derleth." This volume is the first of his sixteen "posthumous collaborations" with Lovecraft, and opens up what is perhaps the most disreputable phase of Derleth's activities: his promulgation of the "Cthulhu Mythos." The history of this long and sordid affair is very involved, but requires treatment in detail.

We have seen that as early as 1931 Derleth had become fascinated with Lovecraft's pseudomythology, seeking not only to add to it but investing it with the name "The Mythology of Hastur." Indeed, it was exactly at this time that Derleth wrote the initial drafts of several stories, both on his own and in collaboration with Mark Schorer, which—though most were published much later—put the seal on his radically different treatment of the mythos. One story in particular, "The Horror from the Depths" (written with Schorer in the summer of 1931; published in *Strange Stories* for October 1940 as "The Evil Ones"), is very illuminating. Farnsworth Wright rejected this tale not only because he thought it too derivative of Long's *Horror from the Hills* but because

> you have lifted whole phrases from Lovecraft's works, as for instance: "the frightful *Necronomicon* of the mad Arab Abdul Alhazred," "the sunken kingdom of R'lyeh," "the accursed spawn of Cthulhu," "the frozen and shunned Plateau of Leng,"

> etc. Also you have taken the legends of Cthulhu and the Ancient Ones directly out of Lovecraft. This is unfair to Lovecraft.[31]

When Derleth relayed Wright's complaints to Lovecraft, the latter gave them short shrift: "I *like* to have others use my Azathoths & Nyarlathoteps —& in return I shall use Klarkash-Ton's Tsathoggua, your monk Clithanus, & Howard's Bran." Derleth seemed to use this single sentence as justification for his subsequent "additions" to Lovecraft's mythos, but he seems to have failed to notice the very preceding sentence: "The more these synthetic daemons are mutually written up by different authors, the better they become as general background-material."[32] The term "background-material" is critical here: whereas writers like Clark Ashton Smith and Robert E. Howard really did use various elements of Lovecraft's mythos merely as random allusions to create atmosphere, Derleth set about resolutely writing whole stories whose very core was a systematic (and, accordingly, tedious) exposition of the mythos as he conceived it.

Relatively few of the stories Derleth was writing at this time actually got into print before Lovecraft's death, since they were repeatedly rejected. "Lair of the Star-Spawn" made it into *Weird Tales* for August 1932; its mention of the Tcho-Tcho people was picked up by Lovecraft in "The Shadow out of Time." "The Thing That Walked on the Wind," also written in 1931, was published in *Strange Tales* for January 1933. This tale actually does refer to the various components of the Lovecraft mythos in a random and allusive way, and is a relatively competent piece of work. One comment made by Derleth to Barlow in reference to it in 1934 is of supreme interest: "According to the mythology as I understand it, it is briefly this: the Ancient or Old Ones ruled the universes—from their authority revolted the evil Cthulhu, Hastur the Unspeakable, etc., who in turn spawned the Tcho-Tcho people and other cultlike creatures."[33] This, in essence, is the "Derleth Mythos." Virtually all the elements are here, chiefly the good-vs.-evil scenario (the "Ancient or Old Ones" become the "Elder Gods" in later tales) and the "revolt" of Cthulhu, etc. The notion of the gods as elementals is already faintly present in "The Thing That Walked on the Wind."

Derleth put the seal on his disfigurement of Lovecraft's mythos in the story "The Return of Hastur," begun in 1932 but put aside and not finished until April 1937. It was published in *Weird Tales* for March 1939 after being initially rejected by Wright. Some correspondence between Derleth and Clark Ashton Smith concerning the tale is highly revealing. Even before

reading the story, Smith—responding to Derleth's attempts to systematise the mythos—commented:

> As to classifying the Old Ones, I suppose that Cthulhu can be classed both as a survival on earth and a water-dweller; and Tsathoggua is a subterranean survival. Azathoth, referred to somewhere as "the primal nuclear chaos", is the ancestor of the whole crew but still dwells in outer and ultra-dimensional space, together with Yog-Sothoth, and the demon piper Nyarlathotep, who attends the throne of Azathoth. I shouldn't class any of the Old Ones as *evil:* they are plainly beyond all limitary human conceptions of either ill or good.[34]

Smith was clearly responding to Derleth's attempt to shoehorn the mythos entities into elementals. Then, a little later, Smith wrote: "A deduction relating the Cthulhu mythos to the Christian mythos would indeed be interesting; and of course the *unconscious* element in such creation is really the all-important one. However, there seems to be no reference to *expulsion* of Cthulhu and his companions in 'The Call.'"[35] Here again Smith is trying to steer Derleth on to the right track, since he knew Lovecraft repudiated Christianity. Then, after reading "The Return of Hastur," Smith wrote: "One reaction, confirmed rather than diminished by the second reading, is that you have tried to work in too much of the Lovecraft mythology and have not assimilated it into the natural body of the story."[36] Derleth was very fond of making lengthy catalogues of mythos entities and terms in his tales, as if their mere citation would serve to create horror; he also hammered home his conception of the mythos in story after story, since he had evidently come to the conclusion—one that some politicians of today have also discovered—that if one repeats something often enough, no matter how false, people begin to believe it. Smith's strictures had absolutely no effect on Derleth, who assumed that his views were self-evidently correct and was seeking only commendation and support for them.

It would have been bad enough for Derleth to expound his conception of the Mythos in his own fiction—for it could conceivably have been assumed that this was his (legitimate or illegitimate) elaboration upon Lovecraft's ideas. But Derleth went much further than this: in article after article he attributed his views to Lovecraft, and this is where he stands most culpable. In this way Derleth impeded the proper understanding of

Lovecraft for thirty years, since he was looked upon as the "authority" on Lovecraft and as his appointed spokesman. The first published article in which Derleth propounded his views was in "H. P. Lovecraft, Outsider," published in an obscure little magazine, *River,* for June 1937. By this time Derleth had conveniently found the fictitious "All my stories . . ." quotation supplied by Farnese, which he would use repeatedly to bolster his conception of the mythos. The critical passage in this article is as follows:

> After a time there became apparent in his tales a curious coherence, a myth-pattern so convincing that after its early appearance, the readers of Lovecraft's stories began to explore libraries and museums for certain imaginary titles of Lovecraft's own creation, so powerful that many another writer, with Lovecraft's permission, availed himself of facets of the mythos for his own use. Bit by bit it grew, and finally its outlines became distinct, and it was given a name: the Cthulhu Mythology: because it was in *The Call of Cthulhu* that the myth-pattern first became apparent.[37]

The disingenuousness of the passive voice here ("it was given a name") is evident: it was Derleth who had given the mythos this name. Later, citing the "All my stories . . ." quotation, Derleth commented that this formula is "remarkable for the fact that, though it sprang from the mind of a professed religious unbeliever, it is basically similar to the Christian mythos, particularly in regard to the expulsion of Satan from Eden and the power of evil."

The charade continued. In "A Master of the Macabre" (*Reading and Collecting,* August 1937), an article that had begun as a review of the Visionary *Shadow over Innsmouth* but awkwardly turned into a memorial tribute, Derleth cites *both* the fake "All my stories . . ." quotation and the *real* one ("All my tales are based on the fundamental premise that common human laws and interests and emotions have no validity or significance in the vast cosmos-at-large"), which, as any intelligent person should have been able to tell, directly contradicts the fake one!

Derleth completed his co-opting of Lovecraft with *The Lurker at the Threshold* and its successors. Here he has taken two separate fragments by Lovecraft ("Of Evill Sorceries Done in New England . . ." and "The Round Tower"), totalling about 1200 words, and incorporated them into a 45,000-word novel. There was no explanation of this in the novel itself, but by the

time Derleth published a collection of these "posthumous collaborations," *The Survivor and Others* (1957), he wrote on the copyright page: "Among . . . Lovecraft['s papers] were various notes and/or outlines for stories which he did not live to write. Of these, the most complete was the title story of this collection. These scattered notes were put together by August Derleth, whose finished stories grown from Lovecraft's suggested plots, are offered here as a final collaboration, post-mortem." There is considerable prevarication here. "The Survivor" is based upon some very sketchy notes (mostly dates) written on a newspaper cartoon. "The Lamp of Alhazred" (1954) is actually an affecting tribute to Lovecraft, taking many passages directly from Lovecraft's letters, especially the one about his rambles in Neutaconkanut Hill in the fall of 1936. But all the other stories are derived from entries in the commonplace book. "Wentworth's Day" is based upon this plot-germ: "Hor. Sto.: Man makes appt. with old enemy. Dies—body keeps appt." "The Peabody Heritage" is based upon this: "Members of witch-cult were buried face downward. Man investigates ancestor in family tomb & finds disquieting condition." "The Fisherman of Falcon Point" comes from this: "Fisherman casts his net into the sea by moonlight—what he finds." The most amusing of the lot is "The Ancestor." Here Derleth stumbled upon Lovecraft's "A List of Basic Underlying Horrors Effectively Used in Weird Fiction" and, thinking these Lovecraft's own plot-germs rather than conceptions extracted from published works, wrote a story that turned out to be an unwitting plagiarism of Leonard Cline's *The Dark Chamber.* What is also interesting is how many of these "posthumous collaborations" turn out to be "tales of the Cthulhu Mythos," even though the plot-germs themselves gave not the remotest indication of such a thing.

Derleth published these stories at every opportunity—in magazines, in his anthologies, and in his collections of Lovecraft miscellany. It is scarcely to be wondered, given how secretive Derleth was about the genesis of these works, that hostile critics would use them as ammunition with which to attack Lovecraft. Damon Knight's "The Tedious Mr. Lovecraft" (*Fantasy and Science Fiction,* August 1960) is one such example. (Knight, however, later went on to reprint *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath* in an anthology of fantasy tales.) Even today, when the truth about these "posthumous collaborations" has long been known, careless critics still cite them as work by Lovecraft, and careless publishers continue to reprint them

—sometimes even omitting Derleth's name altogether and leaving Lovecraft as the sole author!

As early as the 1940s Derleth had become obsessed by the "Cthulhu Mythos," writing story after story. Two volumes, *The Mask of Cthulhu* (1958) and *The Trail of Cthulhu* (1962), containing stories published in the 1940s and 1950s, feature some of his worst writing. Like many later pastichists, Derleth somehow seemed to fancy that the highest tribute he could pay to Lovecraft was to write half-baked ripoffs of Lovecraft's own stories; hence, "The Whippoorwills in the Hills" (*Weird Tales,* September 1948) lifts passages almost directly from "The Rats in the Walls"; "Something in Wood" (*Weird Tales,* March 1948) is a rewrite of "The Call of Cthulhu"; "The Sandwin Compact" (*Weird Tales,* November 1940), "The House in the Valley" (*Weird Tales,* July 1953), and "The Watcher from the Sky" (*Weird Tales,* July 1945) are all near-plagiarisms of "The Shadow over Innsmouth," a story that seemed to fascinate Derleth. Nearly every one of these stories contains a catechism about the Elder Gods, elementals, the "expulsion" of the "evil" Cthulhu, Yog-Sothoth, and Hastur (now deemed, by Derleth, the half-brother to Cthulhu, whatever that means).

It may sound odd to say so, but Derleth really had no genuine feel for the weird. All his work in this domain is either highly conventional (tales of ghosts, haunted houses, etc.) or clumsy pastiche. Many of these Lovecraft-inspired tales are, in addition, poor not in their deviation from Lovecraft's own conceptions (some later work that so deviates is highly meritorious, as we shall see), but in the basic craft of fiction-writing: they are written carelessly and hastily, with very poor, ham-fisted attempts to imitate Lovecraft's style (Derleth frequently maintained that Lovecraft's prose was easy to mimic!), clumsy development, laughable attempts at verisimilitude by long catalogues of esoteric terms, and flamboyant conclusions in which good triumphs in the nick of time over evil (in the final tale of the "novel" *The Trail of Cthulhu* Cthulhu ends up being nuked!). These tales really are subject to the very flaws that critics have falsely attributed to Lovecraft—verbosity, artificiality, excessive histrionics, and the like.

Derleth tried as much as possible to sound like Lovecraft but failed pitiably. For some bizarre reason, he set nearly all his "Cthulhu Mythos" tales in New England, which he had never seen, and as a result was totally unconvincing in his atmosphere. He attempted to mimic Lovecraft's archaistic prose when presenting old documents but produced comical

errors. He was fond of pomposities such as the following: “I have come out of the sky to watch and prevent horror from being spawned again on this earth. I cannot fail; I must succeed.”[38] But it is too painful to make a catalogue of Derleth’s shortcomings; they are now all too apparent for all to see.

What is of some interest is that several early scholars simply refused to pay attention to Derleth’s tendentious interpretation of the mythos and produced some fine analyses on their own. Three individuals stand out in particular. Fritz Leiber’s “A Literary Copernicus,” which appeared in Derleth’s second Lovecraft miscellany volume, *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (1949), is a revision of several previous pieces that had appeared in the *Acolyte* and elsewhere; it may still stand as the best general article on Lovecraft. Leiber boldly declared, “. . . I believe it is a mistake to regard the beings of the Cthulhu mythos as sophisticated equivalents of the entities of Christian demonology, or to attempt to divide them into balancing Zoroastrian hierarchies of good and evil.”[39] Matthew H. Onderdonk wrote several articles in the 1940s, including some pioneering studies of Lovecraft’s philosophical thought that emphasised his mechanistic materialism and atheism and sought to harmonise the prodigal creation of “gods” in his fiction with this outlook. George T. Wetzel wrote a series of articles in the 1950s culminating in “The Cthulhu Mythos: A Study” (1955), in which he paid no attention to Derleth and merely studied the themes and motifs running through Lovecraft’s work. But they were lone voices, and almost all other commentators thoughtlessly accepted Derleth’s pronouncements as if they came from Lovecraft himself.

One final issue, partly related to his promulgation of the “Cthulhu Mythos,” is Derleth’s control over the Lovecraft copyrights. This is an extraordinarily complicated situation and has yet to be resolved, but a few notes can be set down here. Lovecraft’s will of 1912 naturally made no provision for a literary estate, so any such estate by default ended up in the control of his sole surviving relative, Annie Gamwell, upon his death. Annie, as we have seen, formalised Lovecraft’s wish to have Barlow deemed his literary executor, but this conferred no control over the copyrights to Lovecraft’s work. When Annie herself died, her estate passed to Ethel Phillips Morrish and Edna Lewis.

Derleth from the beginning claimed *de facto* ownership of Lovecraft’s work by virtue of publishing it in book form, but his control is almost

certainly fictitious. He became angry at Corwin Stickney for publishing his small *HPL* pamphlet in 1937, even though this booklet of eight sonnets was published in an edition of 25 copies. He repeatedly badgered anthologists into paying him reprint fees for Lovecraft stories, and most did so simply to stay on good terms with him. Derleth indeed claimed that he had sunk $25,000 of his own money into Arkham House in its first decade,[40] and I am willing to believe it; but I also maintain that Arkham House would never have stayed afloat at all had it not been for the sales generated from Lovecraft's work.

What, then, were Derleth's claims for ownership of Lovecraft's copyrights? He initially tried to maintain that Annie Gamwell's will had conferred such rights, but that will states clearly that Derleth and Wandrei are to receive merely the remaining proceeds from *The Outsider and Others* —not the literary rights to the material therein. Arkham House then claimed that something called "the Morrish-Lewis gift" (presumably a document signed by Ethel Phillips Morrish and Edna Lewis) grants Arkham House blanket permission to publish Lovecraft's work; but this document, which was finally produced in court, does not in any sense transfer copyright to Arkham House.

Finally, Derleth claimed to have purchased from *Weird Tales* the rights to forty-six Lovecraft stories published in that magazine. There is indeed a document to this effect, dated October 9, 1947; but the question is: what rights could have been transferred in this manner? *Weird Tales* could only have transferred rights to those stories where they controlled all rights (not merely first serial rights); but Lovecraft declared frequently that, although initially selling all rights to *Weird Tales* because he did not know any better, by April 1926 he began reserving his rights.[41] Now there is no documentary evidence of this (i.e., no contracts from *Weird Tales* in which only first serial rights are purchased), but there is considerable circumstantial evidence to support Lovecraft's claim. Recall the Carl Swanson incident of 1932: Swanson had wanted to reprint stories from *Weird Tales,* and Farnsworth Wright had told Lovecraft not only that he (Wright) would not give Swanson second serial rights to any stories he owned, but that he "did not favour the second sale of those tales in which I hold later rights."[42] Wright would not have made such a statement if he had held all rights.

If April 1926 is the cut-off, there are thirteen stories for which *Weird Tales* owned all rights (not counting "Under the Pyramids," which was presumably written on a work-for-hire contract). But of these thirteen, seven had already appeared in amateur (uncopyrighted) journals, hence were in the public domain the moment they were published. Therefore, Derleth in truth purchased the rights to only six stories. And yet, he continued to act as if he controlled *all* of Lovecraft's works, going so far as to state in 1949:

> As representatives of the estate of H. P. Lovecraft, it is the duty and obligation of Arkham House to prevent any such publication [i.e., unauthorised publication of Lovecraft's works]; luckily, Supreme Court decisions have clearly supported every stand Arkham House has taken, and not even a letter by H. P. Lovecraft may be published without the consent of Arkham House.[43]

Derleth later backed down from this outrageous claim (and I have no idea what "Supreme Court decisions" could have bolstered it); indeed, Derleth did nothing when many fans published works by Lovecraft in magazines. Moreover, when Sam Moskowitz wished to publish "The Whisperer in Darkness" in his anthology, *Strange Signposts* (1966), he refused to pay anything for it. Derleth threatened to sue; Moskowitz dared him to go ahead; Derleth did nothing.

Derleth, in effect, relied upon bullying and upon his self-appointed role as Lovecraft's publisher and disciple. He even went so far as to claim that the "Cthulhu Mythos" was an Arkham House property, and in this way badgered the pulp writer C. Hall Thompson from developing his own offshoot of the mythos, set in New Jersey. As late as 1963 Derleth was claiming: "I should point out that the Mythos and its pantheon of Gods etc. are under copyright and may not be used in fiction without the express permission of Arkham House."[44] Admittedly, this statement was made in a personal letter written to some young fan who was attempting to write "Cthulhu Mythos" tales; but Derleth did declare in print four years later: "the title 'Necronomicon' is a literary property and may not be used without permission."[45]

This whole issue is, of course, now moot, for it is widely acknowledged that Lovecraft's entire work went into the public domain at the end of the seventieth year following his death, i.e. January 1, 2008.

One interesting upshot of all this involves Lovecraft's ex-wife. Sonia had left for California in 1933, and in 1936 she married Dr Nathaniel Davis. Incredibly, she did not hear of Lovecraft's death until 1945, when Wheeler Dryden informed her of it. This seemed to rekindle her interest in her ex-husband, for she resumed contact with some Lovecraft associates, especially Samuel Loveman. She began preparing a memoir of Lovecraft and even contemplated publishing some unspecified materials by Lovecraft which she possessed (not her letters, since she had burned these long before). Derleth, hearing of the venture, shot back a stern letter:

> . . . I hope you are not going ahead regardless of our stipulations to arrange for publication of anything containing writings of any kind, letters or otherwise, of H. P. Lovecraft, thus making it necessary for us to enjoin publication and sale, and to bring suit, which we will certainly do if any manuscript containing works of Lovecraft does not pass through our office for the executor's permission.[46]

Sonia was indeed deterred by this from publishing whatever Lovecraft materials she had, but she did go ahead and write her memoir, which appeared in the *Providence Sunday Journal* for August 22, 1948 as "Howard Phillips Lovecraft as His Wife Remembers Him." It was heavily edited by Winfield Townley Scott. As further edited by Derleth, it appeared in *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (1949). Her full, unedited version did not see print until 1985.

Robert Hayward Barlow died by his own hand on January 2, 1951. After essentially being pushed out of his literary executorship by Derleth and Wandrei, Barlow had begun to pursue other interests. Moving to California and taking courses at Berkeley, he emigrated to Mexico in 1942 and became a professor of anthropology at the University of Mexico. He remains a revered and distinguished figure there for the landmark work he did in the study of the native Indian languages of the region. He had also evolved into a very fine poet. But word leaked out about his homosexuality, and to forestall exposure he committed suicide. He was thirty-two years old. It was a tragic waste, for—although not in the field of weird fiction—he had fully justified Lovecraft's predictions of his precocious genius, and would have accomplished far more had he lived.

The 1950s were a somewhat quiescent decade for Lovecraft. Much of his work fell out of print in the United States except for random

appearances in anthologies. One surprising development occurred, however: the publication of Lovecraft's work in Europe. The British publisher Victor Gollancz, passing through New York, contacted Derleth and asked about the possibility of issuing Lovecraft in England. Gollancz published two volumes in 1951, *The Haunter of the Dark and Other Tales of Horror* and *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward.* Both received relatively favourable reviews, suggesting that British critics were a little less predisposed to dislike the weird on principle than American critics of the day were. *Punch* declared: "Lovecraft was undoubtedly a minor master of cosmic horror."[47] An unsigned review of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* in the *Times Literary Supplement* has now been assigned to the distinguished novelist Anthony Powell. While not entirely favourable, Powell does conclude: "There are, however, undeniably some eerie moments among the corpses."[48] The mystery writers Francis Iles (Anthony Berkeley Cox) and Edmund Crispin praised Lovecraft.[49] Both Gollancz volumes did remarkably well: *The Haunter of the Dark* went through five hardcover printings through 1977 and five paperback printings with Panther Books; *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* was reprinted by Panther in 1963 and went through four printings through 1973. The Avon *Lurking Fear* was reprinted in paperback by World Distributors in 1959, attracting a new generation of British weird enthusiasts.

Still more remarkable than British interest in Lovecraft is the foreign response. In 1954 two books of Lovecraft's stories were published in France; editions in Germany, Italy, Spain, and South America followed rapidly. The leader of the French movement was Jacques Bergier, who may or may not have corresponded with Lovecraft. These early volumes attracted the attention of Jean Cocteau, who contributed to a symposium in the *Observer* and remarked of the first French volume, *La Couleur tombée du ciel,* "Mr. Lovecraft, who is American, invents a terrifying world of space-time; his somewhat loose style has gained by translation into French."[50] This remark echoes that of Lovecraft's early French translator Jacques Papy, who actually found Lovecraft's style so offensive that he wilfully omitted many words and phrases so as to produce a more "elegant" and simplified French version. It is perhaps true that Lovecraft's dense style cannot be well accommodated in French, but the majority of French readers who have read only Papy's translations (which continue to be reprinted to the present day) cannot be said to have read Lovecraft. Criticism abroad

also followed these early volumes, and was on the whole much more astute than American or English criticism.

The fan movement continued to be active in the 1950s. Here George T. Wetzel was the spearhead. As early as 1946 he had begun compilation of a new bibliography of Lovecraft: Francis T. Laney and William H. Evans (receiving assistance from Barlow and other individuals) had assembled one in 1943, but it was very preliminary. Wetzel spent years combing through amateur journals, while Robert E. Briney concentrated on professional appearances. The result—the seventh and last volume of Wetzel's *Lovecraft Collectors Library* (1955)—is a landmark, and the foundation for all subsequent bibliographic work on Lovecraft. The first five volumes of the *Lovecraft Collectors Library* contained obscure stories, poems, and essays by Lovecraft; the sixth, essays about him, including memoirs reprinted from Edward H. Cole's special *Olympian* issue. These volumes were all humbly produced on mimeograph, but they began that resurrection of Lovecraft's lesser work which continues in the small press today.

On a more academic front, the Swiss scholar Peter Penzoldt devoted some remarkably astute pages to Lovecraft in *The Supernatural in Fiction* (1952), which could be called the first significant treatise in the field since "Supernatural Horror in Literature," and which itself draws upon Lovecraft's monograph for many of its theoretical presuppositions. Lovecraft also entered a textbook for the first time (if we discount "Sleepy Hollow To-day") when "The Music of Erich Zann" was included in James B. Hall and Joseph Langland's *The Short Story* (1956), complete with study questions at the end.

In 1950 the first academic paper had emerged—James Warren Thomas's "Howard Phillips Lovecraft: A Self-Portrait," a master's thesis written at Brown University. While Thomas did extensive research into Lovecraft's New York period (based, of course, largely upon the letters to his aunts), he let his horror at Lovecraft's racism colour his views, so that he called Lovecraft "narrow and prejudiced and strait-laced and lacking in ordinary human feeling . . ." Thomas wished to publish his thesis and asked Barlow (who still had legal control of the papers at the John Hay Library) and Derleth for permission to quote Lovecraft's letters. Derleth was violently opposed to publication, since the work would cast Lovecraft in a very bad light, and he essentially squelched the project. The thesis finally did appear in gutted form in the University of Detroit literary magazine,

Fresco, serialised over four issues (Fall 1958–Summer 1959). The Spring 1958 issue of *Fresco* had been entirely devoted to Lovecraft, and contains a few pieces of interest.

By 1959 Derleth had gathered enough material to publish another miscellany volume, *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces.* This set the stage for a resurgence of interest in Lovecraft in the 1960s. It is unclear how Derleth gained the funds to reissue Lovecraft's major work in three volumes, *The Dunwich Horror and Others* (1963), *At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels* (1964), and *Dagon and Other Macabre Tales* (1965). He declared that publishing these books caused significant delays in other projects,[51] but he also went on to cite the early film adaptations of Lovecraft, which must have generated some income for Arkham House. In any event, Derleth decided to keep these three books in print. In 1963 he also finally issued a slim volume of *Collected Poems* (it of course never pretended to be Lovecraft's "complete" poetry), delayed for years by Frank Utpatel's dilatoriness in producing illustrations; but it was well worth the wait, for Utpatel's line drawings—particularly for *Fungi from Yuggoth*—are stunning.

Meanwhile, in 1965, Derleth at last brought out the much-delayed first volume of *Selected Letters.* The project took so long because Derleth and Wandrei continued to receive new batches of letters that disturbed the chronological sequence they had established; money also was probably lacking. The second volume emerged in 1968, the third in 1971. Although full of mistranscriptions and bizarre editorial decisions regarding abridgements (in one instance only the greeting and closing of a letter were included, the body of the text entirely excised), the appearance of this set was a landmark. But Derleth had by this time developed a kind of hostility to the mainstream press (both because of some unfavourable reviews of early Arkham House books and, perhaps, also because his own mainstream reputation—culminating in 1945 with an article on him by Sinclair Lewis in *Esquire*—had steadily declined with the passing of the years), and so the appearance of the letters was noted only in the science fiction and fantasy community. Derleth also compiled one final miscellany volume, *The Dark Brotherhood and Other Pieces* (1966), an anthology, *Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos* (1969), and *The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions* (1970).

Some word should be said of the early media adaptations of Lovecraft. Although "The Dunwich Horror" was adapted for radio on the CBS series

"Suspense" as early as 1949 (being just the sort of melodramatic, atmosphereless rendition that Lovecraft feared when he denied radio dramatisation rights for "The Dreams in the Witch House"), it was in the early 1960s that Lovecraft became a sudden media presence. At that time three films emerged in quick succession: *The Haunted Palace* (1964), *Die, Monster, Die* (1965), and *The Shuttered Room* (1967). The first was part of Roger Corman's Poe series, and a Poe-related title was affixed to it even though it was clearly an adaptation of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward* (and credited as such). The second is an adaptation of "The Colour out of Space," while the third adapts a "posthumous collaboration." All are interesting experiments (Vincent Price appears in the first, Boris Karloff in the second, Gig Young in the third), although none of them could be called intrinsically good films in their own right; ironically, the best is perhaps *The Shuttered Room.* Then came *The Dunwich Horror* (1970), a grotesque fiasco with the implausibly handsome Dean Stockwell playing Wilbur Whateley, the lovely Sandra Dee playing a character that has no existence in the original story, and the Old Ones being played, apparently, by hippies on an acid trip.

Criticism in this decade was almost non-existent, although the *Selected Letters* was laying the seed for future work. Jack L. Chalker's anthology, *Mirage on Lovecraft* (1965), is very insubstantial. Perhaps the best item remained unfortunately unpublished: Arthur S. Koki's "H. P. Lovecraft: An Introduction to His Life and Writings," a large master's thesis for Columbia (1962) that used primary documents in presenting the course of Lovecraft's life. Foreign interest, however, continued to be strong. A German collection of tales, *Cthulhu: Geistergeschichten* (1968), was translated by the distinguished poet H. C. Artmann. Then, in 1969, the prestigious French journal *L'Herne* devoted its entire twelfth issue to Lovecraft, featuring translations of works by him, translations of American critical articles, and many original French pieces.

One work of criticism does indeed call for attention: Colin Wilson's *The Strength to Dream: Literature and the Imagination* (1961). Wilson had gained celebrity by publishing, at the age of twenty-four, the challenging sociological study, *The Outsider* (1956). Now, turning his attention to weird and science fiction, he stumbled upon Lovecraft; his reaction was very bizarre. "In some ways, Lovecraft is a horrifying figure. In his 'war with rationality,' he brings to mind W. B. Yeats. But, unlike Yeats, he is sick, and

his closest relation is with Peter Kürten, the Düsseldorf murderer . . . Lovecraft is totally withdrawn; he has rejected 'reality'; he seems to have lost all sense of health that would make a normal man turn back halfway."[52] How the inoffensive Lovecraft could possibly have caused Wilson to have this extreme reaction would be an interesting psychological study. It scarcely needs saying that Wilson's entire blast is a tissue of nonsense, derived from an extraordinarily superficial reading of Lovecraft's works (to the point that he has misconstrued the very plot of "The Shadow out of Time") and a shockingly careless study of his life and thought. But Wilson later admitted that he is a cheerful optimist and was gravely offended by what he took to be Lovecraft's pessimism (evidently Wilson, who claims some sort of standing as a philosopher, could not distinguish between pessimism and Lovecraft's very different brand of "indifferentism").

Derleth, who had provided Wilson some source material for *The Strength to Dream,* was gravely offended by Wilson's remarks. He challenged Wilson to write his own "Lovecraftian" novel, and the latter in short order produced *The Mind Parasites* (1967), the American edition of which Arkham House published. In the introduction Wilson grudgingly admitted that his treatment of Lovecraft in *The Strength to Dream* had been "unduly harsh"; but elsewhere he continued to aver that Lovecraft is an "atrocious writer" whose work is "finally interesting as case history rather than literature."[53] The true fact of the matter is, of course, that Wilson is appalled by Lovecraft's dark vision and its implicit repudiation of Wilson's own naive belief in some future development of the human species.

And yet, *The Mind Parasites* is a highly compelling piece of work, even though its premise—that a kind of "mind cancer" has afflicted the human race since about 1780, thereby producing artists who have a bleak, pessimistic outlook on life—is quite preposterous even as fiction. But Wilson has done what a true pastichist has to do: use Lovecraft's conceptions as a springboard for his own vision. To date, almost no "Cthulhu Mythos" writers have followed Wilson in this regard. Wilson wrote two sequels to *The Mind Parasites, The Philosopher's Stone* (1969) and *The Space Vampires* (1976); the former actually has a somewhat greater Lovecraftian content than *The Mind Parasites,* but it is a bit of a literary shambles and an excess of pompous philosophising, while *The Space Vampires* goes to the opposite extreme in being merely a science

fiction/horror adventure story with relatively little relation to Lovecraft. Wilson, who has continued on occasion to write ignorantly on Lovecraft (see his introduction to the Creation Press edition of *Crawling Chaos: Selected Works 1920–1925* [1993]), has also destroyed his reputation as an intellectual with a variety of credulous works on the occult, since he sees certain occult phenomena as foreshadowing that future advancement of the human species which is the core of what he calls his philosophy. Wilson, much more than Lovecraft, is a curiosity of intellectual history.

If criticism was in short supply in the 1960s, a new generation of fiction writers was taking up the "Cthulhu Mythos." Interestingly, two of the most dynamic figures were English, J. Ramsey Campbell (b. 1946) and Brian Lumley (b. 1937). Campbell is by far the more interesting figure. Around 1960, when he was only fourteen, he began writing stories based on Lovecraft. He sent these boldly to August Derleth, without revealing his age. Derleth saw merit in Campbell's work, but advised him to drop the New England settings in his tales (Campbell had never been to New England) and set them in England instead. In this way Campbell evolved a British counterpart to Lovecraft's fictional milieu. Derleth published Campbell's *The Inhabitant of the Lake and Less Welcome Tenants* in 1964, when Campbell was eighteen. These pastiches are certainly written with a verve not found in much work of their kind, but they are still very derivative. Campbell realised the fact, and he almost immediately proceeded to turn violently away from Lovecraft and evolve his own style. By 1967 he began producing the tales that would fill his second collection, *Demons by Daylight* (1973), which in its way is one of the most significant volumes of weird fiction since *The Outsider and Others:* it introduced a radically new Ramsey Campbell, one who had evolved a dreamlike, hallucinatory style of his own and a very modern subject-matter involving sexual tension, alienation, and aberrant psychology. Campbell has gone on to become perhaps the leading writer of weird fiction since Lovecraft.

Lumley's fate has not been so happy. He began publishing stories in the late 1960s (some in Derleth's small magazine, the *Arkham Collector,* which was a successor to the fine but short-lived *Arkham Sampler* of 1948–49 and which lasted for ten issues between 1967 and 1971), and his first collection, *The Caller of the Black,* appeared from Arkham House in 1971. Several other novels and story collections have followed. Lumley's work is derivative not so much of Lovecraft as of Derleth: he has swallowed the

"Derleth Mythos" whole and produces unwitting parodies of Lovecraft by mimicking Derleth's Elder Gods, elementals, etc. In the novel *Beneath the Moors* (1974) one character actually has a genial chat with Bokrug, the water-lizard from "The Doom That Came to Sarnath"! In *The Burrowers Beneath* (1974) Lumley formalises Derleth's good-vs.-evil scenario of Elder Gods vs. Old Ones by affixing upon the latter the ridiculous acronym CCD (Cthulhu Cycle Deities). Lumley has thankfully abandoned the "Cthulhu Mythos" and gone on to write multi-volume cycles of novels mixing fantasy and horror, whose unreadability is only matched by their inexplicable popularity.

A very different work altogether is *Dagon* (1968), a novel by the distinguished poet, novelist, and short story writer Fred Chappell. This grim tale of psychological horror deftly uses Lovecraftian elements as backdrop. Although a fine novel, it received relatively poor reviews, but it won a prize when translated into French.[54] Chappell has in recent years written several more stories based on Lovecraft's work or using Lovecraft as a character; some are collected in *More Shapes Than One* (1991).

August Derleth died on July 4, 1971, leaving unfinished a final "posthumous collaboration," a prospective novel entitled *The Watchers out of Time.* How exactly one is to evaluate Derleth's stewardship of Lovecraft will depend upon one's assessment of the four basic aspects of this stewardship: 1) the publication of Lovecraft's work; 2) the criticism of his life and work; 3) the dissemination of the "Cthulhu Mythos"; and 4) the control of Lovecraft's copyrights. On the latter three of these counts, there can be no doubt that Derleth deserves far more censure than praise. On only the first count can he possibly gain approbation, and even here there is room for debate. It has frequently been stated by Derleth's partisans that he was not only the person who "put Lovecraft on the map" literarily, but the only one who could have done so: Barlow could not have done anything significant, and without Derleth's aid Lovecraft's work would have fallen into oblivion. This is highly questionable. I have already mentioned that Derleth made, to my mind, a fundamental error in deciding so quickly to publish Lovecraft himself, thereby preventing his work from reaching a mainstream audience and perhaps affecting the entire course of weird fiction in the latter half of this century. It cannot conclusively be stated that Lovecraft's work would never have been rediscovered had Derleth not done

so: I think it quite possible that scholars of the pulps would have recognised its merit sooner or later—probably sooner. Moreover, the papers at the John Hay Library would no doubt have been examined by some enterprising scholar whether or not Lovecraft's work was readily available. Of course, the brute fact is that Derleth *did* rescue Lovecraft's work, and that is something that cannot be taken away from him. But his legacy is nonetheless a decidedly mixed one.

Sad to say, it seemed to require Derleth's death to bring on the next stage of Lovecraft scholarship. The first half of the 1970s was an extraordinarily fertile period, both in terms of the publication of Lovecraft's stories and criticism of his life and work. Beagle Books (later subsumed by Ballantine) began an extensive publication of Lovecraft in paperback in 1969; amusingly enough, however, only four of the eleven volumes of their "Arkham Edition of H. P. Lovecraft" contained works by Lovecraft; the other volumes featured the "posthumous collaborations," a reprint of Derleth's anthology, *Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos,* and, appallingly enough, Derleth's *Mask of Cthulhu* and *Trail of Cthulhu.* What is more, the Beagle/Ballantine editions did not even contain many of Lovecraft's best stories, since the paperback rights to these were owned by Lancer Books, which had issued two fine editions, *The Dunwich Horror and Others* (1963) and *The Colour out of Space* (1965), and kept them in print into the early 1970s (they were reprinted in 1978 by Jove). What is more, two volumes of Lovecraft's "dreamland" tales were edited in 1970 by Lin Carter in his Adult Fantasy series for Ballantine, some of the contents of which overlap those of the Beagle editions. Nevertheless, the various Beagle/Ballantine editions sold nearly a million copies and definitively made Lovecraft a posthumous member of the counterculture. He became fashionable reading among high school and college students, and rock musicians began making covert allusions to him. (In the late 1960s there had even been a rock band named H. P. Lovecraft that issued two albums. Derleth reported that they substantially augmented sales of Arkham House books.[55]) The Beagle/Ballantine editions received a lengthy review in *Time* magazine in 1973, in which the reviewer Philip Herrera, although making some foolish errors, did succeed in a half-parodic imitation of Lovecraft's style. There are also a few keen reflexions:

> Well did he know that true terror lies in the tension between our scientific age's rationalism and our primordial sense of

> individual powerlessness—of being enmeshed in something vast, inexplicable and appallingly evil. For this reason he eschewed the stock devices of werewolves and vampires for a more intimate horror. . . .
>
> It is true that some of Lovecraft's stories of the Cthulu [*sic*] Mythos—*The Call of Cthulu, At the Mountains of Madness*—rank high among the horror stories of the English language. But Great Cthulu only knows why perfectly good, independent writers from the late August Derleth to Colin Wilson have seized and elaborated on the Mythos in their work.[56]

Foreign translations—collections as well as magazine and anthology appearances—became common at this time, as Lovecraft appeared in Dutch, Polish, Swedish, Norwegian, Rumanian, and Japanese. (There may in fact have been Japanese translations as early as the 1940s.) Foreign criticism continued apace, the leading contribution being Maurice Lévy's *Lovecraft ou du fantastique* (1972), a revision of a 1969 dissertation for the Sorbonne. It may be the single best monograph on Lovecraft, and it is unfortunate that it took sixteen years for an English translation to appear.

The fan world was tremendously active. Among the highlights was a somewhat crudely produced but very substantial anthology, *HPL* (1972), edited by Meade and Penny Frierson, with fine pieces by George T. Wetzel, J. Vernon Shea, and many others. One of the most important contributions was Richard L. Tierney's "The Derleth Mythos," a one-page article that began the destruction of Derleth's conception of the mythos. This work was substantially fostered by Dirk W. Mosig in his landmark essay "H. P. Lovecraft: Myth-Maker" (1976), which received widespread dissemination both here and abroad.

Other fan work of the time was rather less distinguished. Darrell Schweitzer produced a respectable small anthology of criticism, *Essays Lovecraftian* (1976), but it received poor distribution. Also out of the fan community, although professionally published, was Lin Carter's *Lovecraft: A Look Behind the "Cthulhu Mythos"* (1972), which made some egregious factual errors and wholly adopted the "Derleth Mythos," but nevertheless presented an adequate "history" of the mythos, especially after Lovecraft's death.

In 1973 Joseph Pumilia and Roger Bryant founded the Esoteric Order of Dagon, an amateur press association in which members each produced

humble magazines devoted to Lovecraft or weird fiction. Although in many cases the journals were very crude both in physical appearance and in contents, a surprising amount of substantial work appeared in them, including penetrating work by Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, Ben P. Indick, David E. Schultz, and others. Faig perhaps established himself as the leading scholar of Lovecraft during the early 1970s, doing a tremendous amount of biographical and bibliographical work in Providence. Much of this research was embodied in a huge unpublished monograph, "Lovecraftian Voyages" (1973). Also at this time R. Alain Everts was doing prodigious work in tracing Lovecraft's surviving colleagues, but only a small portion of his research has seen print. Two bibliographies appeared, David A. Sutton's *Bibliotheca: H. P. Lovecraft* (1971) and Mark Owings and Jack L. Chalker's *The Revised H. P. Lovecraft Bibliography* (1973), but neither added much to Wetzel's work.

All this work culminated in 1975 with the near-simultaneous emergence of three substantial books about Lovecraft: L. Sprague de Camp's *Lovecraft: A Biography* (Doubleday); Frank Belknap Long's *Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Dreamer on the Nightside* (Arkham House); and Willis Conover's *Lovecraft at Last* (Carrollton-Clark).

It would, I suppose, be uncharitable of me to speak ill of de Camp's work, for it is without question the first significant full-scale biography of Lovecraft and embodies more research than any other published volume up to that time. De Camp spent three or four years working on his biography—consulting papers at the John Hay Library, interviewing old colleagues of Lovecraft, and reading Lovecraft's obscurer writings. And yet, what strikes one about his bulky work is its sketchiness: very complicated matters are passed over with misleading brevity, and much of the biography develops a fragmented and random character because de Camp has not really pondered the interrelations between Lovecraft's life, work, and thought. There are, to be sure, any number of mistakes of fact, but the biography's failings go far beyond such surface details: it seriously errs in its very conception.

De Camp admitted that he was temperamentally nothing like Lovecraft: not sensitive to environment, looking to the future rather than the past, a go-getter "professional" writer intent on sales rather than on aesthetic expression, etc. etc. These differences are embarrassingly evident. Whenever de Camp encounters some facet of Lovecraft's personality that he cannot understand or does not share, he immediately undertakes a kind

of half-baked posthumous psychoanalysis. Hence he refers to Lovecraft's sensitivity to place as "topomania"—as if no one could be attached to the physical tokens of his birthplace without being considered neurotic.

Perhaps the worst failing of de Camp's biography is his treatment of Lovecraft's philosophical thought—or, rather, the absence thereof. Although a popular writer on science, de Camp was not a trained philosopher and was entirely incapable of tracing the sources or evolution of Lovecraft's world view and the degree to which it structured his literary work. Many readers would be excused if, after reading de Camp's work, they concluded that Lovecraft had no world view at all. At the same time, de Camp harped upon Lovecraft's racial views all out of proportion to their significance in his general philosophy, and without even a proper understanding of their origin or purpose.

As for de Camp's literary criticism, the most charitable thing that can be said of it is that it is a trifle amateurish. De Camp had little appreciation of literature beyond the level of popular entertainment, and he accordingly took great umbrage when Lovecraft properly trashed pulp fiction as the hackwork that it was—perhaps because de Camp's own science fiction and fantasy is not much above this level. De Camp's highest praise for a Lovecraft tale is that it is a "rousing good yarn."

It is not surprising, therefore, that de Camp's book received widespread condemnation in the fan press. De Camp responded to this barrage of criticism by claiming loftily that he had merely offended the Lovecraft "cult" by knocking their idol down a few notches; but the facts are more complex than this. It is not that de Camp violated the canons of "objectivity" by passing value judgments—this is the proper function of any biographer; it is that these value judgments were arrived at through inadequate understanding and false perspective. The fact that many of these judgments were antipodally at variance with the views of all Lovecraft's close friends should have suggested to de Camp that there was something wrong with his assessments.

And yet, for all its inadequacies, de Camp's biography did do some good. Although it gave ammunition to several reviewers to attack Lovecraft (notable among these were Ursula K. Le Guin and Larry McMurtry, whose ignorant snipes ended up casting more ridicule upon themselves than upon Lovecraft), the volume did indeed give Lovecraft wider exposure in the general literary world and helped to interest an entirely new legion of

enthusiasts and scholars in Lovecraft the man and writer. One of these was myself: I devoured the volume at the age of seventeen and felt that there was much work to be done on this strange and little-known writer.

Frank Long's *Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Dreamer on the Nightside,* although it emerged roughly at the same time as de Camp's biography, was in fact written as a direct response to it: Long read much of de Camp's work in manuscript and confessed to me that he so objected to the portrayal of Lovecraft that he found there that he felt the need to write his own version. Long's is, of course, nothing more than an extended memoir, not a formal biography; and it is flawed on several counts. Minor failings such as silly forays into literary criticism, an unconvincing attempt to recall Lovecraft's exact words on a given occasion, and an embarrassing question-and-answer session in which Lovecraft is made to expound his views on various subjects can be set aside. What cannot be ignored is the imprecision of Long's memory and the haste with which he wrote his book; the result was that the manuscript had to be exhaustively revised by Arkham House's editor, James Turner, to such a degree that as it stands it is virtually a collaborative work. Long should have written this memoir many years earlier; by 1974 his memories of Lovecraft had lapsed to the point that many of his comments are highly unreliable. Nevertheless, the picture of Lovecraft that emerges from this ungainly book is far more accurate than that found in de Camp: here at least is a Lovecraft that is recognisable and bears some kinship with the man we find from his letters, essays, and stories.

Unquestionably the finest of the trilogy of books on Lovecraft to appear in 1975 is Willis Conover's *Lovecraft at Last.* I have already spoken of this heartfelt memoir of a boy and the older man he revered, and of the unstinting labour and expense Conover put into this volume so that it has already become a legend in modern book design. It presents perhaps the truest portrait of Lovecraft of the three books, since of course many of its words are by Lovecraft himself, in the form of his letters to Conover. It also provides a fascinating glimpse into the little-known world of fantasy fandom of the 1930s.

In 1976 the final two volumes of *Selected Letters* appeared under the editorship of James Turner. The completed five-volume set is certainly a monument, in spite of its errors and abridgements, and it has materially aided in the renaissance of scholarship during the last two decades. It was

just at this time that I myself was becoming involved in the field, so that my perspective must now change from that of an historian to that of a spectator and, later, a participant.

Dirk W. Mosig, a German professor of psychology, was at this time the leading scholarly figure in the field and the focus of a growing international interest in Lovecraft. The actual articles Mosig published in his relatively brief career are not at all reflective of his importance, for they are either general biographical articles or psychoanalytical approaches to Lovecraft utilising the theories of Jung. Mosig was, like Lovecraft himself, a tremendous letter-writer, and he prodigally dispersed his comprehensive knowledge of Lovecraft to all parties; he moreover lent considerable assistance to editors and publishers overseas, so that previously unavailable material by and about Lovecraft began appearing in translation. I can attest that Mosig was the most significant influence on my own understanding of Lovecraft, even though my views have departed from his in some particulars. Perhaps Mosig's greatest failing was, paradoxically, his enthusiasm: he was so taken with Lovecraft that he could see few flaws in either his character or his work (he defended even Lovecraft's poetry). Around 1978, a variety of personal difficulties led to Mosig's abrupt departure from the field.

But by this time several others had, through Mosig's influence, become interested in Lovecraft. One of the leading figures was Donald R. Burleson, a professor of mathematics and English who began writing careful studies of the topographical and literary sources behind Lovecraft's tales. This phase of his work culminated in *H. P. Lovecraft: A Critical Study* (1983), still perhaps the single best overview of Lovecraft's work. From this point on, however, Burleson developed radically and controversially into a deconstructionist critic who keenly probed Lovecraft by means of the most contemporary and sophisticated critical tools available; and his monograph, *Lovecraft: Disturbing the Universe* (University Press of Kentucky, 1990), remains the most challenging book yet written on Lovecraft.

Barton L. St Armand, professor of English at Brown University, took a more orthodox academic approach but produced no less scintillating results. He had already written an admirable master's thesis on Lovecraft at Brown (1966), and went on to produce such fine pieces as "Facts in the Case of H. P. Lovecraft" (1972; on *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward*), "H. P. Lovecraft: New England Decadent" (1974; a study of Lovecraft's fusion of

Puritanism and Decadence), and *The Roots of Horror in the Fiction of H. P. Lovecraft* (1977), a long study of "The Rats in the Walls." St Armand's work is distinguished for its literary polish and its critical sophistication, and must be pondered deeply by all students of Lovecraft.

Not all work, academic or otherwise, was quite this meritorious. Such things as John Taylor Gatto's Monarch Notes study of Lovecraft (1977) and Darrell Schweitzer's *The Dream Quest of H. P. Lovecraft* (1978) are scarcely worth the paper they are printed on. Less contemptible is Philip A. Shreffler's *H. P. Lovecraft Companion* (1977), although it is largely a series of plot summaries of Lovecraft's stories and an annotated glossary of characters and places cited in the fiction.

By this time my own work was beginning to see fruition. I had initially begun by assembling a volume reprinting important critical statements on Lovecraft from the 1940s to the 1970s, *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism* (1980), which appears to have been the first work on Lovecraft from an academic publisher. The next year my bibliography of Lovecraft and Lovecraft criticism—compiled with the assistance of many individuals in the Lovecraft community, especially Mosig and David E. Schultz—was published. During this time, while attending Brown University, I had begun a comparison of the manuscripts of Lovecraft's entire work—but chiefly his fiction—with the published editions, finding to my horror thousands of errors in the standard Arkham House editions of the tales. After protracted negotiations with Arkham House, I finally arranged for the publication of corrected texts of Lovecraft's fiction, which emerged in four volumes over five years: *The Dunwich Horror and Others* (1984), *At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels* (1985), *Dagon and Other Macabre Tales* (1986), and *The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions* (1989). If anything I have done on Lovecraft deserves to survive, it is this edition; for it makes possible the analysis of Lovecraft's work based upon what he actually wrote.

The specialty publisher Necronomicon Press, founded by Marc A. Michaud in 1976, offered an abundant forum for much of my work and the work of other Lovecraft scholars. The journal *Lovecraft Studies,* founded in 1979, generated considerable work of value. The press also issued a good number of Lovecraft's obscure or unpublished works in small pamphlets (notably David E. Schultz's landmark critical edition of the *Commonplace Book* [1987]), as well as several important monographs, among them

Kenneth W. Faig, Jr's *The Parents of Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (1990) and Richard D. Squires's study of the Lovecraft family in Rochester (1995).

In 1981 Robert M. Price founded the fanzine *Crypt of Cthulhu* as a kind of lighter version of *Lovecraft Studies;* nevertheless, much valuable work appeared in its pages, especially by Price himself, who examined the "Cthulhu Mythos" from his academic perspective as a professor of religious studies. Lately, however, Price has become convinced that Derleth's conception of the mythos is not all wrong; he has also become, incongruously, a deconstructionist. His later work has accordingly not been well received.

Lovecraft Studies and *Crypt of Cthulhu* afforded a forum for the most significant Lovecraft criticism of the 1980s, including Steven J. Mariconda's studies of Lovecraft's prose style, Paul Montelone's philosophical studies of Lovecraft's tales, and fine papers on a variety of topics by Mike Ashley, Peter Cannon, Stefan Dziemianowicz, Jason C. Eckhardt, Norman R. Gayford, Robert H. Waugh, and others.

Much of the recent work on Lovecraft achieved a sort of symbolic culmination in 1990, the centennial of his birth. During this time several important books emerged from academic presses: Peter Cannon's *H. P. Lovecraft* (1989) for Twayne's United States Authors Series; Burleson's *Lovecraft: Disturbing the Universe;* my *H. P. Lovecraft: The Decline of the West* (Starmont House, 1990). The H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference, taking place at Brown University on August 17–19, brought together nearly all the leading scholars in the field as well as some from overseas. The proceedings of the conference were published the next year, as was an important anthology of original essays, *An Epicure in the Terrible,* edited by David E. Schultz and myself and published by Fairleigh Dickinson University Press.

The centennial conference was such an epochal event that it seemed to result in a kind of exhaustion among Lovecraft scholars. In the past decade relatively little criticism of great substance has appeared. Part of this dearth is the result of the nearly simultaneous collapse of *Lovecraft Studies* (which became highly irregular after 1999 and was defunct by 2005) and *Crypt of Cthulhu* (which came to an end in 2003). Efforts to revive both these journals have so far come to nothing, and I have now begun a new publication, *The Lovecraft Annual* (2007f.), although its infrequent appearance cannot generate sustained interest. In the meantime, other

scholars have come to the fore. The critically acclaimed French writer Michel Houellebecq published a lively if controversial volume, *H. P. Lovecraft: Contre le monde, contre la vie* (1991), contending (falsely to my mind) that Lovecraft's racism is central to his world view and to his fiction; it was translated into English in 2005 as *H. P. Lovecraft: Against the World, Against Life.* Arkham House can take pride in the issuance of Peter Cannon's superbly edited *Lovecraft Remembered* (1998), a virtually definitive collection of memoirs of Lovecraft. The Finnish scholar Timo Airaksinen has issued a dense but idiosyncratic study, *The Philosophy of H. P. Lovecraft* (1999), while Robert H. Waugh has gathered his Lovecraftian essays in *The Monster in the Mirror: Looking for H. P. Lovecraft* (2006). David E. Schultz and I wrote what we hope is a helpful reference work, *An H. P. Lovecraft Encyclopedia* (2001). Scholars in France (William Schnabel, Philippe Gindre), Italy (Pietro Guarriello, Lorenzo Mastropierro), and Germany (Marco Frenschkowski, Joachim Körber) continue to do outstanding work.

But if Lovecraft criticism has to some extent lagged, the publication and dissemination of his work worldwide has reached levels that even the scholars of the 1970s could not have imagined. Shortly after the publication of *H. P. Lovecraft: A Life* (1996), I was approached by Penguin Books to prepare annotated editions of Lovecraft's stories for Penguin Classics. Three such volumes appeared, in 1999, 2001, and 2004; nearly simultaneously, two volumes of *The Annotated H. P. Lovecraft* appeared from Dell in 1997 and 1999. The Penguin editions no doubt laid the groundwork for the epochal appearance of a volume of Lovecraft's *Tales* in the Library of America in 2005—a volume that sold 25,000 copies within a few months. Lovecraft's enshrinement in the American canon can be said to have become definitive with the publication of this book. While a few reviews (mostly in right-wing venues such as the *New Criterion*) continued to carp at Lovecraft in the manner of Edmund Wilson, the great majority of reviewers welcomed his ascent into the company of Melville, Fitzgerald, and Faulkner. Simultaneously, the Modern Library issued a slim volume of what it termed the "definitive" text of *At the Mountains of Madness,* along with "Supernatural Horror in Literature." Ballantine/Del Rey has, of course, continued to issue both mass-market and trade paperbacks of Lovecraft's work, the latter beginning with the egregiously subtitled *The Best of H. P. Lovecraft: Bloodcurdling Tales of Horror and the Macabre* (1982) and

continuing to the present day; but unlike the Penguins or the Library of America edition, the Ballantine editions continue to reprint the corrupt Arkham House texts.

Meanwhile, other bodies of Lovecraft's work have appeared. My edition of *The Ancient Track: Complete Poetical Works,* originally scheduled for publication by Necronomicon Press, was issued by Night Shade Books in 2001. I edited Lovecraft's *Collected Esssays* (2004–06) in five volumes for Hippocampus Press.

The last frontier in the publication of Lovecraft's work is the issuance of his thousands of letters. While the *Selected Letters* was a prodigious enterprise, it quickly became clear to David E. Schultz—who had begun the electronic transcription of Lovecraft's letters so early as 1990—and myself that the only sensible way to issue Lovecraft's letters was to group them by individual correspondent. Necronomicon Press began such an undertaking by issuing the letters to Richard F. Searight (1992), Robert Bloch (1993), and others, but the project foundered soon thereafter. Schultz and I released two volumes of letters—*Mysteries of Time and Spirit* (2002) and *Letters from New York* (2005)—with Night Shade Books, along with two volumes —*Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner* (2003) and *Letters to Alfred Galpin* (2005) —with Hippocampuss Press; *O Fortunate Floridian: H. P. Lovecraft's Letters to R. H. Barlow* appeared in 2007 from University of Tampa Press, which also issued a radically expanded and updated version of my bibliography of Lovecraft in 2009. We are now undertaking the ambitious programme of editing the entirety of Lovecraft's correspondence, in an estimated twenty-five volumes, with Hippocampus; the first four volumes of this informal series, *Essential Solitude: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and August Derleth* and *A Means to Freedom: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard,* appeared in 2008 and 2009, respectively.

Foreign publications have been even more impressive. A meticulously edited four-volume edition of Lovecraft's *Tutti i racconti* (1989–92), prepared by Giuseppe Lippi, is only one of several competing "collected" editions of Lovecraft's work. In Germany, a ten-volume *Gesammelte Werke* (1999–2004) has appeared. A four-volume Greek collected edition (1990) has also appeared. There have been dozens of editions in Spain and Latin America, as well as in such languages as Bengali, Turkish, Hungarian, Estonian, Catalan, Portuguese, Russian, and Polish. There is no question

that Lovecraft is now a figure in world literature, and is likely to remain there for some time.

Lovecraft is remarkable in continuing to appeal on both a scholarly and a popular level. One sign of the latter is the widespread distribution of a role-playing game, *The Call of Cthulhu,* first issued by Chaosium, Inc. in 1981 and continuing to the present day with many additions and modifications. While it is somewhat incongruous to adapt Lovecraft's sophisticated, atmospheric tales to the somewhat mechanical action format of a role-playing game, this venture has at least brought Lovecraft to the attention of many young people who might not otherwise have been exposed to his work. More recently, Chaosium published a number of anthologies of "Cthulhu Mythos" tales edited by Robert M. Price; Price also compiled other anthologies for another small press, Fedogan & Bremer, which also issued two volumes of pastiches of Lovecraft's "The Shadow over Innsmouth" edited by Stephen Jones. It cannot be said that much of the material in these volumes is of towering literary value, but it at least keeps Lovecraft's name alive. Another volume, *Lovecraft's Legacy* (1990), edited by Robert E. Weinberg and Martin H. Greenberg, contains a few stories of merit. Arkham House's James Turner produced a revised version of Derleth's *Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos* (1990), following up Ramsey Campbell's innovative *New Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos* (1980), and then edited the innovative anthology *Cthulhu 2000* (1995). Two of the most striking recent works of Lovecraftian fiction are William Browning Spencer's *Résumé with Monsters* (1995) and Donald Tyson's enormous *Alhazred* (2006); the former is a complex novel of Lovecraftian obsession, and the latter is a compulsively readable biographical fantasy about the author of the *Necronomicon.*

Indeed, Mythos writing has proliferated to such an extent—chiefly through such venues as Mythos Books (which has issued sound work by such writers as Stanley C. Sargent, Gary Myers, Michael Cisco, and others), Hippocampus Press (see the work of W. H. Pugmire, perhaps the leading Lovecraftian author writing today), and others—that even the otherwise censorious S. T. Joshi, whose *The Rise and Fall of the Cthulhu Mythos* (2008) was in part intended to inhume the more unworthy pastiches of Lovecraft's work, was tempted to assemble *Black Wings: New Tales of Lovecraftian Horror* (PS Publishing, 2010). My purpose in compiling this

volume—whose most notable contributions include stories by such leading contemporary writers as Caitlín R. Kiernan, Jonathan Thomas, Nicholas Royle, Laird Barron, and Michael Shea—is to present less obvious and more searching imitations or adaptations of Lovecraft's ideas. Whether I have succeeded is for readers to determine.

Rather less reputably, occultists of various stripes have embraced Lovecraft in the belief—already evinced by Lovecraft's strange colleague William Lumley—that he either literally believed in the reality of Cthulhu, Yog-Sothoth, etc., or, while consciously denying such things, was tapping various mystical sources of knowledge through his subconscious. Much of this work is pathetically inaccurate and fails to take cognisance of Lovecraft's materialist philosophy—or, rather, while taking outward cognisance of it, has a ready-made excuse for ignoring it (Lovecraft saw the truth but couldn't admit it even to himself!). Such work begins as early as Lovecraft's French enthusiast Jacques Bergier, who discusses Lovecraft in a work written with Louis Pauwels entitled *Le Matin des magicians* (1959; translated as *The Morning of the Magicians*). Kenneth Grant and others have traced fanciful relationships between Lovecraft and Aleister Crowley.

The occultists have been unusually fascinated with the *Necronomicon,* which they refuse to believe is mythical. As if to fulfil their expectations, a man going by the name of Simon has actually written a book entitled *The Necronomicon: The Book of Dead Names* (1977), using one of the several false derivations of the Greek word. This book, first published in an oversize hardcover format that makes it look uncannily like a high-school yearbook, has also appeared in paperback. Not to be outdone, other individuals have issued books bearing the name *Necronomicon,* although most of these are conscious hoaxes. One such volume, published by Owlswick Press in 1976, purports to be the original Arabic text of the hideous tome; but in fact it consists of about three pages of Aramaic script repeated over and over again. The artist H. R. Giger has produced a spectacular collection of his art under the title *Necronomicon* (1977). His set designs for the science fiction film *Alien* (1979) are markedly Lovecraftian. The best of the fake *Necronomicons* is one produced under the editorship of George Hay (1978), with a long, exquisitely tongue-in-cheek introduction by Colin Wilson. This volume has been translated into French and Italian.

One of the most interesting developments in recent years is the emergence of Lovecraft as a character in fiction. By far the best works of this kind are two by the leading Lovecraft scholar Peter Cannon. The first, *Pulptime* (1984), is a delightful novella in which Lovecraft, Frank Long, and the Kalems become involved with the aged Sherlock Holmes. The second, *The Lovecraft Chronicles* (2004), is a richly evocative work that imagines the transformation of Lovecraft's life and career if he had actually issued a volume with Knopf in 1933. Richard A. Lupoff's *Lovecraft's Book* (1985) is substantially less interesting, being marred by a poor understanding of the details of Lovecraft's life. Many short stories using Lovecraft as a character have also been written. The volume was presented in a radically abridged version upon first publication, and Lupoff has recently printed his unabridged text under its original title, *Marblehead* (2007).

In the arcane realm of Lovecraftian humour Peter Cannon has also excelled. *Scream for Jeeves* (1994) is a series of three stories exquisitely mingling the styles and themes of Lovecraft and (of all people) P. G. Wodehouse. Cannon's other works of Lovecraftian humour are collected in *Forever Azathoth and Other Horrors* (1999).

Another noteworthy phenomenon is the persistent interest in Lovecraft exhibited by a select group of mainstream writers, especially those whose work is on the borderline of the fantastic. The chief figure here is Jorge Luis Borges. In his slim monograph, *An Introduction to American Literature,* first published in Spanish in 1967 and translated into English in 1971, Borges devoted as much space to Lovecraft as he does to Poe, Hawthorne, or Faulkner. His remarks were at times curious: "He studiously imitated the style of Poe with its sonorities and pathos, and he wrote co[s]mic nightmares [*orig:* "pesadillas cosmicas"]."[57] Borges then wrote a story, "There Are More Things," subtitled "To the Memory of H. P. Lovecraft." This appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly* for July 1975 and was reprinted in *The Book of Sand* (1977), in the afterword to which he somewhat uncharitably calls Lovecraft "an unconscious parodist of Poe."[58] An interesting case has been made that Thomas Pynchon's *Crying of Lot 49* (1966) was in part influenced by "The Call of Cthulhu."[59] John Updike mentions a Mr and Mrs Lovecraft in *The Witches of Eastwick* (1984), set in Rhode Island, and Lovecraft comes in for mention in various of Paul Theroux's travel writings. Umberto Eco dropped a reference to Cthulhu into

Foucault's Pendulum (Italian edition 1988; English translation 1989), and includes a few more references in his Charles Eliot Norton lectures, *Six Walks in the Fictional Woods* (1994). Woody Allen made a joking reference to Lovecraft in a humorous piece in the *New Republic* for April 23, 1977 ("The Lunatic's Tale"), while S. J. Perelman made a mention in "Is There a Writer in the House?" (*New Yorker,* March 20, 1978). A little more ambiguously, Gore Vidal claimed that Norman Mailer's novel *Ancient Evenings* was a cross between Lovecraft and James Michener.[60] It is not clear that this remark was meant to praise any of the writers in question. In a sense these references seem to be made precisely because Lovecraft retains a kind of "famous obscurity": while many readers now know his name, they know little about him; and the very citation of his name—which many, from Lovecraft's own day to the present, have considered so piquant as to be a pseudonym—can help create an ambiance of strangeness or sardonic humour.

Media adaptations have picked up in recent years, although their quality is very variable. After "Pickman's Model" and "Cool Air" appeared on successive weeks in Rod Serling's "Night Gallery" television series (December 1 and 8, 1971), little work was done for over a decade. Then, spectacularly, Stuart Gordon and Brian Yuzna released a gaudy film entitled *H. P. Lovecraft's Re-Animator* (1985). Let it pass that one of Lovecraft's worst stories was chosen for adaptation: it was only as a springboard for an entertaining, if insubstantial, display of reanimated corpses performing the most surprising activities. The film contained a considerable amount of good humour, something unfortunately lacking in its loose sequel, *H. P. Lovecraft's From Beyond* (1986). But the series returned to form with *Bride of Re-Animator* (1990; directed by Yuzna alone), an outrageously hilarious venture that is more faithful to the original story than the first film. Gordon has gone on to adapt several other Lovecraft stories, including the oddly titled *Dagon* (2002), in reality an adaptation of "The Shadow over Innsmouth." *The Curse* (1987), an adaptation of "The Colour out of Space" directed by David Keith, is surprisingly effective in spite of the fact that the setting has been transferred to the South. But such potboilers as *The Unnamable* (1988) and its several spinoffs and *The Lurking Fear* (1994) had best be passed over in merciful silence. Somewhat better is *The Resurrected* (1992), a tolerably faithful adaptation of *The Case of Charles Dexter Ward.*

One striking performance is *Cast a Deadly Spell,* an HBO television special aired in 1991; it was initially going to be called *Lovecraft.* In this highly effective two-hour film, Fred Ward plays a tough private eye, H. Phil Lovecraft, who in an alternate-world Los Angeles is on the hunt for the Old Ones. Although not explicitly based on any single Lovecraft story, this program—in spite of its occasional lapses into self-parody—comes surprisingly close to capturing the essence of Lovecraft. A sequel to this telecast had very little Lovecraftian content.

Some of the most effective "Lovecraftian" films are those that are only inspired by Lovecraft rather than based on a specific work. John Carpenter has frequently acknowledged his admiration for Lovecraft, and this is very evident in such of his films as *The Fog* (Rank/Avco Embassy, 1979) and *The Thing* (Universal, 1982). The latter draws heavily upon *At the Mountains of Madness,* as is fitting given that it is an adaptation of John W. Campbell's "Who Goes There?" Carpenter's *In the Mouth of Madness* (1995) is laced with Lovecraftian motifs and conceptions. The Italian directors Dario Argento and Lucio Fulci also make frequent nods to Lovecraft in their films.

Lovecraft is now the focal point of such interest in the film community that an H. P. Lovecraft Film Festival is held annually in October in Portland, Oregon. Its organiser, Andrew Migliore, and John Strysik have compiled the splendid volume, *The Lurker in the Lobby* (1999; rev. ed. 2005), a comprehensive guide to Lovecraft-related films. Lurker Films has also issued a number of effective DVDs of Lovecraftian films and television segments.

There have also been a fair number of comic book adaptations in recent years, some passable, some quite otherwise. One of the best is a fine rendering of "The Call of Cthulhu" by the British artist John Coulthart, included in the otherwise very uneven Lovecraft tribute volume, *The Starry Wisdom* (1994), edited by D. M. Mitchell.

An entirely different issue of immense complexity is that of Lovecraft's influence upon subsequent weird and science fiction. I now do not refer to actual pastiches or "Cthulhu Mythos" tales; it should be evident by now that these do not amount to much. It was Lovecraft's bad luck to have attracted, by and large, self-styled disciples whose actual literary talents were pretty slim. And yet, although Lovecraft is now recognised as the dominant voice

in American weird fiction during the first half of the century, his influence is perhaps less than one might think it to be; but the explanation for this lies not with his own work as with the tendencies in fantastic fiction since his death.

For a variety of reasons, the pulp magazines suffered a slow death following the end of World War II. The paperback book took off at this time, and such fields as mystery fiction and science fiction did well in this new venue; for some reason, weird fiction did not. Of course, weird fiction had never been written in any great quantity, and for most of its long run *Weird Tales* remained the only magazine devoted solely to horror. But after the war writers largely abandoned the weird and went into the neighouring fields of mystery and science fiction instead. This is typified by Lovecraft's two leading protégés, Robert Bloch and Fritz Leiber.

Bloch's stories of the 1940s continued to draw upon Lovecraft sporadically, but gradually he turned his attention to the crime or suspense story. *The Scarf* (1947), *Psycho* (1959), and *The Dead Beat* (1960) are what give Bloch his deservedly high place in this field, and they exhibit little if any Lovecraft influence. Later on, of course, Bloch did write an affectionate homage to Lovecraft in the short novel *Strange Eons* (1977), but this is an avowed pastiche and, although more substantial than some other works of its kind, does not rank high in literary merit. Bloch continued to write about Lovecraft throughout his career, but his fictional work is in many ways quite consciously un-Lovecraftian except in his absorption of Lovecraft's strictures (expressed in his early letters) toward restraint and suggestion rather than flamboyance and excess.

Leiber's case is still more interesting. Although he too wrote a fine Lovecraft pastiche late in his career, "The Terror from the Depths" (1976), the Lovecraft influence manifests itself much more subtly in the rest of his work. Several stories in his first collection, *Night's Black Agents* (1947), utilise Lovecraftian themes, but in such a way that they remain Leiber's own work. "The Sunken Land" is influenced by several Lovecraft stories, but chiefly "The Call of Cthulhu"; "Diary in the Snow" reflects some conceptions from "The Shadow out of Time" and "The Whisperer in Darkness"; even Leiber's famous "Smoke Ghost" may be drawn in part from Lovecraft's conception of Nyarlathotep. The novel *Conjure Wife* (1953) might perhaps be thought to reflect "The Dreams in the Witch House" in its "updating" of the witchcraft theme, but the relation is quite

tenuous. In effect, Leiber has learnt much by Lovecraft's example, and in his early career he was perhaps so saturated with Lovecraft's work that some elements emerged subconsciously. None of these tales can by any stretch of the imagination be called pastiches; they are emphatically original, but with key elements borrowed or adapted from Lovecraft.

But beyond this, there is little concrete influence of Lovecraft upon later work in the field. This is largely because weird writers chose to go into a very different direction from the visionary cosmicism of Lovecraft, Machen, and Blackwood. The emphasis became focused upon the mundane, and the incursion of the weird into an ordinary scenario. In some cases this resulted in utter flatness and lack of imagination; but in the best writers it produced work that was very close to the better mainstream work. Perhaps the leading American writer of weird fiction of the 1940s and 1950s—although she was never considered a "horror writer"—was Shirley Jackson (1916–1965), but neither her short stories nor her novels (notably *The Haunting of Hill House,* 1959) exhibit the least trace of Lovecraftian influence. Both Charles Beaumont or Richard Matheson, two other significant figures of this period, surely read Lovecraft (Beaumont wrote the screenplay to *The Haunted Palace*), but their work too reveals few traces of Lovecraft. In England, Robert Aickman's superb "strange stories" of the 1960s and 1970s owe almost nothing to Lovecraft, but are in the tradition of the British ghost story of M. R. James and the psychological ghost story of Walter de la Mare and L. P. Hartley.

When the "horror boom" began in the 1970s, its most popular practitioner, Stephen King, brought Lovecraft back to the forefront with such stories as "Jerusalem's Lot" (in *Night Shift,* 1978), an avowed pastiche. King's other novels and tales drop references to Lovecraft from time to time, and he has spoken of him with tolerable kindness in his informal critical survey of the field, *Danse Macabre* (1981); but the whole tenor of King's work—with its emphasis on family relationships, very conventional supernaturalism (much of it derived from previous works in the field, movies, and comic books), and psychological aberrations—is antipodal to Lovecraft. The other bestselling writers—Clive Barker, Peter Straub, Anne Rice—similarly owe little to Lovecraft, although Rice's *The Tale of the Body Thief* (1992) explicitly cites "The Thing on the Doorstep" and may have been partly inspired by it. Straub wrote an avowed take-off of

"The Dunwich Horror" in the novel *Mr. X* (1999), but it is at best an indifferent success.

Ramsey Campbell's later work shows traces of Lovecraft, especially such novels as *The Hungry Moon* (1986), *Midnight Sun* (1990), and *The Darkest Part of the Woods* (2002). But Campbell's vision, too, is generally lacking in cosmicism, and his dominant work is emphatically oriented toward the anomalies inherent in neurosis (in this sense the chilling non-supernatural novel *The Face That Must Die* [1979] is his most characteristic work, and one of his best) or in the complexities of human relationships, which Campbell treats with a deftness and sensitivity far superior to the maudlin sentimentalism of King. And yet, Campbell has recently assembled all the Lovecraft-inspired tales written over his entire career in *Cold Print* (1993);[61] it is a surprisingly large volume.

One of the most interesting cases is T. E. D. Klein. As a senior at Brown University he wrote a penetrating if discursive honours thesis on Lovecraft and Lord Dunsany, then went on to write some of the most distinguished weird fiction of his generation. Such works as "The Events at Poroth Farm" (1972) and its novel-length expansion, *The Ceremonies* (1984), have a pervasive but very attenuated Lovecraft influence while remaining emphatically Klein's own work. Klein retains an admiration for Lovecraft, but his only avowed "Cthulhu Mythos" tale is "Black Man with a Horn" (in Campbell's *New Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos*), a powerful piece of work that is much more Klein than Lovecraft. His lack of productivity in recent years is one of the tragedies of modern weird fiction. Another writer who has sadly fallen silent is Thomas Ligotti, whose "The Last Feast of Harlequin" (published in 1990 but written many years earlier) is a striking evocation of Lovecraft; other of Ligotti's works also feature a persistent if nebulous Lovecraftian undercurrent, but this most distinctive of contemporary horror writers incorporates Lovecraft as one of many influences in his work, which nonetheless remains profoundly and hallucinatingly original.

It is perhaps not a paradox to say that Lovecraft may have had more of an influence on fantasy or science fiction than upon weird fiction. This is because these former fields have taken over that cosmicism which weird fiction seems to have abandoned. However, many science fiction writers have responded to Lovecraft with considerable hostility: John Brunner, Avram Davidson, Isaac Asimov, and Damon Knight have heaped much

abuse on him, probably because of his dense style and his emphasis on pure horror. And yet, John W. Campbell, Jr—whose magazine *Unknown* (later *Unknown Worlds;* 1939–43) was consciously conceived to be as different from the Lovecraft type of tale as possible—nevertheless wrote "Who Goes There?" (1938), a novelette that, although very different from Lovecraft stylistically, clearly betrays the influence of *At the Mountains of Madness.* Traces of Lovecraft can probably be found in the work of A. E. Van Vogt, Philip K. Dick, and several other science fiction writers of the 1940s to 1970s. Ray Bradbury wrote a letter praising Lovecraft in *Weird Tales* for November 1939 ("Lovecraft again proved his wizardry of words by chilling me with a draft of 'Cool Air'"), but has admitted that he has consciously avoided imitating Lovecraft in his later work in fantasy and science fiction. Still, an influence can perhaps be found in such of his horror tales as "Skeleton" and "The Fog Horn." Arthur C. Clarke admitted to great enthusiasm for Lovecraft's two tales in *Astounding,*[62] and Lovecraft's conceptions are perhaps detectable in such of Clarke's novels as *Childhood's End* (1953) and even *2001: A Space Odyssey* (1968), with their notion (similar to that of "The Shadow out of Time") of aliens guiding the intellectual development of the human species. Gene Wolfe wrote a Lovecraft pastiche in *Lovecraft's Legacy,* and probably other Lovecraftian traces can be found in his novels. Lovecraft is a definite presence in the dark work of Charles Stross.

What is one to make of H. P. Lovecraft the man and writer? Certainly, judgments of him will differ in accordance with individual temperament. To those stolid bourgeois citizens who believe that "success" in life means working for a living, having a loving spouse and adoring children, and having a normal, wholesome outlook on life, Lovecraft will seem shiftless, freakish, and rather repulsive. Many derogations of Lovecraft's character—including those pronounced by his previous biographer—stem from this perspective. But it is to be wondered whether the remarkable literary work Lovecraft has left us—remarkable and compelling precisely because of its defiance of normality and convention—could have been written by a normal, wholesome individual whose attitudes do not depart in any way from those inculcated in us by mass "culture." Might it not also be the case that what passes for normality and wholesomeness is profoundly abnormal and unwholesome?—profoundly aberrant to the full play of intellect and

imagination that is the only means of distinguishing ourselves from the other living creatures on this planet?

It should also be stressed that one's final picture of Lovecraft must be based largely upon the last ten or so years of his existence; for it was at this time that he shed many of the prejudices and dogmatisms that his early upbringing and seclusion had engendered, and when he produced his most characteristic work. In those ten years I see very little to criticise and very much to praise. Let us then assess some key elements of Lovecraft's beliefs, personal comportment, and work.

There will scarcely be anyone who will not disagree with one or the other component of Lovecraft's philosophical thought. Some will be offended by his atheism; others by his "fascism"; others by his emphasis on cultural traditionalism; and so on. But few can deny that Lovecraft's views were well conceived, modified by constant reading and observation, and sharpened by vigorous debates with correspondents. No one wishes to claim for Lovecraft a leading place among philosophers—he remained, by his own admission, a layman in this discipline. But he pondered philosophical issues more rigorously than most creative writers, and he also made his creative work the direct outgrowth of his philosophy.

The matter of Lovecraft's erudition is worth pondering. Many of his colleagues professed amazement at his encyclopaedic knowledge, but there is some truth to the contention that many of these individuals were themselves not very learned—few people in the realms of amateur journalism or weird fiction are—and were therefore easily impressed. Nevertheless, Lovecraft did absorb a prodigious fund of knowledge over his lifetime, and was perhaps the more well-rounded precisely because of his relative lack of formal schooling, which prevented his specialising in a small number of narrow fields. He always had good library resources at his disposal, and he made good use of them. In the end, he became a near-authority on colonial architecture, eighteenth-century literature, and weird fiction, and had a thorough grasp of classical literature, philosophy, English and American history, and several other realms; most impressively, he had a keen knowledge of many sciences (especially astronomy, physics, chemistry, biology, and anthropology)—something obtrusively lacking in many creative artists. His discourses on these subjects, mostly in letters, perhaps sound the more impressive because of his tremendous *rhetorical* skill; but there is a foundation of genuine knowledge underlying them.

Lovecraft's rank as an "amateur" writer and his scorn of professionalism has rightly been seen as an outgrowth of his belief in aristocracy and his scorn of money-grubbing. Such attitudes are looked upon with vast disdain and hostility in this country, but they have been common among the educated classes throughout human history. Lovecraft began with the eighteenth-century view of art as an elegant amusement; after passing through his Decadent phase in the early 1920s, he came to believe that art was pure self-expression and that writing for money was not so much vulgar (although it was indeed that) as a business—a business, moreover, that held an unfortunate but illusory and mocking similarity to real writing. Certainly we would all like to have seen Lovecraft enjoy in his own lifetime a little more of the fame that his work has achieved since his death; but that work might never have achieved that fame had he not maintained his aesthetic integrity so keenly. Lovecraft towers above other writers of the pulp magazines, not only because of his native talent but because he refused to buckle down to editors' whims and write what they wanted or alter a tale to suit their needs. For this he should be praised, not censured. The hackwork of Seabury Quinn, E. Hoffmann Price, and hundreds of other hacks whose stories have achieved merciful oblivion is a sufficient warning of what might have happened to Lovecraft had he not held firm to his principles.

In broader terms, Lovecraft's disdain of money certainly subjected him to personal hardship, but it was hardship that he willingly underwent for the sake of his art. I see no reason to doubt that Lovecraft really did have a poor head for business, as he himself stated repeatedly. Whether this is judged a flaw of character will depend upon whether one regards the acquisition of money as in itself a good, or whether one believes that other values hold a higher moral or aesthetic worth.

Related to this is Lovecraft's inability to hold a regular job and his consequent poverty. Again, this is a very American concern, reflecting a bourgeois contempt (or envy) of those who do not operate conventionally within the narrow range of economic society. It was, certainly, unfortunate that Lovecraft never received suitable job training in young adulthood; but this was not so much his fault as that of his mother and aunts, who—with the death of Whipple Phillips in 1904 and the consequent collapse of the family finances—should have realised that Lovecraft would in the course of time need to be able to support himself. There is every indication that in the

last decade of his life he had overcome any highbrow opposition to regular work and sought—or at least hoped he could find—some means of employment that would allow him the leisure to write what he wished. That he never came upon such employment is scarcely surprising in someone who, with no previous job experience, was seeking to find work in the depression. And yet, Lovecraft worked very hard—even if most of his work was on his correspondence and on rather poorly paying freelance revision. He did manage to get by with the money earned from revision and sporadic sales of original fiction; and with this income he did travel fairly widely up and down the eastern seaboard of the United States. He went to his grave with his books, furniture, and other possessions around him to lend stability and comfort to his environment, and his wide correspondence and personal magnetism attracted a larger band of devoted friends, associates, and disciples than many more outgoing persons can claim.

And yet, even on these points—his "obsessive" need for familiar possessions, his apparent desire to keep relationships at a distance, his seeming fear of change—Lovecraft has received criticism. There are a number of very complex issues here. Lovecraft's "sense of place"—his passionate devotion to his various residences, his hometown, his region, his country, and his culture—was certainly pronounced, and it is what gives his fiction the textural depth and realism it has. I do not know that it was so pronounced as to be considered somehow pathological: at a time when frequent moving from place to place is far less common than now, many probably felt as Lovecraft did. This attachment to familiar things grew, I believe, out of an extraordinarily keen aesthetic sensibility that yearned for an harmonious and stable milieu; for it was exactly this milieu that would provide the springboard for Lovecraft's imaginative ventures into the farthest reaches of the cosmos.

As for keeping relationships at a distance, the brute fact is that Providence—then and now not a town known for its intellectuals—did not offer the sort of stimulating give-and-take of argument that his far-flung correspondence offered. Lovecraft made every effort to meet his pen friends, and indeed met a good many of those who lived on the East Coast. Many others undertook the effort and expense to visit him in Providence, something they would not likely have done had they not sensed a deep mutual regard.

The one personal relationship—aside from his troubled involvement with his mother—that was definitively a failure was his marriage to Sonia; and here, certainly, Lovecraft does leave himself open to abundant criticism. His treatment of his wife can only be called shabby. And yet, she herself seems to have gone into the marriage—as many women do—with the resolute determination to remould him to her taste, and Lovecraft naturally rebelled. He did so not because he was an "ingrained bachelor," but because he was his own person and resented not being taken for what he was. My feeling remains that it was a mistake for him to have married at all; but perhaps this was something he had to experience at first hand to realise that it was a mistake.

I scarcely imagine that Lovecraft's attitudes on sex require much discussion. Probably they were unusually reserved even in their own day, and in our oversexed society nowadays they seem little short of bizarre. Lovecraft confessed that he was among the least sensuous of individuals, but in this he was very much like his idol Poe; and, during a time of great upheavals in sexual relations, it allowed him to retain his quiet dignity of bearing and shielded him from descending to prostitution, extra-marital affairs, and other ignominies that other writers have ill resisted.

The fact is that Lovecraft made every effort to overcome, and did in fact largely overcome, the severe emotional crippling inflicted upon him by his mother—the mother who had both showered doting affection upon him and called him "hideous"; the mother who indulged him in each new whim but publicly lamented his economic uselessness; the mother who no doubt instilled in him a distaste for sex that only aided in the collapse of his marriage. It is, in fact, remarkable how sane and balanced Lovecraft became in later years—he really had been tried in the fire, both by his mother and by his New York experience, and came out pure gold. If he remained somewhat emotionally reserved, he revelled in the play of his intellect and displayed an aesthetic sensitivity—to landscape, to literature, to art, to dreams, to the pageant of history—that few have ever equalled.

His "pose" as an eighteenth-century gentleman was, in the first place, a function of his cultural conservatism and, in the second place, clearly adopted out of tongue-in-cheek humour in his later years. (Lovecraft is frequently not given sufficient credit for being a jester—whimsical or sardonic as the case may be.) He certainly believed in continuity of culture, and certainly believed that the eighteenth century represented a high-water

mark in Anglo-American culture—something on which it is not easy to dispute him. But he was flexible enough to adopt moderate socialism as the only economic solution to the problems engendered by unrestrained capitalism, and his theorisings on this issue are compelling and retain value even today. His hostility to democracy—or, rather, universal suffrage—will be less easily tolerated, since few political theorists in this country have had the courage to defy this most sacred of American dogmas; but his words on this issue also have much to recommend them.

It can scarcely be denied that cultural conservatism was a large factor in his racism. This is, without question, the one true black mark on his character; and it is so not because he was morally wrong (there might be some debate on this point) but intellectually wrong. He ascribed to views about races and cultures that were false, and that had been proven to be false before and during the course of his lifetime. It was the one area of his thought where he failed to reveal openness to new evidence. I repeat that his basic desire for a culturally homogeneous society is not in itself wrong, just as the currently fashionable view of a culturally heterogeneous society is not intrinsically and axiomatically right; there are virtues and drawbacks to each. Where Lovecraft erred was in conceiving that his simple-minded stereotypes were the product of scientific study of racial distinctions and in believing that different races and cultures were unalterably opposed and could not mix without disaster. It is possible that the highly developed aesthetic sensibility I mentioned earlier—a sensibility that craved harmony and stability—had much to do with his racial theories, or at least had much to do with the sense of discomfort he felt around racial and cultural aliens; but whatever the case, his views on the subject are embarrassing and contemptible. But they have also been blown out of proportion: discussions of race take up a relatively small proportion of his entire correspondence, and enter his creative work only fleetingly and tangentially.

Turning to Lovecraft's work, I cannot hope to offer a comprehensive assessment of it—it is too rich and complex for that—but shall only discuss some elements that are directly related to his life and thought. At its core is *cosmicism*—the depicting of the boundless gulfs of space and time and the risible insignificance of humanity within them. This is something Lovecraft expressed more powerfully than any writer before or since, and it is his one distinctive contribution to literature. And yet, his fiction has paradoxically been criticised by myopic critics precisely on the grounds that it lacks

"normal" human characters and relationships—that it is cold, impersonal, and remote. It is exactly that, and that is its great virtue. It is difficult to be cosmic and human at the same time. If one wants affecting pictures of married bliss or children at play or people working at the office, one does not turn to the fiction of Lovecraft or Poe or Bierce or any other horror writer except perhaps the soap-opera supernaturalism of Stephen King or Charles L. Grant. And yet, the poignancy with which Lovecraft's characters react to the perception of cosmic insignificance gives to his work a genuine emotional resonance. When the narrator of "The Shadow over Innsmouth" learns that he is one of the monsters he has been fleeing so ardently; when Peaslee in "The Shadow out of Time" sees the manuscript he must have written millions of years ago: there are few moments in all literature that provide a reader with such a complex network of emotions—horror, bafflement, pity, sublimity, and much else besides.

Related to this complaint about the absence of "normal" people is the claim that Lovecraft had a "tin ear for dialogue." The absence of idle chatter in his stories is another great virtue, for it not only creates a concision that only Poe has equalled, but it again shifts the focus of the tale from the human characters to where it belongs—the weird phenomenon itself, which Lovecraft knew to be the true "hero" of his tales. Lovecraft boldly challenged that most entrenched dogma of art—that human beings should necessarily and exclusively be the centre of attention in every aesthetic creation—and his defiance of the "humanocentric pose" is ineffably refreshing.

The aspect of Lovecraft's work that has caused the most controversy is his style—termed, by its critics, "turgid," "artificial," "verbose," or "labored," as the case may be. Again, it is a matter of taste and preference. Although Lovecraft admired the straightforward elegance of Addison and Swift, he knew that he himself had early absorbed writers who wrote more densely—Samuel Johnson, Edward Gibbon, Edgar Allan Poe, and later Lord Dunsany (although his prose is actually very pure and "Addisonian" in spite of its exotic subject-matter) and Arthur Machen—so that this style, though seemingly artificial, came to him naturally, as any reader of his letters can testify. There is, to be sure, an increased rhetorical element in his tales, but it is clear that the effect Lovecraft was seeking was a kind of incantation whereby the atmosphere generated by language creates an awed sense of the strange reality of the unreal. And now that the bare-bones prose

of Hemingway and Sherwood Anderson has ceased to be regarded as self-evidently the best and only correct style for all works of fiction regardless of subject, having yielded to the richness of Gore Vidal, Robertson Davies, Thomas Pynchon, and others, we are perhaps more willing than a generation ago to give Lovecraft his due as a writer in the "Asianic" style.

What makes Lovecraft's style so distinctive is its mingling of scientific precision and lush Poe-esque rhetoric. Whether one likes the result or not is strictly dependent upon one's temperament: many—especially those in the science fiction community, who are used to a more stripped-down style that emphasises ideas over atmosphere—will not like it, and that is their prerogative. But surely no reader can claim that in its final refinement—during the last ten years of his life—this style could not achieve tremendously powerful emotive effects. Lovecraft was unquestionably master, not slave, of his style. He knew exactly what he was doing. Of course it is a somewhat heavy style for those who are not used to verbal and atmospheric richness; it takes effort and intelligence to read it. Scarcely any good writer is "easy" to read. Those who call Lovecraft "verbose" because of this density of style are antipodally wrong: in fact, this density achieves incredible compactness of expression, so that even his near-novel-length works have all the unity of effect of a short story. There is rarely a wasted word in Lovecraft's best stories; and every word contributes to the final outcome.

What is remarkable about Lovecraft is that, in spite of his prodigal invention of "gods" in his fiction, his is among the most secular temperaments in all human history. Religion has no place in his world view except as a sop to the ignorant and timid. The "gods" in his tales are symbols of all that lies unknown in the boundless cosmos, and the randomness with which they can intrude violently into our own realm is a poignant reflection of the tenuousness of our fleeting and inconsequential existence. Let it pass that his imitators have failed to perceive this symbolism, or felt content to play with unwitting frivolity with the varied mythic elements in his tales; these derivative treatments can have little effect upon our valuation of Lovecraft. In David E. Schultz's felicitous formulation, Lovecraft was creating an *anti-mythology*—an imaginary mythology that mocked the very things that religion and myth claim to do for humanity. We are *not* the centre of the universe; we do *not* have a special relationship with God (because there is no God); we will vanish into

oblivion upon our deaths. It is scarcely to be wondered that many readers and writers have been unable to endure these withering conceptions.

Lovecraft was, of course, an uneven writer, as all writers are. In the works of his first decade of fiction writing there are many mediocrities, some outright failures, and some genuine triumphs ("The Rats in the Walls" being perhaps the most notable of them). But in the last decade the triumphs far outweigh the failures and mediocrities. And yet, it is still remarkable that Lovecraft's entire fictional corpus (exclusive of revisions) can be accommodated comfortably into three large volumes. No writer in the field of weird or science fiction, save Poe, has achieved such distinction and recognition on so small a body of work. But, if we are to gauge by the scholarship of the last twenty years, that work is inexhaustibly rich in substance.

Other bodies of his work, with one exception, perhaps require less attention. As an essayist Lovecraft was only occasionally effective. Certainly, his early amateur essays were of the greatest formative value in allowing him to exercise his rhetorical skills and hone his style; but they are intrinsically of little value, crippled as many of them are by dogmatism and limited perspective. Lovecraft did not write many essays in his later years—his creative energies had clearly turned to fiction—but some of these are considerable value, if only ancillary to his fiction and his general philosophy. Few have denied the value of "Supernatural Horror in Literature" both as an historical-critical study and as an index to Lovecraft's own theory and practice of fiction writing; while such other pieces as "Cats and Dogs," "Notes on Writing Weird Fiction," "Some Notes on a Nonentity," and several others are ones we would be much the poorer without.

Of Lovecraft's poetry little need be said. Even the best of it—the late verse, including *Fungi from Yuggoth,* "The Ancient Track," "The Messenger," and others—is only an adjunct to his fiction. Much of Lovecraft's early poetry is entirely forgettable, and the motive for its composition seems less aesthetic than psychological—the attempt of a man to retreat imaginatively into the eighteenth century and out of a twentieth century he loathed. Lovecraft later came to be very much a part of his time, although having great reservations—as any intelligent person would—regarding many trends that were causing what he perceived to be the decline of his civilisation; but his poetry never fully recovered. Some of his

satiric verse is tart and effective, and comes closest to the Augustan forms he strove to mimic. Long before his death Lovecraft came to realise that his proper medium was prose, and he wisely cultivated it and let his verse writing rest.

Of his letters much more must be said. It is a frequent complaint among critics that Lovecraft "wasted" his time writing so many letters when he could have been writing more stories instead. There are several false assumptions underlying this complaint. First, it assumes that Lovecraft should have led his life for us, not for himself; if he had written no stories but only letters, it would have been our loss but his prerogative. Second, it overlooks the degree to which gentlemanly courtesy—usually regarded as a positive quality—governed his actions, so that a letter received required a response. Third, it ignores Lovecraft's stated purpose behind his letter-writing—as a replacement for conversation and (especially in light of the absence of stimulating company in Providence) the vital need to expand his intellect and imagination by debating issues with individuals whose opinions differed provocatively from his own. And fourth, it assumes that Lovecraft would indeed have written more stories if he had not written so many letters, something that is not at all clear given the degree to which his fiction writing was dependent upon inspiration, mood, and positive reinforcement.

There is, finally, the very real possibility that Lovecraft's letters will come to be recognised as his greatest literary and personal achievement. It is not simply the sheer quantity of letters he wrote (no more than 10% of which probably survive) that is important, but their intellectual breadth, rhetorical flourish, emotional intimacy, and unfailing courtesy that make them among the most remarkable literary documents of their time. Horace Walpole may have gained transient fame for *The Castle of Otranto,* but his true literary greatness now properly resides in his correspondence; a similar fate may overtake Lovecraft, even though his fiction is vastly richer than Walpole's. The ideal situation, to my mind, is that Lovecraft comes to be valued equally for his tales and for his letters, something that might well occur now that his letters are being published in unabridged form.

How is one, finally, to account for the continued appeal of H. P. Lovecraft? There now seems less dispute that Lovecraft somehow belongs in the canon of American and world literature; a reviewer of Burleson's *Disturbing the Universe* remarked pointedly: "It's getting to where those

who still ignore Lovecraft will have to go on the defensive."[63] The attacks of Edmund and Colin Wilson have been forgotten, and Lovecraft is cited in encyclopaedias and other reference works with some cordiality.

But why do people read Lovecraft at all, and what leads a good many of them to develop a kind of compulsive fascination with both his work and the man himself? There is no denying that Lovecraft appeals on many levels, to many differing types of readers, from teenage boys to college professors to highbrow novelists. For young boys, it is Lovecraft's very exoticism—the absence of those disturbing creatures, girls, and the family scenario altogether; the depiction of boundless space, not in the science-fictional sense of a place of infinite possibilities for human action but of infinite horror and dread; the apparent luridness of some of his monsters, from fish-frogs to ten-foot cones to humans degenerating into cannibals; a prose style that can seem hallucinatory as a drug-delirium—that seems to cast an ineffable appeal; and there is still the half-mythical figure of Lovecraft himself, the gaunt "eccentric recluse" who slept during the day and wrote all night. As one matures, one sees different things in Lovecraft the man and writer—the philosophical depth underlying the surface luridness of his work; the dignity, courtesy, and intellectual breadth of his temperament; his complex role in the political, economic, social, and cultural trends of his age. Perhaps it is useless, and foolish, to deny that Lovecraft is an oddity—neither he nor his work is "normal" in any conventional sense, and much of the fascination that continues to surround him resides exactly in this fact. But both his supporters and his detractors would do well to examine the facts about both his life and his work, and also the perspective from which they make their own pronouncements and evaluations of his character. He was a human being like any of us—neither a lunatic nor a superman. He had his share of flaws and virtues. But he is dead now, and no amount of praise or blame will have any effect upon the course of his life. His work alone remains.

Notes

Chapter 1: Unmixed English Ancestry

1. HPL to FBL, [November 1927] (*SL* 2.179).
2. *SL* 2.182 (note 1).
3. See Kenneth W. Faig, Jr., "Quae Amamus Tuemur: Ancestors in Lovecraft's Life and Fiction," in Faig's *The Unknown Lovecraft* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2009), 20.
4. Ibid., 20–21.
5. HPL to RHB, [19 March 1934] (*SL* 4.392).
6. I am grateful to Suzanne Juta and to Oliver Watson, Curator of Ceramics and Glass at the Victoria and Albert Museum, for this information.
7. Longfellow, "The Luck of Edenhall," *The Poems of Longfellow* (New York: Illustrated Modern Library, 1944), 438–40.
8. See *Dictionary of National Biography* 6.1270–71.
9. HPL to AD, 5 June 1936 (*SL* 5.263).
10. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.360).
11. HPL to MWM, 1 January 1915 (*SL* 1.7).
12. Faig, "Quae Amamus Tuemur," 22.
13. See Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, *Moshassuck Review* (May Eve 1992): 29.
14. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, *Moshassuck Review* (Halloween 1991): 14.
15. Ibid., 28.
16. Faig, "Quae Amamus Tuemur," 30.
17. *SL* 1.5 (note 11).
18. I am grateful to Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, and A. Langley Searles for this information. For further data on Lovecraft's paternal ancestry, see Docherty, Searles, and Faig, *Devonshire Ancestry of Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 2003).
19. *SL* 1.7 (note 11).
20. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.296).
21. *SL* 1.6 (note 11).
22. Obituary of Whipple V. Phillips, *Providence Journal* (31 March 1904).
23. *SL* 1.6 (note 11).
24. HPL spells his maternal grandmother's first name as "Rhoby," but Robie is given on the central shaft of the Phillips plot at Swan Point Cemetery in Providence.

25. HPL to Helen Sully, 26 July 1936 (ms., JHL).

26. Casey B. Tyler, *Historical Reminiscences, of Foster, Rhode Island,* first published c. 1884 in the *Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner* and in a revised form in the same newspaper in 1892–93; rpt. in *Early Historical Accounts of Foster, Rhode Island,* ed. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1993), 100–101.

27. In a letter to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.88) HPL states that Whipple Phillips's last two children were born in Greene, which would date Whipple's arrival to around 1864; but the 1860 U.S. census already lists the family at Greene.

28. Ibid.

29. Henry W. Rugg, *History of Freemasonry in Rhode Island* (Providence: E. L. Freeman & Son, 1895), 553. I am grateful to Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, for bringing this work to my attention.

30. Ibid., 554.

31. *SL* 3.363 (note 10).

32. *SL* 2.83 (note 27).

33. Tyler, in Faig, *Early Historical Accounts of Foster, Rhode Island,* 101. Faig reports that the typescript of this work at the Rhode Island Historical Society renders the name as Hugog, but the published version prints it as Hugag.

34. *Early Historical Accounts of Foster, Rhode Island,* 112.

35. *SL* 2.88 (note 27).

36. HPL dates the move to 1873 at *SL* 1.6 (note 11), but Whipple Phillips's obituary (note 22) unequivocally states that it occurred in 1874; moreover, Whipple does not appear in the Providence city directory until 1875, arguing for a settlement in 1874. For this information, and much else on Whipple Phillips, I am much indebted to the work of Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, most recently his *Some of the Descendants of Asaph Phillips and Esther Whipple of Foster, Rhode Island* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1993).

37. *Reports of the United States Commissioners to the Paris Universal Exposition 1878* (Washington, DC: Government Printing Office, 1880), 1.341.

38. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.33).

39. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 13 January 1934 (*SL* 4.344).

40. See Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, "Whipple V. Phillips and the Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company" (*Owyhee Outpost,* May 1988); rpt. *The Unknown*

Lovecraft, 50–55.

41. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 31 January 1934 (*SL* 4.350).

42. See note 39.

43. All three letters are at JHL. Mrs Ethel Phillips Morrish had in her possession another letter from Whipple Phillips to Lovecraft, but I am uncertain of its date or point of origin.

44. *SL* 4.351 (note 41).

45. Arthur S. Koki, "H. Lovecraft: An Introduction to His Life and Writings" (M.A. thesis: Columbia University, 1962), 3.

46. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924 (ms., JHL).

47. H. Smith, "Growth of Public Education," in Edward Field, ed., *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century: A History* (Boston: Mason Publishing Co., 1902), 2.368–69.

48. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, *The Parents of Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990), 23, 25.

49. *SL* 1.33 (note 38).

50. Faig, *Parents,* 40.

51. *SL* 1.6 (note 11).

52. *SL* 1.29 (note 38).

53. Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 134.

54. *SL* 1.33–34 (note 38).

55. R. Alain Everts believes that she was educated at the Wheeler School in Providence.

56. Sarah Susan Lovecraft, *Commonplace Book* (ms., JHL).

57. Faig, *Parents,* 40.

58. Clara Hess in the *Providence Journal* (19 September 1948); quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 32.

59. Clara Hess in AD, "Lovecraft's Sensitivity" (1949); quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 33.

60. See Richard D. Squires, *Stern Fathers 'neath the Mould: The Lovecraft Family in Rochester* (1995).

61. *SL* 1.5 (note 11).

62. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2005), 65 (this portion not printed in *SL*).

63. William G. McLoughlin, *Rhode Island: A Bicentennial History* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1978), 123.

64. Sonia H. Davis, *The Private Life of H. P. Lovecraft,* ed. S. T. Joshi (West Warwick, RI: 1985; rev. 1992), 7.

65. Koki, 4.

66. I am grateful to John H. Stanley of JHL, Brown University, for this information. The library is now the repository for the papers of the Providence branch of the Gorham Company, but it does not have the papers of the New York branch.

67. *SL* 1.296 (note 20).

Chapter 2: A Genuine Pagan

1.. See McLoughlin, *Rhode Island: A Bicentennial History,* passim.

2. On this subject see now Charles Rappleye, *Sons of Providence: The Brown Brothers, the Slave Trade, and the American Revolution* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 2006).

3. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 3 March 1927 (*SL* 2.108).

4. Charles V. Chapin, "Epidemics and Medical Institutions," in Field, *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century,* 2.57–58.

5. HPL to AEPG, 19 August 1921 (*SL* 1.147).

6. Chapin, in *Field, State of Rhode Island,* 2.66.

7. HPL to MWM, 1 January 1915 (*SL* 1.6).

8. HPL to RHB, [24 May 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian: H. P. Lovecraft's Letters to R. H. Barlow* (Tampa: University of Tampa Press, 2007), 271.

9. HPL to LDC, 24 August 1925 (ms., JHL).

10. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.31).

11. *SL* 1.6 (note 7).

12. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.296).

13. HPL to JVS, 19[–31?] July 1931 (*SL* 3.383).

14. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.354).

15. Cited in Faig, *Parents,* 8. There are no allusions to the Lovecrafts in the two-volume *Letters of Louise Imogen Guiney* (1926).

16. See Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, "The Friendship of Louise Imogen Guiney and Sarah Susan Phillips," in The *Unknown Lovecraft,* 70–86.

17. *SL* 2.107 (note 3).

18. "Medical Record of Winfield Scott Lovecraft," *LS* No. 24 (Spring 1991): 15.

19. *SL* 1.6 (note 7).

20. *SL* 1.33 (note 10).

21. *SL* 1.32 (note 10).

22. H. Smith, in Field, *State of Rhode Island,* 2.385.

23. Sister Mary Adorita, *Soul Ordained to Fail: (Louise Imogen Guiney: 1861–1920)* (New York: Pageant Press, 1962), 8.

24. Henry G. Fairbanks, *Louise Imogen Guiney: Laureate of the Lost* (Albany, NY: Magi Books, 1972), 2.

25. See Faig (note 16), 83.

26. *SL* 1.32 (note 10).

27. Cited in E. M. Tenison, *Louise Imogen Guiney: Her Life and Works 1861–1920* (London: Macmillan, 1923), 57–58.

28. Tenison, 29.

29. HPL to AD, [January 1930] (*SL* 2.100).

30. *SL* 1.33 (note 10).

31. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 66.

32. HPL to REH, 4 October 1930 (*SL* 3.184).

33. HPL to RK, 2 February 1916 (*SL* 1.20).

34. *SL* 1.296 (note 12).

35. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 4 November 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1992), 68–69.

36. *SL* 1.6 (note 7).

37. Cited in Koki, 10.

38. Quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 11.

39. Koki, 11.

40. M. Eileen McNamara, M.D., "Winfield Scott Lovecraft's Final Illness," *LS* No. 24 (Fall 1991): 14.

41. Quoted by Faig, *Parents,* 11.

42. Koki, 12.

43. Faig, Parents, 11, quoting Everts, "The Lovecraft Family in America," *Xenophile* 2, No. 6 (October 1975): 7.

44. Sonia H. Davis, "Memories of Lovecraft" (1969), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* ed. Peter Cannon (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1998), 276. ["Gorham" has been erroneously rendered as "Gotham" here.]

45. Winfield Townley Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation: Howard Phillips Lovecraft" (1944), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 16. Sarah Susan Lovecraft's medical records no longer survive, but Scott consulted them around 1944.

46. I am grateful to John H. Stanley of JHL for this information.

47. *SL* 1.6 (note 7).

48. *SL* 1.33 (note 10).

49. HPL to JVS, 29 May 1933 (*SL* 4.191).

50. John McInnis, "'The Colour out of Space' as the History of H. Lovecraft's Immediate Family," in *H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference: Proceedings,* ed. S. T. Joshi (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1991), 37.

51. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 October 1932; *Letters to Alfred Galpin* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003), 164. This volume is not listed in my edition of Lovecraft's library, as it does not appear to have been present when his library was catalogued by Mary Spink shortly after Lovecraft's death.

52. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.370).

53. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.362).

54. *SL* 3.363 (note 53).

55. *SL* 1.34 (note 10).

56. Scott, 11.

57. Myra H. Blosser to Winfield Townley Scott, n.d. (ms., JHL).

58. *SL* 4.355 (note 52). The same anecdote is found in HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 66 (this portion not in *SL*).

59. *SL* 3.362 (note 53).

60. *Providence Journal* (21 July 1898).

61. Faig, *Parents,* 7.

62. *SL* 3.366–67 (note 53).

63. *SL* 1.33 (note 7).

64. Ibid.

65. HPL to Marion F. Bonner, 4 May 1936 (*SL* 5.244).

66. HPL to RK, 21 May 1920 (*SL* 1.115).

67. HPL to FBL, 27 February 1931 (*SL* 3.317).

68. HPL to JVS, 8 November 1933 (ms.).

69. *SL* 1.33 (note 10).

70. HPL to Helen Sully, 24 November 1933 (ms., JHL).

71. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.110).

72. See note 68.

73. Ibid.

74. *SL* 4.357 (note 52).

75. *SL* 1.34 (note 10).

76. HPL to REH, 16 January 1932 (*SL* 4.8).

77. HPL to REH, 16 January 1932; *A Means to Freedom: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard* (New York: Hippocampus Press,

2009), 1.265 (this portion not in *SL*).

78. See note 68.

79. *SL* 1.31 (note 10).

80. *SL* 1.34–35 (note 10).

81. HPL to Virgil Finlay, 24 October 1936 (*SL* 5.335).

82. *SL* 5.244 (note 65).

83. HPL to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.84).

84. HPL to AD, 9 September 1931 (*SL* 3.409).

85. *SL* 3.407–8 (note 84).

86. HPL to FBL, 8 January 1924 (*SL* 1.282).

87. Per *SL* 2.107 (note 3); at *SL* 1.7 (note 7) HPL dates his discovery of classical antiquity to the age of seven, but it will soon be evident that this must be an error.

88. Nathaniel Hawthorne, "Preface" to *A Wonder-Book, A Wonder-Book, Tanglewood Tales, and Grandfather's Chair* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1883), 13.

89. Thomas Bulfinch, *Bulfinch's Mythology* (New York: Modern Library, n.d.), 15.

90. *SL* 1.7 (note 7).

91. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 26 January 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 44.

92. *SL* 1.33 (note 10).

93. HPL to CAS, 13 December 1933 (*SL* 4.335).

94. HPL to REH, 30 January 1931 (*SL* 3.283).

95. *SL* 1.7 (note 7).

96. Coleridge, *Poems,* ed. Ernest Hartley Coleridge (London: Oxford University Press, 1912), 189.

97. *SL* 2.108 (note 3).

98. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 26 January 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 44.

99. HPL to LDC, 4 October 1925 (ms., JHL).

100. *SL* 1.300 (note 12).

101. *Bulfinch's Mythology,* 7.

102. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.110–11).

103. HPL to REH, 30 October 1931 (*SL* 3.431–32).

104. HPL to FBL, 27 February 1931 (*SL* 3.313). An earlier letter, however, dates this pseudonym to Lovecraft's fourteenth year (HPL to FBL,

26 January 1921 [AHT]).

105. *SL* 1.36 (note 10).

106. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (ms.).

107. *SL* 1.37 (note 10).

108. HPL to JFM, March [?] 1937 (*SL* 5.432).

109. *SL* 2.109 (note 3).

Chapter 3: Black Woods & Unfathomed Caves

1. Frederick S. Frank, "The Gothic Romance: 1762–1820," in *Horror Literature,* ed. Marshall Tymn (New York: Bowker, 1981), 3–175.
2. William Hazlitt, "American Literature—Dr Channing," *Edinburgh Review* No. 99 (October 1829): 127–28.
3. G. R. Thompson, *Poe's Fiction: Romantic Irony in the Gothic Tales* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1973),.
4. "Preface" to *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840), in *Collected Works of Edgar Allan Poe,* ed. Thomas Ollive Mabbott (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1978), 2.473.
5. *Collected Works of Edgar Allan Poe,* 3.853.
6. Maurice Lévy, *Lovecraft: A Study in the Fantastic,* tr. S. T. Joshi (Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1988), 14.
7. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 28 August 1933 (*SL* 4.239).
8. HPL to CAS, 24 June 1927 (*SL* 2.148).
9. *The Weird Tale* (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1990), 1f.
10. See note 4.
11. HPL to RHB, 25 June 1931; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 3.
12. HPL to JVS, 19–31 July 1931 (ms., JHL).
13. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.354).
14. Henry James, "Baudelaire" (1876), *French Poets and Novelists* (New York: Macmillan, 1878), 76.
15. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 3 March 1927 (*SL* 2.109).
16. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.36).
17. Edmund Pearson, *Dime Novels* (Boston: Little, Brown, 1929), 4f.
18. See Pearson, passim; Quentin Reynolds, *The Fiction Factory* (New York: Random House, 1955), passim.
19. HPL to RHB, 25 March 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 230.
20. In *The Dime Novel Detective,* ed. Gary Hoppenstand (Bowling Green, OH: Bowling Green University Popular Press, 1982), 7–34, is reprinted an entire Old King Brady novel, *The Haunted Churchyard; or, Old King Brady the Detective and the Mystery of the Iron Vault* (1890).
21. HPL to JVS, 19–30 July 1931 (ms., JHL).
22. L. Sprague de Camp, *Lovecraft: A Biography* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975), 33.

23. This version has now been published in *H. P. Lovecraft: The Fiction* (New York: Barnes & Noble, 2008).

24. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 13 October 1934; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 34.

25. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918 (*SL* 1.74).

26. *SL* 2.109 (note 15).

27. *SL* 1.37 (note 16).

28. Ibid.

29. W. Paul Cook, *In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (1941); rpt. in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 112.

30. *SL* 4.355–56 (note 13).

31. HPL to MWM, 1 January 1915 (*SL* 1.8).

32. HPL to REH, 25–29 March 1933 (*SL* 4.172).

33. Transcript of HPL's transcript at Hope Street English and Classical High School, Providence, RI.

34. See *Lovecraft's Library* (1980 ed.), 39.

35. The manuscripts here are very confused, and some scholars now follow Lejay in reading *illa* (sc. *coepta*), but Lovecraft's text almost certainly read *illas* (sc. *formas*).

36. *John Dryden,* ed. Keith Walker (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987), 382.

37 HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.106).

38. HPL to AD, 4 March 1932 (*SL* 4.26).

39. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.368).

40. Faig, *Parents,* 23.

41. *SL* 1.32 (note 16).

42. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 5 March 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 51.

43. JVS, "Did Lovecraft Suffer from Chorea?" *Outré* No. 5 (May 1977): 30–31.

44. *SL* 1.36 (note 16).

45 Winfield Townley Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation: Howard Phillips Lovecraft" (1944), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 12.

46. Myra H. Blosser to Winfield Townley Scott, n.d. (ms., JHL).

47. *SL* 3.367 (note 39).

48. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*SL* 2.104).

49. Sonia H. Davis, *The Private Life of H. P. Lovecraft,* 8.

50. See frontispiece to *SL* 2.
51. *SL* 1.32 (note 16).
52. Frontispiece to *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (1949).
53. RHB, *On Lovecraft and Life,* ed. S. T. Joshi (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1992), 18.
54. Ms., JHL.
55. *SL* 1.35 (note 16). HPL declared that the line is from "Cicero's oration [*sic*] against Catiline" (there are in fact four orations against Catiline), but it is actually from *Pro Mureno* 13.
56. *SL* 1.29–30 (note 16).
57. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 125.
58. See further my essay, "Further Notes on Lovecraft and Music," *Romantist* Nos. 4/5 (1980–81): 47–49.
59. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 29 May 1929 (*SL* 2.348).
60. Faig, *Parents,* 26.
61. HPL to LDC, [18 May 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
62. *SL* 1.7 (note 31).
63. *SL* 1.35 (note 16).
64. Interview of Ethel Phillips Morrish by Paul R. Michaud, August 1977.
65. HPL to JVS, 8 November 1933 (ms.).
66. HPL to MWM, 27–29 July 1929 (AHT).
67. HPL to JVS, 10 February 1935 (*SL* 5.104).
68. *SL* 1.36 (note 16).
69. Ibid.
70. *SL* 1.7 (note 31).
71. HPL to LDC, 11 November 1924 (ms., JHL).
72. HPL to JVS, 18 September 1931 (AHT).
73. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (ms., JHL).
74. *SL* 1.37 (note 16); HPL to Richard F. Searight, 5 March 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 47.
75. HPL to RK, 20 January 1916 (*SL* 1.19); *SL* 2.109 (note 15).
76. For this and other information on Antarctic exploration, see Walker Chapman, *The Loneliest Continent: The Story of Antarctic Discovery* (Greenwich, CT: New York Graphic Society, 1964).
77. See HPL to MWM, 18 September 1932 (*SL* 4.67) for titles; HPL to Marion F. Bonner, 26 April 1936 (*SL* 5.237) for dates. In this latter letter the

title of the second treatise is given as “Ross’s Explorations.”

78. Chapman, 92.

79. Chapman, 98.

80. *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 47.

81. C. L. Moore to HPL, 6 October 1936 (ms., JHL): “Thank you for the privilege of reading that early publication of the Royal Atlas Company, ‘Wilks’ Exploration’ [*sic*] . . . I am returning ‘Wilks’ Exploration’ with a sigh . . .” The Royal Atlas Company must have been yet another of Lovecraft’s juvenile imprints.

82. *SL* 1.37 (note 16).

83. HPL to MWM, 27–29 July 1929 (AHT).

Chapter 4: What of Unknown Africa?

1. HPL to MWM, 1 January 1915 (*SL* 1.7).
2. HPL to LDC, 12 February 1926 (*SL* 2.39).
3. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 16 April 1936; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 55.
4. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 21 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 27 (this portion not in *SL*).
5. HPL to RHB, 23 July 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 356.
6. See, in general, Charles A. Whitney, *The Discovery of Our Galaxy* (New York: Knopf, 1971).
7. For an exhaustive discussion of Lovecraft's interest in and knowledge of astronomy, see T. R. Livesey, "Dispatches from the Providence Observatory: Astronomical Motifs and Sources in the Writings of H. Lovecraft," *Lovecraft Annual* 2 (2008): 3–87.
8. This, and all other juvenile publications cited in this chapter, are at JHL. A few of these items have been published in *Collected Essays,* but most remain unpublished.
9. I am grateful to Sam Moskowitz for information on the hectograph.
10. This essay was written in 1934.
11. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.38).
12. HPL to LDC, 12 February 1926 (ms., JHL).
13. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 29 March 1934 (*SL* 4.398).
14. *SL* 1.38 (note 11).
15. HPL to RK, 20 January 1916 (*SL* 1.19).
16. *SL* 1.39 (note 11).
17. HPL to MWM, 27–29 July 1929 (AHT).
18. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.353).
19. When HPL refers to the Munroes as his "next-door neighbours" (HPL to REH, 4 October 1930 [*SL* 3.184]), he is referring to the time after the spring of 1904, when he moved to 598 Angell Street and was in fact only a few houses away from the Munroes.
20. HPL to AD, 17 February 1931 (*SL* 3.290).
21. See *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* (7 May 1905).
22. HPL to AEPG, 19 August 1921 (*SL* 1.147).

23. HPL to the Gallomo, 31 August 1921 (*SL* 1.150). R. Alain Everts is responsible for the identification of Tanner's last name.

24. HPL to AEPG, 5 August [1928] (ms., JHL).

25. *SL* 3.184 (note 19).

26. *SL* 1.147 (note 22).

27. HPL to Helen Sully, 4 December 1935 (ms., JHL).

28. *SL* 1.38 (note 11).

29. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 73.

30. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 May 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 19.

31. HPL to AD, 17 February 1931 (*SL* 3.289–90).

32. HPL to AD, 26 March 1927; *Essential Solitude: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and August Derleth* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2008), 1.77. HPL probably refers to two tales appearing in *Collier's,* "The Singular Experience of Mr. John Scott Eccles" (a.k.a. "The Adventure of Wisteria Lodge") (15 August 1908) and "The Adventure of the Bruce-Partington Plans" (12 December 1908).

33. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (ms., JHL).

34. HPL to RK, 2 February 1916 (*SL* 1.20).

35. HPL to the Gallomo, 1920 (*SL* 1.104–5).

36. Field, *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations,* 2.553.

37. Ibid., 2.556.

38. HPL to MWM, 18 September 1932 (*SL* 4.65).

39. *SL* 1.105 (note 35).

40. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 13 February 1934 (ms., JHL).

41. HPL to AD, 31 December 1930 (*SL* 3.246).

42. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 27 March 1934 (ms., JHL).

43. *SL* 1.29 (note 11).

44. *SL* 4.365 (note 18).

45. Stuart J. Coleman to Winfield Townley Scott, 30 December [1943] (ms., JHL).

46. Winfield Townley Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation" (1944), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 12.

47. Clara Hess in the *Providence Sunday Journal* (19 September 1948); quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 33.

48. *SL* 1.40 (note 11).

49. *SL* 4.357 (note 18).

50. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.298).

51. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* (this portion not in *SL*).

52. HPL to LDC, 22–23 December 1925 (ms., JHL).

53. HPL to FBL, [November 1927] (*SL* 2.181).

54. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.367).

55. HPL to Harry O. Fischer, 10 January 1937; quoted in de Camp, 40.

56. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft: The Early Years 1890–1914," *Nyctalops* 2, No. 1 (April 1973): 14n16, citing probate records.

57. *SL* 4.358–59 (note 18).

58. *SL* 3.369 (note 54).

59. *SL* 1.39 (note 11).

60. HPL to REH, 25–29 March 1933 (*SL* 4.172).

61. *SL* 1.30 (note 11).

62. *SL* 1.9 (note 1).

63. HPL to RHB, 24 May 1935 (*SL* 5.165).

64. HPL to JVS, 8 November 1933 (ms.).

65. *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* (30 July 1905).

66. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 40 (this portion not in *SL*).

67. Surviving in AHT, Vol. XXXIII.

68. *SL* 1.105–6 (note 35).

69. HPL to MWM, 15 May 1918 (*SL* 1.60).

70. See note 64.

71. *SL* 1.146 (note 22).

72. Various Internet sources reveal the existence of one James M. Kay (d. 8 April 1904), who served in the West Virginia cavalry during the Civil War. This may be the person in question, as it seems to me that HPL's friend would have lived a bit longer than 1904.

73. *SL* 1.146 (note 22).

74. See note 64.

75. Harold W. Munro, "Lovecraft, My Childhood Friend" (1983), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 70.

76. See *Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy* (April 1907); HPL to Samuel Loveman, [c. 5 January 1924]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994), 23.

77. HPL to LDC, 30 May 1931 (ms., JHL).

78. HPL to JVS, 14 August 1933 (ms.).

79. See Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 135f. See also Faig's *Edward Francis Gamwell and His Family* (Glenview, IL: Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, 1991).

80. *SL* 1.34 (note 11).

81. *SL* 1.39 (note 11).

82. Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 131. The fact that Clark studied at Harvard Medical School was discovered by Faig after the publication of his volume, and I am grateful to him for passing on this information.

83. Ibid.

84. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 31 May 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 59.

85. *SL* 1.38 (note 11).

86. William Benjamin Smith, *The Color Line* (1905; rpt. New York: Greenwood Press, 1969), 185.

87. Smith, 192.

88. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 74–75 (this portion not in *SL*).

89. Thomas F. Gossett, *Race: The History of an Idea in America* (New York: Schocken Books, 1965), passim.

90. HPL to AEPG, 5 August [1931] (ms., JHL).

91. "In a Major Key," *Conservative* 1, No. 2 (July 1915): 9–11.

92. HPL to LDC, [2 May 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

93. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 72 (this portion not in *SL*).

94. HPL to LDC, [15 July 1928] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

95. See note 64.

96. *SL* 4.360 (note 18).

97. *SL* 4.170 (note 60).

98. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 128.

99. HPL to MWM, [6 April 1935] (*SL* 5.140).

100. HPL to Robert Bloch, 1 June 1933; *Letters to Robert Bloch* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1993), 15.

101. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925 (ms., JHL).

102. Cited in *Uncollected Prose and Poetry* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1978), 1.

103. Mathias Harpin, *The High Road to Zion* ([West Warwick, RI:] Harpin's American Heritage Foundation, 1976), 197.

104. *SL* 1.9 (note 1).

105. *SL* 1.40 (note 11).

106. AD, in an appendix to *H. P. L.: A Memoir* (New York: Ben Abramson, 1945), printed a brief item purportedly by Lovecraft entitled "Does Vulcan Exist?" (91–92), claiming that it dated to 1906 and that it was either a portion or the entirety of an astronomy column published in the *Providence Journal.* Lovecraft had, however, no astronomy column in the *Journal.* My feeling is that this is an unpublished manuscript that came into Derleth's hands and that he simply assumed it had been published in the *Journal,* probably the only Providence newspaper of which he was aware.

107. HPL to RK, 19 February 1916 (*SL* 1.22).

108. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 22 December 1934; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 37.

109. *SL* 5.141 (note 99).

110. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 21 August 1918 (*SL* 1.70).

111. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.110–11).

112. HPL to the Kleicomolo, [April 1917] (*SL* 1.44).

113. *SL* 1.70 (note 110).

Chapter 5: Barbarian and Alien

1. HPL to MWM, 1 January 1915 (*SL* 1.9).
2. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.40–41).
3. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 3 March 1927 (*SL* 2.110).
4. HPL to Helen Sully, 4 December 1935 (ms., JHL).
5. Will Murray, "An Interview with Harry Brobst," *LS* Nos. 22/23 (Fall 1990): 34.
6. Harold W. Munro, "Lovecraft, My Childhood Friend" (1983), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 70–71.
7. HPL to REH, 25–29 March 1933 (*SL* 4.172).
8. R. Alain Everts, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft and Sex," *Nyctalops* 2, No. 2 (July 1974): 19.
9. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 125.
10. *SL* 1.9 (note 1).
11. *SL* 1.31 (note 2).
12. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 19 August 1918 (*SL* 1.75).
13. See Mark Owings and Irving Binkin, *A Catalog of Lovecraftiana* (Baltimore: Mirage Press, 1975), plate 20.
14. David H. Keller, "Lovecraft's Astronomical Notebook," *Lovecraft Collector* No. 3 (October 1949): 1–4.
15. Keller has transcribed "Providence Evening Journal," but this is evidently his error.
16. HPL to Jonquil Leiber, 29 November 1936 (*SL* 5.363).
17. Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation" (1944), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 15.
18. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.367).
19. Faig, *Parents,* 28.
20. Sonia H. Davis, "Memories of Lovecraft: I" (1969), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 276.
21. Quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 32–33.
22. Munro, 69.
23. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 13 April 1934 (ms., JHL).
24. HPL to Sarah Susan Lovecraft, 24 February 1921 (*SL* 1.123).
25. Davis, 276.
26. Quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 33.

27. Munro, 71.
28. HPL to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.85); HPL to RHB, 20 April 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 241.
29. See the photograph published with Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft: The Early Years 1890–1914," *Nyctalops* 2, No. 1 (April 1973): 11.
30. HPL to RK, 4 December 1918 (*SL* 1.78).
31. HPL to RHB, 23 July 1936 (*SL* 5.282).
32. HPL to FBL, 8 February 1922 (AHT).
33. HPL to RHB, 11 December 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 383.
34. HPL to RK, 9 November 1919 (*SL* 192).
35. HPL to LDC, [17 August 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
36. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 27 March 1934 (ms., JHL).
37. See note 32.
38. HPL to LDC, 4–5 November 1924 (ms., JHL).
39. HPL to W. G. Bautz, 16 May 1935 (AHT).
40. HPL to AEPG, 19 August 1921 (*SL* 1145).
41. Faig, "Early Years," 6, citing city directories.
42. HPL to RK, 4 December 1918 (*SL* 1.77).
43. *SL* 1.41 (note 2).
44. Scott, 13.
45. Munro, 71.
46. Scott, 13.
47. HPL to Robert Bloch, 4 December 1935 (*SL* 5.208).
48. HPL to JVS, 19–31 July 1931 (*SL* 3.383).
49. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.298).
50. *SL* 2.110 (note 3).
51. Field, *State of Rhode Island,* 2.206.
52. "The Defence Remains Open!" (1921).
53. HPL to LDC, 23 September 1925; *Letters from New York* (San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2005), 198.
54. HPL to RHB, 31 March 1932; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 28.
55. See, in general, Sam Moskowitz, *Under the Moons of Mars* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1970), passim.
56. *SL* 1.41 (note 2).
57. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 26 September 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 64.

58. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 16 April 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 54.

59. See note 54.

60. HPL to RHB, 14 April 1932; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 29.

61. HPL to JFM, 23 February 1936 (*SL* 5.227).

62. All letters by and about HPL in the *Argosy* and *All-Story* are collected in *H. P. Lovecraft in the Argosy* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994).

63. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 20 March 1929 (*SL* 2.325).

64. HPL to CAS, 3 December 1929 (*SL* 3.88).

65. See Will Murray, "Lovecraft and the Pulp Magazine Tradition," in *An Epicure in the Terrible,* ed. David E. Schultz and S. T. Joshi (Rutherford, NJ: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 1991), 103.

66. Cass was briefly considered to be a pseudonym of CAS, and a lengthy story by Cass that was to have appeared in the *Thrill Book* in 1919 (*As It Is Written* [1982]) has been published under Smith's name; but this theory has now been found to be false. See Will Murray, "As It Was *Not* Written; or, The Curious Conundrum of De Lysle Ferrée Cass," *Studies in Weird Fiction* No. 4 (Fall 1988): 3–12.

67. Fred Jackson, "The First Law," *Argosy* 72, No. 1 (April 1913): 35.

68. *SL* 1.41 (note 2).

69. *SL* 1.42 (note 2).

70. See Moskowitz, 293.

71. HPL to AD, 9 September 1931 (*SL* 3.407).

Chapter 6: A Renewed Will to Live

1. Truman J. Spencer, *The History of Amateur Journalism* (New York: The Fossils, 1957), 86.

2. *Looking Backward* (1920).

3. *United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism.*

4. HPL to JVS, 27 October 1932 (*SL* 4.97).

5. This was a speech given at the Boston Conference of Amateur Journalists on 21 February 1921.

6. See Spencer, 91–92.

7. HPL to RK, 8 November 1917; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 120.

8. HPL to JFM, 6 August 1923 (*SL* 1.243).

9. "Amateur Journalism and the English Teacher," *English Journal* (high school edition) 4, No. 2 (February 1915): 113–14.

10. HPL to John T. Dunn, 10 June 1916; *Books at Brown* 39–39 (1991–92 [1995]): 179.

11. John Clinton Pryor, "Comment Pryoristic," *United Co-operative* 1, No. 1 (December 1918): 6–7; "Comment Pryoristic," *United Co-operative* 1, No. 3 (April 1921): 7; W. Paul Cook, "Official Criticism," *Vagrant* No. 11 (November 1919): 31–35.

12. See L. Sprague de Camp, "Young Man Lovecraft" (1975), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 173.

13. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 23 November 1914 (ms., JHL).

14. See "Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur,* December 1915: "The general tone of this individual publication [*Hit and Miss*] is Socialistic . . . Miss Baker's ideas on economics seem not unlike those of her fellow-amateurs, Messrs. Shufelt and Basinet . . ."

15. de Camp, "Young Man Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 174.

16. HPL to John T. Dunn, 20 July 1915; *Books at Brown,* 171.

17. HPL to John T. Dunn, 15 August 1916; *Books at Brown,* 191 (and n. 2).

18. de Camp, "Young Man Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 173–74.

19. HPL to RK, 28 March 1915; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 15.

20. HPL to John T. Dunn, 25 October 1915; *Books at Brown,* 174–75.

21. See note 17.

22. HPL to John T. Dunn, 13 November 1916; *Books at Brown,* 204.
23. HPL to RK, 24 September 1917 (*SL* 1.50).
24. RK, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft," *Californian* 5, No. 1 (Summer 1937): 5.
25. HPL to John T. Dunn, 16 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 179.
26. HPL to John T. Dunn, 28 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 185.
27. See note 25.
28. See note 26.
29. See note 22.
30. *Year Book of the United Amateur Press Association of America* [Athol, MA: W. Paul Cook, 1914].
31. HPL to John T. Dunn, 16 May 1917; *Books at Brown,* 215.
32. HPL to John T. Dunn, 6 July 1917; *Books at Brown,* 217.
33. Ibid., 222.
34. See note 25.
35. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.40).
36. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 3 March 1927 (*SL* 2.110).
37. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 May 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 15.
38. See *Science versus Charlatanry: Essays on Astrology* by H. Lovecraft and J. F. Hartmann, ed. S. T. Joshi and Scott Connors (Madison, WI: Strange Co., 1979), xiv. The articles by both HPL and Hartmann are now in *Collected Essays,* volume 3.
39. HPL to MWM, 8 December 1914 (*SL* 1.4).
40. Ibid.
41. HPL to JFM, March [?] 1937 (*SL* 5.422).

Chapter 7: Metrical Mechanic

1. HPL to MWM, 8 December 1914 (*SL* 1.3–4).
2. HPL to RK, 4 April 1918 (*SL* 1.60).
3. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 8 March 1929 (*SL* 2.314–15).
4. See HPL to RHB, [24 May 1935] (*SL* 5.168).
5. Untitled editorial note, *Conservative* (April 1915).
6. Gray and Collins, *Poetical Works* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1977), 34.
7. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.369–70).
8. HPL to RK, 14 September 1915 (*SL* 1.12).
9. HPL to RK, 5 June 1918; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 143.
10. Cited in *In Defence of Dagon* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1985), 6, 19.
11. *Plainsman* 1, No. 4 (December 1915): 2–3.
12. Winfield Townley Scott, "A Parenthesis on Lovecraft as Poet" (1945), in *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism,* ed. S. T. Joshi (Athens: Ohio University Press, 1980), 214.
13. W. Paul Cook, "Howard Lovecraft's Fiction," *Vagrant* (November 1919); cited in Cook's *In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (1941), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 148.
14. The poem was included in a letter to John T. Dunn, 10 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 180.
15. "Speaking of the ignorant rabble—James Lawrence Crowley hath just inundated me with some of his 'poetry' for revision. The task is repugnant, but I hate to disappoint the poor devil." HPL to MWM, [May 1920] (AHT).
16. RK, "A Note on Howard Lovecraft's Poetry," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 401–2.
17. HPL to RK, 13 May 1921 (*SL* 1.132).
18. HPL to RK, 28 March 1915; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 16.
19. Charles D. Isaacson, "Concerning the Conservative," *In a Minor Key* No. 2 [1915]: [10–11].
20. See note 1.
21. HPL to RK, 30 September 1915 (*SL* 1.14).

22. HPL to DW, [2 August 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Donald Wandrei* (San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2002), 138.

23. DW to HPL, 12 August 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 149.

24. Steven J. Mariconda, "On Lovecraft's 'Amissa Minerva,'" *Etchings and Odysseys* No. 9 [1986]: 97–103.

25. HPL to the Kleicomolo, [October 1916]; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 45–46.

26. HPL to RK, 23 August 1916 (*SL* 1.24).

27. RK, *Piper* (May 1915): 6.

28. HPL to RK, 28 March 1915 (*SL* 1.11).

29. See further my essay, "The Rationale of Lovecraft's Pseudonyms" (1992), in *Primal Sources: Essays on H. P. Lovecraft* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003), 81–89.

30. HPL to John T. Dunn, 28 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 183.

31. Alan Seeger, *Poems* (New York: Scribner's, 1916), 162.

32. Thomas Henry Huxley, *Man's Place in Nature* (New York: D. Appleton & Co., 1894), 233.

33. See, in general, Thomas F. Gossett, *Race: The History of an Idea in America* (New York: Schocken Books, 1965), ch. 5.

34. de Camp, *Lovecraft: A Biography,* 95–99.

35. Gossett, 348.

36. HPL to RHB, 13 June 1936 (*SL* 5.266).

37. See Gossett, 353.

38. HPL to the Gallomo, 30 September 1919 (*SL* 1.89).

39. See note 19.

40. HPL to RK, 25 November 1915 (*SL* 1.17).

41. A complete list of Morton's pamphlets, as culled from the *National Union Catalogue of Pre-1956 Imprints* and the New York Public Library Catalogue, is as follows: *Anarchy* by Errico Malatesta (with *Is It All a Dream?* by Morton) (1900); *Better Than Socialism* (19—); *The Gospel of the Gutter* (19—); *The Philosophy of the Single Tax* (19—); *Do You Want Freedom of Speech?* (1902?); *The Rights of Periodicals* (1905?); *The Curse of Race Prejudice* (1906?); *Being on the Safe Side* (1910?); *The American Secular Union: Its Aims and Plans . . .* (191–); *Sex Morality, Past, Present and Future* (with William J. Robinson and others) (1912); *The Case of Billy Sunday* (with others) (1915); *Exempting the Churches* (1916); *Shall Church*

Property Be Taxed? A Debate (with Lawson Purdy) (1921?). Morton also edited the short-lived periodical *Loyal Citizen Sovereignty* (Oct. 1922–June 1923). An extract from *The Curse of Race Prejudice* can now be found in *Lovecraft's New York Circle,* ed. Mara Kirk Hart and S. T. Joshi (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2006), p 210–15.

42. JFM, "'Conservatism' Gone Mad," *In a Minor Key* No. 2 [1915]: [15–16].

43. HPL to RK, 10 August 1915 (*SL* 1.12).

44. It is included in a letter to RK, 14 September 1915; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 20.

45. It is dated to 1915 and listed as "unpublished" in HPL's list of his amateur poetry compiled in 1918 (*SL* 1.58).

46. HPL to John T. Dunn, 20 July 1915; *Books at Brown,* 169.

47. Edward Norman, *A History of Modern Ireland* (Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin, 1973), 155–56.

48. See McLoughlin, *Rhode Island: A Bicentennial History,* 141–42.

49. HPL to John T. Dunn, 10 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 178.

50. HPL to John T. Dunn, 28 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 182.

51. See note 49.

52. HPL to John T. Dunn, 14 October 1916; *Books at Brown,* 196.

53. *New York Times* (30 September 1916): 1.

54. HPL to John T. Dunn, 13 January 1917; *Books at Brown,* 210.

55. HPL to John T. Dunn, 6 July 1917; *Books at Brown,* 217.

56. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 40.

57. See de Camp, "Young Man Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 175.

58. HPL to John T. Dunn, 16 May 1917; *Books at Brown,* 214.

59. *SL* 1.12 (note 8).

60. HPL to RK, 23 May 1917 (*SL* 1.45–46).

61. HPL to RK, 27 August 1917 (*SL* 1.49).

62. Ibid.

63. See note 60.

64. HPL to MWM, 30 May 1917 (*SL* 1.47–48).

65. HPL to RK, 22 June 1917 (*SL* 1.48).

66. HPL to John T. Dunn, 6 July 1917; *Books at Brown,* 222.

67. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.35).

68. See John Allen Krout, *The Origins of Prohibition* (New York: Knopf, 1925), 192–95.

69. *Rhode Island: A Guide to the Smallest State* (WPA) (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1937), 56.

70. Samuel Eliot Morison et al., *The Growth of the American Republic,* 7th ed. (New York: Oxford University Press, 1980), 2.285.

71. HPL to the Kleicomolo, [October 1916] (*SL* 1.26).

72. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 13 February 1928 (*SL* 2.229).

73. Ibid. (*SL* 2.230).

74. HPL to JVS, 10 November 1931 (*SL* 3.434).

75. HPL to MWM, 15 May 1918 (*SL* 1.64).

76. "We find it impossible to express with sufficient force our regret at the withdrawal of Mr. Daas from the United, and we can but hope that the retirement may prove merely temporary." "Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur* (June 1916).

77. See HPL to Alfred Galpin, [October 1918]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 23.

78. HPL to RK, 25 June 1920; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 194.

79. Ibid.

80. *Tryout* 3, No. 4 (March 1917): [1–2].

81. HPL to John T. Dunn, 20 July 1915; *Books at Brown,* 170–71.

82. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 23 November and 14 December 1914 (mss., JHL).

83. HPL to RK, 21 September 1921 (*SL* 1.152). Cf. HPL to RK, 24 September 1917: "Cook makes only the third amateur with whom I have had a good talk; Stoddard and Edward H. Cole being the others" (*Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 116). The order in which Stoddard and Cole are mentioned perhaps suggests that HPL saw Stoddard first.

84. "The Conservative and His Critics," *Conservative* (July 1915).

85. HPL to John T. Dunn, 4 July 1916; *Books at Brown,* 187–88.

86. HPL to FBL, 3 May 1922 (*SL* 1.170).

87. "The Kleicomolo," *United Amateur* 18, No. 4 (March 1919): 75–76.

88. Andrew F. Lockhart, "Little Journeys to the Homes of Prominent Amateurs," *United Amateur* 15, No. 2 (September 1915): 27–28, 34.

89. *SL* 3.370 (note 7).

90. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.30).

91. HPL to LDC, 24–27 October 1925 (ms., JHL).

92. HPL to JFM, 24 June 1923 (*SL* 1.236).
93. Sean Dennis Cashman, *America in the Age of the Titans* (New York: New York University Press, 1988), 323–24.
94. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.355).
95. HPL to RK, 6 December 1915 (*SL* 1.18).
96. HPL to RK, 30 September 1915 (*SL* 1.14).
97. See note 95.
98. HPL to RK, 14 October 1917 (*SL* 1.51).
99. HPL to RK, 31 January 1917 (*SL* 1.42–43).
100. F. T., Review of *The Image Maker, New York Dramatic Mirror* (20 January 1917): 26.
101. HPL to John T. Dunn, 19 February 1917; *Books at Brown,* 212.
102. HPL to Sarah S. Lovecraft, 17 March 1921 (*SL* 1.127).
103. "Extracts from the Letters to G. W. Macauley" (1938), *LS* 1, No. 3 (Fall 1980): 14.

Chapter 8: Dreamers and Visionaries

1. For more on Cook, see Sean Donnelly, *W. Paul Cook: The Wandering Life of a Yankee Printer* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2007).
2. HPL to RK, 24 September 1917 (*SL* 1.49–50).
3. HPL to Richard Ely Morse, 30 August [1932] (ms., JHL).
4. HPL to CAS, 11 January 1923 (*SL* 1.202).
5. *E'ch-Pi-El Speaks: An Autobiographical Sketch* (Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1972), 9. This is a letter of July 1929 to an unidentified correspondent.
6. W. Paul Cook, "Howard Lovecraft's Fiction" (*Vagrant,* November 1919), cited in Cook's *In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (1941), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 147–48.
7. *Collected Works of Edgar Allan Poe,* ed. T. O. Mabbott (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1978), 2.209.
8. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 4 November 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 66.
9. HPL to CAS, 18 November 1930 (*SL* 3.219).
10. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 8 March 1929 (*SL* 2.315). The printed text errs in reading "my 'Lovecraft' pieces?"
11. Edmund Wilson, "Tales of the Marvellous and the Ridiculous" (1945), in *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism,* ed. S. T. Joshi (Athens: Ohio University Press, 1980), 48.
12. Poe, *Collected Works,* 2.579.
13. Henry Seidel Canby, Frederick Erastus Pierce, and W. H. Durham, *Facts, Thought, and Imagination: A Book on Writing* (New York: Macmillan, 1917), 56.
14. J. Berg Esenwein, *Writing the Short-Story: A Practical Handbook on the Rise, Structure, Writing, and Sale of the Modern Short-Story* (New York: Hinds, Noble & Eldredge, 1909; rev. ed. Springfield, MA: Home Correspondence School, 1928). I have not had access to the 1918 edition.
15. Ibid., 30.
16. I am grateful to Sam Moskowitz for some of this information.
17. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 81.
18. Poe, *Collected Works,* 2.209.
19. T. O. Mabbott, "H. Lovecraft: An Appreciation" (1944), in *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism,* 43.

20. Will Murray, "A Probable Source for the Drinking Song from 'The Tomb,'" *LS* No. 15 (Fall 1987): 77–80.

21. Sheridan, *Plays* (London & New York: Dent/Dutton [Everyman's Library], 1906), 263. This suggestion was made to me by T. G. Cockcroft.

22. William Fulwiler, "'The Tomb' and 'Dagon': A Double Dissection," *CoC* No. 38 (Eastertide 1986): 8–14.

23. HPL to MWM, 15 May 1918 (*SL* 1.65).

24. "The Lord of R'lyeh" (1945), rpt. *LS* No. 7 (Fall 1982): 14.

25. HPL to RK, 27 August 1917; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 114.

26. HPL to CAS, 7 November 1930 (*SL* 3.213).

27. See note 22.

28. HPL to RK, 17 July 1917; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 112.

29. HPL to the Gallomo 11 December 1919 (*SL* 1.94).

30. See note 25.

31. HPL to Edwin Baird, c. June 1923; *Uncollected Letters* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1986), 6.

32. Boswell, *Life of Johnson,* ed. R. W. Chapman, rev. J. D. Fleeman (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1970), 1074.

33. HPL to AD, 9 September 1931 (*SL* 3.407).

34. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 26 March 1927 (*SL* 2.120).

35. Lord Dunsany, *Patches of Sunlight* (London: William Heinemann, 1938), 32.

36. HPL to MWM, 15 May 1918 (*SL* 1.62).

37. HPL to RK, 27 June 1918 (*SL* 1.68).

38. HPL to FBL, 4 June 1921 (*SL* 1.135–36).

39. "I am still struggling with the typing of *Hesperia.*" HPL to Alfred Galpin, 21 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 33.

40. *Interesting Items* No. 511 (February 1921): [1–2].

41. HPL to Arthur Harris, 13 December 1918 (ms., JHL).

42. HPL to RK, 21 May 1920 (*SL* 1.116).

43. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 82.

44. See note 42.

45. *SL* 1.136 (note 38).

46. Ibid.

47. Ibid.

48. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 83.

49. Garrett Serviss, *Astronomy with the Naked Eye* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1908), 152.

50. Charles A. Whitney, *The Discovery of Our Galaxy* (New York: Knopf, 1971), 21.

51. Matthew H. Onderdonk, "The Lord of R'lyeh" (1945), *LS* No. 7 (Fall 1982): 10.

52. HPL to Vincent Starrett, 10 January 1927 (*SL* 2.222).

53. Jack London, *Before Adam* (New York: Ace, n.d.), 3.

54. Ibid., 4–5.

55. See Poe, *Collected Works,* 1.191.

56. Lance Arney, "The Extinction of Mankind in the Prose Poem 'Memory,'" *LS* No. 21 (Spring 1990): 38–39.

57. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 30 October 1934 (ms., JHL).

58. William H. Prescott, *History of the Conquest of Mexico and History of the Conquest of Peru* (New York: Modern Library, n.d.), 38.

59. Steven J. Mariconda, "Realism in Lovecraft's Early Work," *Ultimate Chaos* 2, No. 4 (December 1984): 1–11.

60. See HPL to RK, 4 April 1918 (*SL* 1.59).

61. R. Boerem, "A Lovecraftian Nightmare," in *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism,* 218.

62. HPL to the Kleicomolo, 8 August 1916 (*SL* 1.24).

63. HPL to RHB, 13 June 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 342.

64. HPL to the Gallomo, 12 September 1921; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 108.

65. HPL to CAS, 30 July 1923 (ms.).

66. HPL to RK, 8 November 1917 (*SL* 1.51).

67. Ibid.

68. Winfield Townley Scott, "A Parenthesis on Lovecraft as Poet" (1945), in *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism,* 215.

69. Poe, *Collected Works,* 1.343.

70. HPL to RK, 16 July 1919 (*SL* 1.83).

71. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 82. HPL to RK, 5 June 1918; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 143.

Chapter 9: Feverish and Incessant Scribbling

1. See HPL to RK, 4 April 1918 (*SL* 1.59).
2. HPL to RK, 23 December 1917 (*SL* 1.52).
3. HPL to JFM, 10 February 1923 (*SL* 1.209).
4. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.290).
5. Samuel Eliot Morison et al., *The Growth of the American Republic,* 2.112.
6. "President's Message," *United Amateur* (September 1917; November 1917).
7. "President's Message," *United Amateur* (January 1918).
8. "This latest trip [to Boston] was in response to an invitation to deliver an address on amateurdom's future before the Hub Club Conference of Sept. 5th . . ." HPL to RK, 10 September 1920; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 197.
9. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 110–11.
10. HPL to RK, 24 September 1917 (*SL* 1.49).
11. RK, "A Memoir of Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 195.
12. HPL to Winifred Virginia Jackson, 7 June 1921 (*SL* 1.138).
13. HPL to RK, 21 September 1921 (*SL* 1.152–33).
14. HPL to RK, 9 November 1919 (*SL* 1.91).
15. Samuel Loveman, *The Hermaphrodite and Other Poems* (Caldwell, ID: Caxton Printers, 1936), 27. For as complete an edition of Loveman's poetry (including a selection of his other work) as we are likely to have, see *Out of the Immortal Night: Selected Works of Samuel Loveman* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2004).
16. *Twenty one Letters of Ambrose Bierce,* ed. Samuel Loveman (1922; rpt. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1991), 19.
17. HPL to DW, 27 March 1927 (*SL* 2.121).
18. HPL to RK, 8 November 1917 (*SL* 1.51).
19. Samuel Loveman, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 204.
20. Robert H. Waugh, "Landscapes, Selves, and Others in Lovecraft," in *An Epicure in the Terrible,* 234.
21. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 24 August 1918 (*SL* 1.71).
22. HPL to RK, 23 April 1921 (*SL* 1.128).

23. Alfred Galpin, "Memories of a Friendship," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 165.
24. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 21 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 30.
25. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 May 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 16.
26. HPL to Alfred Galpin, [October 1918]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 51.
27. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 May 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 23.
28. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 37.
29. See note 26.
30. L. Sprague de Camp, "Young Man Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 174.
31. See note 25.
32. HPL to John T. Dunn, 14 October 1916; *Books at Brown,* 198–99.
33. HPL to John T. Dunn, 10 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 179.
34. HPL to John T. Dunn, 6 July 1917; *Books at Brown,* 222.
35. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*SL* 1.103).
36. Ms., JHL.
37. HPL to RK, 12 August 1919 (*SL* 1.84–85).
38. HPL to LDC, 17 November 1924 (ms., JHL).
39. Clara Hess, letter to AD, 9 October 1948 (ms., JHL); quoted in Faig, *Parents,* 33.
40. HPL to RK, 23 May 1917 (*SL* 1.46).
41. Faig, *Parents,* 29.
42. See Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 122–26.
43. HPL to RK, 18 January 1919 (*SL* 1.78).
44. Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 131.
45. HPL to RK, 19 March 1919 (*SL* 1.80).
46. The date of admission is supplied by Winfield Townley Scott; see "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 15.
47. See note 39.
48. HPL to Arthur Harris, 23 August 1915 (ms., JHL).
49. HPL to John T. Dunn, 10 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 179.
50. See note 34.
51. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 May 1918 (*SL* 1.67).
52. George Julian Houtain, "Lovecraft" (*Zenith,* January 1921), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 87.
53. HPL to FBL, 26 January 1921 (*SL* 1.122).

Chapter 10: Cynical Materialist

1. HPL to RK, 30 March 1919 (*SL* 1.81).
2. HPL to RK, 19 March 1919 (*SL* 1.81).
3. HPL to RK, 16 April 1919 (*SL* 1.82).
4. HPL to RK, 17 June 1919 (*SL* 1.82).
5. Winfield Townley Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 16.
6. HPL to LDC, 13 August 1925 (ms., JHL); HPL to JFM, 19 May 1927 (*SL* 2.128).
7. HPL to RK, 25 June 1920; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 194.
8. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.298).
9. *Epgephi* (September 1920): 6, 21.
10. "Falco Ossifracus" can be found in Miniter's *Dead Houses and Other Works,* ed. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, and Sean Donnelly (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2008).
11. HPL to RK, 12 August 1920; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 196.
12. HPL to RK, 10 September 1920; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 197.
13. Ibid.
14. Long's date of birth has long been a source of debate: Lovecraft believed it to be 1902 (hence his writing a poem, "To Endymion," on his coming of age in 1923), and in later years Long himself stated that it was 1903; but a search by Peter Cannon in New York City birth records establishes conclusively that it was 1901. See Cannon, "FBL: When Was He Born and Why Was Lovecraft Wrong?" *Studies in Weird Fiction* No. 17 (Summer 1995): 33–34.
15. See Long's introduction to *The Early Long* (1975). He appears in the UAPA membership list no later than November 1919.
16. HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.107).
17. HPL to RK, 27 September 1919 (*SL* 1.88).
18. HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.106–7).
19. See George T. Wetzel and R. Alain Everts, *Winifred Virginia Jackson—Lovecraft's Lost Romance* [Madison, WI: R. Alain Everts, 1976].
20. HPL, "Winifred Virginia Jordan: Associate Editor," *Silver Clarion* (April 1919).
21. See note 19.

22. See note 19.
23. See note 20.
24. HPL to Sarah Susan Lovecraft, 17 March 1921 (ms., JHL). The poem in question was "The River of Life," which was printed as a wall card.
25. See note 19.
26. See headnote by Edwin Hadley Smith to "What Amateurdom and I Have Done for Each Other," *Boys' Herald* 46, No. 1 (August 1937): 6, who reports having secured the manuscript and noting that it is dated February 21.
27. HPL to Sarah Susan Lovecraft, 24 February 1921 (ms., JHL).
28. Ibid.
29. Ibid.
30. Ibid.
31. Cf. HPL to RK, 23 April 1921 (*SL* 1.128). The principal letter recording this trip—HPL to Sarah Susan Lovecraft, 17 March 1921—is misdated 24 March in *SL* 1.125 because Derleth thought that the gathering was actually on St Patrick's Day (March 17) and that therefore the mention of "My trip of a week ago" dated the letter to March 24.
32. Ibid.
33. HPL to RK, 12 June 1921 (*SL* 1.139).
34. Published in *LS* No. 26 (Spring 1992): 26–30.
35. Hugh Elliot, *Modern Science and Materialism* (London: Longmans, Green, 1919), 138–41. Hereafter cited in the text.
36. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 24 April 1930 (*SL* 3.146).
37. HPL to RK, 23 February 1918 (*SL* 1.56–57).
38. Ernst Haeckel, *The Riddle of the Universe,* tr. Joseph McCabe (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1900), 263–64. Hereafter cited in the text.
39. HPL to the Kleicomolo, 8 August 1916 (*SL* 1.24).
40. HPL to MWM, 15 May 1918 (*SL* 1.63–64).
41. HPL to REH, 16 August 1932 (*SL* 4.57).
42. See Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 148–49.
43. John Fiske, *Myths and Myth-Makers: Old Tales and Superstitions Interpreted by Comparative Mythology* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1902), 23–24.
44. HPL to the Kleicomolo, April 1917 (*SL* 1.44).
45. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 1 June 1921 (*SL* 1.134).

46. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.310).

47. James Turner, *Without God, Without Creed: The Origins of Unbelief in America* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), 171–73.

48. HPL to RK, 14 September 1919 (*SL* 1.87).

49. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.112).

50. Arthur Schopenhauer, *Studies in Pessimism,* in *Essays of Arthur Schopenhauer,* tr. T. Bailey Saunders (New York: Willey Book Co., [191–]), 2.

51. HPL to RK, 23 April 1921 (*SL* 1.130).

52. HPL to JFM, 1 March 1923 (*SL* 1.211).

53. HPL to RK, 14 September 1919 (*SL* 1.86).

54. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 1 June 1921 (*SL* 1.134).

55. HPL to RK, 13 May 1921 (*SL* 1.132).

56. HPL to FBL, 17 July 1921 (*SL* 1.142).

Chapter 11: Dunsanian Studies

1. *The Gods of Pegana* (Boston: John W. Luce, n.d.), 1.
2. *Patches of Sunlight* (London: William Heinemann, 1938), 29–30.
3. Oscar Wilde, "Preface" to *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (1891).
4. *Patches of Sunlight,* 9.
5. Ibid., 135.
6. HPL to Fritz Leiber, 15 November 1936 (*SL* 5.354).
7. HPL to CAS, 14 April 1929 (*SL* 2.328).
8. HPL to Richard Ely Morse, 28 July 1932 (ms.).
9. See note 7.
10. HPL to CAS, 11 January 1923 (*SL* 1.203).
11. HPL to RK, 9 November 1919 (*SL* 1.91).
12. *While the Sirens Slept* (London: Jarrolds, 1944), 21.
13. Quoted by HPL in *SL* 1.93 (see note 11).
14. Lord Dunsany, Letter to Mary Faye Durr (10 July 1920), *United Amateur* 20, No. 2 (November 1920): 22–23.
15. *Tryout* 5, No. 12 (December 1919): 12.
16. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 83.
17. HPL to FBL, 3 June 1923 (*SL* 1.234).
18. C. L. Moore to HPL, 30 January 1936 (ms., JHL).
19. HPL to RK, 3 December 1919 (*SL* 1.93).
20. Lord Dunsany, *A Dreamer's Tales* (Boston: John W. Luce, n.d.), 60.
21. Alfred Galpin, "Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur* 19, No. 4 (March 1920): 84.
22. Cf. the chronology of tales included in his letter to FBL, 8 November 1923 (AHT), where "The Street" is placed between "The White Ship" and "The Doom That Came to Sarnath."
23. HPL to FBL, 19 November 1920 (AHT).
24. "I echo your wish that 'The Street' might be professionally published and widely read . . ." Ibid.
25. *A Dreamer's Tales,* 78.
26. "In the Land of Time" (from *Time and the Gods*), *The Book of Wonder* (New York: Modern Library, 1918), 176.
27. *The Book of Wonder,* 16.

28. Carl Buchanan, "'The Terrible Old Man': A Myth of the Devouring Father," *LS* No. 29 (Fall 1993): 19–31.

29. HPL to FBL, 19 November 1920 (*SL* 1.121).

30. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 35.

31. See further my article, "'The Tree' and Ancient History" (*Nyctalops,* April 1991), in *Primal Sources,* 162–66.

32. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 10 November 1936 (*SL* 5.348).

33. *A Dreamer's Tales,* 87.

34. HPL to RK, 21 May 1920 (*SL* 1.116–17).

35. HPL to FBL, 19 November 1920 (*SL* 1.121).

36. *The Book of Wonder,* 117.

37. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*SL* 1.106).

38. HPL to RK, 23 April 1921 (*SL* 1.128).

39. *The Gods of Pegana,* 35.

40. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.110).

41. HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.107).

42. *SL* 1.93 (see note 11).

43. Lord Dunsany, Letter to AD (28 March 1952), quoted in *LS* No. 14 (Spring 1987): 38.

44. For an exhaustive treatment of Dunsany's writing, see my *Lord Dunsany: Master of the Anglo-Irish Imagination* (Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1995). I did manage to prepare a selection of Dunsany's stories for Penguin Classics (*In the Land of Time and Other Fantasy Tales,* 2004), and I have also prepared editions of *The Complete Jorkens Stories* (San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2004–05; 3 vols.) and of Dunsany's final, previously unpublished novel, *The Pleasures of a Futuroscope* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003), but it still does not seem feasible to say that a genuine Dunsany renaissance is under way.

Chapter 12: A Stranger in This Century

1. HPL to the Gallomo, 11 December 1919 (*SL* 1.94–97).
2. Turner related this theory to me as we were preparing the corrected edition of *At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels* (Arkham House, 1985).
3. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 10 June 1929 (*SL* 2.353).
4. *Dreams and Fancies* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1962), 46; see David E. Schultz, ed., *Commonplace Book* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1987), 1.viii.
5. HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.106).
6. See S. T. Joshi and Darrell Schweitzer, *Lord Dunsany: A Bibliography* (Metuchen, NJ: Scarecrow Press, 1993), 10.
7. HPL to RK, 7 March 1920 (*SL* 1.110).
8. Poe, *Collected Works,* 2.204.
9. HPL to FBL, 26 January 1924 (*SL* 1.287).
10. HPL to Arthur Harris, 1 May 1921 (ms., JHL).
11. HPL to Edwin Baird, [c. October 1923]; *Weird Tales* (March 1924).
12. "The Vivisector," *Wolverine* No. 11 (November 1921); rpt. in *The Vivisector* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990), 9.
13. Sam Moskowitz, *Under the Moons of Mars,* 339.
14. HPL to RHB, 28 July 1932; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 34.
15. Henry R. Chace, *Owners and Occupants of the Lots, Houses and Shops in the Town of Providence, Rhode Island in 1798* (Providence: Privately printed, 1914), plate III. I am grateful to Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, for pointing out this datum.
16. See further my article, "The Sources for 'From Beyond'" (*CoC,* Eastertide 1986), in *Primal Sources,* 167–71.
17. *SL* 1.160–62; the letter is misdated in *SL* as December 14, 1921.
18. George T. Wetzel's discussion of this historical connexion ("The Cthulhu Mythos: A Study" [1972], in Joshi, *Four Decades,* 82–83) is wildly erroneous.
19. Will Murray, "Behind the Mask of Nyarlathotep," *LS* No. 25 (Fall 1991): 25–29.
20. HPL to MWM, 18 September 1932 (*SL* 4.65).

21. Margaret Chaney, *Tesla: Man out of Time* (Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1981); quoted in Murray (n. 19 above).

22. HPL to RHB, [1 December 1934]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 191.

23. HPL to RK, 21 May 1920 (*SL* 1.116).

24. Alfred Galpin, "Department of Public Criticism," *United Amateur* 21, No. 2 (November 1921): 21.

25. See Will Murray, "In Search of Arkham Country," *LS* No. 13 (Fall 1986): 54–67; Robert D. Marten, "Arkham Country: In Rescue of the Lost Searchers," *LS* No. 39 (Summer 1998): 1–20.

26. HPL to REH, 4 October 1930 (*SL* 3.175).

27. HPL to FBL, 11 December 1923 (*SL* 1.275).

28. Maurice Lévy, *Lovecraft: A Study in the Fantastic,* 15–16.

29. Colin Wilson, *The Strength to Dream* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1962), 5.

30. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.162).

31. See further my article, "Lovecraft and the *Regnum Congo*" (*CoC,* Yuletide 1983), in *Primal Sources,* 172–76.

32. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.306).

33. See Jason C. Eckhardt, "The Cosmic Yankee," in *An Epicure in the Terrible,* ed. Schultz and Joshi, 89–90.

34. HPL to MWM, 29 August 1916 (AHT).

35. RHB to AD, 14 June 1944 (ms., SHSW).

36. George T. Wetzel, "The Research of a Biblio," in *Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Memoirs, Critiques, and Bibliographies* (North Tonawanda, NY: SSR Publications, 1955), 41.

37. HPL to FBL, 26 January 1921 (*SL* 1.122).

38. Ibid.

39. William Fulwiler, "Reflections on 'The Outsider,'" *LS* No. 2 (Spring 1980): 3–4.

40. Donald R. Burleson, "On Lovecraft's Themes: Touching the Glass," in *An Epicure in the Terrible,* ed. Schultz and Joshi, 135.

41. Colin Wilson, *The Strength to Dream,* 8.

42. Oscar Wilde, *Works* (London: Spring Books, 1963), 515, 526.

43. See note 18.

44. *Three Gothic Novels* (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1968), 379. This passage was brought to my attention by Forrest Jackson.

45. Ibid., 371.

46. HPL to JVS, 19 June 1931 (*SL* 3.379).
47. RHB, *On Lovecraft and Life,* 16.
48. W. Paul Cook, "A Plea for Lovecraft," *Ghost* No. 3 (May 1945): 56.
49. HPL to LDC, 2 October 1925 (ms., JHL). In his memoir (*In Memoriam* [1993 ed.], 31) Cook claims that he had set "The Outsider" in type for the *Vagrant* but that he was not sure whether it had ever actually been published there; this seems, however, a lapse of memory.

Chapter 13: The High Tide of My Life

1. Winfield Townley Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 17.
2. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 1 June 1921 (*SL* 1.133).
3. HPL to FBL, 4 June 1921 (*SL* 1.135).
4. *SL* 1.134 (note 2).
5. Faig, *Parents,* 40.
6. HPL to MWM, 5 April 1931 (*SL* 3.370).
7. HPL to RK, 12 June 1921 (*SL* 1.140).
8. HPL to AEPG, 27 August 1921 (ms., JHL).
9. HPL to AEPG, 19 August 1921 (*SL* 1.146–47).
10. Ibid. (ms., JHL; this portion not in *SL*).
11. HPL to RK, 21 August 1919 (*SL* 1.86).
12. HPL to MWM, 15 June 1925 (ms., JHL).
13. Quoted in [Horace L. Lawson], "Editorial," *Wolverine* No. 13 (December 1922): 13.
14. Anthony F. Moitoret, "Anent the United Amateur," *United Official Quarterly* (October 1922): 8.
15. HPL to John T. Dunn, 28 June 1916; *Books at Brown,* 184.
16. HPL to RK, 16 July 1919; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 161,
17. See note 13 (14).
18. Paul J. Campbell, "The Official Organ as a Political Issue," *Liberal,* Special Issue (June 1922): 1–2.
19. "I suppose you received the card announcing United election results, with its astonishing and inexplicable mention of Mrs. Greene (who apparently knows nothing about it) as president." HPL to FBL, 18 September 1923 (AHT).
20. Sonia H. Lovecraft, "President's Message," *United Amateur* 23, No. 1 (May 1924): 11–14.
21. Found in AHT; also published in *Interesting Items* No. 540 (January 1924): [1–3].
22. All letters by Lawson to HPL are in JHL and NYPL.
23. R. Alain Everts ("Mrs. Howard Phillips Lovecraft," *Nyctalops* 2, No. 1 [April 1973]: 45), having interviewed Sonia in her old age, claims that she first met Lovecraft at a Hub Club meeting; but this seems to be an

error. Everts writes: “Sonia stopped in Boston, and at one of the Hub Club meetings, Ed Cole, Edith Miniter and Michael White jokingly sat her down next to the reticent and shy Howard Lovecraft, never knowing that Sonia would set her sights on him as her next husband.” But Lovecraft makes no mention of Sonia in any of his accounts of the Hub Club gatherings in early 1921, and he does not appear to have met Michael White until 1923. Sonia’s remark—“I first met him at the Boston Convention when the amateur journalists gathered there for this conclave, in 1921” (*Private Life,* 15)—suggests the national convention rather than local or regional ones.

24. Sonia H. Davis, [“Autobiography”] (ms., JHL).

25. RK, “A Memoir of Lovecraft,” in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 197.

26. HPL to RK, 11 August 1921 (*SL* 1.143).

27. See Faig, *Some of the Descendants,* 176–77, citing research conducted by R. Alain Everts.

28. Alfred Galpin, “Memories of a Friendship,” in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 170–71.

29. Davis, *Private Life,* 10.

30. Sonia H. Davis, [“Autobiography”] (ms., JHL).

31. HPL to RK, 30 July 1921 (*SL* 1.142).

32. HPL to Winifred Virginia Jackson, 7 June 1921 (*SL* 1.137–38).

33. Faig, *Parents,* 22.

34. HPL to RK, 21 September 1921 (*SL* 1.152).

35. Ibid., 153.

36. HPL to RK, 21 September 1921; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 216.

37. HPL to the Gallomo, 21 August 1921; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 104.

38. Davis, *Private Life,* 24.

39. Kleiner, “A Memoir of Lovecraft,” in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 200.

40. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 29 August 1918; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 38.

41. The flyer is in JHL.

42. HPL to FBL and Alfred Galpin, 1 May 1923 (*SL* 1.225).

43. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*SL* 1.103).

44. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 14 June 1922 (*SL* 1.185–86).

45. Davis, *Private Life,* 15.

46. David V. Bush, *Poems of Mastery and Love Verse* (St Louis: Lincoln Press, 1922), 41.

47. HPL to JFM, 17 May 1923 (AHT).

48. HPL's annotations to David Van Bush to The Symphony Literary Service, 28 February 1917 (ms., JHL).

49. David Van Bush to HPL, 24 July 1920 (ms., JHL).

50. HPL to LDC, 29 September 1922 (*SL* 1.199).

51. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 67.

52. HPL to RK, 23 January 1920 (*SL* 1.106).

53. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 3 October 1921 (*SL* 1.154).

54. HPL to RK, 7 October 1921 (*SL* 1.157).

55. HPL to FBL, 8 October 1921 (*SL* 1.158).

56. See note 53.

57. HPL to RK, 12 March 1922 (*SL* 1.167).

58. HPL to RK, 17 June 1922 (*SL* 1.188).

59. HPL to RK, 10 February 1920 (*SL* 1.108).

60. See note 58.

61. HPL to Samuel Loveman, 17 November [1922]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994), 9.

62. HPL to FBL, 8 February 1922 (*SL* 1.166).

63. HPL to Wilfred Blanch Talman, 10 November 1936 (*SL* 5.348).

64. Robert M. Price, "Erich Zann and the Rue d'Auseil," *LS* Nos. 22/23 (Fall 1990): 13–14.

65. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 31 October 1931 (ms., JHL).

66. Jacques Bergier, "Lovecraft, ce grand génie venu d'ailleurs," *Planète* No. 1 (October–November 1961): 43–46.

67. See note 57.

68. Cf. HPL to MWM, 18 May 1922 (*SL* 1.176), noting that HPL read "Hypnos" to friends in New York in early April.

69. Steven J. Mariconda, "'Hypnos': Art, Philosophy, and Insanity," in *On the Emergence of "Cthulhu" and Other Observations* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1995), 49–52.

70. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.298–301).

71. *SL* 1.176 (note 68).

72. Davis, *Private Life,* 16.

73. *SL* 1.180 (note 68).

74. Davis, *Private Life,* 17.

75. *SL* 1.181 (note 68).

76. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 3 May 1922 (*SL* 1.174).
77. HPL to LDC, 25 May 1922 (postcard) (ms., JHL).
78. HPL to FBL, 9 June 1922 (*SL* 1.184).
79. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 14 June 1922 (*SL* 1.187).
80. HPL to FBL, 21 June 1922 (*SL* 1.189).
81. HPL to LDC, 29 June 1922 (postcard) (ms., JHL).
82. Davis, *Private Life,* 19.
83. Sonia H. Davis to Winfield Townley Scott, 11 December 1948 (ms., JHL).
84. See Everts, "Mrs. Howard Phillips Lovecraft," 45.
85. Davis, *Private Life,* 19.
86. HPL to LDC, 16 July 1922 (postcard) (ms., JHL).
87. HPL to LDC, 4 August 1922 (*SL* 1.191).
88. HPL to LDC, 9 August 1922 (ms., JHL).
89. Ibid.
90. HPL to FBL, 8 January 1924 (*SL* 1.281–82).
91. HPL to JFM, 8 January 1924 (*SL* 1.280).
92. HPL to CAS, 12 August 1922 (*SL* 1.193).
93. The publication of a three-volume edition of Smith's *Complete Poems and Translations* (Hippocampus Press, 2007–08) was the culmination of decades of work by my coeditor, David E. Schultz.
94. See *The Shadow of the Unattained: The Letters of George Sterling and Clark Ashton Smith* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2005).
95. George Sterling's *Complete Poetry* is scheduled for publication in 2011 by Hippocampus Press.
96. HPL to CAS, 25 March 1923 (*SL* 1.213–14).
97. See Paul Livingston Keil, "I Met Lovecraft," *Phoenix* 3, No. 6 (July 1944): 149.
98. HPL to LDC, 29 September 1922 (ms., JHL).
99. Ibid.
100. The story is listed in Lovecraft's chronologies as written in 1922, prior to "The Lurking Fear," which was clearly written in November.
101. Steven J. Mariconda, "'The Hound'—A Dead Dog?" (*CoC,* Eastertide 1986), in *On the Emergence of "Cthulhu,"* 45–49.
102. HPL to FBL, February 1924 (*SL* 1.292–93).
103. HPL to MWM, [c. August 1922] (AHT).
104. HPL to Harry O. Fischer, [late February 1937] (*SL* 5.418).

105. HPL to RK, 30 July 1921; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 209.
106. HPL to FBL, 9 June 1922 (*SL* 1.185).
107. HPL to Winifred V. Jackson, 7 October 1921 (ms., JHL).
108. HPL to FBL, 9 June 1922 (AHT).
109. In a letter to Samuel Loveman (17 November [1922]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett,* 9) HPL announced not having started the story; by early December he had sent it to CAS (HPL to CAS, 2 December 1922 [*SL* 1.201]).
110. See "Observations on Several Parts of America" (1928).
111. HPL to JFM, 19 October 1929 (*SL* 3.31).
112. HPL to Samuel Loveman, 29 April [1923]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett,* 16.
113. HPL to CAS, 14 May 1926 (*SL* 2.50).
114. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 16 May 1934 (ms., JHL).
115. HPL to REH, 25–29 March 1933 (*SL* 4.170).
116. In a letter to Kleiner (11 January 1923 [*SL* 1.203] he dates the trip to "Monday"; in a later letter (HPL to JFM, 12 March 1930 [*SL* 3.126]) he states it was December 17, which is a Sunday. In "Mrs. Miniter—Estimates and Recollections" he oddly states that Miniter and Cole accompanied him to Marblehead; but perhaps this refers to a later visit.
117. HPL to RK, 11 January 1923 (*SL* 1.204).
118. Ibid.
119. HPL to JFM, 12 March 1930 (*SL* 3.126–27).

Chapter 14: For My Own Amusement

1. Truman J. Spencer, *The History of Amateur Journalism* (New York: The Fossils, 1957), 70.
2. HPL to LDC, 27 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 153.
3. RK, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft," *Californian* 5, No. 1 (Summer 1937): 6.
4. HPL to Ralph Babcock, [1930s]; published as "The Voice from the Grave," *Scarlet Cockerel* No. 15 (January 1941): 15–19.
5. HPL to LDC, 31 August 1922 (AHT).
6. See HPL to RK, 11 January 1923; *Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner,* 224.
7. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 23 and 24 February [1923] (mss., JHL).
8. HPL to Samuel Loveman, 24 March [1923]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett,* 11–12.
9. HPL to Samuel Loveman, 29 April [1923]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett,* 16.
10. Ibid.
11. HPL to RK, 29 April 192[3] (*SL* 1.131). The letter is misdated to 1921 in *SL.*
12. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925 (ms., JHL).
13. "My card sent from Salem last month . . .": HPL to CAS, 25 March 1923 (*SL* 1.213). Cf. also HPL to LDC, [9 Feb. 1923] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
14. See note 8.
15. HPL to FBL and Alfred Galpin, 1 May 1923 (*SL* 1.219–20).
16. See note 9.
17. Ibid.
18. HPL to FBL, 3 June 1923 (*SL* 1.233).
19. Davis, *Private Life,* 18.
20. Cole, "Ave atque Vale!"(*Olympian,* Autumn 1940), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 101.
21. HPL to Robert E. Moe, 13 February 1935 (ms., JHL).
22. HPL to MWM, 31 July [1923] (ms., JHL).
23. HPL to FBL, 4 September 1923 (*SL* 1.248).
24. HPL to LDC, [15 September 1923] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
25. HPL to FBL, 21 September 1923 (*SL* 1.251).
26. HPL to JFM, 29 March 1923 (AHT).

27. HPL to JFM, 3 May 1923 (*SL* 1.226).
28. See Robert E. Weinberg, *The Weird Tales Story* (West Linn, OR: FAX Collector's Editions, 1977), 3.
29. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 84.
30. See note 27.
31. HPL to JFM, 29 May 1923 (AHT).
32. HPL to MWM, 19 October 1924 (AHT).
33. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, [1932] (*SL* 4.4).
34. HPL to FBL, 3 June 1923 (*SL* 1.233–34).
35. Ibid.
36. *SL* 1.250 (note 25).
37. Steven J. Mariconda, "Baring-Gould and the Ghouls: The Influence of *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages* on 'The Rats in the Walls'" (*CoC,* St John's Eve 1983), in *On the Emergence of "Cthulhu,"* 53–56.
38. HPL to JVS, 8–22 November 1933 (ms., JHL).
39. Irvin S. Cobb, "The Unbroken Chain," in *On an Island That Cost $24.00* (New York: George H. Doran Co., 1926), 66–67.
40. HPL to FBL, 8 November 1923 (*SL* 1.259).
41. See Sam Moskowitz, *A. Merritt: Reflections in the Moon Pool* (Philadelphia: Oswald Train, 1985), 50–52.
42. HPL to C. L. Moore, 2 July 1936 (*SL* 5.181).
43. See HPL to FBL, 7 October 123 (*SL* 1.255).
44. HPL to CAS, [3 October 1933] (ms., JHL).
45. HPL to REH, 2–5 November 1933 (*SL* 4.297).
46. HPL to REH, 4 October 1930 (*SL* 3.178, 182–83).
47. HPL to LDC, 30 March 1924; *Letters from New York,* 53.
48. *New Statesman* (9 September 1921): 611.
49. Muriel E. Eddy, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft," in *Rhode Island on Lovecraft,* ed. Donald M. Grant and Thomas Hadley (Providence: Grant-Hadley, 1945), 14. Not included in *Lovecraft Remembered.*
50. Muriel E. Eddy, *The Gentleman from Angell Street,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 49–50.
51. *SL* 1.254 (note 45).
52. HPL to JFM, 28 October 1923 (*SL* 1.257).
53. Quoted in AD's prefatory note to "Three Stories" by C. M. Eddy, Jr, in *The Dark Brotherhood and Other Pieces* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1966), 97.

54. See note 54.
55. Quoted in Derleth (n. 55).
56. See note 53.
57. *SL* 1.264 (note 42).
58. HPL to Edwin Baird, [c. November 1923]; *Weird Tales* (March 1924).
59. See note 54.
60. HPL to AD, [7 December 1929]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.234.
61. "In the Editor's Study" (*Conservative,* July 1923).
62. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 1 June 1921 (*SL* 1.134).
63. HPL to RK, 25 August 1918 (*SL* 1.73).
64. W. Jackson Bate, *The Burden of the Past and the English Poet* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1970), 21.
65. HPL to JFM, 1 April 1927 (*SL* 2.123).
66. Edward Hale Bierstadt, *Dunsany the Dramatist* (Boston: Little, Brown, rev. ed. 1919), 160.
67. T. S. Eliot, "The Metaphysical Poets" (1921), *Selected Essays* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1950), 248.
68. HPL to MWM, 18 May 1922 (*SL* 1.180).
69. HPL to FBL, 11 December 1923 (*SL* 1.275).
70. HPL to FBL, 13 May 1923 (*SL* 1.229).
71. HPL to FBL, 20 February 1924 (*SL* 1.315).
72. HPL to FBL, 8 January 1924 (*SL* 1.283).
73. Michael White, "Poets of Amateur Journalism: III. The Poetry of Samuel Loveman," *Oracle* 3, No. 4 (December 1922): 12–17.
74. Alfred Galpin, "A Critic of Poetry," *Oracle* 4, No. 2 (August 1923): 8–10.
75. HPL to Samuel Loveman, 24 March [1923]; *Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett,* 15.
76. HPL to FBL, 26 May 1923 (*SL* 1.230).
77. See Peter Ackroyd, *T. S. Eliot: A Life* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1984), 127.
78. *Freeman* (17 January 1923): 453.
79. See note 78.
80. HPL to JVS, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.159).
81. Barton L. St Armand and John H. Stanley, "H. P. Lovecraft's *Waste Paper:* A Facsimile and Transcript of the Original Draft," *Books at Brown*

26 (1978): 40.

82. HPL to AD, 2 January 1927 (*SL* 2.96).

83. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (*SL* 4.14).

84. HPL to CAS, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.195).

85. HPL to Myrta Alice Little, 17 May 1921; *LS* No. 26 (Spring 1992): 28.

86. HPL to CAS, 16 November 1926 (*SL* 2.90).

87. HPL to JFM, 26 May 1923 (*SL* 1.231).

88. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 75.

89. *New York Times* (12 April 1923): 1.

90. HPL to JFM, 23 September 1923 (*SL* 1.253).

91. HPL to JFM, 10 February 1923 (*SL* 1.207).

92. *Twilight of the Idols* [1888], in *Twilight of the Idols and The Anti-Christ,* tr. R. J. Hollingdale (Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin, 1968), 93.

93. *SL* 1.208 (note 93).

94. HPL to MWM, 24 November 1923 (*SL* 1.268–72).

95. HPL to Samuel Loveman, [5 June 1924] (*SL* 1.277).

96. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.294).

Chapter 15: Ball and Chain

1. HPL to MWM, 18 May 1922 (*SL* 1.179).
2. Lord Dunsany, "A City of Wonder," in *Tales of Three Hemispheres* (Boston: John W. Luce Co., 1919), 64.
3. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 26 February 1932 (*SL* 4.21).
4. FBL, *Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Dreamer on the Nightside* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1975), p 46–47.
5. Kleiner, "A Memoir of Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 197–98.
6. Muriel Eddy, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft," in *Rhode Island on Lovecraft,* 20.
7. HPL to JFM, 12 March 1924 (*SL* 1.326).
8. HPL to LDC, [4 March 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
9. HPL to LDC, 9 March 1924 (*SL* 1.319–22).
10. Sonia H. Davis, *Private Life,* 18.
11. HPL to CAS, 25 January 1924 (*SL* 1.285).
12. HPL to Edwin Baird, 3 February 1924 (*SL* 1.298).
13. Davis, *Private Life,* 18.
14. Sonia H. Greene to LDC, 9 February 1924 (AHT).
15. *SL* 1.325 (note 7).
16. HPL to FBL, 21 March 1924 (*SL* 1.329).
17. Koki, 89.
18. Note to Sonia H. Davis, "The Psychic Phenomenon of Love" (ms., JHL).
19. "Lovecraft on Love," *Arkham Collector* No. 8 (Winter 1971): 244.
20. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924 (ms., JHL).
21. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 18 November 1934 (ms., JHL).
22. HPL to FBL, 14 February 1924 (*SL* 1.311–12).
23. Davis, *Private Life,* 18.
24. See *SL* 1.331 (note 16).
25. HPL to MWM, 24 November 1923 (*SL* 1.269).
26. Davis, *Private Life,* 11–12.
27. *SL* 1.332 (note 16).
28. *SL* 1.333 (note 16).
29. HPL to JVS, 29 May 1933 (*SL* 4.191).

30. HPL to LDC, 22–23 December 1924 (ms., JHL).
31. *SL* 1.332 (note 16).
32. HPL to FBL, 7 February 1924 (*SL* 1.304).
33. *SL* 1.332 (note 16).
34. *SL* 1.304 (note 32).
35. Robert E. Weinberg, *The Weird Tales Story,* 4.
36. *SL* 1.304 (note 32).
37. HPL to LDC, 30 March 1924; *Letters from New York,* 52–53.
38. HPL and Sonia H. Greene to LDC, [5 March 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
39. HPL to LDC, 9 March 1924; *Letters from New York,* 43.
40. See Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 40.
41. HPL to LDC, 1 August 1924 (*SL* 1.341).
42. Kleiner, "A Memoir of Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 201.
43. Koki (106) claims that Samuel Loveman told him that Florence actually did live with Sonia and Lovecraft for the first few months of their marriage, but I believe this to be a misremembrance on Loveman's part. He was, in any case, not in New York at this time, arriving only in September 1924.
44. See R. Alain Everts, *Lovecraft's Daughter* (a three-part article distributed through the Esoteric Order of Dagon amateur press association in mailings 38 [Roodmas 1982], 39 [Lammas 1982], and 41 [Candlemas 1983]).
45. Geoffrey Perrett, *America in the Twenties: A History* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1982), 323.
46. Sonia H. Greene to LDC, 9 February 1924 (AHT).
47. Sonia H. Davis, ["Autobiography"] (ms., JHL).
48. *SL* 1.303 (note 12).
49. HPL to LDC, [10 March 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
50. HPL to LDC, 9 March 1924; *Letters from New York,* 38.
51. *SL* 1.337 (note 41).
52. Cf. FBL to HPL, [20 December 1928] (ms., JHL): ". . . the Thompson [*sic*] whose *What Is Man* you reviewed for *The Reading Lamp* several years ago."
53. HPL to LDC, [28 May 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
54. Sonia H. Davis, ["Autobiography"] (ms., JHL).

55. I am grateful to A. Langley Searles for some of this information on Yonkers.

56. HPL to RK, 16 November 1916 (*SL* 1.33).

57. *SL* 1.343 (note 41).

58. HPL to the Homeland Company, 29 July 1924 (ms., JHL).

59. See note 54.

60. Cashman, *America in the Age of the Titans,* 165; see also Geoffrey Moorhouse, *Imperial City: The Rise and Fall of New York* (London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1988), 84.

61. *SL* 1.337 (note 41).

62. *SL* 1.338 (note 41).

63. HPL to LDC, [10 September 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

64. Letter of application, 1924 (*SL* 1.xxvii–xxviii).

65. Kleiner, "A Memoir of Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 201–2.

66. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 67.

67. *New York Times* (10 August 1924): 10:6.

68. M. A. Katherman to HPL, 11 August 1924 (ms., JHL).

69. HPL to LDC, [19 March 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

70. HPL to LDC, [18 September 1924] (postcard); *Letters from New York,* 62.

71. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924; *Letters from New York,* 70.

72. See Robert E. Weinberg in *Science Fiction, Fantasy, and Weird Fiction Magazines,* ed. Marshall Tymn and Mike Ashley (Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1985), 727.

73. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 75).

74. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 80–82.

75. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 74).

76. HPL to LDC, 18 March 1924 (*SL* 1.328).

77. Harry Houdini to HPL, 28 September 1924; quoted in HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924; *Letters from New York,* 75.

78. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924 (ms., JHL).

79. HPL to LDC, 4–6 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 84.

80. See Sonia H. Greene Lovecraft, "President's Message," *United Amateur* 24, No. 1 (July 1925): 9.

81. HPL to MWM, 15 June 1925 (*SL* 2.15).

82. HPL to JFM, 3 February 1932 (*SL* 4.13).

83. *SL* 2.15 (note 81).
84. HPL to LDC, [11–12 November 1924]; *Letters from New York,* 88.
85. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 92.
86. Davis, *Private Life,* 10.
87. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 67).
88. See note 85 (*Letters from New York,* 94).
89. Ibid.
90. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924 (ms., JHL).
91. *SL* 2.16 (note 81).
92. R. Alain Everts, "Howard Phillips Lovecraft and Sex; or, The Sex Life of a Gentleman," *Nyctalops* 2, No. 2 (July 1974): 19.
93. Sonia H. Davis, "Memories of Lovecraft: I," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 275.
94. Ibid., 275–76.
95. See note 92.
96. Davis, *Private Life,* 15.
97. HPL to FBL, February 1924 (*SL* 1.292).
98. Davis, *Private Life,* 13.
99. See note 93.
100. *SL* 2.19 (note 81).
101. See Mara Kirk Hart, "Walkers in the City: George Willard Kirk and Howard Phillips Lovecraft in New York City, 1924–1926," *LS* No. 28 (Spring 1993): 3. Excerpts only reprinted in *Lovecraft Remembered.*
102. HPL to LDC, 29 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 99–100.
103. Davis, *Private Life,* 12.
104. HPL to AD, 16 January 1931 (*SL* 3.262).
105. HPL to FBL, 21 March 1924 (*SL* 1.329).
106. HPL to JFM, 6 May 1924 (*SL* 1.337).
107. A complete list of his novels is as follows: *Dickon Bend the Bow and Other Wonder Tales* (Akron, OH: Saalfield Publishing Co., 1903); *The Hermit of the Culebra Mountains; or, The Adventures of Two Schoolboys in the Far West* (New York: Dutton, 1904); *The Lost Treasure Cave; or, Adventures with the Cowboys of Colorado* (New York: Dutton, 1905); *The Boy Forty-niners; or, Across the Plains and Mountains to the Goldmines of California in a Prairie-Schooner* (New York: McClure Co., 1908); *In Texas with Davy Crockett: A Story of the Texas War of Independence* (New York: Dutton, 1908; rpt. 1937); *With Kit Carson in the Rockies: A Tale of the*

Beaver Country (New York: Dutton, 1909); *Fighting with Fremont: A Tale of the Conquest of California* (New York: Dutton, 1910); *The Cave of Gold: A Tale of California in '49* (New York: Dutton, 1911); *The Totem of Black Hawk: A Tale of Pioneer Days in Northwestern Illinois and the Black Hawk War* (Chicago: A. C. McClurg & Co., 1914); *The Lost Nation* (New York: Dutton, 1918); *Buried Treasure: A Tale of an Old House* (New York: Duffield & Co., 1919); *Tonty of the Iron Hand* (New York: Dutton, 1925); *Daniel Du Luth; or, Adventuring on the Great Lakes* (New York: Dutton, 1926); *For the Glory of France* (New York: Dutton, 1927); *The Shadow of the Iroquois* (New York: Dutton, 1928); *The Shores of Adventure; or, Exploring in the New World with Jacques Cartier* (New York: Dutton, 1929).

108. Hart (note 101), 4.

109. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924 (ms., JHL).

110. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 51.

111. Ibid., 157–58.

112. Davis, *Private Life,* 18–19.

113. Talman, *The Normal Lovecraft* (Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1973), 16.

114. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 126.

115. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 65).

116. HPL to LDC, 1 August 1924 (AHT).

117. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 69).

118. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 70).

119. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 72).

120. Ibid. (ms., JHL; not published in *Letters from New York*).

121. John Unterecker, "Introduction" to *Poems of Hart Crane* (New York: Liveright, 1986), xxii.

122. Hart Crane, Letter to Grace Hart Crane and Elizabeth Belden Hart (14 September 1924), *Letters of Hart Crane and His Family,* ed. Thomas S. W. Lewis (New York: Columbia University Press, 1974), 342–43.

123. Kleiner, "A Memoir of Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 200.

124. HPL and AEPG to LDC, [26 September 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

125. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924 (ms., JHL).

126. HPL to LDC, 4–6 November 1924 (ms., JHL).

127. Hart Crane, Letter to Grace Hart Crane and Elizabeth Belden Hart (14 October 1924), *Letters of Hart Crane and His Family,* 354.

128. See note 126 (*Letters from New York,* 82).

129. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 84).

130. Faye Ringel Hazel, "Some Strange New England Mortuary Practices: Lovecraft Was Right," *LS* No. 29 (Fall 1993): 13–18.

131. HPL to CAS, [11 February 1934] (ms.).

132. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 93.

133. HPL to LDC, 4–6 November 1924 (ms., JHL).

134. Hart, 5.

135. HPL to LDC, 4–6 November 1924; *Lettters from New York,* 79n.

136. See the reference to "my late visitor Sechrist": HPL to FBL, February 1924 (*SL* 1.292).

137. *SL* 1.341–42 (note 41).

138. HPL to LDC, [11 November 1924]; *Letters from New York,* 90.

139. HPL to LDC, [11 November 1924] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

140. HPL to LDC, [12 November 1924] (ms., JHL).

141. HPL to LDC, 17–18 November 1924 (ms., JHL).

142. Ibid.

143. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 92–93).

144. HPL to LDC, 29 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 98.

145. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 98–99).

146. Hart, 6.

Chapter 16: The Assaults of Chaos

1. "Diary: 1925" (ms., JHL).
2. HPL to LDC, 13–16 September 1922; *Letters from New York,* 24.
3. HPL to MWM, 15 June 1925; *Letters from New York,* 143.
4. HPL to LDC, 23–24 September 1925 (ms., JHL).
5. See note 3.
6. HPL to LDC, 7 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 164.
7. HPL to AEPG, 26 February 1925; *Letters from New York,* 114.
8. See note 3 (*Letters from New York,* 144).
9. HPL to LDC, 11 April 1925; *Letters from New York,* 119.
10. HPL to LDC, 28 May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 132.
11. HPL to LDC, 30–31 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 159.
12. HPL to LDC, 1 September 1925 (ms., JHL).
13. HPL to LDC, 22 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 227.
14. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925 and 22–23 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 247, 255.
15. HPL to LDC, 28 May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 133.
16. Sonia H. Davis, Letter to Samuel Loveman (1 January 1948), quoted in Gerry de la Ree, "When Sonia Sizzled," in Wilfred B. Talman et al., *The Normal Lovecraft,* 29.
17. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 115.
18. HPL to LDC, 29 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 102.
19. HPL to AEPG, 26 February 1925; *Letters from New York,* 113.
20. See note 9.
21. HPL to LDC, 28–30 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 213.
22. Hart, "Walkers in the City," 8.
23. RK, "After a Decade and the Kalem Club," *Californian* 4, No. 2 (Fall 1936): 47.
24. Eric Rhode, *A History of the Cinema from Its Origins to 1970* (New York: Hill & Wang, 1976), 39.
25. HPL to LDC, 27 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 151.
26. HPL to AEPG, 10 February 1925; *Letters from New York,* 111.
27. *SL* 2.18–19 (note 3).
28. HPL to LDC, 2 April 1925; *Letters from New York,* 116.
29. HPL to LDC, 11 April 1925; *Letters from New York,* 118.

30. HPL to LDC, 6 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 149.
31. HPL to LDC, 19–23 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 182.
32. HPL to LDC, 18 September 1925 (ms., JHL).
33. HPL to LDC, 24–27 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 231.
34. See note 28.
35. HPL to LDC, 11 April 1925 (ms., JHL [this portion not in *Letters from New York*]).
36. HPL to LDC, 10 September 1925 (ms., JHL).
37. HPL to LDC, 25 [actually 26] May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 128–29.
38. HPL to LDC, 28 May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 129–30. The drawing by HPL that I go on to discuss is reproduced on p. 130.
39. HPL to LDC, 6 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 146.
40. HPL to LDC, 14–15 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 218.
41. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 219).
42. HPL to LDC, 20 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 225.
43. HPL to LDC, 24–27 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 232–33.
44. HPL to LDC, 24 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 185.
45. HPL to LDC, 22 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 226.
46. HPL to LDC, 2 April 1925; *Lettes from New York,* 117.
47. Hart, 10.
48. HPL to LDC, 21 April 1925 (ms., JHL).
49. Davis, *Private Life,* 27.
50. HPL to LDC, 20 May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 125.
51. HPL to LDC, 6 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 148.
52. HPL to MWM, 15 June 1925 (ms., JHL).
53. HPL to LDC, [20 July 1925] (ms., JHL).
54. HPL to LDC, 18 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 195.
55. HPL to LDC, 27 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 154.
56. HPL to FBL, 2 August 1925 (*SL* 2.20).
57. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 26 March 1927 (*SL* 2.116).
58. Davis, *Private Life,* 12.
59. HPL to CAS, 9 October 1925 (*SL* 2.28).
60. "The Incantation from Red Hook" (probably a letter to Wilfred B. Talman), in *The Occult Lovecraft* (Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1975), 28.
61. HPL to LDC, 27 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 155.

62. Ibid.
63. HPL to LDC, 8 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 167.
64. HPL to AD, 26 November 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.52.
65. See Robert M. Price, "The Humor at Red Hook," *CoC* No. 28 (Yuletide 1984): 9.
66. Davis, *Private Life,* 11.
67. Ibid., 20.
68. Ibid., 26–27.
69. Sonia H. Davis to Winfield Townley Scott, 24 September 1948 (ms., JHL).
70. HPL to LDC, 6 July 1925; *Letters from New York,* 148.
71. HPL to LDC, 11 January 1926; *Letters from New York,* 269.
72. HPL to LDC, 27 March 1926 (ms., JHL).
73. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 227.
74. See note 71 (*Letters from New York,* 271).
75. HPL to JVS, 19 November 1931 (AHT).
76. Long, 228–29.
77. HPL to LDC, 13 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 171–72.
78. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924; *Letters from New York,* 68.
79. "Little Sketches About Town," *New York Evening Press* (29 August 1924): 9; rpt. in HPL's *From the Pest Zone: Stories from New York* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003), 106.
80. See Elaine Schechter, *Perry Street—Then and Now* (New York, 1972).
81. HPL to LDC, 20 August 1924; *Letters from New York,* 60–61.
82. See further my article, "Lovecraft and Dunsany's *Chronicles of Rodriguez*" (*CoC,* Hallowmass 1992), in *Primal Sources,* 177–81.
83. HPL to LDC, 23–24 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 197.
84. HPL to LDC, 12–13 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 191.
85. HPL to LDC, 13 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 172.
86. HPL to LDC, 8 August 1925 (ms., JHL).
87. HPL to CAS, 20 September 1925 (*SL* 2.26).
88. CAS to HPL, 11 March 1930 (ms., JHL).
89. HPL to LDC, 2 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 251.
90. HPL to LDC, 13 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 252.
91. HPL to LDC, 2 October 1925 (ms., JHL).
92. HPL to LDC, 27 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 187.

93. The date is derived from Bernard Hubertus Maria Vlekke and Henry Beets, *Hollanders Who Helped Build America* (New York: American Biographical Company, 2nd ed. 1942), 223, which contains a biography of Talman whose information was presumably provided by Talman himself.

94. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 186–87).

95. HPL to LDC, 22–23 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 158.

96. HPL to LDC, 19–23 August 1925 (ms., JHL).

97. HPL to LDC, 1 September 1925 (ms., JHL).

98. HPL to LDC, 8 September 1925 (ms., JHL).

99. HPL to LDC, 12–13 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 190.

100. HPL to LDC, 28–30 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 204.

101. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 209).

102. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 210).

103. HPL to FBL, 21 March 1924 (*SL* 1.332).

104. HPL to LDC, 22 October 1925; *Letters from New York,* 227.

105. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925; *Letters from New York,* 247.

106. Ibid. (*Letters from New York,* 249).

107. HPL to JFM, 5 January 1926 (*SL* 2.36).

108. Lovecraft to LDC, 5 March 1926 and 6 March 1926 (mss., JHL).

109. Lovecraft to LDC, 12–13 April 1926 (ms., JHL).

110. *SL* 2.36 (note 107).

111. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920]; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 73.

112. HPL to LDC, 29–30 September 1924; *Letters from New York,* 63.

113. HPL to Vincent Starrett, 6 December 1927 (*SL* 2.211).

114. HPL to LDC, 13 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 253.

115. HPL to LDC, 26 January 1926; *Letters from New York,* 275.

116. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (*SL* 4.15).

117. See AD, "Introduction," *Supernatural Horror in Literature* (New York: Ben Abramson, 1945), 9–11.

118. Review of *Supernatural Horror in Literature* (Ben Abramson, 1945), *American Literature* 18 (1946): 175.

119. See *The Supernatural in Fiction* (1952); portions reprinted in my *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism* (1980), 63f. (but cf. my note ad loc.).

120. See *Elegant Nightmares: The English Ghost Story from LeFanu to Blackwood* (Athens: Ohio University Press, 1978), 32.

121. Lovecraft to CAS, [16 January 1932] (ms., JHL).

122. HPL to LDC, 6 January 1926 (postcard); *Letters from New York,* 266.

123. HPL to LDC, 11 January 1926; *Letters from New York,* 272.

124. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 29 July 1936; *Letters to Henry Kuttner* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990), 21.

125. Arthur Machen, "Novel of the White Powder," in *Tales Horror and the Supernatural* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1948), 55.

126. Poe, *Collected Works,* 3.1243.

127. Hart, "Walkers in the City," 11–16.

128. HPL to LDC, 19–23 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 182.

129. HPL to LDC, 7 August 1925 (ms., JHL).

130. HPL to LDC, 12 February 1926 (ms., JHL).

131. HPL to LDC, 6 March 1926; *Letters from New York,* 281–82.

132. "When Sonia Sizzled," 29.

133. HPL to LDC, 27 March 1926; *Letters from New York,* 282–83.

Chapter 17: Paradise Regain'd

1. HPL to Arthur Harris, 22 July 1924 (ms., JHL).
2. HPL to LDC, 2 April 1925; *Letters from New York,* 116.
3. HPL to CAS, 15 October 1927 (*SL* 2.176).
4. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925 (ms., JHL).
5. HPL to LDC, 27 July 1925 (ms., JHL).
6. HPL to LDC, 8 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 168.
7. Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 18. In his copy of *Marginalia* (where Scott's essay first appeared), now owned by Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, Benjamin Crocker Clough, a reviewer for the *Providence Journal,* has written: "So he [Loveman] told me, and I told WTS. 'Phial' I'm not sure of."
8. Hart, "Walkers in the City," 10.
9. HPL to MWM, 15 June 1925; *Letters from New York,* 144.
10. HPL to LDC, 22–23 December 1925; *Letters from New York,* 254.
11. Scott, "His Own Most Fantastic Creation," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 18–19.
12. Koki, 159.
13. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* 167.
14. HPL to LDC, 29 March 1926; *Letters from New York,* 288–89.
15. HPL to LDC, 1 April 1926; *Letters from New York,* 290–91.
16. HPL to LDC, 6 April 1926; *Letters from New York,* 293.
17. HPL to LDC, 12–13 April 1926; *Letters from New York,* 299–300.
18. Davis, *Private Life,* 14.
19. Ibid., 20.
20. Ibid., 27.
21. Ibid., 23.
22. George Gissing, *The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft* (1903; rpt. New York: E. P. Dutton, 1907), 54.
23. Gissing, 47; Davis, *Private Life,* 23.
24. Gissing, 56.
25. Gissing, 166.
26. Gissing, 280–81.
27. HPL to AD, 16 January 1931 (*SL* 3.262).
28. HPL to MWM, [2 July] 1929 (*SL* 3.5, 8).

29. Davis, *Private Life,* 27.
30. Sonia H. Davis to Samuel Loveman, 4 January 1948 (ms., JHL).
31. HPL to DW, 10 February 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 35.
32. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, 26 March 1927 (*SL* 2.117).
33. See note 31.
34. HPL to DW, 27 March 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 63.
35. HPL to DW, 12 April 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 74.
36. Davis, *Private Life,* 11.
37. HPL to LDC, 12–13 April 1926; *Letters from New York,* 301.
38. HPL to FBL, 1 May 1926 (*SL* 2.46–47).
39. Lévy, *Lovecraft: A Study in the Fantastic,* 23.
40. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 116.
41. de Camp (*Lovecraft: A Biography,* 259) maintains that Sonia was delayed by an "appointment to discuss a prospective new job." I do not know what the source of this statement is; perhaps it comes from de Camp's interview with Sonia.
42. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 116–17.
43. HPL to FBL, 1 May 1926 (ms., JHL [this portion not in *SL*]).
44. HPL to JFM, 16 May 1926 (*SL* 2.50).
45. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 87–88); HPL to RK, 21 May 1920 (*SL* 1.114–15).
46. Guy de Maupassant, "The Horla," *Tales of Supernatural Terror,* ed. and tr. Arnold Kellett (London: Pan, 1972), 114–17.
47. Robert M. Price, "HPL and HPB: Lovecraft's Use of Theosophy" (*CoC,* Roodmas 1982), in Price's *H. P. Lovecraft and the Cthulhu Mythos* (Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1990), 12–19.
48. HPL to CAS, 17 June 1926 (*SL* 2.58).
49. See HPL to AD, 5 June 1936 (*SL* 5.263).
50. HPL's first letter to de Castro (ms., JHL) is dated November 15, 1925; but this appears to be a stenographic error on HPL's part. In what appears to be de Castro's first extant letter to HPL (20 November 1927; ms., JHL) he writes: "My friend, Mr. Samuel Loveman, was kind enough to mention that you might be inclined to aid me in bringing out one or the other of my labors which sadly need revision."
51. Steven J. Mariconda, "On the Emergence of 'Cthulhu'" (*LS,* Fall 1987), in *On the Emergence of "Cthulhu,"* 59 (citing the *New York Times,* 1 March 1925).

52. HPL to LDC, 14–19 November 1925; *Letters from New York,* 247.
53. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, [January 1928] (*SL* 2.217).
54. HPL to AD, 16 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 336.
55. HPL to FBL, 22 February 1931 (*SL* 3.293).
56. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 5 July 1927 (*SL* 2.150).
57. See David E. Schultz, "The Origin of Lovecraft's 'Black Magic' Quote," *CoC* No. 48 (St John's Eve 1987): 9–13. For more on this, and on the whole subject of the Cthulhu Mythos as elaborated by HPL and others, see my *The Rise and Fall of the Cthulhu Mythos* (Poplar Bluff, MO: Mythos Books, 2008).
58. See David E. Schultz, "From Microcosm to Macrocosm: The Growth of Lovecraft's Cosmic Vision," in Schultz and Joshi, *An Epicure in the Terrible,* 212.
59. John Milton, *Paradise Lost* 1.26.
60. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 23 July 1934 (*SL* 5.10–11).
61. DW, "Lovecraft in Providence," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 313.
62. RHB, "[Memories of Lovecraft (1934)]," *On Lovecraft and Life,* 14.
63. For an exhaustive discussion of the topography of the story and other elements, see Robert D. Marten, "The Pickman Models," *LS* No. 44 (2004): 42–80.
64. HPL to AD, 25 October 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.44.
65. HPL to AD, 26 August 1926, 27 September 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.33, 37.
66. HPL to AD, 8 September 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.36.
67. HPL to AD, 2 September 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.34.
68. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 21 July 1926 (*SL* 2.61).
69. Talman, *The Normal Lovecraft,* 8.
70. HPL to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.79).
71. Davis, *Private Life,* 20.
72. HPL to LDC, [15 September 1926] (ms., JHL).
73. Ibid.
74. HPL to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.87).
75. HPL to Fritz Leiber, 15 November 1936 (*SL* 5.354).
76. HPL to the Gallomo, [April 1920] (*SL* 1.106).
77. Kenneth W. Faig, Jr, "'The Silver Key' and Lovecraft's Childhood" (*CoC,* St John's Eve 1992), in *The Unknown Lovecraft,* 148–82.
78. HPL to AD, 26 November 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.52.

79. HPL to AD, 26 July 1927; *Essential Solitude,* 1.100.
80. HPL to AD, 4 August 1928; *Essential Solitude,* 1.150–51.
81. HPL to AD, [2 August 1929]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.206.
82. HPL to FBL, 6 September 1927 (*SL* 2.164).
83. HPL to AD, 6 November 1931 (*SL* 3.433).
84. See my article, "Lovecraft and Dunsany's *Chronicles of Rodriguez*" (*CoC,* Hallowmass 1992), in *Primal Sources,* 177–81.
85. HPL to AD, [early December 1926] (*SL* 2.94).

Chapter 18: Cosmic Outsideness

1. HPL to CAS, 21–22 January 1927 (*SL* 2.99).
2. HPL to AD, [early December 1926] (*SL* 2.94).
3. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 19 December 1926 (*SL* 2.95).
4. de Camp, *Lovecraft: A Biography,* 280.
5. See Peter Cannon, "The Influence of *Vathek* on H. Lovecraft's *The Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath,*" in Joshi, *Four Decades.*
6. See my article "The Dream World and the Real World in Lovecraft" (*CoC,* Lammas 1983), in *Primal Sources,* p 90–103. Giuseppe Lippi has attempted to defend HPL on this point; see "Lovecraft's Dreamworld Revisited." *LS* No. 26 (Spring 1992): 23–25.
7. HPL to CAS, 7 November 1930 (*SL* 3.212).
8. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 26 January 1918 (*SL* 1.54–55).
9. HPL to FBL, [February 1927] (*SL* 2.100).
10. HPL to DW, 29 January 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 21.
11. HPL to AD, 9 February 1927; *Essential Solitude,* 1.68.
12. HPL to AD, 20 February 1927; *Essential Solitude,* 1.71.
13. HPL to CAS, 21 January 1927 (*SL* 2.99).
14. HPL to LDC, 24 August 1925; *Letters from New York,* 185.
15. *Rhode Island: A Guide to the Smallest State* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1937), 290.
16. HPL to LDC, 15 September 1925; *Letters from New York,* 193.
17. HPL to FBL, 11 June 1926 (*SL* 2.57).
18. See Richard Ward, "In Search of the Dread Ancestor: M. R. James' 'Count Magnus' and Lovecraft's *the Case of Charles Dexter Ward," LS* No. 36 (Spring 1997): 14–18.
19. HPL to LDC, 4 October and 25 November 1925 (mss., JHL).
20. See M. Eileen McNamara and S. T. Joshi, "Who Was the Real Charles Dexter Ward?" *LS* Nos. 19/20 (Fall 1989): 40–41, 48. Most of the information in this article is derived from discussions with Mauran's widow, Grace Mauran.
21. "Facts in the Case of H. Lovecraft" (1972), in Joshi, *Four Decades,* 178.
22. HPL to RHB, [19 March 1934]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 120.
23. HPL to CAS, 24 March 1927 (*SL* 2.114).

24. HPL to Richard Ely Morse, 13 October 1935 (ms., JHL).
25. HPL to FBL, 26 October 1926 (*SL* 2.81).
26. HPL to LDC, 1 September 1925 (ms., JHL).
27. HPL to JVS, [30 October 1931] (*SL* 3.429).
28. "A Literary Copernicus" (1949), in Joshi, *Four Decades,* 50.
29. Sam Moskowitz, "The Lore of H. Lovecraft," *Explorers of the Infinite: Shapers of Science Fiction* (Cleveland: World Publishing Co., 1963), 255.
30. Sam Moskowitz to S. T. Joshi, 11 June 1994. Moskowitz maintained, however, that he believed he read of the submission of "The Colour out of Space" to *Weird Tales* in a Lovecraft letter prior to writing his article.
31. "You're undoubtedly correct in predicting that Wright will have little use for 'The Colour Out of Space'. I shall probably try it on him as a matter of routine, but do not expect the thing to achieve the dignity of fully professional print." HPL to AD, 29 April [1927]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.85.
32. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 5 July 1927 (*SL* 2.151).
33. HPL to CAS, 17 October 1930 (AHT).
34. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 29 April 1927 (ms., JHL).
35. HPL to AD, 16 May 1927; *Essential Solitude,* 1.88.
36. HPL to AD, [21 October 1927]; *Essential Solitude* 1.111. See also HPL to DW, 19 May 1927 (*Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 106), where HPL refers to the magazine as *Mystery Magazine.*
37. HPL to DW, 1 July 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 130.
38. HPL to AD, [15 April 1927]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.83.
39. HPL to DW, 27 March 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 61.
40. HPL to AD, 2 September 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.34.
41. HPL to AD, 13 August 1926 and 31 October 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.30, 46–47.
42. HPL to DW, 13 March 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 54.
43. HPL to JFM, 1 April 1927 (*SL* 2.123).
44. HPL to DW, 21 April 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 92–93.
45. HPL to CAS, 12 May 1927 (*SL* 2.127).
46. HPL to CAS, 24 June 1927 (*SL* 2.148). Chambers's weird work (excluding *The Slayer of Souls*) has now been gathered in *The Yellow Sign and Other Stories* (Oakland, CA: Chaosium, 2000).

47. M. R. James, "An M. R. James Letter" [to Nicholas Llewelyn Davies, 12 January 1928], *Ghosts & Scholars* 8 (1986): 28–33.
48. DW to HPL, 27 September 1928; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 227.
49. HPL to JFM, 1 April 1927 (*SL* 2.122).
50. HPL to DW, 2 November 1930; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 261.
51. DW, *Sanctity and Sin: The Collected Poems and Prose Poems of Donald Wandrei* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2008), 74.
52. HPL to FBL, 10 February 1928 (*SL* 2.223).
53. HPL to DW, 21 April 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 85.
54. HPL to AD, 19 October 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.43.
55. DW to HPL, 22 June 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 118.
56. DW to HPL, 20 June 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 117.
57. DW, "Lovecraft in Providence," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 315.
58. HPL to DW, [2 August 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 138.
59. HPL to AD, 20 July 1929; *Essential Solitude,* 1.201–2.
60. DW to HPL, 30 June 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 119.
61. Wandrei, "Lovecraft in Providence," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 304–5.
62. HPL to LDC, [17 July 1927] (ms., JHL).
63. HPL to MWM, 30 July 1927 (*SL* 2.157).
64. Ibid.
65. Ibid.
66. HPL to CAS, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.192).
67. DW to HPL, [11 August 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 147.
68. HPL to DW, 23 August 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 152.
69. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 109.
70. "The Trip of Theobald," *Tryout* (September 1927).
71. HPL to LDC, [1 September 1927] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
72. HPL to FBL, [November 1927] (*SL* 2.181–84).
73. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 28 December 1927 (*SL* 2.214).
74. Paul Fatout, *Ambrose Bierce: The Devil's Lexicographer* (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1951), 8.
75. HPL to FBL, 20 May 1926 (*SL* 2.53).
76. HPL to AD, 7 November 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.48.
77. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 22 December 1927 (AHT).
78. HPL to AD, 7 November 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.48.
79. HPL to AD, 2 March [1927]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.72.

80. HPL to AD, 11 October 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.40.
81. HPL to LDC, [5 June 1928] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
82. HPL to LDC, [27 June 1928] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
83. HPL to DW, 29 February 1928; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 208.
84. HPL to AD, 20 June 1930; *Essential Solitude,* 1.267.
85. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 1 June 1928 (*SL* 2.243).
86. HPL to LDC, 25 June 1928 (ms., JHL).
87. HPL to LDC, 15 June 1928 (ms., JHL).
88. HPL to DW, [20 January 1928]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 202.
89. HPL to FBL, [December 1927] (*SL* 2.202).
90. HPL to FBL, 24 September 1927 (*SL* 2.171–72).
91. Long, "The Space-Eaters," in *Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos,* ed. AD (rev. ed. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1990), 88–89.
92. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, [November 1927] (*SL* 2.189).
93. Virgil, *The Poems of Virgil,* Translated into English Verse by James Rhoades (London: Humphrey Milford/Oxford University Press, 1921), 151.
94. *SL* 2.191 (note 92).
95. *SL* 2.197 (note 92).
96. HPL to DW, 24 November 1927 (*SL* 2.200).
97. "'The Thing in the Moonlight': A Hoax Revealed," *CoC* No. 53 (Candlemas 1988): 12–13.
98. HPL to CAS, 27 November 1927 (*SL* 2.201).
99. HPL to DW, [27 September 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 166.
100. HPL to MWM, 17 December 1914 (AHT).
101. See further my essay, "Lovecraft, Regner Lodbrog, and Olaus Wormius" (*CoC,* Eastertide 1995), in *Primal Sources,* 145–53.
102. *SL* 2.207 (note 89).
103. "Bob Davis Recalls: New Light on the Disappearance of Ambrose Bierce," *New York Sun* (17 November 1927): 6. For more on Danziger/de Castro, including his relations with HPL, see Chris Powell, "The Revised Adolphe Danziger de Castro," *LS* No. 36 (Spring 1997): 18–25.
104. Adolphe de Castro to HPL, 20 November 1927 (ms., JHL).
105. Adolphe de Castro to HPL, 5 December 1927 (ms., JHL).
106. HPL to LDC, 23 May 1928 (ms., JHL).
107. *SL* 2.208 (note 89).
108. *SL* 2.207 (note 89).

109. Adolphe de Castro to HPL, 1 April 1928 (ms., JHL).

110. HPL to DW, 5 April [1928]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 217.

111. Adolphe de Castro to HPL, 8 December 1927 (ms., JHL).

112. HPL to LDC, 23 May 1928 (ms., JHL).

113. Lewis Mumford, review of *Portrait of Ambrose Bierce, New York Herald Tribune Books* (24 March 1929): 1.

114. Napier Wilt, review of *Portrait of Ambrose Bierce, New Republic* (8 May 1929): 338.

115. Carey McWilliams, review of *Portrait of Ambrose Bierce, New York Evening Post* (30 March 1929): 10M.

116. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 22 December 1927 (*SL* 2.212). The printed text reads "can" for "cane." Neither sounds very pleasant if broken over one's head.

117. A complete list of de Castro's books is as follows: *The Monk and the Hangman's Daughter* (with Ambrose Bierce) (Chicago: F. J. Schulte, 1892); *In the Confessional and the Following* (New York & San Francisco: Western Authors' Publishing Association, 1893); *A Man, a Woman, and a Million* (London: Sands & Co., 1902); *Jewish Forerunners of Christianity* (New York: E. P. Dutton, 1903; rpt. 1926 as *Jesus Lived: Hebrew Evidences of His Existence and the Rabbis Who Believed in Him* [London: John Murray, 1904]); *Children of Fate: A Story of Passion* (New York: Brentano's, 1905); *After the Confession and Other Verses* (New York: Adolphe Danziger, 1908; London: Henry J. Drane, 1908); *Helen Polska's Lover; or, The Merchant Prince* (New York: Adolphe Danziger, 1909; London: Henry J. Drane, 1909); *In the Garden of Abdullah and Other Poems* (Los Angeles: Western Authors Publishing Association, 1916); *The World Crucified: A Photoplay of the Mundane Activity of Christ in Six Apotheoses* (Los Angeles: Western Authors Publishing Association, 1921); *Portrait of Ambrose Bierce* (New York: Century Co., 1929); *The Painter's Dream* (Los Angeles: Western Authors' Association, 1940); *The Hybrid Prince of Egypt; Plus, Song of the Arabian Desert* (Los Angeles: Western Authors Association, 1950); *Die Werte des Lebens: Beitrag zur Ethik des Ramban, Maimonides* (n.d.). At the end of *Jewish Forerunners* de Castro lists several monographs as apparently published, although he gives no dates or publishers (*Labor Unions and Strikes in Ancient Rome, The Position of Laboring Men among the Ancient Hebrews, Jesus, the Pharisee,*

Oriental Aphorisms, Two Great Jews); but I can find no evidence that these were actually published.

118. Zealia Bishop, "H. Lovecraft: A Pupil's View," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 265.

119. HPL to JFM, 23 May 1927 (*SL* 2.129).

120. HPL to AD, 6 October [1929]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.222.

121. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 9 March 1928 (*SL* 2.232).

122. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 28 August 1929 (*SL* 3.15).

123. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 1 May 1928 (*SL* 2.238).

Chapter 19: Fanlights and Georgian Steeples

1. Davis, *Private Life,* 21.
2. HPL to AD, 2 May 1928; *Essential Solitude,* 1.141.
3. HPL to DW, [7 May 1928] (postcard); *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 219.
4. HPL to JFM, 10 May 1928 (*SL* 2.239).
5. HPL to LDC, 29–30 April 1928 (ms., JHL).
6. Davis, *Private Life,* 21.
7. "Observations on Several Parts of America" (1928).
8. See note 5.
9. HPL to LDC, 14 May 1928 (ms., JHL).
10. *Weird Tales* 12, No. 2 (August 1928): 281.
11. HPL to DW, 23 November 1928; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 231.
12. See note 5.
13. HPL to LDC, [3 May 1928] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
14. HPL to RHB, 30 September 1936 (ms., JHL); *O Fortunate Floridian,* 362.
15. HPL to LDC, [12 June 1928] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
16. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 28 July 1928 (*SL* 2.245). The article is an unsigned item, "Literary Persons Meet in Guilford," *Brattleboro Daily Reformer* (18 June 1928): 1.
17. Vrest Orton, "A Weird Writer Is in Our Midst," *Brattleboro Daily Reformer* (16 June 1928): 2. The final paragraph, as quoted here, was omitted in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 409. The article was discovered by Donald R. Burleson.
18. HPL to LDC, 24 June 1924 (postcard) (ms., JHL).
19. HPL to LDC, 19 June 1928 (ms., JHL).
20. HPL to LDC, 1 July 1928 (ms., JHL).
21. HPL to LDC, 11 July 1928 (ms., JHL).
22. See note 7.
23. Ibid.
24. HPL to AD, 21 November [1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.290.
25. Letter to Edwin Baird, [c. October 1923]; *Weird Tales* (March 1924).
26. "The Mythic Hero Archetype in 'The Dunwich Horror,'" *LS* No. 4 (Spring 1981): 3–9.

27. HPL to AD, [27 September 1928]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.158.
28. HPL to LDC, 1 July 1928 (ms., JHL).
29. See Burleson, "Humour beneath Horror: Some Sources for 'The Dunwich Horror' and 'The Whisperer in Darkness,'" *LS* No. 2 (Spring 1980): 5–15.
30. See W. Paul Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 129; Burleson, "Humour beneath Horror."
31. HPL to CAS, 31 August 1928 (*SL* 2.246).
32. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 21 November 1933 (*SL* 4.322).
33. HPL to MWM, 19 January [1931] (AHT).
34. MWM to HPL, 3 August 1938 (ms., JHL).
35. MWM to HPL, 29 January 1931 (ms., JHL).
36. HPL to AD, [November 1928]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.166.
37. T. Everett Harré, "Introduction" to *Beware After Dark!* (New York: Macaulay, 1929), 11.
38. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 15 February 1929 (*SL* 2.260).
39. HPL to Carl F. Strauch, [5 November 1931], *Lovecraft Annual* 4 (2010): 55.
40. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 1 July [1929] (ms., JHL).
41. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 8 March 1929 (*SL* 2.315); "any" printed as "my" in *SL.*
42. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 20 November 1928 (ms., JHL).
43. HPL to DW, 12 September 1929; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 243–44.
44. HPL to JFM, 30 July 1929 (*SL* 3.10).
45. HPL to MWM, 4 August 1927 (ms., JHL). The recipient of the letter has until recently been thought to have been Alfred Galpin.
46. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, [18 August 1929] (postcard); in *The Normal Lovecraft,* 10.
47. Davis, *Private Life,* 21.
48. Koki, 209–10.
49. See Nelson Manfred Blake, *The Road to Reno: A History of Divorce in the United States* (New York: Macmillan, 1962), 189–202.
50. HPL to MWM, [2 July] 1929 (*SL* 3.5–6).
51. HPL to LDC, 5 April [1929] (ms., JHL).
52. HPL to LDC, 12 April 1929 (ms., JHL).
53. Ibid.

54. HPL to LDC, 30 April 1929 (ms., JHL).
55. HPL to LDC, 2 May 1929 (ms., JHL).
56. Ibid.
57. HPL to LDC, 3–4 May 1929 (ms., JHL).
58. HPL to LDC, 6 May 1929 (ms., JHL).
59. "Travels in the Provinces of America" (1929).
60. Ibid.
61. HPL to LDC, [11 May 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
62. Appropriately enough, the Lovecraft scholar Robert H. Waugh lived on Huguenot Street for many years.
63. HPL to LDC, 13–14 May [1929] (ms., JHL).
64. HPL to LDC, 14–15 May 1929 (ms., JHL).
65. HPL to LDC, [15 May 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
66. HPL to LDC, [17 August 1929] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
67. HPL to MWM, 1 September 1929 (*SL* 3.19).
68. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, [1 July 1929] and 16 September 1929 (mss., JHL).
69. HPL to AD, 8 July 1929; *Essential Solitude,* 1.200.
70. See "Travels in the Provinces of America."
71. HPL to REH, 14 August 1930 (*SL* 3.166).
72. HPL to FBL, 3 November 1930 (*SL* 3.204).
73. HPL to Emil Petaja, 31 May 1935 (*SL* 5.173).
74. Robert M. Price, "Lost Revisions?," *CoC* No. 17 (Hallowmass 1983): 42.
75. HPL to AD, [17 November 1929]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.230.
76. HPL to the Editor of the *Sunday Journal,* 5 October 1926 (*SL* 2.73).
77. John Hutchins Cady, *The Civic and Architectural Development of Providence 1636–1950* (Providence, RI: The Book Shop, 1957), 239–40.
78. HPL to AD, [mid-January 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.244.
79. See HPL to JFM, 30 July 1929 (*SL* 3.11).
80. HPL to JFM, 6 December 1929 (*SL* 3.90).
81. HPL to LDC, [6 May 1929] (postcards) (ms., JHL).
82. B. K. Hart, *The Sideshow,* ed. Philomela Hart (Providence: Roger Williams Press, 1941), 56–58.
83. Winfield Townley Scott, "A Parenthesis on Lovecraft as Poet" (1945), in Joshi, *Four Decades of Criticism,* 213.
84. HPL to AD, [February 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.249.

85. HPL to JFM, 30 October 1929 (*SL* 3.55).
86. HPL to FBL, [November 1927] (*SL* 2.186).
87. HPL to JFM, [12 March 1930] (*SL* 3.128).
88. HPL to AD, [early January 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.242.
89. HPL to RHB, 13 June 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 342.
90. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, [January 1930] (*SL* 3.116).
91. HPL to Zealia Bishop, 26 January 1930 (*SL* 3.114–15).
92. William Bolitho, "Pulp Magazines," *New York World* (4 January 1930): 11.
93. HPL to AD, [mid-January 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.244.
94. RHB, ms. note on the T.Ms. of "The Mound" (JHL).
95. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 20 December 1929 (*SL* 3.97).
96. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.309).
97. HPL to AD, [late February 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.251.
98. Zealia Bishop, "H. Lovecraft: A Pupil's View," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 271.
99. Long, *Dreamer on the Nightside,* xiii–xiv.
100. FBL to HPL, [c. 19 March 1930] (ms., JHL).
101. HPL to RHB, 26 June 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 143.
102. HPL to FBL, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.187).
103. HPL to FBL, [14–16 March 1930] (*SL* 3.130).
104. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 9 November 1929 (*SL* 3.58).
105. HPL to LDC, 28 April 1930 (ms., JHL).
106. HPL to AD, [29 April 1930] (postcard); *Essential Solitude,* 1.261.
107. HPL to LDC, 13–14 May 1930 (ms., JHL).
108. Wandrei, "Lovecraft in Providence," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 309.
109. See note 107.
110. HPL to JFM, 15 May 1930 (*SL* 3.150).
111. HPL to DW, 21 April 1927; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 89.
112. HPL to RHB, [24 May 1935], *O Fortunate Floridian,* 276; HPL to CAS, [6 August 1930] (ms., JHL).
113. [Notes to "Medusa's Coil"].
114. HPL to FBL, [November 1930] (AHT).
115. HPL to LDC, 20–21 May 1930 (ms., JHL).
116. HPL to LDC, 24–26 May 1930 (ms., JHL).
117. HPL to LDC, 21–22 May 1930 (ms., JHL).

118. See note 116.

119. Hart Crane, “The Tunnel” (ll. 79–82), section VII of *The Bridge* (1930); *The Poems of Hart Crane* (New York: Liveright, 1986), 99.

120. HPL to LDC, 11 June 1930 (ms., JHL).

121. HPL to AD, [mid-July 1930]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.272.

122. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, [c. 3 September 1930] (*SL* 3.164).

123. HPL to JFM, 24 October 1930 (*SL* 3.197).

124. HPL to JFM, [29 December 1930] (*SL* 3.249); HPL to JFM, 18 January 1931 (*SL* 3.266).

125. Steven J. Mariconda, “Tightening the Coil: The Revision of ‘The Whisperer in Darkness,’” *LS* No. 32 (Spring 1995): 12–17.

126. HPL to AD, [4 November 1927]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.113.

127. HPL to LDC, [12 June 1928] (ms., JHL).

128. HPL to FBL, 14 March 1930 (*SL* 3.130).

129. HPL to JFM, [15 March 1930] (AHT).

130. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 1 April 1930 (*SL* 3.136).

131. Long, “Some Random Memories of H. L.,” in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 186.

132. HPL to AD, 7 June 1930; *Essential Solitude,* 1.265.

Chapter 20: Non-Supernatural Cosmic Art

1. HPL to JFM, 30 October 1929 (*SL* 3.46).
2. Quoted in *Why I Am Not a Christian* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1957), 104.
3. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 24 April 1930 (*SL* 3.146).
4. *Scepticism and Animal Faith* (New York: Scribner's, 1923), vii.
5. John Passmore, *A Hundred Years of Philosophy* (1957; 2nd ed. 1966; rpt. Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1968), 228.
6. HPL to FBL, 20 February 1929 (*SL* 2.265).
7. Ibid. (*SL* 2.261).
8. Ibid. (*SL* 2.266–67).
9. HPL to FBL, 22 November 1930 (*SL* 3.228).
10. Bertrand Russell, *Human Knowledge: Its Scope and Limits* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1948), 23.
11. HPL to JFM, 30 October 1929 (*SL* 3.53).
12. HPL to FBL, 22 November 1930 (*SL* 3.226).
13. HPL to MWM, 3 August 1931 (*SL* 3.390–91).
14. *SL* 3.39 (note 11).
15. HPL to FBL, [April 1928] (*SL* 2.234).
16. HPL to AD, 21 November 1930 (*SL* 3.222).
17. HPL to JFM, 6 November 1930 (*SL* 3.208).
18. HPL to AD, 25 December 1930 (*SL* 3.244).
19. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 10 June 1929 (*SL* 2.356–57).
20. *SL* 3.244 (note 18).
21. HPL to JFM, [January 1931] (*SL* 3.253).
22. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 9 November 1929 (*SL* 3.78).
23. Ibid. (*SL* 3.58–59).
24. HPL to AD, 26 March 1927 (*SL* 2.120).
25. HPL to JFM, 19 October 1929 (*SL* 3.32).
26. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.305).
27. HPL to AD, 5 October 1928; *Essential Solitude,* 1.160.
28. HPL to LDC, 4–6 November 1924; *Letters from New York,* 86.
29. See note 27.
30. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 3 September 1929 (*SL* 3.20).

31. Louis Berman, *The Glands Regulating Personality* (New York: Macmillan, 1921 [rev. ed. 1928]), 23.
32. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.298).
33. HPL to FBL, 22 February 1931 (*SL* 3.293–96).
34. HPL to AD, 20 November 1931 (*SL* 3.434).
35. "Behind the Mountains of Madness: Lovecraft and the Antarctic in 1930," *LS* No. 14 (Spring 1987): 3–9.
36. HPL to FBL, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.186–87).
37. HPL to CAS, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.193).
38. Fritz Leiber, "A Literary Copernicus" (1949), in Joshi, *Four Decades,* 57.
39. "Demythologizing Cthulhu," in *H. P. Lovecraft and the Cthulhu Mythos.*
40. CAS to HPL, [c. mid-December 1930]; *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 23.
41. Jules Zanger, "Poe's Endless Voyage: *The Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym,*" *Papers on Language and Literature* 22, No. 3 (Summer 1986): 282.
42. HPL to AD, 24 March [1931]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.325.
43. HPL to JVS, 7 August 1931 (*SL* 3.395).
44. HPL to DW, 8 March 1932; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 301.
45. HPL to DW, [22 October 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 174.
46. HPL to AD, [late March? 1931]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.327.
47. HPL to LDC, 16 July 1931 (ms., JHL).
48. *SL* 3.395–96 (note 43).
49. HPL to AD, 16 April 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.329–30.
50. HPL to AD, 9 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.334.
51. HPL to AD, [5 June 1929]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.195.
52. HPL to AD, 4 March 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.460–61.
53. HPL to CAS, [20 November 1931] (*SL* 3.435).
54. HPL to DW, [27 November 1931]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 291.
55. See ch. 12, note 25.
56. HPL to FBL, 17 October 1930 (*SL* 3.187).
57. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 16 April 1936 (*SL* 5.236).
58. HPL to AD, 2 April [1928]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.140.
59. HPL to JFM, 19 October 1929 (*SL* 3.31).

60. HPL to AD, 10 December 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.419–20.
61. "Lovecraft and *Strange Tales,*" *CoC* No. 74 (Lammas 1990): 3–11.
62. HPL to AD, 23 December 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.429.
63. HPL to AD, 21 January 1932; *Essential Solitude,*2.442–43.
64. HPL to AD, 2 February 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.446.
65. See CAS to AD, 16 February 1932 (ms., SHSW); quoted in Smith's *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 34n3.
66. See note 64 (*Essential Solitude,* 2.448).
67. HPL to AD, 29 February [1932]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.459.
68. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 18 February 1932 (*SL* 4.17).
69. Farnsworth Wright to AD, 17 January 1933 (ms., SHSW).
70. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 21 August 1934 (ms., JHL).
71. HPL to FBL, 8 November 1923 (*SL* 1.258).
72. REH, "On Reading—and Writing," in *The Last Celt,* ed. Glenn Lord (West Kingston, RI: Donald M. Grant, 1976), 51.
73. REH to HPL, [c. December 1930]; *A Means to Freedom: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2009), 1.100.
74. HPL to Kenneth Sterling, 14 December 1935 (*SL* 5.214).
75. HPL to AD, [28 January 1932]; 2 February [1932]; 29 March [1934], 29 April 1934; *Essential Solitude,* 2.446, 448, 628, 632.
76. HPL to Robert Bloch, [late June 1933]; *Letters to Robert Bloch,* 23.
77. HPL to CAS, 3 December 1929 (*SL* 3.87).
78. *The End of the Story* (Collected Fantasies, Volume 1) (San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2006), 82.
79. HPL to REH, 14 August 1930 (*SL* 3.166).
80. CAS to AD, 4 January 1933 (ms., SHSW).
81. HPL to AD, 16 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.336.
82. HPL to FBL, 20 February 1929 (*SL* 2.274).
83. See A. Langley Searles, "Fantasy and Outré Themes in the Short Fiction of Edward Lucas White and Henry S. Whitehead," in *American Supernatural Fiction,* ed. Douglas Robillard (New York: Garland, 1996), 64–72.
84. "All his papers were found in perfect order, but this was soon disturbed by hands which destroyed his files of correspondence with Lovecraft and others." RHB, "Henry S. Whitehead," *Jumbee and Other Uncanny Tales* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1944), ix.

85. HPL to FBL, 3 November 1930 (*SL* 3.205).
86. HPL to JVS, 28 August 1931 (AHT).

Chapter 21: Mental Greed

1. HPL to LDC, 5 May 1931 (ms., JHL).
2. HPL to AD, 9 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.332–33.
3. HPL to AD, 23 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.342.
4. HPL to AD, [25 May 1931] (postcard); *Essential Solitude,* 1.346.
5. HPL to AD, 23 December 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.432.
6. HPL to RHB, 25 February 1932; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 24.
7. HPL to LDC, 11–12 June 1931 (ms., JHL).
8. HPL to AD, 17 June 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.349.
9. HPL to LDC, 22 June 1931 (ms., JHL).
10. Ibid.
11. HPL to LDC, 23–24 June 1931 (ms., JHL).
12. HPL to LDC, 8–10 July 1931 (ms., JHL).
13. Ibid.
14. HPL to AD, 3 August 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.353.
15. HPL to AD, 2 September 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.372.
16. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 31 December 1931 (ms., JHL).
17. HPL to JVS, 10 November 1931 (ms., JHL).
18. HPL to DW, [2 January 1932] (postcard); *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 294.
19. HPL to AD, 16 January 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.308.
20. HPL to REH, 7 November 1932 (*SL* 4.104).
21. HPL to AD, 16 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.338.
22. HPL to AD, 18 August 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.363.
23. HPL to AD, 18 September, and 30 September 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.383, 390. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 2 April [1932] (ms., JHL).
24. HPL to AD, 19 November [1932]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.526.
25. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (ms., JHL).
26. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 5 March 1932 (*SL* 4.27).
27. HPL to JVS, 22 March 1932 (ms., JHL).
28. Enclosed in letter to Richard F. Searight, 31 August 1933; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 12.
29. See note 19.
30. See note 15 (*Essential Solitude,* 1.370).
31. HPL to AD, 9 October 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.393–94.

32. HPL to Lee Alexander Stone, 18 September 1930 (*SL* 3.170–71).
33. HPL to FBL, [April 1931] (AHT).
34. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 28 October 1930 (*SL* 3.199).
35. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 10 December 1930 (*SL* 3.239–40).
36. "Lovecraft's Cosmic Imagery," in Schultz and Joshi, *An Epicure in the Terrible,* 192.
37. "Through Hyperspace with Brown Jenkin", in Joshi, *Four Decades of Criticism,* 146.
38. HPL to AD, 14 May [1932]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.478.
39. HPL to AD, 6 June 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.482–83.
40. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 20 October 1932 (*SL* 4.91).
41. HPL to AD, 16 May 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.339.
42. HPL to CAS, 3 October 1933 (*SL* 4.270–71).
43. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 15 April 1929 (ms., JHL).
44. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 24 October 1930 (*SL* 3.198).
45. *SL* 4.71 (note 42).
46. "An Interview with Harry K. Brobst," *LS* Nos. 22/23 (Fall 1990): 24–26.
47. "All but one or two of the considerable number of letters that I received from him have been either lost or passed on to others . . ." Edkins, "Idiosyncrasies of HPL" (1940), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 93.
48. HPL to RHB, [22 August 1934]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 166–67.
49. HPL to RHB, 29 January [1936]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 317.
50. HPL to Carl Ferdinand Strauch, 16 February 1932, *Lovecraft Annual* 4 (2010): 65.
51. HPL to AD, 21 April 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.473.
52. HPL to AD, 6 June 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.480.
53. Ibid. (*Essential Solitude,* 2.481).
54. HPL to DW, [2 August 1927]; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 138.
55. HPL to AD, 9 September 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.381.
56. HPL to JVS, 13 October 1932 (*SL* 4.87).
57. E. Hoffmann Price, "The Man Who Was Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 289–90.
58. HPL to JFM, 5 July 1932 (*SL* 4.47).
59. HPL to MWM, 12 July 1932 (*SL* 4.48–49).
60. Harold S. Farnese to AD, 11 April 1937 (ms., SHSW); quoted in David E. Schultz, "The Origin of Lovecraft's 'Black Magic' Quote," *CoC*

No. 48 (St John's Eve 1987): 9.

61. It is reproduced facing *SL* 4.159.

62. Harold S. Farnese to AD, 11 April 1937 (see note 60).

63. HPL to Harold S. Farnese, 22 September 1932 (*SL* 4.70–71).

64. See note 60.

65. HPL to JVS, 13 October 1932 (ms., JHL; this portion not included in *SL*).

66. Cook, *In Memoriam,* in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 131.

67. Muriel E. Eddy, *The Gentleman from Angell Street* (1961), in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 61–63. This matter is not mentioned at all in Eddy's 1945 memoir.

68. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 19 November 1934 (*SL* 5.72).

69. Hazel Heald to AD, 30 September 1944; quoted in a footnote in *The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1970), 27.

70. HPL to AD, [mid-August 1932]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.497.

71. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934 (*SL* 4.403).

72. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 20 October 1932 (ms., JHL).

73. HPL to Richard Ely Morse, 28 July 1932 (*SL* 4.229).

74. HPL to REH, 24 July–5 August 1933 (*SL* 4.222).

75. HPL to CAS, 26 March 1935 (*SL* 5.130).

76. E. Hoffmann Price, "The Man Who Was Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 291.

77. E. Hoffmann Price to HPL, 10 October 1932 (ms., JHL).

78. First printed in *CoC* No. 10 (1982): 46–56.

79. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 3 October 1932 (*SL* 4.74–75).

80. HPL to JVS, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.158).

81. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 6 April 1933 (*SL* 4.175).

82. "The Man Who Was Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 291.

83. *SL* 4.178 (note 81).

84. E. Hoffmann Price to Farnsworth Wright, 7 August 1933 (ms., JHL).

85. Farnsworth Wright to H. Lovecraft, 17 August 1933 (ms., JHL); quoted in *Letters to Robert Bloch,* 31n.

86. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 14 November 1933 (*SL* 4.319).

87. Earl C. Kelley to HPL, 29 February 1932 (ms., JHL).

88. HPL to RHB, 22 August 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 168.

89. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 7 December 1932 (*SL* 4.116–17).
90. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 12 September 1934 (*SL* 5.33).
91. HPL to CAS, 4 April 1932 (*SL* 4.37).
92. HPL to RHB, 9 April 1933; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 59.
93. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 4 November 1933; *Letters to Alfred Galpin,* 196–97.
94. Davis, *Private Life,* 17.
95. HPL to AEPG, 27–28 December [1932] (ms., JHL).
96. HPL to AEPG, [2 January 1933] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
97. HPL to RHB, 18 February 1933; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 51.
98. HPL to RHB, [17 December 1933]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 90.
99. HPL to DW, 21 February 1933; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 319.

Chapter 22: In My Own Handwriting

1. HPL to Carl F. Strauch, 31 May 1933 *Lovecraft Annual* 4 (2010): 100–101.
2. HPL to Carl F. Strauch, 5 June 1933, *Lovecraft Annual* 4 (2010): 102.
3. HPL to AD, 5 June 1933; *Essential Solitude,* 2.580.
4. See note 2.
5. In *Marginalia* (1944), facing 214.
6. HPL to Carl F. Strauch, 18 March 1933, *Lovecraft Annual* 4 (2010): 97–98.
7. Davis, *Private Life,* p 22–23.
8. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 24 June 1933 (*SL* 4.215).
9. Price, "The Man Who Was Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 293.
10. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (*SL* 4.250).
11. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 28 August 1933 (ms., JHL).
12. HPL to RHB, [2 December 1933] (postcard); *O Fortunate Floridian,* 89.
13. HPL to Allen G. Ullman, 16 August 1933 (ms., JHL).
14. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 16 April 1935 (ms., JHL).
15. *Weird Tales* 22, No. 6 (December 1933): 776.
16. HPL to RHB, [24 May 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 274.
17. HPL to Charles D. Hornig, 7 August [1933] (postcard) (ms.).
18. HPL to Willis Conover, 1 September 1936; *Lovecraft at Last* (Arlington, VA: Carrollton-Clark, 1975), 86. HPL's mention that some of the "interpolated portions" may be "illegible" (*Lovecraft at Last,* 97) suggests that at least some of the insertions were handwritten.
19. HPL to RHB, [16 March 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 219.
20. HPL to RHB, [21 October 1933]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 82.
21. Derleth prepared a poor text for *Beyond the Wall of Sleep* (1943) as well as for an annotated separate edition (Arkham House/Villiers, 1963). I prepared a corrected text for *Autobiographical Writings* (1992) and *Miscellaneous Writings* (1995).
22. Talman, "The Normal Lovecraft," 8.
23. When AD found this document, he was unaware what it was and thought it represented plot-germs by Lovecraft; he wrote up Lovecraft's

plot description of *The Dark Chamber* into the "posthumous collaboration" entitled "The Ancestor."

24. HPL to RK, 23 April 1921 (*SL* 1.128).

25. HPL to CAS, 17 October 1923 (*SL* 1.256).

26. HPL to FBL, 24 July 1923 (*SL* 1.238).

27. HPL to CAS, [28 October 1934] (*SL* 5.64).

28. HPL to CAS, [22 October 1933] (*SL* 4.289).

29. Ibid. (*SL* 4.289–90).

30. HPL to Robert Bloch, 27 April 1933; *Letters to Robert Bloch,* 10.

31. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 16 October 1933 (ms., JHL).

32. For more on Baldwin see Josephine Richardson et al., *Within the Circle: In Memoriam F. Lee Baldwin 1913–1987* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1988).

33. For a selection of Rimel's weird writing see *To Yith and Beyond* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1990).

34. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 31 August 1933; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 9.

35. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 15 January 1934; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 16.

36. Ibid., 17.

37. Helen V. Sully, "Memories of Lovecraft: II," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 278.

38. HPL to CAS, [25 July 1933] (postcard) (ms.).

39. HPL to Helen V. Sully, 24 November 1933 (ms., JHL).

40. See HPL to DW, 16 January 1932; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 297–98. This novel, along with Wandrei's unpublished mainstream novel *Invisible Sun* (written 1932–33), are forthcoming.

41. AD, *Place of Hawks* (New York: Loring & Mussey, 1935), 91–92.

42. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 26 November 1932 (*SL* 4.113).

43. Wandrei, *The Eye and the Finger* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1948), 55.

44. Howard, *Cthulhu* (New York: Baen, 1987), 57.

45. HPL to Robert Bloch, [late June 1933]; *Letters to Robert Bloch,* 22.

46. HPL to Robert Bloch, [November 1933]; *Letters to Robert Bloch,* 41.

47. *Something about Cats and Other Pieces,* 117–18.

48. Ibid., 117.

49. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 31 January 1934 (*SL* 4.350).
50. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 12 January 1933 (*SL* 4.133).
51. HPL to JVS, 28 September 1931 (*SL* 3.416).
52. HPL to AD, 12 November 1926; *Essential Solitude,* 1.49.
53. HPL to Willis Conover, 1 September 1936 (*SL* 5.304).
54. HPL to Bernard Austin Dwyer, [1932] (*SL* 4.4).
55. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (*SL* 4.15).
56. HPL to Willis Conover, 10 January 1937 (*SL* 5.384).
57. HPL to Fritz Leiber, 9 November 1936 (*SL* 5.341).
58. *SL* 5.384 (note 56).
59. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.163).
60. HPL to AD, 27 October 1934; *Essential Solitude,* 2.663.
61. HPL to AEPG, [28 December 1933] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
62. HPL to AEPG, [1 January 1934] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
63. Samuel Loveman, "Lovecraft as a Conversationalist," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 210–11.
64. HPL to AEPG, [4 January 1934] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
65. HPL to AEPG, [8 January 1934] (postcard) (ms., JHL).
66. HPL to C. L. Moore, [7 February 1937] (*SL* 5.400–401).
67. HPL to RHB, 12 March [1932]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 25.
68. HPL to CAS, 3 October 1933 (ms., JHL). See, in general, Will Murray, "Mearle Prout and 'The House of the Worm,'" *CoC* No. 18 (Yuletide 1983): 29–30, 39.
69. Walter, "Three Hours with H. Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 42.
70. HPL to RHB, [19 March 1934]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 114.
71. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 25 March 1933 (*SL* 4.166).
72. HPL to RHB, 10 April 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 124.
73. Barlow, "The Wind That Is in the Grass," in *O Fortunate Floridian,* xxix.
74. Stephen J. Jordan, "Lovecraft in Florida," *LS* Nos. 42–43 (Autumn 2001): 34, 42.
75. Barlow, "[Memories of Lovecraft (1934)]," *On Lovecraft and Life,* 11.
76. HPL to Helen V. Sully, 26 May 1934 (ms., JHL).
77. Barlow, "The Wind That Is in the Grass," in *O Fortunate Floridian,* xxx.

78. HPL to AD, [early June 1934] (postcard); *Essential Solitude,* 2.643.

79. See, in general, S. T. Joshi, "RHB and the Recognition of H. P. Lovecraft," *CoC* No. 60 (Hallowmass 1988): 46–47.

80. HPL to RHB, [1? October 1934] (postcard); *O Fortunate Floridian,* 184.

81. HPL to RHB, 29 June 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 146.

82. HPL to RHB, 21 July 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 153.

83. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 31 August 1934 (*SL* 5.24–25).

84. HPL to RHB, 7 September 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 176.

85. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 7 August 1934 (ms., JHL).

86. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 22 January 1934 (ms., JHL).

87. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 15 February 1934 (ms., JHL).

88. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 13 May 1934 (ms., JHL).

89. See Duane W. Rimel, "A History of the Chronicle of Nath," *Etchings and Odysseys* No. 9 (1986): 80.

90. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 23 July 1934 (ms., JHL).

91. "About Rimel . . . I think you're wrong. *I* have not extensively revised any of his *recent* verses; & if they are not his own, the modelling agency is Klarkash-Ton & not Grandpa! I know that he has submitted these to C A S & received assistance, but according to C A S the amount of change made has not been considerable." HPL to RHB, 25 September 1934; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 180.

92. Ibid.

93. Ibid. (*O Fortunate Floridian,* 179).

94. HPL to Kenneth Sterling, 14 December 1935; cited in Sterling's "Caverns Measureless to Man," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 376.

95. HPL to Edward H. Cole, [20 November 1934] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

96. HPL to REH, 27–28 July 1934 (*SL* 5.12).

97. It is so dated in AHT.

98. HPL to AD, 30 December 1934; *Essential Solitude,* 2.674.

99. HPL to AEPG, [31 December 1934] (postcard) (ms., JHL).

100. HPL to CAS, [13 December 1933] (*SL* 4.328–29).

101. HPL to F. Lee Baldwin, 27 March 1934 (ms., JHL).

102. HPL to AD, [February 1928]; *Essential Solitude,* 1.135.

103. HPL to JVS, 8 November 1933 (ms.).

104. HPL to RHB, [26 October 1934]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 187.

105. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.362–64). See Darrell Schweitzer, "Lovecraft's Favorite Movie," *LS* Nos. 19/20 (Fall 1989): 23–25, 27.

106. John L. Balderston, *Berkeley Square* (New York: Macmillan, 1929), 98.

107. HPL to AD, 7 August 1935; *Essential Solitude,* 2.705.

108. HPL to CAS, [11 November 1930] (*SL* 3.217).

109. HPL to CAS, [2 March 1932] (*SL* 4.25–26).

110. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 18 November 1934 (*SL* 5.71).

111. Ibid. (*SL* 5.70).

112. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 30 December 1934 (*SL* 5.86).

113. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 10 November 1936 (*SL* 5.346).

114. The rediscovery of the manuscript, after its whereabouts were unknown for nearly sixty years, is itself an enthralling tale. See the introduction to the annotated edition of *The Shadow out of Time* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2001).

Chapter 23: Caring about the Civilisation

1. HPL to Jennie K. Plaisier, 8 July 1936 (*SL* 5.279).
2. HPL to C. L. Moore, [7 February 1937] (*SL* 5.405).
3. HPL to C. L. Moore, [c. mid-October 1936] (*SL* 5.322).
4. HPL to JFM, 18 January 1931 (*SL* 3.271).
5. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 25 February–1 March 1929 (*SL* 2.290).
6. Ibid. (*SL* 2.308).
7. *SL* 5.321 (note 3).
8. HPL to REH, 7 November 1932 (*SL* 4.104–5).
9. REH to HPL, [6 March 1933]; *A Means to Freedom,* 2.546.
10. HPL to REH, 24 July–5 August 1933 (*SL* 4.222–23).
11. HPL to FBL, 27 February 1931 (*SL* 3.304).
12. HPL to REH, 16 August 1932 (*SL* 4.58–59).
13. Ibid. (*SL* 4.61).
14. HPL to Alfred Galpin, 27 October 1932 (*SL* 4.92–93).
15. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 28 October 1932 (ms., JHL).
16. See Benjamin Kline Hunnicutt, *Work without End: Abandoning Shorter Hours for the Right to Work* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1988).
17. HPL to REH, 25 July 1932 (*SL* 4.51).
18. HPL to RHB, [17 December 1933]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 92.
19. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 23 March 1931 (*SL* 3.346).
20. *SL* 4.106–7 (note 8).
21. Arthur Schlesinger, Jr, "The Radical," *New York Review of Books* (11 February 1993): 6.
22. HPL to JFM, [3 February 1932] (*SL* 4.13).
23. HPL to JVS, 8–11 November 1933 (ms.).
24. HPL to Henry George Weiss, 3 February 1937 (*SL* 5.392).
25. *SL* 5.402 (note 2).
26. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 22 December 1932 (*SL* 4.124).
27. HPL to CAS, [30 September 1934] (*SL* 5.41).
28. Ibid. (*SL* 5.40).
29. HPL to JVS, 13 March 1935 (*SL* 5.122).
30. HPL to JVS, 10 February 1935 (ms., JHL).
31. HPL to C. L. Moore, [August 1936] (*SL* 5.297).

32. See Edward Robb Ellis, *A Nation in Torment: The Great American Depression 1929–1939* (New York: Coward-McCann, 1970), 211.
33. HPL to RHB, 27 December 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 387.
34. HPL to JFM, 25 July 1936 (*SL* 5.283).
35. *SL* 5.293–94 (note 31).
36. HPL to RHB, 30 November 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 369.
37. *SL* 5.323 (note 3).
38. HPL to Kenneth Sterling, 18 October 1936 (*SL* 5.330).
39. *SL* 5.325–26 (note 3).
40. HPL to AD, 20 February 1927 (*SL* 2.104–5).
41. *SL* 5.397–98 (note 2).
42. *SL* 5.329 (note 3).
43. HPL to CAS, 28 October 1934 (*SL* 5.60–62).
44. HPL to MWM, 18 June 1930 (*SL* 3.155).
45. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 23 November 1930 (*SL* 3.236).
46. See HPL to DW, [22 October 1927] and 23 November 1928; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 173, 231.
47. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (*SL* 4.15).
48. HPL to Lee McBride White, 15 October 1936; "Letters to Lee McBride White," *Lovecraft Annual* 1 (2007): 60.
49. HPL to MWM, 26 March 1932 (*SL* 4.32–33).
50. HPL to JVS, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.158).
51. HPL to LDC, 25 May 1925; *Letters from New York,* 126–27.
52. HPL to Lee McBride White, 31 May 1935; *Lovecraft Annual,* 36.
53. HPL to MWM, 18 June 1930 (*SL* 3.155).
54. See note 52.
55. HPL to RHB, 21 March [1932]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 27.
56. HPL to JVS, 5 February 1932 (*SL* 4.14).
57. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (*SL* 4.259).
58. See note 52 (*Lovecraft Annual,* 37).
59. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 16 April 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 57.
60. HPL to MWM, 4 January 1930 (*SL* 3.107).
61. HPL to JVS, 13 September 1931 (*SL* 3.414).
62. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 29 September 1933 (*SL* 4.267–68).
63. HPL to AD, 21 November 1930 (*SL* 3.220).
64. HPL to JVS, 7 August 1931 (*SL* 3.395).

65. HPL to JVS, 24 March 1933 (*SL* 4.159).
66. HPL to MWM, 26 March 1932 (*SL* 4.33).
67. HPL to JVS, 16 November 1932 (*SL* 4.110).
68. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 12 February 1935 (*SL* 5.106).
69. HPL to LDC, 27–28 May 1930 (ms., JHL).
70. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 16 February 1933 (*SL* 4.154–55).
71. HPL to RHB, 10 July 1932; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 33.
72. HPL to JVS, 30 July 1933 (ms., JHL).
73. HPL to CAS, 22 October 1933 (ms.).
74. HPL to AD, 20 January 1927; *Essential Solitude,* 1.64–65.
75. HPL to AD, 16 February 1933; *Essential Solitude,* 2.545–46.
76. HPL to Woodburn Harris, 9 November 1929 (*SL* 3.72).
77. HPL to JVS, [13 October 1931] (*SL* 3.425).
78. HPL to MWM, 4 January 1930 (*SL* 3.103).
79. HPL to AD, 9 February 1933; *Essential Solitude,* 2.542.
80. HPL to AD, 14 March 1933; *Essential Solitude,* 2.553.
81. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 3 September 1929 (*SL* 3.24).
82. HPL to AD, 25 December 1930 (*SL* 3.243).
83. HPL to Helen V. Sully, 15 August 1935 (ms., JHL [not printed in its entirety in *SL*]).
84. HPL to Helen V. Sully, 28 June 1934 (ms., JHL [not printed in its entirety in *SL*]).
85. Ibid. (*SL* 4.418).
86. "Australia" (by Roger Acton), *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 9th ed. (Chicago: The Werner Co., 1900), 3.112.
87. See Gossett, *Race,* 387f.
88. HPL to JVS, 29 May 1933 (*SL* 4.195).
89. HPL to JVS, 4 February 1934 (*SL* 4.367).
90. HPL to JFM, 18 January 1931 (*SL* 3.276).
91. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (*SL* 4.253).
92. *SL* 3.277 (note 90).
93. HPL to JVS, 25 September 1933 (*SL* 4.257).
94. See Morris Schonbach, *Native American Fascism During the 1930s and 1940s: A Study of Its Roots, Its Growth and Its Decline* (New York: Garland, 1985), 269.
95. "An Interview with Harry Brobst," 29.
96. HPL to RHB, 23 July 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 356.

97. HPL to JVS, 30 July 1933 (*SL* 4.230–31).
98. HPL to JVS, 8–11 November 1933 (*SL* 4.307).
99. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 26 February 1932 (*SL* 4.19).
100. HPL to AD, 25 December 1930 (*SL* 3.245).
101. HPL to CAS, 15 October 1927 (*SL* 2.176).
102. HPL to JVS, 8–11 November 1933 (ms.).
103. HPL to Helen V. Sully, 28 October 1934 (*SL* 5.50).

Chapter 24: Close to the Bread-Line

1. HPL to RHB, [24 May 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 273.
2. HPL to AD, 15 July 1935; *Essential Solitude,* 2.703.
3. HPL to AD, 16 February 1935; *Essential Solitude,* 2.678.
4. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 31 May 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 58.
5. HPL to RHB, [16 March 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 222–23.
6. Ibid. (*O Fortunate Floridian,* 216–17).
7. HPL to RHB, [11 May 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 263.
8. HPL to RHB, 29 May 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 278.
9. HPL to Donald and Howard Wandrei, [July 1935] (postcard); *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 355.
10. Barlow, "The Wind That Is in the Grass," in *O Fortunate Floridian,* xxix.
11. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 4 August 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 61.
12. HPL to RHB, [25 October 1935] (postcard); *O Fortunate Floridian,* 303.
13. HPL to William Frederick Anger, 28 January 1935 (*SL* 5.92–93).
14. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 4 August 1935 (ms., JHL).
15. HPL to AD, 19 August 1935; *Essential Solitude,* 2.705–6.
16. HPL to AD, [23 October 1935]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.711.
17. See note 14.
18. HPL to DW, 24 August 1935; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 360.
19. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 28 September 1935 (*SL* 5.200).
20. Ibid. (ms., JHL [this portion not in *SL*]).
21. HPL to RHB, 26 September 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 293.
22. HPL to RHB, 21 October 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 301.
23. Lumley's original version has been printed in *CoC* No. 10 (1982): 21–25.
24. HPL to AD, 4 December 1935; *Essential Solitude,* 2.719.
25. HPL to RHB, 5 September 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 291.
26. See Will Murray's interview, "Julius Schwartz on Lovecraft," *CoC* No. 76 (Hallowmass 1990): 14–18.

27. HPL to DW, [3 November 1935] (postcard); *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 365–66.
28. HPL to JVS, 5 December 1935 (*SL* 5.210).
29. HPL to Natalie H. Wooley, 30 December 1935 (*SL* 5.220).
30. HPL to AD, 6 November [1934]; *Essential Solitude,* 2.664.
31. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 12 November 1935 (ms., JHL).
32. HPL to DW, 10 November 1935; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 368.
33. *Weird Tales* 36, No. 5 (November 1935): 652.
34. Hanns Heinz Ewers, "The Spider," in *Creeps by Night,* ed. Dashiell Hammett (New York: John Day Co., 1931), 184.
35. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 24 December 1935; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 70.
36. HPL to RHB, 21 October 1935; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 300.
37. HPL to RHB, [27 December? 1935]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 309.
38. HPL to RHB, 29 January 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 314.
39. Diary (1936) (ms., JHL).
40. HPL to RHB, 4 June 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 338.
41. HPL to RHB, 11 March 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 326.
42. See note 38.
43. Sterling, "Caverns Measureless to Man," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 374–77.
44. See Eric Burgess, *Venus: An Errant Twin* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1985), 11–13.
45. See her death certificate, issued by the Rhode Island Department of Public Health, which reports (in 1941) a "Removal of rt breast" during an operation "5 yrs ago."
46. See note 41 (*O Fortunate Floridian,* 321).
47. HPL to JVS, 19 May 1936 (ms., JHL).
48. Marian F. Bonner, "Miscellaneous Impressions of H.P.L.," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 28.
49. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 22 December 1934 (*SL* 5.81–82).
50. HPL to William Frederick Anger, 22 July 1935 (ms., University of Minnesota).
51. HPL to RHB, 13 June 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 341–42.
52. Ibid. (*O Fortunate Floridian,* 343).
53. HPL to AD, 11 February 1936; *Essential Solitude,* 2.725.
54. Diary (1936) (ms., JHL).

55. HPL to RHB, 4 June 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 335–36.
56. See note 26.
57. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 13 May 1918 (ms., JHL).
58. See note 55.
59. See note 55 (*O Fortunate Floridian,* 337).
60. HPL to Edward H. Cole, 15 August 1936 (ms., JHL).

Chapter 25: The End of One's Life

1. REH, *Selected Letters 1931–1936* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1991), 79.
2. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 20 June 1936 (*SL* 5.272–73).
3. This point is made astutely by Marc A. Cerasini and Charles Hoffman in *Robert E. Howard* (Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1987), 12.
4. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 5 July 1936 (*SL* 5.276).
5. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 8 May 1936 (ms., JHL).
6. Ibid.
7. HPL to RHB, 23 July 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 355.
8. HPL to the Coryciani, 14 July 1936 (ms., JHL).
9. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 19 September 1936 (ms., JHL).
10. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 31 July 1936 (ms., JHL).
11. All five poems are included in David E. Schultz's article, "In a Sequester'd Churchyard," *CoC* No. 57 (St John's Eve 1988): 26–29.
12. HPL to Hyman Bradofsky, 4 November 1936 (ms.).
13. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 20 February 1937 (ms., JHL).
14. HPL to RHB, 9 July 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 351.
15. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 24 February 1936 (ms., JHL).
16. HPL, marginal note on Anne Tillery Renshaw to HPL, 2 October 1936 (ms., JHL).
17. HPL to Anne Tillery Renshaw, 19 September 1936 (ms., JHL).
18. HPL to Richard F. Searight, 12 June 1936; *Letters to Richard F. Searight,* 78.
19. See n. 17.
20. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 1 April 1936 (ms., JHL).
21. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 16 February 1936; *Letters to Henry Kuttner,* 7.
22. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 12 March 1936; *Letters to Henry Kuttner,* 11.
23. Ibid., 9.
24. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 18 May 1936; *Letters to Henry Kuttner,* 16.
25. HPL to Henry Kuttner, 8 March 1937; *Letters to Henry Kuttner,* 30.
26. *Lovecraft at Last,* 75.
27. HPL to RHB, 11 March 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 325.

28. HPL to Elizabeth Toldridge, 4 December 1936 (*SL* 5.368).

29. See Sam Moskowitz, ed., *Howard Phillips Lovecraft and Nils Helmer Frome* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1989).

30. Sam Moskowitz to S. T. Joshi, 23 February 1995.

31. *Lovecraft at Last,* 141.

32. "Letters to Virgil Finlay," *Fantasy Collector's Annual* (1974): 12.

33. Stuart M. Boland, "Interlude with Lovecraft," *Acolyte* 3, No. 3 (Summer 1945): 15.

34. Ibid., 16.

35. Ibid.

36. HPL to RHB, 11 December 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 383.

37. Fritz Leiber, "Through Hyperspace with Brown Jenkin: Lovecraft's Contribution to Speculative Fiction," in Joshi, *Four Decades of Criticism,* 145.

38. HPL to Fritz Leiber, 19 December 1936; in *Fritz Leiber and H. P. Lovecraft: Writers of the Dark,* ed. Ben J. S. Szumskyj and S. T. Joshi (Holicong, PA: Wildside Press, 2003), 38–39.

39. Fritz Leiber, "My Correspondence with Lovecraft," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 301.

40. Leiber, "Foreword" to *The Book of Fritz Leiber* (1974); cited in Bruce Byfield, *Witches of the Mind: A Critical Study of Fritz Leiber* (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1991), 11.

41. Jacques Bergier, "Lovecraft, ce grand génie venu d'ailleurs," *Planète* No. 1 (October–November 1961): 43–46.

42. HPL to Willis Conover, 23 September 1936 (*SL* 5.307).

43. HPL to RHB, 3 January 1936 [i.e. 1937]; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 393.

44. William L. Crawford, "Lovecraft's First Book," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 365.

45. HPL to Frank Utpatel, 8 February 1936 (ms., JHL).

46. HPL to Frank Utpatel, 13 March 1936 (ms., JHL).

47. HPL to AD, 18 November 1936; *Essential Solitude,* 2.759.

48. HPL to DW, 8 November 1936; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 384.

49. See n. 46.

50. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 20 December 1936 (ms., JHL).

51. HPL to Farnsworth Wright, 1 July 1936 (*SL* 5.274).

52. Ibid. (*SL* 5.274–75).

53. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, [12 February 1936] (*SL* 5.223–24).
54. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 28 September 1935 (*SL* 5.199).
55. HPL to E. Hoffmann Price, 16 March 1936 (*SL* 5.230).
56. Ernest A. Edkins, "Idiosyncrasies of H.P.L.," in *Lovecraft Remembered,* 94–95.
57. Lew Shaw, "The Day He Met Lovecraft," *Brown Alumni Monthly* 72, No. 7 (April 1972): 3.
58. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 6 October 1936 (*SL* 5.318).
59. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 2 November 1936 (*SL* 5.339).
60. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 10 November 1936 (*SL* 5.344).
61. HPL to RHB, 30 November 1936; *O Fortunate Floridian,* 375–76.
62. HPL to Jonquil Leiber, 20 December 1936 (*SL* 5.379).
63. HPL to Henry George Weiss, 3 February 1937 (*SL* 5.391).
64. HPL to AD, 17 February 1937 (*SL* 5.412).
65. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 28 February 1937 (*SL* 5.419).
66. "The Last Days of H. Lovecraft: Four Documents," *LS* No. 28 (Spring 1993): 36.
67. *Lovecraft at Last,* 245.
68. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, 8 October 1934 (ms., JHL).
69. Thomas J. Slaga, "Food Additives and Contaminants as Modifying Factors in Cancer Induction," in *Nutrition and Cancer: Etiology and Treatment,* ed. Guy R. Newell and Neil M. Ellison (New York: Raven Press, 1981), 279–80.
70. Stewart Cameron, *Kidney Disease: The Facts,* 2nd ed. (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1986), ch. 8.
71. HPL to Jonquil Leiber, 20 December 1936 (*SL* 5.381).
72. HPL to Willis Conover, 23 September 1936 (*SL* 5.307).
73. HPL to JFM, [November 1925] (*SL* 2.30).
74. HPL to JFM, 1 April 1927 (*SL* 2.122).
75. HPL to JFM, 14 January 1930 (*SL* 3.110).
76. See John Bligh, *Temperature Regulation in Mammals and Other Vertebrates* (Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Co., 1973).
77. See, in general, R. Alain Everts, *The Death of a Gentleman: The Last Days of Howard Phillips Lovecraft* (Madison, WI: The Strange Co., 1987). The "death diary" is transcribed on pp. 25–28.
78. HPL to Duane W. Rimel, [20 February 1937] (ms., JHL).

79. M. Eileen McNamara, M.D., “Where Lovecraft Died,” *CoC* No. 76 (Hallowmass 1990): 6–7.

80. “The Last Days of H. Lovecraft,” 36.

81. “An Interview with Harry K. Brobst,” 32.

82. “The Last Days of H. Lovecraft,” 36.

83. Ibid.

Chapter 26: Thou Art Not Gone

1. DW to HPL, 17 March 1937; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 391.
2. Derleth, *Arkham House: The First Twenty Years* (Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1959), i.
3. CAS to AD, 23 March 1937; in Smith's *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 54.
4. Hyman Bradofsky, "Amateur Affairs," *Californian* 5, No. 1 (Summer 1937): 28–29.
5. Smith, *Complete Poems and Translations* (New York: Hippocampus Press, 2007–08), 2.474.
6. Barlow, "The Wind That Is in the Grass," in *O Fortunate Floridian,* xxxii–xxxiii.
7. Quoted in my introduction to Barlow's *On Lovecraft and Life,* 21n.
8. HPL to AD, 14 April 1932; *Essential Solitude,* 2.472.
9. HPL to AD, 16 December 1936; *Essential Solitude,* 2.760.
10. *Arkham House: The First Twenty Years,* ii.
11. AD to RHB, 21 March 1937 (ms., JHL).
12. *Arkham House: The First Twenty Years,* ii.
13. [Unsigned], "Horror Story Author Published by Fellow Writers," *Publishers' Weekly* 137, No. 8 (24 February 1940): 890–91.
14. *American Literature* 12, No. 1 (March 1940): 136.
15. Thomas O. Mabbott, letter to the editor, *Acolyte* 2, No. 3 (Summer 1944): 25.
16. William Rose Benét, "My Brother Steve," *Saturday Review of Literature,* 15 November 1941, 25.
17. Derleth, "Myths about Lovecraft," *Lovecraft Collector* No. 2 (May 1949): 3.
18. Starrett, *Books and Bipeds* (New York: Argus Books, 1947), 120–22.
19. Rimel, "A Fan Looks Back" (1944); rpt. in Rimel's *To Yith and Beyond* (Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1990), 50.
20. J. B. Michel, "The Last of H. P. Lovecraft," *Science Fiction Fan* 4, No. 4 (November 1939): 7.
21. J. Chapman Miske, "H. P. Lovecraft: Strange Weaver," *Scienti-Snaps* 3, No. 3 (Summer 1940): 9, 12.

22. See David E. Schultz, "The Bart House Paperbacks," *CoC* No. 65 (St John's Eve 1989): 27–28.

23. See David E. Schultz, "Lovecraft's *Best Supernatural Stories,*" *CoC* No. 66 (Lammas 1989): 15–17.

24. See John Macrae to Winfield Townley Scott, 3 January, 6 January, and 27 January 1944 (mss., JHL).

25. See Emily M. Morrison to Winfield Townley Scott, 2 February, 11 February, and 25 May 1942 (mss., JHL).

26. "Tales of the Marvellous and the Ridiculous" (1945), rpt. in Joshi, *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism* (1980), 46–49.

27. David Chavchavadze, quoted in L. Sprague de Camp, "H. Lovecraft and Edmund Wilson," *Fantasy Mongers* No. 1 (1979): 5.

28. Fred Lewis Pattee, review of *Supernatural Horror in Literature, American Literature* 18, No. 2 (May 1946): 175.

29. Richard B. Gehman, "Imagination Runs Wild," *New Republic* (17 January 1949): 17.

30. Derleth, "H. P. Lovecraft: The Making of a Literary Reputation 1937–1971," *Books at Brown* 25 (1977): 16.

31. Farnsworth Wright to AD, 13 July 1931 (ms., SHSW).

32. HPL to AD, 3 August 1931; *Essential Solitude,* 1.353.

33. AD to RHB, 15 June 1934 (ms., JHL).

34. CAS to AD, 13 April 1937; *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 58.

35. CAS to AD, 21 April 1937; *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 62.

36. CAS to AD, 28 April 1937; *Letters to H. P. Lovecraft,* 64.

37. AD, "H. P. Lovecraft, Outsider," *River* 1, No. 3 (June 1937): 88.

38. *The Trail of Cthulhu* (1962; rpt. New York: Beagle Books, 1971), 70.

39. *Something about Cats and Other Pieces,* 294.

40. *Arkham House: The First Twenty Years,* ix.

41. HPL to DW, 14 May 1936; *Mysteries of Time and Spirit,* 376.

42. HPL to Wilfred B. Talman, 5 March 1932 (*SL* 4.27).

43. AD, "Myths about Lovecraft," 4.

44. AD to Thomas R. Smith, 10 July 1963 (ms., SHSW).

45. Mark Owings, *The Necronomicon: A Study* (Baltimore: Mirage Press, 1967), title page.

46. AD to Sonia H. Davis, 21 November 1947; cited in Gerry de la Ree, "When Sonia Sizzled," in *The Normal Lovecraft,* 29.

47. E. O. D. K[eown], "Sabbat-Night Reading," *Punch* (28 February 1951): 285.

48. *Times Literary Supplement* (22 February 1952): 137.

49. See Derleth, "H. P. Lovecraft: The Making of a Literary Reputation," 19.

50. "Books of 1954: A Symposium," *Observer* (26 December 1954): 7.

51. Derleth, "H. P. Lovecraft: The Making of a Literary Reputation," 20.

52. Wilson, *The Strength to Dream* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1962), 1–2.

53. Wilson, "Prefatory Note" to *The Philosopher's Stone* (1969; rpt. New York: Warner Books, 1981), 18.

54. See Fred Chappell, "Remarks on *Dagon,*" *H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference: Proceedings,* ed. S. T. Joshi (West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1991), 44.

55. Derleth, "H. P. Lovecraft: The Making of a Literary Reputation," 23.

56. Philip Herrera, "The Dream Lurker," *Time* (11 June 1973): 99–100.

57. Cited in St Armand, "Synchronistic Worlds: Lovecraft and Borges," in *An Epicure in the Terrible,* 299.

58. Borges, *The Book of Sand,* tr. Norman Thomas di Giovanni (New York: E. Dutton, 1977), 124.

59. See Jeffrey L. Meikle, "'Other Frequencies': The Parallel Worlds of Thomas Pynchon and H. P. Lovecraft," *Modern Fiction Studies* 27 (1981): 287–94.

60. Cited in Rhoda Koenig's review of *Ancient Evenings, New York Magazine* (25 April 1983): 71.

61. Not to be confused with an earlier (1987) edition of the same title.

62. See Clarke's *Astounding Days: a Science Fictional Autobiography* (New York: Bantam, 1990), 128–32.

63. *American Literature* 63 (June 1991): 374.

Bibliography

I. Primary

A. Manuscript Archives

H. P. Lovecraft Papers, John Hay Library, Brown University, Providence, RI.
August Derleth Papers, State Historical Society of Wisconsin, Madison, WI.

B. Books and Pamphlets

i. Letters

Dreams and Fancies. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1962.
E'ch-Pi-El Speaks: An Autobiographical Sketch. Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1972.
Essential Solitude: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and August Derleth. Ed. David E. Schultz and S. T. Joshi. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2008. 2 vols.
Letters from New York. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2005.
Letters to Alfred Galpin. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2005.
Letters to Henry Kuttner. Ed. David E. Schultz and S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990.
"Letters to John T. Dunn." Ed. S. T. Joshi, David E. Schultz, and John H. Stanley. *Books at Brown* 28–29 (1991–92 [1995]): 157–223.
Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003.
Letters to Richard F. Searight. Ed. David E. Schultz and S. T. Joshi, with Franklyn Searight. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1992.

Letters to Robert Bloch. Ed. David E. Schultz and S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1993.
Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994.
Lord of a Visible World: An Autobiography in Letters. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. Athens: Ohio University Press, 2000.
A Means to Freedom: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard. Ed. S. T. Joshi, David E. Schultz, and Rusty Burke. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2009. 2 vols.
Mysteries of Time and Spirit: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Donald Wandrei. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2002.
O Fortunate Floridian: H. P. Lovecraft's Letters to R. H. Barlow. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. Tampa: University of Florida Press, 2007.
Selected Letters. Ed. August Derleth and Donald Wandrei (Vols. I–III); ed. August Derleth and James Turner (Vols. IV–V). Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1965–76. 5 vols.
Uncollected Letters. Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1986.
Yr Obt Servt: Some Postcards of Howard Phillips Lovecraft Sent to Wilfred Blanch Talman. Ed. R. Alain Everts. Madison, WI: The Strange Co., 1988.

ii. Fiction

The Annotated H. P. Lovecraft. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Dell, 1997.
At the Mountains of Madness: The Definitive Text. New York: Modern Library, 2005.
At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1964. (Rev. ed. by S. T. Joshi, 1985.)
The Battle That Ended the Century (with R. H. Barlow). [DeLand, FL: R. H. Barlow, 1934.]
Best Supernatural Stories of H. P. Lovecraft. Ed. August Derleth. Cleveland: World Publishing Co., 1945.
Beyond the Wall of Sleep. Ed. August Derleth and Donald Wandrei. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1943.
The Call of Cthulhu and Other Weird Stories. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Penguin, 1999.
The Cats of Ulthar. Cassia, FL: The Dragon-Fly Press, 1935.

Dagon and Other Macabre Tales. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, WI: Arkhain House, 1965. (Rev. ed. by S. T. Joshi, 1986.)
The Dreams in the Witch House and Other Weird Stories. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Penguin, 2004.
The Dunwich Horror and Others. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1963. (Rev. ed. by S. T. Joshi, 1984.)
The Fiction. [Ed. S. T. Joshi.] New York: Barnes & Noble, 2008.
From the Pest Zone: Stories from New York. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003.
A History of the Necronomicon. Oakman, AL: Wilson H. Shepherd (The Rebel Press), [1937]. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1977 (rev. ed. 1980).
The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions. [Ed. August Derleth.] Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1970. (Rev. ed. by S. T. Joshi, 1989.)
More Annotated H. P. Lovecraft. Ed. Peter Cannon and S. T. Joshi. New York: Dell, 1999.
The Outsider and Others. Ed. August Derleth and Donald Wandrei. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1939.
The Shadow out of Time. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2001.
The Shadow over Innsmouth. Everett, PA: Visionary Publishing Co., 1936.
The Shadow over Innsmouth. Ed. S. T. Joshi and David E. Schultz. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994 (rev. ed. 1997).
The Shunned House. Athol, MA: W. Paul Cook (The Recluse Press), 1928. [Printed but not bound or distributed.] Dover, 1973.
Tales. Ed. Peter Straub. New York: Library of America, 2005.
Tales of H. P. Lovecraft. Ed. Joyce Carol Oates. Hopewell, NJ: Ecco Press, 1997. New York: HarperCollins, 2000.
The Thing on the Doorstep and Other Weird Stories. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Penguin, 2001.

iii. Essays and Miscellany

The Annotated Supernatural Horror in Literature. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2000.
Autobiographical Writings. Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1992.
The Californian: 1934–1938. Ed. Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1977.

Charleston. [New York: H. C. Koenig, 1936; rev. ed. 1936.]
Collected Essays. Ed. S. T. Joshi. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2004–06. 5 vols.
Commonplace Book. Ed. David E. Schultz. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1987. 2 vols.
The Conservative: Complete 1915–1923. Ed. Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1976.
The Conservative. Ed. S. T Joshi. West Warwick, Rl: Necronomicon Press, 1990.
The Dark Brotherhood and Other Pieces. [Ed. August Derleth.] Sauk City, WI: Arkham. House, 1966.
European Glimpses. Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, Rl: Necronomicon Press, 1988.
First Writings: Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner 1906. Ed. Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1976 (rev. ed. 1986).
Further Criticism of Poetry. Louisville, KY. Press of George G. Fetter Co., 1932.
In Defence of Dagon. Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1985.
Juvenilia 1897–1905. Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1984.
Looking Backward. Haverhill, MA: C. W, Smith, [1920]. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1977.
Lovecraft at Last (with Willis Conover). Arlington, VA: Carrollton-Clark, 1975.
The Lovecraft Collectors Library. Ed. George T. Wetzel. North Tonawanda, NY: SSR Publications, 1952–55. 7 vols.
Marginalia. Ed. August Derleth and Donald Wandrei. Sauk City, WI: Arkham. House, 1944.
The Materialist Today. North Montpelier, VT: Driftwind Press, [1926].
Miscellaneous Writings. Ed. S. T. Joshi. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1995.
The Notes & Commonplace Book . . . [Ed. R. H. Barlow.] Lakeport, CA: The Futile Press, 1938.
The Occult Lovecraft. Ed. Anthony Raven. Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1975.

Science versus Charlatanry: Essays on Astrology (with J. F. Hartmann). Ed. S. T. Joshi and Scott Connors. Madison, WI: The Strange Co., 1979.
The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, Wl: Arkham House, 1959.
Some Current Motives and Practices. [DeLand, FL: R. H. Barlow, 1936.]
Something about Cats and Other Pieces. Ed. August Derleth. Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1949.
Supernatural Horror in Literature. New York: Ben Abramson, 1945 (rev. ed. 1945). New York:
To Quebec and the Stars. Ed. L. Sprague de Camp. West Kingston, RI: Donald M. Grant, 1976.
Uncollected Prose and Poetry. Ed. S. T. Joshi and Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1978–82. 3 vols.
United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism. [Privately printed, 1915.]
The Vivisector. [Ed. S. T. Joshi.] West Warwick, RL Necronomicon Press, 1990.
Writings in The Tryout. Ed. Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1977.
Writings in The United Amateur *1915–1925.* Ed. Marc A. Michaud. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1976.

iv. Poetry

The Ancient Track: Complete Poetical Works. Ed. S. T. Joshi. San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2001.
Collected Poems. [Ed. August Derleth.] Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1963.
The Crime of Crimes. Llandudno, Wales: A[rthur] Harris, [1915].
The Fantastic Poetry. Ed. S. T Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990.
Fungi from Yuggoth. [Washington, DC?:] FAPA [Fantasy Amateur Press Association] (Bill Evans), 1943.
HPL. [Bellville, NJ: Corwin F. Stickney, 1937.]
Medusa and Other Poems. Ed. S. T. Joshi. Mount Olive, NC: Cryptic Publications, 1986.
Saturnalia and Other Poems. Ed. S. T. Joshi. [Bloomfield, NJ:] Cryptic Publications, 1984.
A Winter Wish. Ed. Tom Collins. Chapel Hill, NC: Whispers Press, 1977.

II. Secondary

A. Bibliographies, Catalogues, and Indices

Joshi, S. T. *H. P. Lovecraft and Lovecraft Criticism: An Annotated Bibliography.* Kent, OH: Kent State University Press, 1981. Rev. ed. as *H. P. Lovecraft: A Comprehensive Bibliography.* Tampa: University of Tampa Press, 2009.
Joshi, S. T., and L. D. Blackmore. *H. P. Lovecraft and Lovecraft Criticism: An Annotated Bibliography: Supplement 1980–1984.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1985.
———. *An Index to the Fiction and Poetry of H. P Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1992.
———. *An Index to the Selected Letters of H. P. Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1980 (rev. ed. 1991).
———. *Lovecraft's Library: A Catalogue.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1980. Rev. ed. New York: Hippocampus Press, 2002.
Wetzel, George, ed. *The Lovecraft Collectors Library,* Volume Seven: Bibliographies. North Tonawanda, NY: SSR Publications, 1955.

B. Books about Lovecraft

Airaksinen, Timo. *The Philosophy of H. P. Lovecraft.* New York: Peter Lang, 1999.
Barlow, R. H. *On Lovecraft and Life.* Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, R.I: Necronomicon Press, 1992.
Beckwith, Henry L. P., Jr. *Lovecraft's Providence and Adjacent Parts.* West Kingston, RI: Donald M. Grant, 1979 (rev. ed. 1986).
Burleson, Donald R. *H. P. Lovecraft. A Critical Study.* Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1983.
———. *Lovecraft: Disturbing the Universe.* Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 1990.
Cannon, Peter. *The Chronology out of Time: Dates in the Fiction of H. P Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1986.
———. *H. P. Lovecraft.* Boston: Twayne, 1989.
———, ed. *Lovecraft Remembered.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1998.
Carter, Lin. *Lovecraft: A Look behind the "Cthulhu Mythos."* New York: Ballantine Books,

1972. Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1993.
Colavito, Jason. *The Cult of Alien Gods: H. P. Lovecraft and Extraterrestrial Pop Culture.* Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 2005.
Connors, Scott, ed. *A Century Less a Dream: Selected Criticism on H. P. Lovecraft.* Holicong, PA: Wildside Press, 2002.
Cook, W. Paul. *In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Recollections, Appreciations, Estimates.* North Montpelier, VT: The Driftwind Press, 1941. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1977 (rev. ed. 1991).
Davis, Sonia H. *The Private Life of H. P, Lovecraft.* Ed. S. T. Joshi. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1985 (rev. ed. 1992).
de Camp, L. Sprague. *Lovecraft: A Biography.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975.
Derleth, August. *H.P.L.: A Memoir.* New York: Ben Abramson, 1945.
———. *Some Notes on H. P. Lovecraft.* [Sauk City, WI:] Arkham House, 1959. West Warwick, RI: Necronoinicon Press, 1982.
Eddy, Muriel E. *The Gentleman from Angell Street.* [Providence: Privately Printed,] 1961.
Everts, R. Alain. *The Death of a Gentleman: The Last Days of Howard Phillips Lovecraft.* Madison, WI: The Strange Co., 1987.
Faig, Kenneth W., Jr. *H. P. Lovecraft: His Life, His Work.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1979.
———. *The Parents of Howard Phillips Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1990.
———. *The Unknown Lovecraft.* New York: Hippocampus Press, 2009.
Frierson, Meade and Penny, ed. *HPL.* [Birmingham, AL: The Editors, 1972.]
Grant, Donald M., and Thomas P. Hadley, ed. *Rhode Island on Lovecraft.* Providence: Grant-Hadley, 1945.
Harms, Daniel, and John Wisdom Gonce III. *The Necronomicon Files: The Truth Behind the Legend.* San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 1998.
Houellebecq, Michel. *H. P. Lovecraft: Contre le monde, contre la vie.* Monaco: Editions du Rocher, 1991. Tr. by Dorna Khazeni (as *H. P. Lovecraft: Against the World, Against Life*). San Francisco: Believer Books, 2005.
Jones, Stephen. *H. P. Lovecraft in Britain.* Birmingham: British Fantasy Society, 2007.

Joshi, S. T. *A Dreamer and a Visionary: H. P. Lovecraft in His Time.* Liverpool: Liverpool University Press, 2001.
———. *H. P. Lovecraft.* (Starmont Reader's Guide 13.) Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1982.
———. *H. P. Lovecraft: A Life.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1996.
———. *H. P. Lovecraft: The Decline of the West.* Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1990.
———. *Primal Sources: Essays on H. P. Lovecraft.* New York: Hippocampus Press, 2003.
———. *The Rise and Fall of the Cthulhu Mythos.* Poplar Bluff, MO: Mythos Books, 2008.
———. *Selected Papers on Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1989.
———. *A Subtler Magick: The Writings and Philosophy of H. P. Lovecraft.* San Bernadino, CA: Borgo Press, 1996.
———, ed. *Caverns Measureless to Man: 18 Memoirs of Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1996.
———, ed. *H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism.* Athens: Ohio University Press, 1980.
———, ed. *The H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference: Proceedings.* West Warwick, RI: Necronornicon Press, 1991.
———, ed. *H. P. Lovecraft in the Argosy: Collected Correspondence from the Munsey Magazines.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1994.
Joshi, S. T., and Marc A. Michaud, ed. *H. P. Lovecraft in "The Eyrie."* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1979.
Joshi, S. T., and David E. Schultz. *An H. P. Lovecraft Encyclopedia.* Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 2001. New York: Hippocampus Press, [2004].
Lévy, Maurice. *Lovecraft ou du fantastique.* Paris: Christian Bourgois (Union Générale d'Editions), 1972. Tr. by S. T. Joshi (as *Lovecraft: A Study in the Fantastic*). Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1988.
Long, Frank Belknap. *Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Dreamer on the Nightside.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1975.
Mariconda, Steven J. *On the Emergence of "Cthulhu" and Other Observations.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1995.

Migliore, Andrew, and John Strysik, ed. *The Lurker in the Lobby: A Guide to the Cinema of H. P. Lovecraft.* Seattle: Armitage House, 1999. San Francisco: Night Shade Books, 2005.
Mosig, Dirk W. *Mosig at Last: A Psychologist Looks at H. P. Lovecraft.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1997.
Pearsall, Anthony. *The Lovecraft Lexicon.* Tempe, AZ: New Falcon Publications, 2005.
Price, Robert M. *H. P. Lovecraft and the Cthulhu Mythos.* Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1990.
St Armand, Barton Levi. *H. P. Lovecraft: New England Decadent.* Albuquerque, NM: Silver Scarab Press, 1979.
———. *The Roots of Horror in the Fiction of H. P. Lovecraft.* Elizabethtown, NY. Dragon Press, 1977.
Schultz, David E., and S. T. Joshi, ed. *An Epicure in the Terrible: A Centennial Anthology of Essays in Honor of H. P. Lovecraft.* Rutherford, NJ: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 1991.
Schweitzer, Darrell, ed. *Essays Lovecraftian.* Baltimore: T-K Graphics, 1976. Rev. ed. as *Discovering H. P. Lovecraft.* Mercer Island, WA: Starmont House, 1987. Rev. ed. Holicong, PA: Wildside Press, 2001.
Shreffler, Philip A. *The H. P. Lovecraft Companion.* Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1977.
Squires, Richard D. *Stern Fathers 'neath the Mould: The Lovecraft Family in Rochester.* West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1995.
Szumskyj, Ben J. S., and S. T. Joshi, ed. *Fritz Leiber and H. P. Lovecraft: Writers of the Dark.* Holicong, PA: Wildside Press, 2003.
Talman, Wilfred B. [et al.]. *The Normal Lovecraft.* Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1973.
Van Hise, James, ed. *The Fantastic Worlds of H. P. Lovecraft.* Yucca Valley, CA: James Van Hise, 1999.
Waugh, Robert H. *The Monster in the Mirror: Looking for H. P. Lovecraft.* New York: Hippocampus Press, 2006.
Wetzel, George T., and R. Alain Everts. *Winifred Virginia Jackson—Lovecraft's Lost Romance.* [Madison, WI: R. Alain Everts, 1976.]

C. Articles in Books and Periodicals
i. Memoirs and Biographical Articles

Baldwin, F. Lee. “H. P. Lovecraft: A Biographical Sketch.” *Fantasy Magazine* 4, No. 5 (April 1935):108–10, 132.
Barlow, Robert H. “The Wind That Is in the Grass: A Memoir of H. P. Lovecraft in Florida.” In Lovecraft’s *Marginalia* (q.v.). In *O Fortunate Floridian* (q.v.), pp. xxix–xxxiv.
Bishop, Zealia. “H. P. Lovecraft: A Pupil’s View.” In Bishop’s *The Curse of Yig.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1953, pp. 139–51.
Bloch, Robert. “Out of the Ivory Tower.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 171–77.
Boland, Stuart. “Interlude with Lovecraft.” *Acolyte* 3, No. 3 (Summer 1945): 15–18.
Bradofsky, Hyman. “Amateur Affairs.” *Californian* 5, No. 1 (Summer 1937): 28–31.
Brobst, Harry K. “An Interview with Harry Brobst” (conducted by Will Murray). *Lovecraft Studies* Nos. 22/23 (Fall 1990): 24–42, 21.
Cole, Edward H. “Ave atque Vale!” *Olympian* No. 35 (Autumn 1940): 7–22.
Crawford, William L. “Lovecraft’s First Book.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 287–90.
Davis, Sonia H. “Memories of Lovecraft: I.” *Arkham Collector* No. 4 (Winter 1969): 116–17.
Derleth, August. “Addenda to ‘H. P. L.: A Memoir.’” In Lovecraft’s *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp, 247–77.
———. “H. P. Lovecraft, Outsider.” *River* 1, No. 3 (June 1937): 88–89.
———. “A Master of the Macabre.” *Reading and Collecting* 1, No. 9 (August 1937): 9–10.
Eddy, C. M., Jr. “Walks with H. P. Lovecraft.” In Lovecraft’s *The Dark Brotherhood and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 262–67.
Edkins, E. A. “Idiosyncrasies of HPL.” *Olympian* No. 35 (Autumn 1940): 1–7.
Everts, R. Alain. “Howard Phillips Lovecraft and Sex; or, The Sex Life of a Gentleman.” *Nyctalops* 2, No. 2 (July 1974): 19.
———. “Mrs. Howard Phillips Lovecraft.” *Nyctalops* 2, No. 1 (April 1973): 45.
Faig, Kenneth W., Jr. “Howard Phillips Lovecraft: The Early Years 1890–1914.” *Nyctalops* 2, No. 1 (April 1973): 3–9, 13–15; 2, No. 2 (July 1974): 34–44.

Galpin, Alfred. “Memories of a Friendship.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 191–201.
Hart, Mara Kirk. “Walkers in the City: George Willard Kirk and Howard Phillips Lovecraft in New York City, 1924–1926.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 28 (Spring 1993): 2–17.
Houtain, George Julian. “20 Webster Street.” *Zenith* (January 1921): 5.
Isaacson, Charles D. “Concerning the Conservative.” *In a Minor Key* No. 2 [1915]: [10–11].
Keller, David H. “Lovecraft’s Astronomical Notebook.” *Lovecraft Collector* No. 3 (October 1949):1–4.
———. “Shadows over Lovecraft.” *Fantasy Commentator* 2, No. 7 (Summer 1948): 237–46.
Kleiner, Rheinhart. “After a Decade and the Kalem Club.” *Californian* 4, No. 2 (Fall 1936): 45–47. *Lovecraft Studies* No. 28 (Spring 1993): 34–35.
———. “Howard Phillips Lovecraft.” *Californian* 5, No. 1 (Summer 1937): 5–8.
———. “A Memoir of Lovecraft.” In Lovecraft’s *Something about Cats and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 218–28.
Leiber, Fritz. “My Correspondence with Lovecraft.” *Fresco* 8, No. 3 (Spring 1958): 30–33.
Lockhart, Andrew Francis. “Little Journeys to the Homes of Prominent Amateurs.” *United Amateur* 15, No. 2 (September 1915): 27–28, 34.
Long, Frank Belknap. “Some Random Memories of H. P. L.” In Lovecraft’s *Marginalia* (q.v.), pp. 332–37.
Loveman, Samuel. “Howard Phillips Lovecraft.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 229–33.
———. “Lovecraft as a Conversationalist.” *Fresco* 8, No. 3 (Spring 1958): 34–36.
———. “Of Gold and Sawdust.” In Lovecraft’s *The Occult Lovecraft.* Saddle River, NJ: Gerry de la Ree, 1975, pp. 21–22.
Macauley, George W. “Lovecraft and the Amateur Press.” *Fresco* 8, No. 3 (Spring 1958): 40–44.
McNamara, M. Eileen, and S. T. Joshi. “Who Was the Real Charles Dexter Ward?” *Lovecraft Studies* Nos. 19/20 (Fall 1989): 40–41, 48.
Moe, Maurice W. “Howard Phillips Lovecraft: The Sage of Providence.” *O-Wash-Ta-Nong* [2, No. 2] [1937]: [3].

Morton, James F. "'Conservatism' Gone Mad." *In a Minor Key* No. 2 [1915]: [15–16].
———. "A Few Memories." *Olympian* No. 35 (Autumn 1940): 24–28.
Munn, H. Warner. "HPL." *Whispers* 3, No. 1 (December 1976): 24–28 (Part 1); 4, No. 1–2 (October 1979): 88–95 (Part II; as "HPL: A Reminiscence").
Munro, Harold W. "Lovecraft, My Childhood Friend." *Etchings and Odysseys* No. 2 (May 1983): 103–5.
Murray, Will. "Julius Schwartz on Lovecraft." *CoC* No. 76 (Hallowmass 1990): 14–18.
Orton, Vrest. "A Weird Writer Is in Our Midst." *Brattleboro Daily Reformer* (16 June 1928): 2.
Price, E. Hoffmann. "The Man Who Was Lovecraft." In Lovecraft's *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 278–89.
Price, Robert M. "Did Lovecraft Have Syphilis?" *CoC* No. 53 (Candlemas 1988): 25–26.
Rimel, Duane W. "Lovecraft as I Knew Him." *CoC* No. 18 (Yuletide 1983): 9–11.
Scott, Winfield Townley. "His Own Most Fantastic Creation: Howard Phillips Lovecraft." In Lovecraft's *Marginalia* (q.v.), pp. 309–31. Rev. ed. in Scott's *Exiles and Fabrications.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1961, pp. 50–72.
Shea, J. Vernon. "H. P. Lovecraft: The House and the Shadows." *Magazine of Fantasy and Science Fiction* 30, No. 5 (May 1966): 82–99. West Warwick, RI: Necronomicon Press, 1982.
Sterling, Kenneth. "Caverns Measureless to Man." *Science-Fantasy Correspondent* No. 1 (1975): 36–43.
———. "Lovecraft and Science." In Lovecraft's *Marginalia* (q.v.), pp. 351–54.
Sully, Helen. "Memories of Lovecraft: II." *Arkham Collector* No. 4 (Winter 1969): 117–19.
Walter, Dorothy C. "Lovecraft and Benefit Street." *Ghost* No. 1 (Spring 1943): 27–29.
———. "Three Hours with H. P. Lovecraft." In Lovecraft's *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 178–90.
Wandrei, Donald. "The Dweller in Darkness: Lovecraft, 1927." In Lovecraft's *Marginalia* (q.v.), pp. 362–69.

———. “Lovecraft in Providence.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 124–40.

ii. Critical Articles

Burleson, Donald R. “H. P. Lovecraft: The Hawthorne Influence.” *Extrapolation* 22, No. 3 (Fall 1981): 262–69.
———. “Humour beneath Horror: Some Sources for ‘The Dunwich Horror’ and ‘The Whisperer in Darkness.’” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 2 (Spring 1980): 5–15.
———. “The Mythic Hero Archetype in ‘The Dunwich Horror.’” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 4 (Spring 1981): 3–9.
Carter, Lin. “H. P. Lovecraft: The Books.” In Lovecraft’s *The Shuttered Room and Other Pieces* (q.v.), pp. 212–49. Rev. ed. (by Robert M. Price and S. T. Joshi) in Schweitzer, *Discovering H. P. Lovecraft* (q.v.), 2001 ed., pp. 107–47.
Clore, Dan. “Metonyms of Alterity: A Semiotic Interpretation of *Fungi from Yuggoth*.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 30 (Spring 1994): 21–32.
Derleth, August. “H. P. Lovecraft: The Making of a Literary Reputation, 1937–1971.” *Books at Brown* 25 (1977): 13–25.
Eckhardt, Jason C. “Behind the Mountains of Madness: Lovecraft and the Antarctic in 1930.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 14 (Spring 1987): 31–38.
Evans, Timothy H. “A Last Defense against the Dark: Folklore, Horror, and the Uses of Tradition in the Works of H. P. Lovecraft.” *Journal of Folklore Research* 42, No. 1 (January–April 2005): 99–135.
———. “Tradition and Illusion: Antiquarianism, Tourism and Horror in H. P. Lovecraft.” *Extrapolation* 45, No. 2 (Summer 2004): 176–95.
Faig, Kenneth W., Jr. “‘The Silver Key’ and Lovecraft’s Childhood.” *CoC* No. 81 (St John’s Eve 1992): 11–47.
Fulwiler, William. “E. R. B. and H. P. L.” *ERB-dom* No. 80 (February 1975): 41, 44.
———. “‘The Tomb’ and ‘Dagon’: A Double Dissection.” *CoC* No. 38 (Eastertide 1986): 8–14.
Gayford, Norman R. “Randolph Carter: An Anti-Hero’s Quest.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 16 (Spring 1988): 3–11; No. 17 (Fall 1988): 5–13.
Hazel, Faye Ringel. “Some Strange New England Mortuary Practices: Lovecraft Was Right.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 29 (Fall 1993): 13–18.
Joshi, S. T. “Autobiography in Lovecraft.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 1 (Fall 1979): 7–19.

———. “The Development of Lovecraftian Studies 1971–1982.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 8 (Spring 1984): 32–36 (as “Lovecraft in the Foreign Press 1971–1982”); No. 9 (Fall 1984): 62–71; No. 10 (Spring 1985): 18–28; No. 11 (Fall 1985): 54–65.
———. “Lovecraft and the *Regnum Congo.*” *CoC* No. 28 (Yuletide 1984): 13–17.
———. “The Rationale of Lovecraft’s Pseudonyms.” *CoC* No. 80 (Eastertide 1992): 15–24, 29.
———. “Topical References in Lovecraft.” *Extrapolation* 25, No. 3 (Fall 1984): 247–65.
Keffer, Willametta. “Howard P(seudonym) Lovecraft: The Many Names of HPL.” *Fossil* No. 158 (July 1958): 82–84.
Kleiner, Rheinhart. “A Note on Howard P. Lovecraft’s Verse.” *United Amateur* 18, No. 4 (March 1919): 76.
Livesey, T. R. “Dispatches from the Providence Observatory: Astronomical Motifs and Sources in the Writings of H. P. Lovecraft.” *Lovecraft Annual* 2 (2008): 3–87.
Mabbott, T. O. “Lovecraft as a Student of Poe.” *Fresco* 10, No. 3 (Summer 1960): 22–24.
Mariconda, Steven J. “H. P. Lovecraft: Art, Artifact, and Reality.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 29 (Fall 1993): 2–12.
Marten, Robert D. “Arkham Country: In Rescue of the Lost Searchers.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 39 (Summer 1998): 1–20.
Mosig, Dirk W. “H. P. Lovecraft: Myth-Maker.” *Whispers* 3, No. 1 (December 1976): 48–55.
———. “Lovecraft: The Dissonance Factor in Imaginative Literature.” *Gothic* 1 (1979): 20–26. *CoC* No. 33 (Lammas 1985): 12–23.
Murray, Will. “Behind the Mask of Nyarlathotep.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 25 (Fall 1991): 25–29.
———. “The Dunwich Chimera and Others: Correlating the Cthulhu Mythos.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 8 (Spring 1984):10–24.
———. “Lovecraft and *Strange Tales.*” *CoC* No. 74 (Lammas 1990): 3–11.
Nelson, Dale J. “Lovecraft and the Burkean Sublime.” *Lovecraft Studies* No. 24 (Spring 1991):2–5.
Onderdonk, Matthew H. “Charon—in Reverse; or, H. P. Lovecraft versus the ‘Realists’ of Fantasy.” *Fantasy Commentator* 2, No. 6 (Spring 1948):

193–97. *Fresco* 8, No. 3 (Spring 1958): 45–51. *Lovecraft Studies* No. 3 (Fall 1980): 5–10.
———. "The Lord of R'lyeh." *Fantasy Commentator* 1, No. 6 (Spring 1945):103–14. *Lovecraft Studies* No. 7 (Fall 1982): 8–17.
Price, Robert M. "Demythologizing Cthulhu." *Lovecraft Studies* No. 8 (Spring 1984): 3–9, 24.
———. "Higher Criticism and the *Necronomicon.*" *Lovecraft Studies* No. 6 (Spring 1982): 3–15.
St Armand, Barton L., and John H. Stanley. "H. P. Lovecraft's *Waste Paper:* A Facsimile and Transcript of the Original Draft." *Books at Brown* 26 (1978): 31–47.
Schultz, David E. "Lovecraft's *Fungi from Yuggoth.*" *CoC* No. 20 (Eastertide 1984): 3–7.
———. "Lovecraft's New York Exile: Its Influence on His Life and Writings." *CoC* No. 30 (Eastertide 1985): 8–14.
———. "The Origin of Lovecraft's 'Black Magic' Quote." *CoC* No. 48 (St John's Eve 1987): 9–13.
———. "Who Needs the Cthulhu Mythos?" *Lovecraft Studies* No. 13 (Fall 1986): 43–53.
Starrett, Vincent. *Books and Bipeds.* New York: Argus Books, 1947, pp. 119–22, 203–4.
Tierney, Richard L. "The Derleth Mythos." In Frierson, *HPL* (q.v.). *CoC* No. 24 (Lammas 1984): 52–53.
Waugh, Robert H. "Documents, Creatures, and History in H. P. Lovecraft." *Lovecraft Studies* No. 25 (Fall 1991): 2–10.
———. "Dr. Margaret Murray and H. P. Lovecraft: *The Witch-Cult in Western Europe.*" *Lovecraft Studies* No. 31 (Fall 1994): 2–10.
———. "The Structural and Thematic Unity of *Fungi from Yuggoth.*" *Lovecraft Studies* No. 26 (Fall 1992): 2–14.
Wetzel, George T. "The Mechanistic-Supernatural of Lovecraft." *Fresco* 8, No. 3 (Spring 1958): 54–60.
Wilson, Colin. *The Strength to Dream: Literature and the Imagination.* London: Victor Gollancz, 1961; Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1962, pp. 1–10, 111–15.
Wilson, Edmund. "Tales of the Marvellous and the Ridiculous." *New Yorker* 21, No. 41 (24 November 1945): 100, 103–4, 106. In Wilson's *Classics and*

Commercials: A Literary Chronicle of the Forties. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1950, pp. 286–90.

D. Unpublished Works

Faig, Kenneth W., Jr. "Lovecraftian Voyages." [1973.]
Koki, Arthur S. "H. P. Lovecraft: An Introduction to His Life and Writings." M.A. thesis: Columbia University, 1962.
Thomas, James Warren. "Howard Phillips Lovecraft: A Self-Portrait." M.A. thesis: Brown University, 1950.

E. Lovecraft in Fiction

Campbell, Ramsey, ed. *New Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1980.
Cannon, P[eter] H. *Pulptime.* Buffalo, NY: Weirdbook Press, 1984.
———. *Scream for Jeeves: A Parody.* New York: Wodecraft Press, 1994.
———. *The Lovecraft Chronicles.* Poplar Bluff, MO: Mythos Books, 2004.
Chappell, Fred. *Dagon.* New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1968.
Derleth, August, ed. *Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1969. (Rev. ed. by James Turner, 1990.)
Jones, Stephen, ed. *Shadows over Innsmouth.* Minneapolis: Fedogan & Bremer, 1994.
Lupoff, Richard A. *Lovecraft's Book.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1985.
Hay, George, ed. *The Necronomicon.* Jersey, UK: Neville Spearman, 1978.
Schevill, James. *Lovecraft's Follies.* Chicago: Swallow Press, 1971.
Weinberg, Robert, and Martin H. Greenberg, ed. *Lovecraft's Legacy.* New York: Tor, 1990.

F. Works on Supernatural Fiction

Birkhead, Edith. *The Tale of Terror.* London: Constable, 1921.
Bourke, Joanna. *Fear: A Cultural History.* Emeryville, CA: Shoemaker & Hoard, 2005.
Carroll, Noël. *The Philosophy of Horror.* New York: Routledge, 1990.
Derleth, August. *Arkham House: The First Twenty Years 1939–1959: A History and Bibliography.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1959.
———. *Thirty Years of Arkham House 1939–1969.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1970.

Joshi, S. T. *The Evolution of the Weird Tale.* New York: Hippocampus Press, 2004.
———. *The Modern Weird Tale.* Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 2001.
———. *Sixty Years of Arkham House.* Sauk City, WI: Arkham House, 1999.
———. *The Weird Tale.* Austin: University of Texas Press, 1990.
Joshi, S. T., and Stefan Dziemianowicz, ed. *Supernatural Literature of the World: An Encyclopedia.* Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 2005. 3 vols.
Moskowitz, Sam. *Under the Moons of Mars: A History and Anthology of "The Scientific Romance" in the Munsey Magazines 1912–1920.* New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1970.
Railo, Eino. *The Haunted Castle.* London: Routledge, 1927.
Weinberg, Robert. *The Weird Tales Story.* West Linn, OR: FAX Collector's Editions, 1977.

G. General Works

Ayer, A. J. *Language, Truth and Logic.* 1936 (rev. ed. 1946). New York: Dover, 1952.
Balderston, John L. *Berkeley Square: A Play in Three Acts.* New York: Macmillan, 1929.
Bell, Leland V. *In Hitler's Shadow: The Anatomy of American Nazism.* Port Washington, NY: Kennikat Press, 1973.
Breach, R. W. *A History of Our Own Times: Britain 1900–1964.* Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1968.
Bulfinch, Thomas. *Bulfinch's Mythology.* 1855. New York: Modern Library, n.d.
Calder, Ritchie. *Man and the Cosmos: The Nature of Science Today.* Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1970.
Cashman, Sean Dennis. *America in the Age of the Titans: The Progressive Era and World War I.* New York: New York University Press, 1988.
Chapman, Walker. *The Loneliest Continent: The Story of Antarctic Discovery.* Greenwich, CT: New York Graphic Society, 1964.
Cohen, Stanley. *Rebellion against Victorianism: The Impetus for Cultural Change in 1920s America.* New York: Oxford University Press, 1991.
Crane, Hart. *The Poems of Hart Crane.* Ed. Marc Simon. New York: Liveright, 1986.

De Grand, Alexander. *Italian Fascism: Its Origins and Development.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1982.
Derleth, August. *Evening in Spring.* New York: Scribner's, 1941.
———. *Place of Hawks.* New York: Loring & Mussey, 1935.
Elliot, Hugh. *Modern Science and Materialism.* London: Longmans, Green, 1919.
Ellis, Havelock. *On Life and Sex.* New York: New American library, 1957.
Ellis, Edward Robb. *A Nation in Torment: The Great American Depression 1929–1939.* New York: Coward-McCann, 1970.
Faig, Kenneth W., Jr. *Some of the Descendants of Asaph Phillips and Esther Whipple of Foster, Rhode Island.* Glenview, IL: Moshassuck Press, 1993.
Field, Edward, ed. *State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century: A History.* Boston: Mason Publishing Co., 1902. 3 vols.
Fiske John. *Myths and Myth-Makers: Old Tales and Superstitions Interpreted by Comparative Mythology.* 1872. Rpt. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1902.
Frazer, Sir James George. *The Golden Bough: The Roots of Religion and Folklore.* London. Macmillan, 1890. 2 vols.
Gissing, George. *The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft.* 1903. Rpt. New York. E. P. Dutton, 1907.
Gohau, Gabriel. *A History of Geology.* Rev. & tr. Albert V. Carozzi and Marguerite Carozzi. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1991.
Gossett, Thoma F. *Race: The History of an Idea in America.* Dallas: Southern Methodist University Press, 1963.
Grimm, Brothers. *The Complete Grimm's Fairy Tales.* New York: Pantheon, 1944.
Haeckel, Ernst. *The Riddle of the Universe at the Close of the Nineteenth Century.* Tr. Joseph McCabe. New York: Harper & Brothers, 1900.
Harris, Marvin. *The Rise of Anthropological Theory: A History of Theories of Culture.* New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Co., 1948.
Huxley, Thomas Henry. *Man's Place in Nature and Other Anthropological Essays.* New York: D. Appleton & Co., 1894.
Jeans, Sir James. *The Universe around Us.* New York: Macmillan, 1929.
Kaufmann, Walter. *Nietzsche: Philosopher, Psychologist, Antichrist.* Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1950 (4th ed. 1974).
Kevles, Daniel J. *In the Name of Eugenics: Genetics and the Uses of Human Heredity.* New York: Knopf, 1985.

Krutch, Joseph Wood. *The Modern Temper: A Study and a Confession.* New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1929.
Mackie, J. L. *Ethics: Inventing Right and Wrong.* Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1977.
McLoughlin, William G. *Rhode Island: A Bicentennial History.* New York: W. W. Norton; Nashville: American Association for State and Local History, 1978.
Moorhouse, Geoffrey. *Imperial City: The Rise and Rise of New York.* London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1988.
Morison, Samuel Eliot; Commager, Henry Steele; and Leuchtenburg, William E. *The Growth of the American Republic.* 7th ed. New York. Oxford University Press, 1980. 2 vols.
Murray, Margaret Alice. *The Witch-Cult in Western Europe: A Study in Anthropology.* Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1921.
Nietzsche, Friedrich. *On the Genealogy of Morals; Ecce Homo.* Tr. Walter Kaufmann and R. J. Hollingdale. New York: Vintage, 1969.
———. *Twilight of the Idols; The Anti-Christ.* Tr. R. J. Hollingdale. Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1968.
Noll, Mark A. *A History of Christianity in the United States and Canada.* Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans, 1992.
Parrish, Michael E. *Anxious Decades: America in Prosperity and Depression 1920–1941.* New York: W. W. Norton, 1992.
Passmore, John. *A Hundred Years of Philosophy.* 1957 (rev. ed. 1966). Rpt. Harmondsworth. Penguin, 1968.
Poe, Edgar Allan. *Collected Works.* Ed. Thomas Ollive Mabbott. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1969–78. 3 vols.
Reynolds, Quentin. *The Fiction Factory, or, From Pulp Row to Quality Street: The Story of 100 Years of Publishing at Street & Smith.* New York: Random House, 1955.
Rhode, Eric. *A History of the Cinema from Its Origins to 1970.* New York: Hill & Wang, 1976.
Russell, Bertrand. *Human Knowledge: Its Scope and Limits.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1948.
———. *The Selected Papers of Bertrand Russell.* New York: Modem Library, 1927.
Santayana, George. *The Life of Reason.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1905. 5 vols.

———. *Scepticism and Animal Faith.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1923.
Schneer, Cecil J. *Mind and Matter: Man's Changing Concepts of the Material World.* New York: Grove Press, 1969.
Schonbach, Morris. *Native American Fascism during the 1930s and 1940s: A Study of Its Roots, Its Growth and Its Decline.* (Ph.D. diss.: UCLA, 1958.) New York: Garland, 1985.
Schopenhauer, Arthur. *Essays of Arthur Schopenhauer.* Tr. T. Bailey Saunders. New York: Willey Book Co., [1914].
Skinner, Charles M. *Myths and Legends of Our Own Land.* Philadelphia: J. B. Lippincott Co., 1896. 2 vols.
Smith, William Benjamin. *The Color Line: A Brief in Behalf of the Unborn.* New York: McClure, Phillips & Co., 1905.
Spencer, Truman J. *The History of Amateur Journalism.* New York: The Fossils, 1957.
Spengler, Oswald. *The Decline of the West.* Tr. Charles Francis Atkinson. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1926–28. 2 vols.
Taylor, A. J. P. *English History 1914–1945.* New York: Oxford University Press, 1965.
Turner, James. *Without God, Without Creed: The Origins of Unbelief in America.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985.
Twain, Mark [Samuel Langhorne Clemens]. *What Is Man?* 1906. Rpt. *What Is Man and Other Irreverent Essays.* Ed. S. T. Joshi. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 2008.
Tylor, Edward Burnett. *Primitive Culture.* 1871. Rpt. (from the 2nd [1873] ed.) New York: Harper & Row, 1958 (as *The Origins of Culture* [Volume 1] and *Religion in Primitive Culture* [Volume 2]).
Whitney, Charles A. *The Discovery of Our Galaxy.* New York: Knopf, 1971.

Index

A Rebours (Huysmans)
“Abominations of Yondo, The” (Smith)
Abraham, Margaret
“Absent Leader, The”
Account in Verse of the Marvellous Adventures of H. Lovecraft . . ., An
“Account of a Trip to the Antient Fairbanks House . . ., An”
“Account of a Visit to Charleston, S.C.”
“Account of *Charleston,* An”
Acids
Ackerman, Forrest J
Acolyte
“Ad Balneum”
“Ad Britannos, 1918”
“Ad Criticos”
Adams, Hazel Pratt
Adams, Henry
Adams, John D.
Addison, Joseph
“Adept’s Gambit” (Leiber)
Adventure
“Adventure in the Fourth Dimension, An” (Wright)
Adventurer
Aeneid (Virgil)
“Aeneid, The”
“Æpyornis Island” (Wells)
Aftermath
Age of Fable, The (Bulfinch)
Ah, Sweet Idiocy! (Laney)
Aickman, Robert

Aiken, Conrad
Ainsworth, W. Harrison
Airaksinen, Timo
Akley, Bert G.
Akron Beacon Journal
“Alchemist, The”
Alciphron (Berkeley)
Alden, Abner
“Aletheia Phrikodes”
Alexander, Mr
Alexander and Three Small Plays (Dunsany)
Alfredo: A Tragedy
Alger, Horatio, Jr.
Alhazred (Tyson)
Alhazred, Abdul
Alice in Wonderland (Carroll)
Alien (film)
All God’s Chillun (O’Neill)
All-Story Weekly
Allan, John
Allen, Hervey
Allen, R. L.
Allen, Woody
Allgood, Helen
Allgood, Sarah
“Allowable Rhyme, The”
“Alone” (Hoag)
Alouette, L’
Amateur Correspondent
“Amateur Criticism”
“Amateur Humorist, An” (Long)
“Amateur Journalism: Its Possible Needs and Betterment”
“Amateur Journalism and the English Teacher” (Moe)
“Amateur Notes”
Amateur Special
“Amateur Standards”
“Amateurdom and the Editor” (Greene)

Amazing Detective Tales
Amazing Stories
“Ambition”
“Ambushed” (Jackson)
American Author
American Book-Prices Current
American Fiction Guild
American Literature
American Magazine
American Mercury
American Parade
American Political Ideals . . . (Fiske)
American Review
“American to Mother England, An”
“American to the British Flag, An”
American Tragedy, An (Dreiser)
“Americanism”
“Amissa Minerva”
“Ancestor, The” (Derleth)
“Ancient Sorceries” (Blackwood)
“Ancient Track, The”
Amundsen, Roald
Ancient Track, The
Anderson, Sherwood
André, John
Andrews, Ethan Allen
Andrione, Elgie A.
Anger, William Frederick
Anna Livia Plurabelle (Joyce)
“Annals of the Jinns” (Barlow)
Annals of the Town of Providence (Staples)
Annotated H. P. Lovecraft, The
“Antarctic Atlas”
Antarctic Regions, The (Fricker)
Anthology of Magazine Verse (Braithwaite)
Anthony Adverse (Allen)
Ape at the Helm, The (Gallagher)

Apocryphal New Testament (James)
Appleton, John Howard
Appleton Post
Applied Psychology and Scientific Living (Bush)
"April" (Jackson)
Apuleius, Lucius
Arabian Nights
Arbella (ship)
Argento, Dario
Argonautica (Apollonius Rhodius)
"Argonauts, The"
Argosy
Argosy All-Story Weekly
Arkham, Mass.
Arkham Collector
Arkham House
Arkham Sampler
Armstrong, Joseph G.
Arney, Lance
Arnold, Benedict
Arnold, Mrs
Arruda, Manuel
"Arthur Jermyn." *See* "Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family"
Arthur Machen: A Novelist of Ecstasy and Sin (Starrett)
Artmann, H. C.
Asbury, Herbert
"Ashes" (Lovecraft-Eddy)
Asheville Gazette-News
Ashley, Mike
Asimov, Isaac
"Ask Houdini" (Houdini)
Astounding Stories
"Astrology and the European War" (Hartmann)
"Astrology and the Future"
"Astronomical Cranks"
"Astronomical Observations Made by H. P. Lovecraft . . ."

Astronomy
Astronomy/The Monthly Almanack
Astronomy for Amateurs (Oliver)
Astronomy with the Naked Eye (Serviss)
"Astrophobos"
At the Earth's Core (Burroughs)
"At the Home of Poe" (Long)
At the Mountains of Madness
At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels
"At the Root"
Athol Transcript
Atlantic Monthly
Auburn Journal
Auden, W. H.
"August"
Aurora
Austen, Jane
Austin, John Osborne
"Autobiography of Howard Phillips Lovecraft"
Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, The (Holmes)
"Automatic Executioner, The" (Danziger)
"Ave atque Vale"
"Avenger of Perdóndaris, The" (Dunsany)
Avon Fantasy Reader (Wollheim)
"Azathoth" (novel fragment)
Azif, Al (Alhazred)

B., H. F.
Babbit, Mrs C. H.
Babbitt (Lewis)
Babcock, Ralph W.
Bach, Johann Sebastian
"Background" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Backus, W. Elwyn
Backwoods: Maine Narratives, with Lyrics (Jackson)
Bacon, Victor E.
Badger, Joseph E., Jr

Badger
Bailey, Cyril
Bailey, Mr
Baird, Edwin
Baker, Albert A.
Baker, Charles
Balch, Allen C.
Balderston, John L.
Baldwin, F. Lee
“Ballade of Patrick von Flynn, Ye”
Baltadoniz, John V.
Balzac, Honoré de
Banigan family
Baring-Gould, S.
Barker, Clive
Barlow, E. D.
Barlow, Joel
Barlow, R. H.; on HPL; with HPL in Florida; with HPL in Providence; and HPL’s death; as HPL’s literary executor; as HPL’s typist; and HPL’s work; politics of; as publisher
Barlow, Wayne
“Barlow Journal, The”
Barnhart, Eleanor J.
Barrie, J. M.
Barron, Laird
Bartholomew House
Bartlett, John Russell
Bartram, John
Basinet, Victor L.
Bat, The (film)
Bate, W. Jackson
Bates, Harry
“Battle That Ended the Century, The” (Lovecraft-Barlow)
Baudelaire, Charles
Beadle & Adams
Beagle/Ballantine Books
“Beast in the Cave, The”

Beaumont, Charles
“Beauties of Peace, The”
Beck, Claire and Groo
Beckford, William
“Bedelia”
Beebe, Evanore
Before Adam (London)
Beginnings of New England, The (Fiske)
Bellingshausen, Fabian von
“Bells”
Beneath the Moors (Lumley)
Benét, Stephen Vincent
Benét, William Rose
Bennett, Carl
Bennett, F. V.
Benson, E. F.
Béraud, Henri
“Berenice” (Poe)
Bergier, Jacques
Bergson, Henri
“Berkeley, Elizabeth Neville” (pseud. of W. V. Jackson)
Berkeley, George
Berkeley Square (film)
Berman, Louis
Bernays, Jacob
Best of H. P. Lovecraft, The
Best Psychic Stories (French)
Best Short Stories (O’Brien)
Best Supernatural Stories
“Bethmoora” (Dunsany)
Beware After Dark! (Harré)
Beyond the Great South Wall (Savile)
“Beyond the Wall” (Bierce)
“Beyond the Wall of Sleep”
Beyond the Wall of Sleep
“Bickerstaffe, Isaac, Jr.”
Bicknell, Thomas William

Bierce, Ambrose
Bierstadt, Edward Hale
Biglow Papers (Lowell)
Binder, Eando
"Bipeds of Bjhulhu, The" (Sterling)
Birch, A. G.
Birkhead, Edith
Birth of a Nation, The (film)
"Birthday Lines to Margfred Galbraham"
"Birthday of the Infanta, The" (Wilde)
Bishop, Zealia
Bizarre
Black, Hugo
Black Beetles in Amber (Bierce)
Black Book (Junzt)
Black Cat
"Black Cat, The" (Poe)
"Black Man with a Horn" (Klein)
Black Mask
"Black Noon" (Eddy)
"Black Stone, The" (Howard)
Black Wings (Joshi)
Blackstone Military Band
Blackstone News
Blackwood, Algernon
Blair, Hugh
Blake, Mrs
Blankenship, E. E.
Blarney-Stone
Blavatsky, H. P.
Blessing of Pan, The (Dunsany)
Blish, James
Bloch, Robert
Blosser, Myra H.
Blue Book
Blue Pencil Club
Boas, Franz

Boats of the "Glen Carrig," The (Hodgson)
Boerem, R.
"Boiling Point, The" (*Fantasy Fan*)
Boland, Stuart Morton
Bolitho, William
"Bolshevism"
Bolton, Mass.
Boni, Albert & Charles
Boni & Liveright
Bonner, G. E.
Bonner, Marion F.
Bonnet
"Bonnie Blue Flag, The"
Bonus Army
"Book, The" (fragment)
"Book, The" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Book of Dzyan
Book of Eibon
Book of Forbidden Things
Book of the Damned, The (Fort)
Book of Were-wolves, A (Baring-Gould)
Book of Wonder, The (Dunsany)
"Bookstall, The"
Borchgrevink, Carsten Egeberg
Borel, Pierre
Borelli's comet
Borges, Jorge Luis
Borough Clothiers
Boston Herald
Boston Post
Boston Transcript
Boswell, James
"Bothon" (Whitehead?)
"Bouts Rimés"
Boyd, Emma Garrett
Boy's World
Bradbury, Ray

Bradley, Chester P.
Bradley, Osgood
Bradofsky, Hyman
Braithwaite, William Stanley
Brandt, C. A.
Bransfield, Edward
Brattleboro Reformer
Brave and Bold
Brave New World (Huxley)
"Brick Row." *See* "East India Brick Row, The"
Bride of Re-Animator (film)
"Bride of the Sea, The"
Bridge, The (Crane)
Bridge of San Luis Rey, The (Wilder)
Bridges, Robert
Brief Course in Astronomy, A
Brief Course in Inorganic Chemistry, A
Bright Messenger, The (Blackwood)
Briney, Robert E.
Bristol, William J.
"Britannia Victura"
Brobst, Harry K.
Bromley, Grace M.
Brontë, Emily
Brood of the Witch Queen (Rohmer)
Brooklyn Eagle
Brooklynite
"Brotherhood"
Brown, A. H.
Brown, Alice
Brown, Charles Brockden
Brown, Howard
Brown, Jack E.
Brown, John
Brown, Nicholas
Brown brothers
Brown University

Browning, Robert
“Bruise, The” (Whitehead)
Brundage, Margaret
Brunner, John
Bryan, William Jennings
Bryant, Roger
Bryant, William L.
Buchan, John
Bulfinch, Thomas
Bullen, John Ravenor
Bulwer-Lytton, Edward
“Bureau of Critics”
Buried Caesars (Starrett)
Burks, Arthur J.
Burleson, Donald R.
Burns, Mrs
Burroughs, Edgar Rice
Burrowers Beneath, The (Lumley)
Burton, Sir Richard
Bush, David Van
Butler, Samuel (“Hudibras”)
Butler, Samuel
“By Post from Providence”
Byland, Fred A.
Byrd, Richard E.
Byron, George Gordon, Lord

CCC (Civilian Conservation Corps)
C., E. F. W.
“C. S. A. 1861–1865”
Cabell, James Branch
Cabinet of Dr. Caligari, The (film)
Calder, Augustus W.
Californian
“Call of Cthulhu, The”
Call of Cthulhu, The (role-playing game)
Callendar, John

Caller of the Black, The (Lumley)
Campbell, Ada P.
Campbell, John H.
Campbell, John W.
Campbell, Paul J.
Campbell, Ramsey
Campbell, Robert Jean
Campbell, W. W.
Can Such Things Be? (Bierce)
"Can the Moon Be Reached by Man?"
Canby, Henry Seidel
Cancer of Superstition, The (Lovecraft-Eddy)
Candide (Voltaire)
Canning Wonder, The (Machen)
Cannon, Peter
Capron, Reuben
Capturing a Locomotive (Pittenger)
Carlyle, Thomas
"Carmilla" (Le Fanu)
Carnacki, the Ghost-Finder (Hodgson)
Carpenter, John
Carranza, Venustiano
Carter, Lin
Caruso, Enrico
"Case for Classicism, The"
Case of Billy Sunday, The
Case of Charles Dexter Ward, The
Casement, Sir Roger
Cass, De Lysle Ferrée
"Cassius" (Whitehead)
Cast a Deadly Spell (HBO)
Castle of Otranto, The (Walpole)
Cather, Willa
Cato (Addison)
"Cats, The"
"Cats and Dogs"
"Cats of Ulthar, The"

Cats of Ulthar, The
Catullus (C. Valerius Catullus)
Causerie
Cavalier
Cave, Hugh B.
“Celephaïs”
“Celestial Objects for All”
Centaur, The (Blackwood)
Century Magazine
“Chadbourne Episode, The” (Whitehead)
Chain Lightning
Chalker, Jack L.
“Challenge from Beyond, The”
Chamberlain, Houston Stewart
Chambers, George F.
Chambers, Robert
Chambers, Robert W.
Chaney, Lon, Jr.
“Chaos Resolved” (Wandrei)
Chaosium, Inc.
Chaplin, Charlie
Chappell, Fred
Charles I (King of England)
Charles II (King of England)
Charleston
Checkley, John
Chelsea Book Shop
“Chemical Brain, The” (Weiss)
Chemistry
Chemistry III
Chemistry IV
Chemistry, Magic, & Electricity
Chesterton, G. K.
“Chevy-Chase”
Chicago Sun Book Week
Chicago Tribune
“Children of the Night, The” (Howard)

Christian Science Monitor
Christie, Agatha
Chronicle of Nath (Yergler)
Chronicles of Rodriguez, The (Dunsany)
"Chuckler, The" (Wandrei)
Church, Mrs. Winslow
"Churchyard Yew, The" (Derleth)
Cicero (M. Tullius Cicero)
Cisco, Michael
Citadel of Fear (Stevens)
"City, The"
"City of the Singing Flame, The" (Smith)
"City of Wonder, A" (Dunsany)
Civil War
Claimed (Stevens)
Clansman, The (Dixon)
"Clarendon's Last Test" (Lovecraft-de Castro). *See* "Last Test, The"
Clark, Franklin Chase
Clark, Lilian Delora
And W. Paul Cook; and Sonia Greene; with HPL in New York; HPL's letters to; residence with HPL
Clarke, Arthur C.
Clayton, William
Cleveland, Charles Dexter
Cleveland, Grover
Cleveland Sun
Cline, Leonard
Cloisonné and Other Verses (Talman)
Club of the Seven Dreamers, The
Coates, Walter J.
Cobb, Irvin S.
Cockcroft, T. G. L.
Cocteau, Jean
Cold Harbour (Young)
Cold Print (Campbell)
Cole, E. Sherman
Cole, Edward H.

Cole, Ira A.
Coleman, Stuart
Coleridge, Samuel Taylor
“Collapsing Cosmoses” (Lovecraft-Barlow)
Collected Essays
Collected Ghost Stories of M. R. James, The (James)
Collected Poems
College Humor
Collier, John
Collier’s Weekly
Collins, Wilkie
Colophon
Color Line, The (Smith)
“Colossus” (Wandrei)
“Colour out of Space, The”
Colour out of Space, The
“Coming of the White Worm, The” (Smith)
“Comment”
“Commercial Blurbs”
“Commercialism—The Curse of Art” (Greene)
commonplace book
“Concerning the Conservative” (Isaacson)
“Confession of Unfaith, A”
Conger, Alice
Congreve, William
Conjure Wife (Leiber)
Connery, William
Connoisseur and Other Stories, The (de la Mare)
Conover, Howard R.
Conover, Willis
Conquest of Mexico, The (Prescott)
“Conquest of the Hub Club, The”
Conquistador (MacLeish)
Conrad, Joseph
“Conscript, The”
Conservative
“Conservative and His Critics, The”

"'Conservatism' Gone Mad" (Morton)
"Consolidation's Autopsy"
Constantine I (King of Greece)
"Continuity" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
"Convention, The"
"Convention Banquet, The"
"Conversation of Eiros and Charmion, The" (Poe)
Cook, F. A.
Cook, James
Cook, W. Paul; and amateur journalism; on HPL; meetings with HPL; as publisher; and weird fiction
"Cool Air"
Cool Million, A (West)
Coolidge, Calvin
Copernicus, Nicholaus
Corcoran, Maggie
Corman, Roger
Cornelius, B.
"Coronation of Mr. Thomas Shap, The" (Dunsany)
"Correspondence between R. H. Barlow and Wilson Shepherd . . ."
Coryciani
Cosmic Tales
Cosmopolitan
Coughlin, Charles E.
Couleur tombée du ciel, La
Coulthart, John
"Count Magnus" (James)
Covici-McGee
Cowan, Frank
Cowboy Stories
Cox, George Benson
Crafton Service Bureau
Craig, Mrs R. A.
Cram, Ralph Adams
Crane, Charles
Crane, Hart
Crawford, F. Marion

Crawford, William L.
“Crawling Chaos, The” (Lovecraft-Jackson)
Crawling Chaos: Selected Works
Crean, T. P.
Credential
Creditors’ National Clearing House
Creep, Shadow! (Merritt)
“Creeper in the Crypt, The” (Bloch)
Creeps by Night (Hammett)
Crime of Crimes, The
“Crime of the Century, The”
Crispin, Edmund
Criterion
Critical Dissertation on the Poems of Ossian, A (Blair)
“Criticism of Amateur Journals, A” (McDonald)
Crofts, Anna Helen
Crookes, Sir William
“Crossman, Willis Tete”
Croxall, Samuel
Crowley, Aleister
Crowley, James Laurence
Crypt of Cthulhu
“Crystal Bullet, The” (Wandrei)
Cthulhu: Geistergeschichten
Cthulhu Mythos
Cthulhu 2000 (Turner)
Cummings, J. C.
Cummings, Ray
Cuppy, Will
Curious Myths of the Middle Ages (Baring-Gould)
Curse, The (film)
Curse of Race Prejudice, The (Morton)
Curse of the Wise Woman, The (Dunsany)
“Curse of Yig, The” (Lovecraft-Bishop)
Curtiss, William Loren
“Cycle of Verse, A”
Cyclopaedia of the Literature of Amateur Journalism (Spencer)

Cymbeline (Shakespeare)
Cyreno de Bergerac (film)

Daas, Edward F.
Dadaism
"Dagon"
Dagon (Chappell)
Dagon (film)
Dagon and Other Macabre Tales
Dahibrun, Lyle
Daly, Carroll John
"Damned Thing, The" (Bierce)
"Damon—a Monody"
"Damon and Delia, a Pastoral"
"Damon and Lycë"
Danse Macabre (King)
Dante Alighieri
Danziger, Gustav Adolphe. *See* de Castro, Adolphe
Dark Brotherhood and Other Pieces, The
Dark Chamber, The (Cline)
Dark Chateau, The (Smith)
"Dark Eidolon, The" (Smith)
Dark Odyssey (Wandrei)
Darwin, Charles
Dauber & Pine
David Copperfield (Dickens)
Davidson, Avram
Davies, Robertson
Davis, Edgar J.
Davis, Graeme
Davis, Nathaniel
Davis, Robert H.
Davis, Sonia H.; and amateur journalism; divorce from HPL; employment of; on HPL; and HPL's aunts; on HPL's parents; health of; marriage with HPL; meetings with HPL; and sex; travels with HPL; as writer
Day, F. H.
De Rerum Natura (Lucretius)

“De Scriptore Mulerioso”
“De Triumpho Naturae”
De Vermis Mysteriis (Prinn)
“Dead Bookworm, The”
Dead Titans, Waken! (Wandrei)
“Dead Valley, The” (Cram)
“Deaf, Dumb, and Blind” (Lovecraft-Eddy)
“Death” (Hoag)
“Death” (Shehan)
“Death” (Shepherd)
“death diary”
“Death of Halpin Frayser, The” (Bierce)
Debs, Eugene V.
De Bry, brothers
de Camp, L. Sprague
de Castro, Adolphe
“Decline and Fall of a Man of the World, The”
Decline of the West, The (Spengler)
Dee, John
Dee, Sandra
“Defence Remains Open!, The”
“Defence Reopens!, The”
de la Mare, Walter
Delavan’s Comet
“Delavan’s Comet and Astrology”
Delrio, Antoine
De Mille, James
Democritus
Demons by Daylight (Campbell)
Demons of the Upper Air (Leiber)
Dench, Ernest A.
Department of Instruction
Department of Private Criticism
“Department of Public Criticism”
Derleth, August; and R. H. Barlow; and Cthulhu Mythos; on HPL; HPL’s letters to; and HPL’s work; as publisher; and pulp fiction; and Donald Wandrei; on weird fiction; as writer

“Descendant, The”
“Descent into the Maelström, A” (Poe)
Descent of Man, The (Darwin)
“Description of the Town of Quebeck, A”
Desmond, Shaw
“Despair”
Detective, The
Detective Tales
de Vries, Peter
Dewey, John
Dexter, “Lord” Timothy
Dexter Asylum
Dial
“Diamond Necklace, The” (Jackson)
“Diary” (1925)
“Diary” (1936)
“Diary of Alonzo Typer, The” (Lovecraft-Lumley)
Dick, Philip K.
Dick, Thomas
Dickens, Charles
Dictionary of Americanisms (Bartlett)
Dictionary of the English Language (Johnson)
Dictionary of the English Language (Stormonth)
Diderot, Denis
Die, Monster, Die! (film)
Diels, Hermann
“Dignity of Journalism, The”
“Dim-Remembered Story, A” (Barlow)
dime novels
“Disinterment, The” (Lovecraft-Rimel)
Dispensary, The (Garth)
Dixie Booster
Dixon, Thomas, Jr.
Docherty, Chris
Dodge, E. G.
Donne, John
“Doom That Came to Sarnath, The”

Doorways to Poetry (Moe)
Doran, George H.
Doré, Gustave
Double Shadow and Other Fantasies, The (Smith)
Doubleday, Page & Co.
Dowdell, William J.
Dowdell's Bearcat
Dowe, Jennie E. T.
Down to the Sea in Ships (film)
Doyle, Sir Arthur Conan
Doyle, Thomas A.
"Dr. Whitlock's Price" (Long)
Dracula (Stoker)
Dracula (film)
Dragnet
Dragon-Fly
Drake, H. B.
Drayton, Michael
"Dream-Land" (Poe)
"Dream of a Golden Age, The" (Cole)
Dream-Quest of Unknown Kadath, The
Dreamer's Tales, A (Dunsany)
Dreams and Fancies
"Dreams in the Witch House, The"
"Dreams of Yith" (Rimel)
Dreiser, Theodore
Dreiserana (Orton)
Driftwind
"Drinking Song from 'The Tomb'"
Dryden, John
Dryden, Wheeler
DuBarry, Jack
Du Bois, W. E. B.
Dunbar, Paul Laurence
Dunciad (Pope)
Dunn, John T.
Dunsany, Lord

Dunsany the Dramatist (Bierstadt)
“Dunsany, Yeats and Shaw: Trinity of Magic” (Desmond)
Dunwich, Mass.
“Dunwich Horror, The”
Dunwich Horror, The
Dunwich Horror, The (film)
Dunwich Horror and Other Weird Tales, The
Dunwich Horror and Others, The (Arkham House)
Dunwich Horror and Others, The (Lancer)
Durant, Will
Dürer, Albrecht
Durham, W. H.
Durr, Mary Faye
d’Urville, Jules Dumont
Duston, Cecil Calvert
Dutton, E. P.
Dvorak, Lucile
“Dweller in Martian Depths, The” (Smith)
Dwellers in the Mirage, The (Merritt)
Dwyer, Bernard Austin
Dyalhis, Nictzin
Dyer, Jim
Dziemianowicz, Stefan

Earle, Alice
“Early Rhode Island”
Early Years, The (Derleth). *See Evening in Spring*
“Earth Not Hollow, The”
“East and West Harvard Conservatism”
“East India Brick Row, The”
East Side Detective Agency
East Side Historical Club
East Side News
Easter Island
Eastlake, Charles L.
Ebony and Crystal (Smith)
Eckhardt, Jason C.

Eco, Umberto
Ecstasy and Other Poems (Wandrei)
Eddington, Arthur
Eddison, E. R.
Eddy, C. M., Jr.
Eddy, Grace
Eddy, Muriel E.
Edgar Allan Poe (Woodberry)
Edgar Allan Poe: His Life, Letters and Opinions (Ingram)
Edgar Allan Poe, the Man (Phillips)
"Edith Miniter"
Editions for the Armed Services
"Editorial" (*Conservative*)
"Editorial" (*Providence Amateur*)
"Editorial" (*United Amateur*)
"Editorial" (Dunn)
"Editorially"
Edkins, Ernest A.
Education of Uncle Paul, The (Blackwood)
Edward VIII (King of England)
Edwards, John
"Egyptian Myths"
"Eidolon, The"
Einstein, Albert
"Elder Pharos, The" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Eldridge, William Tillinghast
"Electric Executioner, The" (Lovecraft-de Castro)
"Elegy on Franklin Chase Clark, M.D., An"
"Elegy on Phillips Gamwell"
Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard (Gray)
Elements of Astronomy (Guy)
Eliot, T. S.
Elizabeth I (Queen of England)
Elizabeth Daily Journal
Elliot, Hugh
Ellis, Annie Cross
Ellis, Havelock

Ellisen, Ed.
Ellsworth, Lincoln
Elsie Venner (Holmes)
Eltdown Shards
Emerson, Ralph Waldo
"Emperor of Dreams, The" (Wandrei)
Empty House and Other Stories, The (Blackwood)
"Encouraging Recruits"
Encyclopaedia Britannica
Enyclopedia of Occultism (Spence)
"End of the Jackson War, The"
England, George Allan
English Journal
Ennis, Clifford D.
Epgephi
Epicure in the Terrible, An (Schultz-Joshi)
Epicurus
Episodes Before Thirty (Blackwood)
Episodes of Vathek, The (Beckford)
"Epistle to Francis, Ld. Belknap, An." *See* "To a Sophisticated Young Gentleman . . ."
"Epistle to . . . Maurice Winter Moe, Esq. . . ., An"
Erckmann-Chatrian
Erford, J. F. Roy
Ericson, E. E.
Erik Dorn (Hecht)
Esenwein, J. Berg
Eshbach, Lloyd Arthur
Esoteric Order of Dagon
Esquire
Essays Lovecraftian (Schweitzer)
Etidorhpa (Lloyd)
"European Glimpses" (Lovecraft-Greene)
Eurus
Eusden, Laurence
Evans, William H.
Eve of St Agnes, The (Keats)

Evening in Spring (Derleth)
"Evening Star" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Everts, R. Alain
"Evil Clergyman, The"
Evolution of Man, The (Haeckel)
Ewers, Hanns Heinz
"Ex Oblivione"
Exchange of Souls, An (Pain)
"Exchanges"
"Expectancy" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Explorers of the Infinite (Moskowitz)
Explosives
Extra Day, The (Blackwood)
"Eye above the Mantel, The" (Long)
"Eyes of the God" (Barlow)
"Eyrie, The" (*Weird Tales*)

F., G. W.
Face That Must Die, The (Campbell)
Face to Face with the Great Musicians (Isaacson)
"Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family"
"Facts in the Case of M. Valdemar, The" (Poe)
Facts, Thought, and Imagination (Canby-Pierce-Durham)
Fadiman, Clifton P.
Faig, Kenneth W., Jr
Fairbanks, Douglas, Sr.
Fairbanks, Henry G.
Fairbanks Scales Co.
Fairchild, Dan
Fairy Tales (Grimm)
"Falco Ossifracus: By Mr. Goodguile" (Miniter)
"Fall of Astrology, The"
"Fall of the House of Usher, The" (Poe)
"Falsity of Astrology, The"
Fanciful Tales
Fantaisiste's Mirror
Fantasy Commentator

Fantasy Fan
Fantasy Magazine
Far Off Things (Machen)
Farnell, F. J.
Farnese, Harold S.
Farsaci, Larry
Fast, F. R.
Faulkner, William
Faunce, W. H. P.
“Favorite Weird Stories of H. P. Lovecraft”
Fay’s Theatre (Providence, R.I.)
“Feast, The”
“Feast in the Abbey, The” (Bloch)
“Felis: A Prose Poem” (Long)
Fénélon, François de Salignac de la Mothe-
Ferle Heller’s
“Festival”
“Festival, The”
Fetter, George G.
Field, Edward
Field, John
Fielding, Henry
Fifty-one Tales (Dunsany)
“Final Words”
“Finale”
Fine, Calvin
Fingulin, A. V.
Finlay, Virgil
Finnegans Wake (Joyce)
“Fire of Asshurbanipal, The” (Howard)
First Baptist Church (Providence, R.I.)
“First Law, The” (Jackson)
First on the Antarctic Continent (Borchgrevink)
First Universalist Society
Fischer, Harry O.
Fisher, H. M.
“Fisherman of Falcon Point, The” (Derleth)

"Fishhead" (Cobb)
Fiske, John
Fitzgerald, F. Scott
Five Plays (Dunsany)
"Flagg, Francis" (pseud. of Henry George Weiss)
Flaubert, Gustave
Fletcher, John Gould
"Florida" (Russell)
Fog, The (film)
Fogg Museum (Harvard University)
"For Annie" (Poe)
"For Historian—Ira A. Cole"
"For Official Editor—Anne Tillery Renshaw"
"For President—Leo Fritter"
"For What Does the United Stand?"
Forever Azathoth and Other Horrors (Cannon)
Forrest, Ira B.
Forster, Richard
Fort, Charles
Fort Standish (Boston)
Foster, T. J.
Forum
Fossil
Foundations of the Nineteenth Century (Chamberlain)
Four Acrostic Sonnets on Edgar Allan Poe
"Four O'Clock" (Greene)
Fourteen Weeks Course in Descriptive Astronomy, A (Steele)
Fourth Book of Jorkens, The (Dunsany)
Fragment of Life, A (Machen)
Fragmente der Vorsokratiker, Die (Diels)
"Fragments from the Journal of a Solitary Man" (Hawthorne)
Frank, Frederick S.
Frank Reade Library
Frank Reade Weekly
Frankenstein (Shelley)
Frankenstein (film)
Fraser, Phyllis

Frazer, Sir James George
Fredlund, Arthur
Freeman, Edward A.
Freeman, Mary E. Wilkins
Freer, Archibald
French, Eunice
French, Joseph Lewis
Frenschkowski, Marco
Fresco
Freud, Sigmund
Fricker, Karl
Frierson, Meade and Penny
Fritter, Leo
"From Beyond"
"From the Sea" (Rimel)
Frome, Nils H.
Frost, Robert
Frozen Pirate, The (Russell)
"Frustra Praemunitus"
Fulci, Lucio
Full, Mary
Fulwiler, William
Fungi from Yuggoth
Fungi from Yuggoth and Other Verses
Fur-Seal's Tooth, The (Munroe)
Further Criticism of Poetry

G., H. R.
Galaxy
"Galileo and Swammerdam" (Jackson)
Gallagher, Patrick
Galland, Antoine
Galleon
Gallomo
Galpin, Alfred; and amateur journalism; and Sonia Greene; HPL on; HPL's letters to; and HPL's work; meetings with HPL; as writer
Galpin, Mrs Alfred

Galsworthy, John
Gamwell, Annie Emeline Phillips; and R. H. Barlow; and Sonia Greene; and HPL's childhood; and HPL's death; and HPL's finances; HPL's letters to; health of; marriage of; residence with HPL; travels with HPL
Gamwell, Edward F.
Gamwell, Marion Roby
Gamwell, Phillips
Garden of Survival, The (Blackwood)
"Gardens of Yin, The" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Gardner, Henry B.
Gardner, Mrs Marinus Willett
Garland, Hamlin
Garth, Sir Samuel
Gaspee (ship)
Gatto, John Taylor
"Gaudeamus"
Gautier, Théophile
Gay, John
Gayford, Norman R.
Gaynor, Leonard
Gehman, Richard
"Gems from *In a Minor Key"*
"George's Sacrifice: By Percy Vacuum, age 8"
Gerlache, Adrien de
Gernsback, Hugo
Gesammelte Werke
Gessler, Clifford
Ghorl Nigral
Ghost
"Ghost-Eater, The" (Lovecraft-Eddy)
Ghost Girl, The (Saltus)
Ghost Pirates, The (Hodgson)
Ghost Stories
Ghost-Stories of an Antiquary (James)
Gibbon, Edward
Gibson, Walter B.
Giger, H. R.

Gilman, Charlotte Perkins
Gindre, Philippe
Gissing, George
Glands Regulating Personality, The (Berman)
Glorious Mystery, The (Machen)
Goblin Tower, The (Long)
Gods of Mars, The (Burroughs)
Gods of Pegana, The (Dunsany)
Gods of the Mountain, The (Dunsany)
Goff, Russell
Golden Atom
Golden Bough, The (Frazer)
Goldsmith, Oliver
Golem, The (Meyrink)
Gollancz, Victor
"Gone—But Whither?"
Good Anaesthetic, A
Goodenough, Arthur
Goose-Quill Papers (Guiney)
Gordon, Mr
Gordon, Stuart
"Gorgon, The" (Smith)
Gorham & Co.
Gorman, Herbert
Gorman, Joseph
Gorton, Samuel
Gosse, Edmund
Gough, John B.
Grant, Charles L.
Grant, Kenneth
Grant, Madison
"Graveyard Rats, The" (Kuttner)
Gray, Thomas
Grayson, Allan
"Great God Pan, The" (Machen)
Great God Pan and The Inmost Light, The (Machen)
Great Meadow Country Clubhouse

Great Tales of Terror and the Supernatural (Wise-Fraser)
"Greater Courage, The" (Isaacson)
"Greek Literature" (McGeoch)
Green, J. R.
"Green Meadow" (Lovecraft-Jackson)
"Green Tea" (Le Fanu)
Greenberg, Martin H.
Greene, Florence
Greene, John
Greene, Nathanael
Greene, Sonia H. *See* Davis, Sonia H.
Greene, Sydney
Greenfield, William H.
Greenlaw, Ralph M.
"Grewsome Tales"
Grey, Zane
Griffin, W. E.
Griffith, D. W.
Grimm, Brothers
"Grinning Ghoul, The" (Bloch)
Griswold, Rufus W.
"Grit Your Teeth" (Bush)
"Gryphus in Asinum Mutatus"
Guarriello, Pietro
Gudeman, Alfred
Guest, Edgar A.
Guiney, Louise Imogen
Guy, Joseph

"H. Lovecraft's Attempted Journey . . ."
HPL (Frierson)
HPL (Stickney)
H. P. L.: A Memoir (Derleth)
H. P. Lovecraft (rock band)
H. P. Lovecraft (Cannon)
"H. P. Lovecraft: A Biographical Sketch" (Baldwin)
H. P. Lovecraft: A Critical Study (Burleson)

H. P. Lovecraft: A Life (Joshi)
H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism (Joshi)
"H. P. Lovecraft, Outsider" (Derleth)
H. P. Lovecraft: The Decline of the West (Joshi)
"H. P. Lovecraft: The House and the Shadows" (Shea)
H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference
H. P. Lovecraft Companion, The (Shreffler)
H. P. Lovecraft Film Festival
H. P. Lovecraft's From Beyond (film)
H. P. Lovecraft's Re-Animator (film)
Haeckel, Ernst
Haft, Racille
Haggard, H. Rider
Haggerty, Vincent B.
Haldeman-Julius, E.
Hall, Desmond
Hall, James B.
Halle's
"Hallowe'en in a Suburb"
Halley's Comet
Halsey, Thomas Lloyd
Halve Maen, De
Hamilton, Edmond
Hamlet, Alice
Hamlet (Shakespeare)
Hammett, Dashiell
Handbook of Roman Antiquities, A
Happel, Carl
Happy Ending (Guiney)
"Harbor-Master, The" (Chambers)
"Harbour Whistles" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Harding, Warren G.
Hardy, Thomas
Harper & Brothers
Harper's
Harré, T. Everett
Harrington, William T.

Harris, Arthur
Harris, Juliette
Harris, Woodburn
Harrison, Benjamin
Harrison, James A.
Hart, Bertrand K.
Hartley, L. P.
Hartmann, J. F.
Hashish Eater, The (Smith)
"Hashish Man, The" (Dunsany)
"Hasting, Consul" (pseud. of Alfred Galpin)
Hatfield, Gordon
Hathaway, Abbie A.
Haughton, Ida C.
"Haunted and the Haunters, The" (Bulwer-Lytton)
Haunted Castle, The (Railo)
"Haunted House, The"
Haunted Palace, The (film)
"Haunted Valley, The" (Bierce)
"Haunter of the Dark, The"
Haunter of the Dark and Other Tales of Horror, The
"Haverhill Convention, The"
Hawthorne, Julian
Hawthorne, Nathaniel
Hay, George
Hazel, Faye Ringel
Hazlitt, William
"He"
Heald, Hazel
Hearn, Lafcadio
Heart of Darkness (Conrad)
Hecht, Ben
hectograph
"Hedone"
Heine, Heinrich
Heinlein, Robert A.
Heins, John Milton

"Heins versus Houtain" (Greene)
Heisenberg, Werner Karl
"Helene Hoffman Cole: 1893–1919: The Club's Tribute"
Helvétius, Claude-Adrien
Hemingway, Ernest
Henley, Samuel
Henneberger, J. C.
Henry, Patrick
Hepner, Dora M.
Herbert Spencer (Elliot)
"Herbert West—Reanimator"
"Heritage or Modernism"
Hermaphrodite, The (Loveman)
"Hermit, The"
Herne, L'
Herrera, Philip
Herschel, John
Herschel, Sir William
Hervey, James
"Hesperia" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Hesperia
Hess, Clara
Hichens, Robert
Hieroglyphics (Machen)
High Life
"Highwayman, The" (Dunsany)
Hill, Isaac
Hill of Dreams, The (Machen)
Hines, Thomas
Hinsie, Leland E.
Hippocampus Press
"His Own Most Fantastic Creation" (Scott)
"Historical Account of Last Year's War with SPAIN, An"
Historical Discourse on the Civil and Religious Affairs of the Colony of Rhode-Island, An (Callendar)
Historical Reminiscences of Foster, Rhode Island (Tyler)
History of Dartmouth College (Richardson)

History of Freemasonry in Rhode Island (Rugg)
History of the Gothic Revival (Eastlake)
"History of the Necronomicon"
History of the Necronomicon, A
History of the State of Rhode Island (Bicknell)
History of the United States Secret Service (Baker)
Hitler, Adolf
Hoag, Jonathan E.
"Hoard of the Wizard-Beast, The" (Lovecraft-Barlow)
Hodgson, William Hope
Hoffman, Helene E.
Hoffmann, E. T. A.
Hogarth, William
Holbach, Paul Thiry d'
Holland Society
Hollick-Kenyon, Herbert
Holmes, Oliver Wendell
Holmes, Prescott
Holmes, Sherlock
Home Brew
"Homecoming" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Homeland Company
Homer
Homer, Joseph
"Homes and Shrines of Poe"
Honolulu Star-Bulletin
Hooker, Joseph
Hoover, Herbert
Hope Street High School
Hopkins, Stephen
Horace (Q. Horatius Flaccus)
"Horla, The" (Maupassant)
Hornig, Charles D.
"Horror at Martin's Beach, The" (Lovecraft-Greene)
"Horror at Red Hook, The"
"Horror from the Depths, The" (Derleth-Schorer)
Horror from the Hills, The (Long)

“Horror in the Burying-Ground, The” (Lovecraft-Heald)
“Horror in the Museum, The” (Lovecraft-Heald)
Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions, The
“Horseman in the Sky, The” (Bierce)
Hoskins, W. B.
Houdini, Harry
Houellebecq, Michel
“Hound, The”
Hound of the Baskervilles, The (Doyle)
“House, The”
House by the Churchyard, The (Le Fanu)
House of Souls, The (Machen)
“House of Sounds, The” (Shiel)
House of the Seven Gables, The (Hawthorne)
“House of the Worm, The” (unwritten novel)
“House of the Worm, The” (Prout)
House on the Borderland, The (Hodgson)
Houtain, E. Dorothy
Houtain, George Julian
“How Our State Police Have Spurred Their Way to Fame” (Van de Water)
“How to Become Familiar with the Constellations”
“How to Make and Use a Telescope”
“How to Write a Blackwood Article” (Poe)
Howard, Daniel
Howard, Hester Jane Ervin
Howard, I. M.
Howard, Leslie
Howard, Robert E.
“Howard P. Lovecraft’s Fiction” (Cook)
Howard Phillips Lovecraft: Dreamer on the Nightside (Long)
Howells, William Dean
Hub Club
Hudibras (Butler)
Huerta, Victoriano
Hughes, Charles Evans
Hughes, Langston
Hughes, Rupert

Hughesdale Grammar School
Hugog
Hume, David
Hunt, Lillian B.
“Hunters from Beyond, The” (Smith)
Hurston, Zora Neale
Hutchinson, Anne
Huxley, Aldous
Huxley, Thomas Henry
Huysmans, Joris-Karl
Hyborian Age, The (Howard)
Hylan, John F.
“Hylas and Myrrha: A Tale”
“Hypnos”

I.W.W. (Industrial Workers of the World)
“Ibid”
“Idealism and Materialism—A Reflection”
“Idle Days on the Yann” (Dunsany)
Idler
“Iles, Francis” (pseud. of Anthony Berkeley Cox)
Iliad (Homer)
Image-Maker of Thebes, The (film)
Imagery Aids (Moe)
Imagism
Immigration Restriction League
“Imparcial, El”
“Imprisoned with the Pharaohs” (Lovecraft-Houdini). *See* “Under the Pyramids”
“In a Major Key”
In a Minor Key
“In a Sequester’d Providence Churchyard Where Once Poe Walk’d”
In Defence of Dagon
“In Memoriam: Henry St. Clair Whitehead”
In Memoriam: Howard Phillips Lovecraft (Cook)
“In Memoriam: Robert Ervin Howard”
“In Morven’s Mead” (Jackson)

In Old Narragansett (Earle)
In Search of the Unknown (Chambers)
In Texas with Davy Crockett (McNeil)
In the Confessional and the Following (Danziger)
"In the Editor's Study" (*Conservative*)
In the Midst of Life (Bierce)
In the Mouth of Madness (film)
"In the Vault"
"In the Walls of Eryx" (Lovecraft-Sterling)
"In Vita Elysium" (Cole)
Incantations (Smith)
Incredible Adventures (Blackwood)
Indick, Ben P.
Ingram, John H.
Inhabitant of the Lake and Less Welcome Tenants, The (Campbell)
Innsmouth, Mass.
"Insomnia" (Jackson)
"Inspiration"
Inspiration
"Instructions in Case of Decease"
Insull, Samuel
Interesting Items
International Correspondence Schools
"Introducing Mr. Chester Pierce Munroe"
"Introducing Mr. John Russell"
"Introduction, The"
Introduction to American Literature, An (Borges)
"Invisible Monster, The" (Lovecraft-Greene). *See* "Horror at Martin's Beach, The"
Invisible Sun (Wandrei)
"Irish and the Fairies, The" (MacManus)
Iron Working
Irving, Washington
"Is Chicago a Crime-Ridden City?" (Stone)
"Is There Life on the Moon?"
"Isaacsonio-Mortoniad, The"
Isaacson, Charles D.

Isis Unveiled (Blavatsky)
Israfel (Allen)
Italian, The (Radcliffe)
"Iterum Conjunctae"

Jackson, Fred
Jackson, Ralph Temple
Jackson, Shirley
Jackson, Winifred Virginia
Jacobi, Carl
James, Henry
James, M. R.
Jefferson, Thomas
Jeffersonian
"Jerusalem's Lot" (King)
Jesse James Stories
Jewish Forerunners of Christianity (Danziger)
Jimbo (Blackwood)
"John Oldham: A Defence"
John Silence—Physician Extraordinary (Blackwood)
"John, the Detective"
Johnson, A.
Johnson, Alfred
Johnson, Clarke Howard
Johnson, Hugh Samuel
Johnson, Samuel
Johnston, Charles B.
Jones, C. H.
Jones, Edward Delbert
Jones, Henry Arthur
Jones, Stephen
Jordan, Horace
Jordan, Stephen J.
Jordan, Winifred Virginia. *See* Jackson, Winifred Virginia
Joshi, S. T.
"Journal and the New Deal, The"
Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland, A (Johnson)

Joyce, James
Julius LeVallon (Blackwood)
Jumbee and Other Uncanny Tales (Whitehead)
Jung, C. G.
Junior Literature: Book Two (Leonard-Moffett)
Junzt, Friedrich von
Jurgen (Cabell)
Juvenal (D. Junius Juvenalis)

Kalem Club
Kamin, Martin and Sara
Kant, Immanuel
Kappa Alpha Tau
Karloff, Boris
Katherman, M. A.
Kay, James
Keats, John
Keffer, Willametta
Keil, Paul Livingston
Keith, David
Keller, David H.
Kellerman, Stella V.
Kelley, Earl C.
Kelly, Muriel P.
Kennan, George F.
Kennedy, Mary F.
Kenny, Robert
"Kenton, Bernard J." (pseud. of Jerry Siegel)
Kern, Eugene M.
Key, Francis Scott
Kiernan, Caitlín R.
Kimball, Gertrude Selwyn
King, Stephen
King Argimenes and the Unknown Warrior (Dunsany)
King in Yellow, The (Chambers)
King John (Shakespeare)
King Kong (film)

Kingman, Dr
Kingsport, Mass.
Kipling, Rudyard
Kirk, George
Kirk, William
Kirtland Brothers
"Kith of the Elf-Folk, The" (Dunsany)
Kleicomolo
Klein, T. E. D.
Kleine, George
Kleiner, Rheinhart: and amateur journalism; and Sonia Greene; HPL on; on HPL; with HPL in New York; HPL's letters to; meetings with HPL; writings by
"Kleinst, Anatole" (pseud. of Alfred Galpin)
Kline, Otis Adelbert
Knight, Damon
Knopf, Alfred A.
Knowles, Horace B.
Knowles, James Davis
Koenig, Herman C.
Koki, Arthur S.
Körber, Joachim
Krutch, Joseph Wood
Ku Klux Klan
Kuntz, Eugene B.
Kürten, Peter
Kuttner, Henry

Ladd, James
Ladd Observatory
Laertius, Diogenes
"Laeta; a Lament"
"Lair of the Star-Spawn" (Derleth-Schorer)
Lair of the White Worm, The (Stoker)
Lake Breeze
Lamb, Charles
La Mettrie, Julien Offray de

“Lamp of Alhazred, The” (Derleth)
Landon, Alf
Laney, Francis T.
Lang, Andrew
Langland, Joseph
Lansing, Robert
Lansinger, J. M.
Laplace, Pierre Simon de
Larsson, Raymond E. F.
Last and First Men (Stapledon)
Last Book of Wonder, The (Dunsany)
“Last Feast of Harlequin, The” (Ligotti)
“Last Incantation, The” (Smith)
Last Laugh, The (film)
“Last Pagan Speaks, The”
“Last Test, The” (Lovecraft-de Castro)
Latin Dictionary, A (Lewis-Short)
Latin-English Lexicon
Latin Literature of the Empire (Gudeman)
Lawrence, Carroll
Lawrence, D. H.
Lawrence, Eugene
Lawson, Horace L.
Lazare, Edward
Lazarus (Béraud)
“League, The”
League of Nations
Leaves
Lee brothers
Leeds, Arthur
Leeman, Tom
Leet, William
Le Fanu, Joseph Sheridan
“Legend of Sleepy Hollow, The” (Irving)
Le Guin, Ursula K.
Lehr, Mary Henrietta
Leiber, Fritz, Sr.

Leiber, Fritz, Jr.
Leiber, Jonquil
Leinster, Murray
Lemke, William
Lemon, Don Mark
Lenniger, August
Leonard, Sterling
Leopard's Spots, The (Dixon)
Lescaze, William
Lessons in Astronomy Including Uranography (Young)
Leucippus
Level, Maurice
Lévy, Maurice
Lewis, C. S.
Lewis, Charlton T.
Lewis, Edna
Lewis, Matthew Gregory
Lewis, Sinclair
Libbera, Jean
Liberal
"Life" (Crofts)
"Life and Death"
Life of Edgar Allan Poe, The (Woodberry)
Life of Johnson (Boswell)
Life of Reason, The (Santayana)
"Ligeia" (Poe)
Ligotti, Thomas
Lincoln, Abraham
"Lines on the 25th. Anniversary of the *Providence Evening News,* 1892–1917"
"Link, The"
Lippi, Giuseppe
Lippmann, Walter
"Liquor and Its Friends"
"List of Certain Basic Underlying Horrors Effectively Used in Weird Fiction, A"
Listener and Other Stories, The (Blackwood)

“Literary Composition”
“Literary Copernicus, A” (Leiber)
“Literary Review”
“Literature of Rome, The”
Little, Myrta Alice
Little Blue Light, The (Wilson)
Little Essays in Love and Virtue (Ellis)
“Little Glass Bottle, The”
“Little Journeys to the Homes of Prominent Amateurs”
Little Magazine
“Little Sam Perkins”
“Little Sketches About Town”
Little Women (Alcott)
“Littlewit, Humphry, Esq.”
Lives of the Ancient Philosophers (Fénélon)
Lives of the Philosophers (Laertius)
Lives of the Poets (Johnson)
Lloyd, John Uri
Lock and Key Library, The (Hawthorne)
Lockhart, Andrew F.
London, Jack
London (Johnson)
London Adventure, The (Machen)
London *Evening Standard*
Long, Huey P.
Long, Frank Belknap; and amateur journalism; on HPL; with HPL in New York; and HPL’s death; HPL’s letters to; and HPL’s marriage; influence on HPL; politics of; as revisionist; travels with HPL; and *Weird Tales*; writings by
Long, Mrs. Frank Belknap, Sr.
Long, Samuel
Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth
Looking Backward
Loop, Elizabeth E.
“Lord Dunsany and His Work”
Lord Jim (Conrad)
“Lord of Illusion, The” (Price)

Loring & Mussey
Lost Legion, The (Munn)
Lost Valley and Other Stories, The (Blackwood)
Lost World, The (Doyle)
Lost World, The (film)
Loucks, Donovan K.
"Love Versus Lovecraft" (Russell)
Lovecraft, Aaron
Lovecraft, Emma Jane
Lovecraft, Frederick A.
Lovecraft, George
Lovecraft, H. P.:
LIFE: and amateur journalism; ancestry of; and Antarctica; and astronomy; and cats; and chemstry; childhood friends of; childhood games of; and clothing; diet of; dreams of; early readings of; employment of; and father; finances of; and firearms; and grandfather; health of; and mother; robbery (1925); schooling of; and sex; and temperance; and trolleys; and violin lessons
RESIDENCES: 454 Angell Street (Providence, RI) (1890, 1893–1904); Massachusetts (1890–93); 598 Angell Street (Providence, RI) (1904–24); 249 Parkside Avenue (Brooklyn, NY) (1924); 169 Clinton Street (Brooklyn, NY) (1924–26); 10 Barnes Street (Providence, RI) (1926–33); 66 College Street (Providence, RI) (1933–37)
THOUGHT: aesthetics; aesthetics of weird fiction; Anglophilia; atheism; contemporary literature; early thought; economics; film; later thought; politics; racism; theory of poetry
TRAVELS: Baltimore, MD; Boston, MA; Cape Cod, MA; Charleston, SC; Chepachet, RI; Cleveland, OH; Dedham, MA; Dudley, MA; Elizabeth, NJ; Endless Caverns (New Market, VA); Florida; Foster, RI; Gloucester/Magnolia, MA; Kingston/Hurley, NY; Nantucket, MA; Narragansett Co., RI; Natchez, MS; New Hampshire; New Haven, CT; New Orleans, LA; New York City; New York City area; Newburyport, MA; Newport, RI; Paterson, NJ; Philadelphia, PA; Plymouth, MA; Portland, ME; Portsmouth, NH; Quebec; Rehoboth, MA; Salem/Marblehead, MA; Vermont; Virginia; Washington, DC; Western MA; Westminster, MA
WORK: astronomy writings; book publications and prospects; early essays; early poetry; early stories; later poetry; letters in *Argosy/All-Story*;

recognition of; revisions; travel writings
Lovecraft, John Full
Lovecraft, Joseph
Lovecraft, Joseph, Jr.
Lovecraft, Joshua Elliot
Lovecraft, Mary Louise
Lovecraft, Sarah Susan Phillips
Lovecraft, Thomas
Lovecraft, William
Lovecraft, Winfield Scott
Lovecraft: A Biography (de Camp)
Lovecraft: A Look Behind the "Cthulhu Mythos" (Carter)
"Lovecraft—an Appreciation" (Goodenough)
Lovecraft: Disturbing the Universe (Burleson)
"Lovecraft and Benefit Street" (Walter)
Lovecraft Annual
Lovecraft at Last (Lovecraft-Conover)
Lovecraft Chronicles, The (Cannon)
Lovecraft Collectors Library
"Lovecraft on Love"
Lovecraft ou du fantastique (Lévy)
Lovecraft Remembered (Cannon)
Lovecraft Studies
Lovecraft's Book (Lupoff)
Lovecraft's Legacy (Weinberg-Greenberg)
Lovecrafter
"Loved Dead, The" (Lovecraft-Eddy)
Loveman, Samuel; and amateur journalism; and Ambrose Bierce; and Sonia Davis; HPL on; on HPL; with HPL in Cleveland; with HPL in New York; and HPL's fiction; HPL's letters to; travels with HPL; writings by
Lowell, Amy
Lowell, James Russell
Lowell, Percival
Lowell, Robert
Lowndes, Robert A. W.
"Luck of Edenhall, The" (Longfellow)
Lucretius (T. Lucretius Carus)

"Lucubrations Lovecraftian"
Lumley, Brian
Lumley, William
Lupoff, Richard A.
Lurker at the Threshold, The (Derleth)
Lurker in the Lobby, The (Migliore-Strysik)
"Lurking Fear, The"
Lurking Fear, The (film)
Lurking Fear and Other Stories, The
Lusitania (ship)
Luten, J. Randle
Lynch, J. Bernard
Lynd, Robert
Lyrics of Lowly Life (Dunbar)

M., Dorrie
Mabbott, T. O.
Mabley & Carew's
"Mac Flecknoe" (Dryden)
Macauley, George W.
McColl, Gavin T.
McCormack, John
McCurdy, "Monk"
MacDonald, George
McDonald, Philip B.
McGavack, Henry Clapham
McGeoch, Verna
McGrath, Patrick
McGrew, Donald Francis
Machen, Arthur
McIlwraith, Dorothy
McKay, Claude
McKeag, Ernest Lionel
McKeogh, Arthur
McKim, Charles F.
McKinley, William
McLaughlin, E. Dorothy

MacLeish, Archibald
Macleod, Fiona (pseud. of William Sharp)
MacManus, Peter J.
McMullen, S. Lilian
McMurtry, Larry
McNamara, M. Eileen
McNeil, Everett
Macpherson, James
McWilliams, Carey
Madero, Francisco I.
"Madison, A. T." (pseud. of Alfred Galpin)
"Madness of Lucian Grey, The" (Bloch)
Magazine of Fun
"Magazine Poet, The"
Magic Carpet
Magician among the Spirits, A (Houdini)
Magistris, Mariano de
Magnalia Christi Americana (Mather)
Mailer, Norman
Main Street (Lewis)
Maine (ship)
"Maker of Moons, The" (Chambers)
Maker of Moons, The (Chambers)
"Making of a Motion Picture, The" (Shehan)
Malaeska: The Indian Wife of the White Hunter (Stephens)
Mallarmé, Stéphane
Man from Genoa, The (Long)
"Man in the Mirror, The" (Hunt)
"Man of Stone, The" (Lovecraft-Heald)
"Man of the Crowd, The" (Poe)
Man on All Fours, The (Derleth)
Mandeville, Sir John
Mann, Henry
Man's Place in Nature and Other Anthropological Essays (Huxley)
Mantell, Robert
Mappin, Beryl
Marblehead (Lupoff)

Marginalia
Mariconda, Steven J.
Marion, Frank
“Marriage Auction, The” (Jackson)
Marryat, Frederick
Marsh, Henry G.
“Marsh-Mad” (Galpin)
Marshall, Mrs.
Marten, Robert D.
Martin, Harry E.
Marvel Tales
Marx, Karl
Mary Adorita, Sister
Mashburn, W. Kirk
Mask of Cthulhu, The (Derleth)
“Masque of the Red Death, The” (Poe)
“Master of the Macabre, A” (Derleth)
Masterpieces of Mystery (French)
Masters, Edgar Lee
Mastropierro, Lorenzo
“Materialist Today, The”
Mather, Cotton
Matheson, Richard
Mathews, Martha Helen
Matin des magiciens, Le (Bergier-Pauwels)
“Matter of Uniteds, The”
Matthews, Brander
Maturin, Charles Robert
Maugham, W. Somerset
Maupassant, Guy de
Mauran, William Lippitt
Maxfield, Julia A.
May, Arthur P.
“Maynwaring, Archibald”
Maynwaring, Arthur
Mazurewicz, Edward T.
Mead, William Rutherford

Meditations and Contemplations (Hervey)
“Medusa: A Portrait”
“Medusa’s Coil” (Lovecraft-Bishop)
Mellon, Paul
Melmoth the Wanderer (Maturin)
Melting-Pot, The (Zangwill)
“Members of the Men’s Club of the First Universalist Church . . ., The”
Memoir of Roger Williams (Knowles)
“Memory”
Mencken, H. L.
Mengshoel, E. L.
Merlin’s Ring (Munn)
“Merman, The” (Bloch)
Merritt, A.
Merritt, John
Merritt, Pearl K.
“Message to America, A” (Seeger)
Messala, L. Valerius
“Messenger, The”
“Metal Chamber, The” (Rimel)
Metal Monster, The (Merritt)
Metamorphoses (Ovid)
“Metaphysical Poets, The” (Eliot)
Metcalf, Mildred
Metcalf, T. N.
Metcalf family
“Metrical Regularity”
Metropolitan Museum (New York)
“Metzengerstein” (Poe)
Mexican Civil War
Meyrink, Gustav
Michaud, Marc A.
Michel, J. B.
Michener, James
“Middleton, Lilian” (pseud. of S. Lilian McMullen)
Migliore, Andrew
Miller, Caroline

Miller, Hayes P.
Miller, Joaquin
Miller, Percival
Miller, Reginald
Miller, William, Jr.
“Million Years After, A” (Root)
Milton, John
Mind Parasites, The (Wilson)
Mind Power Plus
Miniter, Edith
Minnesota Quarterly
Minster Hall
“Mirage” (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Mirage on Lovecraft (Chalker)
Miskatonic University
Miske, J. Chapman
Missbaum, A.
“Mississippi Autumn, A”
Mitchell, D. M.
“Mive” (Jacobi)
“Mocraft, Horace Philter”
“Modern Business Man to His Love, The” (Owen)
Modern Science and Materialism (Elliot)
Modern Science and the Illusions of Professor Bergson (Elliot)
Modern Tales of Horror (Hammett)
Modern Temper, The (Krutch)
Moe, Donald
Moe, Maurice W.
Moe, Robert Ellis
Moffett, Harold Y.
Moitoret, Anthony F.
Monadnock Monthly
Monk, The (Lewis)
Monk and the Hangman’s Daughter, The (Voss)
“Monody on the Late King Alcohol”
Monroe Clothes
“Monster-God of Mamurth, The” (Hamilton)

Montelone, Paul
Montgomery Ward
“Moon, The”
“Moon-Bog, The”
“Moon Pool, The” (Merritt)
Moon Terror, The (Birch et al.)
Moore, C. L.
Moore, Edgar
Moore, Thomas
“More *Chain Lightning”*
More Ghost Stories of an Antiquary (James)
More Seven Club Tales (Austin)
More Shapes Than One (Chappell)
Morris, William
Morrish, Ethel Phillips
Morrow, W. C.
Morrow, William, & Co.
“Mors Omnibus Communis” (Lovecraft-Greene)
Morse, Asa
Morse, Richard Ely
Morte d’Arthur (Malory)
Morton, James F.; and amateur journalism; HPL on; on HPL; with HPL in New York; HPL’s letters to; meetings with HPL; and Paterson Museum; as revisionist; and weird fiction; writings by
Morton, Thomas
Mosely, James Mather
Mosig, Dirk W.
Moskowitz, Sam
Mosley, Sir Oswald
Mother’s Love Songs (Toldridge)
“Mound, The” (Lovecraft-Bishop)
Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus
Mr. X (Straub)
“Mrs. Miniter—Estimates and Recollections”
“MS. Found in a Bottle” (Poe)
Muffin Man
Mullaney, Bridget

Mumford, Lewis
Munn, H. Warner
Munro, Harold W.
Munroe, Addison P.
Munroe, Chester Pierce
Munroe, Harold Bateman
Munroe, Kirk
Munsey, Frank A.
Munsey magazines
Munsey's Magazine
"Murders in the Rue Morgue, The" (Poe)
Murray, Margaret A.
Murray, Will
Museum of Fine Arts (Boston)
Musgrave family
"Music of Erich Zann, The"
Mussolini, Benito
"My Favorite Pastime—Flirting" (Griffin)
"My Favourite Character"
"My Friend—H. L.: A Poet of the Old School" (Munroe)
"My Lost Love"
"My Opinion as to the Lunar Canals"
Myers, Gary
"Myrrha and Strephon"
"Mysteries of the Heavens"
Mysteries of the Worm (Prinn)
Mysteries of Udolpho, The (Radcliffe)
"Mysterious Ship, The"
Mystery Magazine
Mystery of Choice, The (Chambers)
Mystery Stories
"Mystery of Murdon Grange, The"
"Mystery of the Grave-yard, The"
"Mythology for the Young"
Mythos Books
Myths and Myth-Makers (Fiske)

N., S. P.
NRA (National Recovery Administration)
“Nameless City, The”
Nameless Cults (Junzt)
Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym, The (Poe)
Narrative of the Exploring Expedition . . . (Wilkes)
“Nathicana”
Nation
National Amateur
National Amateur Press Association
National Co-operative
National Council of Teachers of English
National Enquirer
National Magazine
Nauck, Mrs. Wilhelm
Nazism
Necronomicon (Alhazred)
Necronomicon Press
Nelson, Robert
“Nemesis”
“New Department Proposed”
“New England”
“New-England Fallen”
New England Primer
New English Canaan or New Canaan (Morton)
New Republic
New Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos (Campbell)
New Way, The (de Castro)
New York Public Library
New York Detective Library
New York Dramatic Mirror
New York Evening Post
New York Herald Tribune
New York Sun
New York Times
New York Tribune
New York Weekly

New York World
New Yorker
Newcomb, Simon
“News Notes” (*United Amateur*)
Newton, Dudley
Nick Carter Detective Weekly
Nietzsche, Friedrich
“Nietzsche as a Practical Prophet” (Galpin)
“Nietzscheism and Realism”
Nigger-Man (cat)
“Night Gallery”
night-gaunts
Night Land, The (Hodgson)
“Night Ocean, The” (Lovecraft-Barlow)
Night-Thoughts (Young)
“Night Wind Bared My Heart, The” (Jackson)
“Nightmare Lake, The”
Night’s Black Agents (Leiber)
Night’s Yawning Peal (Derleth)
“1914”
“No Transit of Mars”
“Noble Eavesdropper, The”
Northanger Abbey (Austen)
Not at Night! (Asbury)
“Not at Night” series
“Note on Howard P. Lovecraft’s Verse, A” (Kleiner)
Notes & Commonplace Book . . .
“Notes on ‘Alias Peter Marchall’ by A. F. Lorenz”
“Notes on Verse Technique”
“Notes on Writing Weird Fiction”
“Novel of the Black Seal” (Machen)
“Novel of the White Powder” (Machen)
Nurse, Rebekah
“Nyarlathotep” (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
“Nyarlathotep” (prose-poem)
“Nymph’s Reply to the Modern Business Man, The”

O. Henry Memorial Award Prize Stories (Williams)
O'Brien, Edward J.
O'Brien, Fitz-James
"Observations on Several Parts of America"
"Oct. 17, 1919"
"October"
"Ode for July Fourth, 1917"
"Ode to Florence" (Greene)
"Ode to Selene or Diana"
Odes and Sonnets (Smith)
Odyssey (Homer)
"Of Evill Sorceries Done in New England . . ."
Of Human Bondage (Maugham)
Official Organ Fund
"Ol' Black Sarah" (Dwyer)
"Old Brick Row, The"
"Old Bugs"
"Old Christmas"
"Old Egyptian Myth . . ., An"
"Old England and the 'Hyphen'"
Old English Baron, The (Reeve)
Old World Footprints (Symmes)
Ole Miss'
O'Leary, Jeremiah
Oliphant, Margaret
Oliver, John A. Westwood
Olympian
Omnibus of Crime, The (Sayers)
"Omnipresent Philistine, The"
"On a Battlefield in Picardy"
"On a Modern Lothario"
"On a New-England Village Seen by Moonlight"
"On Acknowledgments" (Dunn)
"On Collaboration" (Lovecraft-Kleiner)
"On Reading Lord Dunsany's *Book of Wonder"*
"On Receiving a Picture of Swans"
"On Receiving a Portraiture of Mrs. Berkeley, y^{e} Poetess"

“On Religion”
“On the Aryan Question” (Huxley)
“On the Cowboys of the West”
“On the History of the Man-like Apes” (Huxley)
“On the Ruin of Rome”
“On the Creation of Niggers”
“On the Death of a Rhyming Critic”
On the Genealogy of Morals (Nietzsche)
“On the Methods and Results of Ethnology” (Huxley)
“On the Trail of the Past”
“On the Vanity of Human Ambition”
Onderdonk, Matthew H.
“One of Cleopatra’s Nights” (Gautier)
O’Neail, N. J.
O’Neill, Eugene
Onions, Oliver
“Only a Volunteer” (Miller)
“Ooze” (Rud)
“Open Letter to the Clergy” (Morton)
Oracle
Oriental Stories
Origin of Species, The (Darwin)
Ornaments in Jade (Machen)
Orton, Vrest
O’Shaughnessy, Arthur
“Ossian.” *See* Macpherson, James
“Other Gods, The”
“Our Apology to E. M. W.” (Russell)
“Our Candidate”
Our Natupski Neighbors (Miniter)
Our Police (Mann)
Ouronoskopia (Wittie)
“Out of the Aeons” (Lovecraft-Heald)
“Outpost, The”
“Outsider, The”
Outsider, The (Wilson)
Outsider and Other Stories, The

Outsider and Others, The
“Oval Portrait, The” (Poe)
Overland Monthly
Ovid (P. Ovidius Naso)
“Ovid’s Metamorphoses”
O-Wash-Ta-Nong
Owen, Olive G.
Owings, Mark
Owyhee Avalanche
Owyhee Land and Irrigation Company
Oxford Latin Dictionary
Ozell, James

“Pacifist War Song—1917”
Page, Brett
Page, Thomas Nelson
“Paget-Lowe, Henry”
Pain, Barry
Pall Mall Gazette
Palgrave, Sir Francis
Papy, Jacques
Paradise Lost (Milton)
Parker, Charles A. A.
Parkman, Francis
Parks, Joseph
Parnell, Clarence
Parnell, Thomas
Partridge, John
Passing of the Great Race, The (Grant)
Passmore, John
“Pastoral Tragedy of Appleton, Wisconsin, A”
“Pastorale” (Crane)
Pastorals (Pope)
Patches of Sunlight (Dunsany)
Pater, Walter
Paterson Rambling Club
“Pathetick History of Sir Wilful Wildrake, The”

Pattee, Fred Lewis
Pauke's Quill
Pauwels, Louis
Pawtuxet Valley Daily Times
Pawtuxet Valley Gleaner
"Peabody Heritage, The" (Derleth)
"Peace Advocate, The"
Peace Poems and Sausages (Bush)
Pearse, Padraic
Pearson, Edmund
Pellucidar (Burroughs)
"Pendrifter, The" (Crane)
"Penelope" (Starrett)
Penguin Classics
"Penseroso, Il" (Milton)
Penzoldt, Peter
Perelman, S. J.
Perry, Mr.
Pershing, A. V.
Perspective Review
"Perverted Poesie; or, Modern Metre"
Pervigilium Veneris
Petaja, Emil
"Phaeton"
Phantagraph
Phantastique/The Science Fiction Critic
Phantom of the Opera, The (film)
Phantom of the Poles, The (Reed)
Phantom Public, The (Lippmann)
Phantom Ship, The (Marryat)
Philbrick, Clarence Horace
Phillips, Abby
Phillips, Annie Emeline. *See* Gamwell, Annie Emeline Phillips
Phillips, Asaph
Phillips, Edwin E.
Phillips, Emma (Corey)
Phillips, Ethel M. *See* Morris, Ethel Phillips

Phillips, George
Phillips, James
Phillips, James Wheaton
Phillips, Jeremiah
Phillips, Jeremiah W.
Phillips, Lilian Delora. *See* Clark, Lillian Delora
Phillips, Mary C.
Phillips, Michael
Phillips, Mr
Phillips, Robie Alzada Place
Phillips, Roby Rathbun
Phillips, Sarah Susan. *See* Lovecraft, Sarah Susan Phillips
Phillips, Theodore W.
Phillips, Walter H.
"Phillips, Ward"
Phillips, Whipple Van Buren
Philosopher
Philosopher's Stone, The (Wilson)
Phoenician
Pickering, William H.
Pickford, Mary
Pickle for the Knowing Ones, A (Dexter)
"Pickman's Model"
"Picture, The"
"Picture in the House, The"
Picture of Dorian Gray, The (Wilde)
Pierce, Frederick Erastus
Pigafetta, Filippo
"Pigeon-Flyers, The" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Pine Cones
Pinero, Arthur Wing
Pin-Feathers
Piper
Pittenger, William
Pizzano, Cahrles
Place, Stephen
Place Called Dagon, The (Gorman)

Place of Hawks (Derleth)
Plainsman
Plaisier, Jennie K.
Planck, Max
Planet, The
Planeteer
“Plaster-All”
Plays of Gods and Men (Dunsany)
Pliny the Elder (C. Plinius Secundus)
Pliny the Younger (C. Plinius Caecilius Secundus)
Pluck and Luck
Plunkett, Joseph
Pnakotic Manuscripts
Poe, Edgar Allan; aesthetics of; compared to HPL; HPL on; influence on HPL; and Frank Belknap Long; reputation of; residences of; and weird fiction
“Poe-et’s Nightmare, The”
“Poem of Ulysses, The”
Poemata Minora, Volume I
Poemata Minora, Volume II
Poems for Midnight (Wandrei)
“Poetical Punch’ Pushed from His Pedestal, ‘The”
Poetical Works (Holmes)
Poetical Works of Jonathan E. Hoag, The (Hoag)
“Poetry and the Gods” (Lovecraft-Crofts)
“Poetry of John Ravenor Bullen, The”
“Poetry of Lilian Middleton, The”
Poetry out of Wisconsin (Derleth-Larsson)
“Poets of Amateur Journalism” (White)
“Polaris”
Polaris
Polo, Marco
Poly-Olbion (Drayton)
“Pool, The” (Jackson)
Pope, Alexander
Popular Astronomy (Newcomb)
Popular Fiction Publishing Co.

Popular Magazine
"Port, The" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Portable Novels of science, The (Wollheim)
Porter, Wesley H.
Portrait of Ambrose Bierce (de Castro)
"Post-Christmas Lament, A" (Dunn)
Poster, William
Pound, Ezra
Powell, Anthony
"Power of Wine, The"
Practical Astronomer, The (Dick)
"Practical Geometry"
Practical Psychology and Sex Life (Bush)
"Prayer for Peace and Justice, A" (Thomas)
Precious Balms (Machen)
Presbyterian Advocate
Prescott, William H.
"President's Message" (Greene)
"President's Annual Report, The"
"President's Message" (*National Amateur*)
"President's Message" (*United Amateur*)
Price, E. Hoffmann
Price, John M.
Price, Robert M.
Price, Vincent
"Primavera"
Primer of Greek Literature, A (Lawrence)
Primitive Culture (Tylor)
Prinn, Ludvig
Prior, Matthew
Prisoner in Fairyland, A (Blackwood)
Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft, The (Gissing)
"Probable Adventure of the Three Literary Men, The" (Dunsany)
Problem of China, The (Russell)
Prohibition
"Proposed Authors' Union, The"
Proust, Marcel

Prout, Mearle
Providence, RI
“Providence”
Providence: A Modern City (Kirk)
Providence Amateur
Providence Amateur Press Club
“Providence Amateur Press Club (Deceased) to the Athenaeum Club of Journalism”
Providence Astronomical Society
Providence Athletic Association
Providence Crushed Stone and Sand Co.
Providence Detective Agency
Providence Gazette and Country-Journal
Providence Evening Bulletin
Providence Evening News
Providence in Colonial Times (Kimball)
“Providence in 2000 A.D.”
Providence Journal
“Providence Observatory Forecast”
Providence Opera House
Providence Public Library
Providence Times
Providence Tribune
Pryor, John Clinton
“Pseudo-United, The”
Psychiatric Dictionary (Hinsie-Campbell)
“Psychic Phenominon of Love, The” (Davis)
Psycho (Bloch)
“Psychopompos: A Tale in Rhyme”
Public Opinion (Lippmann)
Pugmire, W. H.
“Pulp Magazines” (Bolitho)
Pulptime (Cannon)
Pumilia, Joseph
Punch
Purple Cloud, The (Shiel)
Putnam’s Sons, G. P.

Pynchon, Thomas

Quabbin Reservoir
quantum theory
Queen's Enemies, The (Dunsany)
"Quest of Iranon, The"
Quinn, Seabury
"Quinsnicket Park"

Radcliffe, Ann
Rahs, E. P.
Railo, Eino
Railroad Man's Magazine
Railroad Review, The
Rainbow
Rambler
Rankin, Hugh
Ransom, John Crowe
Rape of the Lock, The (Pope)
Raphael's Ephemeris
Rasselas (Johnson)
Rathbone/Rathbun, John
"Rats in the Walls, The"
Raymond, Clifford
Read, Francis
Read, Thomas Buchanan
Reader, The (Alden)
"Reading Lamp, The"
Reagan, Ronald
Realms of Being, The (Santayana)
Rebel
"Recapture" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Recluse
"Recognition" (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Red Book
"Red Brain, The" (Wandrei)
"Red Robin, The" (Jackson)

Reed, William
Reeve, Clara
“Regner Lodbrog’s Epicedium”
Regnum Congo (Pigafetta)
“Remarkable Document, A”
Remembrance of Things Past (Proust)
“Reminiscence of Dr. Samuel Johnson, A”
“Renaissance of Manhood, The”
Renshaw, Anne Tillery
“Reply to *The Lingerer,* A”
“Report of the First Vice-President”
“Request, A”
“Research of a Biblio, The” (Wetzel)
Résumé with Monsters (Spencer)
Resurrected, The (film)
“Return, The”
Return, The (de la Mare)
“Return of Hastur, The” (Derleth)
“Revelation”
Revi-Lona (Cowan)
“Revolt of the Home Gods, The” (Dunsany)
Reynolds, B. M.
Reynolds, Florence
Reynolds, George W. M.
Reynolds, Jeremiah N.
Rhoades, James
Rhode Island Journal of Astronomy, The
Rhode Island Journal of Science & Astronomy, The
Rhode Island National Guard
Rhode Island School of Design
Rhodius, Apollonius
“Rhymes from a Suburb” (Dunsany)
Rice, Anne
Richardson, Leon Burr
Rick Dale: A Story of the Northwest Coast (Munroe)
Riddle and Other Stories, The (de la Mare)
Riddle of the Universe, The (Haeckel)

Rights of Periodicals, The (Morton)
Rime of the Ancient Mariner, The (Coleridge)
Rimel, Duane W.
Rinehart, Mary Roberts
Ripples from Lake Champlain
Rise and Fall of the Cthulhu Mythos, The (Joshi)
Rise and Progress of the English Commonwealth (Palgrave)
Ritter, Mrs. W. S.
Rivals, The (Sheridan)
"Road to Ruin, The"
"Robert Ervin Howard: 1906–1936"
Robinet, Lee
Robinson, Edwin Arlington
Roerich, Nicholas
Rohmer, Sax
Romance of the Forest, The (Radcliffe)
Roosevelt, Franklin D.
Roosevelt, Theodore
Root, Katharine Metcalf
Roots of Horror in the Fiction of H. P. Lovecraft, The (St Armand)
"Rose for Emily, A" (Faulkner)
"Rose of England, The"
Ross, James Clark
Roulet, Jacques
"Round Tower, The"
Rousseau, Victor
Rowe, Nicholas
"Rowley, Ames Dorrance"
Royle, Nicholas
"Ruat Caelum" (Saunders)
Rud, Anthony M.
"Rudis Indigestaque Moles"
Rugg, Henry W.
Ruppert, Conrad
Russell, Bertrand
Russell, James L.
Russell, John

Russell, Robert Leonard
Russell, W. Clark
“Rutted Road, The”
Ruzella, Peter, Jr

“S. S. L.: Christmas 1920”
Sacher-Masoch, Leopold, baron von
“Sacrifice to Science, A” (Danziger)
St Armand, Barton L.
St John, J. Allen
St John’s Churchyard
St. Petersburg Evening Independent
Saintsbury, George
“Salem Horror, The” (Kuttner)
Saltus, Edgar
Salvaging Self-Esteem (Renshaw)
Samples, John Milton
Sampson, Robert
San Francisco Examiner
Sandalwood (Smith)
Sandburg, Carl
Sandusky, Albert A.
Sanger, Alma B.
“Santa Claus and the Christmas Tree” (Hartmann)
Santayana, George
Sargent, Stanley C.
“Satan’s Servants” (Bloch)
Satellite Science Fiction
Saturday Review of Literature
Saturnian
Saunders, F. W.
Savile, Frank Mackenzie
Sawyer, Laurie A.
Saxo Grammaticus
Saxton Herald
Sayers, Dorothy L.
Scarborough, Dorothy

Scepticism and Animal Faith (Santayana)
Schilling, George S.
Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr.
Schnabel, William
School for Scandal, The (Sheridan)
Schopenhauer, Arthur
Schorer, Mark
Schultz, David E.
Schvchavadze, David
Schwartz, Julius
Schweitzer, Darrell
Science-Fantasy Correspondent
Science Fiction Fan
Science Fiction League
"Science Library, The"
"Science of Astrology, The" (Hartmann)
"Science versus Charlatanry"
Scientific American
Scientific Gazette, The
Scienti-Snaps
Scituate Reservoir
Scot
Scott, Howard
Scott, Robert
Scott, Sir Walter
Scott, Winfield
Scott, Winfield Townley
Scott-Elliot, W.
Scottsboro case
Scream for Jeeves (Cannon)
Scribner, Charles
Scribner Book Shop
Scribner's Sons, Charles
Sea Demons, The (Rousseau)
Sea Gull
"Sealed Casket, The" (Searight)
Searight, Richard F.

Searles, A. Langley
Seasons, The (Thomson)
“Seaton’s Aunt” (de la Mare)
Sechrist, Edward Lloyd
Seckendorff, Samuel
“Secret Cave; or, John Lees Adventure, The”
Secret Doctrine, The (Blavatsky)
“Secret in the Tomb, The” (Bloch)
“Secret of the Grave, The”
Secret Service
Sedgwick, Ellery
Seeger, Alan
Selected Letters
Selected Papers of Bertrand Russell (Russell)
Selected Poems (Jackson)
Selected Poems (Smith)
Selections from Whitman (Whitman)
“Selenaio-Phantasma” (Galpin)
Selwyn & Blount
Senf, C. C.
Serviss, Garrett P.
seven cryptical books of Hsan
Shackleton, Ernest
“Shadow—a Parable” (Poe)
“Shadow out of Time, The”
“Shadow over Innsmouth, The”
Shadow over Innsmouth, The
Shadow over Innsmouth and Other Stories of Horror, The
Shadows on the Rock (Cather)
Shadowy Thing, The (Drake)
Shafirkin, Simyon
Shakespeare, Mlle
Shakespeare, William
“Shambleau” (Moore)
“Shambler from the Stars, The” (Bloch)
Shaw, George Bernard
Shaw, Joseph T.

Shaw, Lew
She (Haggard)
Shea, J. Vernon
Shea, Michael
Shehan, Edmund L.
Shelley, Mary
Shelley, Percy Bysshe
Shepherd, Harry
Shepherd, Wilson
Sheppard, Alice
Sheridan, Richard Brinsley
"Sheridan's Ride" (Read)
Sherman, Sidney
Sherman, French & Co.
Shiel, M. P.
"Shining Pyramid, The" (Machen)
Shining Pyramid, The (Machen)
Shiras, Winfield
"Shop in Go-by Street, The" (Dunsany)
Short, Charles
Short Story, The (Hall-Langland)
Shreffler, Philip A.
"Shunned House, The"
Shunned House, The
Shuttered Room, The (film)
Shuttered Room and Other Pieces, The
"Sideshow, The" (Hart)
Siegel, Jerry
Sign of Fear, The (Derleth)
"Sign of the Dragon" (Eddy)
"Silence—a Fable" (Poe)
Silver Clarion
"Silver Key, The"
Sime, Sidney H.
Simmons, William J.
Simon
Simon & Schuster

“Simple, Percy”
“Simple Speller’s Tale, The”
“Simple Spelling Mania, The”
Simpson, Wallis
“Sin-Eater, The” (Macleod)
Sinclair, Upton
“Sir Thomas Tryout”
Sitter, Willem de
“Skull-Face” (Howard)
Slater Avenue School
Slayer of Souls, The (Chambers)
“Slaying of the Monster, The” (Lovecraft-Barlow)
“Sleepy Hollow To-day”
Smith, Alfred E.
Smith, Charles W. (“Tryout”)
Smith, Clark Ashton; as artist; and R. H. Barlow; HPL on; on HPL; HPL’s letters to; and HPL’s work; and Samuel Loveman; and pulp fiction; writings by
Smith, E. E. “Doc”
Smith, Mrs. J. G.
Smith, Louis C.
Smith, Simon
Smith, Sir Thomas
Smith, William Benjamin
Smith, William H.
Smollett, Tobias
Snow-Shoes and Sledges (Munroe)
Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities
Socrates
“Softly, Edward”
“Solar Eclipse Feature of June Heavens”
“Some Causes of Self-Immolation”
“Some Current Motives and Practices”
“Some Dutch Footprints in New England”
Some Imagist Poets
“Some Notes on a Nonentity”
“Some Notes on Interplanetary Fiction”

“Some Repetitions on the Times”
Somerville, William
Something about Cats and Other Pieces
Sommer, William
“Song of the North Wind” (Jackson)
Songs at the Start (Guiney)
“Sonnet Study”
Sonnets of the Midnight Hours (Wandrei)
Soper, Cleveland C., Jr.
“Sorcery of Alphar, The” (Rimel)
“Sorrow of Search, The” (Dunsany)
“Sors Poetae”
Soul of Love, The (Toldridge)
“Soul of Man under Socialism, The” (Wilde)
Souls of Black Folk, The (Du Bois)
Southey, Robert
“Space-Eaters, The” (Long)
Space Vampires, The (Wilson)
Spanish-American War
“Spear and Fang” (Howard)
Spectator
“Spell of the Blue Stone, The” (Rimel)
Spence, Lewis
Spencer, Truman J.
Spencer, William Browning
Spengler, Oswald
Sphinx, The (Loveman)
“Spider, The” (Ewers)
Spindrift
Spink, Helm C.
Sport of the Gods, The (Dunbar)
Sprenger, William
“Spring”
Squire, J. C.
Squires, Richard D.
Stanley, John H.
Stapledon, Olaf

Staples, William Reed
Star Atlas (Upton)
Star Rover, The (London)
“Star-Spangled, Banner, The”
“Star-Treader, The” (Smith)
Star-Treader and Other Poems, The (Smith)
“Star-Winds” (*Fungi from Yuggoth*)
Starrett, Vincent
“State of Poetry, The”
State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century (Field)
“Statement of Randolph Carter, The”
Static Electricity
Station X (Winsor)
Stedman, Edmund Clarence
Steele, Joel Dorman
Stein, Gertrude
Stephen Daye Press
Stephens, Ann Sophia Winterbotham
Stephens, James
Sterling, George
Sterling, Kenneth
Stern, Philip Van Doren
Sterne, Laurence
Stevens, Francis
Stevenson, Robert Louis
Stickney, Corwin F.
Stockwell, Dean
Stoddard, Richard Henry
Stoddard, William B.
Stoker, Bram
Stone, Lee Alexander
Stormonth, James
“Story, A” (Whittier)
Story of Atlantis and the Lost Lemuria, The (Scott-Elliot)
Story of Exploration and Adventure in the Frozen Sea, The (Holmes)
Story of Philosophy, The (Durant)

"Story of the Last Trump, The" (Wells)
Story of the Stars, The (Chambers)
Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde, The (Stevenson)
Strange Eons (Bloch)
"Strange High House in the Mist, The"
Strange Manuscript Found in a Copper Cylinder, A (De Mille)
Strange Stories
Strange Story, A (Bulwer-Lytton)
Strange Tales
"Stranger from Kurdistan, The" (Price)
Straub, Peter
Strauch, Carl Ferdinand
"Street, The"
Street & Smith
Street Strolls around Charleston, South Carolina (Wilson)
Strength to Dream, The (Wilson)
Stross, Charles
Strysik, John
Studies in Pessimism (Schopenhauer)
"Suggestions for a Reading Guide"
Suhre, Edward H.
"Suitable Surroundings, The" (Bierce)
Sullivan, Jack
Sully, Genevieve K.
Sully, Helen V.
"Summer Sunset and Evening, A"
Sunday, Billy
Sunlight and Shadow (Gough)
"Sunset"
Sunshine of Paradise Alley, The (Thompson)
Superman
"Supernatural Horror in Literature"
Supernatural Horror in Literature
Supernatural in Fiction, The (Penzoldt)
Supernatural in Modern English Fiction, The (Scarborough)
Supernatural in Romantic Fiction, The (Yardley)
Supramundane Stories

"Survivor, The" (Derleth)
Survivor and Others, The (Derleth)
Suter, Paul
Sutton, David A.
Swan Point Cemetery (Providence, R.I.)
Swanson, Carl
Sweeney, Ella
"Sweet Ermengarde"
Swift, Augustus T.
Swift, Jonathan
Swinburne, Algernon Charles
Switch On the Light (Thomson)
Sword of Welleran, The (Dunsany)
Sylvester, Margaret
Symmes, Mrs. William B.
"Symphonic Ideal, The"
Symphony
Symphony Literary Service
Système du monde (Laplace)

Taft, William Howard
"Tale of Satampra Zeiros, The" (Smith)
Tale of Terror, The (Birkhead)
Tale of the Body Thief, The (Rice)
Tales (Library of America)
Tales of Magic and Mystery
Tales of Mystery (Saintsbury)
Tales of Soldiers and Civilians (Bierce)
Tales of Terror
Tales of the Cthulhu Mythos (Derleth)
Tales of the Folio Club (Poe)
Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque (Poe)
"Tales of the Marvellous and the Ridiculous" (Wilson)
Tales of Three Hemispheres (Dunsany)
Tales of War (Dunsany)
Talman, Wilfred Blanch
Tanglewood Tales (Hawthorne)

Tanner, Kenneth
Targ, William
Tarkington, Booth
Tarzan of the Apes (Burroughs)
“Task for Amateur Journalists, A”
Tate, Allen
Taurasi, James V.
Taylor, Harold Z.
Technocracy
television
“Temperance Song”
“Temple, The”
Tenison, E. M.
Tennyson, Alfred, Lord
Terence (P. Terentius Afer)
Terhune, Albert Payson
“Terrible Old Man, The”
Terror, The (Machen)
“Terror from the Depths, The” (Leiber)
Tesla, Nicola
Tesseract
Testimony of the Suns, The (Sterling)
Texaco Star
Thackeray, William Makepeace
“Theobald, Lewis, Jun.”
theosophy
“There Are More Things” (Borges)
Theroux, Paul
Thin Ghost and Others, A (James)
Thing, The (film)
“Thing in the Moonlight, The” (spurious)
Thing in the Woods, The (Williams)
“Thing on the Doorstep, The”
“Thing That Walked in the Wind, The” (Derleth)
Things Near and Far (Machen)
“Third Act, The” (Jackson)
Third Annual Report of the Prov. Meteorological Station

Thomas, Edward
Thomas, Henry F.
Thomas, James Warren
Thomas, Jonathan
Thomas, Norman
Thompson, C. Hall
Thompson, Denman
Thompson, G. R.
Thompson, Mrs
Thompson, Robert
Thompson, W. J.
Thomson, Christine Campbell
Thomson, J. Arthur
Thomson, James
Thoreau, Henry David
“Thoughts” (Munroe)
Thoughts and Pictures (Kuntz)
“Thrawn Janet” (Stevenson)
Three Heroines of New England Romance
Three Impostors, The (Machen)
Three Who Died (Derleth)
Thrill Book
Through the First Antarctic Night (Cook)
“Through the Gates of the Silver Key” (Lovecraft-Price)
Tickell, Thomas
Tierney, Richard L.
“‘Till A’ the Seas’” (Lovecraft-Barlow)
Time
Time and the Gods (Dunsany)
Time Machine, The (Wells)
Times Literary Supplement
“To a Dreamer”
“To a Movie Star” (Kleiner)
“To a Sophisticated Young Gentleman . . .”
“To a Young Poet in Dunedin”
“To Alan Seeger”
“To Alfred Galpin, Esq.”

“To an Accomplished Young Gentlewoman . . .”
“To an Infant”
“To Anacreon in Heaven”
“To Arthur Goodenough, Esq.”
“To Charlie of the Comics”
“To Chloris” (Munroe)
“To Clark Ashton Smith . . .”
“To Delia, Avoiding Damon”
“To Edward John Moreton Drax Plunkett, Eighteenth Baron Dunsany”
“To Flavia” (Munroe)
“To General Villa”
“To George Willard Kirk”
“To Greece, 1917”
“To Howard Phillips Lovecraft” (Smith)
“To Maj.-Gen. Omar Bundy, U.S.A.”
“To Mary of the Movies” (Kleiner)
“To Miss Beryl Hoyt . . .”
“To Mistress Sophia Simple, Queen of the Cinema”
“To Mr. Finlay . . .”
“To Mr. Kleiner, on Receiving from Him the Poetical Works of Addison, Gay, and Somerville”
“To Mr. Munroe . . .”
“To Mr. Terhune, on His Historical Fiction”
“To Pan”
“To S. S. L.—October 17, 1920”
“To Samuel Loveman Esquire . . .”
“To Saml. Loveman, Gent. . . .”
“To Satan” (Loveman)
“To the American Flag” (Hoag)
“To the Eighth of November”
“To the Members of the Pin-Feathers . . .”
“To the Members of the United”
“To the Members of the United Amateur Press Ass’n from the Providence Amateur Press Club”
“To the Nurses of the Red Cross”
“To the Old Pagan Religion”
“To the Rev. James Pyke”

“To ‘The Scribblers’”
“To Xanthippe”
“To Zara”
Tolbert, Thurston
Toldridge, Elizabeth
Tolkien, J. R. R.
“Tomb, The”
Tomb of Perneb, The
Toomer, Jean
Torrance, Lew
Tousey, Frank
Townsend, Clyde G.
Townsend, Francis E.
Trail of Cthulhu, The (Derleth)
Train, Oswald
Transatlantic Circulator
“Transition of Juan Romero, The”
“Trans-Neptunian Planets”
“Trap, The” (Lovecraft-Whitehead)
“Travels in the Provinces of America”
“Tree, The”
“Tree-Men of M’Bwa, The” (Wandrei)
“Tree on the Hill, The” (Lovecraft-Rimel)
Tremaine, F. Orlin
Trench and Camp
“Trimmings”
“Trip of Theobald, The”
Tri-State Times
“Triumph in Eternity, A” (Loveman)
Trollope, Anthony
Troy Times
True Blue
Truesdell, Lucius B.
Trumbull, John
Tryout
“Tryout’s Lament for the Vanished Spider”
Tucker, Gertrude E.

Turn of the Screw, The (James)
Turner, C. M.
Turner, J. M. W.
Turner, James
Turner, James (editor of Arkham House)
Tutti i racconti
Twenty-nine Poems (Strauch)
Twenty-one Letters of Ambrose Bierce (Bierce)
"Twilight" (Munroe)
Twilight of the Idols (Nietzsche)
"Twilight of Time, The" (Wandrei). *See* "Red Brain, The"
"Two Black Bottles" (Lovecraft-Talman)
Tyler, Casey B.
Tylor, Edward Burnett
"Types of Weird Story"
Tyson, Donald

"Ulalume" (Poe)
Ullman, Allen G.
Ulysses (Joyce)
Unaussprechlichen Kulten (Junzt)
"Unbroken Chain, The" (Cobb)
Uncle Silas (Le Fanu)
"Under the Pyramids" (Lovecraft-Houdini)
Unhappy Far-Off Things (Dunsany)
United Amateur
United Amateur Press Association
United Amateur Press Association: Exponent of Amateur Journalism
United Amateur Press Association of America
United Co-operative
United Mine Workers
United Women's Press Club of Massachusetts
Unknown/Unknown Worlds
"Unknown, The"
"Unknown City in the Ocean, The"
"Unnamable, The"
Unnamable, The (film)

Untermeyer, Louis
Unusual Stories
Updike, John
Upham, Ronald
Upton, Winslow
Utpatel, Frank

Vagrant
Valkyrien, Valda
"Valley of Unrest, The" (Poe)
Van de Water, F. F.
Van Dusen, Washington
Van Vogt, A. E.
Vanguard (publisher)
Vanity of Human Wishes, The (Johnson)
Varied Year
Vathek (Beckford)
"Vaults of Yoh-Vombis, The" (Smith)
Venizelos, Eleutherios
Venus in Furs (Sacher-Masoch)
"Vermont—A First Impression"
Vermont Country Store
Verne, Jules
Vernon, James
"Vers Libre Epidemic, The"
"Verses Designed to Be Sent by a Friend of the Author . . ."
"Very Old Folk, The"
Vestiges of Creation (Chambers)
Victoria (Queen of England)
Vidal, Gore
Villa, Pancho
Vincent, Harl
Virgil (P. Vergilius Maro)
"Vivisector, The" (Lovecraft-Galpin)
Voltaire (François Marie Arouet)
"Volunteer, The"
von der Heide, Edna

Voss, Richard
Voyage of Discovery and Research in the Southern Antarctic Regions, A (Ross)
Voyage towards the South Pole (Cook)
Voyage towards the South Pole, A (Weddell)
"Voyages of Capt. Ross, R.N."

W., E. M.
WPA (Works Progress Administration)
Walker, James J.
Walpole, Horace
Walter, Dorothy C.
"Wanderer's Return" (Shepherd)
Wandering Ghosts (Crawford)
Wandrei, Donald; and Arkham House; and R. H. Barlow; HPL on; on HPL; HPL's letters to; influence on HPL; meetings with HPL; and weird fiction; writings by
Wandrei, Howard
War and Peace (Tolstoy)
Ward, Fred
Ward, Harold
Ward, Samuel
Warlord of Mars (Burroughs)
Warning to the Curious, A (James)
Washington, George
Waste Land, The (Eliot)
"Waste Paper"
Watchers out of Time, The (Derleth)
Watson, Stanley H.
Wave, The (Blackwood)
Waugh, Evelyn
Waugh, Robert H.
Wayland, Francis
Web of Easter Island, The (Wandrei)
Webster, Noah
Weddell, James
Weinbaum, Stanley G.

Weinberg, Robert E.
Weird Shadow over Innsmouth . . ., The
“Weird Story Plots”
“Weird Tale in English Since 1890, The” (Derleth)
Weird Tales; art in; book publications by; HPL in; HPL’s ad in; and HPL’s editorship; HPL’s colleagues in; HPL’s revisions in; payments by; rejections by; submissions to
“Weird Work of William Hope Hodgson, The”
“Weird Writer Is In Our Midst, A” (Orton)
Weiss, Henry George
Weld, John
Well Bred Speech (Renshaw)
Wells, H. G.
“Wendigo, The” (Blackwood)
Wentworth, Benning
“Wentworth’s Day” (Derleth)
“Werewolf of Ponkert, The” (Munn)
West, Nathanael
West India Lights (Whitehead)
Westbrook, Dr
Westminster Street, Providence, as It Was about 1824 (Read)
Wetzel, George T.
“What Amateurdom and I Have Done for Each Other”
“What Belongs in Verse”
What Is Man? (Thomson)
“What Makes a Story Click?” (Luten)
“What the Moon Brings”
“What Was It?” (O’Brien)
“When the Gods Slept” (Dunsany)
“Where’s the Woman?” (Jackson)
While the Sirens Slept (Dunsany)
Whipple, Abraham
Whipple, Esther
“Whisperer in Darkness, The”
White, Edward Lucas
White, Lee McBride
White, Matthew, Jr.

White, Michael Oscar
White, Stanford
White, William Patterson
“White Ape, The.” *See* “Facts concerning the Late Arthur Jermyn and His Family”
White Buildings (Crane)
White Fire (Bullen)
“White People, The” (Machen)
“White Ship, The”
Whitehead, Mrs. E. L.
Whitehead, Henry S.
“Whither?” (anon.)
Whitman, Sarah Helen
Whitman, Walt
Whittier, David H.
Whittier, John Greenleaf
“Who Goes There?” (Campbell)
Who’s Who in America
“Why the Milkman Shudders When He Perceives the Dawn” (Dunsany)
“Wicked Clergyman, The.” *See* “Evil Clergyman, The”
Wickenden, Mr
Wieland (Brown)
Wilde, Oscar
Wilder, Thornton
Wilkes, Charles
“Wilkes’s Explorations”
Willcox, W. B.
“William Wilson” (Poe)
Williams, Blanche Colton
Williams, Charles
Williams, Harper
Williams, Roger
Williams, William Carlos
“Willie, Albert Frederick”
“Willows, The” (Blackwood)
Wilson, Colin
Wilson, Edmund

Wilson, Edward
Wilson, Miriam Bellangee
Wilson, Woodrow
Wilt, Napier
“Wind That Is in the Grass, The” (Barlow)
Wine of Wizardry, A (Sterling)
Winesburg, Ohio (Anderson)
Wing, Eleanor Evans
“Winged Death” (Lovecraft-Heald)
“Winged Feet” (Jackson)
“Winifred Virginia Jackson: A ‘Different’ Poetess”
Winskill, Benjamin
Winsor, G. MacLeod
Winter Garden (Morse)
“Wisdom”
Wise, Herbert A.
Witch-Cult in Western Europe, The (Murray)
“Witch-Makers, The” (Wandrei)
Witch Wood (Buchan)
“With a Copy of Wilde’s Fairy Tales”
“Within the Gates”
Wittie, Robert
Wodehouse, P. G.
Wolf, Howard
Wolfe, Gene
Wollheim, Donald A.
Wolverine
Woman’s Home Companion
“Woman’s Prey, A” (Jackson)
Wonder-Book, A (Hawthorne)
Wonder Stories
Wood, Moses
Wood, Mrs.
“Wood, The”
Woodbee
Woodberry, George E.
Wooley, Natalie H.

Woolf, Virginia
"Work of Frank Belknap Long, Jr., The"
World Disarmament Conference
Worm Ouroboros, The (Eddison)
Wormius, Olaus (Ole Wurm)
Wright, Farnsworth
Wright, Harold Bell
Wright, Hubert A.
Wright, S. Fowler
Writers' Club, The
Writer's Digest
Writing the Short-Story (Esenwein)
Wuthering Heights (Brontë)
Wycherley, William
Wylie, Willard O.

Xanthippe
"Xeethra" (Smith)

Yardley, Edward
"Year Off, A"
Yeats, W. B.
"Yellow Sign, The" (Chambers)
Yergler, Rudolf
"Yes, We Have No Bananas"
Yesley, Mr.
You'll Need a Night Light (Thomson)
Young, Charles Augustus
Young, Edward
Young, Francis Brett
Young, Gig
Young, S. Hall
"Young Blood" (Jackson)
Young Chemist, The (Appleton)
"Young Folks Iliad in Verse, The"
"Young Folks' Ulysses, The." *See* "Poem of Ulysses, The"
Young Nova Scotia

“Youth of Today, The”
Youth’s Companion
“Yule Horror”
Yurregarth and Yannimaid (Farnese)
Yuzna, Brian

Zanger, Jules
Zangwill, Israel
Zenith
“Zoilus”
Zola, Emile

Books by S. T. Joshi

Books Written
An Index to the Selected Letters of H. P. Lovecraft (1980; rev. 1991)
Lovecraft's Library: A Catalogue (1980; rev. 2002)
H. P. Lovecraft and Lovecraft Criticism: An Annotated Bibliography (1981; rev. 2009)
H. P. Lovecraft (Starmont Reader's Guide 13) (1982)
Selected Papers on Lovecraft (1989)
The Weird Tale (1990)
John Dickson Carr: A Critical Study (1990)
H. P. Lovecraft: The Decline of the West (1990)
An Index to the Fiction and Poetry of H. P. Lovecraft (1992)
Lord Dunsany: A Bibliography (with Darrell Schweitzer) (1993)
Lord Dunsany: Master of the Anglo-Irish Imagination (1995)
The Core of Ramsey Campbell: A Bibliography & Reader's Guide (with Ramsey Campbell and Stefan Dziemianowicz) (1995)
H. P. Lovecraft: A Life (1996)
A Subtler Magick: The Writings and Philosophy of H. P. Lovecraft (1996)
Sixty Years of Arkham House (1999)
Ambrose Bierce: An Annotated Bibliography of Primary Sources (with David E. Schultz) (1999)
The Modern Weird Tale (2001)
A Dreamer and a Visionary: H. P. Lovecraft in His Time (2001)
Ramsey Campbell and Modern Horror Fiction (2001)
An H. P. Lovecraft Encyclopedia (with David E. Schultz) (2001)
God's Defenders: What They Believe and Why They Are Wrong (2003)
Primal Sources: Essays on H. P. Lovecraft (2003)
The Evolution of the Weird Tale (2004)
The Angry Right (2006)
Gore Vidal: A Comprehensive Bibliography (2007)

Emperors of Dreams: Some Notes on Weird Poetry (2008)
Classics and Contemporaries: Some Notes on Horror Fiction (2009)
H. L. Mencken: An Annotated Bibliography (2009)
Junk Fiction: America's Obsession with Bestsellers (2009)

Books Edited
H. P. Lovecraft in "The Eyrie" (with Marc A. Michaud) (1979)
H. P. Lovecraft: Four Decades of Criticism (1980)
Sonia H. Davis, *The Private Life of H. P. Lovecraft* (1985; rev. 1993)
Donald Wandrei, *Collected Poems* (1988)
Clark Ashton Smith, *Nostalgia of the Unknown: The Complete Prose Poetry* (with Marc & Susan Michaud and Steve Behrends) (1988)
Robert E. Howard, *Selected Letters 1923-1936* (with Glenn Lord, Rusty Burke, and Steve Behrends) (1989–91; 2 vols.)
The H. P. Lovecraft Centennial Conference: Proceedings (1991)
An Epicure in the Terrible: A Centennial Anthology of Essays in Honor of H. P. Lovecraft (with David E. Schultz) (1991)
The Count of Thirty: A Tribute to Ramsey Campbell (1993)
H. P. Lovecraft in the Argosy: Collected Correspondence from the Munsey Magazines (1994)
Caverns Measureless to Man: 18 Memoirs of Lovecraft (1996)
Bram Stoker, *Best Ghost Stories* (with Richard Dalby and Stefan Dziemianowicz) (1997)
Henry Ferris, *A Night with Mephistopheles* (1997)
Arthur Machen, *The Line of Terror and Other Essays* (1997)
Algernon Blackwood, *The Complete John Silence Stories* (1998)
Ambrose Bierce, *A Sole Survivor: Bits of Autobiography* (with David E. Schultz) (1998)
Documents of American Prejudice (1999)
Great Weird Tales (1999)
Ambrose Bierce, *Collected Fables* (2000)
Sir Arthur Quiller-Couch, *The Horror on the Stair and Other Weird Tales* (2000)
Civil War Memories (2000)
W. C. Morrow, *The Monster Maker and Other Stories* (with Stefan Dziemianowicz) (2000)

Ambrose Bierce, *The Unabridged Devil's Dictionary* (with David E. Schultz) (2000)
Robert W. Chambers, *The Yellow Sign and Other Stories* (2000)
Atheism: A Reader (2000)
Ambrose Bierce, *The Fall of the Republic and Other Political Satires* (with David E. Schultz) (2000)
Rudyard Kipling, *The Mark of the Beast and Other Horror Tales* (2000)
From Baltimore to Bohemia: The Letters of H. L. Mencken and George Sterling (2001)
Arthur Machen, *The Three Impostors and Other Stories* (2001)
Robert Hichens, *The Return of the Soul and Other Stories* (2001)
Clark Ashton Smith, *The Black Diamonds* (2002)
Great Tales of Terror (2002)
H. L. Mencken, *H. L. Mencken on American Literature* (2002)
Algernon Blackwood, *Ancient Sorceries and Other Weird Stories* (2002)
H. L. Mencken, *H. L. Mencken on Religion* (2002)
Ramsey Campbell, *Ramsey Campbell, Probably* (2002)
Clark Ashton Smith, *The Last Oblivion: Best Fantastic Poems* (with David E. Schultz) (2002)
R. H. Barlow, *Eyes of the God: The Weird Fiction and Poetry of R. H. Barlow* (with Douglas A. Anderson and David E. Schultz) (2002)
Ambrose Bierce, *A Much Misunderstood Man: Selected Letters of Ambrose Bierce* (with David E. Schultz) (2003)
George Sterling, *The Thirst of Satan: Poems of Fantasy and Terror* (2003)
Lord Dunsany, *The Pleasures of a Futuroscope* (2003)
Arthur Machen, *The White People and Other Stories* (2003)
Fritz Leiber and H. P. Lovecraft: Writers of the Dark (with Ben J. S. Szumskyj) (2003)
H. L. Mencken, *Mencken's America* (2004)
Lord Dunsany, *In the Land of Time and Other Fantasy Tales* (2004)
Lord Dunsany, *The Collected Jorkens* (2004–05; 3 vols.)
Arthur Machen, *The Terror and Other Stories* (2005)
M. P. Shiel, *The House of Sounds and Others* (2005)
Clarence Darrow, *Closing Arguments: Clarence Darrow on Religion, Law, and Society* (2005)
M. R. James, *Count Magnus and Other Ghost Stories* (2005)

Supernatural Literature of the World: An Encyclopedia (with Stefan Dziemianowicz) (2005; 3 vols.)
The Shadow of the Unattained: The Letters of George Sterling and Clark Ashton Smith (with David E. Schultz) (2005)
In Her Place: A Documentary History of Prejudice against Women (2006)
The Short Fiction of Ambrose Bierce: A Comprehensive Edition (with Lawrence I. Berkove and David E. Schultz) (2006; 3 vols.)
M. R. James, *The Haunted Dolls' House and Other Ghost Stories* (2006)
Icons of Horror and the Supernatural (2007; 2 vols.)
Clark Ashton Smith, *Complete Poetry and Translations,* Vol. 3 (with David E. Schultz) (2007)
Warnings to the Curious: A Sheaf of Criticism on M. R. James (with Rosemary Pardoe) (2007)
The Agnostic Reader (2007)
American Supernatural Tales (2007)
Donald Wandrei, *Sanctity and Sin: The Collected Poems and Prose Poems of Donald Wandrei* (2008)
Clark Ashton Smith, *The Complete Poetry and Translations* (with David E. Schultz) (2008–09; 3 vols.)
Icons of Unbelief: Atheists, Agnostics, and Secularists (2008)
Mark Twain, *What Is Man? and Other Irreverent Essays* (2009)
H. L. Mencken, *Mencken on Mencken: Uncollected Autobiographical Writings* (2010)

Editions of Works by H. P. Lovecraft
Uncollected Prose and Poetry (with Marc A. Michaud) (1978–82; 3 vols.)
Science vs. Charlatanry: Essays on Astrology (with Scott Connors) (1979)
Saturnalia and Other Poems (1984)
The Dunwich Horror and Others (1984)
Juvenilia: 1897–1905 (1984)
In Defence of Dagon (1985)
At the Mountains of Madness and Other Novels (1985)
Medusa and Other Poems (1986)
Dagon and Other Macabre Tales (1986)
Uncollected Letters (1986)
The Horror in the Museum and Other Revisions (1989)
The Conservative (1990)

The Fantastic Poetry (1990; rev. 1993)
Letters to Henry Kuttner (with David E. Schultz) (1990)
Letters to Richard F. Searight (with David E. Schultz and Franklyn Searight) (1992)
Autobiographical Writings (1992)
Letters to Robert Bloch (with David E. Schultz) (1993)
The H. P. Lovecraft Dream Book (with David E. Schultz and Will Murray) (1994)
The Shadow over Innsmouth (with David E. Schultz) (1994; rev. 1997)
Letters to Samuel Loveman and Vincent Starrett (with David E. Schultz) (1994)
Miscellaneous Writings (1995)
The Annotated H. P. Lovecraft (1997)
More Annotated H. P. Lovecraft (with Peter Cannon) (1999)
The Call of Cthulhu and Other Weird Stories (1999)
Lord of a Visible World: An Autobiography in Letters (with David E. Schultz) (2000)
The Annotated Supernatural Horror in Literature (2000)
The Shadow out of Time (with David E. Schultz) (2001)
The Ancient Track: Complete Poetical Works (2001)
The Thing on the Doorstep and Other Weird Stories (2001)
Mysteries of Time and Spirit: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Donald Wandrei (with David E. Schultz) (2002)
From the Pest Zone: Stories from New York (with David E. Schultz) (2003)
Letters to Alfred Galpin (with David E. Schultz) (2003)
Collected Essays (2004–06; 5 vols.)
The Dreams in the Witch House and Other Weird Stories (2004)
Letters from New York (with David E. Schultz) (2005)
Letters to Rheinhart Kleiner (with David E. Schultz) (2005)
Essential Solitude: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and August Derleth (with David E. Schultz) (2008; 2 vols.)
A Means to Freedom: The Letters of H. P. Lovecraft and Robert E. Howard (with David E. Schultz and Rusty Burke) (2009; 2 vols.)

Books Translated
Maurice Lévy, *Lovecraft: A Study in the Fantastic* (1988)

Magazines Edited
Lovecraft Studies (1979–2005; 45 issues)
Studies in Weird Fiction (1986–2005; 27 issues)
Necrofile: The Review of Horror Fiction (1991–99; 32 issues)
The New Lovecraft Collector (1993–99; 26 issues)
Dead Reckonings (2007–)
The Lovecraft Annual (2007–)
Studies in the Fantastic (2008–09; 2 issue)
The Weird Fiction Annual (2010–)